





Gc  
974.401  
Es7h  
v.2,pt.1  
1834290

REYNOLDS HISTORICAL  
GENEALOGY COLLECTION



ALLEN COUNTY PUBLIC LIBRARY



3 1833 01101 6554





Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2015

<https://archive.org/details/historyofessexco21hurd>











4484  
HISTORY

OF

ESSEX COUNTY,

MASSACHUSETTS,

WITH

BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES

OF MANY OF ITS

PIONEERS AND PROMINENT MEN.

COMPILED UNDER THE SUPERVISION OF

D. HAMILTON HURD.

VOL. II.

V. 2, Pt. 1

ILLUSTRATED.

PHILADELPHIA:

J. W. LEWIS & CO.

1888.





1834290

*Copyright, 1887,*  
BY J. W. LEWIS & CO.

*All Rights Reserved.*

PRESS OF  
JAS. E. RODGERS PRINTING COMPANY,  
PHILADELPHIA.

Rec'd. 3-28-75





# CONTENTS.

## VOLUME II.

1880-1881

### CITIES AND TOWNS.

CHAP.	PAGE.	CHAP.	PAGE.
LXIII. . . . .	957	CXXVI. . . . .	1422
LXIV. . . . .	972	CXXVII. . . . .	1431
LXV. . . . .	989	CXXIX. . . . .	1441
LXVI. . . . .	993	CXX. . . . .	1472
LXVII. . . . .	998	CXXI. . . . .	1474
LXVIII. . . . .	1000	CXXII. . . . .	1481
LXIX. . . . .	1003	CXXIII. . . . .	1489
LXX. . . . .	1006	CXXIV. . . . .	1486
LXXI. . . . .	1008	CXXV. . . . .	149
LXXII. . . . .	1013	CXXVI. . . . .	1535
LXXIII. . . . .	1016	CXXVII. . . . .	1536
LXXIV. . . . .	1023	CXXVIII. . . . .	1558
LXXV. . . . .	1027	CXXIX. . . . .	1562
LXXVI. . . . .	1058	CXXX. . . . .	1563
LXXVII. . . . .	1060	CXXXI. . . . .	1568
LXXVIII. . . . .	1063	CXXXII. . . . .	1570
LXXIX. . . . .	1067	CXXXIII. . . . .	1579
LXXX. . . . .	1071	CXXXIV. . . . .	1583
LXXXI. . . . .	1078	CXXXV. . . . .	1590
LXXXII. . . . .	1084	CXXXVI. . . . .	1592
LXXXIII. . . . .	1090	CXXXVII. . . . .	1610
LXXXIV. . . . .	1093	CXXXVIII. . . . .	1644
LXXXV. . . . .	1097	CXXXIX. . . . .	1657
LXXXVI. . . . .	1101	CXL. . . . .	1663
LXXXVII. . . . .	1106	CXLI. . . . .	1706
LXXXVIII. . . . .	1110	CXLII. . . . .	1717
LXXXIX. . . . .	1111	CXLIII. . . . .	1757
XC. . . . .	1116	CXLIV. . . . .	1756
XCI. . . . .	1128	CXLV. . . . .	1771
XCII. . . . .	1157	CXLVI. . . . .	1788
XCIII. . . . .	1156	CXLVII. . . . .	1800
XCIV. . . . .	1161	CXLVIII. . . . .	1800
XCV. . . . .	1170	CXLIX. . . . .	1890
XCVI. . . . .	1186	CL. . . . .	1901
XCVII. . . . .	1198	CLI. . . . .	1903
XCVIII. . . . .	1210	CLII. . . . .	1911
XCIX. . . . .	1220	CLIII. . . . .	1938
C. . . . .	1249	CLIV. . . . .	1949
CI. . . . .	1250	CLV. . . . .	1965
CII. . . . .	1272	CLVI. . . . .	1971
CIII. . . . .	1282	CLVII. . . . .	1984
CIV. . . . .	1291	CLVIII. . . . .	1992
CV. . . . .	1298	CLIX. . . . .	1998
CVI. . . . .	1301	CLX. . . . .	2002
CVII. . . . .	1322	CLXI. . . . .	2007
CVIII. . . . .	1325	CLXII. . . . .	2014
CIX. . . . .	1330	CLXIII. . . . .	2019
CX. . . . .	1333	CLXIV. . . . .	2020
CXI. . . . .	1354	CLXV. . . . .	2083
CXII. . . . .	1361	CLXVI. . . . .	2088
CXIII. . . . .	1370	CLXVII. . . . .	2091
CXIV. . . . .	1389	CLXVIII. . . . .	2097
CXV. . . . .	1397	CLXIX. . . . .	2102
CXVI. . . . .	1408		





# THE HISTORY OF ESSEX CO., MASSACHUSETTS.

## CITIES AND TOWNS.

### CHAPTER LXIII.

#### BOXFORD.

BY SIDNEY PERLEY.

FIRST SETTLEMENT, GENERAL HISTORY, ETC.—Originally, the present town of Boxford comprised a large portion of the western part of Rowley. About the middle of the seventeenth century there were several villages in Rowley, namely: Rowley, Rowley Village and Rowley Village by the Merrimac. The first of these is still Rowley; the last is now Bradford, and Rowley Village was given the name of Boxford.

The first settler within the present territory of Boxford was Abraham Redington, who came here as early as 1645, being an emigrant from England. The site of his residence was at or near Hotel Redington, in the East Parish Village. Other settlers came, and by the close of the next score of years there was quite a settlement here. The principal settlers in the seventeenth century, after the coming of Mr. Redington, were Robert Andrews, from England, about 1656; John Cummings, in 1658; Robert Stiles, from Yorkshire, England, in 1659; Joseph Bixby, from Ipswich, in 1660; Robert Eames, from England, in 1660; William Foster, from Ipswich, in 1661; Robert Smith, in 1661; Zaccheus Curtis, from Gloucester, in 1661; John Peabody, from Topsfield, in 1663; Samuel Symonds, in 1663; Daniel Black, a Scotch-

man, about 1665; Moses Tyler, from Andover, in 1666; John Kimball from Wenham, about 1666; Joseph Peabody, from Topsfield, about 1671; Samuel Buswell, from Salisbury, about 1674; George Blake, from Gloucester, about 1675; Daniel Wood, about 1675; John Perley, in 1683; Thomas Perley, from Rowley, about 1684; Thomas Hazen, from Rowley, in 1684; William Peabody, from Topsfield, in 1684; Timothy Dorman, from Topsfield, in 1688; Joseph Hale, from Newbury, about 1691; Luke Hovey, from Topsfield, in 1699; and Ebenezer Sherwin, about 1699.

August 12, 1685, Rowley Village, as the settlement had heretofore been called, was incorporated as a town. It was given the name of Boxford, probably, because the birth-place of the pastor of the parent town at this time was one of the Boxfords in England. The settlement then consisted of forty families. The territory of Boxford then included a part of the present towns of Groveland and Middleton.

Before, and at this date, the people here had very little to do with the principal settlement at Rowley. They trained at Topsfield, were chosen into office there; attended, belonged to and held offices in the churches at Topsfield and Bradford, and hardly any of their interests were in common with their fellow-townsmen.

Boxford happily escaped the depredations which many frontier towns suffered from the Indians. The only connection that the settlers ever had with them was when certain heirs of the old sachem of the



*Agawams*, Masconomet, laid claim to our soil. They were met at the house of Thomas Perley (now the residence of Mrs. Isaac Hale) in January, 1701, and a quit-claim deed was obtained from them upon the payment of some refreshment in the nature of "rum and vittels," and the sum of nine pounds in money.

The witchcraft delusion visited the settlement, and one of the wives and mothers of the town was condemned to pay the death penalty. The convicted woman was Rebecca, the wife of Robert Eames. She was in a house near Gallows' Hill, in Salem, when Rev. George Burroughs was executed, August 19, 1692, "and the woman of the house" felt a pin stuck into her foot, as she said. Mrs. Eames was accused of doing it, and convicted of witchcraft, but was afterward reprimed, having lain in jail more than seven months. She survived until May 8, 1721, when she died at the age of eighty-two years.

The settlers were buried at Topsfield until the settlement was incorporated, but no grave-stones remain, if any were erected so early, by which we can tell how early burials were had at home. The oldest cemetery in Boxford is that across the street from the residence of Mr. Walter French, which has not been used for more than a half a century. The oldest stone here is dated "1714." The cemetery near B. S. Barnes, Esquire's, and the oldest one in the West Parish, began to be used at the beginning of the eighteenth century. The cemetery near the First Church was laid out and first used in 1807; and the new one in the West Parish in 1838.

Boxford has been constantly reduced in population, by parts of the territory being annexed to other towns, and by emigration to new regions. The people have helped to settle Bridgton and other places in Maine, Harvard, Hopkinton, Oxford, Lunenburg and Brookfield, in Massachusetts, Amherst and other places in New Hampshire, the State of Ohio, the province of New Brunswick, and other places. From the Atlantic to the Pacific the sons of old Boxford are assisting as men ought in the affairs of human life.

The population of the town in 1765 was eight hundred and fifty-one. From that number it increased in 1860 to one thousand and twenty. The number of inhabitants, by the census of 1885, was eight hundred and forty. A century ago several negroes were numbered among the inhabitants, and the race can still be seen here. One by the name of Neptune served in the army of the Revolution.

Boxford has always been careful to be represented in the legislative halls. Two State Senators, Aaron Wood, in 1781, and Julius Aboynau Palmer, in 1869,

and thirty-four members of the House have been sent from this town, some of the latter serving for long terms of years. Major Asa Perley was a member of the Provincial Congress.

Boxford has had societies of various kinds, besides those mentioned in other portions of this sketch. "The Moral Society of Boxford and Topsfield" was established in 1815, and flourished for several years. Its purpose was the suppression of immorality of every description, particularly intemperance, Sabbath-breaking and profanity; and the promotion of piety and good morals. At present, the most prominent are the Boxford Natural History Society, the Rural Improvement Association, a local assembly of the Grangers and the Literary League.

The Danvers and Newburyport Branch of the Boston and Maine Railroad runs through the southeastern portion of the town, having been located here in 1853. There are two post-offices in the town,—Boxford, Mr. Frederic A. Howe, postmaster, and West Boxford, Mrs. Mary C. Cole, postmistress. The mail is transported to the first by the railroad, and to the second by a mail-stage, running from Georgetown to Lawrence.

The taxable property in the town is valued at about six hundred and fifty thousand dollars. The town debt is \$4,857.59. The rate of taxation in 1887 was nine dollars and fifty cents on one thousand dollars.

The citizens of the town are in general quiet and orderly and possessed of good common-school acquirements. No lawyer ever expected to reap a competency from the practice of his profession here, and for several years past a physician has not had an office here.

The earliest member of the medical profession who practiced here was David Wood, a native of the town, who was born in 1677, and died in 1741. He practiced here thirty years. He had quite a large practice in the surrounding towns, yet the estate which he accumulated was in great part derived from his farm and mills. Dr. Wood was followed, in 1753, by Dr. Benjamin Foster, who was born in Ipswich in 1700, and died in 1775, of the asthma, having practiced here for twenty-two years. He was a successful and skillful physician, and a distinguished botanist. Dr. William Hale, the next one in the list, commenced practice here about 1770. He was a native of Boxford, having been born in 1741, and dying about 1785. Then came Dr. George Whitefield Sawyer, who was born in Ipswich in 1770. He settled in Boxford as a physician shortly after 1800, and continued in the practice of his profession until his





death, which occurred in 1855, at the age of eighty-five years. Dr. Sawyer lived in the East Parish; and in the West Parish Dr. Josiah Bacon practised for about twenty years contemporaneously with him. Dr. Bacon was doubtless a native of Bradford, and was born about 1780. He was in practice here from about 1820 to about 1840. He was an excellent physician, and highly cultured. Intemperance, however, caused the loss of his practice and character. Dr. Sawyer and Dr. Bacon died on the same day,—March 23, 1855. Dr. Bacon's brother John was the author of *Bacon's Town Officer*, one of the earliest works of the kind. During 1848 and 1849 another young physician lived and practised in the town. This was Charles P. French, who was born in Lyndsbrough, N. H., in 1824. In 1849 he removed to Topsfield. No one has since endeavored to obtain a livelihood from the medical practice which the town would yield.

Boxford has always been noted, on account of its rural advantages, temperance and simple manner of living, as one of the healthfullest places in our region. The inhabitants live generally to old age. About forty-five persons are recorded as having died above the age of ninety years. The prevalence of fatal diseases is almost unknown. Small-pox was known here to a very limited extent in 1722, 1760 and 1854, and the throat distemper, in 1736 and 1787, took away quite a large number of the children of the town.

Boxford is a fine old farming community, pleasant and interesting, and, with the many natural beauties of her landscapes, the songs of the birds and the lovely sisterhood of flowers, continually attractive to all classes.

The history of the town was written and published in 1880, by Sidney Perley, in an illustrated volume of four hundred and eighteen octavo pages.

The bi-centennial anniversary of the incorporation of the town was celebrated August 12, 1885. The exercises were held in the First Church, and the dinner was enjoyed in the grove on the lawn in front of the church. Music was furnished by the Groveland Cornet Band. Several hundred people were present. The exercises were prefaced by a flag-raising on a square near the church, on which occasion Mr. George W. Chadwick made an address. The leading parts of the exercises in the church were as follows: Address on "The New England Town," by Rev. Charles L. Hubbard; "The History of the Town," by Sidney Perley; "The First Church," by Rev. Robert R. Kendall; "The Second Church," by Rev. Calvin E. Park; "Distinguished Natives," by Rev. William P. Alcott; "Schools," by Dr. Francis J. Stevens. Other addresses were made. Rev. William S. Coggin presided.

RELIGIOUS HISTORY.—As the settlers came, they attended divine worship at Topsfield, and many of them were admitted to and assisted in supporting the

church there. This they continued to do until the early part of the last decade in the seventeenth century, when "contentious feelings" arose among the brethren, probably because the Boxford people were about to withdraw their support from the church, and to form a society among themselves. This unhappy state of affairs existed for several years after the connection was dissolved in 1702.

There have existed in Boxford three religious parishes, and of these we will speak in the order of their creation.

*First Parish.*—A church was thought of being built as early as 1632; but one was not begun to be erected until 1639. This was completed and presented to the town, which then constituted the parish, January 9, 1701. It was "thirty-four feet long, thirty feet wide, and eighteen feet stud between joints." The four surfaces of the roof met in one peak at the top, above which was a turret. This ancient edifice stood in the northerly corner of the cemetery near the First Church.

A parsonage was also built on the site of the present ancient Holyoke house. It was forty-eight feet long and twenty feet wide, two stories in height, and with a back room of sixteen or eighteen feet square. This house was finished and taken possession of July 22, 1702. The old parsonage remained here until 1760, when the present house was erected.

The first pastor of the church was Rev. Thomas Symmes, who was ordained December 30, 1702, at which time probably the church was formed. Mr. Symmes was born in Bradford February 1, 1678, and graduated at Harvard College in 1698. He preached his first sermon in Boxford on Sunday, April 27, 1701. This was probably the first service ever held in Boxford. His salary was sixty pounds in money, thirty-five cords of wood and the use of the parsonage and ten acres of land.

Mr. Symmes met with uncommon difficulties in his pastorate here, but just what they were cannot be determined. Good feeling had always existed between pastor and people. He resigned May 21, 1708. He went to Bradford, and took his father's place in the church there, the same year he was dismissed from the church here. He died there October 6, 1725, aged forty-seven years. He was a man of much learning, and very active with his pen; several of his productions, both religious and secular, were published, and among them is the most authentic account of "Capt. Lovewell's fight at Pigwacket," in 1725. Increase Mather spoke highly of him.

The second pastor was Rev. John Rogers, of Salem, who preached here several months before his ordination, which occurred in 1709. His salary was at first sixty pounds, it being increased in 1717 to eighty pounds. He resided in the parsonage.

Mr. Rogers was a native of Salem, and graduated at Harvard College in 1705. He seems to have been born in humble life. He preached here until about





1743, when he removed to his son's in Leominster, where he died in 1755. He was an earnest, forcible preacher, and very successful in the ministry.

The people in the western portion of the town had been compelled, as a portion of the town, to assist in supporting the church here, and at the same time attended and helped to support the churches at Andover and Bradford. The meeting-house here had become needful of repair, and a new one was contemplated, but a vote to build a new one could not be obtained. The people living in the western part of the town desired a division of the town into two parishes, and that each should build a church. This was done in 1735. The first meeting held by the East or First Parish was on Monday, November 17, 1735. A new meeting-house was built and completed in 1745. It was forty-eight feet long, thirty-eight feet wide, and twenty-four feet stud. Its cost was about fifteen hundred pounds. The old church was used until January, 1747, when religious services were first held in the new meeting-house. This edifice stood a few rods in front of the present church.

From 1743 to '59 the church had no regular services. The next minister who was settled here was Rev. Elizer Holyoke. He graduated at Harvard College in 1750, and was ordained January 31, 1759. Mr. Holyoke was born in Boston May 11, 1731; and was prostrated by a paralytic shock in February, 1793, from the effects of which he died March 31, 1806, at the age of seventy-four years. He resided in the Holyoke house, which his father, a merchant of Boston, had built for him, a year or two after his settlement here, on the site of the old parsonage.

"Lost to the world, alien to our men, when I  
Unblest and unspirit, seek these realms of light,  
Where I can find—Mercy only meets the view,  
Faith lost in wonder, Hope in full delight."

—*Epitaph.*

The fourth minister was Rev. Isaac Briggs, of York, Me., who was installed on Wednesday, September 28, 1808. "Parson Briggs" was born in Hallowell, Mass., about 1775, and graduated at Brown University in 1795. He was settled at York in the ministry, and resigned in 1807. Mr. Briggs lived in the old "Briggs house" during the twenty-five years he preached here. Contentions in the church made his service here unhappy, and his connection with the church and society was dissolved in 1833. Mr. Briggs afterwards preached in other places, but never again settled over a church. He came back to visit the friends and scenes of his early labors, and occupied the pulpit, several times after his departure from the town. He died in East Morrisania, N. Y., February 22, 1862, at the age of eighty-six years.

Mr. Briggs was followed by Rev. John Whitney, who was born in Harvard, Mass., September 1, 1803. He graduated at Amherst College in 1831, and from the Andover Theological Seminary in 1834. He was

ordained here October 15, 1834, and dismissed in the summer of 1837. He boarded in the "Bunker house," with Colonel Charles Peabody and Elisha G. Bunker respectively. Mr. Whitney went to Waltham, where he was pastor for twenty years, then removed to Canaan, N. Y., and in 1867 to Newton Centre, Mass., where he died May 31, 1879. He kept up his studies to the end of his life.

At the close of Mr. Whitney's service here the present church was built and dedicated May 9, 1838. The bell was a gift from Gen. Solomon Low.

Rev. William Symmes Coggin, the next minister, was ordained May 9, 1838, the day of the dedication of the church. He was born in Tewksbury, Mass., Nov. 27, 1812, and graduated at Dartmouth College in 1834. He resigned on account of ill health, and was dismissed May 9, 1868. He still resides with the people of his early charge.

Rev. Sereno Dwight Gammell, the seventh pastor, was ordained Sept. 9, 1868. He was born in Charlestown, Mass., March 2, 1842, graduated at Amherst College in 1865, and from the Andover Theological Seminary in 1868. He resigned and was dismissed Aug. 31, 1880. He is now settled in Wellington, Ohio.

Mr. Gammell's successor was Rev. William Penn Alcott, who was installed March 30, 1881. He was born in Dorchester, Mass., July 11, 1832; graduated at Williams College in 1861, and from Andover Theological Seminary in 1865. He had been tutor in chemistry in his alma mater, and settled in the ministry at North Greenwich, Conn., before coming to Boxford. He resigned and was dismissed May 18, 1883. He still resides near the church, and is at present the pastor of the Linbrook Parish Church in Ipswich.

The next and present pastor of the church is Rev. Robert Roy Kendall, who was installed Dec. 27, 1883. He was born in Ridgefield, Conn., March 28, 1849; graduated at Yale College in 1872, and at the Yale Theological Seminary in 1876. Before coming to Boxford, he had been settled in Bloomfield, Ohio, and Angelien, N. Y.

The parsonage was built by subscription, at a cost of about \$4,000, in 1870. The church has one hundred and thirty-eight members, and a ministerial fund of \$9,275.21. The Sunday-school connected with the church has one hundred scholars, and a library of three hundred volumes, called the "Mary Ann Peabody Sunday-school Library," the gift of Miss Mary Ann Peabody, an earnest worker in the field of the Master.

*Second Parish.*—The people in the western portion of the town erected a meeting-house for themselves in the summer of 1734, and were incorporated as a distinct parish June 28th of the next year. The first meeting of the parish was held July 22, 1735. June 13, 1740, the General Court added to the parish eight Andover families with their lands, and after-



wards several more Andover families were annexed, the parish being partly composed of North Andover families at the present time.

The founders of the church were dismissed for that purpose from the churches of Bradford, and the First Parish here. The church was organized Dec. 9, 1736, and on the 29th of the same month Rev. John Cushing, who had been preaching here for the year, was ordained. The salary of Mr. Cushing was fixed at one hundred and forty pounds in money and twenty-five cords of wood, with a settlement of three hundred pounds. The church stood in the "meeting-house lot" a short distance south of the new cemetery, and Mr. Cushing lived nearly on the opposite side of the road from Rev. Samuel Rowe's residence.

After 1768, he was not able to preach regularly, but he continued as the pastor of the church till his death, which occurred Jan. 25, 1772. Mr. Cushing was a son of Rev. Caleb Cushing, and was born in Salisbury April 19, 1709. He graduated at Harvard College in 1729. Mr. Cushing was a man of extensive learning, and a popular preacher.

The second meeting-house was built in 1774 by Stephen Barker. It stood where the present one stands. The old meeting-house was sold for what it would "fetch."

The second minister was Rev. Moses Hale, who was ordained November 16, 1774. He was born in Rowley February 19, 1749, and graduated at Harvard College in 1771. His salary was eighty pounds per annum. He resided across the street from the residence of the venerable Mr. Daniel Wood. Mr. Hale was stricken down by disease in the twelfth year of his ministry and thirty-eighth of his age, and died May 25, 1786, leaving five motherless children to mourn his loss, his wife having died April 24th of the preceding year. Mr. Hale's father was the Rev. Moses Hale of Newbury.

Mr. Hale's successor was Rev. Peter Eaton, D.D., of Haverhill, who was ordained on Wednesday, October 7, 1789. He erected the residence of the late Lawrence Carey, and lived in it during his long pastorate here.

It was during Mr. Eaton's ministry that the present church was erected. It was dedicated November 22, 1842. Its cost was \$4,977.62. The bell was a donation from Charles Saunders, of Andover, its weight being eleven hundred and fifty-nine pounds.

After preaching here for fifty-five years, his health failing, Dr. Eaton asked to be dismissed; but it was voted that he should remain and preach when he felt able. This he consented to do, but shortly afterward again resigned. Then Rev. Calvin Edmunds Park was installed as his colleague October 14, 1846; and this relation continued as long as Dr. Eaton survived, which was but a short time. He quietly passed away April 14, 1848, at the age of eighty-three years. Dr. Eaton was born in Haverhill March 15, 1765, and graduated at Harvard

College in 1787. He secured, during his long and quiet ministry, the respect and love of his people, who, as a memorial of their affection, erected a monument to his memory. Several of his sermons were published, among them the "Election Sermon," which he preached to the Legislature in 1819.

After Dr. Eaton's death, Rev. Mr. Park continued as the pastor until April 9, 1859, when he resigned. His farewell sermon was preached on the first Sabbath in June, 1859. Mr. Park's labors were judicious, faithful and unremitting. He continued to occupy the pulpit for some time after his dismissal, and has ever since that time occasionally preached to his old congregation. Afterwards, for several years, he had a private school for young men, and is now mostly engaged in literary work. He resides in his old home near the church. Mr. Park was born in Providence, R. I., December 30, 1811. He first served for six years as pastor of the church at Waterville, Me., where he was ordained on October 31st, 1838.

The next minister was Rev. Charles M. Peirce, of Hinsdale, Mass., who was ordained September 2, 1863. He had sound discretion and Christian zeal, endowed with a fine scholarship and rich ministerial gifts. He resided in the Peter Pearl house. He was dismissed, at his request, July 17, 1867, and was soon after settled in Middlefield, Mass.

The poverty of the church and society was one of the principal reasons for the resignation of Revs. Messrs. Park and Peirce; but in 1872 a great change occurred in the financial condition of the society. Captain John Tyler, of this parish, who died that year, bequeathed to the parish a fund of thirty thousand dollars, the income of which to be appropriated annually to the support of the gospel here.

In 1875 the parish erected a handsome parsonage, in the Gothic style, on an eminence northeast from the church, at a cost of about five thousand dollars.

Ten years had elapsed since Mr. Peirce was dismissed, and no "call" had been accepted by a clergyman to settle here, though five invitations had been extended. The sixth one was accepted by Rev. James McLean, of South Weymouth, Mass. He was installed here on Wednesday, February 29, 1877. Mr. McLean was the first occupant of the new parsonage. He was a native of Scotland, and had been settled in the ministry at South Weymouth and several other places. He resigned, and was dismissed July 1, 1878. Mr. McLean afterwards preached in Groveland for three years, then went West, and died in Springfield, Mo., January 11, 1884.

The next and present pastor settled over this church is Rev. Charles Lawrence Hubbard, who was installed on Wednesday, January 15, 1879. Mr. Hubbard was born in Candia, N. H., July 4, 1839, and was settled over the church at Merrimac, N. H., for ten years before coming to Boxford.

The church has seventy-five members. The Sun-





day-school connected with it has eighty-five scholars and a library of two hundred volumes.

The churches of the First and Second Parishes are both orthodox Congregational, there being no other religious organization in the town. The members of the Third Parish, which existed for a few years only, were Liberals, though they styled themselves Congregationalists.

*Third Parish.*—This parish was founded on account of an extensive disaffection in the First Church while Rev. Mr. Briggs was settled here. They were incorporated by the name of the Third Congregational Society April 19, 1824. No church was ever organized, but the society existed, and religious services were held for a period of ten years. The last legal meeting of the society was held April 29, 1834. The academy building was erected, not only for the use of the school, but for a hall in which this new religious society could hold their services. In 1826 the society had ninety-eight members, eighteen of them belonging to Topsfield, thirty-five to Middleton, and forty-five to Boxford. Among those who preached to this society were Revs. Charles W. Upham, J. Bartlett, Ebenezer Robinson, Hubbard, Green and Loring. The preaching was of the Liberal kind, and mostly attended by that class of persons, who did not believe in Congregationalism.

*MILITARY HISTORY.*—In the very first settlement of the town the men who were compelled by law to train performed their military duty with the company at Rowley, but being totally disregarded by that town for several years, they were ordered to train with the Topsfield company. In 1674 the General Court gave them liberty to train at either place, as they pleased. As soon as the town was incorporated a military company was formed here. Their first stock of ammunition was procured in 1689, and consisted of "poudr & bullets and flents." To the time of the division of the town into two parishes there was but one company in the town; after that time there was one in each parish. In 1762 the officers of the First Parish Company were: Asa Perley, captain; John Hale, lieutenant; and Thomas Andrews, ensign. Of the Second Parish Company: Isaac Adams was captain; Nathan Barker, lieutenant; and John Chadwick, ensign. A powder-house was built by the town in 1801, and in 1856 it was sold and taken down. It stood in a pasture, a short distance from and northeast of Stevens Pond. In 1832 the two companies were united, and continued so until the spring of 1840, when all the militia throughout the State were disbanded. A new and dashing company, calling themselves the "Boxford Washington Guards," was formed in 1836. In 1840 the town built them an armory. The company flourished for about ten years.

The first actual military service the settlers entered was King Philip's War, in 1675, when Philip and his allies were plundering and burning the build-

ings, and murdering the settlers in Swanzeey and vicinity. Joseph Bixby served in the company of Capt. Samuel Brocklebank, of Rowley, and providentially escaped the fate of nearly all of that heroic band. Robert Andrews was a member of the company of the brave Capt. Gardner, and was killed at the storming of Fort Narragansett December 19, 1675. He was twenty-four years of age, and unmarried.

In 1689 several of the men, with other soldiers from the neighboring towns, went down into Maine to help defend the frontier settlements from the attacks of the savages, who had become very fierce. For several years some of the soldiers went into actual service against the Indians. Several of them were in the company of the brave Capt. Lovewell in 1725. Boxford men were stationed at Scarborough in 1748 and 1749, and at Gorhamtown and New Marblehead in 1749 and 1750. They were again on the eastern frontiers in 1754 and 1755.

Some of the Boxford soldiers assisted in depopulating Acadia (now Nova Scotia), of the *neutral French*, who, refusing to remain neutral, were brought by water to Boston, and distributed among the various towns in the colonies. Fifteen were sent to Boxford, six of whom were afterwards transferred to Middleton. This strange proceeding took place in 1755. The heads of the three families that were sent to Boxford were named Ommier Landry, Paul Landry and Renar Landry. They lived in town, being supported by the Province, until 1760, when many of them went to Canada. The cloud of their sorrows was never dispelled, and in a land of strangers many of them pined away and died.

The long and tedious "French and Indian War" drew into service many of the inhabitants. Boxford raised "a company of foot" for the "invasion of Canada," in 1758, which was placed under the command of Capt. Israel Herriek. This company, with another, under command of Capt. Francis Peabody, of Boxford, were in service while the war lasted, 1758-60. Other men served in various companies. Of the dangers and sufferings endured by these soldiers, no one but themselves could justly tell. When the colonies were taxed so heavily by the mother country, just previous to the Revolution, in their correspondence with Boston, the committee of Boxford speak of the great amount of suffering, money and anxiety this war had cost them.

The citizens of Boxford resented the aggressive acts of Great Britain at a very early day in the uprising of the colonies. May 24, 1770, the town voted "that they will, to their utmost, encourage the produce and manufacture of all such articles as have formerly been imported from Great Britain, and used among them; that they will not use any foreign tea, nor suffer it to be used in their families (cases of sickness excepted), until the duty upon it shall be wholly taken off;—the duty on



which has so largely contributed towards the support of such a —<sup>1</sup> set of men; that they will not, by any means whatever, knowingly, have any sort of trade or dealings with those detestable persons who have preferred their own little interests to the good of the country in contriving to import goods contrary to the non-importation agreement of the merchants and traders on the continent; and that whosoever shall be found to trade with them knowingly, shall be deemed unworthy to hold any office or place of trust in the town forever hereafter."

In a letter to the committee of Boston, dated February 4, 1773, the committee of correspondence of Boxford write: "We are desirous to exert our utmost abilities in all legal and constitutional methods to break, if possible, the iron-band of oppression and prevent the welding of the last link in our chain of impending slavery."

December 27, 1773, they write: "It is the resolution of this town to do all that is in their power, in a lawful way, to heave off this yoke of slavery, and to unite with their brethren of the town of Boston, and the other towns in the Province, to defend our rights and charter privileges, not only with our estates, but with our lives; considering how dear those rights and privileges were purchased for us by our forefathers at the expense of their own blood and treasure."

Seventeen days before the Declaration of Independence was adopted, the town "voted unanimously that if the Honorable Continental Congress should for the safety of the colonies declare them independent of the Kingdom of Great Britain, they, the said inhabitants of Boxford, will solemnly engage with their lives and fortunes to support them in the measure."

The two militia companies, the East Parish Company, commanded by Capt. Jacob Gould, and consisting of fifty-seven men; the West Parish Company, commanded by Capt. John Cushing, and numbering thirty-three men; and the company of "Minute-Men," which had early been organized here, under the command of Capt. William Perley, numbering fifty-two men, marched to the scene of the Battle of Lexington, April 19, 1775, but too late to participate in the battle. The two militia companies returned home, but the "Minute-Men" followed in the rear of the British as they retreated to Boston,

" . . . . . And gave them ball for ball,  
From behind each fence and barnyard wall."

The "Minute-Men" camped in the vicinity of Boston, and on the 17th of June following took a prominent part in the memorable battle of Bunker Hill. Eight members of the company were left dead upon the battle-field. Capt. Knowlton, who so successfully defended the rail-fence there, was a native of

Boxford; and Gen. Israel Putnam had called Boxford his early home.

In 1775, saltpetre was manufactured here for the purpose of making gun-powder; and the blacksmiths' forges were used for melting lead to be run into bullets.

Several men served in the famous Sullivan expedition formed to ravage the Indian settlements on the western frontier, and passed through the ordeal of suffering and death which became their lot. The names of Schoharie, Cherry Valley, Unadilla and others associated with them, will never be forgotten by the annalist of Indian history.

Boxford men served on Cape Ann, Winter Hill, Roxbury and Dorchester. Capt. Richard Peabody was stationed at Ticonderoga and Crown Point in 1776, with a company of volunteers, and took part in the fight at Ticonderoga. Others served in the disastrous expedition of Arnold to Quebec, in the fall of 1775, and suffered with the rest of that discouraged and emaciated band. One of the Boxford soldiers, Enos Reynolds, was one of the personal guard in the cell of Major André on the night before his execution.

The patriotism of Boxford all through the seven long years of the War of the Revolution never wavered. Scores of its most stalwart men had perished on the battle-field, or died from the fatigues and exposures of various expeditions, or at Valley Forge and Monmouth; while others in the hands of the savages were tortured into the valley of silence.

Shay's Rebellion, in 1787, called out several Boxford men; but into no active service.

The 1812 War was unpopular here, as the people believed it would be detrimental to their prosperity, happiness and morals. Several drafts on the militia companies were made for guarding the sea-ports along the Atlantic coast.

Boxford again had a trial of its patriotism in the War of the Rebellion; and sent forth more soldiers than had been asked for, as well as money, appropriating for this purpose \$10,756.35, exclusive of State aid, and comforts for the soldiers at the front who were in the hospitals suffering from wounds or sickness.

The volunteers numbered ninety-two. Of these two died in Andersonville Prison and one in Libby Prison, twenty succumbed to the fatal rifle balls and Southern diseases, and thirteen others were wounded in battle, or contracted diseases of which they died soon after arriving home. In addition to these volunteers, thirty men were drafted, five more entered the navy, and faithfully served their country until they died or were discharged.

Entering the army at the beginning of the strife, several of the brave young spirits died on the field of battle at Bull Run, Cedar Mountain and other places. Others were wounded, some fatally, in the battles of Port Hudson, Blunt's Creek, Antietam, Spotsylvania,

<sup>1</sup>Hon. Aaron Wood, who was the town clerk, when these resolves were passed, being a moral man, left this word out, and inserted a dash in its stead.





Mechanicsville, Bull Run, Gettysburg, Lookout Mountain and other fierce conflicts of the Rebellion. Under the command of General Joe Hooker, some were numbered with the Army of the Potomac.

The following are the names of those who died in the war: Martin L. Ames (in Andersonville Prison), John Q. Batchelder, Samuel H. Brown, D. Butler, Charles W. Cole, John F. Cole, Oscar F. Curtis, Joshua G. Day, Murdock Frame (killed in battle at Cedar Mountain), Albert A. Frye, Charles L. Foster, George H. Gage, William A. Gurley, Harrison Hale, Matthew Hale, George P. Hobson, Horace A. Killam, Thomas A. Masury, Herbert C. C. Moree (in Libby Prison), Asa K. Perley, Thomas P. Perley, John Sawyer (in Andersonville Prison), Aaron Spofford (killed in last battle of Bull Run), and David M. Sullivan, in the army, and Benjamin S. Twisden in the navy.

In 1874, Jonathan Tyler Barker gave the West Parish one thousand dollars toward the erection of a soldiers' monument. Various persons in the town added the necessary amount of money, and a granite monument, about twenty feet in height, was erected in the spring of 1875, and dedicated on Memorial Day, May 29, 1875, with appropriate ceremonies, Governor Gaston and staff being present. The cost of the cenotaph was \$2,917.19. The following is the inscription on its front face:

IN MEMORY OF  
OUR PATRIOT SOLDIERS,  
WAR OF 1861.  
ERECTED BY THE  
MUNICIPALITY OF THE TOWN  
J. TYLER BARKER  
OF NORTH ANDOVER.  
1873.

The other three faces of the monument are inscribed with the names and dates of death of the deceased soldiers and sailors of the town.

*Camp Stanton.*—During 1861 and 1862 several regiments were quartered here. The camp was named from the Secretary of War. The commandant was Colonel Edward F. Jones, now of Binghampton, N. Y. The Eighth, Forty-first, Forty-seventh, Fiftieth and other regiments were here. Musters of the State Militia have been since held on the old campground.

*SCHOOLS, LIBRARIES, ETC.*—The first public school teacher in Boxford was the town clerk, Captain John Peabody, in 1701. The school was kept for many years in private houses in different sections of the town. In 1738 or 1739 the town was divided into districts, and a school-house built in each district. About 1796 new buildings took the place of the old. New buildings have since been built of a more commodious size and modern appearance, and the small red school-house of years ago is a thing of the past. The town is now divided into six districts, and the average number of scholars attending school is one

hundred and twenty, \$2,371.78 having been paid for their support the past year. The school fund now amounts to \$3,467.59.

In 1826 Major Jacob Peabody, a native of Boxford, and a merchant of Boston, was instrumental in establishing an academy in the building used by the Third Congregational Society for their meetings. This building stood on the corner, across the street from the residence of Prof. Allen. The academy flourished for two or three years in a marked degree. The first principal was Prof. Leavenworth, and he was followed by Pratt, Wyatt and others. The average attendance was about fifty. The building was afterwards occupied as a dwelling-house, and was ultimately destroyed by fire on the night of December 26, 1867.

The Barker Free School was founded by a fund given by the late Jonathan Tyler Barker, of North Andover, in his will, in 1872. The fund amounted to thirty thousand dollars. In 1884 the trustees leased a building in the West Parish, and in it opened the school. Mr. Stephen C. Clark was chosen for the principal. In 1885 the trustees erected a large and tasteful house and stable for the residence of the principal. The school has about twenty members. The school building is to be built, when the fund is of sufficient magnitude, near the principal's house, which occupies the rising ground to the north of Fowler Pond.

From about 1865 to 1881, the Rev. Calvin E. Park, had a private school for young men near his residence in the West Parish.

The Proprietors' Library was established in the East Parish in 1794. This library was in use about forty years. The works composing it were principally of a religious and historical character. It contained about three hundred volumes. The standard works have been added to the new public library in the parish.

The Boxford Library Association founded the public library in the East Parish in 1873. The first contributions were made by Mr. Augustus E. Batchelder, of Boston, who has ever manifested much interest in the welfare of the library. It now contains eleven hundred volumes of well selected literature. At first, a chamber over the paint-shop of Mr. S. Frank Ayres was used as a library room. In 1880, the Bacon house, situated in front of the post-office, was purchased, and re-modeled to suit the requirements of the library, and was dedicated to its new use August 27, 1880, with appropriate exercises. The Association has a fund of about three hundred dollars, and is in a flourishing condition.

The West Boxford Library Association, established the West Boxford Public Library in 1881. It is situated near the church, the Association having purchased and remodeled the building used by Rev. Mr. Park for his school. The library now contains about seven hundred volumes, and is constantly increasing in size and usefulness. The works are



very carefully selected, and a better class of literature for general use in educating the public cannot be found in any library.

Thirty-five young men have taken full collegiate courses and graduated, sixteen at Harvard, fourteen at Dartmouth, two at Yale, and one each at Amherst, Brown and Union College, all having been natives of Boxford.

**BUSINESS AND MANUFACTURING.**—From the earliest settlement of the town to the present time, the principal occupation of the inhabitants has been that of agriculture; and from the primitive soil of their plains and hillsides they have ever drawn, by their industry and well-adapted labor, an independent livelihood, while many of them have prospered so well that they have become comparatively rich.

The power which the several streams in the town afford was utilized quite early for driving saw-mills and grist-mills. The first saw and grist-mill in town was erected by William Peabody, about 1695, near the residence of the late William A. Herrick, Esq., and it existed until 1845. In 1710 the saw-mill which stood in the rear of the residence of Mrs. John Q. Batchelder, was built by Thomas Hazen, Jacob Perley and Dr. David Wood. It was allowed to decay and fall down about twenty years ago. Pegs were manufactured at this mill for a while about twenty-five years ago. Howe's saw and grist-mills were established in 1710 by Richard Kimball, Ephraim Dorman and Samuel Fisk, as a saw-mill, and the grist-mill was built by Asa Foster about 1795. The Andrews' saw and grist-mills were established quite early in the eighteenth century. The Day mill in the West Parish was first built as a grist-mill by Richard Pearl about 1740; it was changed to a saw and box-mill, about 1848, by John Pearl and James Carleton, and was destroyed by fire about three years ago. The Herrick saw-mill was established by John Hale about 1760. Capt. Porter's saw-mill was erected by himself in 1836, and the grist-mill in 1839.

The town has generally been supplied with blacksmiths' and wheelwrights' shops. The present blacksmiths' shops are carried on by J. Horace Nason, Henry Newhall and Perley Brothers, and the wheelwright shops by J. Horace Nason and Perley Brothers. There are three stores in town, all grocery, whose trade is conducted by Frederic A. Howe, Gardner S. Morse and John Parkhurst.

The first public house in town was kept by William Foster, under a license from the town, at the residence of Mr. Solomon W. Howe, from 1687 for several years. Solomon Dodge was an inn-holder about 1754; an inn was kept by Lieutenant Asa Merrill in 1788; another by Phineas Cole in 1800; one by Deacon Parker Spofford in 1800; one by Captain Josiah Batchelder in 1840; another in the West Parish by Elisha G. Bunker in 1836, and by John Brown in 1837; and another at the Bunker

place by Mr. Bunker in 1840. Hotel Redington was opened by Mr. Daniel S. Gillis about three years since, and is the only public-house in town.

The earliest business in town, besides farming, was the "iron works," which were established by Henry Leonard of Lynn in 1639. The capital stock of the company which carried on the business was about a thousand pounds. Hubbard, in his History of New England, says that the ore here was "not inferior to that of Bilbao." The site of these works is just in the rear of the Andrews' mills. The business was discontinued shortly after 1680. Not only has mining for iron been carried on, but Mr. Nathan K. Fowler and D. Frank Harriman mined in 1875 and 1876 for silver and galena, and Mr. Harriman erected smelting works. Limestone has also been quarried in the town. The quarry lies about half a mile from and northeast of Stevens' Pond. The business was carried on about 1750 by Hon. Aaron Wood. The kiln, in which the limestone was burned, was situated near the pond.

Iron-smelting was established at the site of the match-factory, about 1770, by Samuel Bodwell of Methuen and Thomas Newman of Boxford, and iron-smelting was continued here until 1805. The site was afterwards used as a cotton-mill, then a grist-mill and for the manufacture of wooden trays, bowls, etc., then for cotton manufacturing again, this time producing yarn, wicking and batting. In 1867 the whole factory property was purchased by Messrs. Byam & Carlton, match manufacturers, who changed the machinery and the buildings themselves, and did the first day's work here at match-making September 2, 1867. About five years ago the factory was purchased by the Diamond Match Company, who have since conducted the business. The company have some thirty thousand dollars invested in the business here, and manufacture about three hundred and fifty gross per day, using some eighteen hundred tons of timber annually. A saw and box-mill is also run in connection with the factory. About forty hands is the usual number employed.

The late Captain Samuel Kimball established a peg-factory here in 1860, and afterwards, in company with Mr. William Sawyer, introduced box machinery. The mill was burned in the spring of 1875. On the same site, two years later, Mr. Henry M. Cross of Newburyport undertook the manufacture of silver polish from the marl deposits here.

Several shoe-manufactories have existed in the town. In 1837 the estimated value of shoes manufactured here was \$52,975. Among the manufacturers were Samuel Fowler, Marion Gould, John Hale, Isaac Hale, and Edward Howe & Son. The only firm doing business now is Edward Howe & Son. Mr. Howe began business in 1838, and was joined by his son, Deacon William W. Howe, in 1876. Their trade is generally confined to the Southern and Middle States.





**DISTINGUISHED NATIVES**—Boxford has probably given birth to more distinguished and enterprising persons than any other town of its size in the commonwealth. A large majority of the young men leave the old, dull home of their fathers and enter into the busier scenes of life, most of them becoming successful in the business or professional career which they had chosen, and making themselves an honor to the dear old home of their boyhood. A list of some of the more distinguished and professional natives, not already mentioned, is appended.

*Rev. Oliver Peabody* (1698-1752) graduated at Harvard College in 1721; was the first settled pastor of the Indian Church at Natick, and a missionary among the Mohegan Indians. He was noted as a theologian, and a kind and useful pastor.

*Rev. Moses Hale* (1701-1769) graduated at Harvard College in 1722. He was the first minister of Chester, N. H.

*Rev. James Scates* (1707-1776) graduated at Harvard College in 1733. He was a minister at Hopkinton, N. H., and other places.

*Rev. John Rogers* (1712-1789) graduated at Harvard College in 1732. He was the first pastor at Leominster, Mass. Dr. Bancroft says, "he was a man of intellectual powers and an inquisitive spirit, possessed of a name fitted to make a man independent of his opinions, and prepared to encounter every difficulty in defence of religious truth."

*Hon. Aaron Wood* (1719-1791), State Senator in 1781. Resided in Boxford.

*Col. Thomas Knowlton* (1740-1776). He was a brave officer in the Revolution, and an intimate friend of General Putnam, with whom he had shared the perils and sufferings of the French and Indian War. He was slain in battle at Harlem Heights, September 16, 1776. Washington said of him, "he would be an honor to any country."

*Rev. Stephen Peabody* (1741-1819) graduated at Harvard College in 1769. First minister at Atkinson, N. H., and a chaplain in the Revolution.

*Rev. David Jewett* (1743-1783) graduated at Harvard College in 1769. Preached at Candia, N. H., and was the first minister of Winthrop, Me.

*Rev. Benjamin Chadwick* (1745-1819) graduated at Harvard College in 1779. He was a clergyman.

*Dr. Edmund Chadwick* (1751-18—). He was a physician.

*Aaron Porter, M.D.* (1752-1837). He was a physician of eminence at Biddeford and Portland, Me.

*Major-General Amos Hovey* (1757-1838) resided at Salem. Officer in the State militia.

*Rev. Jacob Wood* (1757-1790) graduated at Dartmouth College in 1778; A.M. at Yale, 1783. He was a clergyman at Newbury, Vt.

*Rev. Humphrey Clark Perley* (1761-1838) graduated at Dartmouth College in 1791. He was settled in the ministry at Methuen and Beverly.

*Samuel Holyoke, A.M.*, (1762-1820) graduated at

Harvard College in 1789. He was widely known as a composer and publisher of music. He was the author of "The Columbian Repository of Sacred Music" and other works.

*Nathaniel Perley, Esq.*, (1763-1824) graduated at Dartmouth College in 1791. He was a prominent lawyer at Hallowell, Me.

*Dr. William Peabody* (1768-18—) was a physician at Frankfort and Corinth, Me.

*Samuel Peabody, Esq.*, (1775-1859) graduated at Dartmouth College in 1803. He was a lawyer in Sandwich, Epsom, and Tamworth, in New Hampshire, and in Andover, in Massachusetts.

*Joseph Hovey, Esq.*, (1776-1816) graduated at Harvard College in 1804. He was a lawyer in Haverhill.

*General Solomon Lowe* (1782-1861) was an officer in State militia, and resided in Boxford.

*Rufus Porter Hovey, Esq.*, (1790-1820) graduated at Harvard College in 1813. He was a lawyer in Lynn.

*Judge Enoch Wood Spafford* (1791-18—) was a lawyer and judge in California.

*Rufus Porter* (1792-1884) was a most prolific inventor, and the founder of the *Scientific American*, the leading American journal devoted to science and mechanics.

*Rev. Peter Sydney Eaton* (1798-1863) graduated at Harvard College in 1818, and at Andover Theological Seminary in 1822. He was pastor at West Amesbury, now Merrimac.

*Honorable Ira Perley, LL.D.*, (1799-1874) graduated at Dartmouth College in 1822. He practised law in Concord and Hanover, New Hampshire, and for several years was Chief-Justice of the Supreme Court of New Hampshire. He was also Treasurer of Dartmouth College, vice-president of the New England Historico-Genealogical Society, etc. In 1866, he delivered before the alumni of the college, the eulogy on the death of Rufus Choate and Daniel Webster, Dartmouth's two most distinguished sons. He was at the head of his class in college, and he held the same position in the bar, and on the bench.

*Dr. Daniel Perley* (1804-1881) graduated at Dartmouth College in 1823. He was a physician in Georgetown and Lynn.

*Rev. John Hubbard Eaton* (1806-18—) graduated at Harvard College in 1827. He was connected with the American Tract Society, at New York.

*Rev. Samuel Hopkins Emery* (1815) graduated at Amherst College in 1834. He is a clergyman in Taunton.

*Joseph Elbridge Bartlett* (original name Killam), M.D., (1819) graduated at the University of the City of New York with the degree of M.D. in 1846. He was a physician in Somerville, Charlestown and Boston, and now resides in the last-named city.

*Dr. Walter Henry Kimball* (1820-1880) graduated at Dartmouth College in 1841. He was a physician at Andover.



*Charles Israel Adams, Esq.*, (1823-1862) graduated at Dartmouth College in 1852. He was a lawyer in Boston.

*Henry Oliver Peabody* (1826) is the inventor of the famous "Peabody Ride."

*Rev. Albert Boardstreet Peabody* (1828) graduated at the Andover Theological Seminary in 1859. He was pastor at East Longmeadow, in Massachusetts, and at Stratham, and now at Candia, in New Hampshire.

*Cyrus William Bortlett* (original name *William*), M.D., (1829) graduated at Harvard College with the degree of M.D. in 1852. He practised medicine at Newton and Charlestown, in Massachusetts, and is now superintendent and physician of the Minnesota State Hospital for Insane, at St. Peter.

*William Augustus Herrick, Esq.*, (1831-1885) graduated at Dartmouth College in 1854. He was a lawyer in Boston, and also favorably known as a legal writer, having been the compiler of *Herrick's Town Officer*.

*George W. Atherton, LL.D.*, (1837) graduated at Yale College in 1863. He was a professor in St. John's College at Annapolis, Maryland, afterwards in the State University at Champaign, Illinois, and in Rutgers College, New Jersey, and is now the President of State College, in Pennsylvania.

*Professor James Hamilton Howe* (1856) graduated from Music Department of Boston University in 1882. He is dean of the Department of Music in De Pauw University, Greencastle, Ind.

*Silvey Perley, Esq.*, (1858) graduated at Boston University with the degree of LL.D. in 1886. He is a lawyer in Salem.

#### MEMBERS OF THE STATE SENATE AND LEGISLATURE.

SENATORS	
1781 Aaron Wood.	1735 Joseph Hale.
1800 James A. Palmer.	1760-8 John Symonds.
REPRESENTATIVES	
May 8, 1780 John Peabody.	1761-69 Aaron Wood.
Feb. 12, 1780 John Perley.	1771-74 Asa Perley.
Oct. 8, 1780 John Peabody.	1775-74 Aaron Wood.
Dec. 1, 1780 John Peabody.	1775 Asa Perley, on Pro.
Feb. 1, 1781 John Perley.	Ames Congress.
Oct. 1, 1781 John Perley.	1776-79 Aaron Wood.
Oct. 1, 1781 John Peabody.	1780-81 Asa Perley.
Dec. —, 1691 John Peabody.	1781-82 Isaac Adams.
June 8, 1692 John Peabody and	1782 Nathan Andrews.
Thomas Perley.	1783 Isaac Adams.
1695 John Peabody.	1784-89 Thomas Perley.
1698 John Peabody.	1811-17 Parker Spofford.
1700 John Peabody and	1815-17 Israel Foster.
Thomas Perley.	1818-21 Moses Dorman.
1702 Thomas Perley and	1822 Solomon Lowe.
William Foster.	1827-28 Solomon Lowe.
1703 Thomas Perley.	1829-31 Charles Peabody.
1704 Samuel Symonds.	1832-36 Moses Dorman.
1705 Thomas Perley.	1837-39 Joseph Kimball.
1706 Thomas Perley.	1840-40 Moses Kimball.
1711-13 John Peabody.	1841 Solomon Lowe.
1714-17 Joseph Hale.	1842 Benjamin Peabody.
1718-20 Thomas Perley.	1843-47 William Lowe.
1721-25 Joseph Hale.	1848-50 Enos Wood.
1726-27 Thomas Perley and	1851-52 Samuel H. Batchelder.
Stephen Peabody.	1853 George Pearl.
1728-32 Joseph Hale.	1854 Enos Wood.
1733 John Symonds.	1855 John K. Cole.
	1856 Jefferson Kimball.

1856 Roscoe W. Gage.  
1857 Charles Perley.

1879 William S. Coggin.  
1880 Wm. R. Kimball.

**TOWN TREASURERS OF BOXFORD.**—In the early history of the town the constables performed the duties of the collector of taxes and town treasurer. The following is a list of constables who served as town treasurers:

1686 Robert Stiles.	1694 John Kimball.
1687 William Peabody.	1695 John Chadwick.
1688 Thomas Perley.	1696 Daniel Wood.
1689 John Perley, Sr.	1697 Thomas Andrews.
1690 Ephraim Curtis.	1698 William Watson.
1691 Joseph Bick.	1699 Samuel Symonds.
1692 Joseph Andrews.	1700 Joseph Hale.
1693 Abraham Robinson.	1701 Zacharias Curtis.

The following is a list of town treasurers:

1702-06 Thomas Hazen.	1800 David Kimball, Jr.
1708 Joseph Hale.	1801-30 Amos Kimball.
1709 Thomas Hazen.	1831 Jacob Batchelder.
1711 Samuel Cook.	1832-33 Charles Peabody.
1712 John Woods.	1835 Abner Northey.
1713-20 Jacob Perley.	1836-37 Josiah Kimball.
1721-24 Samuel Foster.	1838-39 Amos Kimball.
1725 John Andrews, Jr.	1840 Moses Dorman.
1727-29 Joseph Symonds.	1841 Thomas S. Heycox.
1731 Jacob Perley.	1842-43 Samuel H. Batchelder.
1732-35 Jeremiah Perley.	1844 Moses Dorman.
1736-43 Jacob Smith.	1845 Richard Spofford.
1745 John Dorman.	1846 Samuel P. Peabody.
1746 Thomas Robinson.	1847 John F. Kimball.
1747-48 Robert Andrews.	1848-49 Oliver P. Kilham.
1749-51 Thomas Perley.	1850 William E. Kilham.
1752 Aaron Kimball.	1851 John Brown.
1753-54 Francis Perley.	1852-53 William E. Kimball.
1755 Aaron Kimball.	1854-55 William H. Wood.
1757-61 Francis Perley.	1856-62 William E. Kilham.
1762-71 Jonathan Wood.	1863 William R. Kimball.
1772-73 Aaron Wood.	1864 Joseph H. Jones.
1774-79 Nathan Wood.	1865-71 Joshua T. Day.
1780-88 William Perley.	1872-73 William E. Kilham.
1789 Aaron Wood.	1878-81 William R. Kimball.
1790 Jonathan Wood.	1882-84 Edward L. Pearl.
1791-98 Asa Peabody.	1885-87 Warren M. Cole.
1799 Parker Spofford.	

#### TOWN CLERKS OF BOXFORD.

1686-1710 John Peabody.	1818 Moses Dorman.
1711 Thomas Hazen.	1819 John Tyler.
1712-13 Thomas Heycox.	1820 Moses Dorman.
1714-15 Joseph Hale.	1821 Amos Kimball.
1716 Thomas Robinson.	1822 Moses Dorman.
1717 Joseph Hale.	1823 John Bacon.
1718 Thomas Robinson.	1824 Moses Dorman.
1719-20 Joseph Hale.	1825 John Bacon.
1721-22 Thomas Robinson.	1826 Charles Peabody.
1723-24 Thomas Robinson.	1827 George Pearl.
1725-26 Thomas Robinson.	1828 Phineas Barnes.
1727-28 Thomas Robinson.	1829 Benjamin Robinson.
1729-30 Thomas Robinson.	1830 Phineas Barnes.
1731-32 Thomas Robinson.	1831 Benjamin Robinson.
1733-34 Thomas Robinson.	1832 Phineas Barnes.
1735-36 Thomas Robinson.	1833 William Farham.
1737-38 Thomas Robinson.	1834 Samuel Kimball.
1739-40 Thomas Robinson.	1835 William Farham.
1741-42 Thomas Robinson.	1836 Samuel Kimball.
1743-44 Thomas Robinson.	1837 Moses Kimball.
1745-46 Thomas Robinson.	1838 Samuel Kimball.
1747-48 Thomas Robinson.	1839 Joshua T. Day.
1749-50 Thomas Robinson.	1840 Samuel Kimball.
1751-52 Thomas Robinson.	1841 Joshua T. Day.
1753-54 Thomas Robinson.	1842 Samuel H. Batchelder.
1755-56 Thomas Robinson.	1843 George Pearl.



1814. Samuel H. Bitchelder.  
1815. George Pearl.  
1816. Moses Dorman.  
1817. William R. Cole.  
1818. William Lowe.  
1819. William R. Cole.  
1820. Moses Dorman.  
1821. John E. Kimball.  
1822. William F. Killam.  
1823. Joshua T. Day.  
1824. William Lowe.  
1825. William H. Wood.  
1826. William E. Killam.  
1827. William H. Wood.  
1828. William E. Killam.

1829. William R. Cole.  
1830. William E. Killam.  
1831. William H. Wood.  
1832. William E. Killam.  
1833. William H. Wood.  
1834. William E. Killam.  
1835. William R. Cole.  
1836. Roscoe W. Gage.  
1837. William R. Kimball.  
1838. Thomas P. Dorman.  
1839. Amos Dorman.  
1840. Benjamin S. Barnes.  
1841. Amos Dorman.  
1842. Sidney Perley.  
1843. Benjamin S. Barnes.

## SELECTMEN OF BOXFORD.

1687.  
John Peabody, Sr.  
William Watson.  
Daniel Wood.  
John Andrews.  
Abraham Redington, Jr.

1688.  
John Chadwick.  
Thomas Andrews.  
Daniel Wood.  
Abraham Redington, Jr.  
Thomas Hazen.  
John Peabody, Sr.

1689.  
Joseph Bixby.  
Thomas Hazen.  
William Foster, Sr.  
Joseph Andrews.  
William Peabody.

1690.  
John Peabody.  
Nathaniel Brown.  
Joseph Peabody, Sr.  
Thomas Redington.  
Thomas Perley.

1691.  
John Peabody.  
Moses Tyler.  
Thomas Andrews.  
Samuel Symonds.  
John Kimball.

1692.  
Samuel Symonds, Sr.  
Thomas Hazen.  
Joseph Peabody, Sr.  
John Andrews.  
Robert Loomis, Sr.

1693.  
John Peabody, Sr.  
John Chadwick.  
Zachariah Curtis.  
Daniel Wood, Sr.  
Joseph Bixby.

1694.  
Thomas Perley.  
Thomas Hazen.  
Moses Tyler.  
William Foster, Sr.  
Ephraim Curtis.

1695.  
John Perley.  
Moses Tyler.  
Joseph Bixby.  
John Andrews.  
Joseph Peabody.

1696.  
John Peabody.  
William Peabody.

Thomas Andrews.  
Jonathan Foster.  
Jonathan Bixby.

1697.  
Joseph Bixby.  
Joseph Andrews.  
William Peabody.  
John Chadwick.  
Thomas Perley, Jr.

1698.  
John Peabody.  
John Andrews.  
Samuel Symonds, Sr.  
Joseph Hale.  
Moses Tyler.

1699.  
Thomas Perley.  
John Peabody.  
John Andrews.  
John Loomis.  
William Peabody.

1700.  
John Perley.  
Joseph Bixby.  
Joseph Andrews.  
Joseph Peabody.  
Joseph Peabody.

1701.  
Samuel Symonds.  
Thomas Perley.  
Thomas Redington.  
John Kimball.  
Samuel Smith.

1702.  
Samuel Symonds.  
Daniel Wood.  
Joseph Hale.  
John Andrews.  
John Stiles.

1703.  
John Peabody.  
Thomas Hazen.  
Jonathan Foster.  
Samuel Symonds.  
Timothy Dorman.

1704.  
Thomas Perley.  
Joseph Bixby.  
Abraham Redington.  
Joseph Andrews.  
Josiah Bridges.

1705.  
John Peabody.  
Joseph Peabody, Jr.  
David Wood.  
Nathaniel Perley.  
Zachariah Curtis.

1706.  
Thomas Hazen.  
David Wood.  
Richard Kimball.  
Samuel Symonds, Sr.  
Jonathan Bixby.

1707.  
John Peabody.  
Thomas Perley.  
Joseph Hale.  
Samuel Foster.  
Thomas Wilkins.

1708.  
Thomas Hazen.  
Abraham Redington.  
Zachariah Curtis.  
Luke Hovey.  
Jacob Perley.

1709.  
Thomas Perley.  
John Andrews.  
Joseph Bixby.  
Luke Hovey.  
Samuel Fisk.

1710.  
Samuel Symonds, Sr.  
Thomas Jewett.  
Jonathan Foster.  
Daniel Kenney.  
Samuel Fisk.

1711.  
John Peabody.  
Daniel Wood.  
Timothy Foster.  
Cornelius Brown.  
Thomas Jewett.

1712.  
John Andrews.  
Samuel Symonds, Jr.  
Samuel Foster.  
Moses Tyler.  
Jacob Perley.

1713.  
Jonathan Foster.  
Nathaniel Peabody.  
Thomas Cummings.  
David Peabody.  
John Andrews.

1714.  
Joseph Bixby.  
John Tyler.  
Jeremiah Perley.  
Jacob Smith.  
Thomas Perley, Jr.

1715.  
Joseph Hale.  
Timothy Dorman.  
Samuel Symonds.  
John Chadwick.  
Thomas Spofford.

1716.  
Thomas Jewett.  
Jonathan Bixby.  
Job Tyler.  
John Symonds.  
Daniel Kenney.

1717.  
Thomas Perley, Jr.  
Thomas Perley, Sr.  
John Andrews.  
John Howe.  
Joseph Loomis.

1718.  
Joseph Bixby.  
Cornelius Brown.  
Joseph Peabody.  
Samuel Symonds.  
Ephraim Dorman.

1719.  
Joseph Hale.  
Thomas Killam.  
Luke Hovey.  
Joseph Symonds.  
John Wood.

1720.  
Thomas Perley, Jr.  
Joseph Bixby.  
Thomas Wilkins.  
Nathan Loomis.  
John Andrews, Jr.

1721.  
Joseph Bixby.  
Thomas Jewett.  
Thomas Cummings.  
Richard Peabody.  
Nathan Peabody.

1722.  
Timothy Dorman.  
Jeremiah Perley.  
John Chadwick.  
Thomas Redington.  
Samuel Symonds.

1723.  
Joseph Bixby.  
Stephen Peabody.  
Samuel Symonds.  
Thomas Perley.  
John Kimball.

1724.  
David Peabody.  
Stephen Peabody.  
Daniel Kenney.  
Timothy Stiles.  
Nathaniel Perkins.

1725.  
Stephen Peabody.  
John Stiles, Sr.  
John Symonds.  
Joseph Hale, Jr.  
Jonathan Tyler.

1726.  
Thomas Jewett.  
David Peabody.  
Robert Andrews.  
Jacob Hale.  
Thomas Redington.

1727.  
Thomas Perley.  
Joseph Hale.  
Samuel Pickard.  
Nathaniel Symonds.  
John Howe.

1728.  
Joseph Hale.  
Thomas Cummings.  
Jacob Smith.  
Timothy Stiles.  
Moses Tyler.

1729.  
Stephen Peabody.  
James Curtis.  
Jacob Smith.  
Jacob Perley.  
John Stiles, Jr.





## 1730.

Joseph Hale,  
Joseph Symonds,  
Thomas Perley,  
Thomas Andrews,  
John Wood.

## 1731.

Joseph Symonds,  
Stephen Peabody,  
Thomas Cummings,  
Jacob Smith,  
Samuel Foster.

## 1732.

Jacob Perley,  
Robert Andrews,  
Joseph Hale, Jr.,  
Zephaniah Foster,  
John Dixey.

## 1733.

Stephen Peabody,  
Nathaniel Symonds,  
Jeremiah Perley,  
Jonathan Foster,  
Samuel Gould.

## 1734.

John Symonds,  
Joseph Hale, Jr.,  
Thomas Worthington,  
Timothy Stiles,  
Zachariah Foster.

## 1735.

Joseph Hale,  
Jacob Smith,  
Jonathan Foster,  
Timothy Stiles,  
Asa Perley.

## 1736.

John Symonds,  
Luke Hovey,  
Jonathan Foster,  
Stephen Peabody,  
John Killam.

## 1737.

Joseph Symonds,  
John Kimball,  
Joseph Hale,  
Thomas Peabody,  
Jeremiah Foster.

## 1738.

Joseph Symonds,  
Thomas Perley,  
Robert Andrews,  
Benjamin Porter,  
Gideon Bixby.

## 1739.

Robert Andrews,  
Benjamin Porter,  
John Andrews,  
Thomas Peabody,  
John Dorman.

## 1740.

Thomas Andrews,  
Joseph Hale,  
Jonathan Sherwin,  
Samuel Gould,  
Nathan Kimball.

## 1741.

Robert Andrews,  
Zachariah Foster,  
Thomas Peabody,  
Nathan Peabody,  
Thomas Perley, Jr.

## 1742.

Robert Andrews,  
John Kimball,  
Thomas Andrews,  
Luke Hovey, Jr.,  
Jeremiah Foster.

## 1743.

Robert Andrews,  
Benjamin Porter,  
Joseph Symonds,  
Luke Hovey,  
Thomas Worthington.

## 1744.

Robert Andrews,  
Benjamin Porter,  
Joseph Hale, Jr.,  
Thomas Worthington,  
Job Tyler.

## 1745.

Joseph Symonds,  
Zephaniah Foster,  
Nathaniel Perkins,  
Thomas Peabody,  
John Dorman.

## 1746.

Joseph Symonds,  
Thomas Peabody,  
Amos Pease,  
Jonathan Foster,  
Jeremiah Foster.

## 1747.

Jonathan Foster,  
Thomas Worthington,  
Nathaniel Symonds,  
Thomas Peabody,  
Thomas Perley.

## 1748.

Benjamin Porter,  
Joseph Symonds,  
Luke Hovey, Jr.,  
Gideon Bixby,  
Joseph Hale, Jr.

## 1749.

Thomas Worthington,  
John Hovey,  
Nathaniel Symonds,  
Aaron Kimball,  
Isaac Adams.

## 1750.

Thomas Worthington,  
Jonathan Foster,  
John Peabody, Jr.,  
Luke Hovey, Jr.,  
John Hale.

## 1751.

Jonathan Foster,  
Joseph Hale, Jr.,  
Aaron Kimball,  
Joseph Hovey,  
Jacob Cummings.

## 1752.

Thomas Peabody,  
John Dorman,  
Francis Perley,  
Richard Kimball,  
John Hale.

## 1753.

Jonathan Foster,  
William Foster,  
Richard Kimball,  
John Peabody,  
Solomon Wood.

## 1754.

Thomas Peabody,  
Thomas Perley,  
Job Tyler,  
Thomas Andrews,  
Paul Prichard.

## 1755.

Thomas Perley,  
Isaac Adams,  
Jacob Cummings,  
Joseph Hovey,  
Solomon Wood.

## 1756.

John Peabody,  
Luke Hovey,  
Solomon Wood,  
Nathan Barker,  
Samuel Fisk.

## 1757.

Thomas Perley,  
Joseph Hovey,  
Aaron Kimball,  
Moses Porter,  
Jacob Cummings.

## 1758.

Jonathan Foster,  
Asa Perley,  
Ebenezer Killam,  
Richard Kimball,  
Solomon Wood.

## 1759.

Jonathan Foster,  
Francis Perley,  
Samuel Fisk,  
John Chadwick,  
Nathan Wood.

## 1760.

Thomas Perley,  
Luke Hovey,  
Aaron Kimball,  
Gideon Tyler,  
Jacob Cummings.

## 1761.

Thomas Perley,  
Luke Hovey,  
Aaron Kimball,  
Gideon Tyler,  
Jacob Cummings.

## 1762.

Aaron Wood,  
Luke Hovey,  
Jacob Cummings,  
Isaac Adams,  
James Andrews.

## 1763.

Aaron Wood,  
Luke Hovey,  
Isaac Adams,  
Jacob Cummings,  
James Andrews.

## 1764.

Aaron Wood,  
Isaac Adams,  
Aaron Kimball,  
John Chadwick,  
Asa Perley.

## 1765.

Aaron Wood,  
Joseph Hovey,  
Jacob Cummings,  
Moses Porter,  
Ebenezer Killam.

## 1766.

Thomas Perley,  
Samuel Kimball,  
Abraham Worthington,  
Jonathan Foster,  
Paul Prichard.

## 1767.

Asa Perley,  
Richard Kimball,  
Nathan Andrews,  
Nathaniel Peabody,  
James Peabody.

## 1768.

Asa Perley,  
Joseph Hovey,  
Ebenezer Killam,  
Stephen Kimball,  
Paul Prichard.

## 1769.

Asa Perley,  
Isaac Adams,  
Richard Foster,  
Moses Porter,  
Nathaniel Perley.

## 1770.

John Hale,  
Samuel Kimball,  
Nathan Andrews,  
Nathaniel Peabody,  
Jacob Cummings.

## 1771.

Asa Perley,  
Isaac Adams,  
Jacob Cummings,  
Joseph Hovey,  
Paul Prichard.

## 1772.

Nathan Wood,  
Isaac Adams,  
William Perley,  
Jonathan Foster,  
Richard Peabody.

## 1773.

Nathan Andrews,  
Isaac Adams,  
Moses Putnam,  
John Cushing,  
William Perley.

## 1774.

Asa Perley,  
Isaac Adams,  
John Cushing,  
John Robinson,  
Benjamin Perley.

## 1775.

Nathan Andrews,  
Isaac Adams,  
Nathan Wood,  
John Cushing,  
Moses Putnam.

## 1776.

Nathan Andrews,  
Isaac Adams,  
Nathan Wood,  
John Cushing,  
Richard Peabody.

## 1777.

Asa Perley,  
John Chadwick,  
Benjamin Perley,  
Samuel Spillford,  
Jacob Andrews.



## 1778.

Asa Perley.  
John Cushing.  
Benjamin Perley.  
Asa Merrill.  
John Wallis.

## 1779.

William Perley.  
Isaac Adams.  
Benjamin Perley.  
Lemuel Wood.  
John Dorman.

## 1780.

Nathan Andrews.  
Lemuel Wood.  
John Curtis.  
Bradstreet Tyler.  
Asa Peabody.

## 1781.

Aaron Wood.  
Isaac Adams.  
Benjamin Perley.  
Lemuel Wood.  
Moses Peabody.

## 1782.

Asa Perley.  
Asa Merrill.  
John Dorman.  
Lemuel Wood.  
Francis Perley.

## 1783.

Nathan Wood.  
John Robinson.  
Stephen Symonds.  
Jonathan Foster.  
Francis Perley.

## 1784.

Nathan Andrews.  
William Porter.  
Francis Perley.  
Samuel Carleton, Jr.  
Asa Peabody.

## 1785.

Francis Perley.  
Lemuel Wood.  
Jonathan Wood.  
William Porter.  
Thomas Perley, Jr.

## 1786.

Francis Perley.  
Samuel Carleton, Jr.  
Thomas Perley, Jr.  
Lemuel Wood.  
Samuel Kimball, Jr.

## 1787.

Nathan Andrews.  
Jonathan Foster.  
Samuel Kimball, Jr.  
Thomas Adams.  
Amos Perley.

## 1788.

John Dorman.  
John Robinson.  
Francis Perley.  
Ivory Hovey.  
Aaron Perley.

## 1789.

Richard Foster.  
Lemuel Wood.  
Samuel Kimball, Jr.  
Moses Carleton.  
Daniel Nurse.

## 1790.

Nathan Andrews.  
Lemuel Wood.  
Richard Foster.  
Moses Carleton.  
Stephen Peabody.

## 1791.

John Dorman.  
Ivory Hovey.  
James Clute.  
Parker Spofford.  
Simeon Stiles.

## 1792.

John Dorman.  
Ivory Hovey.  
James Clute.  
Parker Spofford.  
Simeon Stiles.

## 1793.

Francis Perley.  
Lemuel Wood.  
David Kimball, Jr.  
Parker Spofford.  
Simeon Stiles.

## 1794.

Francis Perley.  
Lemuel Wood.  
David Kimball.  
Moses Carleton.  
Parker Spofford.

## 1795.

Francis Perley.  
John Tyler.  
David Kimball.  
Samuel Chadwick.  
Moses Dorman.

## 1796.

Thomas Perley.  
John Tyler.  
Timothy Dorman.  
Samuel Chadwick.  
Moses Dorman.

## 1797.

Thomas Perley.  
Enos Rummells.  
Samuel Perley.  
Samuel Spofford, Jr.  
Moses Dorman.

## 1798.

Thomas Perley.  
Enos Rummells.  
Moses Dorman.  
Samuel Spofford.

## 1799.

Thomas Perley.  
Israel Adams.  
Nathan Andrews, Jr.  
Israel Foster.  
Amos Perley.

## 1800.

Thomas Perley.  
Israel Adams.  
Nathan Andrews, Jr.  
Israel Foster.  
Amos Perley.

## 1801.

Thomas Perley.  
Moses Carleton.  
Jacob Andrews.  
John Kimball.  
Joseph Symonds.

## 1802.

Thomas Perley.  
Moses Carleton.  
Jacob Andrews.  
John Kimball.  
Joseph Symonds.

## 1803.

Thomas Perley.  
Lemuel Wood.  
Jacob Gould, Jr.  
Israel Adams.  
Israel Herrick.

## 1804.

Thomas Perley.  
Enos Rummells.  
Joseph Symonds, Jr.  
Thomas Spofford.  
Israel Herrick.

## 1805.

Thomas Perley.  
Isaac Barker.  
Joseph Symonds, Jr.  
John Kimball.  
Israel Herrick.

## 1806.

Thomas Perley.  
John Kimball.  
Joseph Symonds, Jr.  
Enos Rummells.  
John Dorman.

## 1807.

Moses Dorman.  
John Kimball.  
Stephen Spofford.  
Samuel Carleton.  
Amos Perley.

## 1808.

Jonathan Foster, Jr.  
Moses Dorman.  
Stephen Spofford.  
Enos Rummells.  
Jacob Gould.

## 1809.

Moses Dorman.  
Jonathan Foster.  
Parker Spofford.  
Daniel Adams.  
Daniel Chapman.

## 1810.

Moses Dorman.  
Jonathan Foster, Jr.  
Parker Spofford.  
Daniel Adams.  
Daniel Chapman.

## 1811.

Moses Dorman.  
Samuel Spofford.  
Stephen Spofford.  
Samuel Kimball.  
Abraham Perley.

## 1812.

Stephen Spofford.  
John Kimball.  
Simeon Pearl.  
Parker Spofford.  
Joseph Symonds, Jr.

## 1813.

Moses Dorman.  
John Kimball.  
Joseph Symonds, Jr.  
Simeon Pearl.  
Jacob Gould.

## 1814.

Moses Dorman.  
John Kimball.  
Joseph Symonds, Jr.  
Simeon Pearl.  
Jacob Gould.

## 1815.

Moses Dorman.  
John Kimball.  
Israel Foster.

## 1816.

Moses Dorman.  
John Kimball.  
Amos Perley.  
Simeon Pearl.  
Solomon Lowe.

## 1817.

Moses Dorman.  
Israel Foster.  
Amos Perley.  
John Tyler.  
Artemus Kimball.

## 1818.

Moses Dorman.  
Amos Kimball, Jr.  
Jacob Gould.  
Simeon Pearl.  
Abraham Perley.

## 1819.

Moses Dorman.  
Amos Kimball, Jr.  
Jacob Gould.  
Simeon Pearl.  
Abraham Perley.

## 1820.

Moses Dorman.  
Amos Kimball, Jr.  
Jacob Gould.  
Simeon Pearl.  
Abraham Perley.

## 1821.

Moses Dorman.  
Seth Burnham.  
Charles Peabody.  
Simeon Pearl.

## 1822.

Moses Dorman.  
Jonathan Foster.  
Simeon Pearl.  
John Tyler, Jr.

## 1823.

Moses Dorman.  
Aaron Spofford.  
Josiah Kimball.

## 1824.

Moses Dorman.  
Simeon Pearl.  
Aaron Spofford.

## 1825.

John Bacon.  
Solomon Lowe.  
Asa Foster.

## 1826.

Josiah Kimball.  
Daniel Wood.  
Benjamin Pearl.

## 1827.

Samuel W. Clement.  
Josiah Kimball.  
Charles Peabody.







*Daniel Wood*



## 1828.

Samuel Kimball.  
Samuel W. Clement.  
Edmund Barker.

## 1829.

Samuel W. Clement.  
Samuel Kimball.  
Phineas Barnes.

## 1830.

Samuel Kimball.  
George Pearl.  
Benjamin Robinson.

## 1831.

Thomas S. Hovey.  
Samuel Kimball.  
Moses Dorman, Jr.

## 1832.

Moses Dorman, Jr.  
Simon Pearl.  
Amos Kimball.

## 1833.

Amos Kimball.  
Moses Dorman, Jr.  
Phineas Barnes.

## 1834.

Moses Dorman, Jr.  
Amos Kimball.  
William Farham.

## 1835.

Amos Kimball.  
Moses Dorman, Jr.  
George W. Sawyer.

## 1836.

Moses Dorman, Jr.  
Amos Kimball.  
Thomas S. Hovey.

## 1837.

Joshua T. Day.  
Charles Peabody.  
George W. Sawyer.

## 1838.

George W. Sawyer.  
Joshua T. Day.  
Amos Kimball.

## 1839.

Joshua T. Day.  
Samuel Andrews.  
John Sawyer.

## 1840.

Moses Dorman, Jr.  
Joshua T. Day.  
George Pearl.

## 1841.

Joshua T. Day.  
Moses Dorman, Jr.  
William H. Herrick.

## 1842.

Moses Dorman, Jr.  
Samuel W. Clement.  
George Pearl.

## 1843.

Joshua T. Day.  
William H. Herrick.  
John K. Cole.

## 1844.

Moses Dorman, Jr.  
George Pearl.  
William R. Kimball.

## 1845.

Joshua T. Day.  
William H. Herrick.  
Ancill Dorman.

## 1846.

Moses Dorman, Jr.  
William R. Kimball.  
S. W. Jenkins.

## 1847.

George Pearl.  
Ancill Dorman.  
Moses Dorman, Jr.

## 1848.

Moses Dorman, Jr.  
George Pearl.  
William R. Cole.

## 1849.

Joshua T. Day.  
Ancill Dorman.  
William Lowe.

## 1850.

Ancill Dorman.  
Joshua T. Day.  
Benjamin S. Barnes.

## 1851.

William R. Cole.  
Ancill Dorman.  
Benjamin S. Barnes.

## 1852.

Ancill Dorman.  
William R. Cole.  
John F. Kimball.

## 1853.

John F. Kimball.  
Moses Dorman.  
Benjamin S. Barnes.

## 1854.

Moses Dorman.  
Oliver P. Killam.  
John F. Kimball.

## 1855.

John F. Kimball.  
William Lowe.  
Leonard Perley.

## 1856.

Moses Dorman.  
George Pearl.  
William R. Cole.

## 1857.

John F. Kimball.  
William E. Killam.  
William H. Herrick.

## 1858.

William E. Killam.  
John F. Kimball.  
William R. Cole.

## 1859.

William R. Cole.  
William E. Killam.  
Benjamin S. Barnes.

## 1860.

William E. Killam.  
William R. Cole.  
Joshua T. Day.

## 1861.

William R. Cole.  
William E. Killam.  
John K. Cole.

## 1862.

William E. Killam.  
George W. Chadwick.  
Thomas L. Spofford.

## 1863.

John F. Kimball.  
William E. Killam.  
Israel Herrick.

## 1864.

William E. Killam.  
Joshua T. Day.  
William R. Cole.

## 1865.

John F. Kimball.  
Benjamin S. Barnes.  
Edward Howe.

## 1866.

Ancill Dorman.  
John F. Kimball.  
Oliver P. Killam.

## 1867.

John F. Kimball.  
Ancill Dorman.  
Roscoe W. Gage.

## 1868.

Roscoe W. Gage.  
Joshua T. Day.  
John Pearl.

## 1869.

George W. Chadwick.  
William E. Killam.  
John K. Cole.

## 1870.

Ancill Dorman.  
George W. Chadwick.  
Joshua T. Day.

## 1871.

George W. Chadwick.  
Ancill Dorman.  
John K. Cole.

## 1872.

Thomas P. Dorman.  
George W. Chadwick.  
William R. Kimball.

## 1873.

Oliver P. Killam.  
Ancill Dorman.  
John K. Cole.

## 1874.

Ancill Dorman.  
George W. Chadwick.  
Israel F. Spofford.

## 1875.

George W. Chadwick.  
Ancill Dorman.  
John K. Cole.

## 1876.

Ancill Dorman.  
George W. Chadwick.  
Isaac W. Andrew.

## 1877.

George W. Chadwick.  
John K. Cole.  
Ancill Dorman.

## 1878.

Ancill Dorman.  
George W. Chadwick.  
James H. Nason.

## 1879.

George W. Chadwick.  
Benjamin S. Barnes.  
John K. Cole.

## 1880.

John Parkhurst.  
George W. Chadwick.  
Alonzo J. Henley.

## 1881.

George W. Chadwick.  
John Parkhurst.  
Charles Perley, 2d.

## 1882.

John Parkhurst.  
George W. Chadwick.  
Israel F. Spofford.

## 1883.

George W. Chadwick.  
John Parkhurst.  
Charles Perley, 2d.

## 1884.

Ancill Dorman.  
James W. Chadwick.  
James H. Nason.

## 1885.

George W. Chadwick.  
Charles Perley, 2d.  
John Parkhurst.

## 1886.

John Parkhurst.  
George W. Chadwick.  
William K. Cole.

## 1887.

George W. Chadwick.  
John Parkhurst.  
Stephen A. Bixby.

## BIOGRAPHICAL.

## DANIEL WOOD.

The parents of Mr. Wood were, Lemuel born October 25, 1745, and Frances (Tyler), born November, 20, 1753; they were married March 21, 1782. From this union there were seven children, and Daniel was the sixth child; he was born February 10, 1793, and when he was but six years of age his father had him helping about the shop in the making of shoes. Daniel was also brought up on the farm, which at his father's death was encumbered for about all it was worth, but having a love for the old home, he concluded to remove these claims, and by his industry and economy he soon succeeded.

His education was limited, as he only had the



advantages of the common schools of that period. He married first, Maria, daughter of Isaac Barker, November 20, 1820; by this union there was one child, William H. born in the year 1821, who still lives with his father, and is married. Mr. Wood was married the second time to Abigail S. the daughter of Abram Tyler, she died April, 1879; and by this union there were three children,—Maria Louise, Samuel Eaton and Louise Maria. They all died quite young.

## CHAPTER LXIV.

### TOPSFIELD.

BY SIDNEY PERLEY.

**FIRST SETTLEMENT, GENERAL HISTORY, ETC.—** The present territory of Topsfield was originally contained in Ipswich and Salem. The locality was called by the Indians Shenewmedy, and was the home of one of the clans of the Agawams. The first English settlers called it New Meadows, probably on account of the extensive tracts of meadow land in its immediate vicinity.

The English residents came here as early as 1635. The very first settlers were Allan Perley, an emigrant from England, and ancestor of the Perley family in America; William Towne, an emigrant from Bristol, England; Alexander Knight; Zachæus Gould, from Hemel Hempstead, England, and ancestor of most of the American Goulds; John Wildes; John Redington; George Bunker; Lieut. Francis Peabody, an emigrant from England, and ancestor of the Peabody family in America; Daniel Clark, ancestor of the Topsfield Clarks; William Howard; and others. A very good list of the early settlers, with the dates of their first appearance, has been made up as follows: Thomas Averill, 1661; William Averill, 1666; Thomas Baker, 1661; Francis Bates, 1659; Benjamin Bixby, 1634; Daniel Bourman, 1666; Michael Bowden, 1659; John Bradstreet, 1661; Edmund Bridges, 1659; Thomas Browning, 1661; George Bunker, 1657; Isaac Burton, 1692; Anthony Carroll, 1658; Daniel Clark, 1645; Isaac Cummings, 1652; John Curtis, 1672; John Davis, 1672; Timothy Day, 1679; John Death, 1670; Thomas Dorman, 1661; Michael Dwinell, 1668; Isaac Easty, 1658; Zerubabel Endicott, 1695; William Evans, 1661; John French, 1664; Zachæus Gould, 1638; George Hadley, 1650; Thomas Hobbs, 1664; John Hobson, 1677; John Hovey, 1664; John How, 1661; William Howard, 1650; Samuel Howlett, 1658; John Kenney, 1683; Alexander Knight, 1645; John Lane, 1676; Jonathan Look, 1678; William Nichols, 1661; Francis Peabody, 1658; Thomas Perkins, 1658; William Perkins, 1655; Allan Perley, 1635; William Prichett, 1668; Abraham Red-

ington, 1615; John Redington, 1649; John Robinson, 1668; Walter Roper, 1652; Peter Shumway, 1677; Robert Smith, 1661; William Smith, 1657; Matthew Stanley, 1659; William Towne, 1651; Luke Waking, 1682; James Waters, 1669; Philip Welch, 1670; John Wildes, 1658; Jesiah Wood, 1695; and Nathaniel Wood, 1693.

The first notice of Topsfield is contained in an order of the General Court, dated on the 4th of the 7th month, 1639. By this order certain lands lying near Ipswich River were granted for a village to the inhabitants of Salem. Although by this order Salem people alone had lawful authority to settle there, several families in Ipswich made their homes with the settlers from Salem; and "the Ipswich people" maintained preaching here for two years before they had liberty to take up grants of land in the settlement. September 4, 1643, the General Court ordered that

"Whereas at the Court holden at Boston the 4th 5th mo, 1639, there was certaine land lying neere Ipswich Ryver granted for a village, eithr to some of the inhabitants of Salem or to some of the inhabitants of Ipswich, who have farmes near unto the said land, to be enjoyed by those who first settled a village there, they both promising to sit together; howsoever the said mentioneth onely Salem inhabitants, & as much as the said inhabitants of Ipswich, viz. Mr. Bradstreet, Mr. Symonds, Mr. Whittingham, Mr. White, Paine, Mr. Robert Paine, & such othr of Ipswich or Salem as they shall asssociate to themselves, shall have liberty to settle a village near the river of Ipswich, as it may be most convenient for them to w<sup>ch</sup> the foresaid land shall be giv<sup>g</sup>, viz. s<sup>t</sup> that w<sup>ch</sup> lyeth near the said river, not formerly granted to any towne or peop<sup>l</sup>, provide that any of the inhabitants of Salem, who have farmes near unto the said land now granted, shall have liberty for one yeare next comyng to buyne w<sup>th</sup> the said village & to have their equall and proportionable priviledge in the same; And whereas M<sup>r</sup>. Bradstreet hath liberty granted him to take his farme of 500 ac. in the next convenient place that is fit for a farme, to that w<sup>ch</sup> is granted to M<sup>r</sup>. John Endicott w<sup>ch</sup> may bee purchased to the said village, it is theretoe ordered that the said M<sup>r</sup>. Bradstreete shall have liberty to take his said farme of 500 ac. in any other place not yet granted to any towne or pson, nor given all to any plantation made or to be made, w<sup>ch</sup>, when hee hath so done & manifested the same to this C<sup>o</sup>t, his aforesaid grant shall be forthw<sup>l</sup> bee voyde & the said land shall belong to the village before mentioned, to be disposed of by the inhabitant thereof for the good of the whole."

Most of the early settlers lived on the north side of the river. On the south side the meadows stretched away for a long distance; some of the upland was under cultivation, but most of it was covered by the "Salem woods," when Topsfield had been settled but a few years.

The General Court declare, October 18, 1648, that "the village at the newe medowes at Ipswich is named Topsfield."

The population increased, more houses were built, and the little hamlet of a few cottages had become a settlement of some consequence, when the General Court granted it a town charter, as the following copy of the record shows:

"At a third session of the General Court, held at Boston Oct. 18, 1650. In ans<sup>r</sup> to the request of Zachæus Gould & William Howard, in the behalfe of Topsfield, the Court doth grant that Topsfield shall from henceforth be a towne, & have pow<sup>r</sup> within themselves to order all civill affairs, in other townes have."<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Cleveland says that the date of incorporation is October 15, 1650. We find that the General Court also order, October 16, 1650,— "In answer to the petition of the inhabitants of Topsfield, it is ordered by this





The town was called Topsfield, probably from Topesfield, a small parish, about four miles west-north-west from Castle Hedingham, in Essex-shire, England, though no reason is known why that name should have been selected, unless some of the early settlers came from that place in England.

The records of the early town meetings are gone, so that the names of the first officers of the town cannot be ascertained. In 1661, however, we have found that "Ensigne Howlett, Frances Peabody and John Redington" were chosen selectmen. Lieutenant Francis Peabody was town clerk, probably, from the incorporation of the town until 1682, when John Gould was chosen his successor.

Topsfield was a part of the old sachem, *Muschonomet's*, territory; and although he gave a deed of the land then within the bounds of Ipswich, which included a part of what was afterwards Topsfield, to John Winthrop, Jr., in 1638, his grandson, Samuel English, made a claim upon the town for the land, claiming title thereto by descent. Upon the payment of three pounds in money, he gave the town a quit-claim deed, bearing date March 28, 1701.

Although the town was incorporated in 1650, its boundaries were not settled for a long time afterward, with the exception of Rowley. Rowley bounds were fixed so early that their exact location was partially forgotten in a few years; and after Boxford was incorporated in 1685, a contention, continuing for forty-six years, ensued before the line was agreed upon. Town meetings were held, committees and attorneys were appointed, prosecutions were begun in the courts, and the action even of the General Court was repeatedly invoked. The line between Topsfield and Salem was agreed upon in 1659,<sup>1</sup> and approved by the General Court in 1664. The Ipswich line was established after a short quarrel. With Wenham, the limits were easily settled, but the duty of the perambulators on that side of the town was rather severe. The course which they were compelled to take, as from time to time they went to renew or identify the bounds, carried them through a bog, in which they often got badly mired. To prevent this discomfort, the line was finally altered by an amicable adjustment.

At a town-meeting, held June 10, 1726, a petition signed by Thomas Claves, Edward Putnam, Joseph Knight and five others, praying that the town would grant them liberty to join with some families of Salem, Boxford and Andover, to be set off as a distinct town, was presented. The town would not listen to the petition. However, the petitioners, with the others mentioned, presented their petition to the General Court, which duly considered, and, two years

later, granted it. These families, thus set off from the towns named, were incorporated as the town of Middleton June 20, 1728. The four families on the east side of the river, now included within the town of Topsfield, originally belonged to Ipswich. The Lamson and Cummings places were settled nearly as early as the village of Topsfield, and helped to support the ministry at Topsfield from the earliest date. From 1729 to 1774 these families struggled to free themselves from Ipswich, and to be annexed to Topsfield. The town of Ipswich repeatedly opposed their petitions, and at last they asked the General Court that their prayer might be granted. This was satisfactorily answered by the Court, February 11, 1774, when it ordered that the families of Joseph Cummings, John Lampson, Israel Clark, Joseph Cummings, Jr., John Lampson, Jr., and Thomas Cummings, with their lands and buildings, be set to the town of Topsfield. These two instances form the only material changes in the original boundaries of the town.

In 1661 the common lands on the south side of the river were laid out to "m<sup>r</sup> Bradstreet, m<sup>r</sup> Perkins, Zach-eas Gould, m<sup>r</sup> Baker, Tho Dorman, Frances Pebody, Willi Evens, Daniell Clark, Isaac Cummings, sen<sup>r</sup>, Isaac Cummings, jun<sup>r</sup>, Ensigne Howlet, With Smith, m<sup>r</sup> Endicott, John Wildes, John Redington, Tho Perkins, Tho Browning, Jacob Towne, Isaac Estey, Willi Towne, Edmund Towne, matthew Standly, Anthony Carell, Frances Bates, John How, Edmond Bridges and Willi Nichols." In 1664 some of the land on the south side of the river still remained undivided. The town voted that this should be granted to the several inhabitants that assisted in supporting the minister in the following proportion, viz.: those that paid fifty shillings a year were to have one of the larger pieces; those who paid more than twenty and less than fifty shillings, to have a medium-sized piece; and those who paid less than twenty shillings, one of the least pieces. Thus it was divided among the following inhabitants, viz.: "John Gould, m<sup>r</sup> Thomas Baker, Daniel Clark, Thomas Dorman, sen<sup>r</sup>, Frances Peabody, Deacon Hovey, William Eevens, Isack Comings, sen<sup>r</sup>, Isack Comings, iun<sup>r</sup>, Ensigne Howlat, Antoni Carol, Thomas Perkins, Thomas Browning, Thomas Averil, Thomas Hobbs, John Redington, John Wildes, William Smith, Edman bridges, Jacob towne, Isack Este, William towne, Joseph towne, Edman towne, matthew stanle, William nicoles, m<sup>r</sup> William perkeings, m<sup>r</sup> Endicott, John how, Robert andros and frances bates."

In 1683 the alarming demand for the surrender of the provincial charter, under a threat of *quo warranto* in case of refusal, came from Charles II. On Christmas-day of that year the town voted that "We do hereby declare that we are utterly unwilling to yield, either to the resignation of the Charter, or to anything that shall be equivalent thereunto, whereby the foundation thereof shall be weakened." The next year the royal menace was put into execution, and

court that from henceforth they shall bee a towne, & have power within themselves to make all civill alterations, as other towne have, p. Curia." See the Colonial Records of Massachusetts for 1659.

<sup>1</sup> For a copy of this agreement see Massachusetts Bay Colony Records for 1661.



the letters-patent of Massachusetts Bay were cancelled by the Court of Chancery. To carry out the arbitrary measures thus begun, James II., in 1686, sent over the notorious Sir Edmund Andros to be governor of the Colony. Two years afterward the king fled to France, and the people, having no more to fear from him, pounced upon Andros and his assistants and sent them back to England. Lieutenant Thomas Baker was chosen by Topsfield to meet and consult with the "council of safety" about resuming the former government, according to the charter, which was now revived. His instructions were "to act for the public good and welfare and safety of their Colony, prohibiting any act or anything that may have any tendency to the infringement of any of our charter privileges whatsoever."

John Gould, captain of the Topsfield militia company at this time, was arrested and placed in the old jail in Boston, for uttering treasonable words against Andros and his government; but before his trial came on Andros was himself lodged in the same goal, preparatory to treating him to a trip to the mother country, with the advice to stay there. This was in 1689.

Three years later came the witchcraft delusion. It originated less than five miles from Topsfield, and it was not possible that the town should escape. Mrs. Nurse, who was executed at Salem Village, and Mrs. Howe, of Ipswich, were sisters, and natives of Topsfield. Another sister, who married Isaac Esty, lived in Topsfield at the Pierce farm, and another woman, Sarah Wildes, of Topsfield, were executed by hanging for the crime which they never committed. Mrs. Wildes was executed July 19, and Mrs. Esty September 22, 1692. Abigail Hobbs was also condemned to die September 17, 1692, and was pardoned some time afterward, when the light had burst through the inky cloud revealing to the astonished court and church the terrible errors they had made.

The laying out and making of roads were among the earliest duties of the town. The history of these as they advanced from foot-paths to bridle-paths, from these to cart-ways and the carriage-roads of to-day; and the progress made from sloughs to causeways, and from fords to bridges, might, perhaps, in most instances, be distinctly traced.

Stocks were used as a means of punishment here as late as 1757. December 27, 1720, the town "allowed to John Wilds for making the Towns Stooock and for finding y<sup>e</sup> Iorns and Lock and bringing them to the meeting house and for seeting up sd stooocks £1, 4s."

The oldest cemetery in the town is that near the residence of Mr. Samuel Todd. The church once stood in the east corner, and the cemetery was, perhaps, originated by the introduction of the English custom of interring the dead around the church. The most ancient grave-stone, now standing here, is that of Capt. Thomas Baker, who died in 1718, at the age of eighty-one years. An addition was made to the

cemetery in 1706, and the whole enclosed with a new stone-wall. Since then two additions have been made, and the yard greatly improved. The first grave-digger was John Hobson, who was chosen by the town, March 7, 1676-77, to "dig graves for such as shall require him." He was to have "three shilins sixteen for ol graves aboy for foot long and thre for ol under." The new cemetery in the south part of the town is about fifty years old.

Until 1822, the paupers were boarded out, as was the custom in early times. In that year the town purchased the "Ebenezer Dodge farm" of Cyrus Cummings for three thousand five hundred dollars, and fitted up the dwelling house for an alm-house. The present superintendent is Mr. Henry R. White.

According to the census of 1835, the population of Topsfield is one thousand one hundred and forty-one,—five hundred and seventy-five males and five hundred and sixty-six females. In early times there were some negroes here. In January, 1777, there were seven negro males in town above the age of seven years.

The Odd-Fellows have an assembly here, called the Fountain Lodge, and numbered one hundred and seventy. It has quite a good number of members, and is in a flourishing condition. In 1886, Mr. Joseph E. Stanwood presented the lodge with a large two-story house for a hall, which they have neatly fitted up.

The Ancient Order of United Workmen also have a lodge in the town, its number being sixty-five. This lodge was founded here in 1886. It has twenty-nine members, and holds its meetings in Bailey's Block.

The Danvers and Newburyport branch of the Boston & Maine Railroad runs through the centre of the town, and has one station, Topsfield, within its limits. The road was built in 1853. The trains run through to Boston without change. Mr. Frederic P. Merriam was the station-agent here from 1853 to 1886. His successor is Mr. William H. Goodwin from Boston.

The town has one post-office, which is named Topsfield. Mr. Salmon D. Hood is the postmaster.

The fire department of the town consists of a hook and ladder company.

The town hall was erected in 1873, at a cost of thirteen thousand dollars. The building committee were Charles Herrick, John Bailey, John H. Potter, William E. Kimball, Dudley Bradstreet, Joseph W. Batchelder and Ezra Towne. The hall has a seating capacity of five hundred. The stage arrangements are first class; and the whole building is one which much larger towns might be proud of. In the hall are located the public library, and offices of the board of selectmen, and town clerk and treasurer. In the tower is the town clock.

The taxable property in the town in 1887 amounted to \$1,385,098; personal, \$855,583; and real, \$529,515. The number of polls was 296. The rate of taxation





was \$6.60 per \$1000. There were taxed 183 horses, 480 cows, 421 sheep, 56 oxen, 235 dwelling-houses and 7379 acres of land. The town debt is \$21,200. The town has a fund of \$5000 given to it by Miss Annah Pingree in 1876, the income of which to be devoted to the assistance of the deserving poor.

Topsfield has not been without its professional men. The clergymen will be mentioned in the next chapter. The resident lawyers have been two. One was Sylvanus Wildes, born in Topsfield in 1754, graduated at Harvard College in 1777, and died here in 1829, having, as Cleaveland says, "enjoyed the sweets of a perpetual vacation." The other lawyer was Charles H. Holmes, a native of Maine, and son of the Hon. John Holmes. He graduated at Brown University in 1829. He did but little more professional business than lawyer Wildes. While preparing this sketch the tall squire has been admitted to practice in the higher courts where quibbles are unknown.

The history of the medical profession here is more extended. The first physician, of which any record has been left, is Michael Dwinell. His grandfather was said to have been a French Huguenot, of the same name, who settled here before 1668. Dr. Dwinell was born here January 7, 1705-6. He was here as late as 1733, and probably later.

The next physician was Richard Dexter, who was born in Malden, Mass., June 15, 1713, and began practice here in 1740. He was an excellent citizen as well as physician. He died here November 25, 1783.

Dr. Joseph Bradstreet, who was born here in 1727, practised here contemporaneously with Dr. Dexter. His practice was rather limited, and he taught school for awhile, dying at last, a pauper, in 1790.

In 1783, the year of Dr. Dexter's death, two physicians settled here. The first of these was Nehemiah Cleaveland, and the second, John Merriam. Dr. Cleaveland was born in Ipswich in 1760. He was also engaged in public affairs, serving as a State Senator in 1812, '16, '17 and '18. In 1814 he was made a session justice of the Circuit Court of Common Pleas. From 1820 to 1822 he was associate justice of the Court of Sessions for Essex County, and in 1823 he was appointed chief justice. He retired in 1828; and in that year received the honorary degree of doctor of medicine from Harvard University. He died in this town February 26, 1837, aged seventy-six.

Dr. Merriam was born in Concord, Mass., August 10, 1758. He studied medicine in Charlton, and commenced practice in Topsfield in December, 1783. He built and occupied the residence of Mr. Samuel Todd. He died of consumption November 21, 1817.

The next physician here was Jeremiah Stone, who was born in Marlborough, N. H., November 2, 1798. He began practice here about 1825, and continued in it about a dozen years. He died in Provincetown, on Cape Cod, April 23, 1875, at the age of seventy-six, and his remains were brought to Topsfield for interment.

Dr. Joseph Cummings Batchelder succeeded Dr. Stone about 1838. He was a native of Topsfield. He began practice in Lynn, but stayed there but a short time. He went to Cambridge from Topsfield about 1849, and remained there seven years. He then removed to Templeton, Mass., where the remainder of his life was spent in the practice of his profession, excepting the six months that he served as assistant surgeon in the Twenty-Fifth Massachusetts Regiment in North Carolina in the Rebellion. He died in Templeton in 1884.

Dr. Royal Augustus Merriam, who also succeeded his father, Dr. John Merriam, in the medical profession in this town, was born here January 30, 1786, and graduated at Dartmouth College in 1808. He was a good physician. He died here, of heart disease, November 13, 1864, at the age of seventy-eight years.

After Dr. Merriam was well along in years, other physicians came to this flourishing town. The first of these was Dr. Charles P. French from Boxford. He was born in Lyndsborough, N. H., in 1824, practised in Boxford in 1848 and '49, and then came to Topsfield, where he stayed four years. He now resides in the West.

He was succeeded by Dr. David Choate, a native of Essex, in 1854. Dr. Choate stayed till 1857. He is now in practice in Salem.

The present physician, Dr. Justin Allen, came here in the fall of 1857. He is a native of Hamilton, and graduated at Brown University in 1852 and at Harvard Medical School in 1857.

On August 28, 1850, was celebrated the bi-centennial anniversary of the incorporation of the town. An historical address was given by Nehemiah Cleaveland. A large number were present, and a very enjoyable time was had.

**RELIGIOUS HISTORY.**—Hardly had a settlement been begun here before the preaching of the Gospel was established. As early as 1641 Rev. William Knight, a resident of Ipswich, began to preach to the little company. The Ipswich people paid him for his services, which he continued until his death, which occurred about 1655. His successor was Rev. William Perkins, who came hither from Gloucester in 1655, and preached here for several years. He was the son of a merchant tailor, and was born in London, England, August 25, 1607. In 1633 he was associated with John Winthrop, Jr., and eleven others, in the settlement of Ipswich. In 1640 he visited his native country, but soon returned and preached to the small band of worshippers living in Weymouth. He removed to Gloucester in 1646, and preached there from 1650 to '55, when he came to Topsfield. Here, after preaching till 1663, he spent the remainder of his life in the calm pursuits of husbandry. He died May 21, 1682, aged seventy-four years. Among the early settlers of the town he was probably the most accomplished person. He was a scholar and a man



of business,—a farmer, a clergyman, a soldier and a legislator. He represented the town of Weymouth in the General Court in 1644; was the leader of a military company and one of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company.

At what time in the ecclesiastical history of Topsfield the first meeting-house was erected cannot be definitely determined. At first it stood not far from the Newburyport turnpike, near the residence of the late Sylvanus Wildes, Esq., in the east part of the town. It was without a pulpit, but was probably a very good edifice for the times.

In 1663 the church was gathered here, and Rev. Thomas Gilbert was invited to settle over it. The church was composed of the Topsfield people and the "villagers" (the Boxford people). Mr. Gilbert agreed to the proposal on condition that the "villagers" would engage to assist in his support. This condition was agreed to by the "villagers" on condition that the meeting-house should be moved so as to be more convenient for them to attend divine service. The meeting-house was accordingly moved into the southeast corner of the cemetery near the residence of Mr. Samuel Todd. Several families in Ipswich, living near Topsfield, were also members of the church, which they helped to support.

The church was organized, and Rev. Mr. Gilbert installed November 4, 1663. He was born in Scotland, in 1610, and had been a clergyman of the established church at Chedlie and at Edling, in England. He was one of the two thousand clergymen who were ejected from their benefices by the Act of Uniformity; so that he came almost directly from an English vicarage, or curacy, to minister to the spiritual wants of the incipient church in Topsfield. Mr. Gilbert's pastorate here was far from being a smooth one. In 1666 he was charged with sedition, and in 1670 with intemperance. The latter trial was sadly disgraceful, and he was dismissed from the pastorate. This twice-ejected minister died in Charlestown October 28, 1673.

The next minister was Rev. Jeremiah Hobart, of Hingham, Mass., who was ordained October 2, 1672. He was born in England April 6, 1631, and graduated at Harvard College in 1650. His course here was no smoother than his predecessor's had been; and he was dismissed September 21, 1680. He was afterward installed at Hempstead, L. I., in 1682, where he preached about fifteen years, and finding that his congregation had nearly all left him, he concluded to go also. He was next installed at Haddam, Conn., November 14, 1700, and continued to preach there until his death, which occurred in March, 1715. His age was eighty-three years. Although little sanctity seems connected with this early pastor of Topsfield, he is, however, closely related to several distinguished divines; and Mr. Brainard, the celebrated missionary, was his grandson.

In 1682 a pulpit was built in the church, and the

same year Rev. Joseph Capen, of Dorchester, began to preach here. The next year he was invited to settle over the church. He accepted the call, and was ordained June 11, 1684. His salary was sixty-five pounds—twenty pounds in silver and forty-five pounds in pork and beef—per year, with the use of the parsonage house.

A "minister's farm" had been early laid out, and a parsonage built upon it for the use of the pastor. The house was situated about one-fourth of a mile west of the residence of the late Dr. R. A. Merriam. The Revs. Gilbert and Hobart probably occupied the house while they preached here, and Mr. Capen moved into it in 1683. The house and its surroundings were not suited to the aristocratic tastes of Mrs. Capen, and so she pressed her husband to move nearer to the village. The town granted him twelve acres of land near the present Methodist Church, and on this land, about 1686, he built the house in which they afterward resided, and which is now occupied by Mrs. Alonzo Kneeland. The old parsonage was used as a residence by the schoolmaster, Goodman Lovewell, from 1693 to 1701, when the town voted to dispose of it. The house which Mr. Capen built is one of the oldest, and probably the oldest existing house in Topsfield; and the following story renders it interesting: In the witchcraft period, Mr. Capen, while preaching one Sunday, experienced a premonition that something was wrong at home, and leaving the congregation in the midst of the services he went to his house, and there found his worst enemy,—old Satan himself. Mrs. Capen had a servant-girl, who had been reading a book which ought not to have been read on the Sabbath day, and that caused the Devil to appear and claim her for his own. When Mr. Capen understood how matters were, he readily conceived a remedy. Bringing into the room a half bushel full of flaxseed, he turned it upon the floor, and told the old Imp if he (Satan) succeeded in picking up the seed, kernel by kernel, before Mr. Capen could read backward, word by word, what the girl had read, he (the Devil) might have her. But, so the story runs, before the Devil had picked up the seed, Mr. Capen had completed his part of the agreement, and the beaten king of imps had to leave, through a rat hole, it is said, which is plainly visible at the present day.

The old meeting-house was used as a place of worship until a new edifice was erected, in 1703. The old one was then sold for five pounds, to John Gould, who moved it down to the turnpike, and used it for a barn. It was afterwards removed to the "river meadows," where some of its decayed timbers could be seen a few years ago. The pulpit and some of the lumber of the old meeting-house had been used in the construction of the new one. The new meeting-house was forty-four feet long and forty-two feet wide. The site of this house was that occupied by the present Congregational Church, which was then





a knoll that had been levelled to some extent for the purpose of building the church upon it.

Rev. Mr. Capen continued to preach here for forty-three years. He died June 30, 1725, at the age of sixty-six years. He was born in Dorchester, Mass., December 20, 1658, and graduated at Harvard College in 1677. He was a good pastor, but his abilities as a preacher were moderate.

"Dear Mr. Capen, that revered man,  
Who did the faith in Christ maintain;  
A learned man, and godly, too,  
None will deny this who him knew."—*Epitaph.*

Mr. Capen's successor was Rev. John Emerson, who was born in Charlestown, Mass., February 7, 1707, and ordained as pastor of the church here November 27, 1728, at the age of twenty-one years. His labors here closed just before his death, which occurred July 11, 1774, "having," as his epitaph says, "served God faithfully in the gospel of His Son upwards of forty-five years."

During Mr. Emerson's ministry a new church had been erected. It was raised in 1759, and finished in 1760. It was fifty-four feet long, and forty-two feet wide, with twenty-six feet posts. It had a steeple, and stood on the site of the old church. For the raising, the town furnished one barrel of rum and eleven barrels of cider. The cost of the meeting-house was £743 10s. 7½d. The most interested agent in the erection of the new church was Deacon George Bixby. It is a fact worthy of notice, that a Mr. Ross, of Ipswich, who was present at the raising of this meeting-house, he being at the time but nine years old, was also present at the raising of the present church edifice, more than eighty-three years afterwards.

For five years after Rev. Mr. Emerson's death the society had irregular preaching. Then Rev. Daniel Breck, a native of Boston, was settled over the church. His ordination took place on Wednesday, November 17, 1779, the sermon being preached by the Rev. Mr. Lothrop, of the Old North Church, Boston, from 2d Corinthians iv. 5: "For we preach not ourselves, but Christ Jesus the Lord, and ourselves your servants for Jesus' sake." Mr. Breck was a man of fair talents and a good writer; but his ability as a preacher was small. He endeavored to introduce some reforms into the church, which created a strong feeling against him, and the result was an honorable dismissal, after nine years of service, May 26, 1788. Mr. Breck removed to Hartland, Vt., where he was settled in the ministry, and died in extreme old age.

Mr. Breck's successor was Rev. Asahel Huntington, whose ordination took place on Thursday, November 12, 1789. He was born in Franklin, Conn., March 17, 1761, and graduated at Dartmouth College in 1786. Rev. Dr. Hart, of Preston, now Griswold, Conn., preached the ordination sermon. Mr. Huntington's useful and acceptable service continued here until April 22, 1813, when, after four days' illness, he died of malignant sore throat, at the age of fifty-two

years. His funeral sermon was preached by Rev. Isaac Braman of the West Parish of Rowley, now the town of Georgetown. This discourse was published, and, in connection with it, an unfinished sermon of Mr. Huntington, written on the very day he was seized with the fatal illness. It was from the text: "Be ye also ready; for in such an hour as ye think not, the Son of man cometh."

In 1817 the spire of the steeple of the meeting-house was taken down and a cap-tower erected in its place.

A bell weighing 938½ pounds was purchased of Paul Revere & Sons, for four hundred dollars, and suspended in the tower of the church, "to be rung on all public days and tolled for funerals." A copper vane was placed upon the steeple.

For seven years after Mr. Huntington's death the church had no settled pastor. Rev. Rodney Gove Dennis, of New Boston, N. H., accepted the invitation of the church and society to settle over them, and his ordination took place on Wednesday, October 4, 1820.

Several religious denominations being now represented in the town, the unanimity of the people in giving their support to the Congregational Church was gone. While affairs were in this state the leading members of the Congregational body petitioned the General Court to grant them a parish charter, which was accordingly done and approved by the Governor, February 19, 1824. The first legal meeting of the parish was held on Monday, March 29, 1824, at which Hon. Nehemiah Cleveland was chosen moderator; Jacob Towne, Jr., clerk; David Perkins, Thomas Balch and Samuel Hood, committee; and Samuel Hood, treasurer. Deacon Daniel Bixby, who died the following year, bequeathed to this parish the farm known as the "Donation farm," for the support of the ministry. The principal of this fund in 1877 amounted to \$5,592.55. The church has beside this fund two hundred dollars, the income of which is to be applied for the support of the ministry.

April 22, 1827, Rev. Mr. Dennis asked for his dismission, because, as he says in his letter, his success does not justify him in continuing here. The parish refused to dismiss him; but on a second application, April 9, 1829, his request was granted. The council for his dismission met May 18, 1829. Rev. Mr. Dennis was born in New Boston, N. H., April 17, 1791. After leaving Topsfield, he was settled at Somers, in Connecticut.

His successor was the Rev. James Frisby McEwen, who was installed on Wednesday, May 5, 1830. He was born in East Hartford, Connecticut, August 25, 1793, and graduated at Dartmouth College in 1823. He was first settled at Bridport, in Vermont, where he stayed but a few years. A "root of bitterness," as the parish records call it, sprang up between Mr. McEwen and the church toward the close of the year 1840. A council to consider of his dismission





was held March 10, and his connection with this society ended May 5, 1841. He went to Rye, New Hampshire, where he was installed December 1, 1841. He was settled at Rye but a few years. He then went to West Brattleborough, in Vermont, where he died April 14, 1859.

The next settled minister was Rev. Anson McLoud, of Hartford, in Connecticut, who was ordained here December 8, 1841. He was born in Hartford June 21, 1813, and graduated at Yale College in 1838.

The present church was erected during the ministry of Mr. McLoud, in 1842, at a cost of five thousand dollars. The house was dedicated on Wednesday, February 22, 1843. It occupies the site of its predecessor.

After a period of twenty-eight years, Mr. McLoud's connection with the ministry here was dissolved October 1, 1869. He continued to reside in Topsfield, where he died February 21, 1883. His faithful labors here secured for him a large place in the affections of his people, and the fullest respect of the neighboring churches.

Another pastor was soon settled. This was Rev. Edward P. Tenney, of Boston, who was installed on Wednesday, December 1, 1869. Mr. Tenney found the place uncongenial to his tastes and desires, and resigned September 10, 1879. For several years he has been president of Colorado College, the enterprising and useful college of that state. Mr. Tenney is the author of those little volumes entitled "Argumentarius" and "Coronation."

The next pastor was Rev. James Hill Fitts, of Andover, who was installed June 12, 1871. Mr. Fitts was born in Candia, in New Hampshire, March 3, 1829, and graduated at the Bangor Theological Seminary in 1858. He was ordained as an evangelist November 2, 1859; and first installed at West Boylston, in Massachusetts, September 3, 1862. Mr. Fitts was dismissed here March 22, 1880. He has since that time preached in South Newmarket, in New Hampshire.

The pulpit here was then supplied until Rev. Lyndon S. Crawford was installed September 27, 1883. He was a native of North Adams, in Massachusetts, and was ordained as a missionary in 1879, being stationed at Marisba, in Western Turkey. He was dismissed at his own request, to return to his missionary labors, October 17, 1886, and immediately entered upon his work in Brousa, in Turkey in Asia.

The present pastor is Rev. Charles Washington Luck, of Marion, Mass., who was ordained here on Wednesday, June 29, 1887. He was born in Cleveland, Ohio, February 2, 1857, and was educated at Harvard College and Andover Theological Seminary, graduating from the latter place in 1887.

The church membership now numbers about one hundred and forty-eight. The Sunday-school in connection with this church, has a membership of

about one hundred and sixty-five, and a library of about one thousand volumes.

The parish has a ministerial fund now amounting to six thousand two hundred and ninety-seven dollars, which includes the "Donation Farm" fund of which we have spoken.\*

A house was presented to the parish by Mr. Joseph E. Stanwood for a parsonage a few years ago. For some reason it was not used for that purpose, and was afterwards sold to Charles H. Holmes, Esq. In the spring of 1886 the mansion house of Mr. Holmes was purchased by the parish, and has become the parsonage.

The parish of which we have been writing is known as the Congregational Parish, and its denominational religious belief is Orthodox Congregational. The only other parish that ever existed in the town is that of the Methodist Episcopal Church. There used to be quite a number of Baptists here, but no such church was ever established.

*Methodist Episcopal Church.*—Early in the summer of 1830 Charles Dodge and Ezra Glazier, members of the Methodist Church in Ipswich, held meetings in the North School-house in Topsfield, and also in the barn of Captain John Adams. Rev. Jacob Sanborn, who had charge of the Methodist Church in Ipswich, also preached here occasionally, and a number of conversions occurred. In September, 1830, Rev. William Nanseamen, the first regular minister, was sent here by the presiding elder, and October 20th, in the same year, the society was organized with fifteen members. They erected a house of worship the following year, it being raised October 19, 1831. Timothy Munroe, of Lynn, took the contract for building. Its site was on the Newburyport turnpike, near Springville. It was dedicated December 28, 1831. It was forty feet square, and cost six hundred and three dollars. In 1840, January 9th and 10th, the meeting-house was moved on wheels to land of Richard Phillips by fifty yoke of oxen. The new site was given by Mr. Phillips to the society. It was in the north corner of Mr. John B. Lake's house-lot. The present parsonage of the society was erected in 1850, at a cost of seven hundred dollars. Rev. John G. Cary was its first occupant. The present church was erected in 1853, and dedicated June 14, 1854. The church and parsonage are both free from debt. A fine and large organ was placed in the church in 1868, at a cost of nine hundred dollars. A Sabbath-school is held in connection with the church. The list of ministers who have been stationed here is as follows: William Nanseamen, 1830; Asa W. Swinerton, 1830-31; R. D. Esterbrooks, 1831; Thomas Stetson, 1832-33; David Culver, 1833-34; Benjamin King, 1834; Charles McReading, 1834; Henry B. Skinner, 1834-35; John E. Risley, 1836; S. E. Pike, 1836; G. F. Pool, 1836-38; George W. Bates, 1838-39; Chester Field, Jr., 1839-40; L. B. Griffin, 1840-41; Amos Walton, 1841-42; H. C. Dunham, 1842-43;



I. J. P. Colyer, 1843-45; Moses P. Webster, 1845-46; John Poulson, 1846-47; William R. Stone, 1847-49; Kinsman Atkinson, 1849-51; John G. Cary, 1851-53; A. F. Bailey, 1853-54; J. W. Bemis, 1854; S. G. Hiler, Jr., 1854-55; John C. Smith, 1855-56; Franklin Furber, 1856-57; Abraham M. Osgood, 1857-58; George Sutherland, 1858-60; J. W. Lewis, 1860-61; A. D. Merrill, 1861-62; E. S. Snow, 1862-63; F. G. Morris, 1864-66; George E. Chapman, 1866-67; William D. Bridge, 1867-69; S. F. Chase, 1869-70; J. F. Mears, 1870-72; S. A. Fuller, 1872-73; G. W. Buzzell, 1873-75; W. H. Meredith, 1875-77; Stephen Louis Rodgers, 1877-79; George H. Clarke, 1879-82; A. C. Manson, 1882-83; N. H. Martin, 1883-86; James T. Docking, 1886-87, and Paul Carnie, 1887.

Some of these pastors were principals of the Topsfield Academy while they preached here. The society was incorporated by an act of the Legislature, approved by the Governor April 26, 1847. The church has seventy-three members and a fund of two hundred dollars.

**MILITARY HISTORY.**—In Topsfield, as elsewhere, the farmers carried weapons as well as tools, into the field, and armed sentries used to walk around the church when the people were assembled. In 1673, when the church stood in the cemetery near Mr. Todd's house, a massive stone wall of five or six feet in height and three feet wide, was built around it. A space of ten feet, and on the south side, twelve feet, was left between the wall and the meeting-house. On the southeast corner of the wall was built a watch-house; and a space of four feet was left between the watch-house and the meeting-house, so that the space around the latter would not be obstructed. The watch-house was probably fitted up without windows, and the light was let in through the small loop-holes and the door, when open. It was called in 1706 the "old meeting-house fort." There was a watch-house built to the new meeting-house in 1703, but it was removed before 1738.

In 1675 the General Court ordered that each town should "scout and ward," and clear up the brush-wood along the highways, "to prevent the skulking of the enemy," which order was not disregarded, probably, by such men as were the settlers of Topsfield. A garrison-house was built by the early settlers, but it is not known that it was ever needed as a place of resort in an attack by the Indians.

A military company was formed here very early, agreeably to the laws of the colony, with whom the soldiers in Buxford trained until the incorporation of that town in 1685.

An armory was early erected, of which William Smith was the keeper in 1682.

May 27, 1668, the General Court appoints or sanctions Francis Peabody to be lieutenant of the military company here.

October 13, 1680, the General Court order that the

troops in this town be enlisted under Major Nathaniel Saltonstall.

In March, 1678-79, the town made a rate of £41 6s. 6d. to procure powder and bullets with. In 1818 the town voted to build a powder-house to keep the military stores in.

In 1840 all the old military companies belonging to the State were disbanded. A new company had been formed here, called the "Warren Blues," about 1836, which existed for about ten years. In 1841 the town voted to build an armory for them.

Topsfield assisted with the rest of the towns in furnishing men and means in carrying on the Indian wars and the French War. Cleveland, in his bi-centennial address, says.

"The Rev. Mr. Barnard, of Marblehead, in his autobiography, makes honorable mention of a Captain Boynton, of Topsfield, who commanded a company in the 1st Regiment of General Murch's Brigade during the unsuccessful attempt upon Port Royal in 1707. In Gaze's 'History of Rowley,' I find a notice of Captain Israel Davis, of Topsfield, as commanding a company in the French War. John Baker . . . was an officer in the same service. But enough, the story of those weary and often bloody campaigns, so far as it relates to the soldiers of Topsfield, has not come down to us. We know who and what they were, and we feel as well assured that they were faithful and brave, as it would be in the record of their virtues and deeds on the historic page, or in monumental brass."

Several of the Topsfield soldiers perished at Cape Breton in 1744, and others in different services in the French War; while many, from enduring the fatigues and sufferings of the expeditions, destroyed their health and future usefulness.

In 1755 the removal of the French Acadians took place. The people of Nova Scotia, or Acadia, as it was then called, promised to be neutral between the French and English, but they broke their agreement, and the only way to put an end to the assistance they were rendering to the French, it was deemed by the English authorities, was to depopulate their country and scatter them through New England. The story of their sufferings has been told by Longfellow, in his poem, "Evangeline." One family was sent to Topsfield; it consisted of a man and his wife and five children. The father, aged forty-three years, was named Michael Dugoy; his wife, aged forty-three, was named Elizabeth Dugoy; and their children were Armont, aged fourteen; Mary, aged eleven; Modesty, aged eight; Joseph, aged six; and Anne, aged four years. They arrived in town October 21, 1756. They resided all the time that they lived in Topsfield in the house of David Batch, which stood a few rods south of the residence of Mr. Charles J. P. Floyd. They were supported, when not able to support themselves, by the Province. The head of this family was able to do but little work. In the summer of 1760 they removed to Newbury, and in 1767 Topsfield voted to give them thirty-two dollars to pay their passage to Canada and support them on the voyage.

Cleveland says, "Tradition long preserved their memory as sad, retiring and inoffensive. Sad they





might well be,—torn from their property and happy homes,—separated from all their kinsfolk and countrymen, and cast among people who could sympathize with them neither in language, nor manners, nor religion.”

Captain Samuel Smith, of Topsfield, was chosen by the town to confer with the committee of safety in Boston, in 1768. He was also a member of the Provincial Congress in 1775.

The people here were strongly opposed to the Stamp Act of 1765, and grateful to the Crown when it was removed. In 1770 the town votes to encourage and promote all home manufactures, and to “do every thing that is in their power to enable the merchants to continue in their agreement for the non-importation of goods from Great Britain.”

January 20, 1774, the vote which follows was passed by the town: “that we will not buy nor sell any tea that has been or may be exported from Great Britain, until such time as there is a total repeal of the oppressive and unconstitutional act or acts of Parliament for imposing a duty on tea,” etc.

October 11, 1774, the following instructions were given to Captain Samuel Smith, to guide him in the deliberations of the Provincial Congress, in which he was to represent the town:

1. “That you use your endeavors that King George yield acknowledgment of our rightful sovereignty.”
2. “That you use your endeavors that all our constitutional and charter rights and privileges be kept good and inviolable to the latest posterity.”
3. “That you do everything to the utmost of your power to prevent any of the late oppressive Acts of Parliament being executed, provided that you do not act anything that is repugnant to what the Continental Congress may resolve.”

As independence seemed more and more certain, the town's people express themselves more openly in favor of the independence of the Colonies.

June 14, 1776, they vote “that in case the Honorable Continental Congress shall think fit, for the safety of the united Colonies to declare them independent of the kingdom of Great Britain, this town do solemnly engage to defend and support the measure, both with their lives and fortunes to the utmost of their power.”

In March, 1775, the militia company in Topsfield was commanded by Captain Joseph Gould. It formed a part of Colonel John Baker's regiment, and consisted of sixty-three men. On recommendation of the Provincial Congress, a company of “minutemen” were raised, and placed under the command of Captain Stephen Perkins. It numbered forty-seven men. When the alarm of the Battle of Lexington came, April 19, 1775, these two companies immediately marched toward the scene of the conflict. They did not see active service on that day, however, as they arrived after the battle was over.

February 13, 1777, the town voted to give every volunteer eight pounds, in addition to what Congress grants, who will enlist in the American army

to serve for three years. A month later the amount was raised to eighteen pounds.

In May, 1778, a rate of one hundred and twenty pounds was assessed to defray the charges of clothing for the soldiers in the continental army.

At different dates votes of the town to hire soldiers are found recorded. The town, in 1780, voted to purchase eight thousand four hundred and forty pounds of beef for the use of the army. In 1777 a committee to look after the soldiers' families, and to aid them, if need be, in procuring the necessaries of life, was appointed by the town.

The names of about three hundred men are found on the muster rolls of the Revolution. They served at Rhode Island, Bennington, Castle Island, Fort George, Ticonderoga and elsewhere. Twenty-seven men served in the company of Captain John Baker, of Topsfield, in Colonel Moses Little's regiment. Twenty served in the company of Captain Robert Dodge, of Ipswich, in Colonel Samuel Johnson's regiment, and General Warren's brigade, in 1777. Twenty-one served in the company of Captain Joshua French, of Salisbury, in Colonel Edward Wiggleworth's regiment in 1776, at Ticonderoga and elsewhere.

August 23, 1808, the town adopted an address to the President of the United States to have the Embargo Act of December 22, 1807, either wholly or partly removed. The declaration of war, five years afterward, was condemned as an unnecessary and useless measure. The town's quotas of men for this war were, however, raised and equipped for service in due time.

The War of the Rebellion came on in its course, and again were the men of Topsfield called to engage in the service of their country. A bounty of one hundred and twenty-five dollars, and later of two hundred dollars, to volunteer soldiers was paid by the town, which furnished one hundred and thirteen soldiers, a surplus of six over all demands. Five of these were commissioned officers.

“And, with the faith that God would save  
The Union, He, the Father, gave,  
Not only unopposed, but more  
Substantial than it was before.”

the soldiers entered and took prominent parts in the five years' conflict. Five of them perished in Andersonville Prison, how, we know too well. Others were imprisoned there, and in Libby Prison, on Belle Island. Several gave up their lives for their country on the battle-field of Fredericksburg, at Pamunkey River, in the last battle of the Wilderness, and other conflicts with the South. Many others moistened with their blood the soil of Winchester, Va., the banks of the Antietam, Donaldsonville, Port Hudson, and the battle-field of the second battle of Bull Run. Battles of Roanoke Island, Southwest Creek, Kingston, Whitehall, Goldsborough, Ball's Bluff, Edenburg, Mt. Jackson, Strausburg, Cedar Mountain, Rappahannock, Sul-

<sup>1</sup> From the pen of Charles H. Holmes, Esq., and forming part of some resolutions offered by him, and accepted by the town early in the war.



phur Springs, Chantilly, South Mountain, both battles of Port Hudson, and others, were also familiar to the Topsfield "Boys in Blue." At least half a score died in the service of Southern diseases. Several arrived home, only to breathe their last breath among their relatives and friends. The remainder of that brave number had their constitutions more or less undermined, and many who came out of the army apparently well and strong have since died from the effect of their service.

The following is a list of those who gallantly and patriotically gave up their lives for their country in the hospital at the front, in the rebel prison, and on the battle-field: John H. Bradstreet, James Brown (killed at battle of Fredericksburg, Va., December 13, 1862), Moses Deland (killed in battle near Pamunkey River May 30, 1864), Royal Augustus Deland, Swinerton Dunlap (killed in the battle of the Wilderness, 1864), Emerson P. Gould, William H. Hadley, George Prescott Hobson, Francis A. Hood, Daniel Hoyt (died in Andersonville Prison September, 1864), A. A. Kneeland, Henry Porter Kneeland (died in Andersonville Prison October, 1864), John Warren Lake, Lewis H. Perkins, Nathan Hanson Roberts (died in Andersonville Prison, 1864), Daniel H. Smith (died in Andersonville Prison August, 1864), John P. Smith (died in Andersonville Prison, 1864), John Stevens (killed in the last battle of the Wilderness May, 1864), Eugene H. Todd and William Welch, Jr. The town's quota for the navy was eleven, two of whom, William H. H. Foster and John Hoyt, died in the service. The memory of those soldiers and sailors who give up their lives in the service is preserved by having their names engraved on marble tablets, which are secured in a prominent position in the town hall.

The whole amount of money expended by the town, exclusive of State aid, was \$14746.35. The State aid paid to the soldiers' families during the war amounted to \$7,634.10. The ladies of Topsfield worked heartily in the cause of the soldiers, and forwarded to the army money, clothing and hospital stores, to the value of five hundred dollars.

**SCHOOLS, LIBRARIES, ETC.**—The first reference on the records of the town to the subject of education is dated March 6, 1693-94, and is as follows: "The Town have agreed that Goodman Lovewell, Schoolmaster, shall live in y<sup>e</sup> Parsonage house this year ensuing, to kepe Schole and swepe y<sup>e</sup> meeting house." A year later the town vote "that father Lovewell shall in Joy y<sup>e</sup> house and orchard for y<sup>e</sup> yeare ensuing on y<sup>e</sup> same terms as formerly." The town, for a long period, had but a single schoolmaster. He was chosen at the annual town meeting, and was usually a citizen of the town. A room in some private house was hired for a school-room, even as late as 1750. The first school-houses of which the records speak were built between the years 1790 and 1794. In 1790 the town was divided into three

school districts, and named the south, middle and north districts. A school-house was erected in each district. The east district was soon after added. The middle, since changed to "Centre" School-House, stood where the town hall stands. In 1867 the town purchased the academy building, and changed the Centre School to this building, having divided the school into a primary and a grammar school. The grammar school is kept in the second story, and the primary school in the first story of the building. The four districts still exist. During the past school year, one hundred and seventy-nine scholars have attended the town schools. The town paid for school expenses, repairs on school buildings, teaching, etc., during the last school year, \$2,324.09.

**Topsfield Academy.**—The academy was established in 1828, and flourished for many years. The preceptors, in chronological order, were Francis Vose, E. D. Sanborn, Alfred W. Pike, Benjamin Greenleaf, Asa Farwell, William F. Kent, Edmund F. Slater, B. O. Marble, O. Quimby, Joseph E. Noyes, Kinsman Atkinson, Joseph Warren Healey, O. D. Allis and Albert L. Dutton. Mr. Dutton discontinued the school in 1860. The property came into the possession of Asahel Huntington, Esq., of Salem, of whom the town purchased it for a school-house in 1867.

In the list of preceptors given above are several who were quite distinguished in different ways. The well-known mathematician, Benjamin Greenleaf, the widely-known secretary of the New England Historico-Genealogical Society, Mr. Edmund F. Slater, the Methodist clergyman, Rev. Kinsman Atkinson and another clergyman, Rev. Albert L. Dutton, are deserving men. The academy occupied a central location, on an elevation, which made it the highest building in the village. Several of the young men who passed an academical course here have become distinguished, and many others have been making the world better for the instruction they received and the habits they acquired under the tutelage of these instructors.

**Social Library.**—A proprietor's library was established here in 1794, by several of the leading men of the town. It contained two hundred volumes. It existed until 1875, when the present public library was opened to the public, and the old library was incorporated with the new, but being kept separately in its old cases.

**Public Library.**—The public library was founded in 1875. A room was given to the use of the library in the town hall, and fitted up for its accommodation. The following-named gentlemen were appointed by the town, a committee for establishing the library: Sidney A. Merriam, Rev. Anson McLoud, Mr. Humphrey Balch, Rev. James H. Fitts and Dr. Justin Allen. Mr. Merriam, Mr. Blake and others contributed to the library. Mr. McLoud was librarian for several years from the organization of the library;





since his service ended several others have filled the office. The books are quite well selected, and the library contains some valuable works.

The library of the late Mr. McLoud, which was purchased by Mr. A. A. Low, of Brooklyn, N. Y., has been presented by him to the town intact. It is kept by itself, and forms a valuable and extensive addition to works already collated.

There are thirty-six hundred and thirty-six volumes now in the library. The late Sidney A. Merriam at his decease, bequeathed to the library a bond of one thousand dollars, the interest on which to be applied semi-annually, to the purchase of books. The fund of the library now amounts to two thousand dollars. Besides the interest on this fund, the town makes an annual appropriation for the library. The library is controlled by a committee consisting of four gentlemen. In its present flourishing condition the library cannot fail to be a great educator. It furnishes what is needed and desired by the young and the old, and is a continual blessing to the town.

**BUSINESS, MANUFACTURING, ETC.**—The leading business of Topsfield is, as it has always been, agriculture. Many other and important branches of business and manufacturing have at different times been carried on.

As early as 1648 mining was an interesting, if not profitable, pursuit here. Governor Endicott owned an extensive tract of land here in 1639, and in 1648 a copper mine was discovered upon it. Mr. Leader, a metallurgist, then superintending the Lynn iron-works, having expressed a favorable opinion of the ore, Mr. Endicott spent considerable money in working his mine, which is situated near the productive Peirce farm, on the turnpike. More than one hundred and twenty years after its discovery it was reopened and worked for a short time with considerable loss to the proprietors. Again, after another interval of about seventy years, a company of Salem capitalists caused the old shaft to be cleared out, and the ore subjected to analysis. The result was that the excavation was once more filled up, never again probably to be disturbed.

Iron ore was dug in the low-lands, to a considerable extent, by the early settlers. June 17, 1681, the town ordered "that there shall bee noe bogue mine dowe in ye Towne but by some townes men: and hee that dos dige et shall Carey et with his one teme or hierce a townes man to Carey et alwayes provided hee that diges it a-grees with the selectmen of the Towne to pay fouer pence a ton for the Townes Use either in Silver or Iron and this order stands in force" only one year.<sup>1</sup> Ten days later "Ensign Gould" was granted liberty to dig twenty tons of bog iron. Lieutenant Francis Peabody also received the same liberty.

Bricks were manufactured in Topsfield before 1697.

Probably the earliest hotel in the town occupied the site of the shoe-factory of Mr. John Bailey. The Clark family carried on the business here for many years before 1780. Daniel Clark, Sr., and Daniel Clark, Jr., were the proprietors at different times. In 1784 the son removed to New Rowley, now Georgetown, and the hotel here came into the hands of Samuel Hood. Later it became the property of John Rea, who conducted the business for several years. On the night of October 16, 1836, the whole establishment, house, barn and store which were connected, were destroyed by fire. When the turnpike was built a large and substantial hotel was erected by the turnpike corporation on Town Hill. This flourished until the railroad was completed, in 1854. Several stages carrying many passengers ran over the turnpike daily. This was the popular and only public conveyance then existing to Boston, Newburyport and other places. The "Topsfield House" was built by Thomas Meady about 1807, for a store and a house of entertainment. In 1817 Mr. Meady removed to Philadelphia. Then Ephraim Wildes kept the hotel for about two years. In or about 1820 William Munday commenced the butchering business there, and after a few years reopened the tavern, his son, Thomas Perkins Munday, being engaged with him. The hotel has been retained in the family to the present time. Mr. Dalmer J. Carleton is the present landlord. It is now the only public house in the town.

The earliest blacksmith in the town, probably, was Samuel Howlett, who was invited by the town to set up his forge here in 1658. Mr. Ira Long carries on the only shop now in town.

The first mill in the town was erected by Lieutenant Francis Peabody in 1672, on the site of the present "Towne's grist-mill." The next mill was probably that erected by Thomas Howlett, on Howlett's Brook, in the east part of the town, in 1736. This was a grist-mill. He built a saw-mill there two or three years later. In 1746 he sold out to Nathaniel Hood, who, in 1748, transferred it to Abraham Hobbs. The mills remained in the Hobbs family until 1813, when they passed into the hands of the Perkinses. In 1878 the property was purchased and the grist-mill has since been run by Mr. Wellington Donaldson. The saw-mill was gone many years ago.

In 1835 there were three country grocery stores in the town. One of these was kept by Frederic and Nathaniel Perley. The store was built by Frederic Perley about 1828, and about 1841 the two brothers went to Danvers. Then the late Benjamin P. Adams and Samuel Adams carried on the business for several years, and after Samuel Adams left the firm his brother, Benjamin P. Adams, continued in the business until his death, in 1875. From the time of his decease to 1883 his son, Benjamin P. Adams, Jr., kept it. In the spring of 1883 the store was reopened by Mr. J. Bailey Poor, who had carried on the busi-

<sup>1</sup> Town Records, Vol. I., p. 23.





ness of a country store on the opposite side of the street for several years. The grocery of Mr. William B. Kimball was built by his father, Mr. William B. Kimball, in 1841. The latter gentleman conducted the business from that date to January 1, 1869, having Mr. Andrew Gould for a partner from 1848 to 1853, and his son, Mr. William B. Kimball, from 1864 to January 1, 1869, when the son purchased his father's interest, and has since carried on the business.

Mr. Benjamin P. Edwards is the apothecary and druggist, Mr. Abijah B. Richardson the tin-worker and hardware dealer, Mr. Thomas Leach and Mr. James Wilson wheelwrights, and Mr. Jacob Hardy is the harness maker. There are telephone and Western Union telegraph offices in the town.

The only shoe firm doing much business at the present time is that of Mr. Charles Herrick, who uses steam-power and carries on considerable business.

Mr. Isaac Woodbury and Mr. William P. Gould are quite extensive butchers.

**DISTINGUISHED NATIVES.**—Topsfield has been the birth place of many distinguished business, literary and public men. Among them are good numbers of clergymen, lawyers, physicians and statesmen. Through the instrumentality of its sons, the town has obtained a good reputation abroad. The following is a partial list of the more noted natives:—

*Rev. Daniel Perkins* (1696-1782?). He graduated at Harvard College in 1717; and was a minister at West Bridgewater, Mass.

*Rev. George Hovey, M.D.* (1714-1803). He graduated at Harvard College in 1735. He was a clergyman and physician at Rochester and Plymouth, Mass.

*Gen. Nathaniel Peabody* (1741-1823). He was a soldier, statesman and physician.

*Rev. Nathaniel Porter, D.D.* (1745-1837). He graduated at Harvard College in 1768. He was the first minister of Conway, and also preached at New Durham, N. H.

*Rev. Joseph Cummings* (1752-91). He graduated at Harvard College in 1768. He was the first minister at Matherborough, N. H.

*Rev. Daniel Gould* (1753-1842). He graduated at Harvard College in 1782. He was a clergyman, and preached in Bethel and Rumford, Me.

*Jacob Kimball, Esq.* (1761-1826). He graduated at Harvard College in 1788. He practiced law at Amherst, N. H., and was quite distinguished as a composer of music. He was the author of the "Rural Harmony," published in 1793.

*Judge David Cummings* (1785-1855). He graduated at Dartmouth College in 1806. He was a prominent lawyer in Salem, and judge of the Circuit Court of Common Pleas.

*Hon. Daniel Brock, LL.D.* (1788-1852). He was an able jurist, and a member of Congress from Kentucky, where he resided.

*Israel Balch, M.D.* (1788-48—). He graduated at Dartmouth College in 1811. He was a physician in Salisbury.

*Dr. Josiah Lamson* (1789-48—). He graduated at Harvard College in 1814. He was a physician in Essex.

*Rev. Jacob Hood* (1791-1886). He was a clergyman in Hopkinton, N. H., and in Middleton and Lynnfield, Mass.

*Rev. Ebenezer Perkins* (1794-48—). He graduated at Dartmouth College in 1814, and was a clergyman in Royalston, Mass.

*Prof. Nehemiah Chace* (1796-48—). He graduated at Bowdoin College in 1813. He was for twenty years principal of Dummer Academy.

*Elisha Huntington, M.D.* (1796-1865). He graduated at Dartmouth College in 1815. He was a physician, the first mayor of Lowell, and lieutenant-governor of Massachusetts.

*Dr. Humphrey Gould* (1797-1874). He graduated at Williams College in 18— . He was a physician in Danvers and Rowe, Mass.

*Asahel Huntington, Esq.* (1798-1870). He graduated at Yale College in 1819. He was a lawyer in Salem, mayor of the city, and district-attorney.

*Rev. Jonas Merriam* (1803-71). He graduated at Bowdoin College in 1826; and was a minister in Barnard, Me.

*John Cleaveland, Esq.* (1804—). He graduated at Bowdoin College in 1826; and was a lawyer in New York City.

*Rev. David Peabody* (1805—). He graduated at Dartmouth College in 1828. He was a clergyman at Lynn and Worcester, Mass., and a professor in Dartmouth College.

*Rev. Elisha Lord Cleaveland, D.D.* (1806-66). He graduated at Bowdoin College in 1829. He was an able divine, and preached at New Haven, Conn.

*Rev. George Hood* (1807-82). A clergyman at Chester, Pa., and Southport, N. Y.

*Rev. Josiah Peabody* (1807—). He graduated at Dartmouth College in 1836. He was a missionary to the Armenians at Erzerum, in Turkey.

*Rev. Samuel Lams in Gould* (1809). He graduated at Medical School of Bowdoin College in 1832; and was a physician at Sunapee, Searsport and Orrington, Me., and preached at Boothbay, Albany, Phillips and Bethel, Me.

*Cyrus Cumming, Esq.* (1816-8—). He graduated at Dartmouth College in 1839; and was a lawyer in Boston.

*Rev. Alpheus J. Pike* (1828). He graduated at Dartmouth College in 18—. He is a clergyman in Dakota.

*John Augustus Lamson, M.D.* (1831). He was a physician in Boston.

*Rev. Gustavus D. Pike* (1831-84). He graduated at Dartmouth College in 185—, and was a clergyman.

*Prof. Albert Cornelius Perkins* (1833). He graduated

\* The first date is that of the birth, the second that of the person's death.



ed at Dartmouth College in 1860; and is principal of Adelphi Academy, Brooklyn, N. Y.

*Prof. John Wright Perkins* (1841). He graduated at Dartmouth College in 1866. He is the principal of Dunmer Academy.

#### MEMBERS OF THE STATE LEGISLATURE.

REPRESENTATIVES.	
1699, Lieut. John Gould.	1777, Capt. Samuel Smith.
1699-99, Lieut. Thos. Baker.	1778, Deacon John Gould.
1699, John Gould.	1779, Zaccheus Gould.
1699-97, Cor. Tobiah Perkins.	Eliezer Lake.
1698, Lieut. Thos. Baker.	A. Hobbs (to Concord).
1699-1701, Q. M. Tobiah Perkins.	1780, Zaccheus Gould.
1702-83, Lieut. Eph. Dorman.	Capt. Stephen Perkins.
1704, Sergt. John Hovey.	1781, Samuel Smith.
Sergt. Dan Huntington.	1780-85, Abraham Hobbs.
1705-08, Elisha Perkins.	1780, Capt. Stephen Perkins.
1707, Isaac Peabody.	1787, Thos. Emerson.
1708, Lieut. Thos. Baker.	1792-93, Sylvanus Wildes.
1709, Lieut. Tobiah Perkins.	1793, Sylvanus Wildes.
1711, Lieut. Tobiah Perkins.	1799, Rev. Asahel Huntington.
1714-16, Cor. Jacob Towne.	1802, Sylvanus Wildes.
1714-15, Lieut. Tobiah Perkins.	1803-04, Nathaniel Hammond.
1716, Sergt. Daniel Clark.	1806, Nathaniel Peabody.
1717-18, Deacon Samuel Hawlett.	1820, Col. Ephraim Wildes.
1719, Ens. Timothy Perkins.	1827, Jacob Towne, Jr.
1720-21, Capt. Tobiah Perkins.	1829-30, Jacob Towne, Jr.
1721, Nathaniel Porter.	1837, Charles H. Holmes.
1722, Daniel Clark.	1838, Nathaniel Peabody.
1723, Ens. Timothy Perkins.	1850, Asa Pingree.
1724, John Hovey.	1859, Joseph W. Batchelder.
1725, Deacon John Hawlett.	1842, Cyrus Cummings.
1726, Capt. Joseph Gould.	1843, Charles C. Brackett.
1727, Q. M. Nathl. Borman.	1844, Samuel Todd.
1728-31, Capt. Joseph Gould.	1846, Dr. Jos. C. Batchelder.
1729-31, Jacob Peabody.	1848, Charles Herrick.
1734-35, Capt. Joseph Gould.	1849, Thos. Gould.
1737, Nathaniel Bordinan.	1852, Samuel S. Melvenzie.
1748, Capt. Joseph Gould.	1853, Nathaniel Conant.
1739, Jacob Peabody.	1854, Nathaniel Conant.
1741-44, Nathaniel Bordinan.	1857, Jacob P. Towne.
1742-45, Jacob Peabody.	1871, Rev. Anson Meland.
1747-49, Jacob Peabody.	1875, Samuel D. Hook.
1750, David Babin.	1878, Dudley Bradstreet.
1753-54, Elijah Porter.	1881, John H. Potter.
1755, Elijah Porter.	1881, John H. Towne.
1757-58, John Gould.	
1760-61, John Gould.	
1762, Elijah Porter.	
1763-66, Lieut. Samuel Smith.	
1767-72, Capt. Samuel Smith.	
1773-76, Deacon John Gould.	

#### SENATORS.

1841, Dr. Neh. Cleaveland.
1842, Dr. Neh. Cleaveland.
1842, Asa Pingree.

**TREASURERS.**—The constables generally served as treasurers until 1743.

CONSTABLES.	
1672, John Hovey.	1691, Daniel Clarke.
1673, Ephraim Dorman.	1692, Ephraim Wilds.
1674, Edmund Towne.	1693, Mr. Wm. Perkins.
1675-77, John Hovey.	1694, Isaac Lesty, Jr.
1678, Samuel Hawlett.	1695, Joseph Towne, Jr.
1679, Wm. Perkins, Jr.	1698, Joseph Borman.
1680, Cor. Wm. Smith.	1699, Cor. John Curtious.
1681, Tobiah Perkins.	1700, John Cummings.
1682, Daniel Rodington.	1701, Ebenezer Averell.
1683-84, Cor. Wm. Smith.	1702, John Robinson, Sr.
1685, Elisha Perkins.	Nathaniel Averell.
1686, Deacon Isaac Cummings.	1703, Philip Knight.
1687, Thos. Perkins.	1704, Thos. Hawlett.
1688, Lieut. Thos. Baker.	1705, Sergt. John Gould.
1689, Mr. Timothy Perkins.	Corp. Jacob Towne.
1690, Ens. Jacob Towne.	1706, John Nichols.
John Towne.	Thos. Dorman, Jr.
	1707, Thos. Perley.

#### Michael Dwinell.

1708, John French.	1709, Amos Dorman.
1709, John Hovey.	Joseph Towne (treasr.)
1710, Thos. Robinson.	Zaccheus Gould.
1711, John Averell.	John Curtis.
1712, Nathaniel Borman.	Nathaniel Porter.
1713, Thos. Town.	Jacob Lesty.
1714, Cor. Joseph Gould.	Thos. Cave.
1715, Jacob Peabody.	John Barton.
1716, Wm. Towne.	Job Averell.
1717, Thos. Gould.	Edward Putnam.
1718, Ivory Hovey.	Phish Putnam.
1719, Simon Bradstreet.	Wm. Porter.
1720, Wm. Porter.	Jesse Borman.
1721, Joseph Robinson.	Michael Dwinell.
1722, Thos. Dwinell.	David Balch.
1723, Cor. Jacob Robinson.	Benj. Knight.
1724, Eliezer Lake.	Edman Towne.
1725, Jacob Dorman.	Benj. Towne.
1726-28, Nathaniel Porter.	
1729-38, Ivory Hovey.	
1730-32, Richard Towne.	

#### TREASURERS.

1695-96, Cor. Tobiah Perkins.	1710, Ens. John Gould.
1711-18, Jacob Peabody.	1710, George Braly.
1710-52, Benj. Towne.	1710, Nathaniel Peabody.
1754-55, Capt. Thos. Baker.	1756-58, Richard Towne.
1759-61, Stephen Foster.	1764-75, Elijah Porter.
1776-81, Jeremiah Averell.	1782-87, Stephen Foster.
1788-89, Nathaniel Hammond.	1790-92, Daniel Bixby.
1790-99, David Perkins, Jr.	1800-01, Daniel Bixby.
1800-03, Daniel Bixby.	1804, Cyrus Cummings.
1804, Cyrus Cummings.	1805, Saml. Hood.
1806-17, Moses Wulfs.	1818-20, Samuel Hood.
1821-23, John Peabody.	1820-30, Isaac Kilham.
1831-33, Samuel Gould.	1834, Dr. Jeremiah Stone.
1835-36, Joel Lake.	1837, Joel Lake.
1837-38, Asa Pingree.	1839, John G. Hood.
1840, Wm. Hubbard.	1841-50, Benj. C. Perkins.
1850, John G. Hood.	1851-52, John Wright.
1853-61, Benj. Kimball.	1862-64, Nehemiah Balch.
1865-67, Jeremiah Balch.	1868-81, J. Porter Gould.
1882-87, John Gould.	

#### TOWN CLERKS.

1676-81, Lieut. Francis Peabody.	1706-70, Elijah Porter.
1682-85, John Gould.	1776-77, Capt. Samuel Smith.
1686-1700, Sergt. Eph. Dorman.	1778-80, Capt. Stephen Perkins.
1702-17, Samuel Stanley.	1791-1809, Nathaniel Hammond.
1718-20, Nathaniel Porter.	1810-36, Jacob Towne.
1721-31, Jacob Peabody.	1836-38, Jas. P. Towne.
1735-46, John Hovey.	1878, Ezra Towne (pro tem).
1747-49, Jacob Peabody.	1879-80, Edward S. Towne.
1749-62, Richard Towne.	1880, Ezra Towne.
1763, Linnah Potter.	1881, Frank L. Winslow.
1764-66, David Balch.	1881-87, John H. Gould.

#### SUCCESSORS.

1659, Ensign Hawlett.	Francis Peabody.
Frances Peabody.	Deacon Perkins.
John Rodington.	1677, Ensign Gould.
1663, Sargent Towne.	Deacon Perkins.
John Gould.	John Rodington.
1668, Frances Peabody.	Frances Peabody.
John Gould.	1678, Mr. Thomas Baker.
Thomas Baker.	Sack Cummings.
Daniel Borman.	John Hovey.
1673, Lieut. Frances Peabody.	Frances Peabody.
Thomas Perkins.	Ensign Gould.
Thomas Baker.	1679, Ensign Gould.
Edman Towne.	Mr. Thomas Baker.
1676, Mr. Thomas Baker.	Sargent Rodington.
Ephraim Dorman.	John Towne.
Sargent Rodington.	Frances Peabody.





1680.

Mr. Thomas Baker.  
Sargen Redington.  
Corpl. Jacob Towne.  
John Hovey.  
Frances Peabody.

1681.

Ensign Gould.  
Isack Este.  
Ephraim Dorman.  
Frances Peabody.  
Samuel Howlett.

1682.

Lieut. Pebody.  
Sargt. Redington.  
Deacon Perkins.  
Corpl. Townes.  
John Gould.

1683.

Mr. Thomas Baker.  
Isacke Este, clerke.  
Sargt. Ephraim Dorman.  
Samuel Howlett.  
John Gould.

1684.

Sargt. Redington.  
Corpl. Jacob Townes.  
John Hovey.  
Thomas Dorman.  
John Gould, Jr.

1685.

Sargt. Redington.  
Lieut. Thomas Baker.  
Sargt. Ephraim Dorman.  
Samuel Howlett.  
John Gould.

1686.

Lieut. Gould.  
Corpl. John Hovey.  
Mr. Tobiah Perkins.  
Ephraim Dorman.  
Lieut. Thomas Baker.

1687.

Capt. John How.  
Isaac Eesty, Sr.  
Samuel Howlett.  
Thomas Dorman.  
Ephraim Dorman.

1688.

Sargt. Eesty.  
Sargt. Thomas Dorman.  
Sargt. Samuel Howlett.  
William Averell, Sr.  
Mr. William Perkins.  
Corpl. Daniel Redington.

1689.

Lieut. Baker.  
Lieut. Gould.  
Sargt. John Hovey.  
Mr. Tobiah Perkins.  
Ephraim Dorman.

1690.

Corpl. Dan'l Redington.  
Thomas Perkins.  
Sargt. Thomas Dorman.  
Sargt. Samuel Howlett.  
Corpl. Samuel Standly.

1691.

Capt. John How.  
Mr. Tobiah Perkins.  
Philip Knight.  
Jacob Towne, Jr.  
Ephraim Dorman.

1692.

Lieut. Thomas Baker.  
Sargt. Hovey.  
Corpl. Tobiah Perkins.  
Corpl. Redington.  
Ephraim Dorman.

1693.

Capt. John Gould.  
Sargt. Thos. Dorman.  
Sargt. Saml. Howlett.  
Ens. Jacob Towne.  
Corpl. John Gould.

1694.

Corpl. Tobiah Perkins.  
Isaac Peabody.  
Elisha Perkins.  
Joseph Towne, Jr.  
Ephraim Dorman.

1695.

Sargt. Thos. Dorman.  
Corpl. Tobiah Perkins.  
Elisha Perkins.  
Jacob Towne, Jr.  
Ephraim Dorman.

1696.

Corpl. Tobiah Perkins.  
Sargt. Samuel Howlett.  
Eph. Dorman.  
William Towne.  
Isaac Eesty, Jr.

1697.

Sargt. Redington.  
Sargt. Howlett.  
Corpl. Perkins.  
Corpl. Standley.  
Elisha Perkins.

1698.

Jacob Towne, Jr.  
Daniel Clarke.  
Capt. How.  
Elisha Perkins.  
Ephraim Wilds.

1699.

Q. M. Tobiah Perkins.  
Jac. Towne, Jr.  
Sargt. Saml. Howlett.  
Elisha Perkins.  
Isaac Peabody.

1700.

Ens. Saml. Howlett.  
Capt. John How.  
Q. M. Tobiah Perkins.  
Isaac Peabody.  
Jacob Towne, Jr.

1701.

Capt. John How.  
Sargt. Samuel Standley.  
Elisha Perkins.  
Jacob Towne, Jr.  
Ephraim Dorman, Sr.

1702.

Corpl. Joseph Towne.  
Sargt. Saml. Standly.  
Mr. Timothy Perkins.  
Isaac Peabody.  
Sargt. John Gould.

1703.

Deacon Thos. Dorman.  
Corpl. Jacob Towne.  
Elisha Perkins.  
Isaac Eesty, Jr.  
Samuel Stanley.

1704.

Sargt. John Gould.  
Thomas Perley.  
John Cummings.  
Ebenezer Averell.  
Samuel Stanley.

1705.

Ebenezer Averell.  
Thomas Perley.  
Sargt. Dan'l Redington.  
Clerk Elisha Perkins.  
Corpl. Joseph Towne.

1706.

Lieut. Eph. Dorman.  
Sargt. D. Redington.  
Clerk Elisha Perkins.  
Sargt. John Hovey.  
Corpl. John Curtis.

1707.

Deacon Saml. Howlett.  
Ebenezer Averell.  
Thomas Howlett.  
Corpl. Joseph Towne.  
Saul Stanley.

1708.

Lieut. Tob. Perkins.  
Corpl. Jacob Towne.  
Ebenezer Averell.  
Isaac Eesty.  
Saml. Stanley.

1709.

Lieut. Tob. Perkins.  
Corpl. Joseph Towne.  
Lieut. Eph. Dorman.  
Thomas Howlett.  
Saml. Stanley.

1710.

Clerk Elisha Perkins.  
Jacob Towne.  
Ebenezer Averell.  
John Curtis.  
Samuel Stanley.

1711.

Lieut. Tobiah Perkins.  
Deacon Samuel Howlett.  
Thomas Howlett.  
Joseph Towne.  
Samuel Stanley.

1712.

Sargt. Thomas Howlett.  
Corpl. Joseph Towne.  
Clerk Elisha Perkins.  
Amos Dorman.  
John French.

1713.

Deacon Saml. Howlett.  
Corpl. Jacob Towne.  
Ebenezer Averell.  
Joseph Towne (treas.).  
Samuel Stanley.

1714.

Nathaniel Porter.  
John Hovey.  
Ephraim Wilds.  
Zaccheus Gould.  
Samuel Stanley.

1715.

Corpl. Joseph Towne.  
Ebenezer Averell.  
Amos Dorman.  
Joseph Borman.  
Deacon Samuel Howlett.

1716.

Clerk Elisha Perkins.  
Ebenezer Averell.  
John Hovey.  
Amos Dorman.  
Thomas Robinson.

1717.

Deacon Samuel Howlett.  
Corpl. Joseph Towne.  
Michael Dwinell.  
Jacob Peabody.  
Samuel Stanley.

1718.

John Howlett.  
Amos Dorman.  
Ens. John Gould.  
Jacob Peabody.  
Nathaniel Porter.

1719.

Jacob Towne.  
John Hovey.  
John Howlett.  
Jacob Peabody.  
Nathaniel Porter.

1720.

Ephraim Wilds.  
Ivory Hovey.  
Sargt. Joseph Gould.  
Joseph Towne.  
Eliozzer Lake.

1721.

Thomas Gould.  
Lieut. Thomas Baker.  
Ivory Hovey.  
Amos Dorman.  
Jacob Peabody.

1722.

Sargt. John Howlett.  
Isaac Peabody.  
Lieut. Thomas Baker.  
John Nichols.  
Q. M. Ephraim Wilds.

1723.

Corpl. Nathaniel Borman.  
Deacon John Howlett.  
Thomas Gould.  
Elisha Putnam.  
Jacob Peabody.

1724.

Nathaniel Porter.  
Deacon John Howlett.  
Joseph Towne.  
Elisha Perkins.  
John Hovey.

1725.

John Hovey.  
Jacob Eesty.  
William Porter.  
Michael Dwinell.  
Deacon John Howlett.

1726.

Ens. Amos Dorman.  
Capt. Joseph Gould.  
Sargt. Thomas Robinson.  
Simon Bradstreet.  
Jacob Peabody.

1727.

Q. M. Nathaniel Borman.  
Corpl. Jacob Towne.  
Benjamin Towne.  
Thomas Gould.  
William Redington.



1728.

Ens. Amos Dorman.  
Zaccheus Gould.  
Q. M. Nathaniel Bordman.  
Ivory Hovey.  
William Redington.

1729.

Deacon John Howlett.  
Benjamin Towne.  
Elizer Lake.  
David Balch.  
Jacob Peabody.

1730.

Benjamin Towne.  
Jesse Dorman.  
Q. M. Nathaniel Bordman.  
John Wildes.  
John Perkins.

1731.

Capt. John Howlett.  
Joseph Herrick.  
John Wildes.  
Benjamin Towne.  
Jacob Peabody.

1732.

Thomas Gould.  
Q. M. Nathl. Bordman.  
George Byxby.  
Richard Towne.  
Joseph Dorman.

1733.

Capt. John Howlett.  
David Balch.  
John Wildes.  
William Redington.  
Tobiah Perkins.

1734.

Nathaniel Porter.  
Capt. Joseph Gould.  
Elizer Lake.  
Joseph Robinson.  
Benjamin Towne.

1735.

Deacon John Howlett.  
Deacon Jacob Peabody.  
Richard Towne.  
Benjamin Towne.  
Matthew Peabody.

1736.

Deacon Ivory Hovey.  
David Balch.  
Jacob Redington.  
George Byxby.  
Luke Averell.

1737.

Jacob Dorman.  
John Wildes.  
Benjamin Towne.  
Lieut. Zaccheus Gould.  
Daniel Redington.

1738.

Joseph Herrick.  
Daniel Redington.  
David Cummings.  
Benjamin Towne.  
Joseph Perkins.

1739.

Benjamin Towne.  
Lieut. Tobiah Perkins.  
Daniel Gould.  
John Wildes.  
Daniel Redington.

1740.

Capt. Joseph Gould.  
Benjamin Towne.  
Daniel Redington.  
Phineas Redington.  
Thomas Baker.

1741.

Lieut. Benjamin Towne.  
Capt. John Wildes.  
George Byxby.  
Thomas Baker.  
Daniel Redington.

1742.

George Bixby.  
Thomas Baker.  
Daniel Gould.  
Matthew Peabody.  
Richard Towne.

1743.

Thomas Baker.  
Capt. Tobiah Perkins.  
David Cummings.  
Israel Clark.  
Matthew Peabody.

1744.

Thomas Baker.  
Matthew Peabody.  
Benjamin Towne.  
Israel Clark.  
David Cummings.

1745.

Solomon Gould.  
Capt. Tobiah Perkins.  
Richard Towne.  
Daniel Redington.  
Capt. John Wildes.

1746.

Capt. John Wildes.  
Capt. Tobiah Perkins.  
Richard Towne.  
Solomon Gould.  
Daniel Redington.

1747.

Capt. John Wildes.  
Richard Towne.  
Thomas Baker.  
Benjamin Towne.  
Nathaniel Averell, Jr.

1748.

Capt. John Wildes.  
Richard Towne.  
Nathaniel Averell, Jr.  
Thomas Baker.  
Lieut. Benjamin Towne.

1749.

Richard Towne.  
Capt. John Wildes.  
David Balch.  
John Gould.  
George Bixby.  
Matthew Peabody and Samuel  
Smith in place of G. B. and  
R. T.

1750.

Lieut. Benjamin Towne.  
John Gould.  
Matthew Peabody.  
Capt. John Wildes.  
Elijah Porter.

1751.

Elijah Porter.  
Lieut. Benjamin Towne.  
John Gould.  
Samuel Smith.  
Matthew Peabody.

1752.

Jacob Averell.  
Capt. Benjamin Towne.  
Clerk Samuel Smith.  
Elijah Porter.  
Q. M. Daniel Clark.

1753.

Capt. Benjamin Towne.  
Jacob Averell.  
Samuel Smith.  
Dan Clark.  
Elijah Porter.

1754.

Capt. Benj. Towne.  
Jacob Averell.  
Q. M. Dan Clark.  
Samuel Smith.  
Elijah Porter.

1755.

Capt. Benjamin Towne.  
Dan Clark.  
Elijah Porter.  
Samuel Smith.  
Jacob Averell.

1756.

Cornet Matthew Peabody.  
Capt. Thomas Baker.  
Lieut. Nathaniel Porter.  
John Gould.  
David Balch.

1757.

Samuel Smith.  
Capt. Benjamin Towne.  
John Gould.  
Cornet Matthew Peabody.  
Elijah Porter.

1758.

Lieut. Nathl. Porter.  
John Gould.  
David Balch.  
Daniel Bixby.  
David Perkins.

1759.

John Gould.  
David Perkins.  
David Balch, Jr.  
Daniel Bixby.  
Stephen Perkins.

1760.

Capt. Benj. Towne.  
Elijah Porter.  
Richard Towne.  
John Gould.  
David Balch, Jr.

1761.

Capt. John Bordman.  
Stephen Perkins.  
Jeremiah Averell.  
Capt. Thomas Baker.  
Simon Gould.

1762.

Stephen Perkins.  
Jeremiah Averell.  
John Balch.  
Simon Gould.  
Joseph Andrews.

1763.

Jeremiah Averell.  
Joseph Andrews.  
Stephen Perkins.  
John Balch.  
Zaccheus Gould.

1764.

Jeremiah Averell.  
Daniel Bixby.  
Zaccheus Gould.  
Samuel Cummings.  
David Balch, Jr.

1765.

Jeremiah Averell.  
Daniel Bixby.  
Zaccheus Gould.  
Stephen Perkins.  
John Perkins, Jr.

1766.

Daniel Bixby.  
Zaccheus Gould.  
Jeremiah Averell.  
John Perkins, Jr.  
Stephen Perkins.

1767.

Zaccheus Gould.  
John Perkins, Jr.  
Jeremiah Averell.  
Stephen Perkins.  
Daniel Bixby.

1768.

Elisha Wildes.  
Zaccheus Gould.  
Jeremiah Averell.  
Stephen Perkins.  
Daniel Bixby.

1769.

Elisha Wildes.  
Stephen Perkins.  
Jeremiah Averell.  
Daniel Bixby.  
Zaccheus Gould.

1770.

Stephen Perkins.  
Daniel Bixby.  
Zaccheus Gould.  
Solomon Dodge.  
Joseph Gould.

1771.

Thomas Mower.  
Capt. Saml. Smith.  
Elijah Porter.  
Abraham Hobbs.  
Samuel Bradstreet.

1772.

Capt. Saml. Smith.  
Abraham Hobbs.  
Samuel Bradstreet.  
Thomas Mower.  
Stephen Perkins.

1773.

Stephen Perkins.  
Thos. Mower.  
Capt. Saml. Smith.  
Daniel Bixby.  
Zaccheus Gould.

1774.

Stephen Perkins.  
Daniel Bixby.  
Capt. Saml. Smith.  
Zaccheus Gould.  
Thomas Mower.

1775.

Capt. Saml. Smith.  
Capt. Stephen Perkins.  
Israel Clark, Jr.  
John Peabody.  
Thomas Mower.



1776.

Israel Clark, Jr.  
Saml. Smith.  
Capt. Stephen Perkins.  
John Peabody.  
Thomas Mower.

1777.

Capt. Stephen Perkins.  
Thomas Mower.  
John Peabody.  
Israel Clark, Jr.  
Saml. Smith.

1778.

Maj. Joseph Gould.  
Joseph Cummings.  
Thomas Porter.  
Jacob Kimball.  
Isaac Averell.

1779.

Maj. Joseph Gould.  
Zachens Gould.  
Daniel Bixby.  
Joseph Cummings, Jr.  
Isaac Averell.

1780.

Thomas Emerson.  
Moses Perkins.  
David Towne.  
David Bixby, Jr.  
Stephen Foster.

1781.

Samuel Smith.  
Zachens Gould.  
Stephen Foster.  
Nathaniel Averell, Jr.  
Daniel Bixby.

1782.

Samuel Smith.  
Zachens Gould.  
Daniel Bixby.  
Nathaniel Averell.  
Josiah Lamson.

1783.

Daniel Bixby.  
Zachens Gould.  
Nathaniel Averell.  
Josiah Lamson.  
David Towne.

1784.

Zachens Gould.  
David Towne.  
Nath. Averell.  
Josiah Lamson.  
Jonathan Cummings.

1785.

Zachens Gould.  
Josiah Lamson.  
Daniel Bixby.  
David Perkins, Jr.  
Jacob Kimball.

1786.

Daniel Bixby.  
Josiah Lamson.  
Jacob Kimball.  
David Perkins, Jr.  
Roger Balch.

1787.

Roger Balch.  
Josiah Lamson.  
Dr. John Merriam.  
Daniel Bixby.  
Henry Bradstreet.

1788.

Daniel Bixby.  
Capt. John Baker.  
Roger Balch.  
Nathaniel Hammond.  
Jacob Kimball.

1789.

Daniel Bixby.  
Roger Balch.  
John Batchelder.  
Jacob Kimball.  
Nathl. Hammond.

1790.

Nathl. Hammond.  
Jonathan Cummings.  
Jacob Kimball.  
Isaac Averell.  
Nathaniel Fisk.

1791.

Jacob Kimball.  
Isaac Averell.  
Nathl. Fisk.  
Ezra Perkins.  
Nathaniel Hammond.

1792.

Jacob Kimball.  
Isaac Averell.  
Nathl. Fisk.  
Ezra Perkins.  
Nathl. Hammond.

1793.

Daniel Bixby.  
Josiah Lamson.  
Ezra Perkins.  
Nathaniel Hammond.  
Zachens Gould.

1794.

Zachens Gould.  
Josiah Lamson.  
Daniel Bixby.  
Lieut. Isaac Averell.  
Nathl. Hammond.

1795.

Jonathan Cummings.  
Benj. Bixby.  
John Rea, Jr.  
Lieut. Isaac Averell.  
Samuel Bradstreet.

1796.

Benj. Bixby.  
John Rea, Jr.  
Samuel Bradstreet.  
Nathl. Hammond.  
Dudley Bradstreet.

1797.

Benj. Bixby.  
John Rea, Jr.  
Nathl. Hammond.  
Samuel Bradstreet.  
Dudley Bradstreet.

1798.

Thomas Perkins, Jr.  
Elijah Averell.  
Nathl. Hammond.  
John Peabody, Jr.  
David Cummings.

1799.

Thomas Perkins, Jr.  
Nathl. Hammond.  
David Cummings.  
John Peabody, Jr.  
Jacob Towne (3d).

1800.

Nathl. Hammond.  
David Cummings.  
John Peabody, Jr.  
Jacob Towne (3d).  
Moses Bradstreet.

1801.

Dudley Bradstreet.  
Jonas Meriam.  
Jonathan Cummings.  
Dr. Nehemiah Cleaveland.  
N. Perkins Averell.

1802.

Jonathan Cummings.  
Dr. Nehemiah Cleaveland.  
Jonas Meriam.  
Dudley Bradstreet.  
N. P. Averell.

1803.

Jonathan Cummings.  
Dr. Nehemiah Cleaveland.  
Lieut. Jonas Meriam.  
Nathl. Hammond.  
Jacob Towne (3d).

1804.

Nathl. Hammond.  
Jonas Meriam.  
Jacob Towne (3d).  
Robert Perkins.  
Joseph Batchelder.

1805.

Nathl. Hammond.  
Jonas Meriam.  
Jacob Towne (3d).  
Robert Perkins.  
Joseph Batchelder.

1806.

Nathl. Hammond.  
Robert Perkins.  
Josiah Lamson.  
David Perkins.  
John Peabody.

1807.

Josiah Lamson.  
David Perkins.  
Nathl. Hammond.  
John Peabody.  
John Conant.

1808.

Josiah Lamson.  
David Perkins.  
Nathl. Hammond.  
John Peabody.  
John Conant.

1809.

Nathl. Hammond.  
David Perkins.  
Dr. Nehemiah Cleaveland.  
John Peabody.  
Jonas Meriam.

1810.

Nathl. Hammond.  
David Perkins.  
Dr. Nehemiah Cleaveland.  
John Peabody.  
Jonas Meriam.

1811.

Jacob Towne, Jr.  
Nathl. Hammond.  
Dr. Nehemiah Cleaveland.  
John Peabody.  
Jonas Meriam.

1812.

Nathl. Hammond.  
Dr. Nehemiah Cleaveland.  
John Peabody.  
Jonas Meriam.  
Jacob Towne, Jr.

1813.

Nathl. Hammond.  
Jonas Meriam.  
Jacob Towne, Jr.  
Cyrus Cummings.  
Jacob Batchelder.

1814.

Nathl. Hammond.  
Samuel Hood.  
Humphrey Clark.  
Moses Wildes.  
Joseph Batchelder.

1815.

Jacob Towne, Jr.  
Joseph Batchelder.  
Moses Wildes.  
David Towne.  
John Peabody, Jr.

1816.

Nathl. Hammond.  
Thomas Cummings.  
Cyrus Cummings.  
Daniel Bixby, Jr.  
Samuel Cummings.

1817.

Nathl. Hammond.  
Thomas Cummings.  
Cyrus Cummings.  
Daniel Bixby, Jr.  
Samuel Cummings.

1818.

John Peabody.  
Jacob Towne, Jr.  
Perley Balch.  
Dudley Wildes, Jr.  
David Perkins, Jr.

1819.

John Peabody.  
Jacob Towne, Jr.  
Perley Balch.  
Dudley Wildes, Jr.  
David Perkins, Jr.

1820.

Jacob Towne, Jr.  
David Towne.  
Daniel Bixby, Jr.  
Wm. Hubbard.  
David Perkins, Jr.

1821.

Daniel Bixby, Jr.  
Jacob Towne, Jr.  
Wm. Hubbard.

1822.

Jacob Towne, Jr.  
Joseph Batchelder.  
Ephraim Wildes.  
Royal A. Meriam.  
Daniel Bixby, Jr.

1823.

Daniel Bixby, Jr.  
Cyrus Cummings.  
John Batchelder.  
Moses Wildes.  
Wm. N. Cleaveland.





1824.

Moses Wildes.  
Cyrus Cummings.  
W. N. Cleveland.  
John Peabody.  
Samuel Gould.

1825.

Cyrus Cummings.  
John Rea, Jr.  
Daniel Bixby.  
Porter Bradstreet.  
John Landon.

1826.

Cyrus Cummings.  
Porter Bradstreet.  
John Rea, Jr.  
Samuel Bradstreet.  
David Towne.

1827.

Jacob Towne, Jr.  
Samuel Bradstreet.  
John Rea, Jr.  
Joseph Batchelder.  
Isaac Killam.

1828.

Jacob Towne, Jr.  
Joseph Batchelder.  
Isaac Killam.  
Amos Perkins.  
Samuel Bradstreet.

1829.

Jacob Towne, Jr.  
Joseph Batchelder.  
Isaac Killam.  
Amos Perkins.  
Samuel Bradstreet.

1830.

Jacob Towne, Jr.  
Joseph Batchelder.  
Isaac Killam.  
Samuel Bradstreet.  
Moses Wildes.

1831.

Nehemiah Perkins.  
Wm. Hubbard.  
Joseph W. Batchelder.  
Nathaniel Perley.  
Wm. Munroe.

1832.

John Landon.  
Wm. Munroe.  
Nehemiah Perkins.  
Joseph W. Batchelder.  
Nathaniel Perley.

1833.

Jacob Towne, Jr.  
Wm. Hubbard.  
Joseph Gould.  
Moses Wildes.  
David Towne.

1834.

Jacob Towne, Jr.  
David Towne.  
Wm. Hubbard.  
Samuel Bradstreet.  
Wm. Cummings.

1835.

Jacob Towne, Jr.  
David Towne.  
Wm. Hubbard.  
Samuel Bradstreet.  
Wm. Cummings.

1836.

Jacob Towne, Jr.  
David Towne.  
Wm. Hubbard.  
Samuel Bradstreet.  
Wm. Cummings.

1837.

Benjamin C. Perkins.  
John Conant.  
Richard Phillips, Jr.  
Wm. E. Kimball.  
Wm. Cummings.

1838.

Cornelius B. Bradstreet.  
Nathaniel Perley.  
William Ray.  
Moses Wildes.  
Augustine S. Peabody.

1839.

Benj. C. Perkins.  
Asa Pingree.  
Wm. Ray.  
Wm. Hubbard.  
John Hood.

1840.

David Towne.  
Wm. Ray.  
Wm. Hubbard.  
Wm. Cummings.  
John Hood.

1841.

Joshua Wildes.  
Wm. Ray.  
Nehemiah Perkins.  
Joel R. Peabody.  
Jacob P. Towne.

1842.

Wm. Ray.  
Elliott S. Bixby.  
Asa Pingree.

1843.

Wm. Ray.  
Elliott S. Bixby.  
Asa Pingree.

1844.

Wm. N. Cleveland.  
Nathaniel Perkins.  
A. S. Peabody.

1845.

Wm. N. Cleveland.  
Nathaniel Perkins.  
A. S. Peabody.

1846.

Thomas L. Lane.  
John G. Hood.  
Wm. Hubbard.

1847.

Samuel Todd.  
Thos. L. Lane.  
Nehemiah Batch.

1848.

John Wright.  
Joseph W. Batchelder.  
Thos. L. Lane.

1849.

John Wright.  
Joseph W. Batchelder.  
Thos. L. Lane.

1850.

John Wright.  
Thos. Gould.  
Joshua Wildes.

1851.

John Wright.  
Thos. Gould.  
Joshua Wildes.

1852.

John Wright.  
Thos. Gould.  
Joshua Wildes.

1853.

A. S. Peabody.  
S. S. McKenzie.  
Andrew Gould.

1854.

Andrew Gould.  
S. S. McKenzie.  
Benj. B. Towne.

1855.

Andrew Gould.  
S. S. McKenzie.  
Benj. B. Towne.

1856.

Andrew Gould.  
S. S. McKenzie.  
Benj. B. Towne.

1857.

John Wright.  
Thos. Gould.  
A. S. Peabody.

1858.

John Wright.  
Thos. Gould.  
A. S. Peabody.

1859.

John Wright.  
Thos. Gould.  
A. S. Peabody.

1860.

John Wright.  
Thos. Gould.  
A. S. Peabody.

1861.

John Wright.  
A. S. Peabody.  
Dudley Bradstreet.

1862.

A. S. Peabody.  
Dudley Bradstreet.  
Samuel Todd.

1863.

A. S. Peabody.  
Dudley Bradstreet.  
Samuel Todd.

1864.

A. S. Peabody.  
Dudley Bradstreet.  
Samuel Todd.

1865.

Jacob Foster.  
J. W. Batchelder.  
David Clark.

1866.

Jacob Foster.  
J. W. Batchelder.  
David Clark.

1867.

Jacob Foster.  
Andrew Gould.  
David Clark.

1868.

David Clark.  
Jacob Foster.  
Andrew Gould.

1869.

David Clark.  
J. W. Batchelder.  
Andrew Gould.

1870.

David Clark.  
J. W. Batchelder.  
Andrew Gould.

1871.

David Clark.  
J. W. Batchelder.  
Andrew Gould.

1872.

Dudley Bradstreet.  
Moses B. Perkins.  
Salmon D. Hood.

1873.

D. Bradstreet.  
S. D. Hood.  
Ariel H. Gould.

1874.

D. Bradstreet.  
S. D. Hood.  
Ariel H. Gould.

1875.

D. Bradstreet.  
S. D. Hood.  
Ariel H. Gould.

1876.

D. Bradstreet.  
S. D. Hood.  
Ariel H. Gould.

1877.

D. Bradstreet.  
S. D. Hood.  
Ariel H. Gould.

1878.

D. Bradstreet.  
S. D. Hood.  
Ariel H. Gould.

1879.

S. D. Hood.  
Baxter P. Pike.  
John H. Potter.

1880.

S. D. Hood.  
M. B. Perkins.  
J. H. Potter.

1881.

S. D. Hood.  
B. P. Pike.  
J. H. Potter.

1882.

S. D. Hood.  
B. P. Pike.  
John H. Towne.

1883.

S. D. Hood.  
B. P. Pike.  
John H. Towne.

1884.

S. D. Hood.  
B. P. Pike.  
John H. Towne.

1885.

S. D. Hood.  
B. P. Pike.  
John H. Towne.

1886.

S. D. Hood.  
J. H. Towne.  
Joseph B. Poor.

1887.

S. D. Hood.  
J. H. Towne.  
Joseph B. Poor.



## CHAPTER LXV.

## PEABODY.

BY THEODORE MOODY OSBORNE.

*Preliminary—Topography—Early Settlements.*

THE town of Peabody occupies a part of the territory originally belonging to the old town of Salem. Its boundaries are nearly the same as those of the old Middle Precinct of Salem, which was set off in 1710, and it continued to be a part of Salem until the incorporation of the district of Danvers, in 1752. It was separated from Danvers under the name of South Danvers in 1855, (May 18), and the name of Peabody was assumed in 1868. Previously to 1710, it formed a part of the first parish of Salem, and was identified with Salem in every respect.

It will be seen, therefore, that the early history of Peabody is in many ways inseparable from that of Salem. Its farmers were represented in the Salem town-meeting, and some of them at times held office in the town. Its sturdy yeomanry formed part of the training bands of the old town, and was called out to do service in all the frontier warfare of that early period. Its religious interests were centred in the old First Church, and the record of its proprietary interests is found with that of all the other lands belonging to the town of Salem. There was therefore, during nearly a whole century of the settlement of the town, no occasion for any separate chronicle of the lives or interests of the families who lived in this part of Salem, and for nearly half a century after the establishment of the Middle Precinct, the people were still one with Salem in everything but parish affairs.

For more than another century the parish was part of the town of Danvers, and its history is largely one with that of Danvers. It has had only about thirty years of independent existence.

An effort, however, has been made to select from the historic archives of Salem and Danvers some portions belonging to this locality, and to trace the beginning and growth of the community which has developed into the busy manufacturing town of Peabody, as we see it to-day.

The limits of this sketch have not permitted the introduction of extended genealogical details, nor the description of the many old houses and localities whose interest belongs rather to family than to town history. It is designed to give an outline of the growth of the town, which it is to be hoped may be at some future time enlarged by others who are specially qualified to discuss the different branches of town history. If by means of this sketch an impulse may be given to the study of the history of his native town, the writer will be repaid for his efforts.

**TOPOGRAPHY.**—When Endicott and his companions arrived on the shores of Salem in 1628, their first settlements were made along the shores of the sea and the rivers which surround the present city of Salem. The struggle for existence was at first too severe to permit of extensive improvements in building roads and developing farming lands more remote from the natural highway which the water furnished from one group of houses to another.

Wood in his "New England's Prospect" says, speaking of Salem, "There be more canowes in this town than in all the whole Patent, every household having a water-horse or two." The canoes were inspected by order of the quarterly court.

But very soon the wonderful energy of those heroic Puritans led them to build roads and bridges which should open up the surrounding territory, and to improve the lands lying farther from the sea.

The country to the north and north-west of the first settlements was very early explored, and the region toward the boundary of Lynn and Reading was found to be an excellent agricultural country. Several large ponds of fresh water were found in this part of Salem, or on its boundaries, and the region about the head of the North River was distinguished by the confluence of several large brooks of clear and sparkling water, which probably gave rise to the name by which this locality, now the centre of the village of Peabody, was designated in the early grants—the name of Brooksby.

The middle precinct and the village were together often spoken of in early times as "The Farms," and the settlers were called "The Farmers," in distinction from the dwellers in the town proper of Salem, most of whom lived by commerce, or followed the sea, or plied the various trades and industries of town life.

Through the region of Brooksby a road was opened to Salem Village (now Danvers Centre), which had been at first accessible only by boat up the Wooleston River (now the Danvers River).

The ancient way, in use while Essex Street was still a wilderness, followed Broad Street up to the boundary of the commons. From a point on the Salem turnpike, some distance beyond where Boston Street now turns from Essex Street, a road turned sharply to the right, and coming round the head of the inlet which in those days extended to the south of Boston Street, went on toward Brooksby over the high land by Gallows Hill. By this road it is said that Governor Endicott used to ride from the town to his estate in the Village. The location of this old road may still be traced, and there are still some buildings on the line of the ancient way. Subsequently a branch of this road was made from what is now Proctor's Court, along the line of Goodhue Street to Trask's lower mills (now called Frye's Mills), whence, by turning in a southerly direction, the traveller came into the other road at a point on Trask's Plain, near the great elm which stands in the middle





of the street, with the date 1707 on a stone at its base, and which is known as the "big tree." In 1715 the road leading from the middle precinct meeting-house to Salem was referred to as "y<sup>e</sup> highway that leads into y<sup>e</sup> North field by Trask's Pulling-Mill."

At the lowest point on Boston Street, just about where Goodhue Street and Boston Street meet, an arm of the sea crossed the road, large enough to admit of boats passing up and down. Across this inlet a bridge was built, known as the Town Bridge, which became a historic landmark. At that time the salt water inlets were much more extensive than now. The changes of elevation caused by building the streets and houses of the city, the accumulation of soil brought down by the various streams, and, in later years, the construction of extensive systems of railroads have tended gradually to fill up many of the inlets which were then accessible. The sea has not for many years approached within a considerable distance of the place where the Town Bridge once stretched across the water, and the street now crosses the lowest part of the hollow (which bears the unctuous name of Blubber Hollow, from the materials used in the early manufacture of leather in that vicinity) on solid ground.

The general aspect of Brooksby at that early time may be imagined from its present characteristics, and from what has come down from the history of that day. While a large part of the town must have been much more thickly wooded, it is plain, from the language of the early grants, that there were considerable areas of meadow "fitt to mowe," and large extents of barren hillside, swamp and pasture, such as are seen to-day. The North River was open to boats at high tide nearly or quite to the mill-pond where Captain Trask built his first mill—one of the earliest in the Commonwealth. This stream, whose shores were doubtless wooded to the edge of the upland, carried down a large volume of fresh water from Brooksby, and was a beautiful bit of scenery, hard to reconstruct in imagination from the muddy and foul stream of to-day, crossed and recrossed by the railroad, and carrying the drainage of great manufactories. The brooks themselves were much larger than now. The stripping away of the forest about their sources, the intercepting of surface water by the streets and constructions of the town, and the use of large quantities of water for domestic and manufacturing purposes, have combined to diminish greatly the flow of water in the ancient beds; and if one of the early settlers were to look on the turbid streams that now flow by walled and underground channels through the town, he would find it hard indeed to realize that this was the beautiful Brooksby of old, with its clear and sparkling streams, green with woodland foliage to the water's edge, and surrounded at intervals with meadows dotted with herds of cattle. A considerable part of the woodland consisted of a heavy and valuable growth of oak timber.

A large variety of trees and plants are native to the soil, and many more have since been introduced. Two at least of the flowering plants which give character to its fields and hills were introduced by the early settlers—the woodwax or gorse, golden bright on the pasture slopes, and the *chrysanthemum leucanthemum*, or white weed, sometimes of late called daisy, which tradition says was brought in by Governor Endicott himself. There must, however, have been a very great similarity, at least in the outline and aspect of that part of the town which has never been occupied by dwellings, to its present appearance.

There are many interesting localities whose natural beauties are great, and which contain striking and peculiar geological formations. Ship Rock, a huge boulder in South Peabody, near the station on the South Reading Branch Railroad, is owned by the Essex Institute, and is surrounded by interesting marks of glacial action. There are several high hills, from whose summits are seen broad expanses of landscape and wide reaches of the sea, extending far down the northern shore of Massachusetts Bay.

EARLY SETTLERS.—It is not known where the very earliest settlement within the present limits of the town of Peabody was made. By 1633 there were some settlers in Brooksby.

Before 1635 Captain William Trask, the ancestor of the Trask family in this vicinity, received a grant of about fifty acres at the head of the North River, near the present location of the square in Peabody. Here he built his first grist-mill, at a point near where Wallis Street crosses the railroad. The mill-pond, originally of considerable extent, remained in use for some mechanical purposes until within twenty years, when it was filled and a street laid out across it. The pond collected the water of the three principal brooks from which Brooksby took its name. About this mill, near the meeting of the Boston road and the road to Salem Village (now Danvers), a small village soon sprang up, several house-lots having been granted near the mill. Richard Adams had a grant of five acres in the vicinity in 1637, and William Hathorne was given a ten-acre lot near the mill about the same time. Thomas Goldthwaite is believed to have settled in this vicinity.

Captain William Trask was one of the earliest settlers with Endicott. He was a man of much natural energy of character, and filled a variety of public stations. He owned several tracts of land, which he brought under cultivation, besides carrying on the mills. He was prominent as a military leader, and was the captain of the train-band from its beginning. His services in the Pequot War in 1636 and 1637 were rewarded with additional grants of land by the General Court, and his funeral in 1666 was observed with great military parade, and honored by the whole surrounding country. He was one of the surveyors or "layers out" of the lands granted by the town of Salem to



settlers in the vicinity. The land included in the limits of the settlement was considered as belonging to the community as a whole, and was granted by the town or the "seven men" to whom that authority was delegated, to such persons and in such quantities as seemed to them most likely to insure the healthy growth of the settlement, the establishment of various useful trades and occupations, and the gathering of an industrious, law-abiding and God-fearing community. These grants were generally made in the first instance with only a general indication of their locality, and the boundaries were then measured and defined by the "layers-out," who usually entered the record of their location soon after the first grant.

About 1640 Captain Trask built another mill about half a mile down the stream from the first, near where Grove Street now is, and soon after removed it to what is now known as Frye's Mills. On March 30, 1640, it is recorded that "Captain Trask hath leave to set up a tyde myll upon the North River, pvided he make passadge for a shalloppe from halfe flood to full sea." In October, 1640, the mill was completed, and half an acre was granted to him adjoining it. This mill also became the centre of a settlement. In September, 1640, while this mill was building, or soon after its completion, Captain Trask received a fatherly admonition from the court "to be more carefull about his grinding & Towle takeing." Previous to 1663 Captain Trask's mills held the monopoly of this business. John Trask, at one time, some complaint being made, agreed in behalf of his father with the town that they would "make as good meale as at Lin, and that when they could not supply the towne for want of water or in any other respect," then they would "provide to send it to Lin upon their own charge and have it ground there."

In 1636 Colonel Thomas Reed, one of the original company, received a grant of three hundred acres, including Buxton's Hill, formerly known as Reed's Hill, and extending to the present location of Endicott Street on the east, bounded southerly by the brook, and extending on the west and north to the Ipswich road, and across the road leading to Salem Village, including the Rogers' farm. This large and valuable tract of land afterwards came into the possession of Daniel Epps, who was prominent in the formation of the middle precinct in 1710.

December 21, 1635, it was ordered "that Mr. Cole shall have a farme of three hundred acres in the place where his cattle are by Brooksby and Captain Trask and the rest of the surveyors are to lay it out and bound it according to their discretion, provided in case Mr. Cole be disposed to part with it by sale that he make his first profer unto the towne upon reasonable terms." This was a common condition in the early grants. On the 28th of the same month we find the more formal record after the survey had been made. "Granted unto Robert Cole, his Heirs and Assigns three hundreth acres of land whereof

forty acres in Marshe fitt to be mowed lying and being about three miles from Salem westward upon a fresh water brook called the North brook."

This grant included Proctor's corner and a part of Felton's Hill. It was sold in 1638 to Emanuel Downing, and was leased and cultivated by John Procter, who settled in Salem about 1660, and who was one of the most prominent victims of the witchcraft delusion.

John Thorndike had a very early grant in the northwestern part of the town, which he soon afterwards gave up, taking land in Salem Village. He also owned land in Rockville, near Lieutenant Johnson's. The land given up by him was afterwards granted to other settlers in smaller lots, of twenty, forty and fifty acres, among others to John Sanders, Henry Herrick, William Bound, Edmund Marshall, Thomas Antrum, William Walcott, Robert Cotta and Edmund Batter, mostly in 1636 and 1637.

A considerable number of these small grants lying together were purchased of the owners by Robert Goodell, and with a grant to him of forty acres made up a farm of over five hundred acres, which was laid out to him in 1652. William King had a grant of forty acres in the northern part of Peabody in 1636.

On October 9, 1637, Edmund Batter received a grant of one hundred acres of upland and twelve acres of meadow. On December 25, (it seems the "seven men" did not observe Christmas Day), a farther grant of thirty acres was made to him, and the former grant is referred to as "at Brooksby," and as having been formerly granted to Mr. Thorndike. This shows that the whole region, even the northwestern part of the farms, was called Brooksby. Mr. Batter was prominent among the early settlers, and owned land in the town of Salem, near North Street, at one time.

Next to Robert Goodell's land on the west was a grant made to Rev. Edward Norris January 21, 1640, which was afterward bought by Joseph Pope, in 1664. This grant gave the name to Norris' brook. It was north of Brookdale.

Mrs. Anna Higginson had a grant of one hundred and fifty acres made in 1636, near the last-named grants, just south of Mr. Goodell's farm. It was sold to John Pickering in 1652, and two years later he sold it to John Woody and Thomas Flint. Some of the descendants of the latter still reside in the vicinity.

The farm of Job Swinerton, acquired partly by various grants from 1637 on, and partly by purchase, lay partly in the extreme northwestern part of the present town. Some of his descendants, of the same name, have continued to live in the vicinity.

Captain Samuel Gardner's farm was just west of Mr. Norris' grant, toward the extreme boundary of the town.

John Humphrey, one of the original grantees under the first charter, and a man of considerable importance in the early colony, received at various times from 1632 to 1658 grants of land, chiefly from





the General Court, amounting to fifteen hundred acres, of which five hundred lay in Salem, about the pond which bears his name, sometimes called Sun-taug Lake. In May, 1635, he received a grant from the General Court of "500 acres of land and a freshe pond, with a little ileland conteyning about two acres." This island was so highly esteemed as a place of security in case of attack by Indians that the right was reserved for the inhabitants of Salem and Saugus (now Lynn) to build store-houses on it "for their vse in tyme of neede." Block-houses were erected there in 1676, but there is no record of any fighting there. The grant of this pond to John Humphrey is believed to be the only specific grant of a "great pond," that is, a pond over forty acres in extent, before the colonial ordinances of 1640 and '47, which made all such ponds free fisheries for the public, with right of access over the lands of those bordering on the water; and this pond is therefore the only great pond in the State in which fishing is not free to the public. The town of Lynnfield has, in recent years, acquired a small piece of land on the margin of the pond, whereby its inhabitants have the right to fish in it.

Mr. Humphrey was one of the justices of the Quarter Court, and was prominent in town and colony affairs. In 1642 a considerable part of his lands were sold on execution to Robert Saltonstall.

Near Mr. Humphrey's grant was William Clarke's farm, from whom Clark's Hill was probably named. April 17, 1637, it was "Agreed that Mr. Clarke shall have two hundred acres by Seder Pond, not exceeding twenty acres of meadow, to be laid out according to the discretion of the layers out." In 1642 a farther grant was made to William Clarke of sixty acres "South of Mr. Downing's greate medow towards Mr. Johnson's land." Clarke's land was near John Marsh's farm.

Joshua Verryn had a grant of one hundred and sixty-five acres in 1637, "next to Mr. Clarke's on the North side, laying down his former." The Verryn family is supposed to be descended from the Verryns.

Lieutenant Francis Johnson had a grant of two hundred acres in January, 1635-36, in Brooksby, in the region of King's Hill. The farm was described by the layers-out as bounded by Mr. Thorndike on the north side and the common on the other. "The farm is on the North side of the River Brooksbie" (evidently Goldthwaite's Brook), "about two miles from Salem westerly." This grant was relinquished by Lieutenant Johnson a few months afterward, at the same time at which Mr. Thorndike relinquished his grant. Mr. Thorndike settled in Salem Village; a new grant of the same extent was made to Lieutenant Johnson, in what is now South Peabody, including the crossing of the Lynnfield and Ipswich roads, and lying on both sides of Goldthwaite's Brook. This locality was known for many years as Johnson's Plain. The order for this new grant declared that

Mr. Johnson "shall have six acres of Meadow ground and fourteen acres of other ground at Brooksby aforesaid, where his cow house now is, and nyne score acres more nere the Cedar Pond above a mile distant from it."

This part of Brooksby is referred to as early as 1635 as "The Rocks." This name has clung to the locality till very recently, and later the village which grew up in the southern part of Peabody was called Rockville.

In the same part of the town a grant was made in 1646 to Zacheus Cortis, who also bought land of Joshua Verryn. Cortis was a man of valor, for it is recorded that he was furnished with one of the few much prized steel corslets belonging to the town of Salem, "in good repayre."

Robert Moulton's grant, the boundaries of which are somewhat difficult to ascertain, lay to the north of Humphrey's farm, somewhere in the vicinity of the Newburyport turnpike. Moulton was a prominent citizen of the town; he was foreman of a jury in 1636, and his name appears in connection with various town affairs.

John Brown, Sr., had a grant of fifty acres, in 1673, near Humphrey's farm and Robert Moulton's, in the vicinity of Walden's Hill. It is stated by Hanson that Hugh, Samuel and Christopher Brown also settled in Brooksby.

Richard Bartholomew received a grant in January, 1637-38, near the beautiful pond which still bears his name.

Capt. William Trask had two grants of land in South Peabody, one of which, near Spring Pond, he sold in 1656 for a cow worth £5. The brook running from Spring Pond to Goldthwaite's Brook was then called "But Brook," and there were early settlements near where it crossed the Boston road.

Following the Boston road toward the main village of Salem, several early settlers located themselves, among them William Lord and Thomas Gardiner. Near the southerly boundary of the farms were lands granted to Lawrence and Cassandra Southwick, the latter name famous because of the persecutions which she suffered as a Quaker. Lawrence Southwick and Ananias Concklin were "glassemens," and it was hoped to foster this industry, whose works were situated in the vicinity of Aborn Street. William Osborne and William Wood were also granted house lots and small lots of land "lying nere Strong Water Brook or Mile End Brook."

John Pickering, though residing in the town proper, owned land in the farms, including a lot near Brown's Pond. Lieut. Richard Davenport, who lived in Salem near North Street, and also at the village, owned land near Brooksby, among other parcels being "2 acres or thereabout lying on the west side of the but brooke not far from the place that the way goeth over to Lin." Lieut. Davenport was a famous soldier of the early colony, and was concerned with Endicott





in cutting out the cross from the king's colors. John Marsh had a grant of twenty acres near one of Lieut. Davenport's grants.

John and Anthony Buxton also had early grants, and there are many whose lands it is not now easy to locate who settled in the middle precinct, and many settlers who obtained their lands by purchase, and whose names do not appear in the book of grants. The Flints, Popes, Uptons and Needhams had valuable farms; the Proctors removed here from Ipswich in 1660, the Pooles from Cambridge in 1690, the Fosters from Boxford, the Suttons from Rowley, the Jacobses in 1700, the Poors in 1770, and the Prestons, Shillabers and other prominent families came in at different periods. A part of the farm of George Jacobs lay in Peabody.

The early settlers were picked men. They received grants of land by reason of their supposed fitness to build up the prosperity of the settlement, and they were mostly eminent for their piety as well as for the qualities which make the enterprising and successful pioneer. Mr. Upham has preserved a curious document, which illustrates the rigid observance of Sunday restrictions, and indicates some of the men upon whom the community depended for the execution of its laws.

"At a general Town meeting, held the 7th day of the 5th month, 1644, ordered that two be appointed every Lord's Day, to walk forth in the time of God's worship, to take notice of such as either lie about the meeting-houses, without attending to the word and ordinances, or that lie at home or in the fields without giving a good account thereof, and to take the names of such persons, and to present them to the magistrates, whereby they may be more fully proceeded against. The names of such as are ordered to this service are for the 1<sup>st</sup> day, Mr. Stileman and Philip Veren, Jr. 2<sup>d</sup> day, Philip Veren, Sr., and Hilbard Veren. 3<sup>d</sup> day, Mr. Batter and Joshua Veren. 4<sup>th</sup> day, Mr. Johnson and Mr. Clark. 5<sup>th</sup> day, Mr. Downing and Robert Molton, Sr. 6<sup>th</sup> day, Robert Molton, Jr., and Richard Ingersel. 7<sup>th</sup> day, John Ingersel and Richard Pettingell. 8<sup>th</sup> day, William Haynes and Richard Hutchinson. 9<sup>th</sup> day, John Putnam and John Hathorne. 10<sup>th</sup> day, Townsend Bishop and Daniel Reed. 11<sup>th</sup> day, John Porter and Jacob Barney."

The design of the plan, as Mr. Upham remarks, was not merely that expressed in the vote of the town, but also to prevent any disorderly conduct on the Lord's day, and to give prompt alarm in case of fire or Indian attack. The men appointed to this service were all leading characters, and we find among them six, at least, of the early settlers of Brooksby.

## CHAPTER LXVI.

### PEABODY (Continued).

*Development of Settlement before 1700—Witchcraft in the Middle Precinct.*

THE history of this locality during the seventeenth century is written with that of Salem. Its inhabitants were simply outlying citizens of the town of Salem, and they belonged to the First Church, except some who were included in the village parish when

it was set off in 1672, for the line of the middle precinct does not exactly coincide with that of the town of Peabody, the latter including a small part of the territory of Salem Village. The dividing line between the village and the middle precinct was originally a line running almost due west from Endicott or Cow-house River to the Lynn line; but when the division was made between North and South Danvers, in 1856, the line was carried from the Endicott River northwesterly, to the sharp bend of the Ipswich River, a mile or more north of the old boundary at that point.

The military organizations engaged in the various early wars with the Indians were recruited indifferently from the various parts of the town, and some of the most famous officers lived at the Farms.

Captain William Trask and his company were prominent in the Pequot War in 1636 and 1637. The three commissioned officers of the company required to be raised in Salem for the Block Island Expedition, in 1636, lived in the middle precinct, or were landholders there,—Trask, Davenport and Read. Some of the men of Brooksby were with Captain Lothrop at Bloody Brook, in 1675, and among the names of those who fell on that disastrous day are those of Edward Trask, Joseph King and Robert Wilson. The Salem Company, under the lead of Captain Nathaniel Davenport, a son of Richard, were in the thick of the terrible hand to hand fight with the forces of King Philip, when the Indian fort was stormed at sundown of a winter's day; and were with the foremost in the pursuit of the escaping Indians through the wilderness, known to tradition as the *hungry march*. When it is remembered that the forces and even the officers of that memorable expedition were drafted hastily for the service, and that many of them left home without even time to arrange their private affairs, the heroic bravery of the Narragansett fight will bear comparison with any deeds of military prowess that history has recorded. The Puritans of New England fought as did the army of Cromwell, with no fear of death, and with the inspiration which came from their firm belief in the Divine protection.

A company of troopers was early formed, made up from the farmers and neighboring settlements. The ranks became thinned in course of time, and in October, 1678, a successful attempt was made to revive the company. Thirty-six men belonging to "the reserve of Salem old troop," and "desirous of being serviceable to God and the country," petitioned the General Court for reorganization as a troop of horse, and for the issuing of the necessary commissions. Among the signers of this petition are Anthony Needham, Peter and Ezekiel Cheever, Thomas Flint, John Procter, William Osborne, and others of the region afterward incorporated into the middle precinct. The officers appointed were men of property and energy, and the company of troops was kept in



efficient training until all danger from Indians or other foes had passed away. The William Osborne here mentioned is not the early settler, who acquired land in 1638, and is not known to be a descendant, but probably collaterally related. The earlier William Osborne is believed to have spent his later years in Boston, and died about 1662. The William Osborne whose name appears on the petition just spoken of, was born about 1644, and from him are descended most of the various families of Osbornes in the vicinity of Salem, Peabody and Danvers. The descendants of the earlier William are found in Connecticut and Long Island.

The second William Osborne, and his son, the third William, lived on the road to the Village, in "the lane," now Central Street, near Andover Street. An old house, built in 1680 and said by tradition to have belonged to one of them, was taken down in 1887.

In all the duties of citizenship the farmers appear to have been prominent; and citizenship was then regarded as a most serious and important allegiance, requiring the most faithful exercise of duty. The oath of a freeman, which was required to be taken by those seeking to share in the social and political privileges of the settlement, is full of the most striking suggestions of the clear and vigorous political views held by the founders.

"Moreover, I doe solemnly binde myselfe, in the sight of God, that when I shall be caled to give my voyce touching any such matter of this state in which freemen are to deale, I will give my vote and suffrage as I shall judge in my own conscience may best conduce & tend to the publique weale of y<sup>e</sup> body without respect of persons or favour of any man. So help me God in the Lord Jesus Christ."

The policy which permitted every one who had a town lot of half an acre to relinquish it, and receive in its stead a country lot, of fifty acres or more, had the result of attracting to the forests and meadows of the Farms a population of a superior order. Men of property, education and high social position took the lead in developing the resources of the country, and they gave character to the farming interest and class. This process of selection is undoubtedly the source of the high character for industry, intelligence and energy, which has distinguished the descendants of these early settlers of the outlying lands of Salem.

Of the social life of the middle of the seventeenth century in the farming district of Brooksby we know little, except what we learn from the annals of life in Salem in those early days, and from the light thrown upon the time by the exhaustive investigations which have been made into the history of the following 'period of the witchcraft delusion. We know that their labors were severe and unremitting, and their social relaxations infrequent and carefully guarded against excess. The vigorous style of English merrymaking, though put down with an

iron hand in the case of the roystering Morton, who tried to set up the Maypole festival at Merrymount, still asserted itself on such privileged occasions as house raisings and huskings. No vigor of Puritanical custom can wholly restrain the innocent joyousness of youth and healthful spirits, and in spite of their serious views of life, there is plenty of evidence that the magistrates and elders were wise enough not to attempt wholly to repress the natural and innocent enjoyments of country life and manners. The religious views of the people, though severe in doctrine, were not gloomy in practical application to the life of the colony, and the faith which had led them into the wilderness brightened and cheered their hard and simple life on the rocky and unpromising farms which so many were forced to receive as their portion of the soil. They had a spirit which was above repining, and which noted hardship chiefly as a providential opportunity for the development of Christian character. They belonged to that rare class of men who are never dominated by their surroundings, but who, by mental and spiritual vigor, rise superior to the most powerful forces with which they are obliged to cope. The short lapse of time in which farms were brought under cultivation, roads built, orchards planted, mills erected and churches and schools established, bears witness, both to the wisdom with which the authorities allotted their public lands, giving the large grants to those who were able to employ labor to improve them, and to the wonderful vigor and natural resources of the individual settlers.

Among the most remarkable men who lived in that part of the Farms within the limits of Peabody was Sir George Downing. His father, Emanuel Downing, had several grants of land, one of which in the town was bought of him by John Pickering, and is the site of the house on Broad Street, still standing, built by Pickering. Another, already referred to, near Procter's corner, was in the central part of Brooksby, and, as Mr. Upham points out, George Downing spent his later youth and early manhood there. Hunting and fishing were doubtless his amusements, and we may imagine him, fowling-piece in hand, traversing the woods which then thickly environed the scattered farms. He was one of the first class graduated from Harvard College in 1642; studied divinity; after various travels he was brought to the notice of Cromwell, having returned to England at a time when so many of the exiled Puritans seemed to see the promise of an ideal English Commonwealth, and from chaplain was promoted to scout-master general in Cromwell's army. He married a sister of the Earl of Carlisle, became a member of Parliament for Scotland, and undertook high diplomatic missions for the Commonwealth, going at one time as ambassador to the Hague. At the restoration he kept in favor with the new government, and received from his new sovereign the order of knighthood. On his return to





England he became a member of Parliament for Morpeth, and soon assumed control of the exchequer, in the management of which he displayed financial genius and statesmanship of a very high order. Mr. Upham ascribes to him the origin of the celebrated Navigation Act, and the credit of originating the principle of specific appropriations in Parliament, a principle which has been embodied in American constitutional law. His name is perpetuated in Downing Street, in London, and by the college in Cambridge, England, established by the gift of his fortune. Of all the young men who have gone from the historic region of the farms of the middle precinct of Salem, no one has left a more romantic and brilliant record of political success. A sister, Ann, married Governor Bradstreet in 1680.

The farmers of Brooksby continued to develop the agricultural resources of the region with little of the eventful in their history, except their share in the military operations of the time. The descendants of the first settlers exhibited much of that love of the home soil which has ever characterized the race; new families came in from time to time, and remote as the region was from immediate danger of Indian invasion, its annals are a simple record of peace and thrifty comfort, if not prosperity.

The witchcraft delusion found some of its victims in the farms of the middle precinct. John Procter, who lived on the the Downing farm, was one of the most prominent of those who lost their lives in that strange uprising of superstition. He originally lived in Ipswich, where he had a valuable farm. He was a man of great native force and energy, bold and fearless in language, impulsive in feeling and sometimes rash and hasty in action. The vigorous training of what was then frontier life while it did not tend to lawlessness, cultivated a marked independence of mind and manners in many of the farmers. Procter was a man of good property. His name appears in connection with the establishment of the Salem troop of horse. Mary Warren, one of the "afflicted" girls, was a servant in his family, and it seems but too evident that she was affected by malicious feelings toward the family. He accompanied his wife, Elizabeth, the daughter of John Thorndike, who was first arrested, from her arrest to her arraignment, and stood bravely and resolutely by her side, trying to support her under the terrible trials which she had to endure, without regard to the consequences to himself. Mr. Upham says that it was probably his fearless condemnation of the nonsense and the outrage perpetrated by the accusers in the examination of his wife which brought the vengeance of the girls down on him. The account of the preliminary examination of these two good and brave people, before the magistrates in the meeting-house at Salem, on the 11th of April, 1692, stirs the blood to indignation against the folly of the courts and the malignity of the accusers. No coun-

sel was allowed, however, to any of the accused. Every sort of irregular evidence, not to be excused by doubtful precedent in English courts, was freely made use of; the afflicted children were permitted not only to testify to seeing the spectral semblances of Goodman and Goodwife Procter in their chamber, but even to declare that they saw Goody Procter sitting in the rafters of the meeting-house in open court, while the awe-struck spectators gazed upward, straining their eyes to behold the witch. The most transparent trickery failed to be detected. Parris, in his report, quoted by Upham, says of the beginning of the accusation against Procter, which happened while his wife was being examined:

"(By and by, both of them [the accusing girls], cried out of Goodman Procter himself, and said he was a wizard. Immediately many, if not all of the bewitched had grievous fits.)"

"Ann Putnam, who hurt you?—Goodman Procter and his wife too."

"(Afterwards some of the afflicted cried,—'There is Procter going to take up Mrs. Pope's feet!' and her feet were immediately taken up.)"

"What do you say, Goodman Procter, to these things?—I know not. I am innocent."

"(Abigail Williams cried out,—'There is Goodman Procter going to Mrs. Pope!' and immediately said Pope fell into a fit.)"

Some member of the court, who was wholly infatuated by the delusion, said to Procter,—"You see, the Devil will deceive you: the children could see what you was going to do before the woman was hurt."

One of the girls pretended to strike Goodwife Procter, and drew her hand back crying that her fingers burned.

On such evidence Procter and his wife, with Goodwife Corey and others, were held by the magistrates for trial, and sent to the jail in Boston. Procter and his wife were tried on the 5th of August, and Procter himself was executed on the 19th of the same month. His wife, owing to her condition, was reprieved for the time, and before the time arrived for her execution the storm had spent itself, and she was saved from the gallows. She gave birth to a child two weeks after her husband's execution. He made his will with the manacles on his hands. So bitter was the wrath of the persecutors against the Procters that they not only arrested and tried to destroy all the adult members of the family, but even relatives in Lynn. The children were left destitute and the home swept clear of its provisions by the sheriff. In spite of the danger of such a proceeding, upwards of thirty citizens of Ipswich and a considerable number of their neighbors at the Farms signed and sent in petitions for clemency in their case, testifying to the high standing of the couple. Notwithstanding his efforts, an appeal having been made by him to the ministers of Boston to protect him in his rights, he was condemned and executed,



and his body thrown into a hasty and dishonored grave, from which, Upham states, tradition says that, like some others of the more prominent victims, his body was taken secretly by his family and buried with the family dead. Years afterward, in 1711, the General Court, in a distribution of money to those who suffered from the fearful consequences of the wickedness of the accusers and the infatuation of the people, gave to John Procter and his wife, and those who represented them, the sum of one hundred and fifty pounds, the largest sum given to any of the sufferers.

At that time attainder, including forfeiture of property to the State, was an incident of conviction for felony; and it was doubtless the desire to save his property for his children which chiefly induced Giles Corey to stand mute and refuse to plead to his indictment; and so to submit himself to the horrible and barbarous form of death which has made his the most remarkable figure among the victims of that cruel conspiracy. Corey lived on a good farm of about one hundred and fifty acres, in what is now the north-western part of Peabody. He was a man of great independence of character, careless of conventionalities, and hardened by the severities of farming life in that period to a cross-grained disregard for the opinions and talk of his neighbors. He was, throughout his life at the Farms, often in difficulties with others, sometimes seeking redress at law for injuries claimed by him, and sometimes dealt with for hard blows or unconcealed disregard of the rights of his neighbors. It is probable, as Mr. Upham thinks, that he was not nearly so bad as the reports of the day made him out, and that he was not essentially a lawless or unprincipled man. He was once or twice arrested on suspicion of serious offences, but always cleared himself, and continued to live on in his own way, with a fair share of prosperity. He and John Procter figure on the records as opponents in various disputes; indeed, Corey was examined at one time on suspicion of setting Procter's house on fire, but it appeared clearly that he was innocent, and he in turn instituted prosecutions for defamation against Procter and his accusers, in which he recovered against them all. His third wife, Martha, was a woman notable for piety, and a member of the village church; and it may have been owing to her influence that Corey himself, only a year or two before the witchcraft times, when he was eighty years old, offered himself and was received into membership at the First Church in Salem; and the records of that church state that though he was of a "scandalous life" he made a confession of his sins satisfactory to that body. He was completely carried away by the fanaticism of the time, and frequented the examinations of the accused and believed all that he heard. Martha Corey, on the other hand, did not approve of the proceedings, and did not hesitate to express her want of faith in the afflicted children. She spent much of her time

in prayer, and her course was marked as peculiar and caused an estrangement between herself and her husband. As it happened in so many other cases, the accusers were quick to resent any opposition, and holding the power of life and death in their hands, crushed down opposition in a manner so unscrupulous and so remorseless that the arguments of Mr. Upham as to the deliberate character of the conspiracy seem unanswerable.

The accusation of one of the girls set two of the citizens to call on Goodwife Corey, and her innocent and sprightly conversation was tortured into evidence against her. On her appearance at Thomas Putnam's one of the girls fell in a fit, and declared that Goody Corey was the author of her sufferings. Upon this conclusive evidence a warrant was issued for her arrest on the 19th of March, and on the 21st she was examined in the meeting-house at the village. Her examination is preserved by Mr. Upham, and shows that she was a bright, fearless old woman, who hardly seemed to realize the danger in which she stood. The ridiculous accusations in some instances made her laugh, which was thought a most convincing proof of devilish light-mindedness. She was bound over for trial by Justices Hathorne and Corwin. At her examination she requested to be allowed to "go to prayer," which was refused by the magistrates, though the Rev. Mr. Noyes, at the beginning of the proceedings, had put up what might be described as an exceedingly *ex parte* petition. It is probable that the managers of the excitement feared the effect which such a prayer might have on the spectators.

The criticisms of her husband for her failure to fall in with the current delusion were made use of against her, and a deposition of his, not directly accusing her, but evidently intended to weigh against her, is found on the records. On the 9th of September she was tried and condemned. Two days after, she was formally excommunicated from the Village church. Mr. Parris, with two deacons and Lieutenant Putnam, went to convey this sentence to her, and found her "very obdurate, justifying herself, and condemning all that had done anything to her just discovery or condemnation. Whereupon, after a little discourse (for her imperiousness would not suffer much), and after prayer—which she was willing to decline—the dreadful sentence of excommunication was pronounced against her." Calef says that "Martha Corey, protesting her innocency, concluded her life with an eminent prayer upon the ladder." She was executed September 22, 1692.

The dwelling-house of Corey was near the crossing of the Salem and Lowell and Georgetown and Boston railroads on the south side of the former road, a little distance to the west of the crossing. He had lived previously in the town of Salem, and sold his house there in 1659.

Giles Corey, as has been remarked, was induced to give some sort of evidence concerning his wife, but it





does not appear to be of much importance. It is very probable, as Upham suggests, that the hostility of the accusers was incurred by him for his lukewarm deposition against her. It is very likely, too, that when the accusation was brought home to his own family, and his wife, whom it is evident he knew to be a good and pious woman, was subjected to examination and committed to prison, he began to see matters in their true light, and expressed himself with his usual freedom. He was examined April 19, 1692, in the meeting-house at the village. The usual performances of the accusers were gone through with; they fell into fits, and were afflicted with grievous pinches, at which the court ordered his hands to be tied. The magistrates lost all control of themselves, and flew into a passion, exclaiming, "What! is it not enough to act witchcraft at other times, but must you do it now in the face of authority?" He seems to have been dumbfounded by these inexplicable proceedings, and could only say, "I am a poor creature, and cannot help it." Upon the motion of his head again, they had their heads and necks afflicted.

One of his hands was let go, and several were afflicted. He held his head on one side and then the heads of several of the afflicted were held on one side. He drew in his cheeks, and the cheeks of some of the afflicted were sucked in. Through all this outrageous accusation he firmly asserted his innocence. His spirit is shown by the indignation with which he repelled one charge. Some of the witnesses testified that Corey had said that he had seen the devil in the form of a black hog, and was very much frightened. He denied the imputation of cowardice, and when "divers witnessed that he had told them he was frightened," he was asked "Well, what do you say to these witnesses? What was it frightened you?" He answered proudly, "I do not know that ever I spoke the word in my life."

He was much oppressed and distressed by his situation, and the share that he had had in promoting the excitement in the case of his wife and others doubtless added to his distress of mind. His sons-in-law, Crosby and Parker, were in sympathy with the crowd that pursued him, and he was accused of having meditated suicide.

He was bound over for trial and committed to jail. He was indicted by the grand jury upon spectral evidence chiefly, as appears by the few brief depositions on file.

What were his thoughts and feelings in his imprisonment there is little record to show, but there is reason to believe that in spite of his courage and fearlessness, he suffered greatly in mind. His eyes were fully opened to the wickedness, not only of his own accusation, but of that of all the other victims, and the utter injustice of the proceedings against him, and in the silence and gloom of his prison he made up his mind to that invincible determination which made his fate unique in the annals of legal

procedure in America and shocking even beyond that of any of his innocent fellow-sufferers.

He resolved to stand mute at his arraignment, and so not only save his property from the effects of the attainder, but make a protest against the injustice of the courts and juries and the malignity of his accusers, which should stand as long as history continued to record the awful deeds then done in the name of the law against innocent and God-fearing men and women. He meant, also, to attest the strength of his feelings towards those who had been true to him and to his wife, and his vengeance toward those who had sworn and acted against him and her. He caused to be drawn up a deed of conveyance while he was in the jail at Ipswich, by which he conveyed all his property to his two sons-in-law who had been faithful to him, and executed it in the presence of competent witnesses. It was not certain whether this deed, though executed before the time of his trial, would stand against the attainder consequent upon his conviction; he had looked upon conviction as a foregone conclusion, for he had no faith in the justice of court or jury. When he was called into court to answer to his indictment, whether he was guilty or not guilty, he refused to answer. We do not know how often he was called forth, but nothing could shake him,—he stood mute. As Mr. Upham says:

"He knew that the gates of justice were closed, and that truth had fled from the scene. He would have no part nor lot in the matter; refused to recognize the court, made no response to its questions, and was dumb in its presence. He stands alone in the resolute defiance of his attitude. He knew the penalty of suffering and agony he would have to pay; but he freely and fearlessly encountered it. All that was needed to carry his point was an unconquerable firmness, and he had it. He rendered it impossible to bring him to trial, and thereby, in spite of the power and wrath of the whole country and its authorities, retained his right to dispose of his property; and bore his testimony against the wickedness and folly of the hour in tones that reached the whole world, and will resound through all the ages."

In modern law, the prisoner who stands mute is deemed to have pleaded *not guilty*. But the English common law, to which the colony was subject in criminal matters, knew of no means by which the trial could proceed unless the accused answered to his indictment in open court. It is obvious that if any light penalty had attended such refusal to plead, many would have availed themselves of it; and so the policy of the old law was to provide an ordeal so awful that no one would deliberately undergo it. The prisoner was to be three times brought before the court and called to plead; the consequences of his refusal being solemnly announced to him each time. If he remained obdurate, the terrible sentence of *peine forte et dure* was passed upon him; and he would be laid on his back on the floor of a dungeon, mostly naked. A weight of iron would be put upon him, not quite enough to crush him. He would have no sustenance except on the first day, three morsels of the worst bread, and on the second day, three draughts of standing water from the pool nearest the prison door; and, still oppressed by the weight, he should





thus on alternate days eat and drink till he died or till he answered. If he answered, he was at once relieved, and tried in the ordinary way. It may well be imagined that when the only object of endurance was to save property from confiscation, few, indeed, would ever long endure such torture. But Corey had another motive, which lent strength to his spirit such as ranks him with the most courageous souls of all history.

Just what happened in his prison was never revealed; but according to tradition, Corey was at last taken out into an open field near Salem jail, somewhere between Howard Street Burial-ground and Brown Street. He gave his executioners to understand that it was useless to prolong the ordeal, for he would never yield. They piled the heavy stones on his body, and Calef says that some inhuman spectator or official forced his tongue, protruding in the agony of his suffocation, back into his mouth with a cane. His indomitable courage endured to the end, and he died firm, as he had declared he would. Such a scene, if imagined ever so faintly, will serve to bring back to us the crushing effect of the superstitious fears of the people, who could see in this most pathetic and marvellous instance, in a man over eighty-one years of age, of the power of a resolute will over the extremest agony of body, only a proof of devilish and malignant power.

His death produced a deep effect, and startled many into a feeling of growing repugnance and suspicion towards the witchcraft proceedings. He was excommunicated from the First Church, by the agency of the Rev. Mr. Noyes, at a meeting hurriedly called for that purpose, just before his death.

Such was the record of the victims of the witchcraft delusion and conspiracy, for it may fairly be believed that it was both, in the farms of the middle precinct. With the exception of the Shafflin girl, whom a timely whipping brought to her senses before she did any harm, none of the accusers lived in the limits of Peabody. Of the public excitement, the fear, first of the witches, and then of the accusers, — the indignant sympathy of friends, the ready spirit of superstitious and credulous hatred toward the accused, which filled the region for so many long and awful months, little record remains. The Proctors continued to live on their farms, and resumed their influential position in the society of the place; but it may well be imagined that the ties that bound the people to either the First Church, presided over by Mr. Noyes, or the village, where Parris was trying to retain his hold against the heartfelt indignation of the relatives of those whom he had been so active in persecuting, were never afterward so binding or so attractive.

## CHAPTER LXVII.

### PEABODY—(Continued).

#### *The Separation of the Middle Precinct*

IN February, 1709-10, a petition was laid before the selectment of Salem, signed by Captain Samuel Gardner and others, requesting the town of Salem to set off as a new precinct that part of the town outside of the town bridge and below the line of Salem Village. The reasons given are the distance of some of the families from the First Church in Salem, and the difficulty of general attendance on divine worship, and the growth of the district indicated. The boundaries of the proposed precinct were laid down in this petition, which was embodied in the warrant for a special town-meeting to be held March 6, 1709-10.

"Viz, on a streight line from y<sup>e</sup> towne bridge to y<sup>e</sup> Spring Pond where y<sup>e</sup> brook Runs out and soe along y<sup>e</sup> northern shore of said Pond to Lyn line, and then northward on Lyn line to y<sup>e</sup> Village Line, and then eastward on y<sup>e</sup> Village line to Freshish River and then as y<sup>e</sup> Saltwater Leads to y<sup>e</sup> Towne bridge first named (Excepting only James Symonds, John Symonds, John Norton & Math Whitmore), viz., for granting unto y<sup>e</sup> inhabitants Dwelling within y<sup>e</sup> limits above mentioned to be free from paying Rates to y<sup>e</sup> Minister within y<sup>e</sup> bridge. Provided they do at their owne Cost and Charge build a Meeting-house for y<sup>e</sup> Publi<sup>k</sup> Worship of God among them and sustaine an Orthodox Minister to Preach in y<sup>e</sup> same."

The meeting of March 6th was called of "those that live without or below y<sup>e</sup> Village line that are Duely Qualified according to law for voteing." This call excluded the voters of Salem Village, who were probably deemed not to be interested in the separation of the middle precinct from the First Parish. The result was that the petitioners were in the minority, and the meeting was dissolved without action, as the record says, "because all the persons precluded by the Petitioners had not signed the petition."

The persons excepted lived in North Salem.

It is evident that this informality was merely a pretext seized upon by the majority to prevent farther action at that time, and that a very decided opposition to the separation of the new precinct was developed at this meeting; for immediately on this rebuff in the town-meeting, the same petitioners decided to change their plans, to address the General Court, praying to be set off as a separate precinct, and to ask of the town of Salem simply a lot of land on which to build their meeting-house. As the next general town-meeting was to be held on March 20, they induced the selectmen to insert an article in the warrant authorizing the grant of a lot of land conditionally on the precinct's being established, there being at the time no petition or proceeding on foot, other than the one which had just been refused a hearing, before either the town or the General Court. Captain Samuel Gardner was a representative that year to the General Court, with Captain Jonathan Putnam, (they were paid £ 9 6s. apiece for their sixty-



two days' service at the assembly), and it is very likely that he felt more confident of success in the General Court than in the town-meeting. The following is the list of the Petitioners, as given by Hanson. Samuel Marble, John Nurse, Abraham Pierce, James Houlton, Samuel Cutler, Ebenezer Cutler, Samuel King, Samuel Stone, James Gould, William King, Stephen Small, Ezekiel Marsh, Benjamin Very, Ezekiel Goldthwaite, Nathaniel Waters, John Jacobs, Richard Waters, Samuel Cook, David Foster, Nathaniel Felton, John Waters, Israel Shaw, Jacob Read, John Trask, Nathaniel Tompkins, William Osborne, Jr., John O. Waldin, Anthony H. Needham, John Marsh, Benjamin Marsh, Samuel Stacey, Sr., Samuel Stacey, William Osborne, John W. Burton, Benjamin C. Procter, Elias Trask, John Giles, John Gardner, George Jacobs, John Felton, Robert Wilson, Eben. Foster, Jonathan King, Skelton Felton, Henry Cook, Joseph Douty, Thorndike Procter, Samuel Goldthwaite, Samuel Goldthwaite, Jr., John King, John King, Jr., Samuel Endicott.

The article in the warrant issued March 8, 1709-10, is "To answer the petition of severall of ye Inhabitants of this Towne, that live without y<sup>e</sup> bridge and below y<sup>e</sup> Village line, To grant them a Quarter of an acre of land to Set a Meeting-house upon Nigh Sam<sup>l</sup> Golthrit's Jun. between that and y<sup>e</sup> widow Parnell's in Case y<sup>e</sup> Towne or General Court See Cause to Set them off."

The inhabitants of the village parish appear to have been in sympathy with the promoters of the new precinct, and the petitioners were able to secure a majority at the general town-meeting. A motion to proceed at once to the vote for granting one-fourth of an acre to the petitioners prevailed, and it was then voted that the land asked for be granted. A protest was immediately drawn up and signed by several of the most prominent citizens of the "Body of the Town," and was entered on the records. Its terms are curious and interesting. The grounds of the protest were that the inhabitants of the new precinct "have never been sett of, nor any Precinct or District for a Parish Prescribed by the Towne, and altho' this matter of there petition was now urged and moved as preposterous and irregular, & that therefore y<sup>e</sup> Towne might have time to Consider of it till another Towne meeting"; "Wee therefore" say the remonstrants, "Doe hereby dissent from and Protest against the Said Precipitate and Irregular vote or act therein for y<sup>e</sup> reasons following, viz:

"1.—Because two of the Selectmen that order'd the Inserting this matter in the warrant were Livers without the Bridge, & one of them a Petitioner in said Petition, and both Subscribers to the there Intended meeting house.

"2.—Because two More of the Selectmen that were of the Village Parish were absent from their Brethren when the said Petition was ordered in the warrant.

"3.—Because the Three Selectmen that are Livers within the Bridge at y<sup>e</sup> Time of the Agitation about itt Declared against the other Two Inserting of Petition in the warrant & Bring it forward at this time.

"4.—Because some of the voters were Livers without the Bridge,

& Some Quakers, and cheifly those also belonging to the Village Parrish whom we humbly conceive were not proper voters in this matter. Wee therefore pray this, our Protest, may be Entred with y<sup>e</sup> said vote in the Towne Records."

Benjamin Lynde, Jonathan Corwin, William Gedney and Francis Willoughby were among the signers of this protest.

The next sitting of the General Court was convened May 31, and the petition for the new precinct having been duly presented, the General Court, upon reading it, issued an order of notice directing the petitioners to notify the town of Salem, by sending a copy of the petition to the Selectmen, to appear and show reason on the 16th of June, why the prayer of the petitioners should not be granted.

On the 8th of June, the selectmen called a meeting of freeholders below the village line, for the 12th. At this meeting, which was merely to give an opportunity to the remonstrants to appear against the petitioners, "at the motion of the moderator and Severall other gentlemen the Petitioners Liveing without the Bridge Drew of before voting. It was "voated that the Towne will Choose a Comitte or agents to Shew Reason why the Prayers of the Petitioners our Neighbours without the Bridge should not be Granted." A committee consisting of Major Samuel Browne, Benjamin Lynde, and Josiah Wolcot, was chosen to show reason in the town's behalf against the petition. The arguments of the remonstrants were filed in writing, and contain evidence of warm feeling. The committee for Salem do not hesitate to say to the General Court "Wee Cannot Butt think that Thatt Honourable Court will never want Buisness and Trouble If such Hasty and forward Petitioners be Encouraged and have their Desires." They also declare that "There was no such design until our Church had Chosen Mr. George Corwin for an assistant in the ministry to our Rev<sup>d</sup>. Mr. Noyes, which not being pleasing to One, or Two of the Chief of y<sup>e</sup> Petitioners has occasioned this new undertaking, and a great unhappiness in the Town." It was objected also that the separation would take from the body of the town, so far as concerned parish matters, three fourths of all improved lands, and the best part of the common lands, and it would withdraw eighty or ninety families from the First Church.

On the 19th of June, the General Court referred the whole matter to the next session, and appointed a committee to repair to Salem, and upon a full hearing of the petitioners, and the selectmen and others in behalf of the town, and after taking a view of the place proposed for the new building, "to offer their opinion of the most convenient place for a new congregation, Making report upon the whole to this Court at their next session."

Tuesday, the 12th of September, was set for the hearing before the committee of the General Court in Salem. The selectmen determined to make the visit of the committee an agreeable one, for at a meeting of





the selectmen, September 9th, it was "ordered that John Pratt be spoken to make Sutable Entertainment for y<sup>e</sup> Comitte appointed by y<sup>e</sup> General Court to come to Salem refering to y<sup>e</sup> precinct petition for without y<sup>e</sup> Bridge & that the Towne will defray y<sup>e</sup> Charge thereof."

John Pratt was for many years the proprietor of the famous "Ship Tavern" on Essex Street, nearly opposite Centre Street, on the site afterward occupied by the Mansion House. He afterward removed, about 1750, to a house on the corner of Essex and Washington Streets. About 1773 another house of entertainment, on the corner of Washington and Church Streets, was called the Ship Tavern.

The meeting of the committee was probably held in the Town House, in the upper part of which was the court-room, and which was situated in the middle of Washington Street, anciently School Street, facing Essex Street, about where the eastern end of the tunnel now is.

At this hearing fresh papers were filed by the parties; the petitioners rejoined to the arguments of the respondents, and pointed out that the new parish would take only about one-fourth of the families of the First Parish, and that owing to the small means of those who lived by husbandry, compared to the merchants and tradesmen of the town, it would take away but "a little more than a fifth part of y<sup>e</sup> proportion rated to the minister."

The full discussion has not been preserved, but it was doubtless animated, for these were people who took a deep interest in everything of public concern, and who were accustomed to vehement debate.

The committee were taken to the proposed site of the new meeting-house, and they were entertained by the town with great liberality; for John Pratt's bill "for Entertainment of y<sup>e</sup> Comitte & y<sup>e</sup> Company that attended & accompanied them" for "Two dinners, expenses, &c.," amounted to £4 7s. 6d., a very considerable sum for a junket in those days, which was approved the following January without comment, so far as the records show; perhaps because at the same meeting of the selectmen their patriotic ardor was stirred by an order to pay to the same landlord "For expense on Major Lee & his pylot bringing y<sup>e</sup> first news of port Royalls being taken," amounting to 12s. 10d. It is probable that the item of "expenses, &c.," included a hospitable supply of liquors. The use of the same word in the order to pay for the celebration of the victory at Port Royal, shows that it had an ascertained meaning, like that of the word "sundries" in bills for celebrations of more recent date. It is interesting to note that in one respect at least we are more puritanical than our forefathers, for a town officer would hardly venture now to "treat" at the expense of the town in celebration of a victory.

On November 1, 1710, the legislative committee submitted a report, dated October 31, in favor of

setting off the new precinct. The report was read in the council and left upon the board. The next day the report was again read and debated. On the 3d, upon the question "Whether the Council will now vote the said report," there was a tie. It was not till the 10th of November that the report was finally accepted. The recommendation of the committee was that "The said Precinct do begin at the great Cove in the North Field so to run directly to Trask's Grist Mill, taking in the Mill to the new Precinct; from thence on a Strait Line to the Mile Stone on the Road to Salem Meeting-house, and So along the Road to Lyn by Lindsay's; and then along the Line between Salem and Lyn Northward, till it comes to Salem Village line, & along by that line to Frost Fish River, & then by the Salt Water to the great Cove first mentioned; and that the Meeting-house be erected on that Piece of Land near Gardner's Brook, already granted by the Towne for that End."

The report of the committee, which was signed by Penn Townsend for the committee, was read and accepted by both houses and consented to by Governor Dudley the same day, November 10, 1710.

It seems that although the committee, in their report, speak of a piece of land as already granted by the town, there had been no location of the grant, which was indeed, by its terms, conditional.

On the 28th of December a formal vote was passed at a meeting of the selectmen, ordering that Captain Jonathan Putnam, Mr. Benjamin Putnam and Mr. John Pickering or any two of them be a committee to lay out the quarter of an acre and make return thereof.

It was undoubtedly a shrewd proceeding on the part of the petitioners to obtain the conditional grant in advance, and then locate it by the recommendation of the committee of the General Court before the layers-out had been appointed. The fact that the land had already been granted may be fairly supposed to have had some weight in the deliberations of the committee.

## CHAPTER LXVIII.

### PEABODY (*Continued*).

#### *The Middle Precinct—Building the Meeting-house.*

On the 28th of November, 1710, a general meeting of the inhabitants of the Middle Precinct was held. Captain Samuel Gardner was chosen moderator, and John Gardner was chosen "Clark." It was voted "That there be A Convenient Meeting hous Built for y<sup>e</sup> Publick Worship of God w<sup>th</sup> all convenient Speed in this Middle Precinct, and that it be Erected on y<sup>e</sup> place of Ground granted by the Town for that End." The committee chosen to have charge of the



building of the new house were "Cap<sup>t</sup> Sam<sup>l</sup> Gardner, Mr Jn<sup>s</sup> Frisk Sent, Mr James Holton, Mr Sam<sup>l</sup> Cutler, Mr Jn<sup>s</sup> Nurse, Mr Jon<sup>s</sup> Mash, Mr Jn<sup>s</sup> Felton, Mr Will<sup>m</sup> King, Mr Thordick Procter, Mr. Abell Gardner, Mr Abr<sup>m</sup> Pearse, Mr Jn<sup>s</sup> Waters."

The site chosen for the new meeting-house is that now occupied by the South Congregational Church in Peabody. It is mentioned in the proceedings at the centennial celebration of the incorporation of Danvers that the original grant of a quarter of an acre was in some way increased to about an acre.

The committee on the building, which is commonly spoken of in the parish records as "y<sup>e</sup> grate comity" met, with brief delay, on the 30th of November, and it was "Agreed that y<sup>e</sup> Building be 48 feet Long and 35 feet wid and 24 feet stud so as to have two Galaris." It was "Agreed That Mr Sam<sup>l</sup> Cutler Mr Robert Willson Mr Jn<sup>s</sup> Waters Be undertakers for y<sup>e</sup> workmanship of y<sup>e</sup> Hous and are to have 2<sup>d</sup> 9<sup>d</sup>  $\frac{1}{2}$  Day for so many days as they work from the present time till y<sup>e</sup> 10<sup>th</sup> of March next and then 3<sup>d</sup>  $\frac{1}{2}$  day so Long as y<sup>e</sup> Comitty sees good. Agreed That other carpenders have 2<sup>d</sup> 6<sup>d</sup> per day for so many days as they work, and men that work with A Narro Ax to have 2<sup>d</sup>  $\frac{1}{2}$  day."

On January 15, 1710-11, the committee called a general meeting of the inhabitants of the parish to petition the town for a lot for the minister, and it was voted "to move or petition for 10 acres of land or as much as y<sup>e</sup> town sees meet to be laid out between Mr. Sam<sup>l</sup> Stones and Sam<sup>l</sup> Goldthrit's for y<sup>e</sup> use of y<sup>e</sup> Ministry for this Precinct. The location asked for would be between Washington Street and Foster Street, on the southerly side of Main Street. On March 12, 1710-11 the matter came before the general town meeting of Salem, and it was left to the select men to propose to the next annual town meeting "relating to a Sutable proportion of lands for y<sup>e</sup> Ministry of y<sup>e</sup> body of y<sup>e</sup> Towne and y<sup>e</sup> other two precincts to be set apart for y<sup>e</sup> use of y<sup>e</sup> Ministry of y<sup>e</sup> severall Districts." It seems that the application of the new precinct for a minister's lot was the occasion of the other parishes' asking for lots also, and at the meeting on March 24, 1711-12, the town was asked to grant ten acres to each of the outlying precincts and twenty acres to the First Parish. This the voters refused to do; but it was voted to grant half an acre of land to "the New Chappell lately erected," for the use of the minister. This was shortly after Mr. Prescott had been called to the Middle Parish.

This grant of one-half acre was not laid out for several years. In 1715 application was made to the selectmen of Salem to lay it out, and they did so the same year, near the meeting-house. The location included the vicinity of the Universalist Church building, extending toward the square. Part of this land was afterward conveyed to the Rev. Mr. Holt, and the remainder continued in the possession of the

ministry until 1818, when it was sold to Matthew Hooper for fifteen hundred dollars. The town of Salem refused to grant more land to the various precincts; but when in 1714 there was a division of common rights, five acres were granted to the commoners to each of the four churches. These appropriations were located, one above the other, on the left of the old Boston road, going toward Poole's bridge from Salem, between Glasshouse Field and the Sheep Pasture. The various church lots lay on the southerly side of the road now leading to Swampscott from Aborn Street, extending in a direction parallel to the Boston road. This land also was sold in 1845 for six hundred dollars and the proceeds of all the ministry lands of the Middle Precinct forms a fund which has at times been invested in a parsonage and at other times kept at interest. In the grants of these lands, in 1714 and 1715, the Middle Precinct is spoken of as Brooksby Parish or Precinct, showing that the ancient name was still in use at that time.

The original dimensions of the new meeting-house were enlarged at a meeting of the Great Committee in March, 1710-11, and it was agreed that the house should be fifty-one feet long and thirty eight feet broad. The lower part of the "Galaria Girts" were to be eight and one-half feet from the floor; there were to be six seats in the front gallery and five seats in the end galleries. The pulpit was in the middle of one of the long sides, and the principal aisle, or "alley," ran at right angles to the sitters, lengthwise and in the middle of the house. The pews were nearly square; there were twenty of them, and they were mostly about five feet by six, though Samuel Cutler's pew was more than seven by six feet, and one pew occupied by Samuel and John Gardner was six feet by nine. The scarcity and costliness of window-glass made it necessary to economize greatly in the use of that luxury; and some of the pew-holders being inconvenienced by the darkness of their sittings, it was voted in May, 1712, "That thay which have no windos in their Puse have leave to cut sum out Provided thay maintain them at their one Charge." If this liberty was largely availed of, it must have produced a picturesque irregularity in the appearance of the structure from the outside. One case, at least, is recorded; Daniel Marble was given leave to cut a window out of the side of the meeting-house against his pew, to be maintained by him. This was in 1726. In 1765 the proprietors of new pews were given liberty to cut or make windows at the east and west doors.

The building was raised June 6, 1711. Mr. Joseph Green, of the Village Church, has recorded in his diary that he went to the raising "at Col. Gardner's." Captain Samuel Gardner's house was on the northerly corner of Central and Elm Streets. The festivities of that occasion were probably paid for by private subscription, for the only item of refreshments which appears in the parish accounts at





that period is the very modest entry "p<sup>d</sup> for Syder bread & Cheese when the plank was unloaden, 02<sup>s</sup>."

On October 5, 1711, a day of fasting and prayer was recommended "particularly in y<sup>e</sup> Calling of A minister," and the wish was devoutly spread upon the record "That God would direct in that Waighty Consecrarn to such a person as may be a blessing to y<sup>e</sup> place." A committee was chosen at the same time for granting pews and seating the house; so that the building was probably nearly or quite ready at that time. The record of the first seating is not entered till several years afterward, about 1721. The twenty pews were granted to some of the more important families, and the other seats were given with due consideration to age and rank, the men and women sitting separately. It would seem that even the owners of pews did not sit with their wives, for some of the pew-owners had other seats allotted to them, and it is recorded "That Jn<sup>o</sup> Waters shall have y<sup>e</sup> Pew to y<sup>e</sup> westward of Nath<sup>l</sup> Felton's for his wife and family and that said Waters is seated in y<sup>e</sup> front fore seat in y<sup>e</sup> Galary." The women were seated in the east gallery and the easterly part of the house below, and the men had the west gallery and western part of the house. The sittings are described as "y<sup>e</sup> three short seats before y<sup>e</sup> pulpit," "y<sup>e</sup> west body of seats," "y<sup>e</sup> body of long Women's seats belo," "The fore seat of the west end of the men's gallery," and so on.

On November 6, 1711, a committee was chosen to inquire after candidates and invite them to preach. It was resolved that candidates should be paid by contribution, or by rates if the contributions fell short.

Three candidates are mentioned in the records,—Mr. Benjamin Prescott, Mr. Sutchelif and Mr. Barnard. The latter was probably the Rev. John Barnard, who was a graduate of Harvard College in 1709, the class of Mr. Prescott. The name Sutchelif does not appear in the Harvard Catalogue; it may be that the Rev. Wm. Shurtleff was the person meant. On the 4th of March, 1711-12, a general meeting of the parish was held to choose a minister. Of course, only the qualified male voters of the precinct were allowed to vote, the qualification being the same as that for voting in town affairs; but those who could not attend on this occasion were allowed to vote by proxy. The names of the three candidates were brought forward, and the clerk makes the brief and important entry, "The person Chosen to be our Minister in Mr. Benj. Prescott." It was agreed "That if Mr. Prescott Cums and settles with us we will pay yearly to him y<sup>e</sup> sum of Eighty Pounds in Province Bills or in silver money as it passes from man to man, So long as he continues to be our minister."

In February, 1711-12, Mr. Prescott was settled as the first pastor, and it seemed as if the long and bitter contest for separation from the First Parish was over. But the people of those days were sturdy controversialists, and it was too soon to expect peace.

The officers of the First Parish made out their list of rates, as usual, upon those who had formerly paid rates, although many of them had contributed largely from their slender means for building the new meeting-house and settling the new minister. The indignant voters of the middle precinct sent a committee to the General Court to acquaint that body with their grievance, and ask relief against the tax, which was being pressed with the full vigor of the law. This committee was chosen October 13, 1712, and they obtained speedy justice, for on the 30th of October it was by the General Court

"Resolved and declared that the said Precinct, being set off by Order of this Court, & having worthily performed their Engagement in erecting a convenient Meeting House for the publick worship of God, & settled a learned orthodox Minister & provided an honourable support for him, They are not further chargeable to the support of the Ministry in the Body of the Town, being no longer of the audience there; and the Assessment made lately upon the Inhabitants of the Precinct for the Ministry in the Body of the Town by the Selectmen and Assessors, & all warrants issued for the collection and distraining for the same be & hereby are superseded and made null and void."

It was not till 1713 that the members of the First Church who were included in the new parish sent in their request to be dismissed from the mother church.

"SALEM, April 24th, 1713.

"To the Rev'd Mr. Nicholas Noyes, Teacher of the Church in Salem, and to the Church of Christ there:

"Hon'd, Rev'd, and Belov'd:

"WHEREAS it hath pleased our gracious God to smile upon our endeavors for the erecting of an house for the carrying on the public worship of God, and settling a minister amongst us, and we being called by divine providence (as we intend) to settle a particular church according to the Gospel, under the ministry of the Rev'd Mr. Benj. Prescott: Our humble request to yourself is that you will please to dismiss us and our children with your approbation and blessing, to be a church of ourselves and until we are so, with the consent and approbation of the Elders and messengers of the churches that shall assist at the ordination of the Rev'd Mr. Prescott, to continue members of Salem Church, and as there shall be occasion assist and help us, especially by your prayers unto the God of all grace, that in so great an affair we may be directed and assisted to proceed in all things according to the will of God, unto whom be glory in the church by Jesus Christ, throughout all ages, world without end."

"Your unworthy brethren and sisters living within the bounds of the Middle District in Salem.

" Hanna King	Martha Adams.	Sam'l Goldthwait, sen.
Judith Mackintire.	Elizabeth Cook.	Ebenezer Gyles
Elizabeth Nurse.	Sarah Gardiner.	Abraham Pierce.
Sarah Robinson.	Elizabeth Gardiner.	John Foster
Alex Shaffin	Isabel Pease.	John Felton.
Hanna Small.	Hanna Felton.	David Foster.
Hanna Southwick.	Hanna Foster.	Abel Gardiner.
Mary Tompkins.	Abigail French.	John Gardiner.
Elizabeth Tompkins.	Elizabeth Gyles.	Samuel Goldthwait.
Elizabeth Verry.	Elizabeth Goldthwait.	William King.
Jemima Verry.	Hanna Goldthwait.	Richard Waters.
Sarah Waters.	Deborah Gool.	Robert Pease."
Elizabeth Waters.	Elizabeth King.	
Susanna Daniel.	Samuel Gardiner.	

The request for dismissal was granted, and the following letter of dismissal was issued:

"At a Church meeting at the Teacher's house, June 20th, The Church having received a petition from our brethren and sisters living in the District, wherein they desire a dismission from us for themselves and their children, in order to be a church of themselves. The Church giveth in answer as followeth: That although we cannot praise or justify our brethren's proceeding so far as they have done in order to be a church of themselves without advising with or using means to ob-





tain the consent of the Church they belonged to; yet at the request of our brethren and sisters, and for peace sake, we permit them and their children to become a church of themselves; provided they have the approbation and consent of the Elders and messengers of some other churches in communion with us, that shall assist at their church gathering and ordaining them a pastor. And until they have so done, they continue members of this church. And so we commit them to the grace of God in Christ Jesus, praying that they may have divine direction and assistance in the great work they are upon, and that they may become an holy and orderly and peaceable church, and that the Lord would add to them of such as are within their own limits, many such as shall be saved. The above answer was twice distinctly read to the brethren of the Church before it was voted, and then consented to by the vote of the Church, *namine contradicente.*"

Rev. Benjamin Prescott was accordingly ordained, September 23, 1713, and the separation of the parishes was at last complete. In all the history of the separation of towns and precincts, of which our legislative and municipal history furnishes many noteworthy instances down to the present time, there has rarely been a division more earnestly pursued or more stubbornly resisted than that which resulted in the formation of the Middle Precinct of Salem.

## CHAPTER LXIX.

### PEABODY—(Continued.)

#### *The Separation from Salem—The District and Town of Danvers.*

FROM this time forward the interests of the inhabitants of the middle precinct continued to be centred about their parish meetings. They were still subject to taxation for the general expenses of the town of Salem, and for educational purposes; but they very soon demanded and received separate schools under their own supervision. In 1714 the town granted money towards the support of a "Reading, writing and cyphering school" in the new precinct, and a committee was appointed to receive it "and distribute it to the Inhabitants according to their discretion."

The schools of that time were not entirely free, but those who were able to pay for the teaching of their children did so, and the town undertook to pay only for those whose parents could not afford to pay for their instruction. The education of children, while not compulsory, was universal, and the selectmen saw to it that children whose parents neglected their education and training in some useful calling were put out to service. It was not till about 1768 that schools were supported in this commonwealth wholly by taxation, and were free to all. This explains what was meant by the distribution of the school money.

As time went on there was a growing desire for independence in all municipal affairs. There had always existed a strong feeling of sympathy between the middle and the village parishes. A difficulty at one time arose by reason of an attempt, in 1743, by some

of the inhabitants of the village to encroach upon the rights of the middle precinct by including within the village bounds some of those who belonged in the southerly parish. On August 16th, at a special meeting, it was voted to choose a committee of three men to appear at the General Court and answer to the petition of Captain Samuel Endicott, John Porter, Benjamin Porter and John Endicott, and also the petition of James Prince, agent for the Village Parish. Daniel Epes, Daniel Gardner and John Procter were chosen, and they were successful in resisting the encroachment.

With this exception, the two outlying parishes were united in their desire for separation from the town of Salem. In 1689, very shortly after the establishment of the village parish, there had been an attempt to establish a new township to include the village. The witchcraft excitement and the formation of the middle precinct delayed the plan, but it was revived from time to time. The inconvenience of attending town meetings from the outlying parts of the town, the gathering of local interests about the parish meetings and the desire to have separate schools under their own control, led the village and middle parishes to discuss the project from time to time. In 1732 the village precinct sent in a petition to the town of Salem, praying to be set off from Salem with some enlargement of boundaries; and in 1740 an attempt was made to unite the two outlying parishes in an effort for separation.

In the Middle Precinct, July, 1740, "It Being put to vote whither y<sup>e</sup> Inhabitants of this parish will come off y<sup>e</sup> town of Salem and Joyn with the Inhabitants of Salem Village, Provided that they See cause to take this Middle Parrish (the whole of itt) as itt is now Bounded, To Joyn Together both Parishes, and make a Township our selves, separate from y<sup>e</sup> Town of Salem," a committee was chosen to manage the whole affair, and lay the proceedings before the next meeting. The people of Salem raised a committee to treat with the "farmers," and after consultation they reported that the village people might be pacified if the town would raise a sufficient amount of money "to maintain two schools within the bridges, and one at the Middle Precinct, that should draw their proportion of the school money, raise their own committees, and control their own affairs." The report was accepted, and the town raised £250, province bills. But the relief was only temporary. The farmers continued to renew their request; they desired to manage their own affairs, and as time went on the reasons for separation were increased rather than diminished. In April, 1742, at a meeting specially called, the middle precinct voted to choose a committee of the village "concerning coming off from y<sup>e</sup> town of Salem," and report their proceedings.

On May 9, 1751, it was again voted to join with the village parish in an attempt to separate from Salem. It was desired to form a new township, and not



merely a district, and the records show that such was the plan of the farmers. The committees from the two parishes consulted together, and prepared a memorandum of agreement for the separation, in July, 1751.

"Whereas y<sup>e</sup> Village Parish and y<sup>e</sup> Middle Parish in Salem have agreed to come off from y<sup>e</sup> town as a separate Town by themselves, as appears by y<sup>e</sup> votes of their respective Meetings, and whereas we y<sup>e</sup> subscribers being appointed and Impowered for and in behalf of Each parish to Confer together, and make Report att y<sup>e</sup> meeting of sd parishes Respectively, relating to said Affair, have met together and after due Consideration make Report as follows: (viz) That y<sup>e</sup> Town meetings shall be one year in one parish and y<sup>e</sup> next year in the other parish successively. That y<sup>e</sup> major part of y<sup>e</sup> selectmen and assessors shall be chosen one year in one Parish, and y<sup>e</sup> next year in y<sup>e</sup> other Parish successively. That each Parish shall share Equally in all profits and Benefits that shall happen or accrue.

July y<sup>e</sup> 24, 1751.

Daniel Epes, Jr.	} for the Middle Parish	Samuel Flint	} for the Village
Mahmud Felten		Cornelius Tarball	
John Procter		James Prince	

This report was accepted, and on the 9th of September, 1751, the same committee was authorized to join with the committee from the village, and prefer a petition to the town of Salem relating to the separation. The authors of the report were also instructed to "labour" with the people of Salem; for although, as Hanson states, the feeling in Salem was more favorable for separation than it has been, there was still a considerable opposition to the movement.

On the 25th of October, 1751, a town meeting was held in Salem to consider the petition, and it was voted "That the Prayer of said Petition be so far granted as that with the leave of the Great and General Assembly the Inhabitants and Estates of said Parishes be set off as a separate Township agreeable to the present boundaries of said Parishes; and that in view of the claim of the annual incomes of the Town they be allowed thirteen pounds six shillings and eight pence to be paid out of the Town Treasury when legally set off as a distinct Town beside their proportion of the sums due to them for the Incouragement of the schools by virtue of former votes." The new town was to care for its own poor. It was also voted to carry out the provisions of a previous vote, in 1747, by apportioning one hundred pounds in bills of the last emission to the inhabitants of the whole of the old town of Salem.

The plan was originally to form a town of the two parishes; but in 1743 the King had given an instruction to the Governor of the province, forbidding him to give his assent to any act creating a new town, without a clause inserted suspending the execution of such act until it should receive His Majesty's approbation. This was because it was thought undesirable by the crown to increase the number of representatives in the General Assembly. The popular branch was gaining in power, and their increase had given them the control of all matters which were determined by a joint session of the two Houses. Governor Bernard, in a letter to the board of trade, in 1761, says that the number of representatives had

then increased from eighty-four in 1692, when the charter was opened, to about one hundred and seventy, while the Council kept the same number, twenty-eight. By the charter the Council was chosen in joint convention, and by usage many other officers were so chosen. It is probable, however, that the spirit of independence had already begun to manifest itself in the colonies, and it was felt in England that the growth of the power of the popular branch of the assembly was too favorable to such independent ideas. It seems that the petitioners yielded to this policy, and that the petition presented by them to the General Court asked only for the establishment of a district; a district being a town in all respects except the right to choose a representative. When a district was established, it was allowed to join with the town from which it had been separated in the choice of a representative. On the 22d of January, 1751-52, a memorial of Samuel Flynt, Daniel Epes, Jr., Esq., and others, in behalf of the Village and Middle Precincts, praying to be incorporated into a district, was read in Council, and the petitioners were ordered to serve notice on the town of Salem. This was not concurred in by the House of Representatives, but on January 28th, an act was passed establishing the district of Danvers. This act recited that the causes for the separation were the distance of the inhabitants of the outlying parishes from that part of the first parish in Salem where the public affairs of the town were transacted, the distance from the grammar school in Salem, and also the fact that most of the inhabitants of the First Parish were either merchants, mechanics, or traders, and those of the Village and Middle Parishes chiefly husbandmen, which was the cause of many disputes and difficulties in the management of public affairs. It was provided by the act that the agreements of the town of Salem, which had been made conditional on the parishes being incorporated into a town should be binding, although only a district had been incorporated.

The name of the parish now became the "Second Parish in the district of Danvers," which was soon changed to the "South Parish in Danvers," which continued to be its name for more than a century. The church was called "The Second Congregational Church in Danvers."

About a year after the erection of the district of Danvers, the boundary between it and Salem was run, corresponding generally with the boundary of the Middle Precinct. The line took Trask's grist-mills into Danvers, and ran from the mills "To the Easternmost Elm Tree on sd plain and by the Northern side of the highway there called Boston Road."

There was at that time a row of elm trees extending along Boston Street in a direction not quite parallel to the present line of the street, the easternmost tree being the boundary tree, and the tree at the other end being in the vicinity of Humphrey Case's house, near the residence of the late James F. Callier.





A stone with the date 1707 stands at the foot of the "big tree;" but as the tree was a boundary in 1712, it must have been more than a young tree at that time, and probably dates back to 1660 or 1670. The intermediate trees in this row were cut down many years ago for fire-wood, during a very severe winter when there was great dearth of fuel in Salem; and within the memory of living men the ridge caused by their stumps was to be seen in the road. The stone marked 1707 may have been the mile-stone mentioned in the legislative report on the separation of the middle precinct.

On March 30, 1752, it was ordered that fences be erected across the highway at the town bridge and the bridge by the south mills, and that all persons from Boston or suspected of bringing contagion should be excluded from the town by a guard kept at the barriers.

The first joint election of a Representative from the town of Salem and district of Danvers was named to take place May 18, 1752. At that time the small-pox was raging, both in Boston and Salem; and the meeting voted not to send a Representative to the General Court, which was to be held at Concord on account of the pestilence in Boston. It was declared that no disrespect or designed affront was intended to the honorable house, and that they would submit to whatever fine should be imposed; but that owing to dissensions between the town and the lately established district, it was impracticable to choose a Representative, and not consistent with the peace of the inhabitants; that small-pox was prevalent in several of the families of the town, and that it might be carried to the General Court by a Representative if chosen; and that the expenses attending the sickness had been so heavy in many instances that many persons could not bear the charges of sending a Representative.

Although the district was not entitled to send a Representative, it sent a delegate, who was allowed to vote on certain matters. In 1754, when the colonies proposed a plan of union for mutual safety and protection, the district voted against it through its delegate, Daniel Epes.

On February 3, 1754-55, it was voted that Daniel Epes, Jr., should carry the renewed request of the district to become a town before the General Assembly. This request was continued from time to time, and the last presentation of it was by Daniel Epes, June 8, 1757. The bill was passed and signed on June 9th, but the date of its publication is June 16, 1757.

This act did not contain any clause suspending its operation until the king should approve it; it was plainly in contravention of the instructions given to the Governor. The feeling of independence on the part of the province was beginning to show itself. At the time there was no Governor or Lieutenant-Governor in the province. Thos. Hutchinson, after-

wards Governor, was then a member of the Council, and he caused his protest against the act to be entered on the records. He gave for the reasons of his dissent,—

"1st. Because the professed design of the Bill is to give the inhabitants, who now join with the Town of Salem in the choice of a Representative a power of choosing by themselves, and the number of which the House of Representatives may at present consist, being full large; the increasing the number must have a tendency to retard the proceedings of the General Court, and to increase the burden which now lies upon the People by their long Sessions every Year, and must likewise give that House an undue proportion to the Board in the Legislature where many affairs are determined by a joint Ballot of the two Houses.

"2d. Because there being no Governor or Lieutenant-Governor in the Province, it is most agreeable to his Majesty's Commission to the late Governor: to the message of this Board to the House of Representatives at the opening the Session, and is in itself a thing most remarkable that all matters of any importance, and not necessary to be acted upon immediately, which is the case with the present Bill, should be deferred until there be a Governor or Lieutenant-Governor in the Chair.

"3d. Because the Board by passing this Bill as the Second Branch of the Legislature necessarily bring it immediately after, before themselves for their Assent, or Refusal, as the first Branch, and such Members as Vote for this Bill in one capacity, must give their Assent in the other directly against the Royal Instruction to the Governor, in a case in no degree necessary for the public Interest, or else their Action will be inconsistent and Absurd.

"Council Chamber, 9th June, 1757.

THOS. HUTCHINSON.

It appears that complaints of "long sessions" were prevalent even then.

The acts of this session were not forwarded to the Privy Council until the next January, owing to the absence of the Governor at the time of their enactment. They were received by the Privy Council in May, 1758, and referred to the Board of Trade. The Board of Trade did not act upon the laws of this session until July, 1759, when they prepared a draught of the acts which ought to be allowed, and made a special report that the act of incorporation of Danvers ought to be disallowed, on the ground that it had been passed in contradiction to the royal instruction. On August 10, 1759, an order was passed in the Privy Council, disallowing the act, and declaring it null and void.

It is believed that for some reason, now unknown, the provincial authorities never received notice of the disallowance of the act. Hutchinson certainly did not know that it had been disallowed, and he surmises in his history of Massachusetts, that as the Council kept no correspondence by letters with the King's ministers, this bill, with others, received the royal allowance probably without being observed to be contrary to the instructions. The act of incorporation was valid till disallowed; the town of Danvers was annually represented in the General Court from and after the year 1758, and later legislation expressly recognized Danvers as a town. No official notice of the disallowance being ever received, and the records of the Privy Council not having been searched by any one having the facts in mind, it was not discovered till long after the Revolution had rendered the discovery unimportant that the act of incorporation of Danvers was void after 1759.



There has been considerable speculation as to the origin of the name Danvers. Hanson says that the region was called Danvers as early as 1745; but nothing appears on the records to indicate that such was the case, or how the name came to be given. The discussion is one which belongs more appropriately to the history of Danvers than to that of Peabody, but it may be mentioned that two theories of its origin have been suggested. It has been thought by some the solution was found in the fact that Lord Danvers was connected with the Osborne family in England, and the names are united in more than one branch of the Osborne family. It has been surmised that the Osbornes from whom the families of that region in Danvers originated, may have come from one of these branches of the Osborne family in England, and that they suggested the name. This however, is a pure guess, inasmuch as it is not certainly known where the founder of the Osborne family in Danvers was born or lived before coming to this country. Felt, in his *Annals*, says that Lieut.-Governor Phipps suggested that name out of gratitude to one of his patrons. But the last Lord Danvers died before 1660, and the name afterward appears only in connection with other families, so that we are quite in the dark as to who the patron was. It would seem at least probable that the people of the new town had something to do with selecting a name for it, but the real cause of its selection is still conjectural.

The mill belonging to Trask nearest to Salem town is spoken of in 1715, as the fulling mill; so that it appears some business was done in fulling cloth made in the vicinity, probably by individuals on hand looms. It does not appear that the glass making industry, from which so much had been hoped, had survived till this time. The potteries, for which Danvers afterward became so famous, were not in operation until the latter part of this period, if at all during this time. One of these was located where the business is still carried on, on Central Street. There was at one time another on the south parish, in the vicinity of Holten Street. The business of tanning is said to have been begun about 1739, by Joseph Southwick, a Quaker, who lived in the house opposite the Lexington monument on Main Street, which was standing within twenty-five or thirty years. This house was among the first to adopt the comparatively modern square panes of glass, in the place of the diamond leaded pane, and from this circumstance was called the "glass house." Mr. Southwick began the infant industry, which now employs thousands of men and occupies acres of space in the town, by using half hogheads for vats. After a while, as his business increased, he obtained a gondola, which he used until after a few years he sank three or four vats. The location of his tanyards, which continued for many years in his family, is still occupied in the same industry.

## CHAPTER LXX.

## PEABODY—(Continued).

*Social Life and Customs in the Middle Precinct.*

IN the period from 1710 to 1757 the Middle or South Parish suffered but little change in the character or occupation of its inhabitants. They were mostly farmers; with the exception of the Trasks, who carried on their mills, there was little or no mechanical employment. According to the best authorities, there were, in 1752, about fifteen hundred inhabitants in both the Village and Middle Precincts. As there were eighty or ninety families in the Middle Precinct in 1710, there could not have been any great increase of the population in these forty years. There were some wealthy land-owners, but most of the people of the South Parish were of limited means. The social relaxations of the time were few. Outside of the religious meetings there were few opportunities for social gatherings, except on the rare occasion of a house raising, or some such friendly meeting. The village singing school, which began to be introduced into New England during this period, was the beginning of the lecture and entertainment system, which afterward became so important a factor in the social life of New England. The psalm singing of the Puritans of the beginning of the eighteenth century was by rote; there were no instruments used in the churches, but the hymn was "lined out" by one of the deacons. The first mention of organs in churches is contained in the diary of Rev. Mr. Green, of the Village Parish, in 1711, when he says of a visit to Boston and Cambridge, "I was at Mr. Thomas Brattle's, heard the organs and saw strange things in a microscope." This may have been the organ which Mr. Brattle gave, in 1714, to King's Chapel, in Boston.

The people generally were opposed to the introduction of singing by note, fearing that it would lead to the use of instrumental music and other musical frivolities. In 1723 several members of a church in Braintree were excommunicated because they advocated the reformed method of singing. A council, however, shortly afterward, reinstated them, and effected a compromise. An equally strong feeling was formed elsewhere in regard to the matter; but the new school prevailed, and the young people had their singing schools, at which they learned hymns of surprising rapidity and complication of movement, in contrast to the severe music of the elders. The choir began to make its appearance, though there is no record of it in the South Parish till 1763, when it was voted "that there be two seats on the easterly side of y<sup>e</sup> broad ally in the Meeting-house be sett apart for a number of persons to sett in for the better accommodating singing in y<sup>e</sup> Meeting-house, and that the same be under the regulation of the Parish





committee from time to time, as there shall be occasion, for carrying on that part of Divine service."

After the bell was procured, about 1720, the curfew called all to early slumbers.

Samuel Stacy was the first "bellman" of the parish. The title "sexton" does not appear in the old records, perhaps because the Puritans of that day thought that sexton (or as it was then and is sometimes still pronounced, "saxton" or "saxon," being a shortening of "sacristan"), savored too much of church formality. After 1750 we find the "saxsen" or "saxton" spoken of in the records.

The duties of caring for the meeting-house were very simple; no fires, no carpets, no lights, with very little paint and window glass, made the position a very simple one. At first "the widow Parnell," who lived close by, swept and garnished the meeting-house; and there appears from time to time an article in the warrant for the parish meeting "to consider of paying the widow Parnell." The committee, which was formally empowered "to agree with some sutable person to sweep the meeting-house," agreed with Stacy that he was to ring the bell "every night at nine of the clock, and every Sabbath day, and to sweep the meeting-house for what the Inhabitant will give him." He is spoken of in 1726 as the "bell man," though that title was sometimes applied to the night watch, for in 1719 the selectmen of Salem agreed with a bell man at 36s. (thirty-six shillings) per month, who was "to walk y<sup>e</sup> Streets from Ten of y<sup>e</sup> clock at Night till day light, & take care that there bee no Mischeife Done whilst people are asleep, but to doe his utmost to prevent fire, thieves, enemies or other danger." The custom of ringing the nine o'clock bell was kept up for more than a century and a half, having been discontinued in 1885.

Samuel Stacy continued to hold his office for many years; but the careful committee thought it best to ascertain how much the "Inhabitant" were giving him, and accordingly he was directed in 1731 to keep an account of what the people gave him. In 1758 and 1759 Mary Goldthwait was engaged to ring the bell and sweep the meeting-house. The bell was hung in a small bellry or "turret" over the body of the house, probably in the middle like that of the Village Meeting-house. This turret was repaired in 1740, and again in 1750, and gave place to the tower or steeple, built in 1774.

Soon after getting a bell, the parish began to feel the responsibility of their acquisition; for we find in several warrants an article "to consider of some way to goe up to Bell or Belfrey within side of the meeting-house in case anything should happen to bell or rope." The gentle and insinuating suggestiveness of this article brings vividly before us the difficulty of raising money at that time. It was not till 1727 that the parish boldly voted "to make a way up to the Bell," and to raise the money for it. Indeed, the

whole history of the dealings between the parish and their minister show how scarce money was. It was customary to have a box near the entrance of the meeting-house in which strangers were expected to put some contribution, according to their means, toward the support of the worship whose privilege they enjoyed. The disposition of this fund was a grave question; and the inhabitants were called together in April, 1713, "to consider of some way to put a conclusion to y<sup>e</sup> discours about y<sup>e</sup> mony contributed by s'rangers." It was finally put to vote "whether M<sup>r</sup> Prescott shall have one halfe of y<sup>e</sup> mony contributed by Straingers and y<sup>e</sup> Inhabitants y<sup>e</sup> other half," and "Voted in y<sup>e</sup> Afermitive."

The expenses of the parish at the beginning were paid partly by rates or taxes, and partly by voluntary contributions. In May, 1712, a meeting was called at the meeting house "to see about the contribution and also to Consider of Bulding A Dwelling hous for y<sup>e</sup> minister or els to allow smthing to Mr. Prescott and he Buld A hous for himself." It was voted "that y<sup>e</sup> Contribution be upheld; that y<sup>e</sup> inhabitants will put their mony in papers; that y<sup>e</sup> inhabitants will subscrib to y<sup>e</sup> bulding of A hous for y<sup>e</sup> minister." It was afterward voted "that y<sup>e</sup> Inhabitants will Give M<sup>r</sup> Prescott y<sup>e</sup> Rocks except y<sup>e</sup> Hor-blocks, y<sup>e</sup> Timber also except y<sup>e</sup> Joyce and will Give him also about 8000 of Shingle nails that ware left." It does not appear that the house was built; Mr. Prescott afterward lived in a house on Central Street built for him by the brother of his third wife,—Sir William Pepperell, about 1750.

In 1731, it was again voted that the money in the free contributions should be "papered," that is, it seems, that each contributor should keep his gift separate, so that it could be known who gave and how much each contributed. This custom is a curious one, in view of its revival in the "envelope system" of offerings so common in churches at the present day. In 1736, £50 was raised by rates, and £100 by subscription, for the minister. From the very first, the collection of parish rates was difficult. In 1717 it was voted that the committee "take the directions of the law to gather the minister's rates this year." In 1720, the warrant commands John Tarball, Collector, to collect the amounts due the parish, and on failure to pay he is to "distrain the goods or chattles of the person or persons soe refusing, for y<sup>e</sup> payment of y<sup>e</sup> same, and for want of goods or chattles, whereon to make distress, you are to seize the body or bodyes of the person or persons so refusing, and are them to commit to y<sup>e</sup> common gaoll in Salem, untill he or they pay or satisfie the sum or sums that they are Rated or assesed." Such was the severe language of the precept to the constable; but public opinion did not support the imprisonment of individuals for non-payment of parish rates. There was great delay on the part of the collectors; a list of rates given to Mr. Bell for collection in 1728 was





not completed until 1743. During the whole period of Mr. Prescott's settlement, there was constant difficulty about his salary. The sum agreed upon was slow in coming in; from time to time, as the depreciated currency of the time fell in value, additions were made to the amount granted to him, but not proportionate to the depreciation nor to his needs; and the result was a bitter controversy extending over many years, and a lawsuit, in which the courts upheld Mr. Prescott's claims.

These facts, gleaned from the parish records, throw a strong light on the state of the community at the time; the simple public interests of the people, centering about their parish affairs, and the great scarcity of money among a farming population who supported themselves upon the soil, but had no means of exchanging their crops and productions for ready money. The clothing was mostly home-made, spun and woven from their own wool, by the women of the household, dyed with such coloring as could be obtained at home or in the shops of Salem, and made up by wife or daughter in the plain fashion of the day. Linen, woven by the same hands, was laid up against the marriage of the daughters. All the industries necessary for their simple life were practiced by exchange of labor or commodities among themselves with little use of money. Food was of the plainest; there was little fresh meat; no tea or coffee in most families; great scarcity of white bread; and, in general, an absence of those luxuries which seem to the descendants of these plain farmers the very necessities of living. Potatoes began to be used about 1730, though they were known to the colonists long before; but they did not come into general use till the middle of the eighteenth century. Furniture, except in the few houses of the wealthy, was plain and bare, often home-made. Earthen-ware and wooden vessels, with pewter plates and cups, were the table-ware of the farmers. Spoons of pewter and horn were in use, and the few silver utensils were cherished as precious heir-looms. The bare floors knew no carpets, though they were scoured white, and sometimes decorated with sand sprinkled in fanciful designs; the great fire-places, even when the owners made no stint of firewood, only half-warmed the inmates in the coldest weather; and the idea of warming a bed-room, except so far as a warming-pan would thaw the sheets, would have been surprising to our ancestors. There were no fires in the churches; old or sick people took little foot-stoves in their hands, but most sat out the two and three-hour sermons without a ray of artificial heat, by sheer endurance. Woolen underclothing was not worn at all at that period, nor indeed generally until within forty or fifty years of the present time in New England. But in spite of the hard circumstances of their lives, they were a hardy, courageous and vigorous race, and many among them possessed unusual physical strength and stature, and not a few attained great length of days.

## CHAPTER LXXI.

## PEABODY—(Continued).

*The Revolutionary War*

DURING the years before the Revolution the town went quietly on its way. At one time, in 1772, the inhabitants of the North Parish were obliged to apply to the General Court for relief against the encroachments of the South Parish. In December, 1771, the South Parish voted to hold the town-meetings in the South Meeting-house, and the next town-meeting was held there; and a majority of the town officers were chosen from the South Parish, without regard to the agreement before mentioned between the parishes, entered into before the district was established. It would seem that the South Parish must have had a majority of votes at the time. The Legislature, considering the agreement as binding upon the parishes, enacted the substance of it as a law.

With this exception, there is little to note in the internal affairs of the South Parish during this time. The town was early awakened to a thoroughly patriotic feeling. In 1765, at a town-meeting in October, they gave instructions to their representative, directing him to remonstrate against the stamp act, but to do all in his power to suppress or prevent riotous assemblies, and not to give his assent to any act of assembly that should imply the willingness of his constituents to submit to any internal taxes imposed otherwise than by the General Court of the province, and not to assent to any extravagant grants.

On December 23, 1765, additional instructions were sent to Mr. Porter, the Representative then in the General Court, similar to those already given, and concluding with an eloquent affirmation of the rights of the colonists and a denunciation of the oppressive character of the movement to deprive them of their right of managing their own internal affairs.

It is declared that taxation and representation must go together, and an argument is made of the impossibility of regulating the affairs of the colonies properly in England. "It is not in their power (the Parliament) to make the Easterly Banks of America contiguous to the Westerly Banks of Great Briton, which banks have lain and still ly one Thousand Leagues distant from Each Other, and till they can do this, they cannot (as we Humbly Conceive), Provide for the Good Government of His Majesty's Subjects in these two Distant Regions, without y<sup>e</sup> Establishment of a Different Power, Both Legislative and Executive, in Each." They then urge Mr. Porter to demand a repeal of the Stamp Act. They say they are willing to be subject to the "Greatest and best of Kings," and to assist him always, but they think men of "Envious and Depraved Minds" have advised him wrongly. They think their grievance is such as "cannot but be resented by every True Englishman who has any



Spark of Generous Fire Remaining in His Breast." This was ten years before the battle of Lexington.

Samuel Holten, the Representative for the year 1768, was requested to join a convention to be gathered in Faneuil Hall, Boston, on the 22d of September, to consist of delegates from the adjacent towns in the Commonwealth. It was held during several days, and the differences between the colonies and the mother country were fully discussed. Dr. Holten took an active part in the deliberations, and distinguished himself for his vigor and acuteness of mind and excellent judgment, which characterized him throughout his long and useful public life.

The people of the town shared in the patriotic excitement of the times. The daily converse of the people was upon the signs of the times, and all were of one mind in the firm determination to resist the new laws which were in derogation of their chartered rights. It was hoped that war might be averted, but if it must come they would prepare for it as best they could.

In 1770 the merchants of Boston passed the non-importation agreement. The obnoxious tax, though repealed as to several articles, still existed upon tea, and the agreement expressed a determination to import no goods from Great Britain that were subject to the tariff, particularly tea. The people of the town, on May 28, 1770, voted their approbation of this action of the Boston merchants, and further voted "that we will not ourselves (to our knowledge), or by any person, for or under us, Directly or Indirectly, Purchase of such Person or Persons, any goods whatever, and as far as we can effect it, will withdraw our connection from every Person who shall Import Goods from Great Britain, Contrary to the Agreement of the Merchants aforesaid. Voted that we will not drink any Tea ourselves, and use our best endeavors to prevent our Families and those connected with them, from the use thereof, from this Date, until the Act imposing a Duty on that Article be repealed, or a general Importation shall take place. Cases of Sickness excepted." A committee of twelve was raised to convey a copy of this resolution to every family in the town, to receive the signatures of the people. The committee was instructed to write the names of all who refused to append their signatures to these articles, and publish them as enemies to the country. The resolutions were printed in the *Essex Gazette*. Hanson says that Isaac Wilson seems to have been the only one who opposed the popular enthusiasm.

In June, 1772, a committee was chosen to take into account our civil liberties. They drew up a series of resolutions which were presented to the town and adopted by it unanimously. The resolutions are full of the spirit of the times, and set forth clearly and vigorously the oppressive nature of the legislation directed against the liberties of the colonies by Parliament, the various irregular and oppressive acts of

the Royal governor, the changes in judicial tribunals and all the grievances which so wrought upon the minds of our forefathers; they ended by instructing the representative of the town to contend, in a constitutional way, for the just rights and privileges of the people, to labor for a union of the provinces, to refuse to yield chartered privileges, and to use his endeavors that honorable salaries be granted to the Governor, the Judges of the Superior Court and others, adequate to their dignity, with a view to lessening the influence of the crown over such officers.

Dr. Samuel Holten, Tarrant Putnam, and Captain William Shillaber were chosen a committee to correspond with the committees of correspondence for Boston and other towns. These committees of correspondence and safety were chosen in almost every town, and are often mentioned in the legislation of the period. In some instances great and unusual powers were granted to them, particularly in the acts passed with the endeavor to prevent speculation in the necessities of life at a time when the depression of the currency gave rise to great variations of prices. In one of these acts "To prevent Monopoly and Oppression" it is enacted that these grants of extraordinary powers should not be a precedent for the future. Such were the prudence and forethought of the men of those times, even in the heat of civil war. Indeed, the most remarkable thing about the public proceedings of those days, both in towns and in the General Court, is the moderation and sober judgment by which their feelings were tempered, even when profoundly aroused. The same spirit which led the General Court to surround those accused of being enemies of the country with every safeguard for a fair and impartial trial, to make provision for the families of Tories who had fled from the State, to modify the severities of attainder for treason, and to guard the execution of the death penalty with the wisest restrictions, is seen in the public acts of towns during this period. All extravagance is avoided, and calmness and deliberation stamp all the proceedings. There is much in the records of Danvers during this time of which the patriotic citizen has a right to be proud, and which belong as much to one locality as to another. The Rev. Mr. Holt, who had been settled in the South Parish in 1758, was an ardent patriot, and he is reported to have declared that he would rather live on potatoes than submit. He procured a musket and performed drill-service regularly in the ranks of Captain Eppes' company.

On the 27th of September, 1774, Dr. Holten, the representative to the General Court to be held in Salem in October, was instructed to adhere firmly to chartered rights, not to acknowledge in any way the Act of Parliament for altering the government of Massachusetts Bay, and to acknowledge the council chosen by the last General Court. He was also authorized, if the General Court should be dissolved, to meet in a General Provincial Congress and there "to





act upon such matters as may come before you, in such a manner as shall appear to be most conducive to the true Interest of this Town and Province, and most likely to preserve the liberties of all America."

On November 21, 1774, the town voted to adhere strictly to all the resolves and recommendations of the Provincial Congress, thereby repudiating the government of England.

On January 9, 1775, it was voted to comply with the provincial recommendation, and arm and equip each man, and to provide for frequent discipline; and it was provided that each man should be paid one shilling for each half-day he was in service. On January 19, a committee was appointed to see that the citizens of Danvers were obedient to the provincial recommendations. It was voted "that the meeting of the inhabitants of this town in parties at Houses of Entertainment, for the purpose of Dancing, Feasting, &c., is expressly against the Eighth Article of the American Congress Association. Therefore the Committee of Inspection are particularly instructed to take care that the said eighth article in the Association is strictly complied."

When Col. Leslie marched toward Danvers for the purpose of destroying certain stores, a company from Danvers, under Capt. Samuel Eppes, marched to Salem to repel the expected attack. It was on Sunday, February 26, 1775, when the alarm was sounded; it is said that the sermon was cut short, and the remaining services deferred to a more convenient season. Rev. Mr. Holt is said to have been among those who marched in line on this occasion. The sober judgment of Col. Leslie, aided by the counsels of the more prudent among the inhabitants, avoided an encounter at the time, but the men were given a foretaste of the excitement of gathering in arms at the alarm of invasion.

The 19th of April arrived, and the news of the advance of the British soldiers to Concord and Lexington was brought to Danvers at about nine o'clock in the forenoon. The ringing of bells and the beat of drums communicated the tidings to the citizens. The appointed meeting place was near the South Church, at the bend of the old Boston road by the Bell tavern, and thither the men thronged from every direction.

The rendezvous of the minute-men was on the very spot where the Lexington monument was afterwards erected, at the junction of the Boston road and the main street. Gen. Foster, then twenty-six years of age, had been appointed captain of the minute-men from the southern part of the town about ten days before; these minute-men were to be in readiness at a moment's warning. They were ready, and all to a man assembled at the appointed place. The Rev. Mr. Holt gave his parting benediction to them, and they started for the field of death. The women gathered about and assisted to prepare their husbands or brothers or lovers for the fight.

There had been three companies of militia in Danvers, but on March 3d it had been voted, agreeably to a vote of the Provincial Congress, that a quarter of the soldiers in the town should be *minute-men*. These minute-men were given in part to Israel Hutchinson, and in part to Gideon Foster. Foster's company was made up chiefly from Capt. Samuel Eppes' company of militia, and partly by volunteers.

By some mistake in the records these men were never formally separated from Capt. Eppes' company, so that the muster rolls of the State show only Capt. Hutchinson's company of minute-men and three companies of militia. But Captain, afterwards General, Foster, who lived to the advanced age of ninety-six, gave a full account of the affair to many people now living, and it is certain that he acted as captain at the battle of Lexington. It would seem that Capt. Samuel Eppes' company was made up from the south parish, while Capt. Jeremiah Page commanded a company from the north parish, and Capt. Samuel Flint's company included those in the northwestern part of the town, probably in both parishes. Capt. Hutchinson's company of minute-men was made up mostly of men from the New Mills, while Capt. Foster's company included his own neighbors from the south parish. The list of Capt. Foster's minute-men, given from memory by him in 1837, is as follows:

Samuel Cook, Jr.	William Rice.
George Southwick, Jr.	Joseph Bell.
Henry Jacobs, Jr.	John Setchell.
John Collins.	Jonathan Newhall.
Bennamin Eppes.	Stephen Twiss.
Samuel Webber.	Stephen Small.
James Stone.	Uriah Harwood.
Solomon Wyman.	Jacob Reed.
Robert Stone.	Abel Mackintire.
Isaac Twiss.	James Goldthwaite.
Samuel Reeves.	John Eppes, Jr.
Thomas Garfield, Jr.	John Needham.
Joseph Twiss.	
Jonathan Howard.	

Besides these, there were certainly others, as Gen. Foster's memory was probably unable to recall from memory his entire company. Dennison Wallis and Ebenezer Goldthwaite are mentioned by Hanson as belonging in this company, and James Osborne, whose name appears in Capt. Eppes' company, is known to have fought under Capt. Foster on that day; Benj. Daland appears also to have been with the minute-men.

The names of those from the North Parish are given in the history of Danvers, in another part of this work, including the companies of Captains Page and Flint, and Capt. Hutchinson's company of minute-men.

The names of those in Capt. Eppes' company, exclusive of the minute-men, who went with Capt. Foster, are as follows:

Eben Goldthwaite.	John Jacobs.
Jona. Farball.	Sylvester Osborn.
Benj. Dauty.	Amos King.
Aaron Osborn.	Jonathan Nurse.



Andrew Curtis.	Jonathan Felton.
Wm. Tarball.	Jonathan Procter.
Abraham Reddington.	Tim. Felt n.
Israel Osborn.	Asa Felton.
Nathan Upton.	Eben Felton.
Richard Phillips.	Thos. Andrews.
Joseph Whitteman.	Joseph Osborn, 4th.
John Wilson, Jr.	Daniel Reed.
Samuel Small.	John Southwick.
Joseph Eppes.	Thomas Day.
James Eppes.	Joseph Ingles.
Wm. Southwick.	David Newhall.
John Southwick.	Nath'l Tutts.
Jon. Curtis.	Wm. Frost.
Job Wilson.	Newhall Wilson.
Robert Wilson, 3d.	Jonathan Wilson, 3d.
Isaac Wilson, 3d.	Bartholomew N. Iton.
Joshua Moulton.	Hadadon Lyuse.
Nath. Goldthwaite.	Eben Melton.
Daniel Moulton.	Jena. Rodney.
John Reed.	Ataph Reed.
Daniel Marsh, Jr.	Thos. Rand.
Wm. Goldthwaite.	John Gettsed.
Marble Osborn.	Samuel Stone.
Joseph Osborn, 3d.	Wm. Perkins.

There were about two hundred men in all, from Danvers, who started for the battle of Lexington.

When the news of the intention of the British reached Danvers, Foster sent one of his lieutenants to Col. Timothy Pickering, of Salem, and obtained permission to start with his minute-men without waiting for the movement of the regiment. Capt. Hutchinson's company is supposed to have started at the same time; and tradition says that the other three companies followed Foster's example, and went without waiting for Pickering's regiment. The two companies of minute-men, however, bore the brunt of the engagement, and all of those killed, wounded and taken prisoners were from Hutchinson's and Foster's companies.

The minute-men started over the fences and across the fields, and arrived at West Cambridge, a distance of sixteen miles, in four hours. There they met the retreating British. Hon. Daniel P. King has given a description of the scene, doubtless gathered from the lips of those who took part in it.

"Our townsmen heard the roar of the artillery and the rattle of the musketry, and they panted to join in the deadly combat. A little west of the meeting-house is a hill, around which the road wound in such manner as to conceal the British. Many of the men of Danvers went into a walled enclosure, and piled bundles of shingles, which were lying there, to strengthen their breastwork; rumor had deceived them as to the force of the enemy; it was certainly their expectation here to have intercepted their retreat. Others selected trees on the side of the hill, from which they might assail the enemy. But they had little space for preparation; they soon saw the British in solid column, descending the hill on their right, and at the same moment discovered a large flank guard advancing on their left. The men in the enclosure made a gallant resistance, but were overpowered by numbers—it was here that several of

these whom we are proud to claim for our townsmen were slain—some sought shelter in a neighboring house, and three or four, after they had surrendered themselves prisoners of war, were butchered with savage barbarity."

"Capt. Foster, with some of his men on the side of the hill, finding themselves nearly surrounded, made an effort to gain the pond—they passed along its margin, and crossed the road directly in front of the British column. On the north side of the road, they took position behind a ditch wall. From this casual redoubt they fired upon the enemy as long as any of them were within reach of their muskets. Some of them fired eleven times, with two bullets at each discharge, and it cannot be doubted that these winged messengers of death performed their destined work. The bodies of the slain were scattered along the road—the British were followed till they reached Charlestown neck. Mortifying and severe to them were the defeat and losses of that day. Their killed, wounded and missing amounted to about three hundred. According to an account published at the time, in the form of a hand-bill, forty-two Americans were killed and twenty-two wounded,—afterwards ascertained to be fifty killed."

Seven of the minute-men of Danvers were among the killed. Their names were Samuel Cook, George Southwick, Henry Jacobs, Ebenezer Goldthwaite, Benjamin Daland, Jotham Webb and Perley Putnam. Of these the first five belonged to Capt. Foster's company, and the last two to Capt. Hutchinson's. Sixty years afterward a granite monument was erected to the memory of those who fell in this battle, upon the very spot where the minute-men had gathered together at the alarm of invasion. It stands at the corner of Main and Washington Streets in Peabody, inscribed with the names of those who fell on that day, with the stirring motto "*Dulce et decorum est pro patria mori.*" It was originally placed in a little inclosure of green; but the requirements of travel have narrowed its limits to the simple base of the shaft. A movement was once made in behalf of some who begrudged the space which it occupies in the road, to have it moved aside, out of the travelled way. Long may it be before the spirit of utilitarianism shall so prevail over the sentiment which built this simple and appropriate monument and placed it where its location has a deep significance, as to push it aside like a thing whose meaning is outworn and whose time is past.

On the evening after the battle, the men of Danvers collected the bodies of their comrades, and lodged that night in Medford. The British had retreated to Boston. On the next day the returning minute-men brought their melancholy burden home. The citizens went out to meet them, and as they came into town, a carriage escorted by the sexton of the South Parish conveyed the bodies of the slain. Four of the fallen, Samuel Cook, George Southwick, Henry





Jacobs and Ebenezer Goldthwaite, were taken to the house of Samuel Cook, on Central Street, and buried from the South meeting-house on the Friday after the battle. The others, according to tradition, were taken to the house of Capt. Hutchinson, at New Mills, where the whole neighborhood gathered in grief to view the familiar faces. At the church on Friday the gallery was occupied by armed men. Two companies of minute-men from Salem joined with the comrades of the slain to do them military honor, and after the impressive service at the meeting-house, the soldiers, with reversed arms, muffled drums and measured steps, led the long procession. On the way they were met by a band of soldiers from Newburyport, Salisbury and Amesbury, marching to join the army which was besieging Boston; these formed in single ranks on each side of the road, and the mournful procession passed between them. Three volleys were fired over their graves, and so the earthly part of the first victims of the Revolutionary War in Danvers was consigned to its last repose. Although Danvers was situated farther from Lexington than any of her sister towns which were represented at the battle, yet she lost more of her children than any other town except Lexington. Many are the family traditions of heroic deeds on that day, in the fatal inclosure and on the hillside under the apple-trees, where the men of Danvers fought against such desperate odds.

Dennison Wallis and Joseph Bell, of Capt. Foster's Company, were taken prisoners. Bell was carried into Boston, and imprisoned two months in an English frigate. Wallis, fearing that the infuriated British were about to kill their prisoners, made a desperate attempt to escape. He received thirteen bullets, and falling by the side of a wall which he was leaping, was left for dead. He recovered and effected his escape. He lived for many years after the Revolution, and his name is perpetuated by a bequest for the cause of education in his native parish. Nathan Putnam was wounded in the shoulder.

Capt. Foster's company suffered more heavily than did Capt. Hutchinson's. When Foster's men threw themselves behind the inclosure from which they fired, Hutchinson, whose experience in the French Wars gave him knowledge, warned them to beware of the flank guard. In their lack of acquaintance with military affairs, they knew nothing of a flank guard, and firing on the main body as it passed, they rushed out to harass its rear, when, of course, they found themselves between two fires, where several fell. Job Wilson, it is recorded by Hanson, on examining his pocket after the engagement, found his coat and a square foot of gingerbread perforated by a bullet.

Capt. Eppes' company met and captured two wagons near Medford, escorted by eleven British soldiers, carrying supplies to the British. Sylvester Osborne, with others, was detached to escort the prize to a place of safety, and they heard the firing, immediately after leaving the main body.

Col. Pickering's regiment did not march to the scene with the same alacrity which characterized the movements of the Danvers minute-men. At the Bell Tavern, they halted to arrange their places, and there was some farther delay in their movements.

The action of Colonel Pickering was afterward fully explained by the circumstances, but, as remarked by Mr. Hanson, if he had been able to advance with the rapidity shown by the Danvers companies, the presence of so large a force might have materially changed the result, and perhaps even resulted in the capture of the invaders. There is an account of the engagement, which was republished in the *Boston News Letter*, referred to by Hanson, which states that the attack of the Danvers companies was one of the occasions of the greatest loss to the British; and, with an increased force, they might have succeeded in actually intercepting the column returning from Lexington.

It is related that while Colonel Pickering's company was halted at the Bell Tavern, Elias Haskett Derby, who afterward became one of the wealthiest men in Salem, and one of the founders of its mercantile prosperity, went in to see Mrs. Southwick, the wife of Edward Southwick, who lived in a house standing within the memory of the writer, directly opposite the monument on Main Street. The Southwicks were Quakers, and could not consistently afford assistance to soldiers; but the sympathy of Mrs. Southwick so far prevailed over her non-combative principles that she said to Mr. Derby,—“Friend Derby, thee knows that my principles will not allow me to do anything to encourage war; but as there is a long and tedious march before thee, and thee and those with thee may be in need of refreshment, this batch of bread, just taken from the oven, thee may take if thee please; for it never can be wrong to feed the hungry.” And she put into his knapsack a cheese, also.

Her willingness to render assistance in a good cause, in the most efficient manner which her principles would permit, calls to mind an anecdote of Squiers Shove, a Quaker afterward well known in the South Parish, who when asked, half in sport, to contribute to the purchase of a bell, which it was known was not favored by the Quaker sect, replied,—“No, I won't give thee anything for the bell, but I'll give thee a rope to hang the old thing with;” which he did.

On the 17th of June Colonel Pickering's regiment, on its way to the field of battle at Bunker's Hill, passed through Danvers, and halted at the Bell Tavern for refreshment. The bystanders, impatient of the delay, remonstrated at the loss of time; and Mrs. Anna Endicott, the wife of Samuel Endicott, walked up to the colonel, and with the voice of an Amazon, as Hanson describes it, said,—“Why on earth don't you march? Don't you hear the guns in Charlestown?”

The next January Nathan Putnam and Dennison





Wallis applied to the Legislature for remuneration for their losses and the expense of their sickness from wounds received at Lexington, and a moderate appropriation was made for the purpose. In February, 1776, the House voted to Captain Tappes the following sums for the use of individuals who had lost guns, etc., on the 19th of April: Jonathan Tarbell, £2, 11s.; Henry Jacobs, £3, 8s.; heirs of Benjamin Daland, £2, 4s.; Samuel Cook, £2, 12s.; Thomas Gardner, £1, 4s.; Nathaniel Goldthwaite, £2, 0s.

On February 6th and March 6th contributions were taken up for the army besieging Boston, and the South Parish gave £13, 13s. 6d.

On June 18, 1776, it was "Voted that if the Hon'ble Congress for the Safety of the United States Declare them Independent of the Kingdom of Great Britain, we, the inhabitants of this town, do solemnly Engage with our Lives and Fortunes to support them in the measure." At the same time a bounty of £13, 6s. 8d. was given to each man who would enlist in the service of the colonies. The Declaration of Independence was unanimously adopted and copied at length in the town record.

During the whole war one hundred and ninety-seven men from Danvers served in the Continental army out of a population of about eighteen hundred. Probably about half of this number were from the South Parish.

## CHAPTER LXXII.

### PEABODY—(Continued).

*From the Close of the Revolution to the Separation from Danvers.*

AFTER the close of the Revolution the South Parish continued on a quiet and uneventful course, contributing little for many years to the material of history. Its people united their action with that of the other parish in many public matters which came before the town-meeting. They contributed men toward a company for the suppression of "Shay's Rebellion;" they joined in resolutions commendatory of John Adams' administration in 1799; and in 1808 they successfully contested an effort to unite the North Parish to Salem. They sent some in the company which left Danvers in December, 1787, and settled in Washington County, Ohio, as they had previously taken part in the settlement of New Salem in 1734, and in other emigrations.

The war of 1812 with Great Britain was very unpopular in the town, and on the 13th of July the town passed resolutions strongly condemning the war. Several companies were, however, raised to resist invasion, and that from the southern and western part of the town was commanded by General Foster, with Johnson Procter and Nathan Felton as lieutenants, Daniel King, ensign, John Upton, orderly

sergeant, and as privates many of the well-known and substantial citizens of the town. Hanson gives a partial list of the company, including William Poole, Eben S. Upton, Rufus Wymen, Eben King, Amos King, John Goldthwaite, John Osborn, Oliver Saunders, Joseph Griffin, Stephen Procter, Asa Bushby, Asa Tapley, James Wilson, Elisha Wilson, John Needham, Jonathan Osborn, Amos Osborn, W. W. Little, James Southwick, Joseph Shaw, George Southwick, Sylvester Osborn, Jr., Benjamin Stephens, Benjamin Gile, Elisha Gunnison, Eben Osborn, Solomon McIntire, William Sutton, Samuel Buxton. There were about as many more whose names cannot be ascertained.

There were two alarms when this company, together with one from the northern part of the town, was called out. One was caused by a boat laden with sea-weed passing by Hospital Point, where the Artillery was posted. The boat was mistaken for a British barge, and as it returned no answer on being hailed, it was fired upon. The alarm of invasion spread far into the country. On the other occasion, September 28th, the Artillery was alarmed by some men who were drawing a seine, and fired again, spreading a false alarm, which is said to have travelled far into New Hampshire. The companies in both instances marched without delay to the post of supposed danger.

THE LEXINGTON MONUMENT.—The sixtieth anniversary of the battle of Lexington was chosen for the dedication of a monument to those citizens of Danvers who fell on that memorable day. It is built of hewn sienite, and was formerly surrounded by an iron railing, which inclosed a small square of grass in which the monument stood. But with the increased use of the streets it became more difficult to keep this little strip of turf in proper condition; the fence fell to decay, and as the travel and the introduction of the horse railroad to Lynn demanded more room, a simple foundation of hewn stone was substituted for the turf and iron railing, and the monument still occupies its old site, on the very place where the minute men gathered on the morning of the battle, and from which they took up their hurried march to Cambridge. The monument is twenty-two feet high, and seven feet broad at the base. On the easterly side is the following inscription, on a slab of white marble set into the face of the monument:

#### BATTLE OF LEXINGTON,

April 19, 1775.

Samuel Cook.....	£t. 33
Benj. Daland.....	£t. 25
George Southwick.....	£t. 25
Jotham Webb.....	£t. 22
Henry Jacobs.....	£t. 22
Eben'r Goldthwait.....	£t. 22
Perley Putnam.....	£t. 21

#### CITIZENS OF DANVERS

Fell on that day.

"Dulce et decorum est pro patria mori."



On the westerly tablet is inscribed "Erected by Citizens of Danvers on the 60th Anniversary, 1835."

As the nineteenth fell on Sunday, Monday the twentieth was selected for the laying of the corner-stone. At ten o'clock a procession of Revolutionary patriots and citizens of Danvers and vicinity was formed in the square before the Old South Meeting-House under the direction of the marshals of the day. The Danvers Light Infantry, commanded by Capt. William Sutton, and the Danvers Artillery under Capt. A. Pratt, with military music, escorted the procession, which proceeded through Main Street to the old burial ground near the Salem line, where several of the slain were buried. Three volleys of musketry were fired over their graves, and the procession then marched to the site of the monument, then called Eagle corner. The order of services was announced by John W. Proctor, Esq., and Rev. Charles C. Sewall, of the First Unitarian Church, offered prayer. The venerable General Foster, with the surviving officers and soldiers of the Revolution, proceeded to place the corner-stone, beneath which was deposited a box containing various memorials of the times specially prepared for the occasion, including late copies of some of the newspapers of the vicinity, printed on cloth, and records durably engrossed upon parchment.

General Foster then briefly addressed his fellow-citizens with a few words full of simple eloquence, and the stone was put in its place. The artillery fired a salute of twenty-four guns, and amid the ringing of church-bells and to the stirring strains of "Auld Lang Syne," the procession marched to the Old South Church, the very building in which, sixty years before, the solemn and impressive funeral services of four of the young heroes had been held with the subdued clank of arms in the gallery full of soldiers and amid the deep and passionate stirrings of patriotic emotion which realized that the war of freedom had indeed begun. The church, though enlarged from its dimensions at that earlier time, was crowded in every part, and hundreds were unable to gain admittance. The following was the order of services: 1, 100th Psalm, tune Denmark; 2, Hymn, by R. S. Daniels; 3, Prayer, by Rev. Geo. Cowles; 4, Hymn, by Fitch Poole, Jr.; 5, Address, by Hon. D. P. King; 6, Patriotic Ode, by Jonathan Shove; 7, Concluding Prayer, by Rev. J. M. Austin. At the close of the services at the church, the original honorable discharge of J. B. Winchester from the Revolutionary Army was presented and read, bearing the signature of George Washington. Mr. Winchester entered the Continental Army at the age of fourteen, and was only just of age when discharged. Nineteen survivors of the Lexington fight and of the Revolutionary Army occupied the pews in front of the pulpit, and added greatly to the interest of the occasion. Of these the following were natives of Danvers: Gideon Foster, Sylvester Osborne, Johnson Proctor, Levi Preston, Asa Tapley, Roger Nourse, Joseph Shaw, John Joce-

lyn, Ephraim Smith, Jonathan Porter, Joseph Tafts, William Flint.

After the services at the church a procession was again formed and escorted by the Danvers Light Infantry to the Essex Coffee House, where about two hundred, including the Revolutionary veterans, were served with a collation. Patriotic sentiments and toasts followed, in which the veterans and the company present joined. The projector of the monument was John Upton, and its architect Asher Benjamin.

It was noted as a curious coincidence that there appears on the western side of the monument, above the marble slab, a dark marking on the face of the sienite caused by the mingling of some darker stone, which the cutting of the stone has brought to a striking resemblance of the Phrygian cap—the liberty-cap, so-called, for ages the symbol of freedom, and ever worn by the statued representations of the Goddess.

On the 6th of May, 1852, Kossuth, the Hungarian patriot, visited the town, and made a brief but eloquent address at the Lexington Monument, in which with the happy facility for historical allusions which was one of his most remarkable characteristics, he referred pertinently to the heroic deeds of the Revolution, and spoke of the honorable part which the men of Danvers bore in the battle of Lexington and their readiness in hurrying to the scene of Leslie's retreat. He was received by a committee chosen by the town, and was welcomed in an address by John W. Proctor, Esq., a son of Capt. Johnson Proctor, of Revolutionary fame, and a descendant of that John Proctor who fell an early victim to the witchcraft delusion.

**THE GREAT FIRE.**—On September 22, 1843, a very destructive fire occurred in the South Parish, and consumed a large amount of property in the vicinity of the square, including the Second or South Congregational Church, a new building partially completed, the Essex Coffee-house, and twelve other stores and houses, with a large number of sheds and outbuildings. The Unitarian Church and several other buildings caught repeatedly, but by great exertions of the citizens assisted by help from neighboring towns, the progress of the fire was checked after property valued at seventy-five thousand dollars had been destroyed, of which twenty-five thousand dollars was insured. The blow was a severe one, but the enterprise of the community soon replaced the burned buildings, and the town gained in appearance from the misfortune.

The war with Mexico was very unpopular throughout the town. Hon. Daniel P. King, of the South Parish, was at that time the Representative of the district in Congress, and he maintained the strongest opposition to the war, in which he was fully supported by his constituents. On December 16, 1847, the town held a meeting, and resolutions drafted by John W. Proctor were passed condemning the war as an unrighteous one, and declaring against the





acquisition of territory by conquest; and among other resolutions was the following:

"While we acknowledge 'all men to be born free and equal,' we cannot consistently with this principle do anything whatever that shall have a tendency to extend that most disgraceful feature of our institutions, *Domestic Slavery*."

Only five men from the whole town of Danvers were engaged in the Mexican War.

**CENTENNIAL CELEBRATION.**—On the 16th of June, 1852, the town of Danvers celebrated the one hundredth anniversary of its separate municipal existence. A procession illustrating the manners and customs of the early settlers, and brilliant with allegorical figures and representations of foreign costume, was escorted by military forces and by the firemen of the town; it was made up largely from the pupils of the public schools. An address by John W. Proctor and a poem by Andrew Nichols were delivered in the old South Church with music and religious exercises. After the exercises in the church a dinner was given in a canvas pavilion on the Crowninshield estate, at which many interesting addresses were given by the invited guests of the town, many of them distinguished in public life or eminent for historic learning. The full account of this very interesting anniversary celebration belongs more properly to the history of Danvers; but it was at this dinner that the first gift of George Peabody to his native town was offered, in a letter acknowledging his invitation to the centennial celebration. In this letter he inclosed an envelope with a direction that its seal was not to be broken till the toasts were being proposed at the dinner. After a toast to George Peabody, the letter of acknowledgment was read, and the seal of the inclosed envelope broken. It contained a sentiment by Mr. Peabody, which has become the motto of the endowments made by him for the benefit of education: "Education—A debt due from present to future generations. The letter continued:

"To a knowledge of the payment of that debt by this generation, which proceeds in my native town of Danvers, and to act in its prompt fulfillment, I give to the inhabitants of that town the sum of twenty thousand dollars, for the promotion of knowledge and morality among them."

"I beg to remark, that the subject of making a gift to my native town has for some years occupied my mind, and I avail myself of your present interesting festival to make the communication, in the hope that it will sell to the pleasure of the day."

"I annex to the gift such conditions only as I deem necessary for its preservation and the accomplishment of the purposes before named. The conditions are, that the legal voters of the town, at a meeting to be held at a convenient time after the 1st of June, shall accept the gift, and shall elect a committee of not less than twelve persons, to receive and have charge of the same, for the purpose of establishing a Lyceum for the delivery of lectures upon such subjects as may be designated by a committee of the town free to all the inhabitants, under such rules as said committee may from time to time enact; and that a Library shall be obtained, which shall also be free to the inhabitants, under the direction of the committee."

"That a suitable building for the use of the Lyceum shall be erected, at a cost, including the land, fixtures, furniture, &c., not exceeding Seven Thousand dollars, and shall be located within one-third of a mile of the Presbyterian Meeting House occupying the spot of that formerly

under the pastoral care of the Rev. Mr. Walker, in the South Parish of Danvers.

"That Ten Thousand dollars of this gift shall be invested by the town's committee in undoubted securities as a permanent fund, and the interest arising thereupon to be expended in support of the Lyceum."

"In all other respects I leave the disposition of the affairs of the Lyceum to the inhabitants of Danvers, merely suggesting that it might be advisable for them, by their own act, to exclude sectarian theology and political discussions forever from the walls of the institution."

"I will make one request of the committee, which is, if they see no objection, and my venerable friend Capt. Sylvester Proctor should be living, that he be selected to lay the corner-stone of the Lyceum building."

As was stated by Mr. Proctor at the dinner, Mr. Peabody had been a generous contributor to the building of the Lexington Monument and also to the rebuilding of the old South Church when destroyed by fire. The same letter which inclosed the gift also contained a liberal subscription toward the erection of an appropriate monument at the grave of General Gideon Foster. Mr. Peabody soon afterward added ten thousand dollars to his original donation, and before 1856 had increased the foundation to fifty thousand dollars. During his last visit to this country, in 1869, he increased the amount of his gift to this Institute to two hundred thousand dollars.

For some years the difficulties which had been felt even in the early years of the town by reason of the distance between the North and South Parishes, and which had led to remedial legislation as long ago as 1772, had been increasing; and the time was soon to come when the division of the two districts became necessary. By an act of the Legislature, passed May 18, 1855, the new town of South Danvers was incorporated, with boundaries nearly corresponding with those of the old middle precinct of Salem. The old northerly line of the South Parish was changed, adding a strip of territory to South Danvers; instead of the ancient line, running nearly east and west, the line now runs from the same easterly boundary north-west to the sharp bend of the Ipswich River, so that some of the historic localities of Salem Village are now within the limits of the newer town.

Shortly afterward, by an act of the Legislature, passed April 30, 1856, the ancient boundary between Salem and South Danvers was changed, and the boundaries of the new town have since been undisturbed.

It has already been noted that when the original petitioners for the setting off of the middle precinct prepared their draft of a boundary, they asked to have a line run from Trask's mills to Spring Pond. The strong opposition shown in Salem to having so large a part of their common land thrown into the new precinct was no doubt the cause of the change made by the Legislative committee, who recommended that the line, after reaching what is known as Boston Street, should continue in the street along the Boston road to the Lynn line. This recommendation was adopted; no change was made at the time of the incorporation of Danvers as a district and as a



town; and from 1710 to 1856, the houses on the opposite sides of a road more than three miles long were in different municipal jurisdictions. The inconveniences of such a boundary line were not so marked in the lower portion of the street, as the inhabitants belonging to Salem were there not far separated from the other inhabited parts of Salem; but as the road, well occupied with substantial houses, continued on towards Lynn, the Salem inhabitants became more and more remote from the interests of the town to which they belonged, and in the settlement at South Peabody, known from the earliest times as "the Rocks," neighbors whose interests were otherwise identical were forced to carry on double schools on opposite sides of the same street, and voted in different municipalities at places miles apart. It was a deep grievance, too, for the ardent temperance reformers of Danvers, who had succeeded in suppressing the open sale of liquor in the town, to be confronted by liquor-selling taverns, such as the Naumkeag House and others of those times, which could be reached by thirsty Danvers men by merely crossing the street into Salem.

The line from Trask's, or Frye's, mills reached Boston Street at the tree known as the "Big Tree." From this boundary tree, the line of division ran along the easterly side of the road to Lynn. At the time of its establishment, in 1710, the main road to Lynn from Salem did not follow any of the now existing streets in its turn to the south after crossing Poole's bridge over Strong Water Brook, but diverged from what is now Main Street at a point near Pierpont Street, and continued in a southwesterly direction till it joined what is now Washington Street near Aborn Street. This diagonal course of the old road appears very plainly on the rough map, on file in the State archives in the State library, which accompanied the petition for setting off the middle precinct in 1710; and also upon a map of the division of the common lands of Salem, made about 1720, in the possession of Andrew Nichols, Esq., of Danvers. As time went on, the road which left Main Street at the Bell Tavern, or Eagle corner, where the Lexington monument now stands, became most used, and the old road at that point fell into disuse and was eventually abandoned, though traces of it may still be found. The boundary line, of course, remained unchanged; and in 1840 the line was changed by act of the Legislature, by adding a strip to Danvers, bringing the boundary line two feet north of Sutton's store in Poole's Hollow, and then following near the brook to Aborn Street, and so to the Boston road. It was not till 1856 that the line between South Danvers and Salem was finally established, coinciding very nearly, in that part between Boston Street and Spring Pond, with the line marked out by the wisdom of the farmers of Brooksby in their petition for the incorporation of the middle precinct. In exchange for this concession of territory, part of the territory of

South Danvers on the northerly side of Boston Street, between the Big Tree and the old burial-ground, was annexed to Salem by the same act. The inhabitants of the territory belonging to Danvers at the time of Mr. Peabody's gift to the town are, however, still entitled to the privileges of the bequest. The present boundary line crosses the street near the westerly end of the old burial-ground.

It is stated in an article in the *Wizard*, published in 1862, that previously to the last change of boundary, the line ran through a house on Main Street, through a bed-room and across a bed, so that the heads of the occupants were in the city and their feet in the country.

## CHAPTER LXIII.

### PEABODY—*Continued.*

*Review of the Period from 1757 to 1855.*

THE period from 1757 to 1855, during which the present township of Peabody was the South Parish of the town of Danvers, was marked by great changes accompanying the growth of a large town from the community of six or seven hundred people dependent on agriculture for their support. The aspect of the old time village is still remembered by the older citizens, as it was described by Mr. George G. Smith at the Centennial Celebration: "It was a pleasant place, then, this old town of ours, when there were green fields and shady walks where now are dusty streets and busy factories. I shall never forget the old back way by the pond, with its locust-trees, loading the air in the season of blossoms with their honey-like fragrance. And the pond, not as now shorn of its fair proportions, its green banks sloping gently down to the clear water, and bordered with bright rushes and flowery water plants." The pastures came down toward the centre of the village, and a country quiet rested over all. In 1800 the population of the whole town of Danvers was 2643, and in 1820 it was 3646. The South Parish could claim about half of these numbers.

GROWTH OF MANUFACTURES.—The tannery begun in 1739 by Joseph Southwick, the Quaker, continued to be carried on by the same family during the whole of this period. About 1770 Joseph Poor began to tan near "the lane," now Central Street, and several of his descendants are still prominent in the same branch of productive industry. Dennison Wallis, the Revolutionary patriot, had a tannery near the street which bears his name; and early in the present century Fitch Poole, Sen., and his brother, Ward Poole, had tanneries near Poole's hollow, on the stream running into the North River. In 1855 there





were twenty-seven tanneries in South Danvers, with an annual product of 131,000 hides, valued at \$660,000; 122 men were employed in this industry. There were also, in 1855, 24 currying establishments, finishing leather of the value of \$805,000, and employing 153 hands.

The manufacture of morocco and lining-skins grew up in the second quarter of the present century, and in 1855 there was a product of 80,000 skins, valued at about \$25,000, employing 117 hands, with a capital of \$50,000.

The boot and shoe trade, which also had its principal growth as an industry since 1830, produced, in 1855, in the town, 747,600 pairs, valued at \$597,259, and gave employment to 1043 hands, a considerable number of the employees being women.

The manufacture of chocolate was carried on by General Foster in the early years of the century at his mill-pond, off Foster's lane (now Foster Street), where were also bark-mills for grinding tan for the tanneries, and grist-mills. General Foster developed the water-power at his command with much skill and ingenuity, building a system of dams and canals. His mills were destroyed by fire in 1823. The manufacture of chocolate was also carried on by Francis Symonds, the host of the Bell Tavern; but the industry was long ago discontinued.

At one time there were upwards of thirty potteries in the South Parish, mostly on "the lane," called "Garp Lane," or "Gape Lane," and also on Southwick's lane, now Lowell Street. During the War of 1812 the pottery from this region attained a wide celebrity, and great quantities were sold. The demand for the ware, which was chiefly of the coarser variety of brown ware, from which the bean-pots, flower-pots and jugs of the present day are made, diminished after the war, owing to the cheapness with which a higher grade of imported ware could be obtained; and in 1855 only two establishments remained on Central Street, where the last surviving pottery is still carried on; their product was then valued at \$2,000.

The Danvers Bleachery, an enterprise begun in 1817 by Elijah Upton and the Messrs. Walker, in 1850 bleached or colored 100 tons of goods, employing 60 men, with a capital of \$150,000.

Glue was first made in South Danvers by Elijah Upton in 1817. Mr. Upton was one of the pioneers in manufactures, and was very successful in various branches. He made many improvements in methods, and in the glue business anticipated modern ideas, among other things being the first to grind glue for convenience in packing and use. In 1855 three glue factories, with a capital of \$40,000, produced glue of the value of \$120,000, employing 21 men.

Besides these larger industries, and the ordinary activity of a growing town in building, cabinet-making and other domestic occupations, there were, in 1855, two bakeries, producing articles valued at \$35,000

yearly; two soap-factories, with a product worth \$18,000, a patent-leather factory, a last factory, whose product was valued at \$16,000, a box-factory, and working quarries of valuable stone, from which \$5,600 worth of building and mill-stones were cut. In the days when the extensive commerce of Salem made communication with foreign countries by vessel easy, the soap business was largely developed, and an export trade was built up by Henry Cook, then the principal manufacturer.

During the last half century of this period, the preparation of wool for manufacture was carried on, the wool being in part supplied by the skins used in the manufacture of morocco. William Sutton carried on the business at the brick store, on Main Street, in Poole's hollow, and the figure of a sheep, which still stands over the door, was to be seen in the same place as early as 1815. At one time Ward Poole, Jr., carried on the same business in another brick building, near Pierpont Street. Another wooden sheep was placed over the store in Poole's hollow, occupied by Warren M. Jacobs and Fitch Poole as a morocco-factory, and this image was afterward placed on the larger factory erected by Jacobs, on Main Street. The business of "wool-pulling," as it was called, did not reach large dimensions, and was at times partially or wholly suspended.

**EAST AND WEST INDIA TRADE.**—At one period, during the commercial prosperity of Salem, there were a number of traders in the South Parish who did a large business in supplying dealers in the interior with imported goods, sometimes buying a whole cargo at a time for wholesale and retail trade.

Some of these merchants, who dealt principally in West India goods, had their stores on Boston Street, on the Danvers side of the road, near the big tree; there were other stores near the square, and one at least, that was carried on by Mrs. King, on the Reading road. With the decay of the commerce of Salem, and the change in methods of transportation, this branch of business fell into disuse, and only those stores which supplied local needs remained. The results of these comparatively extensive dealings, however, enriched some of the families which carried on the business.

**BANKS.**—The Danvers Bank (now the South Danvers National Bank) was incorporated in 1825 with a capital of \$150,000. The first president was William Sutton.

The Warren Bank (now the Warren National Bank) was incorporated in 1832 with a capital of \$250,000. The first president was Jonathan Shove.

The Warren Five Cents Savings Bank was incorporated in April, 1854.

**INSURANCE.**—The Danvers Mutual Fire Insurance Company (now the South Danvers Mutual Fire Insurance Company) was instituted in 1829. The first president was Ebenezer Shillaber. It is an extremely conservative and sound institution.





**FREEMASONRY.**—Jordan Lodge, F. & A. M., was instituted in 1808.

**AGRICULTURE.**—The agricultural industries of the town still continued to be of importance, and in 1855 the dairy and farm products were estimated at about \$128,000, of which the onion crop constituted the largest part in value, being estimated at \$77,080.

It was stated at the Centennial celebration of Danvers that the whole industrial product of the town at the beginning of the century was not more than \$100,000, and this is probably a large estimate.

The valuation of the whole town of Danvers in 1827 was \$1,870,800. In 1855 the valuation of South Danvers was \$2,944,500.

**SOCIAL CHANGES.**—Such a growth in the industries and resources of a community must necessarily be accompanied by great changes in the social conditions of the inhabitants. Even with the slender historical material available, we can trace some of these changes.

At the beginning of this period the people of the south parish of Danvers were almost entirely of pure American blood of English descent. They were one in race, in social customs, in political traditions and religious belief. There was but one church in the parish, to which all were not only expected but compelled to contribute and which every good citizen must attend. In worldly estate there were no wide extremes, for, though some had much larger holdings of land than others, the diversity of living was not great. The distinctions of rank were punctiliously observed on important occasions, yet age was revered even above rank, and the Christian fellowship of the church and the pure democracy of the town meeting brought all to a common level. After the stirring events of the Revolution, the district settled back into its quiet ways, chiefly a farming community, and supplying from its own sons the labor necessary for carrying on the beginnings of its manufacturing career. For almost half a century after the Revolution the community preserved the same characteristics,—a simple and neighborly society where all were personally known, in which there were few very poor and fewer very rich; where a foreigner was a curiosity and a vagrant liable to active inquisition. The parish system of support for the church was abandoned in 1793, and a system of pew taxation substituted; but there was no other religious society till the Unitarians came off in 1825. In 1832 the Universalist Society was organized, and the Methodists, though they had meetings in the south parish as early as 1833, had no appointed minister till 1840. The Baptist Society completes the list of those existing in 1855, having been organized in 1842. The Quakers have never had a stated place of worship in the parish, but the many worthy and esteemed families which have held that faith have worshipped in other towns, chiefly with their brethren in Salem.

More than sixty years ago, when all the village went to the one meeting-house, and nearly all were natives of the soil, there was a familiarity of social intercourse which can exist only in such a community. Almost every individual of consequence, and some whose only distinction was their eccentricity, were commonly known by familiar names, sometimes by nicknames descriptive of some peculiarity of appearance or character. Amusing hoaxes were perpetrated on certain ones whose simplicity encouraged the attempt, and practical jokes, which sometimes verged upon rudeness, were often carried out by a select band of choice spirits, among whom were some of the best known citizens, led by one or two of the keenest and most inventive of their number. Many rare stories are told by the older citizens of the jollities of those times.

Then, too, there were some who cultivated a refined literary taste, and met to read and discuss original articles on literature or the topics of the times. Rufus Choate opened his first law office here, and resided in the south parish for several years, going as one of the town representatives to the General Court in 1826 and '27. He was married while living here, and left town to practice law in Salem in 1828.

He at one time delivered an address on the Waverly novels before the Literary Circle, a society including many of the active minds of the place; and during his residence in town he twice delivered the Fourth of July oration.

With Dr. Andrew Nichols, and the Rev. Mr. Walker, and John W. Proctor, and Fitch Poole, who was then just beginning his unique literary career, with Rufus Choate, and Joshua H. Ward, and Daniel P. King, and other gifted and cultured minds, there was surely a sufficiency of literary ability to impress the social life of the parish with high ideals of thought and expression; and the effect of the impulse which these men gave to the intellectual life of the town may still be felt. Not only in matters of literary taste, but in dealing with the great problems of the times, with intemperance, and slavery, and educational needs, the town and the parish kept always in the foremost ranks of progress.

The rapid increase of manufacturing and the severe and comparatively unskilled labor required in some departments brought about the importation of immigrant laborers. Mr. Richard Crowninshield, who carried on a woolen-mill just below the pond which bears his name, is said to have been the first to bring Irish laborers to the town. The construction of the railroads also brought in a foreign element of population.

With the increase of manufactures came the amassing of larger fortunes by some, and the increased values of real estate and the rising tide of enterprise and improvement throughout the country following the introduction of the railroad systems, gave opportunities of investment which still farther increased the



means of the wealthy. The old simplicity and uniformity of social life and customs passed away never to return, and in its place began to grow up the more complex relations of town life resulting from greater variety of employment and greater differences in fortune, and in part from the mere increase of numbers.

**EDUCATION.**—From the earliest years the Middle Precinct was careful and earnest in the cause of education. Soon after the separation of the precinct the parish gave its attention to the support of schools, and claimed and received from the town its proper part of the school money. We find the school fund a common subject of discussion in the parish meeting, and the people themselves contributed liberally from their slender means toward the schools. In 1734 the parish raised £47 4s. 11d. for its schools. In 1737 there were four schools in the parish, and six male teachers and ten female teachers were employed during the summer; the men received two pounds a month, and the women sixpence each week. In 1739 a grammar school, where Latin should be taught, was projected. In 1748 a school house was built near Procter's corner, eighteen by twenty-two feet. In 1765 it was voted to build a school-house on the land belonging to the parish. A school was kept six months in each parish that year. In 1783, when Revolutionary troubles had subsided, the condition of the schools received renewed attention. Complaint was made against Danvers for neglecting to sustain a proper number of schools, and means were taken to remedy the neglect. In 1793 Dr. Archelaus Putnam made a report to the town on the reorganization of the schools. In 1793 and 1794 an effort was made to divide the town into districts, and a division was made pursuant to a plan proposed by Gideon Foster, Samuel Page and John Kettelle. In 1802 the districts were remodeled at the suggestion of Sylvester Osborn.

According to the plan then in force, the general supervision over all the schools was retained by the town; but in 1802, the modern system of school districts was established, with nine districts in the whole town. This continued up to the time of the separation of South Danvers, the number of districts having been increased.

The development of the highly organized public schools of the present time from the old district school in which all were in the same room was gradual, and can only be traced by observing the increase of numbers and the systematization of methods and growth of text-books which accompanied the grouping of several schools in graded association. The town kept well abreast of the improvements in other places. In 1814 an order was adopted requiring an annual report of the condition of the schools to be made to the town. This was in advance of the same regulation afterward made by the State, as was also the taking of the census of school children, in-

stituted in Danvers in 1820. These reports began to be printed in 1839.

High schools were established in 1850, and in 1852 a system of superintendence was established, which did not long continue.

The character of the instruction given and the standard of work performed in the various schools have been maintained at a high degree of excellence, and the town always displayed a spirit of liberality and progress in educational affairs which accorded with the principles of its earliest settlers. Mr. Proctor, in his address at the centennial celebration, in 1852, called attention to the fact that Danvers expended forty per cent. of all its outlay of public money on its schools, paying, in 1855, ten thousand dollars for support of public schools, on a valuation of three million dollars. Among the teachers of Danvers were some whose names have become widely known. Daniel Eppes, in the early times of the town, was a famous teacher. In 1836 Charles Northend, the well-known writer on educational matters, began to teach school in the town, in a school-house close by the old burying-ground; he taught about twenty years in the South Parish, and was the first superintendent of schools in the town.

**NEWSPAPERS.**—The *Danvers Eagle* was published for about a year, beginning in 1844. The *Danvers Whig*, a political sheet, was published during the Presidential campaign in 1844.

The *Danvers Courier*, edited by George R. Carlton, was established in March, 1845. It continued to be published till September, 1849.

**TEMPERANCE MOVEMENTS.**—In 1812, when the first temperance society in America was formed,—"The Massachusetts Society for the Suppression of Intemperance,"—Joseph Torrey, Samuel Holten and Benjamin Wadsworth, from Danvers, were members. Edward Southwick and Deacon Fitch Poole, from the South Parish, were among the pioneers in temperance reform. A strong impulse was given to the movement by the adhesion of many of the leading citizens of the place. The principle of total abstinence was upheld by these earliest supporters of the movement. The Danvers Moral Society, for the suppression of intemperance, was formed in February, 1814. The language of the Constitution was moderate, being directed against "the daily use of ardent spirits." Rev. Samuel Walker, Fitch Poole, Dr. Andrew Nichols, Sylvester Osborn, James Osborn, William Sutton and others, from the South Parish, were prominent in the formation of the society. In 1833 the word "daily" was stricken from the article of the Constitution above referred to. Some of the pledges formerly circulated were very moderate in form. It is said that one which was extensively circulated bound the signer to an agreement "to use intoxicating liquor with cautious prudence." In 1818 the thanks of the town were voted to the selectmen for their zeal in endeavoring to prevent a portion of





the people from wasting "health, time and estate in drinking;" and they were earnestly requested to continue their efforts.

In 1818 Dr. Andrew Nichols delivered an address entitled *Temperance and Morality*.

In 1827 a committee of nine was raised to prosecute all licensed persons who infringed the laws, and all unlicensed persons who sold ardent spirits. Dr. Ebenezer Hunt this year delivered the first public address in Danvers advocating total abstinence.

In 1831 the overseers of the poor were forbidden to furnish alcohol to the town poor, except by order of a physician. On March 4, 1833, Danvers refused to grant licenses for the sale of liquor; Mr. Proctor claimed that she was the first town to take such action, and it is certain that she was among the first. This policy was adhered to until the separation of South Danvers in 1855.

The peculiarities of the boundary line between the South Parish and Salem made it easy for those living near the line to obtain liquor, it being necessary only to cross the street in many places to be free from the restrictions of "no license."

In 1837 resolutions were unanimously adopted by the town, on motion of John W. Proctor, calling the attention of the Salem authorities to the objectionable character of these border dram shops. The change of line in 1856 did much to obviate this evil; and very lately the city of Salem, in putting in force the plan of restricted area for the granting of licenses, has removed all cause for complaint in this respect, so far as official action is concerned.

**SLAVERY.**—At the time of the separation of Danvers from Salem there were within the limits of the town twenty-five slaves—nine men and sixteen women. Slaves continued to be held until the adoption of the Constitution in Massachusetts in 1789. Most of those who were thus freed remained in the service of their former owners. The last survivor of the slaves of Danvers died in extreme old age in the South Danvers Almshouse in 1862,—Sibyl Swinerton, once a slave of John Swinerton.

A strong anti-slavery feeling grew up in Danvers in the early part of the century. In 1819 citizens of the town addressed a communication to the Hon. Nathaniel Silsbee, in which their attitude as opposed to slavery is forcibly presented, and the hope expressed "that every practical exertion will be made, to hasten the time when the republic shall witness the complete emancipation of the African," and that "ere long this infernal traffic in human flesh will be completely and entirely abolished." This letter was signed, among others, by Edward Southwick, William Sutton, Andrew Nichols and John W. Proctor, from the South Parish.

In 1847 a resolve, drafted by Mr. Proctor, relating to the Mexican War, was unanimously adopted, in which it was declared "that the town would not in any manner countenance anything that shall have a

tendency to extend that most disgraceful feature of our institutions,—*domestic slavery*."

Anti-slavery meetings were held, and many of the citizens were prominent workers in the early days of the abolition movement.

**THE OLD-TIME TAVERNS.**—In the old days before the time of railroads the various taverns were important centres of interest. There strangers visiting the town on business made their headquarters; there the news of the day was received from the passing stage, or repeated by the traveller from a distance, and eagerly discussed by the politicians of the parish; there public events were celebrated, and meetings were held of organizations and patriotic citizens. Of these the Bell tavern, which stood for many years on Eagle corner, now the southeast corner of Main and Washington Streets, at the bend of the old Boston road, was one of the most famous. Here, in the south room, on election days and other occasions of privileged merrymaking, the dance was led by the fiddle, and in the days before temperance was agitated as a special virtue, the convivial bowl flowed freely. Even the officers of the town sometimes consulted here over stimulating refreshment or entertained visitors of importance with the moist hospitality of the times.

In the days before the Revolution, the time of the spring election, beginning on the last Wednesday in May, was recognized by custom as a sort of jubilee of the colored people, and was celebrated by them with great festivities, in which they were allowed considerable license in the way of sports and entertainment. The Bell tavern was one of the localities where the merry-makers gathered. This festival, known traditionally as "Nigger 'lection," was continued by roys-tering young people among the natives long after the colored people had become few and far between, and did not wholly cease to be observed till after the spring elections were abolished.

To quote from an article on the Bell tavern by Fitch Poole:

"The loyal neighbors here collected to mourn the demise of the good Queen Anne, and rejoice in the accession of the first George. His departure and the rise of his son, George II, were here celebrated in the same bowl of punch. George III was also welcomed with a zeal that was only equalled by that with which they drank confusion to his ministers. The odious Stamp Act and all Parliament-taxes on the colonies were patriotically denounced. Tea was proscribed and its sale forbidden under penalty of a ride on a rail and the brand of toryism. One conviction only took place, and the unlucky wight obtained a reprieve from his sentence by furnishing the villagers with a bucket of punch. His neighbors kindly gave him a share of the beverage, obliging him to repeat over his cup three times the following elegant couplet:

"I, Isaac Wilson, a tory I be;  
I, Isaac Wilson, I sell tea."

Francis Symonds, one of the hosts of early times, displayed a wooden bell as a sign, and he informed the people of his good cheer by the following strain:

"Francis Symonds makes and sells  
The best of chocolate; also shells—  
I'll tell you in if you have need  
And feed you well, and bid you speed."



There was a printing office in the building, in which were printed the earliest news letters of the town. One of these, which has been preserved, issued September 27, 1777, contains news of the Revolutionary battle at Stillwater. Among the other works known to have been published here are Amos Pope's *Almanacs*, "A Price current for Wenham," and "An account of the captivity and sufferings of Elizabeth Hanson, wife of John Hanson, who was taken prisoner by the Indians," published in 1780. Mr. Russell, the printer, afterward removed to Boston.

It was at the Bell tavern that the heroine of the novel, "Eliza Wharton, or the Coquette,"—a work almost forgotten, but of great interest to a former generation—spent her last days and gathered about the tragic ending of her unfortunate life a veil of mystery and romance which long gave her a place among the memories of the simple and kindly villagers. Here was the appointed rallying place of the minute-men of the Revolution, and from this corner they started out across the fields on their hurried march to Lexington. Here the regiment commanded by Col. Timothy Pickering halted for refreshment on the way to Bunker Hill. Up to 1815 there were few houses in the immediate vicinity, and the road was separated from the open fields by a low stone wall.

Even on Sundays the inn retained its hospitable appearance, for the farmers from the outskirts of the town dismounted there and walked to the meeting house.

Southwick's tavern, on the Reading road, was also a well-known baiting place in the old days of turnpike and post-roads, and in later years the Essex Coffee House, kept by Benjamin Goodridge, on the corner of Foster Street near the square, was a favorite resort. Oliver Saunders kept a tavern on Main Street, near Washington Street.

Dustin's Hotel, sometimes called the Sun Tavern, from the sign of a blazing sun which formally hung on a post before the door, was built in 1825, on the square, where it still stands. It was occupied as an inn or hotel for about sixty years; at present it is used for stores and other purposes, the post-office building located in a portion of the building.

As time went on, the decaying commerce of Salem made trading journeys to Salem and its vicinity from the interior more rare, and the new era of railroads left the old taverns empty and deserted, and the hostleries were useful only for local convenience. The Bell tavern was taken down about 1849, and a building containing stores was built on the site, which was removed about twenty years ago to make room for an ornamental grass plot. The old South room of the Bell Tavern is still in existence as a dwelling. The Southwick tavern became a private dwelling, and the Essex Coffee House was burned in the great fire of 1843. Other places of refreshment and accommodation for travellers have been built and occupied by the town, but the age of historic taverns has passed away.

**THE POOR.—ALMSHOUSE.**—Throughout the whole town of Danvers, a liberal and enlightened spirit has always been manifested toward the poor, and there is no place where the unfortunate are regarded with more sympathy and kindness.

Previous to 1808, the town owned a building for its poor, with part of the Gardner estate on Central Street. In that year a farm and buildings were procured of Nathaniel Nurse for seven thousand dollars for the use of the poor.

The present Almshouse, built in the South parish in 1814, at a cost of about thirteen thousand dollars, is a commodious and cheerful house, situated in a pleasant farming district. Beside the Poor-House and Hospital, there are over two hundred acres of land belonging to the farm, the value of the whole establishment at the time of the erection of the building being about twenty-four thousand dollars.

Miss D. Dix, of Boston, took a deep interest in promoting the action of the town toward establishing this institution. It has been carefully and humanely conducted, and its inmates find many comforts in their simple life on this quiet farm. It was stated by the orator of the centennial celebration of the town that in fifty years of the history of the poor department of the town, a careful analysis showed that at least three-fourths of those who had received relief at the hands of the town had been brought to that necessity by reason of intemperance, notwithstanding the unremitting efforts of the town to protect its inhabitants, to the extent of the law, from the devastations of this debasing vice.

**THE FEMALE BENEVOLENT SOCIETY.**—During the earlier part of the period in question there were few very poor persons in the parish. In 1814, at a time when there was unusual distress among the poor owing to the high prices of the materials of clothing and the general stagnation of business caused by the war with Great Britain, the Danvers Female Benevolent Society was formed; the first two clauses of its original constitution read as follows:

"Sensible of our obligations to imitate our blessed Saviour, and prompted by a desire to promote the comfort and happiness of the poor, the subscribers have agreed to associate together. The principal object of this association shall be to provide suitable articles of clothing, for those who are unable to provide for themselves."

The Society at once commanded the support of the charitably inclined, and it was enabled at the outset, by means of liberal contributions made to it of second-hand clothing and money, to relieve much of the destitution of that period. Its original members, forty-eight in number, were all connected with the South Church, that being then the only religious organization in the parish. The society has since drawn its forces from all the Protestant societies, and has served as a means of uniting the various denominations in practical Christian work. It is still in vigorous life, and its public meetings and entertainments, while serving to increase its funds for chari-





table purposes, have for many years been a prominent feature of the social life of the place.

Until 1831, the work of the society was confined exclusively to distributing clothing among the poor. Since that time, its means have enabled the managers to make occasional gifts of money to worthy beneficiaries, but its main work continues the same, and throughout all the years of its history, there has been no period of inactivity, but every year has been witness to its clothing the poor and relieving misery and destitution. A careful organization of its methods was long ago effected, and a wise discrimination is shown in its bestowal of charity. It cares mainly for those who would receive aid from no other source, or for such wants as cannot be supplied by the poor department of the town or the funds of the various churches. Its work does not interfere with that of any other organization. For these reasons, it is likely to continue to receive the merited support of the citizens of Peabody.

The society has been favored with several bequests and donations from friends and from members.

**MILITARY COMPANIES.**—Much interest was taken in military matters, and at the time of the War of 1812 there were three companies in Danvers, the Artillery, the Militia company of Infantry and a company of Exempts, composed of volunteers from those exempted from military duty. This last was commanded by the veteran General Foster. The Artillery company was under command of Capt., afterward Col. Jesse Putnam, who lived almost to see the next war, dying in 1860. David Foster was first lieutenant and Benjamin Goodridge second lieutenant. Lewis Allen, afterward a prominent citizen of Peabody, who lived to an advanced age, was one of the youngest of the company. The uniform of the Danvers Artillery consisted of a chapeau bras cap, with a long white plume, tipped with red, a long skirted red coat with white trimmings, white waistcoat, buff breeches, buckled at the knees, and long boots. They each wore a sword in a belt over the shoulder, and each soldier had his hair powdered. As it was then the fashion to wear a queue hanging down over the coat collar, the latter was whitened by the powder. The cut of the coat was such as is represented as worn by officers in the Revolution.

The Militia company of Infantry was commanded at that time by Capt. Daniel Preston. Robert S. Daniels was a lieutenant. The meeting-place of the company in time of alarm was the green,—then really a green,—in front of the Old South Meeting-House.

The Danvers Light Infantry, a military organization of high repute in its time, was organized in 1818, its first officers being Robert S. Daniels, captain; Abner Sanger, lieutenant; Allen Gould, ensign. There were originally forty-eight members, chiefly from the South Parish. The uniform consisted of a blue "swallow-tail" coat, with gold but-

tons, white or buff waistcoat and pantaloons, and a high stiff cap, larger at the top, adorned with gold trimming and a tall plume. At one time, helmets were worn by the company.

The armory of the company was for many years a building standing at the end of Cabbage Lane (now Holten Street), at a point near where Sewall Street now intersects Holten Street.

A spirited representation of an encampment of the Danvers Light Infantry in 1826, on the green in front of the Old South Meeting-House, painted by Gideon Foster, the son of General Foster, was for many years in the possession of Gen. Wm. Sutton, and was presented by his son, Gen. Eben Sutton, to the town. It now hangs in the selectmen's room, in the Town House. This very interesting picture gives an excellent idea of the uniform and individual appearance of the members of the corps, and it contains also the best representation known of the original meeting-house, with its three rows of windows and its western tower and belfry. The district school-house, near the meeting-house, whose position afterward gave rise to some litigation between the society and the town as to the ownership of the land on which it stood, is seen in the painting, and also the Sun Tavern, then recently built, with its sign, and Gardner's Bridge, at the head of the mill-pond. A sight of this picture carries one back to the old days of the town, and helps one to realize the extent of the changes that have been wrought in the physical aspect as well as the social characteristics of the place.

The Danvers Light Infantry continued as an active organization till about 1850.

On the 10th of September, 1862, the past and present members of this veteran company were called together to do escort duty to a company of volunteers for the War of the Rebellion, led by Capt. Robert S. Daniels, Jr., a son of the first captain of the old company. On a very brief notice, over a hundred of the past members gathered together, including sixteen of the original forty-eight. Capt. Robert S. Daniels, the first commander, led the parade, and Gen. Wm. Sutton acted as lieutenant, and other well-known citizens were chosen to fill the various offices. Abner Sanger and Ralph Emerson, of the early officers, rode with the veterans of 1812, and the procession attracted great notice as it passed from the Square to the Eastern Railroad Station in Salem, accompanied by a large number of the citizens, with fire companies and other organizations in line. This was the last appearance of the Danvers Light Infantry, and probably not one of the original members now survives.

**AQUEDUCT WATER.**—The South Parish was one of the earliest communities in the State to enjoy the privileges of water conveyed by aqueduct. The Salem and Danvers Aqueduct Company, incorporated March 9, 1797, with a capital of ten thousand dollars, sup-





plied water from a group of natural springs near Spring Pond. The first primitive reservoir consisted of a large hogshead sunk in the ground, from which wooden logs of three inch bore conducted the water through Danvers to Salem. William Gray, the famous merchant of Salem, was the first president of the company. The operations of the company were gradually extended as the demand for water increased; the wooden logs were replaced by others; in 1834 an iron-pipe was laid, in 1850 a twelve inch iron-pipe was laid directly to Salem, and in 1867 an iron and cement pipe sixteen inches in bore was laid. The reservoir was several times increased, and about 1850 a stone reservoir was built, with a capacity of six hundred and fifty-two thousand gallons. In 1850 a connection was made with Spring Pond, a sheet of water covering fifty-nine acres, and whose surface is about sixty-four feet above mean high-water, and a filtering box was placed in the pond. This pond is fed by natural springs, and is of great depth. The water is very pure; an early analysis of the supply from the springs showed in ten thousand pounds of water only  $\frac{1}{1000}$  of a pound of solid foreign matter, consisting of silicious earth, sulphate of soda and common salt, the salts constituting about one-half of the solid matter. A sample of the water sealed up with a piece of lead for many years did not perceptibly affect the lead, such was its purity and freedom from corrosive qualities. The water of Spring Pond is about equally pure.

The supply proved inadequate to the needs of Salem, and the water from Wenham Lake, introduced in 1869, took the place of the old aqueduct water to a large extent in Salem. In 1873, the town of Peabody bought the aqueduct from the company for one hundred and twenty-five thousand dollars, and the town authorities have since greatly improved the facilities for supply, and have increased the head by the construction of pumping-works and a large tank or stand-pipe on Buxton's Hill, the top of which is one hundred and eighty-four feet above mean high-tide. The cost of the high service was eighty-five thousand dollars, and the town has expended in all on its water-works about two hundred and ninety thousand dollars. By judicious management on the part of the water board, the income from the use of water has more than paid for the cost of maintenance and the interest on the cost of the water-works, while the town has the free use of one hundred and sixty-three hydrants for fire and other purposes. The service is highly efficient, and the quality of water furnished as fine as any in the State.

## CHAPTER LXXIV.

## PEABODY—(Continued).

*South Danvers—The Civil War.*

THE new town of South Danvers began its corporate existence in 1855, with a population of about six thousand, a territory of about fourteen square miles, and with thriving manufacturing interests firmly established. The valuation in 1856 was two million nine hundred and forty-four thousand nine hundred dollars. In spite of the depression of the times before 1860, the town had gained both in valuation and population, the population in 1860 being six thousand five hundred and forty-nine, and the valuation three million six hundred and thirteen thousand four hundred and eight dollars.

There is little of the eventful to chronicle in the history of the town until the time when the fall of Sumter startled the land, and President Lincoln issued his call for seventy-five thousand men for immediate emergencies. Then the old time spirit of patriotism which inspired the Minute men of Lexington and the defenders of Bunker's Hill flamed up with ardent enthusiasm. Forty-two of the citizens of the town started on the first call; nine members of the Salem Zouaves, formerly the Salem Light Infantry, under Capt. Devereux, starting on Thursday morning, April 18th, to join the Eighth Regiment, and ten men in the Mechanic Light Infantry, Capt. Peirson, and twenty-one in the City Guards, Capt. Danforth, including four commissioned officers, setting out on the following Saturday to join the Fifth Regiment, under Col. Lawrence. One South Danvers man enlisted in the New York Fire Zouaves, and one in the First Iowa Regiment. The following are the names of those who responded to this first hurried call as given by the town records;

*Salem Zouaves, Company H, Eighth Regiment.**Privates*

Moses Shackley.	David G. Lake.	Leonard D. Cobb.
Geo. B. Symonds.	Henry Symonds.	Sullivan J. Wiley.
Wm. F. Wiley.	Daniel Bruce, Jr.	Frank Plummer.

*Salem Mechanic Infantry, Company A, Fifth Regiment.*

2d Sergeant, James H. Estes.	2d Corporal, David N. Jeffries.
3d Corporal, John W. Hart.	

*Privates*

Elbridge H. Hildreth.	Dennison T. Moore.	Wm. W. Stiles.
Samuel H. Buxton.	Henry W. Moulton.	Albert J. Crane.
	James Poor, Jr.	

*City Guards, Company H, Fifth Regiment.*

1st Lieutenant, Kirk Stark.	2d Lieutenant, Wm. F. Sumner.
3d Lieutenant, Geo. H. Wiley.	4th Lieutenant, John E. Stone.
2d Corporal, John A. P. Sumner.	

*Privates*

B. Hardy Millett.	David H. Pierce.	John W. Lee.
Wm. F. Guilford.	Oliver Parker.	A. G. Marshall, Jr.
John G. Estes.	George O. Hart.	Henry O. Merrill.
James W. Kelley.	Wm. Tobey.	Samuel Wiley.
Thomas G. Murphy.	Thomas B. Kelley.	S. W. Williams.
	Geo. H. Peart.	



Beside these there were about twenty members of the Salem Cadets and Light Artillery who held themselves in readiness to start at a moment's warning.

On Thursday evening, April 18, a crowded meeting was held in the Town Hall to discuss the events which so profoundly stirred the community, and to adopt measures for raising money to fit out volunteers and to provide for the families of those who left home on such short notice for the defense of their country. The deepest feeling was shown as the speaking progressed, and a subscription paper started at this meeting realized the sum of three thousand dollars. A committee was appointed to consider the expediency of forming a military company in South Danvers, and a report was made at the same meeting recommending the enrolment of two companies, one for immediate service and another to enter upon a course of drill to become a home guard or to enter the Federal service whenever they should be required.

On April 24th a call was issued to the patriotic ladies of South Danvers to meet at the vestry of the old South Church to take measures for making garments for soldiers. Donations were solicited of money, flannel, yarn, etc., old linen and cloth. This was the beginning of the "Ladies' Soldiers' Aid Society," an organization which co-operated with the United States Sanitary Commission and other agencies for relieving the necessities of the soldiers during the whole war, and which, during the war, dispensed over three thousand four hundred dollars in money, besides large contributions of clothing, one hundred blankets and other supplies. The society also conducted one of the tables at the great fair of the Sanitary Commission at Boston in 1863, at which about seven hundred dollars was realized for the cause. Mrs. Henry Cook was for a long time the active and efficient president of the society. The society was disbanded October 11, 1865, after nearly four years and a half of enthusiastic and vigorous effort.

The first legal town meeting on the war was held May 21, 1861, when two thousand dollars was appropriated for the aid of families of soldiers, and a committee was appointed to solicit subscriptions to compensate the members of Captain Bancroft's company for time spent in drilling, many of them being mechanics and workmen dependent on their earnings for support.

The enthusiasm of the times spread among all classes. Drill clubs were organized for instruction in military tactics. In accordance with the recommendation of the town committee, a company called the Foster Guards, under the command of Captain S. C. Bancroft, was enrolled and uniforms and equipments were procured. The company went into camp at Camp King, near Tapley's Brook, on the 29th of June, 1861, and about a fortnight afterward went into the State Regimental Camp at Lynnfield, Camp Schouler, where it became Company B of the Seventeenth Regiment, commanded by Colonel Hinks.

On the 4th of July, 1861, a flag was raised on a new flagstaff in the square. Benjamin Goodridge, who had been an officer of the old Danvers Artillery, assisted by the surviving veterans of the War of 1812, John Price, B. D. Hill and Edward Hammond, raised the flag, and Mr. Goodridge made a brief speech; Hon. A. A. Abbott acted as president, and delivered an eloquent address; and the school children sang a patriotic song, beside music by the band and a glee club. The Foster Guards and some of the fire companies were present, and the scene was one of the most characteristic of the early days of the war.

A considerable number of South Danvers volunteers joined the Essex Cadets, and on July 22d the company marched from camp at Winter Island to South Danvers, where they were entertained by a collation in front of the old South Church, and a sword was presented to Lieutenant F. W. Taggard. The company was mustered into the service the same day, and formed part of the Fourteenth Regiment, which went to the front August 7.

On the 31st of July the Mechanic Infantry and City Guards returned to Salem, and on the next day the Salem Zouaves arrived. A public reception was given to the returning volunteers. The enthusiasm was great, and the bells were rung incessantly for six hours at a stretch, while one hundred and fifty rounds were fired by the Light Artillery during the day.

The drill club of young men, under Captain R. S. Daniels, Jr., began in September to organize for the purpose of forming a company for active service, but this purpose was not carried out till the next year.

A number of South Danvers men enlisted in the summer and fall of 1861 in the Ninth Regiment, and there was a good representation from the town in the Twenty-second, Twenty-third and Twenty-fourth Regiments, while there were South Danvers men in the First, Second, Eleventh, Twelfth, Eighteenth, Nineteenth and in some other organizations, besides enlistments in the Navy.

During the first six months of the war, more than three hundred men enlisted from the town.

At a town meeting held on Friday evening, October 5, 1861, \$5,000 was voted for the relief of those dependent upon the volunteers; \$1,000 was voted to be used in any emergencies where those authorized may think proper, and \$2,500 for the support of the poor.

The *Wizard*, a weekly paper, edited by Fitch Poole, and containing many of his characteristic and humorous sketches, was full of information on war topics, and from time to time published many letters from soldiers.

The work of the Soldiers' Aid Society continued to increase, and the various religious societies organized their forces in further assistance to the cause. The church sewing society were busied with knitting socks for the soldiers, and in one of their consignments of articles was a large number of mittens made by the school children.





The first recorded death of any citizen of the town in the war was that of Daniel Murray, who lost his life in the famous engagement with the Merrimac. He was an officer on board the "Cumberland," was wounded and went down with the ship on the 7th of March, 1862.

On the 1st of July, 1862, President Lincoln issued his call for three hundred thousand men. Enthusiastic war meetings were held in the Town Hall on July 11 and 25. At a special town meeting July 21, 1862, it was voted to give a bounty of \$150 to each man who enlisted as part of the quota of the town. To provide funds for the payment of this bounty, it was decided to borrow \$12,000, and a committee was appointed to obtain a loan on the notes of the town at six per cent. At the adjourned town meeting, July 31, it was announced that Eben Sutton, a citizen of large means and patriotic spirit, was ready to lend the whole amount needed at five and a half per cent. A committee of five from each school district was chosen to co-operate with a committee chosen at a general meeting of citizens in obtaining recruits. The three years' quota of seventy-five men was filled by the last of August.

On the fourth of August the President issued a call for 300,000 men for nine months. War meetings were held in the town on August 24th and 29th. Captain Robert S. Daniels, Jr., announced his readiness to enlist as one of a nine months' South Danvers Company, and other prominent citizens came forward and offered their services, amid the greatest enthusiasm, including one gentleman far beyond the age at which he could be required to serve—Mr. James Perkins.

At a special town meeting held August 25, 1862, a bounty of \$100 was authorized to be paid to each volunteer who should enlist for nine months' service in the company then being recruited by Captain Daniels. At the same meeting the following resolutions were passed:

*"Resolved*, that the Citizens of South Danvers desire once more to pledge their fidelity to the sacred cause of America, and their unshaken determination never to surrender, from efforts to maintain its integrity and perpetuate its blessings; that they will not measure their legal obligations nor pause to inquire whether they have done more or less than their neighbors; but that, like their fathers in Revolutionary days, they will do all they can, to the extent of the means with which God has endowed them, in behalf of the cause of Constitutional government and the salvation of their beloved country.

*"Resolved*, That South Danvers, expressing in her municipal capacity the feelings and wishes of her individual citizens, hereby declares her hearty appreciation of the patriotism of her sons who have enlisted, and are now enlisting, to serve in defence of the Union, and faithfully pledges her fostering care in time of need of the families of her brave soldiers, and her lively gratitude for the services and her blessings upon the lives of those who, in serving their country in the hour of danger, confer enduring honor upon their native or adopted town; their names will illumine her annals and be handed down in affectionate remembrance to future generations."

Among the volunteers in Captain Daniels' company were two of the school teachers of the town, Mr. Wm. L. Thompson, of the Peabody High School, and Mr. Geo. F. Barnes, of the Bowditch School. In April,

1863, there were said to be thirty-two members and two teachers of the High School in the service.

One hundred and one of Captain Daniels' company were from South Danvers, and the town took the deepest interest in the company, which included in its ranks many representatives of the most esteemed families of the place, some of whom had made great sacrifices to go, giving up honorable and lucrative positions or business connections.

On the 10th of September, 1862, the company went into camp at Wenham, and it was escorted by a grand parade of the people of the town, among which marched the surviving members of the old Danvers Light Infantry, organized in 1818, Robert S. Daniels, the father of the captain of the new volunteer company, being captain of the old company. Five companies in uniform were in the procession, and the pupils of the schools whose teachers had enlisted marched or rode in line. A carriage bore the three Dartmoor prisoners, and Abner Sanger, the venerable abolitionist, and Ralph Emerson rode with these veterans of 1812. The old Danvers Light Infantry attracted great attention on the march to the depot in Salem. The new company was enrolled as Company C, of the new fifth regiment.

The battle of Antietam was of great interest to the town's people, as two of their townsmen were killed and three wounded at that engagement.

For some months, although the interest in the war was unabated, there was a remission of the activity in enlistments and patriotic meetings. At the draft, on the 10th of July, 1863, at Salem, 109 names of South Danvers men were drawn; of these 69 were exempted, 21 furnished substitutes, 12 paid the fine of \$300, and only 7 actually entered the service.

A great war meeting was held on October 28, 1863, to promote enlistments under the call for three hundred thousand men issued October 17. On October 17 the South Danvers Union League was formed. Other war meetings were held on December 1, December 3 and December 28, and on January 4, 1864, at which time fifty-four men had responded to the last call. On February 1, 1864, a new call for two hundred thousand men was issued, and renewed efforts were made to induce enlistments which resulted in filling the quota of the town. In spite of the large number of men already sent and the continued drain on the resources of the town, every call for men was met with a manly and determined spirit; the call for five hundred thousand men July 18, 1864, was responded to by the enlistment of one hundred and thirty-eight men, a surplus of forty-nine, and for the whole war the town had a surplus over its quota. The following statement from a table compiled by Amos Merrill, Esq., from official sources, gives the statistics of enlistments. The method of computation of quotas and surplus was by reducing all enlistments to the basis of three years, one man for three years counting as three men for one year.



Statement showing the number of men furnished by the town of South Danvers from April 16, 1861, to April 30, 1865.

Previous to the draft of July 10, 1863, the following enlistments were made to the credit of South Danvers:

Fifth Regiment (three months).....	28
Eighth Regiment (three months).....	12
First Iowa Regiment (three months).....	1
New York Fire Zouaves (three months).....	1
Total.....	42
Salem Cadets at Fort Warren (six months).....	13
Seventh Regiment, Co. B (six months).....	3
Total.....	16

#### THREE YEARS' MEN.

First Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers.....	5
Second Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers.....	5
Ninth Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers.....	29
Eleventh Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers.....	2
Twelfth Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers.....	3
Fourteenth Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers.....	58
Seventeenth Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers.....	55
Nineteenth Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers.....	48
Twenty-second Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers.....	9
Twenty-third Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers.....	34
Twenty-fourth Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers.....	21
Twenty-eighth Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers.....	2
Thirtieth Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers.....	1
Thirty-first Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers.....	2
Thirty-eighth Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers.....	1
Thirty-ninth Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers.....	45
Fortieth Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers.....	11
Saunders' Sharpshooters.....	7
Wentworth's Sharpshooters.....	7
First Battalion.....	2
Second Maine.....	2
Fourth Maine.....	2
Fourth Battery.....	7
Fifth Battery.....	1
Tenth Battery.....	1
Total.....	390
Fifth Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers (nine months).....	28

#### Product of draft of July 10, 1863:—

Served in person.....	7
Furnished substitutes.....	21
Paid commutation fee.....	12
Total.....	40
One hundred days' men furnished.....	38

Quota of March 14, 1864, for seven hundred thousand men, including calls of October 17, 1863, and February 1, 1864, amounted to one hundred and fifty-two:

Credit product of draft of July 10, 1863.....	40
Credit Naval Enlistments.....	11
Credit Re-enlistments of Veterans.....	36
Credit New Enlistments Army.....	63
Credit product of draft of May 10, 1864.....	3
Less surplus carried forward.....	153
Total.....	152
Quota of July 18, 1864, for five hundred thousand men.....	92
Less error on former call at State House corrected.....	3
Total.....	89
Credit surplus on former call of March 14.....	1
Credit substitutes furnished by enrolled men.....	7
Credit Enlistments in July, Army.....	50

Credit Enlistments in July, Navy.....	2
Credit Enlistments in August, Army.....	21
Credit Enlistments in August, Navy.....	3
Credit Enlistments in September, Army.....	2
Credit Enlistments in October, Army.....	3
Credit Enlistments in November, Army.....	12
Credit Enlistments in December, Army.....	4
Appointed at { Naval claims.....	3
the State House, { Allowance for Navy at large.....	30
Total.....	135
Deduct Quota.....	89
Surplus.....	49

By reducing the above one hundred and thirty-eight men to three years of service for each man, and adding thereto the town's proportion on call of December 19, 1864, for three hundred thousand men, the above surplus was extinguished, and a quota assigned of eight (8) men.

Quota under call of Dec. 19, 1864.....	8
Credit Enlistments in January, 1865.....	3
Credit Enlistments in February, 1865.....	7
Credit Enlistments in March, 1865.....	1
Credit Enlistments in April, 1865.....	2
Total.....	13

Surplus April 30, 1865, in number of men.....	5
Years of service of the thirteen men, viz., five for three years and eight for one year, [reduced to three years of service].....	77 1/2

#### SUMMARY STATEMENT OF MEN FURNISHED.

Under call of March 14, 1864, including product of draft of July 10, 1863, viz., forty men.....	152
Under call of July 18, 1864, including thirty men, the town's proportion of navy at large apportioned at State House.....	138
Under call of December 19, 1864.....	13
Total.....	303
Three years' men furnished prior to draft of July 10, 1863.....	390
Number of one and three years' men furnished, including product of draft of 1864, and 30 men navy at large apportioned at the State House.....	693

Nine months' men furnished.....	88
Six " " ".....	16
Three " " ".....	42
100 days' " " ".....	38
Total.....	877

TABLE SHOWING THE NUMBER OF MEN FURNISHED AND THE AMOUNT OF BOUNTY PAID UNDER EACH CALL.

Date of Call	Enrolled by the town	Enrolled by the State	Enrolled by the Navy	Total amount of bounty paid	Total number of men furnished	Enrolled for 3 yrs.	Enrolled for 1 yr.	Enrolled for 6 mos.	Enrolled for 100 days
April 16, 1861.					42				42
May 3, 1861.									
June 17, 1861.					314	314			
May 28, 1862.									
July 14, 1862.	\$10,950			\$10,950	73	73			
August 4, 1862.	8,800			8,800	88				88
October 17, 1863.									
February 1, 1864.	1,155			1,155	109	109			
March 14, 1864.	11,227	\$19,130		30,357	165	77	1	27	
July 18, 1864.	1,625	150		1,775	13				
December 19, 1864.									
	\$33,755	\$19,280		\$53,035	744				

The above table does not include the following:

Product of draft of July 10, 1863.....	40
Products of draft of May 13, 1864.....	3
Naval apportionment under the call of July 18, 1864.....	33
Six months' men.....	16
100 days' men.....	38
Total.....	130

<sup>1</sup> Including amount paid by enrolled men not drafted, for substitutes.





Adding this number to the total of the table, there is a discrepancy of only three men between the table and the statement above given. The irregularities of enrolment during the earliest months of the war make it extremely difficult to arrive at entire exactness in these statistics.

The following list contains the names of the citizens of the town who died in the war, as contained in the marble tablets at the entrance of the Town Hall, which were headed with the inscription :

"In commemoration of the patriotic services of the citizens of this Town who died in defence of the Liberties of their Country in the Great Rebellion."

AGE		AGE	
Capt Samuel Brown (Jr.).....	26	Daniel Murray.....	36
Lieut Charles B. Warner.....	27	George W. Nash.....	38
Orlando E. Alley.....	29	Theron P. Newhall.....	39
Robert Andrews.....	30	Paul Osborn.....	25
William Andrews.....	24	Oliver Parker.....	23
Sampson W. Bowers.....	49	George H. Peabody.....	19
Levett S. Boynton.....	25	James Powers.....	25
John W. Boynton.....	21	John Price.....	31
James H. Bryant.....	18	Jonathan Proctor.....	51
Philip O. Buxton.....	20	Leonard Reed.....	42
Thomas Buxton.....	36	Richard H. Roome.....	19
James Byrne.....	39	Patrick Scamell.....	18
Lewis P. Clark.....	42	Moses Shackley.....	21
John Costello.....	22	Albert Shepard.....	30
James Crowley.....	34	William H. Short.....	22
Henry H. Deane.....	25	Donald Stillers.....	41
John P. Dodge.....	31	William Siders.....	29
Thomas Campsey.....	29	Charles H. Sawyer.....	23
Jeremiah Donovon.....	15	Benjamin A. Stone.....	29
John Fitzgibbon.....	22	John Smith.....	18
Alfred Friend.....	32	John Stott.....	30
Frank Gardner.....	22	Horace C. Straw.....	44
John K. Gibbs.....	30	Terrence Thomas.....	20
Luke Gilman.....	26	Charles W. Trask.....	25
Austin A. Herrick.....	24	George H. Tucker.....	32
Joseph S. Ingalls.....	37	Peter Twiss.....	31
Eben N. Johnson.....	24	Joshua Vety.....	33
Horace Manning.....	44	Caleb A. Webster.....	24
John Manning.....	26	Fredrick Wreden.....	15
Joseph B. Maxwell.....	25	William J. White.....	32
Gregory T. Merrill.....	35	George C. Whitney.....	26
Tyler Mudge.....	35	Samuel Wiley.....	22
David Murphy.....	23	Charles M. Woodbury.....	22
Jeremiah Murphy.....	26	Charles C. Woodman.....	29
Andrew D. Murray.....	21	Henry Parker.....	29
		Alfred Hopkirk.....	24

## CHAPTER LXXV.

### PEABODY—(Continued).

#### *The Town of Peabody.*

At the close of the war the population of the town had diminished from that of 1860, and was six thousand and fifty.

The valuation was \$2,819,766. Manufacturing had been carried on in most of the branches in which the town is active; the times of business activity succeeding the war, largely increased the volume of manufactures.

In 1868, by an act of the Legislature, passed April 13, the name of the town was changed from South Danvers to Peabody, in honor of George Peabody, who had given so largely to the town for library and educational objects. The change was not without some opposition, and was not at the expressed desire of Mr. Peabody; but twenty years of customary use have familiarized all with the change, and it certainly serves to give prominence to the name of the town's benefactor, and at the same time to make the locality known to some who have known Mr. Peabody as a benefactor of other cities and regions.

The leather industry continued to be the largest department of manufacturing, and many of the tanners and curriers lost heavily, as a result of the great fire in the business district of Boston, November 10, 1872. The blow was a severe one to some of the oldest and strongest firms, but most of the manufacturers rallied from its effects, and continued to operate the tanyards and carrying shops. A large amount of leather is produced yearly, including calf skins, kip and grain leather, harness leather and sole leather. The manufacture of morocco and sheep skins is also of considerable importance.

The following statistics from the census of 1880 give the condition of the productive industries of the town at that time. There has probably been an increase in most of the manufactures since that time, and some wholly new manufactures, among which is a metallic thermometer-factory employing twenty-one workmen, have been established since that census was taken.

	No. of establishments	Persons employed	Capital	Value of product
Boots and shoes.....	2	31	\$9,000	\$32,000
Building.....	3	28	25,000	100,000
Carriages and wagons.....	2	20	27,000	40,350
Clothing.....	1	1	200	12,000
Corks.....	1	22	6,000	18,309
Food preparations.....	1	5	1,100	5,000
Glue.....	2	70	125,000	99,200
Grease and Tallow.....	1	5	4,000	14,700
Leather.....	29	768	638,570	3,042,387
Machines and machinery.....	2	13	9,000	3,000
Metals and metallic goods.....	3	6	3,800	8,800
Printing and publishing.....	2	10	6,500	12,564
Printing, dyeing and bleaching.....	1	196	200,000	800,000
Soap and candles.....	1	12	6,000	37,434
Tobacco.....	2	8	2,700	6,760
Totals.....	54	1,195	1,063,670	4,268,344

There were, in 1880, three hundred and forty-three persons engaged in agricultural pursuits, and the value of agricultural products was one hundred and twenty-one thousand four hundred and fifty-seven dollars.

The valuation of Peabody in 1887 was :—

Personal estate.....	\$2,685,800
Real estate.....	4,501,050
Total.....	7,186,900

The town of Peabody has continued the process of development begun half a century ago, and has be-





come distinctively a manufacturing town. Large numbers of operatives, many of them of foreign birth, labor in the various factories, and the dwellings and buildings of the principal village extend constantly over a larger area. Many of the heads of families are occupied during the day in Boston, the facilities of railroad communication making the town a convenient place of residence for such as do not wish or cannot afford to live in the city. There have been many changes in social affairs, some of the families whose names are identified with the earlier history of the town having removed from it, while others have come in and brought elements of energy and business success. The general aspect of the town is suggestive of a thriving, active and successful business community, with many evidences of cultivated taste and judgment in the dwellings on the principal streets, and manifestations of an enlightened public spirit seen in excellent streets, commodious and well kept public buildings and school-houses, a thoroughly equipped fire department, and effective police regulations.

The town has continued to take deep interest in educational matters, and has spared nothing to bring its schools to a high standard. Within the last twenty-five years, large sums of money have been expended in building new school-houses, the Peabody High School has been furnished with largely increased facilities, now occupying the whole of the building formerly used in part as a town-house, and the number of schools and teachers has been increased from time to time as the needs of the growing community have demanded. The town maintains a high reputation for the general efficiency of its school system.

The spirit of temperance reform, so early welcomed by the old town of Danvers, has been faithfully cherished. With the large increase of operatives, the liquor sellers were enabled to extend their pernicious social and political influence; but by the vigorous and unrelenting efforts of the friends of temperance, public opinion has been kept upon an enlightened plane, and a steady resistance has been made to the inroads of intemperance. The various temperance organizations and movements for temperance reform have received warm and effective support from the churches and from individuals. At one time the liquor sellers appeared to be gaining in strength, and a large number of saloons some of them of large extent and notorious in character, were maintained to the great injury of the town, and with the result of placing large political influence in the hands of the leading liquor-sellers, and making the liquor party an offensive element in town affairs, and a serious menace to the welfare of the community. To check this evil, a Law and Order League was organized in Peabody in 1884, which received the support of the best citizens of all shades of opinion on temperance matters, and after a vigorous campaign the new organization

succeeded by the use of conservative methods, which received the approval of the community, in effectually checking the violation of the law.

Among the temperance organizations in the town are the Father Matthew Catholic Total Abstinence Society, instituted March 3, 1881; the St. John's Catholic Total Abstinence Society, instituted March 3, 1882; the Women's Christian Temperance Union, formed December 10, 1875, and the Young Women's Christian Temperance Union, formed April 19, 1886.

There have been two extensive strikes among the men employed in the manufacture of leather in the town; one in 1863, and another, lasting several months, in 1886. The relations between labor and capital seem to be well established at the present time.

In 1881 a soldiers' monument costing eight thousand dollars, was erected in the square. It is a substantial design of white granite, containing tablets inscribed with the names of the citizens of the town who died in the war, above which a circular shaft supports a figure of heroic size.

Shortly before the town of South Danvers was incorporated, a Town House was built on Stevens Street, the upper story being used for High School rooms. The hall became entirely inadequate for the purposes for which it was designed, and the town offices were greatly cramped for room. In 1882 a new Town House was begun on land purchased for the purpose on the corner of Lowell and Chestnut Streets. It was finished in 1883, at a cost of one hundred and eight thousand dollars. It is a substantial building of brick and granite, with convenient and ample offices for the town officials; the lower hall, for ordinary municipal gatherings, accommodates five hundred and twenty, and the large hall, one of the finest auditoriums in the county, seats fifteen hundred persons. A police station and justice's court-room are located in the basement.

REPRESENTATIVES AND TOWN OFFICERS.—By the act of incorporation of South Danvers, the new town was to remain a part of Danvers for the purpose of electing State officers, Senators and Representatives to General Court, Representatives to Congress and Electors of President and Vice-President of the United States, until the next decennial census should be taken, or until another apportionment of Representatives to the General Court should be made. A new apportionment was made in 1857, and in that year the first election for State and Federal officers was held in South Danvers.

The following is a list of the Representatives to the General Court from South Danvers and Peabody:

Richard Smith.....	1857	Robert S. Daniels.....	1868-70
John S. Poor.....	1858	Charles V. Hanson.....	1871-72
John V. Stevens.....	1859-60	Stephen F. Blaney.....	1873-74
D. Webster King.....	1861	James E. T. Bartlett.....	1875-77
William H. Little.....	1862-63	Henry Wardwell.....	1878
Caleb Warren Osborn.....	1864-65	Edward Trask.....	1879
Capt. John W. Stevens.....	1866-67	Henry Wardwell.....	1880



John Pinder.....	1881	William H. Brown.....	1881
Aaron F. Clark.....	1882-83	Cyrus T. Batchelder.....	1882-86

The following are lists of some of the principal town officers of South Danvers and Peabody since the incorporation of the town, those marked with an asterisk (\*) still holding office:

## SELECTMEN.

Lewis Allen.....	1857-59	Geo. W. Taylor.....	1876-78
Nathan H. Poor*.....	1859-62, 71	Charles I. Goodrich.....	1876
Daniel Taylor.....	1859-68	Lynnan Osborn.....	1879
Kendall Osborn.....	1867, 70	Otis Brown.....	1880
William Wolcott.....	1868-69	St. Aug. Southwick.....	1881-86
Miles O. Stanley.....	1869-72	John L. Herrick.....	1881-86
John C. Burbeck.....	1871, 67-68	Walter B. Richardson.....	1881
Joseph Peck.....	1869-70	Thomas J. Reilhan.....	1882-86
Alpheus W. Bancroft.....	1870-71	Willard Spaulding.....	1886
Dana Woodbury.....	1880-86	Charles H. Gooding*.....	1887
Geo. F. Sanger.....	1865, 73-75	Albert A. Mosser*.....	1887
Amos Merrill.....	1866, 69-71	Philip H. Coleman*.....	1887
Jas. B. Foster.....	1867-71	Watson A. Galemana*.....	1887
Levi Preston.....	1870-85		

## ASSESSORS.

Same as selectmen through.....	1885	John C. Herrick.....	1888
Willard Spaulding*.....	1886	Thos. H. Jackman*.....	1887
Lynnan Osborn*.....	1886	Alonzo Redden*.....	1887
Nathan H. Poor.....	1886	Nicholas M. Quant*.....	1887
Thos. J. Reilhan.....	1886		

## TOWN CLERK.

Nathan H. Poor*.....	1865
----------------------	------

## TREASURERS.

Francis Baker.....	1857-76	Nathan H. Poor*.....	1871
--------------------	---------	----------------------	------

## COLLECTORS.

Wm. Wolcott.....	1857-77	Levi Preston.....	1878-86
Lynnan Osborn*.....	1886		

## OVERSEERS OF THE POOR.

Wingate Merrill.....	1855-61, 70-75	Alpheus W. Bancroft.....	1866-80
Henry A. Hardy.....	1855-58	Amos Osborn, 2d.....	1869-74
James P. King*.....	1856	John S. Wolcott.....	1875
Wm. Sutton.....	1859	Caleb F. Winchester.....	1876
Moses A. Shackley.....	1860	Samuel Swett.....	1877-78
Stephen Blaney.....	1861-62, 76	Geo. F. Sanger*.....	1879
Mayhew S. Clark.....	1863, 76	James Fallon*.....	1881
Alexander Galemana.....	1884		

**SOCIETIES AND ORGANIZATIONS.**—There are many organizations now existing for social improvement, and for mutual care and protection of members.

The *Hollen Lodge of Odd Fellows*, originally instituted in January, 1846, was reconstituted February 22, 1878, and is now a flourishing and important lodge.

The *Exchange News Room*, instituted in 1855, and the *Essex Club*, instituted in 1860, are social clubs.

Among the societies for mutual insurance and benefit, are the *American Legion of Honor*, Fitch Poole Commandery, founded 1881; the *Peabody Mutual Benefit Association*, founded 1880; the *Improved Order of Red Men*, Masonomas Tribe No. 11, founded 1886; the *Massachusetts Catholic Order of Foresters*, Emerald Court No. 53, founded 1883; the *Equitable Aid Union*, founded 1879; the *Ancient Order of United Workmen*, George Peabody Lodge, No. 18, organized 1879.

The *Peabody Woman's Suffrage Club* was organized in 1879.

The *American Hibernian Benevolent Association* was organized in 1858, and reorganized in 1871.

The *West Peabody Farmer's Club* was instituted in 1881.

Among the literary and dramatic associations are the *Brookside Club*, connected with the South society, the *Peabody Dramatic Club*, and the *Cushing Debating Society*.

**NEWSPAPERS.**—In 1859 *The Wizard*, a weekly newspaper edited by Fitch Poole, was established. Mr. Poole continued to be editor only for a few years. In 1869 the name was changed to "The Peabody Press." It was at first a folio sheet, but since 1877 has been an eight page paper.

The *Peabody Reporter*, originally published in 1876, and then wholly printed out of town, was printed partly in town about 1879, under the management of Mr. Thomas McGrath. Under its present management, the paper is wholly printed in town, and contains generally two pages of original matter.

The rivalry between these two principal papers is probably for the benefit of the community, as each is incited to continually renewed enterprise and plans of improvement.

**FIRE DEPARTMENT.**—The first fire-engine in South Danvers was one of two purchased by the town of Danvers about 1800. It was kept at Eagle Corner, by the Bell Tavern. In 1822 the "Niagara" was bought, and it was kept in an engine-house on Main Street, where Sutton's Block is now located. In 1830 a Fire Department was organized in the town by legislative act, and the "Torrent" was bought. It was at first kept near the square, on Central Street; afterward at Wilson's corner. The "Torrent" was the first suction engine in town. In 1836 the "Eagle" was purchased, and it was kept at the same place as the "Niagara." In 1844, the year after the great fire, the "General Foster" was purchased; it was kept at first near the location of the present steam fire-engine house on Lowell Street, and afterward on Washington Street. Shortly afterward the "Volunteer" was bought, and kept at first on the corner of Main and Grove Streets, and afterward on Pierpont Street. The "Volunteer" was originally the private property of General William Sutton, and was manned by a private company.

At the separation of South Danvers in 1855, the fire engines which the new town owned were the Niagara, No. 1; the General Foster, No. 2; the Torrent, No. 3; the Volunteer, No. 4; and the Eagle, No. 5. These were all hand engines, and with the hose carriages belonging with them, a sail carriage, and with five hydrants connected with the Salem and Danvers Aqueduct, and a number of reservoirs and pumps, constituted the resources of the town in case of fire. The "Niagara" was placed in the western part of the town.





In 1865 the first steam fire engine was bought; it was a Button engine, and cost three thousand five hundred dollars.

In 1874 another steamer was bought, and both were placed in a new engine-house, near the Square on Lowell Street, built the same year. It was a Button engine.

In 1876 a new hand engine, the S. C. Bancroft, was bought for South Peabody; it was also a Button machine.

In 1882 the organization of the fire department was changed; the increased head given to the water by the building of the stand-pipe made it possible to use the hydrants in many cases without an engine, and the old hand engine companies were organized as hose companies, occupying the same locations as the former companies. In 1887 a new steamer was bought from the La France Fire Engine Company.

The chief engineers have been as follows:—

Stephen Osbome, Jr.	1855
John V. Stevens	1856-57, 59
Jonathan E. Osbome	1858
Wm. H. Little	1860-67
Geo. C. Pierce	1868-70
D. S. Littlefield	1871-85
Wm. J. Roscoe	1886
John H. Tibbatts	1886
Samuel Buxton	1886
Daniel B. Lamb	1887

**BURIAL GROUNDS.**—The oldest burial ground in the South parish was Gardner's Hill, which was situated a little west of Grove Street. The remains of about one hundred and fifty persons were removed from thence to Harmony Grove, when the latter was established. Among the stones removed at that time is the oldest grave stone in Danvers. It bears the inscription:

1669.

R. B.

It is probably the grave stone of Robert Buffum.

The old burying ground, or Old South burying ground, is on Poole's Hill, next to the Salem boundary. It was originally given by Lydia Trask, to the South Parish. The oldest stone, that of Thomas Pierpont, M.A., bears date of 1755. It contains a very large number of graves, including those of Rev. Nathan Holt, buried in 1792, and Rev. Samuel Walker, in 1826. Dennison Wallis is also buried here; and for many years the sentimental pilgrim visited the place to view the last resting-place of Eliza Wharton, the heroine of the famous old time novel, "The Coquette."

The Friends' burial ground, nearly opposite the old burying ground, was in Salem until the change of boundary. It took the place of a half acre of land on the "mill plain," acquired in 1713, and was obtained some years later.

Monumental Cemetery, on Wallis Street, was laid

out in 1833. It is divided into one hundred and twenty-two lots, thirty-two feet by sixteen, with regular avenues, and is owned by proprietors. The oldest stone, removed from another place, bears the date of 1895. The grave of Schoolmaster Benjamin Gile, above which is inscribed "I taught little children to read," is one of the most noteworthy of the early interments. The cemetery is well kept, and contains many fine stones and monuments.

Harmony Grove Cemetery, though now in Salem, is largely owned in Peabody. It was purchased in 1839, for about six thousand dollars, and then contained thirty-five acres. It has since been considerably enlarged. The proprietors were incorporated in 1840. Its extensive grounds are finely kept, and it contains a great variety of monumental stones, some of them exceedingly artistic and impressive.

Emerson Cemetery, in South Peabody, on the corner of Washington Street and Allen's Lane, has been in use about fifty years.

Cedar Grove Cemetery, in South Peabody, contains one hundred and thirty-three acres. It was purchased by the town in March, 1869, when five thousand dollars was appropriated for the purpose. It is held for the town by seven trustees, chosen for five years. Lots are sold to individuals, and the grounds have been greatly improved, and the location is fine. It is reached by a road from Lynn Street.

Oak Grove Cemetery, in West Peabody, near the school-house, contains about ten acres. It was bought in 1886, by the town, and is held by a board of trustees similarly constituted to that of Cedar Grove Cemetery.

There are many private burial grounds in the town, some of them of a very early date. The King family have a cemetery of this kind on Lowell Street, which contains a number of finely built tombs.

#### RELIGIOUS SOCIETIES.

**SOUTH PARISH (SECOND CONGREGATIONAL CHURCH).**—The early history of the "Middle Precinct" has been embodied in another part of this historical sketch.

The Rev. Benjamin Prescott, a graduate of Harvard College in the class of 1709, was settled as the first minister of the parish in February, 1712, at a salary of £80 "in Province bills or in silver money as it passes from man to man so long as he continues to be our minister." Afterward it was agreed to give him one-half of the money contributed by strangers. In consideration of repeated deaths and extraordinary changes in Mr. Prescott's family, his salary was increased £20 in 1723. Besides his regular salary and the "strangers money" he was allowed all the proceeds of voluntary quarterly contributions.

About 1727, there began to be difficulty between Mr. Prescott and the parish on account of his salary. The growing depreciation of the paper currency of

<sup>1</sup> Removed from town during the year.



the province made the sum given him less and less adequate to his needs. From time to time an increase of salary was voted him, but the increase was hardly sufficient to keep pace with the deterioration of the paper money, and, moreover, even the payments voted him seem to have been always in arrears. In 1735 his salary was increased to £150, and in 1738 it became £200, old tenor. In 1741 it was voted to cart for Mr. Prescott twenty-five cords of firewood for his year's use from Hart's farm or nearer, "Mr. Prescott finding the wood ready cut." It would seem that the carting was the larger part of the expense of firewood in those days, for this act of the parish, continued for several years, is spoken of as "finding Mr. Prescott's firewood."

In 1742 he was voted £240, old tenor, and in 1743 £270; these sums did not represent more than the original salary granted him.

The long controversy with Mr. Prescott, extending over more than twenty-five years, is interesting chiefly as showing the different and more lasting nature of the tie that bound together pastor and people in those days. It seems to be assumed throughout all this unfortunate affair that the relation was one which was made for life, and which was so far mutual that it could not be broken except by consent of both parties.

In 1747 the parish upon the question whether they would dismiss Mr. Prescott if he would not give the parish a discharge, voted no. In 1748 they increased his salary to £500 old tenor, and in 1749 to £640 old tenor.

In September, 1749, Mr. Prescott addressed a letter to his parish, in which he sets forth the loss that he has suffered by his payments falling short in value of the original grant to him, and offers to accept two-thirds of the actual amount found due to him since 1727 in full satisfaction. If this offer should be accepted, he goes on to say "it shall be in your Power (when you please) to call or settle another minister of sound knowledge and a good Life among you, and the Day his Salary shall begin, mine shall cease, and upon your Discharging me of my Obligation to Minister to you in holy things, I will discharge you of all Obligations thenceforward to Minister any thing to me for my support." This language clearly shows what his view of the pastoral relation was. This offer was declined, and three men were deputed to treat with Mr. Prescott; but negotiations failed, and in 1750 he brought a law-suit against the parish for his arrears. The parish met and appropriated £20 to defend the suit. This suit appears to have been dropped, and a new one was begun in December, 1751, which came to trial in September, 1752, and resulted in a judgment for Mr. Prescott in the sum of £594 19s. 9d. At a meeting in December an effort was made to induce Mr. Prescott to settle for a less sum, without success; and it was voted to pay Mr. Prescott no salary and to dismiss him. Up to this time the

parish had regularly voted a salary to the pastor every year. In January, 1752-53, they voted him his salary for the past year, and in accordance with the order of court they proceeded to tax the parish for the large amount of the judgment against it. But it was not easy to make up the amount; Mr. Prescott still insisted on performing the duties of the ministry, and in 1754 they tried to settle with him for £100, which he refused.

In December, 1752, Mr. Prescott made an offer on condition of a satisfactory settlement for the years 1749-51, to leave the pulpit for three months, and if in that time a minister was settled, he would relinquish his pastorate. "Tho," as he says, "Quitting my ministry over you is not so light a matter in my understanding as perhaps it may be in some of yours." This offer was renewed in March, 1754, and accepted.

In July, 1754, a call was given to Rev. Aaron Putnam to settle over the parish, but he declined, probably on account of the difficulties prevailing. In September another attempt was made—this time by the parish—to arbitrate the matter, but without success. Mr. Prescott still continued as minister, until in September, 1756, an ecclesiastical council considered the whole matter, and decided that the parish ought to pay Mr. Prescott £405, besides, as Hanson says, the costs of the council, amounting to £118, 14s. The parish voted to accept the advice of the council, provided Mr. Prescott would immediately ask a dismission from his pastoral office of the church and the council, and give a full discharge. But the money was not forthcoming, and it was not till November, 1756, that Mr. Prescott, on receiving a bond for the balance due him, signed by six of the responsible men of the parish, finally discharged the parish and ceased to be its pastor. Agreeably to the advice of the council, he was excused from all parish dues for life.

So ended this unhappy controversy, which greatly hindered the Christian work of the parish for a long time, and gave rise to much bitterness of feeling.

Mr. Prescott, who was born September 16, 1687, married, as his first wife, in 1715, Elizabeth, daughter of John Higginson. His second wife, married in 1732, was Mercy Gibbs, and his third wife, married in 1748, was Mary, sister of Sir William Pepperell, who built a house for Mr. Prescott. He lived on the road to the village (now Central Street), near Elm Street. He was a man of ability, and faithful and conscientious in the performance of his pastoral duties. Among other pamphlets, he published a "Letter to the First Church in Salem in 1735, and 'Right Hand of Fellowship,' delivered at the ordination of Rev. J. Sparhawk, in 1736. In 1768, at the age of eighty-one, he published "A free and calm consideration of the unhappy misunderstanding and debates between Great Britain and the American colonies." He died May 28, 1777.

The Rev. Josiah Stearns was called as pastor in the fall of 1757, by the church on September 27th, and





the society on October 18th. He was offered £80 in lawful money, a parsonage with land and barn. He desired more, and finally declined.

On August 4, 1758, the church called the Rev. Nathan Holt as pastor, which was concurred in by the parish, on the 13th. He was offered a salary of £80 and a settlement of £150, payable £50 a year for the first three years; also a house and garden. He was ordained January 3, 1759.

There is no record of any difficulty with Mr. Holt, who was greatly beloved, and was prominent for his patriotism during the Revolution.

In June, 1763, it was voted "that there be two seats on the easterly side of y<sup>e</sup> broad ally in the meeting-house be sett apart for a Number of persons to sett in for the better accommodating singing in y<sup>e</sup> Meeting-house, and that the same be under the regulation of the Parish Committee from time to time as there shall be occasion for carrying on that part of divine service." In October, 1765, the singers were given a place in the front gallery. In May, 1784, the front seat in the women's gallery, on the eastern end of the house, was given to the singers.

In 1764 some difference arose between the North and South Parishes in reference to the inhabitants of New Mills, who wished to be set off to the North Parish. The Legislature decided that the boundary of the Village Parish established in 1700 must be adhered to. This left the New Mills in the South Parish. Some of the inhabitants of New Mills petitioned the South Parish to be set off, but their petition was refused, "because we think y<sup>e</sup> North Parish is as able, if not abler, to maintain their minister without said petitioner's assistance, as we are in y<sup>e</sup> South Parish with s<sup>d</sup> Petitioners' assistance, Because we have a considerable Number of the People called Quakers, some Churchmen and some Baptists, &c."

In 1764 certain members of the parish were authorized to increase the size of the house lengthwise, in order to make more room for floor pews. In April, 1771, John Procter, Jr., Robt. Shillaber and others were authorized to widen the house fifteen feet, by moving out the back side, "the wall pews to be wall pews still." The persons who made the addition were to have the additional floor space for pews. The increased width added three seats on each side to the galleries.

The bell was originally hung in a "turret" or cupola, probably like that of the Village meeting-house, on the middle of the building. In 1763 some effort was made to have a steeple built; and in 1774 a steeple, or rather tower, was built on the western end of the house; it was a tall square tower with a belfry roof. The house as finally enlarged had three rows of windows; it was placed with the length running nearly east and west, on the ground in front of the present location of the South Church in Peabody; there were two doors on the southern side, near together. The general arrangement of the interior

was preserved in a similar manner to that of the original house.

The parish was very zealous in sustaining the Revolutionary War, constantly furnishing men and money. In 1777 a bounty of £20 per man was paid to those serving in the quota of the parish, and £1200 was raised. In 1778 about £400 was raised, and in 1779 £8000. These last sums were probably in paper currency.

In 1780, a suit of clothes, consisting of "coat, jacket, breeches and hat" was given to Mr. Holt to make up the deficiency of his support.

In 1790 three pews were added to the house, and a part of the meeting-house land was let to the "Proprietors of the duck manufacture." The Artillery Company had leave in September, 1791, to erect a gun-house on land belonging to the parish.

Mr. Holt died August 2, 1792, and the parish voted to continue his salary to the end of the year for the benefit of his family, besides assuming the expenses of his sickness and funeral.

In March, 1793, the house was thoroughly repaired, September 28, 1793, the old parish was dissolved, and the society was incorporated by the Legislature as "The Proprietors of the South Meeting-House in Danvers."

Rev. Samuel Mead was settled as pastor October 31, 1794, and continued till 1803. In August, 1805, Rev. Samuel Walker was settled as minister. He labored in his pastorate for twenty-one years, and died July 7, 1826, after a painful illness of three months. He was interested in all the affairs of the town, and was prominent in temperance and other reforms. His public spirit and his eminent piety made him highly respected and beloved. His uncompromising adherence to the severe doctrines of the theological faith in which he had been educated made his preaching unwelcome to some, and it was during the last years of his pastorate that the movement to establish other religious societies began.

In 1813 the society was much vexed by some person who "sacrilegiously and repeatedly robbed this house of God of the tongue of its bell," and a reward of twenty dollars was offered for his apprehension. In 1814 a new bell was purchased and erected at an expense of six hundred and seventy-five dollars. In 1819 the land in the rear of the meeting-house was leased to the proprietors of a chapel, and certain persons were authorized to erect sheds around the house. The house was repaired in 1824, at an expense of four hundred dollars.

On September 12, 1827, Rev. George Cowles was settled as pastor. It was voted to exclude all wines and spirituous liquors from the councils and ordination services. Mr. Cowles was dismissed in September, 1836, at his own request, and travelling south in pursuit of health was lost in the wreck of the "Home."

It is recorded in a memorandum in the records of





the society "that while ringing the Bell on the -- of April, 1829, at noon, said Bell did crack, to that extent, as to destroy its usual Pleasant and Harmonious sound, and was thereby rendered useless." It was soon afterward replaced.

In September, 1839, the school-house, No. 11, on the society's land just west of the meeting-house, was ordered to be removed, and after some controversy and the threat of legal proceedings the house was removed to a piece of land in another place offered by the society for a trifling consideration.

In 1835 it was voted to build a new church, and measures were taken to effect that object. The Unitarian Society offered the South Society the use of its house during the time it was without one, but the offer was not accepted, and services were carried on in a hall while the new house was in process of construction.

In 1836, the old edifice, the greater part of which had been standing one hundred and twenty-five years, was taken down. The last service held in the old meeting-house was very crowded; the galleries had been shored up, and during the services a thin piece of wood used as a wedge cracked with a loud noise. A panic at once followed, persons jumping from the windows, and some being injured in the confusion.

Rev. Harrison G. Park was invited in December, 1836, to succeed Mr. Cowles. The new church, which cost twelve thousand dollars, was dedicated February 1, 1837, and on that day Mr. Park was installed. In October, 1838, he resigned the pastorate.

In June, 1840, Rev. Thomas P. Field was unanimously invited to take the pastoral charge, and he was ordained October 1, 1840. In 1843 the church was sold to the Methodist Society for two thousand five hundred dollars, and a new church was begun. It was only partly finished when it was consumed in the destructive fire of September 22, 1843. The loss was about seven thousand dollars, and there was an insurance of five thousand dollars, effected only the day before the fire. It was determined to go on at once with a new house, and the present edifice was finished and dedicated August 10, 1844, at a cost of one thousand three hundred dollars.

Mr. Field resigned his pastorate in September, 1850, and terminated his connection with the society November 1, 1850.

In 1850 Mary Osborn gave one hundred dollars to the ministers' fund.

In January, 1851, Rev. J. D. Butler was invited to become the pastor of the society, under a contract which permitted either party to terminate the connection on a prescribed notice. In April, 1852, the society gave notice to Mr. Butler that they wished to terminate the connection, which was accordingly done July 12, 1852.

In 1853 the society took into consideration the matter of the "minister's fund," arising from the sale

of parsonage lands, and it was decided that the fund, then amounting to \$2200, should be kept separate. This was invested in a parsonage in 1869, which was sold in 1877, and the proceeds invested in securities. In November, 1887, Mrs. Florence (Peabody) Holman gave to the society a valuable lot of land on Chestnut Street, on which it is proposed to build a parsonage with the minister's fund.

In 1854 it was voted to buy a new bell, and a clock was given to the society by Francis Dane, Henry Poor and Elijah W. Upton, and placed upon the tower of the church.

In May, 1854, Rev. James O. Murray was called as pastor, and he was ordained October 26, 1854. He tendered his resignation in February, 1861, which was accepted, and he terminated his pastorate in March following.

In July, 1861, Rev. William M. Barbour was called to the pastorate, and he was ordained October 3, 1861. A new bell was bought in 1862, which is the one at present in use.

Mr. Barbour resigned his pastorate in September, 1868. In December, 1868, the Rev. George N. Anthony was invited to become pastor, and he accepted the following month. He was installed March 11, 1869.

He resigned his position in September, 1876. In the spring of 1877 the debt of the society, amounting to about \$7000, was raised by voluntary contributions, and the society has ever since been free from debt.

In December, 1877, Rev. Willard G. Sperry was called to the pastorate. The call was accepted, but he was not ordained till July 2, 1878, beginning his labors in September following.

In 1880 extensive changes were made in the interior of the church. The organ was removed to a space added behind the preacher's desk; the white marble pulpit, which had been in the church since it was built, was removed, and a simple reading-desk, with a larger platform, took its place. On the floor below additional rooms were made for the convenience of the pastor and the Sunday-school library.

In 1885 Mr. Sperry received a call to Manchester, N. H., and although the church and society formally requested him to remain, he resigned in September.

In February, 1886, Rev. George A. Hall was called to the pastorate. He accepted, and was ordained April 13, 1886.

The society is vigorous and the congregation large; and, after a century and three-fourths of existence, it still remains an important factor in the religious and social life of the community.

FIRST UNITARIAN CHURCH.—This church was organized January 1, 1825, "for the purpose of having a place in the South part of Danvers where an opportunity could be had of hearing sentiments more liberal and congenial with the true spirit of Christianity than is now afforded." At the beginning it had thirty-three members. The first church edifice was



dedicated July 26, 1826. The dedicatory sermon was by Rev. Mr. Brazer, of Salem, from the text, "Finally, be ye all of one mind." Others who took part in the services were Rev. Mr. Upham and Rev. Mr. Colman, of Salem, Rev. Dr. Abbott, of Beverly, and Rev. Mr. Bartlett, of Marblehead.

The pulpit was supplied for some months by Mr. Alonzo Hill, after which Rev. Charles C. Sewall, of Dedham, was called to be pastor on a salary of seven hundred dollars a year, and a present on his settlement of two hundred dollars. In April, 1827, a church was formed of seventy-one members, and on April 11th Mr. Sewall was installed. The sermon was by Rev. Mr. Lamson, of Dedham, and a large party of delegates was present, including twenty-one clergymen. Two original hymns were sung, one written by Dr. Andrew Nichols, a member of the society, and the other by Dr. John Pierpont, of Boston.

In 1829 a bell was placed on the church. In 1830 a movement toward obtaining a parsonage was begun. The first organ was a gift from Eben and William Sutton.

In May, 1831, a singing-school was established for the benefit of the young people of the society, and an appropriation of sixty dollars was made therefor. During this year Mr. Sewall's salary was raised to one thousand dollars a year.

In 1836 the current expenses of the society were raised by voluntary contributions, but the next year the society returned to its former method of raising money by taxation of the pews.

Mr. Sewall resigned his pastorate in 1841, leaving July 11th. He was greatly beloved by his people, and at his departure he was presented with a testimonial of five hundred dollars.

Rev. Andrew Bigelow was installed as pastor February 15, 1843. The sermon was by Rev. Dr. Lothrop, of Boston. His salary was to be one thousand dollars,—eight hundred from the treasury and two hundred from voluntary subscriptions. Mr. Bigelow, against the expressed regrets of his society, resigned his pastoral charge March 20, 1845.

Rev. Frank P. Appleton was installed as the next pastor January 14, 1846. The sermon was by Rev. Nathaniel Hall, Jr., and several other clergymen took part in the services; but the installation was not indorsed at the time by the Ecclesiastical Council (of which the late Rev. Dr. Gannett, of Boston, was a prominent member), on account of certain informalities in the preliminary proceedings. Mr. Appleton's pastorate closed in 1853.

October 4, 1854, Mr. C. H. Wheeler was installed as pastor, Dr. Ephraim Peabody preaching the sermon. In June, 1862, Mr. Wheeler's pastorate expired, but he continued to supply the pulpit for a while afterward.

Rev. David H. Montgomery was the next occupant of the pulpit, but he resigned on account of ill health April 29, 1867.

On May 13, 1868, Rev. E. I. Galvin became pastor of the church, the sermon of the occasion being preached by Rev. James Freeman Clarke, of Boston. Mr. Galvin tendered his resignation June 7, 1871, to take effect three months later.

In 1872 some twelve thousand dollars was expended on the church edifice, great improvements being made without and within. A new organ was also purchased and placed in the rear of the pulpit. At the reopening the sermon was delivered by Rev. E. E. Hale, of Boston.

The church was without a pastor until 1873, when Rev. John W. Hudson, the present pastor, was called September 26th. He was formally installed and began the duties of his pastorate December 7th.

In January, 1886, the standing committee was authorized to procure a new organ. The organ was purchased at an expense of three thousand dollars, and dedicated in September, 1886.

In October, 1887, a new bell was procured and placed in the belfry of the church.

FIRST METHODIST SOCIETY. — In July, 1830, Amos Walton established a prayer-meeting and Sunday-school in Harmony Village (Rockville) in connection with the South Street Methodist Episcopal Church in Lynn.

In 1832 meetings were held in Sanger's Hall, sometimes known as Goodridge's Hall. Subsequently Armory Hall, which formerly stood on Holten Street, near Sewall Street, was rented for Methodist services. The leader in this movement was Mr. Alfred N. Chamberlain; he undertook the responsibility of renting the hall and furnishing the preachers. During the first three years seventeen different preachers conducted the services, among whom were A. D. Merrill (Father Merrill), Joseph A. Merrill, Sanford Benton and John E. Risley. These were all conference preachers; Mr. Risley had the honor of forming the first church society and baptizing the first converts. Among the local preachers were Jesse Filmore, Benjamin F. Newhall, of Saugus; Elijah Downing, of Lynn; Benjamin King, who preached the opening sermon in the hall; Shadrach Ramsdell and James Mudge.

A class was formed here, and after three years of service Mr. Chamberlain induced the Lynn Common Church to assume the responsibility of worship. Rev. Charles K. True, the preacher in charge, advertised in *Zion's Herald* for "a young man to take charge of the services here, and, as a result, Rev. Mr. Arnold, of Rhode Island, was sent here by Mr. True, and was the first minister who attended services here and re-ided among the people.

Later on the responsibility of the charge of the services was transferred to the South Street M. E. Church in Lynn, who had conducted the meetings in Rockville.

In 1839 Amos Walton began preaching regularly for the society, and in July, 1840, he was appointed





by the Conference sitting in Lowell as pastor. At this time the membership of the church was twenty-three. In 1840 the Sabbath school was organized.

While worshipping in Armory Hall, a building on Washington Street, above Oak Street, formerly used as a pottery, was bought and fitted up. The lumber and labor necessary were contributed by interested parties, and the new house of worship was dedicated, but soon proved too small. Plans were proposed for a new house, the lumber purchased and a part of it hauled to the ground, the site of the present church. This was in 1843, and at this time the South Society was about building a new house of worship. Their old house, which had been built in 1836, and was in excellent condition, was offered to the Methodist Society for twenty-five hundred dollars, and it was thought best to dispose of their lumber and accept the offer. The building was moved from the Square to its present location, near the corner of Washington and Sewall Streets; the Lexington Monument was set off to allow its passage, and afterward replaced. The following year vestries were built under the church, at an expense of seven hundred and fifty dollars.

The society at this time was under great financial embarrassment. The mortgage on the church, held by the South Society, was heavy, and at the annual meeting in 1848 it was voted to relinquish the property; Timothy Walton took up the mortgages and the property passed into his hands. The society known as the Methodist Episcopal Chapel Society, which had held the property, became extinct.

The church was allowed by Mr. Walton, who was one of the leading brethren, to continue the use of the building at an annual rental. They had no Conference preacher that year; but a local preacher, Dr. Booth, supplied for them a portion of the time.

In 1853 during the pastorate of William Gordon, a board of trustees was appointed, and organized according to law, under the name of the "First M. E. Society of Danvers." At this time the society purchased the church property from Mr. Walton on liberal terms.

In 1859, during the pastorate of Rev. E. S. Best, the house was raised up and remodeled, at an expense of about six hundred dollars. Part of this expense was contributed by outside friends.

In 1862, when Rev. Mosely Dwight was sent by the Conference to this society, he found a debt of over four thousand dollars, and the society very much depressed. The Church Aid Society lent its assistance, and Mr. Dwight was allowed to collect all the contributions raised in the Boston district for church aid. Through his endeavors the debt on the church was reduced to fifteen hundred dollars.

In 1867 Rev. J. O. Knowles was sent to the Society. He was very active in his efforts, and there was a large increase in the interest and the membership of the church during the two years of his pastorate.

The interior of the church was tinted and painted

at this time. Through the efforts of Mr. Knowles and others interested, a Stevens clock was placed in the tower of the church; and at this time, too, a bell was given to the Society by an anonymous friend, who was afterwards known to have been the late General William Sutton. In 1868 the parsonage on Sewall Street was purchased by the Society for two thousand dollars.

During the pastorate of Rev. G. Leonard, who succeeded Mr. Knowles, a social and literary society, similar to the Oxford League, was started and greatly encouraged by the pastor. Mr. Leonard was especially interested in Sabbath-school work, and succeeded in making the school very successful and awakening much interest in its exercises.

During the pastorate of Rev. Albert Gould the debt of the Society was extinguished, and the Society enjoyed a time of prosperity. A deep religious interest was manifest in the town, and union services of the Congregational, Baptist and Methodist Churches were held. Mr. Gould was himself a good musician, and did much for the encouragement of music in the services of the church. A new reed-organ was purchased during his pastorate. Mr. Gould, with the aid of the brethren, started the church in Tapleville. During his pastorate he published a paper called the *Town of Peabody*, a single issue, which contained much valuable historical information.

Rev. F. T. George was the pastor of the church in 1873-74, and Rev. Daniel Wait in 1875-76-77. During the pastorate of Mr. Wait improvements were made in the furnishing of the vestry.

During the pastorate of the Rev. V. M. Simons, in 1878-79, a pipe-organ was placed in the front part of the church, behind the altar, and the choir seats were removed thither.

Rev. Dr. Steele was pastor of the church in 1880-81-82, and during his pastorate the outside of the church edifice was painted, and the interior repaired and re-carpeted, at an expense of thirteen hundred dollars. At this time, also, the Stevens clock was removed and a Howard clock, the gift of the late Mrs. Lydia P. Proctor, substituted.

Rev. C. N. Smith was the pastor in 1883-84-85, and the time was one of great harmony and prosperity in the church.

The following is the list of preachers stationed by the Conference over the church from the beginning:

Amos Walton.....	1839-40	E. S. Best.....	1859-66
Daniel Webb.....	1841	Franklin Furber.....	1861
H. G. Barras.....	1842	Mosely Dwight.....	1862-63
Amos Binney.....	1843	S. R. Sweetser.....	1864-65-66
Reuben Ransom.....	1844	J. O. Knowles.....	1867-68
I. J. P. Collyer.....	1845-46	William G. Leonard.....	1869
Z. A. Mudge.....	1847	Albert Gould.....	1870-71-72
Thomas Street.....	1848-49	F. T. George.....	1873-74
O. S. Howe.....	1850	Daniel Wait.....	1875-76-77
W. C. High.....	1851-52	V. M. Simons.....	1878-79
William Gordon.....	1853-54	Daniel Steele.....	1880-81-82
Edward A. Manning.....	1855	C. N. Smith.....	1883-84-85
George Sutherland.....	1856-57	Geo. Abbott Phinney.....	1886
H. C. Dunham.....	1858		



In 1886 extensive repairs and improvements were undertaken; the vestries were painted and refurnished; an addition was built on the back of the building, making room for the organ and giving additional space below. The choir seats were rebuilt and the preacher's platform refurnished. The pews and interior fittings were renovated, the walls and ceilings frescoed and various improvements and additions made to the conveniences of the house. A large number of memorial windows have been given in honor of deceased friends and relatives; the Oxford League assumed the expense and management of the improvement of the windows, and their efforts have been seconded by gifts of money from various individuals and societies. The entrance and approaches have been improved, and the house now is one of the most commodious in town. The expenditures for the recent improvements were about twenty-six hundred dollars. The society is large and flourishing, and active in Christian work and service.

**SECOND UNIVERSALIST SOCIETY**—The First Universalist Parish of Peabody was organized on the 6th of April, 1832, under the title "The Second Universalist Society of Danvers." Universalist meetings had been held occasionally in private houses, sometimes in a small hall in the building now occupied in part by the *Peabody Press* office, in the school-house then located near the Old South Church, and also in Joseph Shedd's Hall, a small hall in a building on Main Street, then occupied by Mr. Shedd as an apothecary shop. Previously to this organization some families had attended the Universalist meeting in Salem.

On January 31, 1832, a preamble and resolution were adopted and signed by forty-three persons, with reference to building a church and forming a Universalist Society. It was proposed to erect a meeting-house in the vicinity of the South Church, and a subscription was opened for shares of one hundred dollars. On March 26th, a meeting of subscribers was held, and a committee appointed to find a suitable site for a house. An agreement for organization was drawn up and signed by forty-seven persons, pledging the united action of the signers for the formation and maintenance of a religious society under the name of the Second Universalist Society in Danvers. In accordance with a petition drawn up at this meeting a warrant was issued by John W. Proctor, Esq., for a meeting to be held in Shedd's Hall, April 6, 1832. On that day the members met and organized.

A church building was completed in January, 1833, and was dedicated January 10th. On January 21st, an invitation was given to Rev. John Moore to become pastor at a salary of six hundred and fifty dollars. It was accepted, and he was installed April 4, 1833. He resigned November 16, 1834, leaving at the end of the year. During his ministry a Sunday-

school was organized, beginning with about fifty members. A church was organized by Mr. Moore April 30, 1834, consisting of twenty-four members.

February 15, 1835, the Rev. John M. Austin was invited to become pastor. He was installed April 29th.

When the church building was completed the vestry was left unfinished. There was then no public hall in town large enough for town purposes. In 1836 the vestry was finished by an association called the Union Hall Association, partly in the interest of the church, and was used for public purposes. In February, 1843, the subject of enlarging the meeting-house by galleries was considered, which was done soon afterward.

Mr. Austin resigned his pastorate in September, 1843. The affairs of the society were in a highly prosperous condition during his ministry, and particularly at its close. A religious revival affecting this with other societies prevailed during the latter part of his ministry.

On October 20, 1844, Rev. John Prince was invited to become pastor, and was installed January 15, 1845. Mr. Prince was very progressive in his ideas, and during his pastorate there was a division in the society, arising from differences in belief, which resulted in the withdrawal of Mr. Prince, in June, 1848, and the closing of the church as a house of public worship for several years.

In October, 1853, Rev. J. W. Talbot made a successful effort to revive the society, and worship was regularly begun October 30, 1853, and has ever since been maintained. Mr. Talbot resigned at the close of a year, having accomplished his object. During his stay the church building, including the vestry, was enlarged and improved, and an organ purchased.

In November, 1855, Rev. Orville Brayton began his pastorate; he was installed February 6, 1856. He continued as pastor until September 1, 1859. Rev. C. C. Gordon was pastor of the society for a year, beginning November, 1859. He left the parish united and in good condition. In February, 1862, Rev. O. F. Sanford was invited to become pastor, and he began his work in May. He was installed June 17, 1863. His pastorate closed May 1, 1865.

Rev. A. B. Hervey became pastor in April, 1866. In September, 1867, the society voted to remodel the church, which was done in a thorough manner, at an expense of about nine thousand dollars. A bell was presented to the society by a friend who desired that his name should be withheld. The church was rededicated March 4, 1868. Mr. Hervey's ministry closed in November, 1872, leaving the society united and in good condition, and the Sunday-school larger than at any other period of its history.

The Rev. S. P. Smith became pastor on the first Sunday in October, 1873, and continued until the 12th of March, 1876, when he resigned his charge. During his ministry additions and improvements were made





to the vestry at a cost of about twelve hundred dollars.

On April 30, 1876, Rev. E. W. Whitney began his pastorate. He was installed November 8, 1876. The church, which had been greatly reduced in number and inactive, was reorganized by Mr. Whitney on the 6th of May, 1877, with forty-one members. At the annual meeting in January, 1879, the society voted to raise the church in order to give more height to the vestry and improve the entrance, which was done at a cost of about two thousand five hundred dollars. Mr. Whitney resigned his pastorate in December, 1879.

On January 26, 1880, Rev. G. W. Harmon was invited to the pastorate, and began his labors in March, 1880. During the summer of 1881 further improvements were made on the church. Mr. Harmon closed his work with the society in July, 1882.

Rev. F. W. Sprague, the present pastor, began his ministry on the last Sunday in September, 1882.

**SECOND BAPTIST SOCIETY.**—The Baptist Church was organized February 16, 1843, having sixteen members. The church was recognized February 22, 1843, with twenty-seven members. The sermon was by Rev. Joseph Banvard. The first deacon, O. E. Pope, was elected February 24, 1843. Various persons supplied the pulpit till September 15, 1843, when Rev. Phineas Stowe accepted a call to the pastorate. He was ordained pastor December 5, 1843; the services were in the Unitarian Church, and the sermon was by Rev. R. H. Neal, D.D.

In the spring of 1843, a chapel was erected, sixty-five by thirty-two feet, and publicly dedicated June 15, 1843, Rev. Messrs. Banvard, Anderson and Carlton assisting in the services. In August, 1844, the society was incorporated, consisting at that time of thirty-one members.

The pastorate of Mr. Stowe ended May 9, 1845, after which the pulpit was supplied by Rev. J. G. Richardson, who was installed as pastor January 28, 1846, Rev. Joseph Banvard preaching the sermon. This pastorate ended in October, 1847. From April 23, 1848, to March 4, 1849, Rev. I. E. Forbush supplied the pulpit, after which Rev. B. C. Thomas supplied it.

December 3, 1848, P. D. Perkins became deacon of the church. November 11, 1849, Rev. F. A. Willard became pastor, and he resigned that office February 3, 1854. T. W. Carr became deacon May 12, 1851. Rev. N. Medbury regularly supplied the pulpit after the expiration of a year from Mr. Willard's resignation, and did much toward obtaining the present house of worship. October 4, 1857, Rev. T. E. Keely became pastor.

The present house of worship was dedicated November 19, 1857, Rev. T. D. Anderson preaching the sermon. R. R. Emerson was chosen deacon February 9, 1860. Mr. Keely resigned his pastoral relation August 29, 1861.

Rev. C. E. Barrows was ordained pastor December 25, 1861, Rev. Heman Lincoln preaching the sermon. He resigned January 12, 1865, and was succeeded by Rev. N. M. Williams July 9, 1865. During Mr. Williams' pastorate the house was repaired at an expense of one thousand one hundred dollars.

Mr. Williams was succeeded by the Rev. C. V. Hanson, who was ordained over the church October 6, 1868. The sermon was by Rev. W. H. Shailer, of Portland, Maine. February 4th of the following year, Thomas N. Barnaby was chosen Deacon.

Mr. Hanson was a most active and efficient Christian worker, and the church, under his pastorate, was greatly prospered. During the first three years of his ministry, fifty members were added to the church. He was also greatly interested in the affairs of the town, and was widely respected by all denominations for his progressive and intelligent co-operation in matters of education, temperance reform and charities of every kind. He was twice sent as representative to the Legislature by the town in 1871 and 1872, and was during both those terms chairman of the committee on the Liquor Law.

In 1877, Edward H. Wilson, a member of the church, died, and gave in his will the sum of one thousand dollars to the society, and also gave a piece of land on Andover Street and the sum of two thousand dollars to build a chapel, to be used by the several evangelical societies of the town. A chapel was erected in accordance with the terms of the bequest, and meetings are held there weekly by members of the societies interested. There being no other place of worship in the vicinity, the gift has been the means of doing much good.

In the summer of 1879 Mr. Hanson resigned the pastorate. November 24, 1879, the church and society voted to give the Rev. L. L. Wood a call. Mr. Wood accepted, and began his labors accordingly. In August, 1882, he tendered his resignation, which was accepted.

April 16, 1883, the church and society voted to give Rev. W. P. Chipman, of Davisville, R. I., a call, which was accepted. In January, 1885, Mr. Chipman was compelled to resign owing to illness in his family, which made his removal from the town necessary.

March 9, 1885, the church and society voted to call Rev. J. N. Shipman, of Moosup, Conn., to the pastorate. The call was accepted, and Mr. Shipman is now acting in that office.

In the fall of 1887, repairs and improvements were begun in the building, which will greatly improve the beauty and convenience of the house.

**ROCKVILLE CONGREGATIONAL SOCIETY AND WEST CONGREGATIONAL SOCIETY.**—For many years the people of the South Church carried on Sunday-school and prayer-meeting services in Rockville or South Peabody. Some of the meetings were held as early as 1832.





Mr. Caleb Frost was superintendent of this early Sunday-school, which was held in a chapel built by Mr. Elijah Upton, standing on Needham's corner, opposite Samuel Brown's estate. In 1854 Sabbath-school was again held by members of the South Church in an old house owned by Mr. John Marsh. A prayer-meeting was sustained for many years at private houses by Deacon Richard Smith, Mr. John Stevens and Mr. Isaac Hardy. Deacon Jacob Perley was also interested in these early meetings.

The South Street Methodist Episcopal Church of Lynn had conducted such services in Rockville as early as 1830, but they were not regularly carried on after 1840, when a regular preacher was sent by the Methodist Conference to the central part of the town, and the Methodists worshipped there.

In 1855 a substantial chapel was built by friends of the movement, on Lynnfield Street. Services were held here in which members of the South Church assisted, acting as teachers in the Sunday-school, and assuming the financial responsibility of the enterprise. The ministers of the various Congregational Societies of the vicinity conducted preaching services from time to time, and by degrees the people of the vicinity were interested in the movement, and lent their support to the extent of their ability.

A mission Sunday-school and prayer-meeting had been carried on for some years in West Peabody, where there was a small manufacturing settlement. It was decided to unite the new two enterprises, and in 1873 Rev. W. A. Lamb, a recent graduate of Andover Seminary, was engaged as pastor of both the South and West Peabody Churches. At this time there was neither Society nor Church organization—simply Sunday-school, prayer-meetings and preaching services. The two congregations agreed each to give a definite part of the pastor's salary.

The ministry of Mr. Lamb extended from July 1873 to July, 1875. On April 14, 1874, the Rockville Church was organized. A very powerful revival had attended the efforts of Mr. Lamb, and great interest was felt in the new church. A number of members of the South Church, some of them residents of South Peabody, and some from the central part of the town, were so greatly interested that they joined the new organization to aid in its support and management. In all thirty-nine members were received into the new church. At the time the church was recognized, Mr. Lamb was ordained as evangelist. Prof. John L. Taylor was the moderator of the council and Rev. Joshua Coit scribe.

Rev. C. C. Carpenter, of Andover, succeeded Mr. Lamb. His ministry extended from July 1, 1875, to July 1, 1880—five years. His was a quiet, earnest, successful ministry. The church in South Peabody grew and became stronger; and during the last year of his ministry a new site was acquired for a larger and more commodious church building. The old chapel was removed to the new site, and remained

there until the present church edifice was erected in its place.

For several months the church was without a pastor; on February 1, 1881, Rev. John W. Colwell began his ministry.

July 6, 1881, the Rockville Congregational Society in Peabody, was duly organized. The site for the new church was in the hands of trustees, who were authorized to convey the property to the Society on certain terms, which was done, and the Society, with the assistance of many outside friends, built the present church edifice.

In February, 1882, a building committee was appointed, whose efforts in obtaining funds were so far successful that the old chapel was removed and building operations begun in the fall. In the spring of 1883 the edifice was completed with the exception of the auditorium, and the Society which had been worshipping in the school-house opposite, began services in the new vestry. By continued effort, funds were secured to finish the auditorium, and the church was dedicated May 22, 1884; Rev. W. G. Sperry, then of the South Church, preached the dedicatory sermon, and Rev. C. C. Carpenter took part in the services.

The church edifice is 40 x 50 feet, with a pulpit recess 1x13 feet. The tower is 15 feet square and rises 75 feet above the underpinning.

The cost of the building, finishing and furnishing of the house was about \$7,100. Great interest was taken, both by the church in South Peabody and the parent church, in securing the amount; subscriptions were received from above three hundred persons. One thousand dollars were contributed in sums of ten dollars and less. About two thousand seven hundred dollars were secured in South Peabody, and the South Church people gave about two thousand seven hundred and fifty dollars; of the remainder, five hundred dollars came from the American Congregational Union, and the rest from outside friends. The Society is nearly or quite self-supporting, and is the centre of active Christian work.

At West Peabody the West Congregational Church was duly organized as a branch of the Rockville Church, September 6, 1883, with fifteen members. Rev. C. B. Rice, of Danvers, was moderator of the council, and Rev. H. L. Brickett, of Lynnfield, scribe. The church has the same articles of faith and covenant as the Rockville Church, and the same pastor, but it chooses its own standing committee and makes its own by-laws and controls its own membership.

The West Congregational Society in Peabody was incorporated October 26, 1885, and on December 11 the new chapel was dedicated free of debt at a cost of one thousand four hundred and sixty dollars. The large and beautiful lot of half an acre was given to Mr. Joseph Henderson, of Salem, formerly a resident of West Peabody. The churches in the Essex South Conference (Congregational), and the American Con-



gregational Union assisted the people in building the chapel, and outside friends contributed generously. The dedicatory sermon was preached by Rev. C. B. Rice, of Danvers.

The two societies act in conjunction; they meet yearly and decide upon the proportionate part which each shall pay toward the pastor's salary. In matters of common interest, such as the calling or dismissal of a pastor, a joint vote is taken.

June 5, 1887, Rev. Mr. Colwell terminated his pastorate, going to Barrington, R. I. Great progress was made during his active and efficient labors in South and West Peabody, and his enterprise and energy did much to encourage the people of his double flock to the efforts which have been so successful in building up these churches upon a secure foundation. The membership of the Rockville Church is sixty-eight, and that of the West Church twenty-four.

On November 9, 1887, Rev. Israel Ainsworth was installed as pastor of the Rockville Congregational Church, and the West Congregational Church, the relation between the two societies remaining as has been explained before.

Many devoted men and women of the South Church labored earnestly in the early days of these churches, whose names will long be remembered by the people whom they strove to assist, but of whom the limits of this sketch do not give room for adequate mention.

In 1860 Mr. Elijah W. Upton placed in the hands of the officers of the South Society four hundred dollars, which he had been requested by his father, Elijah Upton, to contribute to the Rockville mission; and that sum is still held in trust for the benefit of the society in Rockville.

**ST. JOHN'S CHURCH (ROMAN CATHOLIC).**—Before 1860 there were very few Catholics in the town, and until 1871 the Catholics of South Danvers and Peabody worshipped at St. James' Church, on Federal Street, Salem.

In 1868 Rev. John J. Gray, the pastor of St. James' Church, formed the idea of establishing a new parish in Peabody. In May, 1870, a fair was held in Mechanic Hall, Salem, to aid in establishing the new parish, which continued for two weeks, and was very successful, over seven thousand dollars being realized. Sufficient money having thus been obtained to begin the work, a lot of land, formerly used for manufacturing purposes, was purchased of Thomas E. Procter for ten thousand dollars, and in May, 1871, a contract was made for building the new church, which is of brick, with granite trimmings, and is about seventy-two feet wide by one hundred and forty-six long, with a tower. It is the largest and most expensive church edifice in the town.

The laying of the corner-stone took place on Sunday afternoon, August 29, 1871, and an immense crowd assembled to witness the ceremonies. All the Catholic societies of Salem were present, and marched

in procession with their distinctive badges. Bishop Williams, of Boston, officiated, and Rev. I. T. Hecker, of New York, preached an able sermon in relation to the progress of the Catholic Church in America.

On Christmas day, December 25, 1871, services were first held in the basement of the church, although the building was in a rough and unfinished condition. Rev. Father Gray celebrated mass, and preached an interesting sermon, in which he congratulated the congregation and the Catholics of Peabody on being able to worship for the first time in this town in an edifice worthy of their efforts, and one on which was raised the emblem of their religion. A large congregation attended, although there were no pews for their accommodation, and the weather being very cold, it was impossible to warm the place.

The church was not opened again for public worship until September, 1872, when the basement was entirely finished and over two hundred pews put in. After that time services were regularly held every Sunday by one of the St. James' clergymen, until 1874, when Rev. M. J. Masterson became the pastor.

The building was finished and dedicated with impressive ceremonies November 30, 1879. The large auditorium presents a fine interior, with its lofty ceiling, beautifully frescoed walls and fifteen mullioned windows of stained glass, most of them being memorial windows contributed by individuals or societies. There are fourteen large paintings between the windows, representing the stations of the cross. The altars, of white marble, are richly furnished. The large auditorium seats twelve hundred persons.

The whole cost of the edifice was about one hundred thousand dollars. The architect was James Murphy, of Providence. The assistants at present are Rev. Patrick Masterson and Rev. Vincent Borgiatti.

**ST. PAUL'S MISSION (EPISCOPAL).**—The first service of this mission was on Sunday, April 2, 1874, the first Sunday after Easter. At this service morning prayer was read by Mr. Edgar W. Upton, and the chants and hymns were sung by a choir of boys, who had been trained by Mrs. Edgar W. Upton. There has been no interruption in the Sunday services since that time.

At first the Rev. John W. Leek, rector of St. Michael's, Marblehead, Rev. E. M. Gushee, of St. Peter's, Salem, and Rev. Mr. Magill, of Calvary, Danvers, had joint charge of the mission, and took turns in preaching on Sunday evenings. The mission was brought to the attention of the diocesan convention in May, 1874, and considerable cold water was thrown upon it. It was ably defended by its three reverend sponsors, and was adopted by the Missionary Board, who granted it some money for a missionary.

In the summer of 1874 Allen's Hall was hired by the mission, and fitted up by the help of friends in neighboring parishes. Rev. Mr. Magill was put in charge of the work, which charge he kept till August,





1875, when the present missionary, the Rev. George Walker, took the cure of Peabody, in addition to that of a new mission in Wakefield.

Ground was broken for the church on Lowell Street on January 1, 1876. It is worthy of note that there was no frost in the ground then. The first service in the new church was held on Quinquagesima Sunday, the 27th of February following. The church building has been added to from time to time as the needs of the mission grew. In 1880 a vestry was built. Inadvertently the east wall of this addition was built several inches over the line of the next estate. In 1885 this mistake was mended by putting the wall where it belonged, after trying in vain to hire or buy the land so unfortunately covered. In 1886 the roof of the north end of the church was replaced with a gable end, and the door moved from the west side to the end of the church, thus adding about thirty seats to the church, which now will seat about one hundred and fifty persons. The seats were rebuilt at the same time.

The congregation from a beginning of twenty has grown to a membership of over two hundred souls, and an average attendance of over one hundred every Sunday. The Sunday-school has grown from ten to seventy, with an average attendance of more than fifty. A boy choir has been maintained almost without any break, from the first service. In 1878 the boys were vested in Cassock and Surplice.

Services are held every Sunday. The Holy Communion is celebrated every other Sunday, alternating between an early celebration and one after morning prayer. As the mission is now joined with Danvers in the cure of Rev. Mr. Walker, it has to share his time with the Danvers Church, so that every alternate Sunday there has to be a lay service in the morning. This duty has fallen chiefly upon Mr. Upton, though not infrequently Mr. George R. Curwen, of Salem, has performed it.

In 1879, the Rev. Amos Ross, a deacon of the church and a full blooded Santee Indian, was in the family of the missionary several months. The acquaintance thus begun has been kept up, and every year since, a missionary box has been sent to Mr. Ross and his people.

#### INSTITUTIONS AND SOCIETIES.

THE PEABODY INSTITUTE.—Mention has been made in another part of this sketch of the circumstances under which Mr. Peabody's original gift of twenty thousand dollars was announced, and the communication which accompanied the gift, on the 16th of June, 1852. On June 28, 1852, a town-meeting was held at which resolves prepared and submitted by Dr. Andrew Nichols were unanimously adopted, accepting the gift and pledging the town to the conditions imposed by the donor. It was voted "That the institution established by this donation be called and known as the PEABODY INSTITUTE, and

that this name be inscribed, in legible characters, upon the front of the building to be erected, that, in future years, our children may be reminded of their father's benefactor, and that strangers may read the name of him whom Danvers will always be proud to claim as her son."

It was also determined that two of the "Committee of Trustees" should be elected each successive year for a term of six years, and "That the aforesaid Committee of Trustees appoint annually, from the citizens of the town at large, another Committee, who shall select books for the library, designate the subjects for lectures, procure lecturers, enact rules and regulations, both in regard to the lectures and the library, and perform all such other duties as the Committee shall assign to them."

The proceedings of the town relative to the gift were transmitted to Mr. Peabody, and received his approval. The scheme thus determined became, therefore, what may be called the charter of the Institute, and constituted as the officers of the institute, a board of trustees chosen by the town in whom are vested the funds and other property, for the purpose of maintaining a lyceum and library; and another board, chosen annually by the trustees, called the lyceum and library committee, whose duties are to superintend and direct all its active operations.

Soon after the first, Mr. Peabody gave to the trustees a further donation of ten thousand dollars, stipulating that seventeen thousand dollars should be used for land and building, ten thousand dollars as a permanent fund, and three thousand dollars for the library.

The westerly part of the Wallis estate was purchased for the Institute, and afterward considerable additions were made to the land, Mr. Peabody giving fifteen thousand dollars additional to purchase and improve the land. He also during his visit to this country in 1856, paid one thousand five hundred dollars for other improvements to the land, and one thousand one hundred dollars for liquidating all liabilities against the Institute on account of the building.

The original building was about eighty-two by fifty feet, of brick and freestone, with a library room and committee rooms on the lower floor, and a lecture hall above. It cost fifteen thousand three hundred dollars. The corner-stone was laid, with appropriate ceremonies, August 20, 1853; as Capt. Sylvester Proctor had deceased, Hon. Abbott Lawrence performed the part assigned to him. The building was finished in the course of the following year, and dedicated to its future uses September 29, 1854. Rufus Choate, who always maintained a warm interest in the place where the early years of his professional life had been spent, delivered the address at the dedication, one of the most eloquent and thoughtful of his occasional addresses, containing many brilliant and impressive passages on the value of



reading and the function of a public library and lyceum.

The library was opened on October 18, 1851, for the delivery of books on Wednesday and Saturday afternoons and evenings. There were then about one thousand five hundred volumes on the shelves.

In December, 1854, a donation of books was received from Mr. Peabody, containing about two thousand five hundred volumes, selected by Mr. Henry Stevens, agent of the Smithsonian Institution.

Subsequent additions to the library by purchase and gift brought the number of volumes in 1856, at the time of Mr. Peabody's visit to the town, to above five thousand three hundred, including two hundred and fifty volumes received from the Danvers Mechanic Institute, an association that had existed in the town since 1841. The town also contributed one hundred and ten volumes to the library, and many of the citizens gave books from their own libraries.

The first course of lectures began November 29, 1854. Among the lecturers for the first season were George S. Hillard, Theodore Parker, E. P. Whipple, Prof. R. D. Hitchcock, Ralph Waldo Emerson, A. A. Miner, T. Starr King, Josiah Quincy and Richard H. Dana. Truly a brilliant group of names! Dr. Oliver Wendell Holmes lectured during the second season.

The one to whom the managers of the Institute naturally turned in seeking a librarian was Fitch Poole, whose literary abilities were highly esteemed by his townsmen. He was elected to the position January 3, 1854, but being then engaged in business, found it necessary to resign the position, which he did September 27 of the same year. His successor was Mr. Eugene B. Hinckley, then principal of the Peabody High School, who gave much time to his duties, and rendered valuable service during the early days of the library, when its valuable collections were just begun. Upon the resignation of Mr. Hinckley Mr. Poole was again elected, May 17, 1856, and continued to hold the office until his death, in 1873. He was a most courteous and efficient officer, and his kindness to students, and readiness to assist all in the selection of books, with his genial personal qualities, made him the friend of every borrower of books.

Mr. Peabody had, from the beginning of the active work of the Institute, set aside a fund in his own hands, amounting to twenty thousand dollars, of which he gave the trustees the income in addition to the income from the invested funds of the Institute. In 1866, while on a visit to this country, he gave another donation of one hundred thousand dollars to the Institute, at the same time making provision for the establishment of an entirely distinct branch library in Danvers. The year before he had sent to the two libraries a large number of volumes of books purchased by him in London, from which the South

Danvers library received about three thousand five hundred volumes. October 6, 1867, shortly before his return to England, he made a final donation to the Institute of fifty thousand dollars, making the total of his gifts to the Peabody Institute of South Danvers, or Peabody, upward of two hundred thousand dollars. An extensive addition was made to the building in 1867 and 1868, including an enlargement of the library room by an extension of forty-six feet in the rear of the building, the erection of a tower on the western side and the addition of a portico on the front of the building. The entire cost of these changes was about forty-five thousand dollars. The whole value of the invested permanent funds of the Institute after Mr. Peabody's last donation, including the real estate, from which an income is derived by its occupation for dwelling-houses, was one hundred and thirty thousand three hundred dollars.

In accordance with a wise plan approved by Mr. Peabody, twenty thousand dollars of this fund was set apart in 1870 as a reserve fund, the interest of which was to accumulate for the purpose of meeting any unusual necessity, such as the erection of new buildings or the making of permanent additions to the Institute, or the arising of some great emergency. This fund has now increased to more than forty-three thousand dollars. In 1885, it was decided by the trustees that the great decrease of income consequent on lower rates of interest obtainable was an emergency calling for a use of the income of this fund, and that the maintenance of the active usefulness of the Institute was of greater importance than the rapid accumulation of the reserve fund, particularly as it does not appear likely that any new buildings will be needed for many years; and a part of the income of the reserved fund is accordingly used for current expenses, a considerable sum being still added to the principal every year. The general funds of the Institute, exclusive of the land and building of the Institute, the library, curiosities and cabinets of valuables, and not including the reserved fund or the Eben Dale Sutton Library Fund, amount to about one hundred and twenty-two thousand dollars.

After the decease of Fitch Poole, Theodore M. Osborne was appointed librarian of the Peabody Institute in September, 1873. He resigned the position in 1880, leaving in October, and was succeeded by Mr. J. Warren Upton, the present librarian, whose long service on the Lyceum and Library Committee had made him thoroughly acquainted with the needs of the library, and whose systematic methods and unwearied industry in improving the resources of the library and promoting the cultivation of the best reading in the community render him a most efficient and valuable officer. A thorough and exact system of cataloguing is constantly kept up to date, and great care is taken to furnish the public with accurate lists of books.





When the Institute building was first thrown open, Mr. John H. Teague was the janitor, and he continued to occupy the position until his death in 1880. He became identified with the institution, and his marked characteristics made him a well-known and prominent figure in the administration of its affairs. His sphere was not solely a humble one, for as was remarked by the Chairman of the Lyceum and Library Committee, for a large part of the time he was the only representative of the government of the Institute on the ground to receive the throngs of visitors who were drawn to the Institute by the fame of its founder. His urbanity and native politeness, and the remarkable memory, shrewd wit and knowledge of human nature which he often displayed made him a most attractive figure to all with whom he came in contact. He maintained a watchful care over all the interests of the Institute, and with admirable discretion contrived to keep each department informed of any necessity for action or improvement. In the exercise of his functions he became the friend of all who desired to use rightly the advantages of the institution which he loved so well. He was succeeded for a short time by Mr. I. A. Drowne, and then by Mr. John D. McKen, the present efficient janitor.

Mr. Peabody made this institution the depository of the most cherished and valuable gifts which he had received in recognition of his munificent and remarkable charitable donations. When the building was enlarged a large fire-proof safe was built with an ingenious arrangement of sliding case, in which are displayed the most valuable of these gifts,—the portrait of Queen Victoria enamelled upon gold, her own gift to him in recognition of his friendly gift for homes for the poor of London; the gold box containing the freedom of the city of London and that given him by the Fishmongers' Company, one of the ancient Guilds of London, in recognition of his charities; the gold medal presented to him by Congress in commemoration of his gift to the Southern Education Fund, and that awarded at the Paris Exposition for the work of that Fund. Valuable autographs, including letters from the hand of Queen Victoria, and a collection of American autographs obtained by Mr. Peabody in London, illuminated memorials from various societies and portraits of great interest, form part of the treasures of the Peabody-Institute in Peabody. A fine portrait of Mr. Peabody, his own gift, hangs in the hall. Other interesting portraits, including those of Rufus Choate, Edward Everett, General Foster and President Harrison, have been presented to the Institute by its friends, several of them being the gifts of Elijah W. Upton.

The number of volumes in the Peabody Institute Library in February, 1887, was twenty-six thousand two hundred and twenty-five. It is estimated that the whole amount expended for books from year to

year up to the present time, including books bought by Mr. Peabody for the library, is upward of thirty-seven thousand dollars, making an exceedingly useful and well-selected library for practical use in a community like that of Peabody.

THE EBEN DALE SUTTON REFERENCE LIBRARY. —In October, 1866, Mr. Peabody met the school children of the town in the Peabody Institute Hall; and in the afternoon the hall was filled by the adult population, and the medal scholars of the Peabody High School. It was announced by Mr. Peabody that he had a communication for them, which he should make "with a degree of pleasure and satisfaction which could only be equalled by that felt by his hearers," and then with a few happy words of introduction, he read the following letter from Mrs. Eliza Sutton, of South Danvers:

"SOUTH DANVERS, OCT. 15, 1866.

"To the Trustees of the Peabody Institute:

"GENTLEMEN: The rare advantages conferred on our community by the establishment of the Peabody Library are fully appreciated and gratefully acknowledged by all who have been privileged to enjoy them. Having had favorable opportunities for observing its beneficent results hitherto, I could but cherish a deep interest in its continued prosperity and success. This interest has ripened into a feeling akin to personal affection, through recollection of the delight and improvement which its treasures afforded to my dearly beloved son, now deceased, Eben Dale Sutton.

"As a memorial of this departed son, I have desired to make to the Institute some offering, which should permanently connect his name with this noble public benefaction.

"Having received from Mr. Peabody a kind and cordial approval of my plan, I propose to present for your acceptance, as Trustees of the Peabody Library, the sum of Twenty Thousand Dollars, for the furtherance of the objects had in view by its founder. In making this gift, it is my wish not to trespass upon the ground already so successfully occupied by the present library for circulation.

"I desire that it may be invested as a permanent fund, to be called the Eben Dale Sutton Fund, the income of which, as it accrues, shall be devoted exclusively to the establishment of a Reference Library; that the books purchased for it shall be of enduring value and such only as are desirable and indispensable for the use of scholars; that they shall be kept together in some room of the Institute Building, especially assigned for their accommodation, from which they shall never be loaned or taken. It is not my purpose to attach any onerous conditions to this donation, but at a future time, should my proffer be acceptable to you, I will express more fully my wishes and plans for its disposition and management.

"I shall place this gift in your hands, gentlemen, associated as it is with tender memories, with full assurance that it will be wisely administered, and will prove a lasting blessing to the present, and to future generations.

"Yours, respectfully,

"ELIZA SUTTON."

This letter was formally answered, and the gift accepted, by the trustees on January 5, 1867, and the trustees indicated their intention to accede to the donor's views and wishes in accordance with any suggestion that she might wish to make as to the disposition of the funds.

On January 28, 1867, Mrs. Sutton placed the fund in the hands of the Trustees, together with a communication in which she embodied some additional suggestions as to the plan of the Reference Library. The income, without any abatement, is to be "passed to the credit of the Lyceum and Library Committee





of the Institute, and is to be wholly expended in the purchase of books of practical and enduring value, together with charts, maps, diagrams, models and such other helps to the acquisition of knowledge as are to be found in the best libraries established for the use of students and scholars; and in defraying such incidental expenses as may become necessary for the preservation and perpetuation of the books and apparatus constituting the library; and for no other purpose." The books are to be substantially bound, and to be kept together in a room from which they are not to be loaned or taken. A seal is to be affixed to the inside of the cover of each volume, indicating the source of the fund. The committee are prohibited from accumulating more than one year's income at any time. The privilege of consultation of the collections is extended to "any desirous of profiting by their use," though the design is primarily and chiefly for the use and improvement of the townspeople.

The room assigned to this Reference Library in the enlarged building was richly and conveniently furnished by Mrs. Sutton, and a fine portrait of the son, in whose memory the gift was made, was placed on its walls. The room was thrown open to the public June 14, 1869. Besides the books purchased from the income of the fund, Mrs. Sutton has, from time to time, given to the library many rare and valuable volumes and collections, including fine sets of Audubon's "Birds of America," "The Description of Egypt," the famous work prepared at the direction of the First Napoleon, Kingsborough's "Antiquities of Mexico," and other important works.

On the opening of the library Mr. Fitch Poole, the librarian of the Peabody Library, was appointed superintendent, and Miss Mary J. Floyd, of Peabody, was chosen librarian. After the decease of Mr. Poole, in 1873, no other superintendent was appointed, but Miss Floyd continued to be the librarian until June, 1881. Miss S. E. Perkins acted as librarian until November, 1882, when Miss Augusta F. Daniels, the present librarian, assumed the duties of the office.

Since the foundation of the Eben Dale Sutton Reference Library, about twelve thousand dollars has been expended upon books, besides the books given to the library by Mrs. Sutton and others. Fine sets of the Greek and Latin Classics and other useful books are on the shelves; there are rare and beautiful collections of engravings and works on art, architecture and design, and standard works on literature, science and all subjects embraced within the objects of the library. The beautiful and artistic bindings of the books make their appearance exceedingly attractive; and the rich furnishings and the unusual character of the books make the room an object of interest to many visitors, while its quiet seclusion gives it great attractions for the student. The control of the library is in the hands of a sub-committee of the Lyceum and Library Committee of the Pea-

body Institute, whose management has been most judicious and efficient.

**GRAND ARMY OF THE REPUBLIC.**—Before 1870 there was an association of veterans called the Army and Navy Union, organized with objects similar to those of the Grand Army.

Post 132, Grand Army of the Republic, was organized under charter from department of head-quarters, July 7, 1870, and the installation of officers took place in Masonic Hall, at the same date. The officers were:

Commander.....	R. S. Daniels.
Senior vice commander.....	J. W. Stevens.
Junior vice commander.....	Wm. T. Wiley.
Adjutant.....	E. C. Spofford.
Quarter-master.....	L. A. Manning.
Surgeon.....	F. G. Kittredge.
Chaplain.....	E. L. Gidvin.
Officer of the day.....	R. B. Bancroft.
Officer of the guard.....	W. H. Hibbith.
Quarter-master's sergeant.....	Benj. Beckett, Jr.
Sergeant major.....	P. L. Winchester, Jr.

The Post was at first named for Gen. Grenville M. Dodge, a former resident of the town, who won an enviable record in the war, and rose to the rank of major-general. Its name was afterward changed to that of a former townsman, a young man who fell early in the war, and whose letters from the front were marked by more than usual ability.—Mr. William H. Shove.

Owing to difficulties in the Post, a part of the members left it, and on November 19, 1872, the society known as the "Veteran Soldiers' and Sailors' Association" was formed for the declared object of "Charity and Brotherly Love." Citizens of the town contributed liberally to the fund of the Association, and many cases of necessity were relieved through its means. On April 19, 1875, this Association did escort duty for a company of citizens that went to Lexington to celebrate the one hundredth anniversary of the battle of Lexington. On July 3, 1876, the name of the Association was changed to the "Army and Navy Union." The last meeting of the Union was May 31, 1879.

Successful efforts were made to unite the organizations, and April 12, 1879, Union Post No. 50 was organized, with one hundred and forty-two charter members, and the following officers were chosen:

Commander.....	Cyrus T. Batchelder.
Senior vice-commander.....	Winsor M. Ward.
Junior vice-commander.....	Frank E. Farnham.
Chaplain.....	Volney M. Simons.
Surgeon.....	Charles C. Pike.
Quarter-master.....	Levi Preston.
Officer of the day.....	Alfred E. Johnson.
Officer of the guard.....	Benj. Beckett, Jr.
Adjutant.....	Wm. H. Hibbith.
Sergeant major.....	George O. Pierce.
Quarter-master's sergeant.....	Albert H. Whidden.

A large amount of money has been expended in charity from the Post fund, aided by liberal subscriptions from comrades. The organization is in a flourishing condition, and is so conducted as to sub-



serve the interests which it is the object of the Association to care for and protect. Although there are none to replace the comrades who fall out as death thins the ranks of this veteran organization, the Post still presents a fine body of soldierly men in its annual parade on Memorial day, and whenever the order is called on for public service.

*The Women's Union Relief Corps* (G. A. R.), was organized May 27, 1885.

**OLD LADIES' HOME.**—At a public meeting of the Ladies' Benevolent Society at Warren Hall, February 14, 1867, the following letter was read, addressed to Messrs. Henry Poor, Warren M. Jacobs and Elijah W. Upton.

"GENTLEMEN,—having noticed a suggestion made by a prominent member of the Ladies' Benevolent Association, that it would be expedient and proper to provide suitable homes for elderly women of American parentage of this town who are in destitute circumstances, where they can be made comfortable and happy in their declining years, we, the undersigned, this day jointly agree to place in your hands, as trustees, the sum of \$2000 as the commencement of a fund for the purpose above indicated, the said amount to be securely invested until enough is added to this fund by donation or otherwise, to accomplish this object.

"In the event of the death or resignation of either of the above named Trustees, the remaining Trustees may appoint his successor. We would suggest that the Trustees, together with the President, Vice President and Treasurer for the time being, be constituted a board of managers to carry out the intentions of the donors, whose acts shall be subject to our approval.

"In making this gift we wish it to be understood as being the foundation of a benevolent enterprise, and we solicit the aid of those of our people who are blessed with means, to unite with us in the furtherance of this object.

"Respectfully Yours,

"ELIZA SUTTON.

"MARY UPTON."

The trustees petitioned the General Court for an act of incorporation as "The Charitable Benevolent Association of the town of Peabody," which was granted April 27, 1869.

Initiatory steps were taken at a meeting held November 1, 1871, towards building a house for the purpose specified in the act, and a contract was awarded for two thousand dollars, for a house on Washington Street, above Oak Street. A levee was held at Pierpont Hall on December 31, 1861, at which there was realized for the purposes of the association the sum of \$47.53, including a contribution from Elijah W. Upton.

In 1883 renewed interest was taken in the movement, and it was decided to reorganize the association on the basis of the original trust. An auxiliary society was formed, and earnest efforts were made to increase the funds; the house built for the Charitable Tenement Association was sold in 1875, and the proceeds, with other funds, were employed in purchasing the former residence of the late General William Sutton, with the intention of fitting it up at some future time as a Home for Aged Women. Until the resources of the society shall be sufficiently great to undertake the active support of such a home, the building is let by the society, and the income accumulated. It is hoped, at no very distant day, to open

the home for the beneficiaries who will share in its protection and support.

#### BIOGRAPHICAL SKETCHES.

**GEN. GIDEON FOSTER.**—Gideon Foster was born in the house which formerly stood on the corner of Lowell and Foster Streets, February 24, 1749. His father, Gideon Foster, was a native of Boxford; his mother, Lydia Goldthwait, of the middle precinct. He improved the opportunities of education furnished by the schools of the parish; he wrote a handsome hand, was a correct draughtsman and skilful surveyor. He was employed for several short periods in keeping school. He was a mechanic of more than common ingenuity; the machinery of his mills was of his own planning and construction.

On the breaking out of the Revolution, he marched to the scene of the battle of Lexington in command of a company of minute-men which had been drafted from Capt. Samuel Eppes' company of militia a few weeks before, - February 27. The company arrived in season to give the retreating British considerable trouble at West Cambridge. Captain Foster served as a captain in Col. Mansfield's regiment in the siege of Boston. At the battle of Bunker's Hill, Captain Foster's company was stationed at Brighton, then called little Cambridge. He was ordered by Gen. Ward to escort a load of ammunition to Charlestown. In carrying out this order he met the Americans when on their retreat. Their powder was consumed, and he supplied them with ammunition loose in casks. In his old age he revived the reminiscence thus:

"We took the ammunition in casks, and conveyed it in wagons, and delivered it freely with our hands and our *daggers*, to their *horns*, their *pockets*, their *hats*, and whatever they had that would hold it. I will remember the blackened appearance of those busy in this work,—not unlike those engaged in the delivery of coal on a hot summer's day. At the same time we were thus occupied, the enemy's *shot* were constantly whistling by; but we had no time to examine their character or dimensions. I have often thought what might have been our condition, had one of these *hot shot* unceremoniously come in contact with our wagons."

Another favorite reminiscence was of the time when Col. Mansfield's regiment was stationed on Prospect Hill, where Gen. Putnam was in command. The captains were called together, and a volunteer was called for to engage in a very arduous enterprise. When Foster found no one willing to offer his services, he presented himself and was accepted. Several soldiers were drawn from each company, and properly armed, they repaired to Gen. Putnam's quarters to receive instructions. After reviewing them, "Old Put" deprived them of their equipments, and furnishing them with axes sent them into a swamp, where they were engaged in cutting fascines and bringing them in on their backs. "The men expected to gain honor by their exposure to unknown dangers: but their greatest danger was from the attack of mosquitoes, and their greatest exposure was to the mirth of their fellow soldiers."





Capt. Foster served throughout the war, and held an honorable place as a good soldier and brave officer. In 1792 he was promoted to the rank of colonel; in 1796 he was chosen brigadier-general; in 1801 he was elected major-general by the Legislature. In the War of 1812 he was chosen commander of a company of exempts, and assumed the duties of his command with the same enthusiasm that he showed in his early days, taking an active part in the movements of the militia on the two or three occasions when an alarm was spread. It is recalled that the old soldier's tactics and drill orders were somewhat antiquated, and the order "shoulder firelocks" spoken from early habit, furnished amusement to himself as well as to his little command; but he never lost his military ardor, and as was said by Hon. Daniel P. King in his eulogy,—

"To the last, the sound of the drum and trumpet was music to his ear; indeed for almost a whole century, there has been no day when the sword of the old soldier would not have been drawn and a vigorous blow struck for the defence of his country's rights; nurtured in that school of patriotism which taught that opposition to tyrants is obedience to God, and which incited love of country next to love of heaven, his strong indignation was roused by any wrong done her or danger threatened. Liberty and love of country were his early and abiding passions. His country's free institutions, good order, good laws and good rulers were the objects of his strongest affections; he not only loved them but he did what he was able, according to his judgment and understanding, to maintain and perpetuate them. Nootis taste of place, no severity of the weather, no bodily infirmity, from the adoption of the constitution till the day of his death, more than sixty years, detained him from depositing his tablet for State Officers."

For the last thirty years of his life it was his ambition readily indulged by his fellow-citizens, to be the first to vote in all important elections. So unerring was his judgment, that he never failed to be the file leader of the majority, nor wavered from the genuine Whig principles of '76. In his time as Mr. Proctor observes, there was no doubt where Danvers would be found.

For more than seventy years, he was one of the most active and influential citizens of the town. He was called upon to hold all the important offices in the gift of his townsmen; he was nine times a Representative to the General Court, in 1796 and from 1799 to 1806. He served as town clerk from 1791 to 1794. He was deeply interested in the schools of the town, and in 1794 was one of those who proposed the division into school districts. He was also interested in the Fire Department of the town, and one of the early fire-engines was named for him.

Gen. Foster developed the water power of Goldthwait's Brook. In ancient times, the whole region in the vicinity of what is now Foster Street was marshy land. He acquired the ownership of a large tract of land in this region, and about 1817 built a dam which can still be seen, from which he conducted a part of the water through a canal along the edge of the upland to the north of the low ground. He had a bark-mill at the upper dam, and a mill used as a grist-mill at the end of the canal, and he also had a mill for the manufacture of chocolate. The water-works thus

constructed by him furnished water for manufacturing purposes to those located on the lower land along the course of the canal. Foster's lane, near Foster Street, led to these mills and manufactories, and was extended to the old Boston road.

General Foster was an enterprising and successful manufacturer, and his improvements increased the value of the land owned by him, and enabled him to sell it at fair prices; but he twice suffered loss by fire, and on October 23, 1823, his mills were totally consumed. He never fully recovered from this loss, and in 1828 he sold his mill property. He continued to assert the same spirit of independence which always supported him. He had a small pension, quite inadequate to his needs, and up to a short time before his death he cultivated with his own hands his little farm, guiding the plow over his scanty acres till more than ninety-five years had bowed his venerable form, content so long as he was self-supporting.

He was a sincere and devout Christian. He joined the Unitarian movement, and was to the time of his death an officer of that church, constant in attendance and faithful in his duties, and himself harnessing his horse in his later years to go from his farm to divine service.

His private virtues, no less than his distinguished services to his country, endeared him to his townsmen, and his death, which occurred November 1, 1845, at the age of nearly ninety-seven years, was sincerely mourned. On the third of November a funeral oration was pronounced in the Unitarian Church by Hon. Daniel P. King, and he was buried with military and civic honors, suited to the brave soldier and the faithful citizen. The following order of procession has been preserved, and may be of interest from its local references:

#### ESCORT,

Consisting of the Salem Artillery, the Danvers Light Infantry, the Salem Light Infantry and the Lynn Rifle Corps (the latter bearing a banner presented by the hands of Gen. Foster to the company in 1826). This banner was shrouded in crape.

The escort was a detachment from Gen. Sutton's brigade, and was under the immediate command of Col. Andrews.

Bearers, flanked by a military guard.

Family of the deceased in Carriages.

Brig. Gen. Sutton and staff, and Military Officers in uniform in Carriages.

Committee of Arrangements.

Officiating and other Clergy.

Civil Officers of the town.

Danvers Mechanic Institute.

Fire Department.

"Gen. Foster" Engine Co., No. 7, in dark dress with badges.

"Volunteer Engine Co., No. 8, with badges and in firemen's uniform.

Citizens of the neighboring towns.

Citizens of Danvers.

General Foster was buried in Harmony Grove Cemetery, in a lot given by General Sutton, near the Peabody entrance on Grove Street.

A fine portrait of General Foster hangs in the trustees' room at the Peabody Institute. It was painted by Osgood, of Salem, and is the gift of Elijah W. Upton.



**DR. ANDREW NICHOLS.**—Andrew Nichols, the son of Andrew and Eunice Nichols, was born in the North Parish of Danvers November 22, 1785. He worked on his father's farm till he was eighteen years old, gaining his education from the common schools of the town. He took a course of study at the academy in Andover, and in April, 1805, he began the study of medicine with Dr. Manning in Billerica, going with him to Cambridge and Harvard. In July, 1807, he became a student with Dr. Waterhouse, of Cambridge; and a year later, in July, 1808, he began the practice of medicine in South Danvers.

He soon attained a leading position as a practicing physician, and his energetic disposition and sincere public spirit brought him into prominence in town affairs.

He was a progressive and original thinker, a man of vigorous mental fibre. He was an enthusiastic votary of natural science, a fearless advocate of temperance reform, and an early adherent of the anti-slavery movement. He undertook many offices of public trust in the town, and was particularly interested in educational matters. With all the requirements of his profession, he found time not only for the pursuit of scientific knowledge, but for the study of local history and antiquities, for active engagement in temperance and other reform movements, and the faithful performance of duties assumed by him in town affairs, especially in the conduct of the schools.

In his relations with others, whether in the practice of his profession or the participation in the social life of the town, he was marked by noble personal qualities, by unblemished purity of character and a high sense of honor, sincere religious convictions, and a broad and kindly sympathy for all who needed it. His life in South Danvers covered the period of its development from a quiet village to a manufacturing community; he was the literary friend and companion of Fitch Poole and of Rufus Choate, and a prominent figure in the intellectual life of the town at the time when the standard of thought was high in New England towns—the era of plain living and high thinking, before the lecture system had degenerated into eulogatory athletics, and while the foremost thinkers of the country spoke directly to the people.

He was a student of literature, and was the author of several poems and addresses. In 1811, he delivered a Masonic address in Danvers. He was deeply interested in Freemasonry; he was the first master of Jordan Lodge of Free Masons in Danvers, instituted in 1808, and in 1831 he wrote and published a poem entitled "The Spirit of Freemasonry." In 1819 he delivered an address in Danvers entitled "Temperance and Morality," in which he took advanced ground. In 1836 he delivered the annual address before the Massachusetts Medical Society, of which he was a member from 1811 to 1846, and a councillor. The subject of the address was "Irritation of the Nerves." At the Centennial Celebration of the town of Dan-

vers, in 1852, he delivered a historical poem, entitled "Danvers," which shows his intimate acquaintance with old-time customs and traditions.

He was an enthusiastic student of the growing science of geology, and a learned and skillful botanist, and spent much time from a leisure by no means extended in exploring the woods and fields of his native town and county, in search of geological specimens and rare flowers and plants; taking an especial interest in native wild flowers. Although his farming experience was confined to his early years, his interest in agricultural matters and his knowledge of the subject was so great that he was a member and at one time the treasurer of the Essex Agricultural Society. He was the orator of the society at Topsfield, October 5, 1820.

In 1833 the Essex County Natural History Society, afterward merged in the Essex Institute, was formed; a project in which Dr. Nichols took great interest, from his enthusiastic devotion to all branches of scientific research. He presided at the meeting of organization, December 16, 1833, and was elected the first president of the society, a position which he held till 1845, remaining a member till his death. He was also, for many years, the president of the Essex South District Medical Society.

Dr. Nichols died at his residence in South Danvers, in the house which now stands back of the building of the Essex Club, on Main Street, near the square, on the 30th of March, 1853. A funeral discourse was delivered by Rev. F. P. Appleton, at the Unitarian Church, where he attended worship, on April 3, 1853, and his death was formally noticed by the societies and organizations in which he had taken so active a part; an obituary sketch was prepared by Dr. Samuel A. Lord, and published in the proceedings of the Massachusetts Medical Society; but no adequate memorial of his life has been compiled.

A striking portrait of Dr. Nichols hangs in the rooms of the Essex Institute in Salem, painted by his niece, Mrs. Berry, of Danvers. It conveys a strong impression of the vigor and individuality of the man, and gives token of a character which might well have left a lasting impression even on a larger and more cultured community than his native town that he loved so well.

**HON. DANIEL P. KING** was born January 8, 1801, in the South Parish of the old town of Danvers, which afterwards became the town of Peabody. His parents, Daniel and Phebe (Upton) King, came of families long settled in that vicinity. William King, the ancestor of the King family, was one of the original settlers, having received a grant of land in 1636, and from that day to the present the King family has maintained its ownership of land in the vicinity, and in every generation its representatives have held an honorable place among their townsmen for those qualities of industry, intelligence and sturdy independ-





*Daniel P. King*





ence of character which mark the descendants of so many of the pioneers in the Puritan settlement of New England. For reasons remarked in the historical sketch of the town, the policy of those who undertook the direction of the settlement of this region had for its result the growth of a community marked by the superior character of its individual members. Though they chose the agricultural life, and their lot was cast amid the simplest of social customs and methods of living, they not only maintained among themselves an unusual degree of intellectual development, but by wise forethought in educational affairs and careful home-training these same qualities, along with the loyalty to their native soil, which was an early characteristic, have been perpetuated to the present time. By intermarriage, Mr. King numbered among his ancestors not only those families whose names were borne by his father and mother, but he was allied with the Pages, the Putnams, the Townes, the Nurses, the Jacobses and Flints, and others of those who have dwelt in that region since the earliest settlement. As Mr. Upham remarks, in his memoir to Mr. King, he may be considered as a specimen of the manhood developed by the influences long operating in this locality upon the generations which have occupied it.

His family had from the first held a respectable position as farmers, and in later times had been enriched by extensive trading, so that the father of the subject of this sketch was possessed of means large for that time, and Daniel P. King was enabled to enjoy the advantages of a thorough academic education. His early training in the district school was continued at Saco in Maine, and at Phillips' Academy in Andover, where his preparation for college was completed. He took his degrees at Harvard University, graduating in the class of 1823. As a boy he showed the same traits which marked his mature life. His exactness of mind, clearness of memory for personal and historic details, quiet and courteous bearing, and respectful observance of the wholesome regulations of school life, attracted attention even from his schoolmates, who never failed to be won by the charm of his thoughtful and warm-hearted personality. His college life illustrates the peculiarity of his character, that he cared little for rivalry with his classmates, and had small ambition to attain eminent distinction as a scholar. He quietly pursued his college course, acquiring by careful study a knowledge more practical than showy, and enriching his mind with a culture which enabled him to make the fullest use of his natural powers, and which gave him a mental grip and vigor that never failed of honorable attainment in the responsibilities which his singularly successful public life brought to him. Though known to be a young man of ample means, his taste and judgment avoided luxury and display, and made him rather a representative of the plain farming community from which he sprung. Notwithstanding his quiet and unassum-

ing manner of life, the respectful good will of his classmates toward him was shown by his election as marshal at the commencement exercises.

After graduation, he began the study of the law, but did not develop a taste for that profession, though his qualities and attainments would undoubtedly have insured success as a lawyer. The agricultural life had the greatest attractions for him, and after his marriage, in 1824, to Miss Sarah P. Flint, he took up his residence on the excellent and beautifully situated farm near his home, left by her father, Hezekiah Flint, which had been in the possession of the Flint family for two centuries, and became a practical and successful farmer, employing his leisure time in reading the masters of English literature, not neglecting the pursuit of classical studies, which he greatly enjoyed. It was a life not common then, and still more uncommon now in this country; but he was not a man who could easily be spared from public duties, and it was not long before his townsmen learned to intrust their most important interests to his charge. It is to be remarked of this period of his life, which was surely the happiest, that while there was nothing of the speculator or money seeker about his ways, he had a shrewdness and conservatism which saved him from the extravagant mistakes of most gentlemen farmers, and gave him a well-earned reputation among his neighbor husbandmen.

In 1835 he was elected a representative of his native town in the State Legislature. He had been put forward several years before, but failed of his election by one vote. He did not take this much to heart, but observed in his quiet way that he owed his fortunate escape to having himself voted for the successful candidate; and he claimed thereby the right to share in the satisfaction and congratulations of the winning party.

In 1836, he was selected by his townsmen to deliver the address at the laying of the corner-stone of the monument erected in honor of those who fell at the battle of Lexington; a duty which he performed with the same careful historical research and happy facility of speech which marked his later efforts. He afterward, in 1845, delivered a eulogy on General Foster, the hero of that fight.

While a member of the House of Representatives, he rendered a great service to the cause of education by introducing and carrying into effect an order instructing the Committee on Education to consider the expediency of providing by law for the better education of teachers of the public schools. This movement, followed up and enforced by able co-workers, led to the establishment of the Board of Education, and of the several Normal Schools in the commonwealth.

Mr. King's chief efforts as a State legislator were in aid of the agricultural interest, which was through life an object dear to him. He was impressed with the opinion that there was great need of more scien-



tive teaching and application in agriculture, and he lost no opportunity of aiding plans for meeting this need. He brought forward a proposition, since carried into effect, of establishing a college for this department of instruction, and for providing a professorship of the same in Harvard College. While in Congress in 1848, he resisted successfully an attempt to reduce the number of copies printed of the Annual Agricultural Report prepared by the Commissioner of Patents.

He served two years in the House, and was then returned as a Senator from Essex County. He continued in the Senate four years, during the last two of which he was President of that body, and won the highest opinions by his performance of the duties of the office.

In 1842 he was again elected to the House, and after an exciting contest for Speaker, Mr. King, though not at first a candidate, was elected by a majority of one vote. His known devotion to advanced views in opposition to slavery was the means of attracting votes which could not be commanded by the other Whig candidate. This success gave him a commanding position in the Commonwealth, and was not the only occasion on which, though an un-deviating Whig, he received support outside of party lines. He began to be called the "man of luck," and his good fortune, which was in reality the result of a trust in his ability and uprightness going beyond party lines, followed him all his life through.

After seven years' service in the legislature, he was elected a representative to Congress in 1843. There had been two unsuccessful attempts to elect a congressman from the district of which Danvers was a part. At that time, a majority of the votes was necessary to elect, and after the two contests the Whig candidate withdrew, and Mr. King took his place. At the next special election, the Democratic plurality was greatly reduced, and the Democratic candidate, a man distinguished in his party, withdrew rather than meet the defeat which he foresaw. In the fourth trial, Mr. King received a majority of eighty-two votes, and he held the district by secure majorities to the end of his life.

He early took a part in the important and exciting debates of the period. Within a few days after he took his seat, he presented the resolves of the Legislature of Massachusetts against the annexation of Texas, and shortly afterward he took part in a warm debate in behalf of slaves and free negroes in the District of Columbia.

He was one of the foremost champions of the anti-slavery cause, and was ever fearless in his efforts and speech. While he was yet a new member, in January, 1844, a southern member interrupted him while he was presenting, as the voice of Massachusetts freemen, certain resolves of the Legislature of Massachusetts, relating to slavery, to ask whether the petitions had not been signed and prepared by a runaway slave

from Virginia. Mr. King replied, that "he presumed the petition was signed by freemen only, for in Massachusetts they had no slaves, but every man, created in the image of his Maker," at this point the whole of the angry violence of the friends of slavery was exerted to intimidate and suppress him; but raising his voice to the full power and height for which it was remarkable, he continued in tones distinctly heard above the uproar "owes allegiance to Him alone."

So great was the impression of personal power then exhibited, that although he was declared out of order by the Speaker, he was allowed to continue his speech, and no attempt was ever again made to overawe or silence him. The incident made a deep impression in his favor not only among the friends of liberty, but with all who admired courage and address. From that day he was marked as a leader.

In 1844 he introduced and carried an amendment prohibiting spirit rations in the navy, and also used his influence toward the completion of coast improvements at Rockport, Mass. He was placed upon important committees of the House, and was successful in urging reforms, and in securing support for enterprises of education and public improvements. He was an earnest supporter of the continuance of the fishing bounties, and a sincere friend of the hardy and patriotic fishermen of his native state; and on more than one occasion his voice and influence were successful in securing relief for wronged or disabled fishermen and seamen, and for the necessities of the Naval Hospital. He was deeply interested in the application of the Smithsonian Fund, and urged the claims of agriculture to its assistance. He attempted to obtain from Congress provision for the erection of a monument to General Warren, and he reported a bill to erect a monument to General Herkimer.

The Mexican War met with his persistent and uncompromising opposition. He lost no opportunity to vote against it from first to last. On the passage of the bill to raise volunteer and other troops for the war, there were one hundred and fifty-nine yeas to four nays, two of which were those of John Quincy Adams and Daniel P. King. His opposition to the war endeared him to the Society of Friends, and on two occasions he presented to Congress the memorials of the society against the war, and succeeded in obtaining recognition for them; and in the second instance, in 1848, he obtained, in the face of vigorous opposition, not only a proper reference of the memorial, but a vote to print it. In a speech delivered on the 4th of February, 1847, he declared that he wished his epitaph might say of him,—*"A Lover of Peace, of Liberty, of his Country—he voted against the Mexican War."* His objection to the Mexican War did not prevent him from being a sincere friend to the patriotic soldier, and in 1850 he made an earnest effort to extend and complete the provisions of law in favor of the veterans of 1812.





He held for a long time the chairmanship of the Committee on Accounts, and distinguished himself by instituting reforms in contingent expenses. On one occasion a member of the opposing party was appointed by Mr. Winthrop, then Speaker of the House, to the chairmanship of that committee, but declined it in favor of the pre-eminent qualifications of Mr. King for the place. In 1849, under a Democratic Speaker, he still retained this chairmanship. He also served as chairman and member of other important committees, and was frequently entrusted with the duty of making up their reports, and conducting the management of them in the House, in which he was remarkably successful.

While in Congress Mr. King confined himself mostly to incidental debates and to discussions arising from hour to hour. But on the few occasions when he essayed a more elaborate effort, he displayed marked powers as a speaker, and was fluent in style and thought, and always impressive from the unmistakable sincerity and profoundness of his convictions. His success as a public speaker, and indeed as a public man, rested not so much upon any exterior or apparent qualifications as upon the native vigor of mind and force of personal character, which never failed to exert a powerful influence over those with whom he came in contact, and to command attention and respect even from his strongest political opponents.

During his last years in Congress he fearlessly espoused the cause of liberty, and his name was known throughout the country, not merely for his opinions, but for his readiness in argument and his skill and success in debate. In his last elaborate speech, in May, 1850, he reaffirmed the principles to which he had always been so consistent, and eloquently announced his unalterable determination to oppose the spread of slavery.

Such was his devotion to his public duties that he would suffer no private interest to interfere with his presence at important junctures. On one occasion, as related by his colleague, the Hon. John G. Palfrey, he received news of the severe illness of a beloved daughter. At the time the debate upon an important measure of public policy was drawing to a close, and he refused to leave his post until the final vote on the question was taken. He then set out at once, but arrived at his home too late to see his child alive. Such heroic devotion to duty in one so affectionate and warm-hearted ranks with the noblest examples of history.

His religious life and character were sincere and earnest. He attended the Unitarian Church in the South Parish of Danvers, and was most faithful in his duties there. While the presiding officer of the Senate of Massachusetts he confided to an intimate friend that he never left his lodgings to take his place in the State House without first invoking in prayer guidance from above. He carried his religious principles into the smallest details of life, and was always

ready for occasions to do good, either by the thoughtful and liberal bestowal of charity, or by kindly interest and advice. In paying tribute to his character upon the occasion of the formal announcement of his death in the House of Representatives, Mr. Joseph R. Chandler, of Philadelphia, summed up a most feeling and appreciative speech by saying, "If I were called upon to present, from public life, the true exemplification of the Christian gentleman, I know of no character that would more beautifully illustrate the idea, and supply the model, than that of Daniel P. King."

On the 10th of July, 1850, he left Washington to attend to some business requiring his presence at home. He had previously been somewhat unwell, though his indisposition had not been considered dangerous. He seemed, for a few days, to improve with the rest from public duties; but very soon the disease took on a more serious form, and he died on the 25th of July. His return and illness had hardly become known beyond the immediate neighborhood, and the announcement of his death brought a shock deeply felt throughout the whole country.

His health had generally been good, and his well known simplicity of living apparently had its effect in a still youthful freshness of complexion and appearance. But it is probable that his long residence away from his beloved farm, and the pressure of irregular hours and responsible duties, had slowly undermined his powers of resistance to illness, and when he at last broke down, the end came quickly.

In Congress, and by the press and individuals throughout the land, the most sincere tributes were paid to his memory; and nowhere more deeply than in his native town and among his own kindred and neighbors, was his loss felt and grieved for, and his character appreciated and lauded. He was in the truest sense a representative of the best element of New England; stainless in private character, unassuming in life and manners, clear and vigorous in intellect and while not seeking advancement, not shrinking from any responsibility which came as his duty; inflexible in principles and fearless in their utterance, yet never desirous of useless quarrels; having "*malice toward none and charity for all.*" His character gathered weight with years, until he wielded an influence which seemed inexplicable to those who looked at the surface and saw only the plain, quiet and unobtrusive man, not marked by striking qualities of appearance or address, and hardly suggesting in his kindly and genial face that intellectual and moral vigor and energy which always rose to the full height of the occasion. Without laying claim to the title of a great man, he filled every position to which his remarkable fortune called him, nobly and with effective results.

Beside his political honors, he was for many years a trustee of the Massachusetts Lunatic Asylum, a member of the Essex Historical Society, of the Es-



sex Natural History Society and of the New England Historico-Genealogical Society. He was a member and trustee of the Massachusetts Society for promoting agriculture, and an officer of the Essex Agricultural Society.

His political life seemed to be in its very prime of successful vigor when he left Washington never to return. Mr. Upham, to whose very interesting and valuable memoir the writer of this brief outline is chiefly indebted for his materials, believed that if Mr. King had lived he would have been within no long time Governor of Massachusetts. Certain it is, that in the stormy times which followed, his voice and his influence would ever have been found on the side of liberty, union and equal rights for all.

GEORGE PEABODY, the son of Thomas and Judith Peabody, was born February 18, 1795, in a house still standing in Peabody, on the northerly side of Washington Street, the old Boston road. The Peabody family is one of historic distinction, both in England and in this country. George Peabody was a descendant of Lieut. Francis Peabody, who emigrated from St. Albans, Hertfordshire, England, in 1635, and settled in Topsfield, then a part of Salem Village, in 1667, where he died in 1698. The name of Peabody is found in the early annals of the province, and several of the name served honorably in the various wars in which the mother country enlisted the services of her colonists; and in the Revolution from Bunker's Hill and the siege of Boston, to the end of that triumphant struggle, the name is borne upon the roll of honor of those who faithfully served their country.

The branch of the family to which George Peabody belonged, was but poorly endowed with worldly goods at the time of his birth. He gained his early education in the district school of the town, and when but twelve years of age he went to work in the grocery store of Captain Sylvester Proctor, in 1807. Captain Proctor's store stood for many years in the place now occupied by Mr. Grosvenor's apothecary store. It was a small building, the upper part being used as a residence; and in the attic George had his room while he worked with Captain Proctor. His treatment here was kind, and Mr. Peabody always retained a warm feeling for Captain Proctor, and when in 1852 he gave the beginning of the fund which was to found a public library in his native town, he requested that the venerable Captain Proctor should be selected to lay the corner stone of the edifice. Unfortunately, the old gentleman did not live to perform that ceremony, to which he had looked forward with the deepest interest.

Mr. Peabody is said to have told the story that the first dollar he ever earned was while he was yet a school-boy, for tending a little booth for the sale of apples and other delicacies at some celebration. He stuck to his post, in spite of the fascinations of the country sports about him, and was rewarded for

his faithfulness with a dollar, which he said gave him more pleasure than any transaction in all the great and successful financial operations of his later days.

After remaining with his first employer about three years, he went to Thetford, Vt., where he lived for a year with his maternal grandfather, Jeremiah Dodge, a farmer. In 1811 he became a clerk in the store of his brother David, in Newburyport. It is recalled that his superior penmanship, a characteristic which he preserved throughout his life, caused him to be selected, while in Newburyport, to write ballots for the Federal party, for which he received payment outside of his scanty wages as clerk.

He had not been long in Newburyport, when a disastrous fire, which he himself is said to have been the first to discover, caused great injury to that town, and so affected his brother's business that he was again thrown upon his own resources.

Although but sixteen years of age, he was gifted with a manly and vigorous frame, a handsome face and figure, and a prepossessing manner and address, which with his previous experience, enabled him successfully to venture in business by himself. He obtained from Mr. Prescott Spaulding, of Newburyport, letters which enabled him to purchase on credit from James Reed, of Boston, two thousand dollars worth of goods, which he disposed of to advantage. He always spoke with gratitude of Mr. Spaulding and Mr. Reed, and ascribed to their kindly assistance his first success in commercial life.

In 1812 he accompanied his uncle, Gen. John Peabody, to Georgetown, D. C., where the two engaged in business together for two years. After his establishment in business here, the first consignment made to him was by Francis Todd, of Newburyport. He entertained a warm regard for that town, though he had lived there so short a time; and in after years he made a donation to the public library of the town.

He manifested unusual ability as commercial assistant in his uncle's business. His unfailing courtesy and affability won him many friends. It was said of him in after life that he would be "a popular man if he was not worth a dollar;" and that quality was no small factor in his success. Even in the height of his commercial importance he was remarkably unassuming in dress and deportment; he was scrupulously exact and punctual in the discharge of his obligations, whether business or personal; and his success was no more than the natural result of a life singularly well-planned to effect financial success.

He was a good writer and speaker, and some of his speeches and letters are remarkable for a simple and natural eloquence of style and expression. His conversational powers were of a high order.

He never married, and when living in London he never had a house of his own, but lived in lodgings; and his personal expenses were never, even in his





latter days, large, for he cared little for luxuries, and his tastes were simple. At the sumptuous dinners which he often gave, he was wont to fare simply from some common dish, though he was particular about the appointments of his table, and prided himself on its excellence. Fruit was almost his only table luxury. Until his failing strength made it a necessity, he kept no valet.

He had a very retentive memory, particularly in regard to names and places, and would give the most minute particulars of events that had occurred many years before.

He was very fond of singing, Scottish songs being his favorites.

In 1814, when only nineteen years of age, he entered into partnership, in the wholesale dry goods business, with Mr. Elisha Riggs, in Georgetown; Mr. Riggs furnishing the capital, and Mr. Peabody conducting the business as active partner.

During the War of 1812, although under age, he joined a volunteer company of artillery, and did military duty at Fort Warburton, which commanded the river approach to Washington. For this service, together with a previous short service at Newburyport, he long afterward received one of the grants of land bestowed by Congress upon the soldiers of that time.

The war over, he entered heartily into the development of his business, and frequently took long journeys alone on horseback to extend the sales of the house. In 1815 the house removed to Baltimore, and in 1822 branch houses were established in New York and Philadelphia.

The business proved very successful, owing chiefly to the talent and industry of Mr. Peabody; and when by the retirement of Mr. Elisha Riggs, in 1830, Mr. Peabody became the senior partner of the firm, the house of Peabody, Riggs & Company, took rank with the leading concerns of the country. In the course of his business he made several visits to Europe, going to London first in 1827.

In 1837, having withdrawn from the firm of Peabody, Riggs & Company, he began business with others as a merchant and money broker, by the style of "George Peabody & Co., of Warford Court, City." The firm held deposits for customers, discounted bills, negotiated loans and bought or sold stocks. He was remarkably successful in his operations, and soon began to accumulate the foundation of the large fortune which he eventually attained.

He never forgot his American citizenship, but was known throughout his life as the upholder of the credit of American securities; his assistance availed to carry the finances of his adopted State, Maryland, safely over a critical period, and at a time when faith in American securities was depressed in London, his far-sighted and patriotic action helped greatly to re-establish confidence and credit. Speaking at Baltimore, in November, 1866, he said, "Fellow-citizens, the Union of the States of America was one of the

earliest objects of my childhood's reverence. For the independence of our country, my father bore arms in some of the darkest days of the Revolution; and from him and from his example, I learned to love and honor that Union. Later in life, I learned more fully its inestimable worth; perhaps more fully than most have done, for, born and educated at the North, then living nearly twenty years at the South, and thus learning, in the best school, the character and life of her people; finally, in the course of a long residence abroad, being thrown in intimate contact with individuals of every section of our glorious land, I came, as do most Americans who live long in foreign lands, to love our country as a whole; to know and take pride in all her sons, as equally countrymen; to know no North, no South, no East, no West. And so I wish publicly to avow, that, during the terrible contest through which the nation has passed, my sympathies were still and always will be with the Union; that my uniform course tended to assist, but never to injure, the credit of the government of the Union; and, at the close of the war, three-fourths of all the property I possessed had been invested in United States Government and State securities, and remains so at this time." During the war he gave liberally to various sanitary fairs.

At the time of the Great Exhibition of 1851, in the absence of appropriations by Congress, the American exhibitors at the Crystal Palace found themselves in serious difficulty for lack of funds to fit up the American department, and for a time the exhibitors were disheartened. At this critical moment, Mr. Peabody did what Congress should have done, and by the advance of a large sum enabled his countrymen to take their proper place in the Exhibition. It was an act which earned the gratitude of all Americans. In the same year he gave his first great Fourth of July feast, at Willis's Rooms, to American citizens and the best society of London, headed by the Duke of Wellington. Mr. Peabody, after this, extended his hospitality to a larger extent than ever before; he invited to dinner every person who brought a letter of credit on his house; and celebrated every Fourth of July by a dinner to the Americans in London, inviting some distinguished English friends to meet them.

Mr. Peabody had now accomplished the object of his life, so far as concerned the acquisition of a large fortune. He had always been liberal in giving to worthy objects; in 1836, when the Lexington Monument in Danvers was erected, he contributed the balance of several hundred dollars necessary to complete the work. When the South Church in Danvers was destroyed by fire, he made a liberal contribution toward rebuilding it; and the spirit which he afterward showed had already been manifest in smaller things.

But about this time he seems to have conceived the idea of giving his great wealth in such a way that he





might direct the application of it while he yet lived. In 1852, he made the gift to the town of Danvers, of which an account has been given elsewhere, of \$20,000, which was increased before his death to \$200,000.

The same year, he provided the means of fitting out the "Advance," Dr. Kane's ship, for the Arctic voyage in search of Sir John Franklin.

In 1857, he made his first donation to the Peabody Institute in Baltimore, to which he gave in all upwards of \$1,000,000.

In 1856, Mr. Peabody visited this country. He was tendered a public reception by a committee of distinguished Americans, but declined all public receptions except in his native town.

On the 9th of October, 1856, a reception and dinner was given to Mr. Peabody by the people of Danvers. The children of the schools made up a procession brilliant with emblematic costumes and banners; elaborate decorations were placed upon public and private buildings, and across the streets arches of welcome were placed. A distinguished gathering of invited guests met in the Peabody Institute, and among the speakers were Gov. Gardner, Edward Everett, President Walker, Prof. C. C. Felton and other eminent men. A full account of this reception, including a sketch of the Peabody Institute to that time, was published by the town.

Mr. Peabody did not long remain in this country at this visit.

In 1859 he set about carrying out a long cherished purpose of establishing homes for the deserving poor of London; for this purpose, he gave in all, including a bequest in his will, £500,000. This great charity has been admirably managed by the trustees, and the value of the property nearly or quite doubled, by the investment of income. Over twenty thousand persons are accommodated in the tenements comprised in this charity, the average rent of each of the five thousand separate dwellings being 4s. 9½d. per week. The tenants are not paupers, but artisans and laboring men and women of a great variety of occupations. There are eighteen different locations where blocks of buildings have been erected under the trust.

In 1866 Mr. Peabody again returned to this country, and set about the arrangement of a series of gifts to charities and institutions of learning which was without a parallel, and which doubtless formed the inspiration for later gifts by wealthy men during their lifetime.

He first turned his attention to his native town of South Danvers, and by a gift of one hundred thousand dollars, placed the institute there on a substantial foundation. He gave fifty thousand dollars to the Peabody Institute in Danvers in September, 1866. About the same time, he established libraries on a smaller scale at Thetford, Vermont, and at Georgetown, Mass., the residence of his mother.

In October, 1866, he made a donation of one hundred

and fifty thousand dollars to Yale College to found a museum of natural history; and the same month he gave one hundred and fifty thousand dollars to found a museum of American archaeology and ethnology in connection with Harvard University.

In January, 1867, he gave twenty thousand dollars to the Massachusetts Historical Society; and during the next month he gave one hundred and forty thousand dollars to found the Peabody Academy of Science in connection with the Essex Institute in Salem. At about the same time he gave twenty-five thousand dollars to Kenyon College, of which his friend, Bishop Melville, was then president. In 1867, too, he gave fifteen thousand dollars to Newburyport, for the public library. He gave to Phillips Academy, at Andover, Mass., the sum of twenty-five thousand dollars.

During this visit he began the erection of a memorial church in the name of his sister, Mrs. J. P. Russell, and himself, to the memory of his mother, in Georgetown, at a cost of one hundred thousand dollars. It was dedicated in 1868, and John G. Whittier wrote a poem for the occasion.

The greatest of his American charities, the Southern Education Fund, was begun by him during this visit to America; by the gift to a board of trustees of one million dollars in available funds, and one million dollars in bonds of the State of Mississippi, which it was hoped the nature of the gift might impel that State to redeem, as it had been decided she was legally bound to do. But this hope has never yet been realized; and on his last visit, in 1869, Mr. Peabody added one million to the cash capital of the fund, making the whole gift three million dollars.

His health had already begun to fail before his last visit, in 1869. He was very desirous to meet once more the various boards which had in charge his princely charities, and particularly the trustees of the Southern Education Fund; and he accomplished that object.

The last visit of a public nature which Mr. Peabody made to his native town was in the summer of 1869, when he invited a number of personal friends, and several of the trustees of his various charities, to meet him at the Peabody Institute. Among the guests were Charles Sumner, Robert C. Winthrop, Ex-governor Clifford, and Oliver Wendell Holmes. Brief remarks were made by several of the guests, and Mr. Holmes read a short poem.

A remark of Mr. Peabody's, spoken at the reunion, is characteristic of his life and its objects. "It is sometimes hard for one who has devoted the best part of his life to the accumulation of money, to spend it for others; but practise it, and keep on practising it, and I assure you it comes to be a pleasure."

His last appearance in public was during the great Peace Jubilee, 1869, when he made a speech. He sought rest and renewed health at White Sulphur Springs, in Virginia, but without success, and re-



turned to London in the hope that the change of air to his accustomed haunts might be of benefit to him. But he did not rally as he hoped, and, growing rapidly worse, he died November 4, 1869.

The highest honors were paid him, both in England and in his native country. A funeral service was performed over his coffin in Westminster Abbey, and the Bishop of London preached a funeral sermon in the Abbey on the Sunday following. The British war-ship "Monarch," one of the finest iron-clads in the British navy, was ordered by her Majesty's government to convey the remains of the philanthropist to his native land, and it was conveyed by an American war-ship, and also a French vessel detailed by the Emperor for that service. One of the royal princes, Prince Arthur, accompanied the expedition, and attended the funeral exercises in this country as the representative of his mother, the Queen.

The funeral fleet brought the body to Portland, Me., where it lay in state; thence it was brought to his native town, then called by his own name, where, after lying in state in the building which he had given, it was buried in the family lot which he had selected in Harmony Grove Cemetery. The funeral exercises were held in the Old South Church, on the site where in a former edifice he had attended divine service as a boy. The whole town was in mourning; great crowds of strangers filled the streets; the funeral oration was eloquently and fittingly pronounced by Robert C. Winthrop; and amid a wild snow-storm, which sprang up during the ceremonies, the solemn procession wound its slow way to the burial-place.

The following is a list, not wholly complete, but giving most of his larger contributions to charity, education and progress:

To the State of Maryland, money due him for negotiating State loan of \$1,000,000 .....	\$60,000
To the Peabody Institute, Baltimore, including accrued interest .....	1,500,000
To the Southern Education Fund .....	3,000,000
To Yale College .....	100,000
To Harvard College .....	150,000
To the Peabody Academy of Science, Salem .....	11,000
To Phillips Academy, Andover .....	25,000
To the Peabody Institute, Peabody .....	200,000
To the Peabody High School, Peabody .....	2,000
To the Peabody Institute, Danvers .....	5,000
To the Massachusetts Historical Society .....	20,000
To Kenyon College, Ohio .....	25,000
To Newburyport for the Public Library .....	15,000
To the Memorial Church in Georgetown, Mass. ....	100,000
To the library in Georgetown .....	5,000
To the library in Thetford, Vermont .....	5,500
To Kane's Arctic expedition .....	10,000
To different similar facts .....	10,000
To unpaid moneys advanced to uphold the credit of States .....	40,000
To homes for the poor in London .....	2,500,000
Total .....	\$8,007,500

Besides these, Mr. Peabody made a large number of donations for various public purposes in sums ranging up to one thousand dollars, and extending back as far as 1835.

His great charitable gifts brought world-wide recognition during his life-time. The Queen, on his refusal of a baronetcy, sent him an autograph letter, which he had indicated as a gift which would be specially valued by him, and accompanied it by a miniature portrait of herself in enamel on gold, by Tillb, which is deposited at the Peabody Institute, Peabody, as a recognition of his munificent gift to the poor of London. In 1866 Congress ordered that a gold medal valued at five thousand dollars be given him for his great gift to the South. The city of London presented him with the freedom of the city in a gold box, and the Fishmongers' Company and Merchant Tailors' Fraternity, of the ancient London Guilds, honored him with membership in their bodies, the Fishmongers presenting their memorial in a gold box. These valued gifts were presented by Mr. Peabody, with other valuable papers and memorials, to the Peabody Institute in Peabody, where they are treasured in lasting remembrance of his benefactions.

FITCH POOLE, the son of Deacon Fitch Poole, was born June 13, 1803, in the house in Poole's Hollow in the South Parish of Danvers, built by his great-grandfather, John Poole, about 1757. He was educated in the common schools of the town, and having learned the trade of sheepskin and morocco manufacturer, he engaged in that business in a store close by his birth-place, and during many years was interested either by himself or in company with others in that branch of industry. He very early developed a decided taste for literary pursuits, and became a correspondent of the newspapers of the vicinity, sometimes treating of political matters and sometimes of the early history and traditions of the locality, in which he was deeply versed, and which he made a life-long study, becoming a recognized authority on antiquarian matters, and displaying a never-failing enthusiasm in research and in the discussion of all that pertained to town and early colonial history.

His reading was varied and extensive, and his writing was marked by a natural and expressive style, which showed the originality of his thought, and was constantly flavored with a piquancy of idea and expression springing from his keen and delicate sense of humor, a quality which entered largely into his genial and winning personality, and which made him through life a delightful companion whose everyday greeting had a cheerful and sunny influence, and who brought smiles into every company.

The artistic temperament was clearly shown in him, not only in his literary work, but in various other directions, particularly in a cleverness for caricature and humorous sketches with the pencil, and an aptitude for modelling in plaster, which was remarkable, considering his lack of elementary training for such work. Some portrait busts, and also some original conceptions in plaster, particularly a series of representations of humorous characters in Irving's





"History of New York," show traces of distinct power and originality.

His fondness for the humorous, and his quickness of wit, made him, particularly in his younger days, the centre of a little band of choice spirits, whose amusing exploits are still remembered by many of the people of South Danvers.

The familiarity of intercourse in those early times, and the comparatively slight differences of social rank in the community, encouraged a sort of practical joking, which was as harmless as practical joking ever is, and more than usually original and witty in its methods. Many were the individuals who unwittingly made sport for these practical jokers, but it was rarely that any ill will grew out of their doings. The exhibition to friends for their criticism (sometimes adverse), of a portrait of Mr. Poole really made up by the subject's inserting his living head into a place cut in the canvas; orders given to new recruits in the militia to parade at novel seasons, and with surprising equipments; half the town induced to visit the scene of a remarkable chasm formed in the Square on April-fools' day—such were some of the odd fancies which furnished amusement for the town's people. One of the most characteristic and successful of these practical jokes was carried out by Mr. Poole in later life. In the early days of the Peabody Institute lectures, Professor Hitchcock, the eminent geologist, delivered a course of lectures on geology, and while in town he was entertained by Mr. Poole, and a large number of the people of the town were invited to meet him. When the time for refreshments arrived, the company was ushered into a well supplied supper room, and just at that moment the host was called away for a moment, and excused himself with a cordial invitation to his guests to help themselves to the good things before them. After the first descent upon the table a strange embarrassment stole over those who endeavored to dispense the refreshments. One would take off the cover from a dish, and hastily replace it; another found the oysters of surprising weight and texture; the cake could scarcely be lifted; the ice creams and custards could be carried about bodily by the spoons inserted in them; each new dish was more puzzling than the last. At length it dawned upon the brighter spirits, that here was truly a geological feast, and the laugh began. The oysters were pudding-stone; the cake was brick, frosted with plaster of Paris; custards and creams were of plaster colored, and moulded; sugar, cream, every detail of the banquet was of mineral origin, of plaster, or stone, or clay. When the fun began to subside, another door was thrown open, and a more edible repast was spread before the guests.

His intimate knowledge of the early history of his native place, and his facility in imitating the ancient style of writing, enabled him to reproduce more vividly than any other writer of his class the peculiar

life and color of those early times, with all its quaintness of diction and spelling, and its apparently unconscious humor of expression. Several of his poems and sketches, relating to the witchcraft times, are of unusual merit, particularly a ballad, widely circulated, entitled "Giles Corey and Goodwyfe Corey," which is an admirable reproduction of the old ballad style. Another well-known poem is that which was written for the centennial celebration at Danvers, "Giles Corey's Dream," which attained a wide celebrity, both for its poetical merits and the keen and thoughtful humor which pervades it. Mr. Poole's enjoyment of an innocent hoax induced him occasionally to introduce his old time sketches under the guise of veritable antiquities. One of the most remarkable of his efforts in this direction was brought out at the time of taking down the old South Meeting-house, in 1836, when a communication was received by a Salem paper, purporting to contain a copy of an old letter written by one Lawrence Conant, which described the ordination of the Rev. Mr. Prescott at the new meeting-house in the middle precinct of Salem in 1713, as seen by the writer. So perfect was the reproduction of the quaint language and spelling of the time, and so admirable the color of the composition and the apparent truthfulness of the details, describing personages prominent in the province, that it at first passed everywhere as genuine, and it was not till some acute antiquary detected a discrepancy of dates in the document that the deception was detected; and even long afterward the letter of Lawrence Conant was occasionally referred to as genuine. The paper is full of delightful touches of humor, and was only intended as a facetious *jeu d'esprit*, and was promptly and publicly acknowledged as such by Mr. Poole; but no amount of explanation has ever been able to destroy the authenticity of the document. About the same time he wrote a poem in the Scotch dialect called "Lament of the Bats inhabiting the old South Church," which has been greatly admired.

He was an ardent Whig, and afterwards a strong Republican, deeply interested in the anti-slavery movement, and always progressive in his ideas.

Some of his political papers were pointed and effective productions. During the Mexican War he wrote a series of articles for a Salem paper entitled "The Trial of James K. Polk for Murder." These were collected and printed in a pamphlet as a pleasant satire; a copy found its way to Mexico, where it was translated and circulated as a genuine historical document. Another political satire was his parody on "John Gilpin's Ride," written as the Carrier's Address of the Salem Register in 1852, beginning,—

"George Bontwell was a citizen  
Of credit and renown."

He was frequently induced to favor the carrier boys by writing their annual address, which was sure to be sold if signed or known to be written by him. One





*Eben Sutton*



of these addresses was a poem of witchcraft times, entitled, "Witch-Dance and Banquet on Gallows Hill."

In 1859 he became the editor of a weekly paper in South Danvers called *The Wizard*, in whose columns appeared many of his best productions and most characteristic bits of humor, in which passing events were depicted with a spirit and wit which made the paper widely known.

In 1856 Mr. Poole was appointed librarian of the Peabody Institute Library in South Danvers, a position eminently congenial to his taste, and in which he won universal respect and esteem for his helpfulness and unfailing courtesy. He continued in this position during the remainder of his life.

His extremely modest and retiring disposition prevented him from making the use of his literary powers which others possessing abilities far less striking and unique might have made of them. He never attempted any large literary work, nor even collected such of his scattered pieces as might surely have won popular favor if they had been published in book form. He was happiest in his loved home, the old family homestead in which he was born and lived through all his three-score and ten years, and in which he died; among his friends, or quietly watching the effect of his writings on the small audience of his town's people. He cared little for public office, but his interest in education made him for many years a valued and progressive member of the school committee of the town; he represented Danvers in the General Court in 1841 and 1842, and was for a short time postmaster of Peabody under President Lincoln.

He died after a short illness on the 19th of August, 1873. It is to be hoped that some competent hand may undertake to collect his writings and gather the materials for an adequate memorial of his life, which would illustrate much that is deeply interesting of the life and growth of his native town.

SOURCES OF INFORMATION.—The principal sources from which the writer has attained the facts for this sketch, are the History of the Town of Danvers, by J. W. Hanson, 1848; Salem Witchcraft, by Charles W. Upham, 1867, from which some passages have been taken directly; Annals of Salem, by Joseph B. Felt, 1849; "The Town of Peabody," a newspaper published March 25, 1873, by Albert Gould, pastor of the Methodist Church; the notes to the new edition of the Acts and Resolves of the Province of Massachusetts Bay, by A. C. Goodell, Jr.; the Life of George Peabody, by Phoebe A. Hanaford, 1870; The Danvers Centennial Celebration, 1852; The Life of Daniel P. King, by C. W. Upham; and many historical sketches by Fitch Poole.

The original records of the Salem Book of Grants and of the Town of Salem, and the records of the South Parish, have been carefully examined; and by the courtesy of Mr. Nathan H. Poor, the efficient town clerk of Peabody, the records of the town have

been examined for various data, and especially the war records. The files of the *Wizard*, during the civil war, furnished much valuable information.

The writer also desires to express his acknowledgments to Dr. Henry Wheatland for much kindly assistance; to Mr. William P. Upham and Mr. A. C. Goodell, Jr., the President of the Historico-Genealogical Society, for valuable information and suggestions; to Mr. J. P. Fernald for the use of articles on the Methodist and Catholic Churches; to Mr. Edgar W. Upton, who furnished the sketch of St. Paul's Mission; to Rev. J. W. Colwell, for full information relative to the South and West Peabody Churches; to Amos Merrill, Esq., for information relative to war records, and for an article on the Universalist Church; to Mr. J. Warren Upton, the Librarian of the Peabody Institute in Peabody, Mr. William H. Little, Mr. Arthur F. Poole, Mr. George F. Osborne, Mr. Nathan A. Bushby, and Mr. A. P. White, the historian of Danvers in this volume; and to the pastors and officers of the various churches, who readily furnished information in their power.

## BIOGRAPHICAL.

### EBENEZER SUTTON.

Ebenezer Sutton was born in Danvers, September 11, 1803. In 1805 Danvers was divided into two towns, North and South Danvers, and in 1868 the name of South Danvers was changed to Peabody. It was in that part of Danvers which is now Peabody that Mr. Sutton was born. The father of Mr. Sutton, William Sutton, married April 14, 1799, Elizabeth Treadwell, and had William, who was the late General Sutton, July 26, 1800, and Ebenezer, the subject of this sketch, as above stated, September 11, 1803. William Sutton, the father of William and Ebenezer, was a leather-dresser by trade, but during many years before his death carried on, aside from his legitimate trade, extensive woolen mills at North Andover. He was at one time representative to the State Legislature, and was for some years president of the Danvers Bank. He died at Danvers, February 26, 1832.

The father of William Sutton was Richard, who was born in Ipswich, December 12, 1736. His trade also was that of a leather-dresser, and he lived and died in Ipswich. He married in 1758 Elizabeth, daughter of Nathaniel and Elizabeth Foster, of Ipswich, and had the following children: Elizabeth, 1759; Susanna, 1761; Mary, 1763; Catherine, 1764; Catherine, 1765; Catherine, again, 1766; Mary, again, 1770; William, February 15, 1773; Sarah, 1775; Richard, 1777, and Richard again, 1780. He married, second, October 25, 1807, Rebecca, daughter of





William and Elizabeth Foster, and had no children. He died December 12, 1825.

The father of Richard was William Sutton, who was born at Ipswich, October 5, 1699. He married in 1725 Susanna, daughter of Moses and Susanna Kimball, and had the following children: Ebenezer, baptized December 29, 1728; Richard, December 12, 1736; Susanna, July 20, 1749, who married Thomas Kimball, and died September 16, 1828. The father, William Sutton, died at Cape Breton in 1745.

The father of the last William was Richard Sutton, who was born in Reading, August 5, 1674, and removed to Ipswich before February, 1695-96. In the records he is called both shoemaker and farmer. By a wife Susanna he had Richard, born in Ipswich, February 9, 1696-97, who became a leather-dresser; William, born in Ipswich, October 5, 1699, and perhaps others. He died in Ipswich April 23, 1702.

The father of the last Richard was Richard Sutton, who was born, perhaps, in Roxbury about the year 1650. He removed to Reading about 1673, where he bought an estate, which he sold January 8, 1679, to Nathaniel Goodwin and Thomas Nichols. He served while in Reading in King Philip's War, and after the sale of his estate removed to Charlestown. The name of his wife was Katharine.

The father of the last Richard was Richard Sutton, an early settler in Roxbury. Various records in England disclose the name of Richard Sutton; but the English family, to which the American ancestors belonged, has never been precisely defined. Nor is the date of his arrival in New England known. He is spoken of without date in the ancient book of records of houses and lands in Roxbury as having sixteen acres of land more or less, lately the land of Henry Farnum. On the 7th of October, 1659, as shown by the Suffolk Deeds, Book I., page 128, he conveyed, for the consideration of two oxen, six acres of land in Roxbury to Governor Thomas Dudley. In 1656 he was a surveyor of highways. On the 10th of March, 1658, he bought of Simon and Ann Bradstreet, of Andover, a dwelling house in Andover, with an orchard and land, including about eight acres, and is called in the deeds husbandman and weaver. He probably removed to Andover about 1658, and remained there until he sold his estate, February 6, 1664, to George Abbot. The signatures to the deed are Richard Sutton and Rachael Sutton, thus disclosing the name of his wife. On the 14th of May, 1670, he bought of Samuel Hutchinson, of Reading, for the consideration of three hundred pounds, a house with lands in Reading, and removed to that town about 1673. Between 1670 and 1673 his wife died, and there are indications in the records that he was married a second time. Nothing is known of him after the last date, except that he served in King Philip's War with his son, and there is no record of the place and date of his death.

Ebenezer Sutton, the subject of this sketch, was a

man of marked and positive characteristics. Entirely independent in thought and action, he pursued his own methods quietly and unostentatiously, but with a constantly pushing vigor, which measured and overleaped every obstacle in the way of success. Like all men of that stamp, he formed accurate estimates of character, and in accordance with those estimates he was drawn irresistibly towards some and away from others; and persuasion and argument failed to change either his estimates or treatment of the men whom his unerring judgment had measured.

He was liberal and generous in the truest sense. He did not give of the large wealth he had accumulated because gifts were asked, or because he was expected to give, or because refusal would be likely to affect his popularity. There is too much of such generosity in the world,—indeed, so much that it is impossible to decide where it is genuine and where it is false. The generosity of Mr. Sutton followed his heart, and where that went his hand went also.

Aside from his regular business, he had avocations in which he felt an earnest interest. He was a director in the Eastern Railroad, the colonel at one time of the Essex Regiment, and generally interested in the affairs of his native town. He married, April 4, 1829, Eliza, daughter of Jonathan Dusten, of Danvers, and had two sons,—Ebenezer, who died August 24, 1839, and Ebenezer Dale, who was born February 7, 1848, and died November 13, 1862. Thus, when Mr. Sutton died, December 11, 1864, he died childless, leaving a widow, who is still living in a serene old age, passing the summer months at her summer residence at Centre Harbor in New Hampshire, and the remainder of the year in Peabody.

#### ELIJAH UPTON.

Elijah Upton is a descendant of John Upton, the ancestor of all the name in this country as far as known. Tradition (apparently well supported) relates that he came from Scotland, and that he was one of the Scottish prisoners taken by Cromwell, either at the battle of Dunbar, September 3, 1650, or at the battle of Worcester, twelve months later. Tradition also reports that his wife's name was Eleanor Stuart, a woman of Scottish birth, and a strong adherent of the unfortunate royal house of Stuart. We are told that she had anticipated his coming, and was here upon his arrival, in about 1652. It would seem probable that all of their children were born in Salem Village (now Peabody). We first find his name on the records at Salem December 26, 1658. It is pretty certain he was not a member of any Congregational Church, for, though a man of large means and good character, he was not admitted a freeman of the colony until April 18, 1691, after the revolution in England, and after some modifications had been made in the freeman's oath in Massachusetts.





*Eljah Upton*







*E. W. Upton*





Engraved by J. H. Smith

*Joseph Poor*



About 1678 John moved to Reading, Mass., where he had previously built a large and substantial house, which in his will he called "the homestead." It is still in a good state of preservation, and is owned by some of his descendants. *Elijah Upton*, the chief subject of this sketch, was a son of Benjamin and Rebecca (Putnam) Upton, born in North Reading, Mass., August 4, 1785; married, first, July 2, 1809, Phebe Wood, born in what is now Peabody March 23, 1787, and died there July 12, 1821; married, second, November 9, 1821, Ruth (Harrington) Downing, who died June 1, 1842. Elijah came to what is now Peabody in his youth, and served his apprenticeship as a tanner with Captain Deanison Wallis. He was at different times in partnership with Joseph Tufts and Caleb L. Frost. Mr. Upton was the first man in this town to manufacture glue, and by his sagacity and enterprise built up an extensive business in this article. He was a large owner and operator in real estate, and this town is more indebted to him than any other man for erecting dwellings, for opening streets and avenues, levelling hills and raising valleys, to make eligible sites for buildings. He was much interested in missionary and denominational enterprises, the abolition of slavery and the temperance reform, being a liberal donor to objects which commended themselves to his regard. He was a man of extensive reading and sound judgment. He died at Brattleboro', Vermont, March 25, 1860. His only child, Elijah Wood, was born February 24, 1811.

#### ELIJAH WOOD UPTON.

Elijah Wood Upton, only child of Elijah and Phebe (Wood) Upton, was born February 24, 1811. He received as a youth more educational advantages than was usual at that time. He was three years in Hopkinton, N. H., at Mr. John O. Ballard's school, where he made many life-long friends. He afterwards, for several years, attended a private school in Salem, Mass.

When quite a young man, he took an active interest in the business enterprises of his father, and at the early age of twenty years became a partner in the glue business, and later, after the retirement of his father, he assumed the entire charge of what has since been known as the Essex Glue Company. In 1847 he formed a partnership with Theophilus W. and Nathaniel Walker, and they further increased the business until it has been an important branch of the business enterprises of Peabody. About the same time the firm built and established the Danvers Bleachery, which has always done an extensive business. It remained under the control of this firm until about twenty years ago, and then was made into a stock company.

Mr. Upton, from his early connection with his father's tannery, was always interested in that branch of industry in this town. He was not largely en-

gaged in public affairs, preferring a business life, which was congenial to him. He was, however, sent for two years as representative to the General Court of Massachusetts, and was director and for a considerable time President of the Warren National Bank of Danvers. He was also, for many years, a director in the National Bank of Redemption in Boston. He visited Europe several times, his first visit being in 1851, at the time of the First International Exhibition, in which he was much interested. He was the person consulted by George Peabody in London in regard to the first donation made by him to the South Danvers Public Library, and also concerning the building erected for its accommodation.

He was a man of public spirit, of generous impulses and of refined manners. Mr. Upton died October 6, 1881.

#### JOSEPH POOR.

Joseph Poor was born July 7, 1805, in Danvers. That part of Danvers in which he lived was incorporated May 18, 1855, as South Danvers, and its name was changed to Peabody by an Act of the General Court passed April 13, 1868. His father, Joseph Poor, carried on the business of a tanner, and he was brought up to the same trade, attending the schools of his native town, and, when old enough to be of service, working a part of the time in the tannery of his father. At the age of eighteen his time was given to him, and from that time he earned his own support.

After his father's death he carried on the tanner's business alone, and from that time until his death his business career was one of uninterrupted success.

Mr. Poor married Eliza Munroe, of Danvers, and had eleven children. These were Sally, born in 1830; Warren Augustus, in 1832, who married Harriet Waterman; Mary E., in 1834; Ellen, in 1835, who married James W. Kelley; Leverett, in 1838, who married Jennie Emerson; Lizzie, in 1840; Lucinda, in 1842; George H., in 1844, who married Susie R. Bond; Albert F., in 1846, who married Sarah F. Weed; Joseph H., in 1848, who married Maggie Linehan, and Martha H., in 1850.

His sound business traits were often called into the service of his fellow-citizens, and for many years he was Chairman of the Board of Selectmen of South Danvers and Peabody. He was also a Director of the Warren Five Cents Savings Bank of Peabody, and one of the original trustees of the Peabody Institute. No better estimate of his character can be given than that of one of his fellow-citizens who, during more than forty years enjoyed his acquaintance and friendship, and had the best opportunities for forming it. He says: "Many were the valuable traits of character possessed by Mr. Poor that might be dwelt upon with interest. I knew him from my youth, was when a boy of twelve years of age employed by him, and was intimate with him until his death. As he ad-





vanced in age he became a strong advocate of moral reform in all its branches, an earnest Abolitionist, a warm-hearted, sincere Temperance man, always carrying out his opinions at the ballot-box, even if he stood alone. He never shrank from saying and doing, as a politician, what he believed to be right, and calmly and sternly moved forward towards the accomplishment of his aim. As a business man, he did not exhibit that headlong activity and bustle which are so often mistaken for business capacity, but moved slowly on, seeing his way clear as he went, and keeping himself safe in all business transactions.

He was a thoroughly religious man, always contributing liberally to purposes of benevolence and charity, and when the feebleness of advancing age compelled him to relinquish business, he felt even a deeper interest than before in those higher pursuits which chasten and ennoble life."

Mr. Poor died in Peabody, August 24, 1884.

#### JAMES PUTNAM KING.

James Putnam King was born in that part of Danvers which is now Peabody, November 8, 1817. His father, Samuel King, and his grandfather, Zachariah King, were hard-working successful farmers.

The subject of this sketch was one of five brothers, three of whom were farmers, all located in the same neighborhood, which, by reason of the large and valuable land-holdings of the King family, for more than, a hundred years, has by common consent been given the name of "The Kingdom."

James attended the district school until sixteen years of age, then worked on his father's farm until his marriage, at the age of twenty-two, to Wealthy M. Ferrin, of Madison, N. H., by whom he had two sons.

At the time of his marriage he commenced his career as a farmer on his own account by working on shares, a most excellent farm in the neighborhood. By his great physical powers, temperate habits, industry and prudence he became one of the most successful farmers in the county, and his life has answered emphatically in the affirmative, that question so often asked by agricultural writers and speakers, "Does farming pay?" He followed Salem Market for twenty-five years, selling his own vegetable products.

Mr. King early took an earnest interest in the Abolition cause, was a Whig in politics, and has been a strong Republican since the formation of that party.

He was a member of the Legislature of 1854, has been overseer of the poor for thirty-three consecutive years, and a trustee or vice-president of the Essex Agricultural Society for more than twenty years.

Mr. King is a forcible and effective speaker, and his long practical experience enables him to add much interest to the discussions at Farmer's Institutes,

and being a strictly temperate man in principle and practice, he renders efficient aid to the temperance cause.

His judgment of farm property is valued so highly that his services are in frequent demand in appraisals. Late in life he married for a second wife, Mrs. Elizabeth A. Bancroft, who was a sister of his first wife.

He is known and respected throughout the county as few men are, and now, at seventy years of age, is in the full vigor of life and presents a living example of what may be accomplished by a temperate, industrious, prudent farm life in Essex County.

## CHAPTER LXXVI.

### MARBLEHEAD.

BY SAMUEL ROADS, JR.

*Indian History—Sawpashmet the King—Relics found in Marblehead.*

THE exceedingly unique and interesting peninsula which forms the subject of this sketch, is situated at the south-eastern corner of Essex County, Massachusetts, sixteen miles north-east of Boston. The township comprises three thousand seven hundred acres, and is about four miles in length, from north-east to south-west, being from one and one-half to two miles in breadth. The surface is to a great extent irregular and rocky, and considerably elevated above the land of the surrounding country. Connected by a narrow isthmus with the mainland is a smaller peninsula, rather more than a mile in length and about half a mile wide, containing about three hundred acres. This peninsula, from the earliest settlement of the town, has been known as the "Great Neck."

Between the "Neck" jutting out so boldly into the Atlantic Ocean and the rocky coast of the mainland, is a beautiful sheet of water, a mile and a half long, and a half a mile wide, forming one of the most excellent harbors on the New England Coast.

At the time of the landing of our fathers upon a coast so barren and uninviting, as it must have appeared to them, they found the entire section of Eastern Massachusetts inhabited by a race of men, the remnants of what but a few years before the coming of the white man had been a large and powerful tribe of Indians. They were of the tribe of Naumkeags, then under the jurisdiction of the Squaw Sachem of Saugus, the widow of the great Nane-pashemet, who, in his lifetime, had been a chief whose power and authority no neighboring tribe dared question. But war and pestilence, those two dread enemies of the human race, had made sad havoc among the Naumkeags; and however desirous they





*James P. Kirby*





might have been to resist the encroachments of the white men upon their domain, they were but little prepared to do so. The great war in which they had engaged with the Tarrentines in 1615, had proved disastrous to them, and Nanepashemet, their chief, had been obliged to retreat from his settlement at Saugus to a hill on the borders of the Mystic River, where he resided till the time of his death. The plague which broke out among the Indians in 1617, raged with especial severity among the Naumkeags. Hundreds of them were destroyed, and those who remained were rendered an easy prey to their enemies. The Tarrentines, well aware of the weakness of their great opponents, seized the earliest opportunity to attack him. In 1619 they besieged his fortifications at Mystic, where, after a most heroic resistance, Nanepashemet was killed.

Two years later a party from the Plymouth Colony, while ranging about the country, came across some of his forts, one of which was undoubtedly in Marblehead, near Forest River, the remains of which may still be seen. Mr. Winslow, in his account of the journey, writes:

"Having gone three miles, we came to a place where corn had been newly gathered, a house pulled down, and the people gone. A mile from hence Nanepashemet, their King, in his lifetime had lived. His house was not like others, but a scaffold was largely built with poles and planks, some six feet from the ground and a house upon that, being situated on the top of a hill. Not far from hence, in a bottom, we came to a fort built by the deceased King, the manner thus: There were poles, some thirty or forty feet long, stuck in the ground as thick as they could be set one by another, and with them they enclosed a ring some thirty or forty feet over. A trench, broad high, was digged on each side; one way there was to get to it with a bridge. In the midst of this palisade stood the frame of a house, wattle, being dead, he lay buried. About a mile from hence we came to such another, but seated on the top of a hill. Here Nanepashemet was killed, none dwelling in it since his death."

After the death of Nanepashemet the general government of the Naumkeags was continued by his widow, who became the squaw sachem. She was assisted by her three sons, Wonohaquaham, Montowampote and Winepykin, or Winnepeweeken, all of whom became sagamores. The squaw sachem lived on terms of friendliness with the whites, and finally submitted to their government.

The three sons of Nanepashemet, after the death of their father, had each his separate jurisdiction as sagamore. Wonohaquaham, called by the English John, was located on the Mystic River; Montowampote, called by the white people James, had jurisdiction of the territory now comprised in Lynn, Salem and Marblehead, or, as Mr. Lewis, in his "History of Lynn," says: "Saugus, Naumkeag and Massabequash." The last was the Indian name for Forest River, but whether it was applied to the territory comprised in the township of Marblehead there appears to be no means of ascertaining except on the authority of Mr. Lewis. Winepykin, called by the English George, was the youngest son of Nanepashemet. He was born in 1616, and was a boy when the white men made their settlement on his territory.

The Rev. John Higginson, in writing of this sagamore, says:

"To ye best of my remembrance, when I came over with my father to this place, being then about thirteen years old, there was a widow woman called squaw sachem who had three sons. Sagamore John kept at Mystic, Sagamore James at Saugus, and Sagamore George here at Naumkeke. Whether he was actual sachem here I cannot say, for he was about my age, and I think there was an older man, yt was at least his guardian. But ye Indian town of Wigwams was on ye north side of ye North River, not farre from Simondes, and ye north and south side of that river was together called 'Naumkeke'."

In 1633 both Sagamore John and Sagamore James, with many of their people, died of the small-pox, which broke out among them and raged to such an extent as to nearly exterminate the entire tribe. So disastrous were the effects of the disease among them that is stated "that Mr. Maverick gave Christian burial to thirty of them in one day."

After the death of his brothers, Winepykin became Sagamore of Lynn and Chelsea, as well as Naumkeag; and after the death of his mother, which took place in 1667, he became sachem of all that part of Massachusetts which is north and east of the Charles River. Winepykin married Ahawayet, a daughter of Poquanum, who lived at Nahant. He died in 1684, and on the sixteenth of September of that year, the inhabitants of Marblehead procured a deed of their township from his heirs. It is signed by Ahawayet, who is called "Joane Ahawayet, squaw, relict, widow of George Saggamore, Alias Wemepauweekin."

Of the manners, customs and habits of life of these Indians little is known, except such as can be gathered in extracts from the writings of the early settlers. That they lived, generally, in peace with their white neighbors, there can be little doubt. The great reduction in their numbers would seem to be of itself evidence that they were obliged to keep the peace; and the testimony of the white men proves this theory correct.

The Naumkeags are described as a tall, strong-limbed people, whose only wearing apparel was a beast-skin thrown over one shoulder, and another about the waist. Their wigwams were small, and were constructed of poles set in the ground and fastened at the top, being covered with mats made from the boughs of trees.

Like all the Indians of North America, the Naumkeags compelled their squaws to do the greater part of the manual labor, while they, the lords of the forest and the mighty waters, spent their time in fishing, hunting and idleness. Their wants were few. With plenty of corn, raised by the women, the forests abounding in game, and the waters about their coast filled with fish of almost every variety, there was no reason why they should suffer hunger, save only from their own indolence and inactivity.

Kind and docile in their disposition, and generous in their treatment of the whites, they in time became the wards of the settlers; and forsaking the gods of good and evil whom their fathers had taught them to



worship, many were baptized and embraced the Christian religion.

That Indians formerly occupied the land now comprised in the territory of Marblehead, there can be no doubt.

Relics of the villages, grave-yards, shell-heaps and an Indian fort have been found from time to time, which, were other evidence wanting, would be sufficient to prove the fact. Numerous arrow-heads, spears, clubs and various utensils made of stone have also been found.

The largest shell heap is near the "Pine" Grove, on the line of the railroad to Salem. This contained by actual measurement thirty cords of shells, placed in layers of stone and ashes.

Excavations found in the "Small Fox Pasture," at the Harris farm, and in fields on Atlantic Avenue, have been thought to indicate the former location of Indian wigwams. These cellars are always to be found near some reliable supply of water; they are from six to eight feet across, and were originally from two to four feet in depth.

The Bessom Pasture, near Salem Harbor, was probably the site of an Indian village. Excavations, supposed to have been the cellars of wigwams, are to be found everywhere in the vicinity.

In November, 1874, an examination of the hill in this pasture revealed a grave containing five skeletons, four being those of grown persons, and the other that of a child. They were all in a remarkable state of preservation, except that of the child, one being very large, evidently that of a man. The bodies were all buried on their backs with their heads to the west except one, which lay with its head to the east; the legs being drawn up so that the knees nearly touched the chin. The grave contained, besides the skeletons, a lot of trinkets, an earthen cup, a small bell, two sea-shells, and a quantity of beads, proving conclusively that the bodies were buried after the white settlers came to America.

By reliable tradition we are informed that Indians dwelt in Marblehead as late as one hundred and seventy years ago. The location of an Indian stockade in the Lower Division Pasture is still pointed out by some of the older inhabitants. They received their information many years ago from aged citizens, then about to depart for their final rest, whose memories fondly cherished the traditions transmitted to them by their fathers.

## CHAPTER LXXVII.

### MARBLEHEAD—(Continued).

#### EARLY SETTLEMENTS.

*Probable Origin of First Settlers.—The Fishing Industry Established—Grants of Land—First Ship Built in the Colony—Stones Imported—The First Meeting-house.*

MARBLEHEAD was settled about the year 1629. Authorities differ as to the exact part of England from

whence these settlers emigrated, though all agree that they were English, and that they made their settlement in the northeastern part of the town, near the headland now known as Peach's Point. From their manners and customs, but more especially from their peculiar dialect, it would seem that they were natives of the Island of Guernsey and Jersey in the British Channel. Their numbers were undoubtedly increased from time to time by people from the west of England, which would account for many of the idiomatic peculiarities which for more than two centuries characterized the speech of their descendants. They were fishermen, a rough, illiterate race, accustomed to a life of toil and hardship, probably from infancy, and they were therefore neither dismayed nor disheartened at the difficulties attending the founding of a settlement in the wilderness.

A few years before the coming of these settlers a settlement four miles north of their landing place, and the village thus formed had been named Salem. This township included in its boundaries a large portion of the land now comprised in nine or ten towns of Essex County, one of which is Marblehead. Though a corporate part, and within the limits of Salem, the little peninsula seems to have been known even at that early day by a distinct name. The Rev. Francis Higginson, writing of the place in 1629 or '30, speaks of the rocky headlands which line the shore as "marble stone, that we have great rocks of it, and a harbor hard by. Our plantation is from thence called Marble Harbor."

Though "Marble-Harbor" is the name most frequently applied to the settlement in the earlier records, it is evident that it was equally well-known as Marblehead from the beginning. William Woods in his description of Massachusetts, written in 1633, speaks of the locality as "Marvill Head," and describes it as "a place which lieth four miles full South from Salem, and is a very convenient place for a plantation, especially for such as will set up the trade of fishing. There was made here a ships loading of fish the last year, where still stand the stages and drying scaffolds. Here be a good harbor for boats, and a safe riding for ships." Thirty years later, Samuel Maverick, one of the first settlers in this section, in writing an account of the towns east of the Hudson River, referred to the town as follows: "Two miles below this Towne on the South side of the Harbor by the sea side lyeth Marblehead or floy the greatest Towne for fleishing in New England."<sup>1</sup> This is the only instance, of which we have any knowledge, in which the name of "Foy" was applied to the peninsula.

From the records of the Massachusetts Colony, under date of October 18, 1631, we learn that it was

<sup>1</sup> From a valuable manuscript discovered in the new British Museum by Mr. Henry F. Walters, of Salem, agent of the New England Historical and Genealogical Society.





ordered "that Thomas Grayes house at Marble-Harbor shall be puld downe, & that noe Englishemen shall hereafter give house roome to him or intertaine him, under such penalty as the court shall thinke meete to inflict." It is evident, however, that the sentence was not executed, as the name of the offenders is frequently mentioned in subsequent records.

In September, 1631, Isaac Allerton, one of the most prominent men of Plymouth Colony, having had some difficulty with his associates, set sail in the White Angel for Marblehead, where he established a Fishery Station. His son-in-law, Moses Maverick, accompanied him; and a short time after their arrival it is recorded that "this season Mr. Allerton fished with eight boats at Marble-Harbor." It was probably with reference to the business thus established, that in April 1633, the court ordered:

"That if any swine shall in fishing time come within a quarter of a myle of the stageatt Marble-Harbor, they shall be forfeited to the owners of sd stageatt, & soe for all other stages within their lymitts."

The name Marblehead is mentioned for the first time in the Colonial records of 1633 under circumstances not particularly flattering to the inhabitants, though it is by no means certain that the persons named were residents among them.

"July 24, 1633: James White is fined XXVS for drunkennes, by him committed att Marblehead, on the Sabbath day. John Bennet is fined XS for being drunke att Marblehead."

The early records of the colony abound with references to Allerton and his doings. Under date of September 1, 1633, Governor Winthrop makes the following entry in his journal:

"Mr. Cradlock's house at Marblehead was burnt down about mid night before, there being in it Mr. Allerton and many fishermen whom he employed that season, who were all preserved by a special providence of God, with most of his goods therein, by a tailor, who sat up that night at work in the house and, hearing a noise, looked out and saw the house on fire above the oven in the thatch."

The brief period of Allerton's residence in Marblehead were evidently years of misfortune to him and his family. During the same year in which his house was destroyed, a pinnace which he had sent on a trading voyage to France, was lost with its entire cargo. Two years later, in March, 1635, the court ordered that he shall be sent for to the intent that he may understand the desire of the country for his removal from Marble Harbor. Accordingly, in May, of that year, he conveyed to his son-in-law, Moses Maverick, all his houses, buildings, and stages at Marblehead, and departed, it is presumed, for New Haven, Conn.

But his misfortunes were not to end with his removal. During the same year a shallop which he had sent to Newbury to convey the Rev. John Avery and his family to Marblehead, was lost off Cape Ann, with nearly all on board. Shortly after his arrival in New England Mr. Avery had been invited to take up his residence at Marblehead, "but" as Mr. Mather says in his "Magnalia" "there being no church there, and the fishermen there being

generally too remiss to form one," he had declined the invitation. It seems, however, that he had been induced to reconsider his determination, and had embarked with two families, his own, and that of his cousin, Mr. Anthony Thacher. On their passage a storm arose, and the vessel was lost; the only persons in the entire company who were saved being Mr. Thacher and his wife, who were cast ashore by the waves.

On the 6th of May, 1635, the court ordered:

"That there shalbe a plantacion at Marble-Head, and that the inhabitants now there shall have liberty to plant and improve such grounds as they stand in neede of, & that as sd plantacion increaseth, the inhabitants of Salem shall p'te with such ground as shalbe improved by them thereabouts, being payed for their labor and costs."

It was also ordered that Mr. John Humphrey should improve the land between the Clifte and Forest River, and dispose of it to the inhabitants of Marblehead as they stood in need; the only charge to the purchaser being enough to recompense him for the labor and costs bestowed upon it.

"June 3, 1635. It is ordered that Mr. Holgrove shall have power to presse men to help him unloade the salt at Marblehead."

In March, 1636, the court agreed that Mr. Humphrey's land should begin at the Clifte, in the way to Marblehead,

"Which is the bound between Salem and Lynn, and so along the line between the said towne to the rocks, one mile, by estimation, to a grate red oake, from wch, the said marked tree, all under & over this rock upon a straight line to the running brooke by Thomas Smyth's house, all the which said ground woe allow him for his owne, & eoe from Thomas Smyth's to the sea."

The records of Salem, with the records of the colony, give the only authentic information concerning the town and its people, at this early stage of its history. The first mention of Marblehead in the records of Salem, is as follows:

"By vote of the towne representatives, viz: the 13 Men Deputed—the 28th of the First month, 1636. John Peach, fisherman, and Nicholas Marriott having fenced about five acres of ground on Marble Neck<sup>1</sup> (though contrarie to the order of the towne), yet it's agreed that they may for the present improve the said place for building or planting, providing always that the property thereof be reserved for the right of the towne of Salem, to dispose in the p'sence of tyme to them or any other fishermen or others, as shalbe thought most, yet soe as they may have reasonable consideration for any charge they shalbe at."

In 1636, the building of a college was projected, and the site proposed for its erection was in Marblehead, evidently in the vicinity of Mr. Humphrey's farm. At a town-meeting held at Salem, in May of that year, in an order for the division of Marblehead Neck, Mr. Humphrey made application for some land beyond Forest River. The request was referred to a committee of six gentlemen, who were authorized to view the land and "to consider of the premises, least it should hinder the building of a college, which would be many men's losse."

<sup>1</sup> In the early records the land between Forest River and the ocean, near the boundaries of what is now the town of Swampscott, was called the Plains or Marblehead Neck. The peninsula now known by that name was then called Great Neck.





In October following, the court granted four hundred pounds towards the erection of a college, and the next year a committee was chosen to superintend its erection. Among the members of this committee were Mr. Humphrey and the Rev. Hugh Peters. The court subsequently ordered the college to be built at Cambridge, then called Newtowne, and to be named "Harvard College," in honor of the Rev. John Harvard, who made a bequest of several hundred pounds towards its erection, and donated his library for the use of the students.

Not only did the General Court encourage education and learning by the establishment of schools, but every industry and enterprise having for its object the general welfare of the colony, was fostered and aided by wise legislation.

The year 1636 was an important epoch in the history of the little community at Marblehead. During that year, a ship of one hundred and twenty tons burden, the third ship ever built in the colony, was constructed on the shore, probably on the harbor side of the plantation. This vessel was known as the "Desire," and for more than two years was employed in the fishing business. A few years later, she was sent to the West Indies, on a commercial voyage, and returning brought a cargo of "salt, cotton, tobacco, and negroes." They are supposed to have been the first slaves brought into the colony.

On the second of the eleventh month (January), 1636, the town of Salem ordered, "for the better furthering of the fishing trading, and to avoid the inconvenience found by granting land for fishermen to plant, that none inhabiting at Marblehead shall have any other accommodation of land than is usually given by the town to fishermen, viz.: A house lott and garden lott or ground, for the placing of their flakes, according to the company belonging to their families: to the greatest family not above two acres, and the comon of the woodes nere adjoining, for their goats & their cattle."

The same day, Mr. William Knight was received for an inhabitant, but no land was to be appropriated unto him but "a ten-acre lott & comon for his cattle & hay."

On the 27th of this month, another meeting was held, at which it was ordered:

"That all the land along the shore of Darby Fort side up to Mr. Humphrey's land, the Hogsties, and so to run along the shore towards Marblehead 20 pole into the land, shall be reserved for the commons of the towne, to serve them for wood & timber."

The next year, 1637, Erasmus James, Nicholas Listen, Richard Granaway and Philip Bere were allowed as inhabitants "with them at Marblehead, and were granted two acres of land each." John Hart and William Charles were granted five acres each, and a house-lot of half an acre between them. "John

Deverekxe" was also granted half an acre for a house-lot.

At a town-meeting held on the 21st of August, 1637, then the sixth month in the year, John Gatchell, of Marblehead, was fined ten shillings for building upon the town's land without permission. In case, however, that he should "cut of ye long har off" his head into a sevil frame," it was agreed that half his fine should be abated, and that he should have permission to go on with his building in the meantime.

The prejudice of the Puritans against the habit of wearing long hair is well known, and it seems that they were willing to enter into any compromise with Mr. Gatchell in order to remove the obnoxious habit.

It appears, however, that he was not a man to submit to any such interference with his personal appearance, and, it is said, "continued the custom to his dying day, in spite of popular opinion and all the formal denunciation of church and State.

On the 1st day of January, 1637, a meeting was held at Salem and a vote of one hundred and twenty pounds was ordered, of which eight pounds were to be assessed upon the following inhabitants of Marblehead: Moses Mavericke, William Steephens, Archibald Tomson, William Charles, John Heart, John Peach, John Lyon, Anthonie Thatcher, John Coite, Richard Seers, Richard Greeneway, John Gatchell, Samuel Gatchell, John Bennet, John Wakefield, Erasmus James, Thomas Gray, John Devereux, Nicholas Meriatt, Abraham Whitehaire, George Vickary, John Russell, Nicholas Listen, Philip Beare.

Under date of September 6, 1638, the records of the colony have the following entry:

"Moses Maverick is permitted to sell a tun of wine at Marblehead and not to exche this year."

As the number of inhabitants increased the records of grants made at the town meetings became more numerous. On the 14th of October, 1638, the following grants of land were made to the inhabitants of Marblehead:

"To Mr. Walton, eight acres on the Main; to Moses Maverick at the same place ten acres; to John Coite on the Neck three acres; to Will Keene and Nich. Listen on John Peach's Neck, three acres; more to them on the Grate Necke, five acres; to Richard Seers three acres, where he had planted formerly; to John Wakefield four acres on the Necke; to John Gatchell and Samuel Gatchell six acres on the Necke; to Tho. Sans, three acres on the Necke; to John Lyon four acres near his house; to the Widow Blancher six acres on the Necke; to Ralph Warren two acres on the Necke; to George Chang three acres on the Necke; to Phillip Beare three acres near the Widow Tomsons; to John Bennet four acres on the Necke; upon John Peach's Necke; to Rosamond James four acres on the Main."

"The Main was the part of the town near the harbor; John Peach's Neck was from "Naugus Head" to what is now called "Peach's Point," and from Naugus Head to Forest River was known as the "Forest Side."

The "Mr. Walton" to whom the first grant was made was Mr. William Walton, who was then preaching at Marblehead, though without ordination. This is the first mention of his name in the records, and it is therefore probable that he began his ministrations in Marblehead during the year 1638. Through his

<sup>1</sup> Darby Fort was a fortification at Naugus Head, built by the people of Salem as a place of refuge in case of attack by the Indians.



endeavors, succeeded by Maverick and other influential inhabitants, a meeting-house was erected, and religious services were regularly held on the Sabbath. This edifice, which was a crude, farm-like structure, stood upon one of the most rocky hills of the town; and about it, after the manner of their forefathers, the simple fishermen made their burial ground.

Marblehead at this time has often been described as a place barren of trees and abounding in nothing but unproductive land. The records of the general town meetings and other commoners prove conclusively that this is a mistake. The fact of its settlement is also of itself evidence of the fallacy of this theory, for emigrants in those days could not have settled on a coast where there were no trees from which they could build their houses. At a town meeting held in Salem on the 11th of November, 1640, it was ordered that all who should cut timber trees within two miles of Salem and one mile of Marblehead, and prepare them for shipping, should be paid for their labor. The last record of grants in the records of Salem concerning land in Marblehead is in 1649, when the inhabitants were granted "all such lands near adjoining them as have not been formerly granted to other men."

The state of affairs in Marblehead seem to have occupied much of the attention of the General Court at its session in May, 1641. The people were negligent of many of the laws of the colony, and treated others with contempt; and as laws which were readily obeyed by the Puritans in other towns could not be enforced among them, special legislation was found necessary for their government. According to the Puritan law no one could become a freeman without first becoming a church member; and none but freemen could vote at elections or hold any office whatever in the colony. The inhabitants of Marblehead were far from being a religious people, and, though they supported a religious teacher and maintained the ordinances on Sunday, no church had been formed, and there were few church members among them. As a consequence there were no magistrates or officers in their community, and, being some distance from the settlement at Salem, they knew no law save that of their own will.

This fact, and the necessity that there should be some officer in the place to enforce the laws of the colony, led the court to relax somewhat of its accustomed strictness in such matters, and to order: "That in defect of freemen at Marblehead, the inhabitants of Salem shall have libertie to command some honest and able man, though he be not a freeman, and the Deputy Governor shall have power (if he think him fit to give him the oath for constable of that place till the Court shall take further order." Accordingly, on the 25th of the same month, the inhabitants of Salem elected David Curwithin, who was duly sworn as constable of Marblehead for one year from the date of his election.

On the same day that the order for the election of a constable was adopted, the court also voted to grant leave to Marblehead to "fortify itself by a breast-work or otherwise," and directed two guns to be delivered unto them with convenient ammunition thereto." It is uncertain whether this order was executed by the refractory Marbleheaders, but that they were not considered as sufficiently instructed in the arts of war, in accordance with the laws of the colony, is evident from the following order adopted on the 23d of May:

"In consideration of the great default and neglect of the inhabitants of Marblehead in Not exercising themselves in Martial discipline, it is ordered that the inhabitants of Marblehead shall make choyce of some one who shall exercise the rest, that they may not be to seeke when special occasions call for their assistance."

## CHAPTER LXXVIII.

### MARBLEHEAD (Continued.)

*Incorporation of the Town—Division of the Common Lands—Charter of Fisheries—Ordination of Rev. Samuel Cheever—Furship Purchase of the Indians—A Trial for Witchcraft.*

THE year 1648 was one of the most momentous in the entire history of Marblehead. Early in March, the town of Salem ordered:

"That Marblehead with the allowance of the General Court shall be a town, and the bounds to be to the utmost extent of the land which was Mr. Humphries' farme, and see all the land to the sea."

On the 2d of May, 1649, the General Court granted the petition of the inhabitants, and the town was duly incorporated as follows:

"Upon the petition of the inhabitants of Marblehead for them to be a town of themselves, Salem having granted them to be a town of themselves, and appointed them the bounds of their town which the Court doth grant."

Shortly after the separation from Salem, a meeting of the inhabitants was held, and the following town officers were chosen, or as the record faintly expresses it, "these men were chosen for the towns business:"

"Seven men or Selectmen.—Moses Maverick, Samuel Dabber, Francis Johnson, Nicholas Merrill, John Peach, Senior, John Devereox, John Bartoll."

"To gather Mr. Walton's Pay.—James Smith, Joseph Doliber."

This was probably the first meeting of the inhabitants after the action of the town of Salem, though there is no record of the date on which it was held, except that of the year.

The earliest date in the town records, is that of a meeting held December 22, 1648, when it was:

"agreed by the Towne that all such as are strangers fishing or employed about fish shall pay unto the Towne for their wood and flake stufe and other conveniences, the sum of ten shillings a year for every man."

By the records of this year, it appears that the inhabitants acted as an independent town before obtaining the act of incorporation, and that in antici-





pation of the event they were busy in settling and arranging their affairs. The swamp running from John Legg's to Timothy Allen's, was laid out into eight lots and divided among the inhabitants. A rate was made for the meeting-house, and John Hart was authorized to collect it and to "take what course the law will afford against such inhabitant as shall refuse to pay." In order that there might be an equal way of "maintaining the ordinance by Mr. Walton," it was agreed that "a rate should be established according to requite." This rate was to include strangers.

"Who have benefit by the plantation by fishing, and make use of wood and timber, and enjoy the benefit of the ordinance." Mr. Walton was to have forty pounds for his services this year, and the sum of eighteen pence was ordered to be added to every man's rate for his wood.

The earlier records of the town refer principally to the common lands, cow leases, land sales, etc., though occasionally there are very quaint entries to be found. In March, 1657,

"It is ordered that all swine about the towne shall be sufficiently ringed by the first of April next, upon the penalty of 2s. 6d. for every defect, and Edward Pittsford is to see this order to be observed."

In 1658 the town had evidently increased in numbers, and had been blessed with prosperity to a greater degree than had ever been its fortune before. Mr. Walton's salary was increased to seventy pounds, and varied afterward from sixty pounds to eighty pounds yearly. This money was usually collected by persons chosen annually at the town meetings for the purpose, and those who had not the ready money to pay, were allowed to make up the amount of their proportion of the rate in provisions.

Mr. Walton rendered an account yearly of the amount received from each person, and these reports abound in such names as "Ould Harwood, Ould Lander, Ould Bennett," and others equally as curious. Occasionally in these reports we find such items as these:

"By half a cow of Mr. Brown, 2s. 2d. 1/2, by 1/2 ton of Mackerell, 1s. 1/2, by Richard Rowland in pork, 1s. 1/2, by Smith in cheese, 1s. 1/2, by Christo. Codner in liquor, 1s. 1/2, by shillings."

At this time the only public conveyance to and from Salem, was a ferry-boat which was rowed across Salem harbor as often as there were passengers who desired to cross, the fare being regulated by a town meeting as "two pence for the inhabitants of Marblehead." Thomas Dixie was the ferryman, and he was required to keep a boat and an assistant.

In 1660 there were only sixteen houses in the entire township. During that year the inhabitants voted to lay out a highway between Marblehead and Salem, which is the first of which there is any record. Seven men were made choice of "for the placing and seating of the inhabitants of the town, both men and women in the meeting-house," and it was agreed that the townsmen have liberty to consider what way is to be taken for the accommodation and entertainment

of strangers, if it cannot be that one house is sufficient, then to consider of another, that strangers may be the better accommodated."

The following year the court invested the commissions with—

"Magistratall power, referring to Salem and Marblehead, there being more than ordinary need thereof, that iniquity may not pass unpunished."

One of these commissioners was Major William Hathorne, who, for several years previous had been a magistrate of Salem and several other towns, and who now appears to have assumed special charge of Marblehead. Before this august personage the select-men summoned several of the most prominent citizens, for refusing to keep their cattle in accordance with a vote of the town.

In March, 1662, a contract was made with Robert Knight and John Salter, carpenters, to build a gallery at the southwest of the meeting-house. "Sufficient for four seats, with columns, and a board at the bottom to keep the dust from coming down; and to be arched sufficient to strengthen the house with stairs and other necessities." For this labor the Selectmen agreed to pay them twenty-one pounds "in such necessities as they should have occasion of," and, if when the work was ended, they had any of the pay to take up, the balance was to be paid in fish or mackerel at the market price.

At a town meeting held October 21, the commoners agreed "that the cove lying between John Codners and John Northies stage, shall be for a common landing-place for the use of the public good of the town forever." The agreement was signed by Moses Maverick, Joseph Dolier, John Peach, Senior, Christoph. Lattemore, John Waldron, John Codner, John Bartoll and five others, who were probably all of the Commoners, who could write, and signed in the name of the rest.

"The records of this period abound in allusions to those who were appointed to keep the cows. In February, 1663, an agreement was made with John Stacie to "keep the cattell the year ensuing, and to fetch the cattell of the lower end of the towne at William Charles by the sunn half an hour hie and to deliver them their at night, half an hour before sunn sett." If any were lost he was to use his endeavors to find them the next day, and for his services he was to receive corn and provisions to the value of sixteen pounds. The scarcity of money among the inhabitants cannot be more truly illustrated than in this and numerous other votes to pay the town's indebtedness to individuals in provisions, fish and other articles. In their intercourse with the outside world they were obliged to barter to an almost unlimited extent. Depending entirely upon the fishing trade for their sustenance, they had little else to offer for the commodities of which they were in need, and their fish became almost their only medium of exchange.

In 1666, the court, considering the exposed condition of the harbor of Marblehead, voted that if the inhabitants would erect a suitable fort or breastwork,



their country rate should be abated, and that two or three guns should be furnished as soon as the fortification was finished. That the fishermen might be drilled and disciplined in military movements and tactics, the court ordered that a company should be organized, and Major Hathorne was appointed commander, with Samuel Ward as Sergeant. The fort was finished the following year, the cost to the town being about thirty-two pounds, New England money.

The year 1667 proved disastrous to the people of Marblehead. Owing to the inclemency of the weather during most of the season when fish were plenty they were unable to venture out in their boats to any distance, and in several instances those who did so were lost. The court therefore, with considerate sympathy, voted to abate their proportion of the county tax for one year.

In October, 1668, William Walton, the faithful and zealous missionary, died, after having served his Master and the poor people of Marblehead for a period of thirty years. Coming to them as a missionary to preach the Gospel, he became, without ordination as a clergyman, a loving pastor, a faithful friend, and a wise and prudent counselor. His advice was sought on all matters of public or private importance, and when obtained, was usually followed without question. His loss was felt as a public bereavement by the entire community.

Mr. Walton was succeeded in his noble work by Mr. Samuel Cheever, a young man who but a few years before had graduated at Harvard College with the highest honors. The meeting-house had recently been repaired, and the young preacher was received with marked attention and every possible evidence of respect. The town voted to pay him £40 for his services the first six months, and after that £80 yearly.

In March, 1669, another gallery was built at the north-eastern end of the meeting-house, Robert Knight, Francis Collings and Jeremiah Neal being the builders. The contract was, that the gallery should be built with "five seats, stairs and other necessities as the other gallery was," and the carpenters were to receive £23 New England money for their services.

The road leading to the Great Neck was evidently laid out during this year, as on the 18th day of December it was voted that "on the next convenient day as many of the commoners and proprietors as can shall see that a convenient way may be laid out for drift of cattle to the Neck on the other side of the great harbor."

To the early settlers, and for many years, the harbor was known as the "Great Bay," or "Great Harbor," while the cove at the lower end of the town, known as "Little Harbor," was on account of its convenience, and because it was so much nearer the settlement used almost exclusively as the harbor.

On the 6th of April, 1672, the town "ordered by general consent that a 'Lentoo' be built adjoining

to the back side of the meeting-house, twenty foot in breadth and forty foot in length, with three gable ends in the same, with timber work," etc. The building of this addition to their house of worship was the cause of great controversy and disagreement among the inhabitants. The town voted to instruct the selectmen to "seat the men and women in the 'Lentoo,'" but after vainly endeavoring to assign seats to the fault-finding and jealous worshipers, they declined to have anything to do with the matter, and were with difficulty persuaded not to resign their offices as selectmen. The disagreement now assuming the phase of a downright quarrel, a town meeting was called, and the matter was put into the hands of a committee, consisting of Mr. Maverick, Mr. John Devereux, John Peach, Senior, and Nicholas Merritt. These men were fully empowered "to seat the Lentoo men and women in ye seats, cut an alley-way through ye ould part, dispose of any persons who shall want seats or lose their seats by means of ye alley, in ye most convenient places in ye ould or new part, and rectify any disorders with due care that such as have been formerly seated may keep their places as many as conveniently can." It was also ordered, for "ye regulating and preventing of disorders in seats," that Richard Norman should have power to "look after all persons, men and women, that they keep their seats upon penaltie of two shillings, five pence for every single offence upon every Sabbath day." These fines were to be "destrained upon legal warning given to the parties offending," and one-third of the amount was to be given to Mr. Norman, and the remainder to be appropriated for the poor of the town.

However sadly the inhabitant may have disagreed in regard to the seating of the "lentoo," as they termed the addition, it is evident that the day on which it was raised was one of general rejoicing. Those who are familiar with New England customs in the olden time know that it was thought next to impossible to have a "house raising," without extending an invitation to the entire community to assist. These occasions were generally observed as holidays, and were devoted by the younger people to merry-making and the most joyous festivities. The wine and other liquors flowed freely, and, while many partook of the beverage temperately, an opportunity was given to the weak and thoughtless to indulge in a reckless round of dissipation and drunkenness. The raising of the lean-to was no exception to the general custom. In the report of the expenses incident to the occasion we find the following item: "Paid for rum and charges about fish at raising the Leantoo at the Meeting-House, . . . £1 2s. 6d."

The custom of using intoxicating liquors as a beverage, which prevailed throughout New England until a comparatively recent date, was one of the besetting sins of the people of Marblehead from its earliest settlement. Not a vessel went from its harbor,





whether for a long trip to the "Banks" or for a few days fishing in the bay, without a plentiful supply of liquor. Not a vessel arrived with a fare of fish without providing "something to take" for washing-out day. The custom was so universal that even at the town-meetings liquor was provided as a matter of course.

As a consequence many persons were disorderly, and the meetings were frequently disturbed.

In 1674 the town had increased to such an extent that there were then one hundred and fourteen householders, whose names with their common age are recorded in the records. At a town-meeting, held during this year, it was voted that "all these fifteen or sixteen houses built in Marblehead, before ye year 1660, shall be allowed one cows common and a halfe."

In 1675 the war between the Massachusetts Colonists and the Indians, known as King Philip's War broke out. This terrible and bloody war lasted three years, and ended only at the death of King Philip. The whites had so diminished before its close that they began seriously to apprehend total extinction. During the year 1677, while the war was at its height, two Indians were brought as captives to Marblehead. Their fate is thus portrayed by Mr. Increase Mather in a letter dated 23d of fifth month, 1677,—

"Sabbath night was sentnight, the women at Marblehead, as they came out of the meeting house, fell upon the Indians that were brought in as captives, and in a tumultuous way, very barbarously murdered them. Doubtless if the Indians heard of the captives among them will be served accordingly."

The first school in town, of which there is any record, was opened in 1675, Mr. Edward Humphries being the teacher, and receiving forty pounds yearly for his services.

In March, 1679, it was agreed at a town-meeting "that Robert Knight shall be clearly requited and discharged from paying his Town Rates during his life for his workmanship done in the meeting-house in building the gallery. It was also voted at the same meeting "that Robert Knight hath libertie for to flow the ferry Swamps as to the benefit of his mill, and it is to continue during the townes pleasure." These votes illustrate the impulsive and generous disposition of the people of Marblehead, traits which have characterized their descendants to a marked degree ever since. But a few years before the passage of these votes, Mr. Knight, in building the lean-to, had found it necessary to cut away a post under the gallery. For this he was severely censured, and ordered to replace it under a heavy penalty. Naturally resenting the indignity he delayed his work somewhat, and the town voted if it were not completed before a certain date "to sue him, and to prosecute him from Court to Court until the case was ended." Like many others who have suffered from the temporary unpopularity which their actions have occasioned, Mr. Knight lived to see the excitement of

his fellow-citizens abate, and had the pleasure of experiencing the popular reaction in his favor, of which the votes were an evidence.

Sailors and fishermen are proverbial for their sympathy and disinterested benevolence in behalf of the distressed. The people of Marblehead have ever been a conspicuous example of this class of men, and their generosity and good heartedness is shown on nearly every page of their history. A vote passed by the commoners in 1682, gives an evidence of their kindness which should serve as an example worthy of emulation by their posterity. Richard Reed, a man advanced in years, having forfeited his land for a fish-fence, by being in arrears for rent, the town "voted in consideration of his age and losses, that he might pay two pounds, and the rest should be abated; and that he should enjoy the privilege of using the land for a fish-fence for the rest of his natural life."

The year 1684 was made memorable by the public ordination of Mr. Cheever, and the organization of a church in Marblehead. Mr. Cheever had been preaching for sixteen years, and the number of communicants had increased to fifty-four, who were in the habit of going to Salem to have the sacraments of baptism and the Lord's Supper administered. This having been found inconvenient, a vote was passed by the congregation, after the afternoon service on the 6th of July, to request Mr. Cheever to be ordained, and to take measures for the organization of a church. On the 16th of July a solemn fast was observed for the blessing of God on the undertaking, the exercises being conducted by the Rev. Mr. Hall, of Beverly. The ordination took place on the 13th of August in the presence of the Deputy Governor, five of the assistants, twenty elders and a large concourse of people.

For some time previous to the period of which we are writing, certain Indians, heirs of the squaw sachem of Saugus, had presented claims of ownership in the lands comprised in the township of Marblehead; and after several years of controversy it was decided to hold a town meeting and take appropriate action in regard to the matter. Accordingly on the 11th of July a meeting was held, and Moses Mayerick, John Devereux, Captain Samuel Ward, Thaddeus Ridden, William Beal, Richard Read and Nathaniel Waltown, with the selectmen, were chosen a committee to investigate the matter and search after the pretended claims. Messrs. John Devereux and Samuel Ward, as a sub-committee, were authorized to purchase the land and take a deed of it in the name of the town in case the claim should be found valid. The committee reported that the claim was valid, and that they had purchased the land. The town therefore appointed a committee, one of whom was the Rev. Samuel Cheever, to "proportion each Mans part according to his privilege in the township." The committee, after attending to the duty assigned them, reported that after "proportioning the amount by





cow leases, they found it to amount to nine pence per cow in money."

Passing over the events of the intervening years between 1684 and '92, of which there is no record of any importance, we come to the period when the great witchcraft delusion spread with such terrible and deadly effect among the people of Essex County. The people of Marblehead, credulous and superstitious as were the inhabitants of nearly all maritime towns, listened with awe to the tales of distress which were brought, from time to time, from their neighbors in Salem, and, clustered about their firesides or in the shops along the shore, whispered of ghosts and goblins, and told blood-curdling tales of the sea.

At this time there lived in Marblehead an old woman, the wife of a fisherman, of whose supernatural powers many weird and dreadful stories had been told. "Mammy Red" was considered a witch, and had been known to afflict those whom she disliked in various ways. To some she sent sickness and distress by wishing that a "bloody cleaver" might be found on the cradles of their infant children; and it was said that whenever the wish was uttered the cleaver was distinctly seen, and the children sickened and died. At other times, it was said, she caused the milk to curdle in the milk-pail as soon as it had left the cow; and numerous instances were cited to prove that she had often caused the butter churned by her enemies to turn to "blue wool."

In spite of the grievous manner in which they believed themselves afflicted, the kind-hearted people of Marblehead had made no complaint to the authorities of the matter, and it was reserved for several deluded young women of Salem, who had already caused much suffering in that community by their ready accusations, to cause her arrest and imprisonment. Early in the month of May, 1692, a warrant was issued by John Hathorne and Jonathan Curwin, two of the assistants, for the arrest of Wilmot Read, wife of Samuel Read, of Marblehead, who was charged with having "committed sundry acts of witchcraft on the bodies of Mary Walter and Mercy Lewis, and others, of Salem Village, to their great hurt," etc. The examination took place on the 31st of May, at the house of Lieutenant Nathaniel Ingersoll, of Salem. After listening patiently to the evidence the grand jury brought in two indictments against the woman. In one she was charged with "certain detestable arts called witchcraft and sorceries wickedly, maliciously and feloniously used, practiced and exercised at and in the town of Salem. . . . in, upon and against one Eliza Booth of Salem, single woman, by which said wicked arts ye said Eliza Booth was tortured, afflicted, consumed, pined, wasted and tormented." The other indictment charged her with practicing her "detestable arts" upon one Eliza Hubbard, of Salem.

After the examination usual in such cases at the time, with no defense, save her own vehement pro-

testations of innocence, the poor woman was condemned and sentenced to be hanged. She was executed at Gallows Hill, Salem, on the 22d of September.

## CHAPTER LXXIX.

### MARBLEHEAD—(Continued.)

*Superstitious Beliefs—The Screeching Woman—Weird Legends—St. Michael's Church—New Meeting-House Built—Marblehead in 1714—The Marblehead Bidet—Sawyer, Captain U. J. Parker.*

In the preceding chapter an evidence has been given of the superstition of the people of Essex County at the time of the ever-memorable witchcraft delusion, but it would be almost impossible to relate half the superstitious traditions firmly believed by the inhabitants of Marblehead then and for more than a century after.

Stories of phantom ships seen at sea before the loss of a vessel; of the appearance on the water of loved ones who had died at home; footsteps and voices heard mysteriously in the still hours of the night, coming as warnings from another world; signs and omens which foretold the approaching death of some member of a family, or prophecies whispered by the wind that those away on the mighty deep would find a watery grave.

These, and other stories of pirates met on the seas and smugglers who secreted their treasures along the shore, formed the burden of conversation during the long winter evenings. Of the many traditions of this kind, told with simple faith and sincere belief by our ancestors, few have come down to their descendants, and of these, the story of the screeching woman is perhaps the most vividly remembered. It was said that during the latter part of the seventeenth century a Spanish ship laden with rich merchandise was captured by pirates and brought into the harbor of Marblehead. The crew and every person on board the ill-fated ship had been murdered at the time of the capture, except a beautiful English lady, whom the ruffians brought on shore near what is now called Oakum Bay, and there barbarously murdered her. The few fishermen who inhabited the place were absent, and the women and children who remained could do nothing to prevent the crime. The screams of the victim were loud and dreadful, and her cries of "Lord, save me! oh, Lord Jesus, save me!" were distinctly heard. The body was buried where the crime was perpetrated, and for over one hundred and fifty years, on the anniversary of that dreadful tragedy, the screams of the poor woman were repeated in a voice so shrill and supernatural as to send an indescribable thrill of horror through all who heard them.

There were other beliefs as firmly held, which, though equally as superstitious, were much more agreeable and romantic. The young women, on the



nights when a new moon was to appear, would congregate at one of the houses in the neighborhood, and, putting a huge pot of tallow over the fire, would drop "hot nails" into the boiling fat, firmly believing that the young man who should appear while the nails were dropping would be the future husband of the fair damsel who dropped them. At other times the young women would go to an upper window, and, reaching half-way out, throw a ball of yarn into the street, believing that the lucky youth who picked it up would surely come forward with an offer of marriage.

Until the ordination of Mr. Cheever nearly all the marriages in town had been solemnized by Mr. Maverick, who had been appointed one of the magistrates, and was for many years the only Justice of the Peace in the place. Mr. Maverick was a selectman, town clerk, tything man, and a member of every important committee chosen by the town. Owning a considerable portion of the township, and being largely interested in the fishing trade, he was a man of great influence in the community, and his advice, when given, was followed with implicit confidence by the simple fishermen with whom he lived.

The customs of the people at this time, and for many years after, were, some of them, of the most curious nature. A marriage was the scene of the most joyous festivities, and the occasion of a season of merry-making for an entire week in duration. Everybody in the community who chose attended the wedding, and when, at a late hour in the night, the guests were ready to depart for their own homes, the bride and groom were put to bed by their maids and groomsmen, and the entire company marched around their bed, throwing old shoes and stockings, and various other missiles at them, for good luck, and by way of a parting salute.

As the town increased in importance and prosperity, the custom, so prevalent throughout New England, of presenting the pall-bearers at funerals with gloves and gold finger-rings, became very fashionable among the wealthier families. These rings were often of a very curious and unique design, and there are several of them held as heirlooms by some of the older inhabitants to-day.

For some years previous to the year 1698 it appeared that no school had been kept in Marblehead for any length of time exceeding a few brief months. In November of that year a school was opened by Mr. Josiah Cotton, who came to Marblehead at the urgent request of several of the influential inhabitants. Mr. Cotton was a young man, not quite nineteen years of age, who had but a short time before graduated from Harvard College. He was a grandson of the Rev. John Cotton, and a nephew of the celebrated Dr. Cotton Mather. The town agreed to pay him fifteen pounds a year for his services, and he received "six pence and a groate a week" from each of the scholars who attended the school. As the inhabitants

generally sent their children to the school it soon increased to seventy-five pupils, and the income of the teacher was increased to about fifty pounds per annum in silver money.

During his stay in Marblehead Mr. Cotton lived for the greater part of the time in the family of the minister, Mr. Cheever, though for a short time he boarded in the families of Captain Edward Brattle and Captain John Browne. While here he studied theology, and preached his first sermon November 23, 1701. In 1704 Mr. Cotton took his final leave of Marblehead, and some years after wrote the account of his life while here, from which we are permitted to extract the following:

"When I came to this place I was raw and young, not 19 years old, and therefore it is not to be wondered at if I gave way too much to that extravagance Intemperance, Negligence in Religion and Dissoluteness that is too rife in that place. I desire to thank God that it was no more, and to be humbled that it was so much, and to be thankful that after so much Vanity God brought me to myself and did not suffer me to be utterly ruined. In the latter end of 1703, I had thoughts of removing from Marblehead, supposing the place (then being under decay) not likely to afford me a settlement, and accordingly I left it about two months. In that time I went to Sandwich and Dartmouth, in the county of Bristol, to which I had been directed by the Boston ministers. I tarried and preached at Boston but one Sabbath.

"After my coming from thence I had several letters from my brother, Cushing and Samuel Penhallow, Esq., inviting me to keep school at Portsmouth, on the Piscataqua River, towards which I steered my course; but calling at Marblehead and they remaining still destitute of a schoolmaster, I agreed with them again (upon the advancement of my salary from the Town, under the former regulation for particular scholars, for they would not make it a free school) and tarried half a year longer in ye school, and do now to acknowledge it as a favor that my services therein as well as before was acceptable and successful.

"The people there being generally if not universally inclined to give their children common learning, the scholars rise but thin amongst them. There was but one that went from thence, whilst I kept school, to the college, and that was the minister's son, Mr. Amos Cheever, now minister at Manchester. There was another designed, viz: John Browne son of Capt. Browne, but death put an end to the design. Some of the verses composed on that sorrowful occasion are as follows:—

Death is a tribute which by nature we  
Are bound to pay unto Mortality;  
A lovely plant cropt in his tender years  
Lies here, a subject not of prayer, but tears;  
A youth who promist much, but awful death  
Hath snatched him from us and hath stop't his breath,  
And now he is gone you'll see, has left behind  
On all accounts few equals left behind.

"I have heretofore thought of writing a particular Character and description of Marblehead, or rather, history of my observations there, but upon the attempt, finding that I could not do it without too much satire and reflection (perhaps to some to whom I was obliged) I laid it aside and shall only say that the whole township is not much bigger than a large farm, and very rocky, and so they are forced to get their living out of the sea, not having room to confound the fisherman with the husbandman, and so spoil both as they do in some places. It has a very good Harbour, which they improve to the best advantage for Fishing both Summer and Winter. . . . And, finally, it is one of the best country places to keep school in, provided a man be firmly fixt in principle of Virtue and religion, which I heartily wish were more abundant among them in the life and power of it.

"My greatest intimacy whilst at Marblehead was in the family of Col. Legg, whose lady was a gentlewoman of great gravity, integrity and prudence, and with the families of Capt. John Browne and Capt. Edward Brattle, who married Col. Legg's two daughters,—by which means I had some uncomfortable jars with Colonel N. and his lady, who held no great correspondence with other families. And I would, from my own experience, advise all men, and especially young men, upon their first setting out in life, to avoid all meddling, too far, and to carry it with an equal hand towards all."





There were days when pirates infested the high seas, and Marblehead from its isolated position became a place of frequent resort for this class of outlaws. The simple-minded inhabitants, naturally hospitable, cordially welcomed all who came among them, little dreaming that at times they were harboring some of the most heartless and blood-thirsty villains that ever sailed the ocean. In July, 1703, the Brigantine Charles, Captain Daniel Plowman, Commander, was fitted out at Boston, as a privateer, to cruise against the French and Spaniards, with whom Great Britain was then at war. When a few days out Captain Plowman was taken suddenly ill, and the inhuman crew locked him in the cabin and left him to die. His body was thrown overboard, and John Quelch, the lieutenant, assumed command. With the consent and co-operation of the crew Quelch seized the vessel, and proceeded on a piratical cruise sailing to the coast of Brazil. He confined his operations to that locality, plundering several Portuguese ships and brigantines, killing the Captains and taking several negro slaves as prisoners, besides gold and other booty. In May of the following year, (1704), the brigantine arrived at Marblehead, purporting to have come from New Spain. The suspicions of the owners had been aroused, however, and a search of the vessel revealed several Portuguese flags and other articles, which confirmed the evil reports that had been heard concerning the vessel. Finding that they were detected Quelch and his crew attempted to escape, and secreted themselves along the shore. They were hotly pursued by the authorities and were finally captured. Some were found at Gloucester, others at the Isle of Shoals, while Quelch, it is said, was discovered in Marblehead. Twenty men in all were captured, and were subsequently convicted of piracy. Of these, only one, a youth of nineteen years, gave Marblehead as his birth-place. Quelch, with four of his associates, was executed at Boston June 30, 1704.

The town records of this period are very incomplete, and furnish little information concerning the customs or habits of life of the inhabitants.

In April, 1709, the commoners leased all that great head of land on the northwest side of Charles Island in Little Harbor to Edward Dimond, "shoreman," for thirteen shillings yearly. This person was probably the famous "old Dimond," of whom such fabulous stories were told and believed. It was said that he was a wizard and possessed the "black art," which enabled him to foretell coming events, to avert disaster from his friends, and bring distress upon his enemies. When the night was dark and stormy, and the wind gave evidence of blowing a gale, "old Dimond" would wend his way to the "burying hill," and there, among the graves and tomb-stones, "beat about" and give orders for the management of his vessels at sea. In a voice loud and clear, distinctly heard above the roar of the tempest, these orders

would be given, and no one dared question their power to save from shipwreck. The advice of "old Dimond" was sought by people far and near who believed in his great powers; but woe betide the evil doer who came into his presence. Once, when a guilty fellow, who had stolen wood from a poor widow, came to him for advice, the wizard "charmed" him, and caused him to walk all night with a heavy log of wood on his back. At another time, when a sum of money had been stolen from an aged couple, "old Dimond" told where it could be found, and gave the name of the thief. Let not the reader think that these stories illustrating the superstition of our ancestors are exaggerated in the least. They were told by aged people living in Marblehead but a few years ago, now at rest, who remembered with what faith and earnestness they were told by their mothers and grandmothers.

Of the same class are the stories told of the man who was chased by a corpse in a coffin, and shortly after sickened and died; of the poor fellow who was chased by his Satanic majesty himself, seated in a carriage drawn by four white horses; and of the young fisherman who arrived home in the night, and meeting the young woman to whom he was betrothed, gave her a few of the fish he had caught only to see her fade away and vanish from his sight. The next morning the heart-broken lover learned that the girl he loved had died during his absence, and became convinced that he had seen an apparition. What the ghost did with the fish has never been satisfactorily explained.

Of the events of the intervening years between 1709 and 1714 little can be ascertained. A few years previous an Episcopal Church had been gathered and a parish organized, and during the year 1714, a church edifice was erected. The funds for the erection of the building were subscribed by thirty-three gentlemen who pledged themselves in various sums to the amount of one hundred and seventy-five pounds. The list was headed by Colonel Francis Nicholson, who subscribed twenty-five pounds, and the remainder was made up by several captains of vessels in sums varying from two pounds to twelve pounds each. The frame and all the materials used in the construction of the building were brought from England. The first rector was Rev. William Shaw, who arrived and took charge of the parish on the 20th of July, 1715.

In 1714, the Rev. Mr. Cheever having become very old and infirm, his church voted to settle a younger minister with him as an assistant. Accordingly, a meeting was held, and two candidates were presented for the choice of the church, one of whom was Mr. John Barnard, of Boston, and the other Mr. Edward Holyoke. Mr. Barnard was chosen by a small majority, and at a town meeting convened for the purpose, the choice of the church was ratified by the town. This action on the part of the town was far from satisfactory to the adherents of Mr. Holyoke,



and occasioned a controversy which resulted in a division of the church and the withdrawal of the disaffected members. The town voted to grant permission for the organization of another church and the erection of a new meeting-house, and a charter was obtained from the General Court. The members of the First Church sent an earnest and solemn protest to the Governor and the Legislature against the formation of a new church, declaring that as there was already one "church and one meeting-house in the place," the erection of a third place of worship would disturb the peace of the town. They also charged their brethren who desired to form the new church with the grave offense of going about the town and "defaming and vilifying the character of Mr. Barnard." On the 9th of November, 1715, Mr. Barnard entered upon his duties as the assistant pastor of the First Church, and on the 25th of April, 1716, the new meeting-house having been erected, the Second Congregational Church was organized, and Mr. Holyoke was ordained as pastor. The ordination of Mr. Barnard took place on the 18th of July of the same year.

The condition of the town at this time is described by Mr. Barnard in his autobiography as miserable in the extreme. He says: "When I first came [in 1714], there were two companies of poor, smoke dried, rude, ill clothed men, trained to no military discipline but that of 'Whipping the Snake,' as it was called. There was not so much as one proper carpenter, nor mason, nor tailor, nor butcher in the town, nor any market worth naming; but they had their houses built by country workmen, and their clothes made out of town, and supplied themselves with beef and pork from Boston, which drained the town of its money. And what above all, I would remark, there was not so much as one foreign trading vessel belonging to the town, nor for several years after I came into it; though no town had really greater advantages in their hands. The people contented themselves to be slaves that digged in the mines, and left the merchants of Boston, Salem and Europe, to carry away the gains, by which means the town was always dismally poor in circumstances, involved in debt to the merchants more than they were worth; nor could I find twenty families in it that upon the best examination could stand upon their own legs; and they were generally as rude, swearing, drunken and fighting a crew as they were poor."

Though the influence of Mr. Barnard the people were finally induced to send their own fish to market, Mr. Joseph Sweett being the first man to engage in the enterprise. He fitted out a small schooner, which he sent to the Barbadoes with a cargo of fish, and, being successful, was in a few years enabled to build vessels and send his to European markets. In a short time others, encouraged by his success, engaged in the business, and the town enjoyed an era of prosperity such as it had never known before. Good

workmen of every description now abounded in the place, and from their more frequent intercourse with the outside world, the air of isolation which had so long characterized the inhabitants, began to wear off to a certain extent, and though their manners were somewhat rude, they became noted for their kindness and hospitality to strangers.

At this time, and several generations later, the town was noted throughout New England for the peculiar dialect of its people. So broad and quick was their pronunciation, and so strange were the idioms characterizing their speech, that a native of the town was known wherever he went. Nor was this peculiarity confined to any class or condition of men residing in the town. All showed it alike, of whatever rank or condition in life. The words were clipped off very shortly, and in some sections there was a slight difference in the dialect noticeable. The "Cunny Land" people always dropped the "h" in speaking, and their vernacular was much like that of a Cockney Englishman, in addition to that which betrayed them "to the manner born."

Hardly a family in the olden time escaped with the correct pronunciation of its name. So accustomed were many of the inhabitants to the cognomen, by which they were known, that in some instances they did not recognize their own names when called by them. An instance of this kind is related in the "Life and Letters of Judge Story," who was a native of the town.

"Once while he was trying a case in the Circuit Court, in Boston, the clerk called out the name of one of the jury as Michael Trebley (it being so-spelt). No answer was given. Again he was called, and still there was silence. 'It is very strange,' said the clerk, 'I saw that man here not two minutes ago.' 'Where does he come from?' asked the judge. 'Marblehead, may it please your Honor,' said the clerk. 'It must be the case,' said the judge, 'let me see the list.' The clerk handed it up to him. He looked at the name a minute, and, handing back the list, said 'call Mike Treep' (throwing the accent on the last syllable). 'Here!' answered a gruff voice. 'Why did you not answer before?' said the clerk. 'Trefley is no way to pronounce my name,' said the jurymen, 'my name is Mike Treep, as the judge knows.'"

Another anecdote to the same purpose is related in the work.

On one occasion, when some of our fishermen were in court to settle a matter which had taken place on the Grand Banks (of Newfoundland), one being called upon to state what he knew, said "that the skipper and one of his shipmates had what he called a 'jor of ile'." The presiding judge in vain endeavored to get a more intelligible answer, and finally Judge Story was called upon, as usual, to act as interpreter to his townsman, which he did, telling the court that the 'jor of ile,' in the Marblehead dialect, was a 'jow awhile,' which, being interpreted, meant that the two men abused each other grossly for some time."

Though the dialect once so general among the people is now almost extinct, there are many words used occasionally, to know the meaning of which would puzzle a stranger. Often when any of the natives feel slightly cold or chilly they will say that they are "*crimmy*." If they lose their way in the dark and become confused or bewildered, they will say they were "pixelated." In speaking of the ceiling of a room some of the older people still call it the "*planch*."





ment." When a lady, on examining of sewing, finds that it is carelessly, or improperly done, it is not unusual to hear her pronounce the work "a *frouch*." When food has been improperly prepared, or is not sufficiently cooked, it is spoken of as "a *catch*."

When very angry for any reason, it is a common occurrence to hear some one exclaim "Squael 'im up!" "Squael something at him!" or "He ought to be squaeled up!" which being interpreted, means "Throw something at him!" "Stone him!" or "He ought to be stoned."

A crumb or a small piece of anything to eat, is called a "*grummet*," and a sulky or ill-natured person is said to be "*grudy*."

The difficulties against which the fishermen and sailors on board the merchant vessels of the colony, were obliged to contend were for many years greatly augmented by pirates, who infested the waters on the coast of North America. In June, 1722, Edward Low, a noted pirate, while cruising near Cape Sables, took possession of the schooner *Mary*, of Marblehead, Thomas Freiry, master, and after robbing several other vessels in the vicinity, made prisoners of Nicholas Merritt, master of the *Shallop Jane*; Philip Ashton, Jr., master of the schooner *Milton*; Joseph Libby, one of the Ashton's crew; and Lawrence Phabens, one of the crew of the schooner *Rebekah*. These were all active men about twenty years of age, and though they pleaded tearfully to be released, were forced into the service of the pirates. Unfortunately no record had been preserved by which the experience of the prisoners can be narrated, except in the case of Ashton. Confined on board the pirate ship, narrowly watched, and continually in fear that his life would be taken, he was obliged to perform the most menial services. His sufferings from hardship and the cruelty of the crew at length became so unendurable, that he resolved to make his escape even at the risk of his life. For months, no opportunity presented itself; but in March, 1723, the vessel stopped at a small desolate island off the West Indies to obtain fresh water. Here Ashton was sent on shore to assist in rolling the hogsheds to the watering-place. Watching his opportunity, he at length succeeded in eluding the vigilance of his captors, and running to the woods, concealed himself in the thick brush with which the island abounded. Supposing at first that he had gone to gather coconuts, the pirates made no search for him, but finding that he did not return, they made a diligent search, coming several times so near his place of concealment that he could distinctly hear their conversation. At length, getting out of patience, they decided to leave without him, and to his great joy, Ashton saw the vessel sail away from the island.

But though liberated from the pirates his hardships were not an end. Alone on a desert island, with no shelter from the weather, and with very scanty means of subsistence, his sufferings at length became very

intense. His feet became sore and blistered from exposure, and at length, to add to his misfortunes, he was nearly prostrated by sickness.

While in this condition, he was attacked by a company of Spaniards who visited the island, and narrowly escaped with his life.

Finally, in March, 1725 nearly three years after he fell into the hands of the pirates, he was taken from the island by Captain Dove, of Salem, who had put in there for water. When released from his perilous situation the poor fellow had scarcely a rag of clothing left, and the kind-hearted sailors were obliged to clothe him from their own scanty wardrobes.

On his arrival in Marblehead, Ashton was received as one from the dead. On the following Sunday, the Rev. John Barnard preached a sermon concerning his miraculous escape, the text being: Daniel iii. 17, "If it be so, our God whom we serve, is able to deliver us from the burning fiery furnace, and he will deliver us out of thine hand, O King."

Nicholas Merritt had a similar experience. After being with the banditti several months, he found means to escape, though he did not return to Marblehead for more than a year after.

## CHAPTER LXXX.

### MARBLEHEAD (Continued).

*Town House Built—Etiquette of Small Ports—Rev. Edward Holyoke—Pirates on Marblehead—The Story of Agass's Sailing—A Boy's Apprenticeship—Law as practiced at Newport—The French and Indian War.*

IN 1724, the town having developed into a comparatively prosperous and enterprising community, various measures of public utility and improvement were adopted. The old meeting-house was enlarged by an addition twenty feet long built at the southeast end. Permission was granted to Nathan Bowen to open a public school, and it was voted to increase the salary of the schoolmaster and to adopt some "proper method of paying Mr. Cheever his salary." The town seems to have experienced great difficulty in obtaining school-teachers, and finally, at a town meeting held March 4, 1727, it was voted to authorize the selectmen to hire a schoolmaster at a salary of not more than eighty pounds the first year. At the same meeting it was voted to build a town-house, and the selectmen were chosen a committee to "treat with some workmen in order for the building said house and make return to ye next town-meeting." It was also voted that "the Town House shall be built on ye land where ye Gale and Cagge now stands on."<sup>1</sup> At a subsequent meeting, on the 17th of April, the town voted, in accordance with the report of the

<sup>1</sup> Jail and cage.





selectmen, to build "the town house fifty feet long, thirty feet wide and thirty-three feet stud." The selectmen were chosen to superintend the erection of the building, and the following year, 1728, the work was completed. The first town-meeting held in the town-house after its completion, was probably held March 17, 1728, as that is the date of the first meeting called there of which there is any record.

On the 22d of November, 1728, Governor Burnet visited the town. He was met at the "bounds of the town" by about fifty gentlemen on horseback, and the local militia, under arms, and escorted to the residence of John Oulton, Esq., where dinner was served. "The streets being lined on both sides"—we are informed by a Boston paper of the period—"for the Cavalcade to pass thro', after which the Militia were drawn up before the Door and fired three volleys (the Hon. Samuel Browne, Esq., Col. of the Regiment being present and gave the words of command) and then all the Cannon of the several ships in the harbor were discharged; the like appearance was never known in this place before."

During the month of May, 1730, intelligence was received in Marblehead that the small-pox was raging in the town of Boston. As rumors of the fatal effects of this dread and loathsome disease became more prevalent the excitement of the people approached almost to frenzy. A town-meeting was called and it was voted to build a fence across the road near the entrance to the town. This fence was provided with a gate, which was kept locked and four men were stationed as a guard, with instructions to "restrain all strangers from Boston entering the town." The guard was kept on day and night for over two months, being relieved every twenty-four hours. Negroes, Indians and mulatto slaves were forbidden to walk the streets after nine o'clock at night, and every possible precaution was taken to prevent the disease from making its appearance. But in vain. In October a young woman named Hannah Waters was taken sick, and the disease to the consternation of the inhabitants proved to be the small-pox in its most contagious form. The pestilence, having obtained a foot-hold, spread from house to house in defiance of the almost superhuman efforts of the panic-stricken inhabitants, and ere long nearly every family was afflicted by sickness or death. Many of the people in their terror fled from the town. Business of all kinds was suspended, and quarantine was declared against Marblehead by all the neighboring towns. Nurses in attendance upon the sick were forbidden to appear in the streets, and all dogs running at large were ordered to be killed. The disease continued its fearful ravages till late in the summer of 1731, and gathered its victims with an unsparing hand. Rich and poor, old and young, the learned and the unlettered, were alike afflicted by this unsparing agent of death, and finally only two members of the Board of Selectmen remained to dis-

charge the duties of their office. A meeting was called by a justice of the peace, for the first time in the history of the town, and others were elected to fill the vacancies. The town was not declared free from the disease until nearly a year after its appearance. The number of deaths caused by the pestilence is not recorded, but it is certain that few towns in the country have ever been visited by a calamity more fatal or disastrous in its effect.

The people had not recovered from the blighting effects of the terrible visitation to which they had been subjected, when another burden was laid upon them. As soon as the fishing business began to resume its accustomed activity a law was passed by the General Court, requiring a tax of six pence per month from every fisherman in the province. The penalty for the non-payment of this tax was a fine of twenty pounds sterling. The passage of this act was regarded as a great hardship by the fishermen of Marblehead, who complained that they could barely obtain a livelihood, and could ill afford to pay the tax. Finally, Benjamin Boden, a man more daring than his associates, determined to resist what he termed "the imposition," and flatly refused to comply with the requirements of the law. The collector, William Fairchild, Esq., after vainly demanding the tax, brought a suit against the delinquent for the amount. This action on the part of the collector caused great excitement throughout the town, and finally a town-meeting was called to consider the matter. At this meeting the tax was denounced as unjust and oppressive, and the town voted to pay the penalty and the cost of any suit or suits arising from a resistance to the six-penny act.

On the 30th of May, 1737, the Rev. Edward Holyoke, pastor of the Second Congregational Church, was unanimously chosen by the Board of Overseers of Harvard College to fill the office made vacant by the death of President Wadsworth. At first his people strenuously objected to his acceptance of the office, but after several meetings for prayer and conference had been held, they gave their consent, and Mr. Holyoke departed for Cambridge. At the last of these meetings prayer was offered by the Rev. John Barnard, who prayed long and earnestly that the people might be reconciled to part with their pastor. The prayer had the desired effect, and when some of the people were asked why they consented to part with so valuable a man and so excellent a pastor, the quaint reply was,— "Old Barnard prayed him away."

In April, 1742, the General Court granted the sum of five hundred and fifty pounds for the purpose of erecting a fortification for the defense of the harbor against the French cruisers. This action, though in accordance with a petition from the town presented a few years before, was the cause of a great deal of contention, and not a little ill feeling, among the inhabitants.

Three gentlemen were chosen treasurers of the



fund, and a committee of five were elected to call upon the captain-general and receive the money, with instructions to pay it over to the treasurers. The most careful preparations were made for the security of the money when it should be received. An iron-bound chest was provided, fastened with two locks, and the town voted that it should not be opened except in the presence of all three of the treasurers. A few days after the passage of this vote two of the treasurers announced their refusal to serve, and Thomas Gerry and Nathan Bowen were chosen to fill the vacancies, the other treasurer being Captain Joseph Swett. The committee chosen to receive the money did not pay it over to the treasurers as soon as was thought proper, and finally, at a meeting held in November, the treasurers were authorized to sue them in the name of the town. This vote does not appear to have been carried into effect, however; and at a meeting held in January, 1743, the selectmen were authorized to call upon the committee and demand a report of what had been done with the money. It is probable that the committee held the money in their hands upon some legal technicality, for at another meeting the town treasurer was authorized to receive it, and no more is said of the matter in the records. Another grant of one hundred and sixty-six pounds had been made by the General Court in November, and the fort was probably completed in the latter part of the year 1742. This fort, which is still standing, was afterwards ceded to the United States, and for many years has been known as Fort Sewall, having been named in honor of Chief Justice Samuel Sewall, a distinguished citizen of Marblehead. It was fortified during the Revolution and in the War of 1812, and again during the Rebellion, when it was remodeled.

At the time of which we write Marblehead boasted a public house or tavern, known as the "Fountain Inn." To this house the captains of vessels and the gentry of the colony resorted when they visited the town, and there the fishermen, many of them, spent their evenings and their money when they returned from successful voyages. It was whispered that certain pirates and smugglers who were known to have visited the town had found a friendly shelter beneath its roof. These stories may or may not have been true, but there were those living who remembered when a gang of pirates had been apprehended and arrested in the streets of Marblehead. They remembered also, with what a lavish hand these pirates expended their money, and the excitement caused in the town when several of the inhabitants were arrested for receiving it. The "Fountain Inn," however, was to be made famous by a more romantic tale than any yet related by the gossiping girls and women of the village. One day in the autumn of 1742 a "coach and four" drove up to the door of the inn, and a young and handsome gentleman alighted and entered. The guest was Sir Henry Frankland, then

collector of the port of Boston, who had come to Marblehead to superintend the building of the fort, which was then in process of erection. As he entered the house he was impressed by the surpassing beauty of a young girl, apparently about sixteen years of age, who, on her bended knees, was scrubbing the stairs. Noticing that her dress was poor and scanty, and that her feet were destitute of shoes and stockings, he called her to his side and presenting her with money, told her to purchase a pair of shoes. The artless simplicity, the beauty, and exceedingly musical voice of the young girl interested Frankland, and he at once made inquiries concerning her history. Her name, he learned, was Agnes Surriage, and that she was the daughter of Edward Surriage, a poor but honest fisherman. A short time after, when Frankland again visited the town, he was surprised to find the little maid still working without shoes and stockings, and to his inquiry why she had not purchased them she replied: "I have indeed, sir, with the crown you gave me; but I keep them to wear to meeting." Sir Harry's heart was touched. Taking the blushing girl by the hand, he said: Would you like to go to school? Will you go with me if I will take you from this life of toil and drudgery? I will educate you, and you shall be a lady." Then seeking her parents, he obtained their permission to remove her to Boston, where she was permitted to enjoy the best educational advantages the place then afforded. For several years she pursued her studies at school, and acquired a knowledge of all the graces and accomplishments then thought necessary for a well bred and fashionable lady.

The beauty of Sir Harry Frankland's ward was for some time the theme of conversation in the aristocratic circles of Boston. A few years, and their relations were discussed in a far different manner. Charges of improper intimacy were freely made, and with Puritanic firmness the polite society of the town refused to recognize one whom they believed to be guilty of transgressing the most holy laws of God and man. Poor Agnes. Her benefactor had indeed succeeded in gaining her affections, but the pride of race and position prevented him from wedding one whom he considered of ignoble birth. The indignation of the people against "an alliance unsanctioned by the holy rite of matrimony" at length became so great that "the young collector resolved to seek a residence for himself, Agnes and her relatives, in the seclusion of the country. Accordingly he purchased a tract of land in the village of Hopkinton, where, on a hill commanding a full view of the surrounding country, he erected a commodious manor house. The grounds were laid out in a beautiful and artistic manner. Trees and shrubs, and choice plants of almost every description were set out to adorn the estate, which soon became one of the finest country seats in the province. For several years Frankland and Agnes Surriage resided at Hopkinton, surrounded with every comfort which





wealth could command, and devoting themselves wholly to the pleasures of a life of ease. The labor of the plantation was performed by slaves, upon whom the entire care of the vast estate devolved, while their master was hunting, riding or fishing with his lady.

During the year 1754 Frankland was unexpectedly called to England to transact business of importance, and embarked with Agnes Surriage, for London. On his arrival he attempted to introduce his fair ward into the circle of his family, but in spite of his most earnest solicitations in her behalf she was treated with the utmost disdain.

Having settled the business upon which he had been called to London, the young baronet spent a few months in making a tour of Europe, and then, with his ward, proceeded to Lisbon, the capital of Portugal, where he hired a house and entered at once into the gay round of fashionable life. It was during their residence in Lisbon that the great earthquake of November, 1755, occurred, which brought Frankland to a realization of the wicked and dissolute life he was leading, and caused him to do all in his power to repair the wrongs he had done poor Agnes Surriage. The day was All-Saints-day, one of the greatest festivals of the Roman Catholic and Anglican churches, and almost the entire population of the great city had assembled in the churches, when the shock of the earthquake burst upon them, burying thousands in the ruins of the falling temples. Frankland was riding with a lady to attend the services at one of the churches, when the walls of a building tottered, and fell over them, enveloping horses, carriage, and its occupants in the ruins. The death agony of the unfortunate lady was so great that she bit entirely through the sleeve of the scarlet coat of her companion, and tore a piece of flesh from his arm. The horses were instantly killed, and only Frankland was spared alive. Buried beneath the ruins he made a solemn vow that if it pleased God to deliver him from death he would thenceforth lead a better life. Meanwhile, where was Agnes Surriage? Left alone in the house of her lover, she ran into the street upon the first intimation of the impending danger, and so, miraculously, her life had been spared. Wandering almost frantic with grief among the ruins, the sound of a well known voice arrested her attention, and, recognizing it as Frankland's, she worked with almost superhuman strength to secure his release. In the course of an hour her efforts were successful, and the baronet was rescued from the horrors of a living tomb. He was carried to a house near by, his wounds were dressed, and then, faithful to his vow a priest was sent for, and Agnes Surriage received the reward of her love and self-sacrificing devotion, and became the Lady Agnes Frankland.

Sir Harry and his wife set out for England shortly after their marriage, and then, to make the solemn rite doubly sure, they were again married on board the boat during their passage, by a clergyman of the

Church of England. On their arrival in London the Lady Agnes was received with every mark of esteem by the family of her husband, and her charming manners readily gained access to the most cultivated and aristocratic circles of the city.

After a brief residence in London and Lisbon, Sir Harry and Lady Frankland returned to Boston, where they bought an elegant mansion in the most aristocratic portion of the town for a winter residence, spending their summers on the beautiful estate at Hopkinton.

Frankland was appointed consul-general of Portugal in 1757, and in that capacity resided in Lisbon for several years. In 1763 he, with Lady Frankland, returned to America, and resided at Hopkinton, until his declining health caused him to leave the country and take up a residence at Bath, England, where he died in 1768, at the age of fifty-two years. After the death of her husband, Lady Agnes returned to her estate at Hopkinton, where she continued to reside respected and beloved by all who knew her, till the summer of 1775, when the breaking out of the Revolution caused her to return to England. As her carriage was on the way to Boston it was stopped by a company of Continental Soldiers, under command of Abner Croft, a zealous patriot, and Lady Frankland and her goods were held in custody until released by order of the Committee of Safety. Defended by a guard of soldiers her carriage was finally permitted to enter Boston, and while there she witnessed, from the windows of her residence, the terrible conflict at Bunker Hill. Shortly after, she sailed for England, and after residing in the Frankland family for several years, was married to John Drew, Esq., a wealthy banker of Chichester. She died April 23, 1783, at the age of fifty-seven years. The estate at Hopkinton was bequeathed, at her death, to her sister, Mrs. Swain, and finally passed into the hands of her brother, Isaac Surriage, the last member of her family who owned it.

Such is the story of Agnes Surriage, the daughter of a poor fisherman of Marblehead.

During the year 1741, Whitefield the celebrated evangelist visited the town. Here, as elsewhere throughout the province his labors produced the most violent and intense excitement. The Rev. Mr. Malcolm, rector of St. Michael's Church, engaged in an exciting discussion with him relative to some of his teachings, and the cause of Whitefield was warmly espoused by the pastors of the Congregational Churches.

The controversy incident to the advent of Whitefield had not closed when the difficulties which had long been threatening with France developed into a declaration of war. An expedition was planned for the conquest of Louisburg, an important French stronghold, and the plans were rejected by the legislature. Upon the petition of the merchants of Boston and Salem, and the fishermen of



Marblehead, the vote was reconsidered, and the plans were adopted by a majority of a single vote. The expedition, consisting of three thousand men and several frigates and gun-boats, was at length fitted out, and the command was given to Sir William Pepperell. Many of the sailors who manned the gun-boats were fishermen from this port. The town records bear testimony to the interest manifested by the inhabitants in the result of the contest. The fort was put in readiness to repel an attack at any moment. Breast-works were erected along the coves and beaches of the town. Parapets to "cover our men," and to "oppose and annoy the enemy should they attempt to land" were constructed at every vulnerable point. For days the men were summoned at the beat of the drum early in the morning to assist in erecting these fortifications, and it was determined to give the enemy a deadly reception. But for once the heroic fishermen did not have a chance to display their bravery. Their warlike preparations were hardly completed before the news was received of the success of the expedition, and the surrender of Louisburg.

In May, 1747, a school for poor children, was established through the generosity of Mr. Robert Hooper, Jr., who agreed to pay the necessary expenses and the salary of the teacher, if the town would fit up and furnish a school-house. The proposal was accepted and the selectmen were instructed to "fit up the school-house and grant a lease" of it for the purpose.

The town at this time is estimated to have contained about four hundred and fifty houses. The fishery had increased to such an extent that over eighty schooners sailed from the harbor, and six hundred men and boys were employed in the industry. This comprised, probably nearly the entire male population of the town. When a boy had attained the age of eleven or twelve years he was sent to sea, and there were many instances where children of not more than nine years of age were taken to "the banks" to assist in the support of a large family. During the first four years of a boy's life at sea he was termed a "cut-tail," from the fact that he received pay only for the fish actually caught by himself, and was obliged to cut a small piece from the tail of every fish he caught to distinguish them from the others when the fare was weighed and sold. A full crew consisted of eight persons, four of whom were "sharesmen," the others being boys in various stages of apprenticeship. When, after an experience of four years, a boy was considered competent to catch a full share of fish, he was promoted to the important post of "header," and was admitted to the rights and privileges of a "sharesman." As he became qualified he could then assume the duties of "splitter" or "salter" if he chose; but it was necessary for him to pass through all the various grades of labor in order to obtain a thorough knowl-

edge of the business before he could be permitted to take command of a vessel, and became a "skipper."

The fishermen lived on equal terms on board their vessels. Every man was personally interested in the result of the voyage, and all worked with untiring energy for a successful trip and as large a fare as possible. Dory and trawl fishing were then unknown. The fishing was done entirely from the vessels, and every man had his appointed station and was expected to be at the lines during the entire trip.

The boats usually went to the banks twice a year, in the spring and in the fall, and remained from three to five months, or until a full fare was obtained. On their return the salt was washed from the fish and they were then cured on flakes in the open air.

The year 1751 marks an important era in the annals of Marblehead. During that year the fire department was organized. As the township was composed almost entirely of wooden buildings, the necessity of procuring a fire engine was considered of the utmost importance, and in November, 1750, a vote was passed authorizing the selectmen to purchase an engine of the third size, with the necessary pipes and a dozen leather buckets. This vote does not appear to have been carried into effect, however, nor was there any necessity for so doing. Robert Hooper, Esq., a wealthy and generous merchant, anticipating the needs of the community in which he resided, ordered an engine at his own expense, and on its arrival, in March of the following year, presented it to the town. The simple record of the fact speaks volumes for the unostentatious manner of its presentation, and the gratitude with which it was received. "March 19, 1751, voted the thanks of the town to Robert Hooper, Esq., for his donation of a Fire Engine, this day made to the town."

At the same meeting the fire department was organized by the election of a board of firewards as follows:

"*Voted*, That Capt. Nathan Bowen, Capt. George Newmarsh, Robert Hooper, Esq., Capt. Richard Reed and Mr. Jeremiah Lee, be Firewards for the year ensuing." The firewards were authorized to appoint a suitable company for the engine, or any other engine which should belong to the town, "and to covenant with those appointed to work and govern them that they shall be exempt from Military duty and from serving as fence viewers, hog-reeves, or tything men, so long as they shall serve in said company."

There appears to be no record of the names of those assigned to the engine, but a few years later (1755) the firewards appointed Robert Harris, captain of the "Great Fire Engine," with the following company: Will. Bowden, John Bowden, Henry Trevett, John Pearce, Richard Wood, William Bassett, John Andrews, Robert Harris, John Neal, Joseph Bubier, Benjamin Darling, 3d, Benjamin Doe, 1st.

The engine presented by Mr. Hooper, was undoubtedly the "Friend," which was located on Front Street near Goodwin's Court. The next engine, which was purchased for the town in London, and was probably that named the "Endeavor." It was





located for many years near "Newtown Bridge," on the corner of Washington and School Streets.

During the year 1752, the small-pox again broke out in Boston, and the usual precautions were adopted to prevent the disease from making its appearance in Marblehead. A board fence was placed at the entrance to the town, strangers were forbidden to enter, and it was voted to send "no representative to the General Court that year." In spite of every precaution, including a general inoculation of the inhabitants, the disease again made its appearance and raged for several months with great severity, though not with the fatal effect of the pestilence of 1730.

The bill imposing an excise duty on spirituous liquors, wines, lemons, oranges, etc., which became a law, by act of the General Court, in 1754, was strenuously opposed by the inhabitants of Marblehead. The town had now become one of the most important ports of entry in the province. The foreign trade was yearly assuming proportions which gave the most encouraging signs of a prosperous future. The wealth of the merchants was increasing rapidly, and the people were reaping a rich reward from their industry. The wharves teemed with shipping, and the merchants of Marblehead were to be found in almost every port of importance in Europe.

Under these circumstances, the granting of an excise to the King was considered as especially burdensome to the people of Marblehead, and several town meetings were held to consider the matter, and to protest against the passage of the act. The representative in the General Court was instructed to use all proper means to prevent it from becoming a law; and finally, at a town meeting, held in January, 1755, six of the most prominent merchants were chosen a committee to "petition His Majesty to disallow the act." The members of this committee were Robert Hooper, Esq., Mr. Ebenezer Stacey, Colonel Jacob Fowle, Colonel Jeremiah Lee, and Captain Isaac Freeman, who were authorized to employ an eminent London lawyer to act as the agent of the town and petition the King in its behalf.

In 1755, the war known as the "French and Indian War" broke out. As soon as hostilities were actually begun, the town took measures for its defense. "A powder-house or magazine, suitable for securing ammunition," was built by vote of the town, Colonel Jacob Fowle, Colonel Jeremiah Lee, and Major Richard Reed being members of the building committee. The depredations of the French on the sea against the commerce and fisheries of the English colonies, during the following year, were severely felt in Marblehead. Several vessels with their crews, belonging here, were captured while on the fishing banks, causing great distress among their families and great excitement in the town. The exposed condition of the harbor caused serious apprehensions of an attack from the enemy when the people were least prepared to meet it, and it was finally voted to present a petition

to the lieutenant-governor, praying for the protection of the province. The petition of the fishing interest stated that "In time of war the fishery is prosecuted with much greater difficulty and risk than any other branch of business, as will appear by the late capture of many of our vessels by the French, while on the fishing banks."

The disadvantages to which the commercial and fishing interests of the colonies were subjected cannot be better illustrated than by the seizures by the French of merchant and fishing vessels belonging in Marblehead.

In December, 1756, the schooner *Swallow*, owned by Robert Hooper, Esq., and commanded by Capt. Philip Lewis, sailed from Marblehead to the West Indies. On the 13th of the month, having been out but a few days, the schooner was captured by two French cruisers, and carried into Martinico. The crew was imprisoned, and the officers, Capt. Lewis, Mr. Ashley Bowen and Mr. George Crowninshield, the first and second mates, were confined in a public house and closely guarded. Watching their opportunity, they finally succeeded in eluding the vigilance of the guard, and escaped from the house. Seizing a small schooner which lay in the harbor, they sailed away under cover of night, and at length reached St. Eustatia, where they found friends and were kindly treated. Among others who were there was Mr. Lewis Freeman of Marblehead, who had purchased a sloop, and was looking for some competent person to take command and go to Marblehead in her with a cargo of molasses. As Capt. Lewis did not wish to undertake the voyage, Mr. Bowen was appointed, and the vessel reached Marblehead in safety. The unfortunate crew of the *Swallow*, who were imprisoned in Martinico, were detained as prisoners until the close of the war.

They were then released, and were obliged to work their way home on board of vessels bound for various ports in the colony.

Early in the month of April, 1759, messengers were sent to Marblehead to obtain recruits for the naval service. Active preparations were then in progress for the siege of Quebec, and the town's proportion of men needed for this service was forty-five able seamen. Mr. Ashley Bowen engaged as a midshipman, and in a short time thirty-two others enlisted as common sailors. Each man received a bounty, and a certificate signed by the Governor, promising that they should not be detained in the service longer than the time for which they enlisted; that they should be free from imprisonment, and landed in Boston after their discharge. On the 12th of April, they sailed from Marblehead for Halifax, where they arrived on the 16th, and the next day were assigned to their respective ships. Sixteen were placed on board the *Pembroke*, a frigate of sixty guns, under command of Capt. Wheelock, and the others were assigned to the ship *Squirrel*. These ships in com-





pany with a fleet under command of Rear Admiral Darrell, sailed for the St. Lawrence and arrived before Quebec with the expedition commanded by Gen. Wolfe during the latter part of June. On the night of June 28th a raft of fire barges was sent down from Quebec for the purpose, if possible, of destroying the fleet. The raft was grappled by the sailors before it approached near enough to do any damage, and was towed near the shore and anchored, the sailors continually repeating "All's well!" From a remark in "Knox's Journal" concerning the affair we are led to believe that some of the men detained for this work were from Marblehead. "A remarkable expression from some of these intrepid souls to their comrades, I must not omit from its singular uncouthness. 'Damn me, Jack, didst thee ever take hell in tow before?'"

On the 13th of September, in the darkness of the early morning, the boats of the fleet moved down the river, and when the sun rose the astonished French commander beheld the army of Wolfe upon the Plains of Abraham. Without a moment's hesitation Montcalm began preparations for the battle. At sunset the contest was over, Quebec was in possession of the English, and the gallant commanders of both armies were mortally wounded. With this victory the war was virtually ended. With the fall of Quebec, Canada was lost to France forever, and with it the last hope of further possessions in America.

Just one week from the day of the battle the men of Marblehead were discharged from the service, and with others, to the number of one hundred and sixty, were put on board the ship "Thornton," and transported to Boston. On the passage homeward many of the men were sick, and thirty-five of them died. The following are the names of the Marblehead men engaged in the siege of Quebec. On board the "Pembroke:" Ashley Bowen, midshipman; William Horn, Edward Akes, Jonathan Welch, Robert Bartlett, Garrett Farrel, John Bateman, Isaac Warren (died) Robert Thompson (died), Thomas Woodfin, Miles Dollan, Edward Kendeley Benjamin Nichols, Arthur Lloyd, Edward Soverin, Zebury Paine, Frederick Swaburgs.

On board the "Squirrel:" John Melford, Thomas Dove, William Matthews, John Stateman, John Goldsmith (died), Thomas Valpey, Samuel Look (did not return), Francis Misalt, Robert Linetted (did not return), William Corkering (did not return), Charles Jacobs, William Uncals, Walter Stevens (did not return), Samuel Linir (died), Thomas Peach (died).

On the 2d of January, 1761, the schooner "Prince of Orange," Nathan Bowen, master, sailed from Marblehead for some port in Spain or Portugal. While on the passage, February 10th, she was overtaken and captured by the French brig "Gentile," of Bayonne. Mr. Bowen, in an account of the affair, written while in prison, says, "I was robbed of chest and clothes, and was in other respects ill-used. On Tues-

day, 17th, we arrived at St. Andreas; on Monday, 23d, sailed from thence in company with my schooner bound for Passage, and on the next day arrived there. The next morning we were all sent to France, and on the next day were twenty in number confined in this castle, and when we shall get clear God only knows." The prison was Bayonne Castle, France. The only men of the crew whose names can be ascertained were Samuel Levis, William Hannover, Joseph Lye, Thomas Trefry, Amos Grandy and Edward Hallowell.

It is a matter of sincere regret that no more can be learned concerning this war, of a local nature. But that the town of Marblehead suffered as much from its effects as any other town in the province, and that its people behaved with a heroism and bravery which shed lustre upon their annals, is sufficient for us to know.

At the annual town-meeting, held in March, 1761, it was voted, on account of the increasing "poor, idle, vagrant and disorderly persons," to erect a work-house on the back side of the piece of ground called "the negro burying-place." The sum of five hundred pounds was appropriated to build it, and the selectmen were instructed to petition the Legislature for permission to use a part of the new building as a house of correction. The building was erected on what is now known as Back Street, opposite the head of Pearl Street.

The following year the selectmen were instructed to name all the streets and alley-ways in the town, and to cause the names to be recorded in the records and published at the town-house. Previous to this, the streets had been known by the most curious names, some of them not suitable for ears polite. In many instances some prominent landmark gave the name to the lane on which it stood or which led to it. New Meeting-House Lane, Wharf Lane, Pond Lane, Frog Lane, Ferry Lane, and others of a similar nature made up the simple list, and answered every purpose as well as the more pretentious titles by which many of these very streets are known at present. They were properly denominated lanes, for they were nothing else. The laying out of a street was an action undreamed of in the simple and unpretending community. The inhabitants built their houses anywhere, provided only that they owned the land, and there was no arbitrary custom to dictate which end should be the front or which the back. The lanes were made afterwards for convenience, and to name the narrow paths would to them have seemed an absurdity.

As the town increased in population and various improvements were made, the old meeting-house was removed to a more convenient locality, at the junction of what are now known as Orne, Franklin and Washington Streets. A house owned by Richard Ireson was found to project so far into the street which led to the meeting-house that it was impossible



for a carriage to pass it, and finally the town voted to remove the northwest end. Several feet were accordingly cut off, the house being sawed nearly in halves. The end towards the street was boarded up, and there it remains to this day,<sup>1</sup> with not a single window in it except a very small one near the roof. During the year 1763 the town voted to open a market in the lower part of the town-house, and eleven very stringent rules were adopted for its government, a clerk being chosen annually to see that they were enforced. These rules provided that no putrid or impure meat should be offered for sale; and that the market should be opened every Tuesday and Thursday in the year till one o'clock in the afternoon, and till sunset on Saturdays. All persons were forbidden to buy provisions in the market with intent to sell the same at a greater price. All meat left in the market after the hour for closing, through the negligence of the seller, was to be forfeited, and the clerk was authorized to appropriate it to his own use, "without any account to the owner." No "hucksters" were to be allowed to sell provisions of any kind in the town before one o'clock in the afternoon on a market-day. The penalties for violating these rules varied in amount from ten to twenty shillings, and all fines were to be given to the poor of the town. The market was opened on the first Tuesday in August, 1763. Richard Reed was chosen clerk, and a salary of ten pounds per annum was voted for his services.

The well at the northeast end of the town-house, in which the town pump has been placed for so many years, was, in all probability, sunk during the month of May, 1763. At a meeting held on the 9th of that month, it was voted,

"To sink a well at the northeast end of the Town-House, for the public service and especially in case of fires."

In February, 1764, the small-pox again broke out in Boston. The appearance of the disease in that town was regarded as a sure warning of a reign of the pestilence in Marblehead. The disease, in spite of every precaution taken to prevent it, broke out during the following May. A town-meeting was immediately held, and it was "voted to erect a small-pox hospital in the pasture northwesterly from the almshouse about eighty poles distant." This action was deemed a necessity, as the almshouse was considered too near the body of the town for use as a hospital. The vote was promptly carried into effect, and all patients taken with the loathsome disease were removed to the hospital as soon as it was in readiness.

<sup>1</sup> 1887.

## CHAPTER LXXI.

### MARBLEHEAD—(Continued).

*Contests with the Crown—Condition of the Town in 1768—Shipping in Marblehead—Resistance of Marblehead Seamen to Impressment—Patriotic Actions—The Small-Pox War—The Non-Importation Agreement—Stores houses offered to Merchants of Boston—Delegates to the Continental Congress—British Soldiers on the Neck—The Marblehead Regiment—Provincial Congress—The Loyalists*

THE year 1765 found the people of Marblehead, in common with their countrymen throughout the American colonies, greatly excited in regard to the contests with the Crown over the right of Parliament to tax the colonies for a revenue.

Though they sympathized fully with the spirit of resistance to the Stamp Act, which certain riotous demonstrations in Boston were intended to show, they were at that time unprepared to sanction such a violent method of proceeding. They were loyal to the King, and though they bitterly denounced the act, they laid the entire blame for its passage upon the shoulders of the ministry and the Parliament of Great Britain. On the 24th of September the town voted to instruct its representatives "to promote and readily join in such dutiful remonstrances and humble petitions to the King and Parliament, and other decent measures as may have a tendency to obtain a repeal of the Stamp Act, or alleviation of the heavy burdens thereby imposed upon the American British Colonies." They were also instructed to do all in their power "to suppress and prevent all riotous assemblies and unlawful acts upon the persons or substance of any of His Majesty's subjects." And not to give their assent to any act of Assembly that would imply "the willingness of their constituents to submit to any internal taxes that are imposed otherwise than by the Great and General Court of this Province, according to the constitution of this government."

For a time the attention of the people of Marblehead was diverted from public affairs by the disasters to their fishing fleet at sea. During the year 1768 nine vessels, with their crews, were lost, and the following year fourteen others met a similar fate, making a total of twenty-three vessels and one hundred and twenty-two men and boys. Besides these, a large number were drowned by being washed overboard from vessels which returned. A large number of widows and orphans were thus left to the care of the town, and the grief and suffering caused by these terrible calamities was very great.

There were, at this time, about sixty merchants engaged in the foreign trade, besides a large number of shoremen, who prosecuted the fisheries. Some of the houses built by these merchants were among the finest in the province, and one, the palatial residence of Col. Jeremiah Lee, is said to have cost over ten thousand pounds. Nearly every family of sufficient wealth





owned several negro slaves, and Col. Lee is said to have owned a large number, whom he employed in the work of loading and unloading his ships as fast as they arrived in foreign ports.

Slavery, so far from being considered an evil, was regarded as the only normal condition of the negro, and the institution was fostered and encouraged throughout the province. The church records of Marblehead bear evidence that even the clergymen of the town owned negro servants, some of whom were baptized and received into the church. Slave marriages are recorded also on the records of all three of the earlier churches.

A very interesting tradition is related concerning the Rev. Peter Bours, one of the earlier rectors of St. Michael's Church. It seems that among other servants, the reverend gentleman owned a very ill-tempered and vicious woman. One night, in a fit of ugliness, she attempted to take the life of her master, and the next day, having some regard for his personal safety, he sold her. With the money thus obtained, Mr. Bours procured a life-size portrait of himself, painted by one of the most celebrated artists in the country.

The newspapers of this period and for many years previous offered abundant evidence of the existence of negro slavery in Marblehead. A few of the advertisements copied from their files will doubtless be found of interest:

"Ran away from his master, Capt. Richard Trevett, of Marblehead, a Negro Man Named Pompey, about Twenty-two years of age, a Lusty, tall fellow. He had on when he went away a striped homespun jacket, cotton A. linen shirt, buck-colored breeches, gray yarn stockings, tanned full leather heel shoes and felt Hat.

"Notice.—He deserted his Master's service in the Shallop Ann at Plymouth. Whoever shall apprehend the said Runaway and him safely convey to his said Master at Marblehead, or to Mr. Francis Miller in Boston, near the Green Dragon, shall have fifty shillings reward and all necessary charges paid.

"Aug. 6, 1724."

"To be sold by Jacob Fowle, Esq., and Mrs. Susannah Palmer, Administrators of the estate of John Palmer, late of Marblehead, deceased, a likely Negro Man, about 25 years of age, and a fine Negro Boy, about 11.

"Marblehead, Oct. 15, 1730."

"Ran away from Capt. John Hammond, of Marblehead, on Forester, the 11th of September Instant a Spanish Negro Fellow named Cade, about 25 years old, speaks broken English, and can talk Spanish Language. He is tall, slim fellow, had on a new felt Hat, striped homespun jacket and breeches, new shoes with square buckles. Whoever will bring or send the said Negro to Mr. Norwood, furholder at Lynn, shall have Two dollars Reward and all necessary charges paid. All masters of vessels and others are cautioned not to conceal or carry off the said Negro, as they would incur the penalty of the Law.

"Sept. 29, 1759."

The excitement incident to the passage of the Stamp Act did not cause the citizens of Marblehead to forget other matters of local importance. At the annual meeting in March, 1767, a board of trustees was chosen to direct and manage the affairs of the schools. There were several public schools in the town, but they were in a deplorable condition, and the well-to-do families preferred to send their children to private teachers. The town appropriated

the sum of £350 for the use of the schools, and the trustees were instructed to report annually as to their condition. At a meeting held by adjournment, it was voted to establish three new schools for teaching reading, writing and arithmetic. Messrs. Jayne, Phippen and Ashton were selected as teachers, and the trustees reported that about one hundred and sixty scholars attended each of these schools. A few years later the town voted to erect two new school-houses on account of the crowded condition of the schools. Children were expected to be qualified to read before entering these schools, and, as a consequence, the children of the poor, whose parents in many instances could not read themselves, were denied admission. The town elected a committee to investigate the matter, and it was found that one hundred and twenty-two boys were untaught. To remedy this evil, it was voted that the children of the poor should be taught the necessary branches to qualify them for entrance into the schools at the expense of the town. This was the foundation of primary schools and the beginning of the present system of public instruction in Marblehead.

Governor Barnard having dissolved the Legislature of Massachusetts, and refusing to call it together again, a convention was held in Boston, in September, 1768, "to deliberate on constitutional measures to obtain redress of their grievances." The day after the convention adjourned, a body of British troops landed in Boston and marched to the Common. The selectmen were requested to furnish quarters for the soldiers, and, as they refused to do so, the State-House was opened for their reception. The presence of British soldiers in the capital town and the frequent impressment of American seamen by ships of the British Navy, excited the indignation of the people throughout the province. These attempts to bring the people into subjection to the will of the ministry of Great Britain were firmly resisted by the colonists, with a determination never to yield.

During the spring of 1769 a brig belonging in Marblehead was boarded off Cape Ann by a lieutenant and a party of seamen from the British sloop-of-war "Rose," and an attempt was made to impress some of the crew into the British naval service. The brig was the "Pitt Packet," commanded by Captain Thomas Powers, returning from Cadiz to Marblehead. The crew at once determined to resist the transfer of any of their number to the British sloop, and a hand-to-hand fight followed. A party of marines was sent to the assistance of the lieutenant, and for over three hours the heroic sons of Marblehead defended themselves against every attempt to compel them to surrender. During the struggle two of the Americans were severely wounded and the British lieutenant was killed by a blow from a harpoon thrown by a sailor named Michael Corbitt. At length, overpowered by force of numbers, the brave men surrendered, and Corbitt was taken to Boston to be tried for murder.



He was imprisoned, but a jury of inquest finally vindicated his conduct and he was released.

This may be said to have been the first act of forcible resistance to British tyranny in defense of American liberty. It occurred several months before the people of Boston were fired upon by the British troops, and six years before the battle at Lexington.

On the 22d of May, 1769, the inhabitants of Marblehead again assembled in town-meeting for the purpose of electing representatives to the General Court and passing suitable instructions. Joshua Orne and John Gallison were elected representatives.

The instructions were almost entirely devoted to a review of the troubles between the colonies and the mother country, concluding as follows:

"That you do not allow, by any vote or resolution whatever, a right in any power on earth to levy taxes on the people of the province, for the sake of raising a revenue, save in the General Assembly of the province.

"Finally, embrace every opportunity of manifesting our allegiance to our rightful Sovereign King George; acknowledge the supreme legislative authority of the British Parliament over the whole empire, excepting the power of levying taxes in the province for the purpose of a revenue, and endeavor to wipe off that reproach for disloyalty and disobedience, which has been so liberally cast upon us by malicious and malevolent persons, at the same time vindicating the just rights and privileges of the country from the insults and designs of wicked and arbitrary men."

During the summer assurances were received from the British ministry that it was their intention at the next session of Parliament to remove the duties upon glass, paper and colors, "upon consideration of such duties being contrary to the true principles of commerce." These concessions, instead of pacifying the people, had a far different effect. The repeal of the duty on tea was denoted as an evidence that the government had abandoned the right to tax the colonies. An agreement was made not to import any British goods until the tax was repealed, and not to purchase goods of any person who should import them contrary to the non-importation agreement. All the inhabitants of Marblehead, with four exceptions, signed this agreement. Those who refused were bitterly denounced as blindly preferring the chains of slavery to our most valued inheritance, *English Liberty*. During the excitement caused by this controversy a chest of tea was brought into town, but so indignant were the people that the purchaser reluctantly consented to reship it the next day. The patriotic citizens assembled early on the following morning, and forming a procession, paraded about town with the obnoxious merchandise, and it was then carried to Boston.

The events of the winter of 1770 produced the most intense excitement among the people of Marblehead. The presence of troops in Boston, making the capital a garrisoned town, was considered an insult to the province, and when, on the 5th of March, the soldiers fired on the people, killing three and mortally wounding others, an uprising of the masses seemed inevitable.

Early in May a town-meeting was held, and a committee was chosen to circulate an agreement against the use of India tea. A series of votes were adopted in favor of the enforcement of the non-importation agreement, and expressing the "highest indignation and resentment that a lawless, ignorant and bloody soldiery should attempt of its own authority to fire upon and destroy so many of our brethren of ye town of Boston, and *we hereby declare our readiness with our Lives and Interest*, at all times to support ye civil authority of this Province in bringing to justice all such high-handed offenders against ye wholesome laws of this land."

The committee chosen to circulate the agreement for the discouragement of the use of foreign teas reported that seven hundred and twelve heads of families had signed it, and only seventeen had refused, a list of whose names was reported for the action of the town. Of the seventeen who refused their signatures, seven appear afterwards to have repented, as their names are erased from the report. The punishment of the ten who were reported for their refractory disposition was both novel and amusing. The town voted that they should be recorded in the clerk's office and published in the *Essex Gazette* as "Unfriendly to the community, and the Selectmen were desired not to approbate any of them to the sessions for license to sell spirituous liquors."

In 1771 nearly one thousand men and boys were employed in the fisheries, besides those who cured fish. The year is chiefly memorable in the annals of the town on account of the suffering caused by the disasters at sea. A large number of widows and fatherless children had been left in a helpless situation, and the town, unable to provide for so large a number, applied to the provincial government for assistance. By means of a "Brief" issued by the authority of the Legislature, £117 were collected for their relief.

During the month of November a circular letter was received from the Committee of Correspondence of Boston, relating to the rights of the colonists and soliciting "a free communication of the towns" of "our common danger." The response of the people of Marblehead was prompt, hearty and characteristic. A petition was sent to the selectmen requesting them to call a town-meeting on the 1st of December, which was couched in such patriotic and vigorous language that it was inserted entire in the warrant. On the day appointed, the inhabitants assembled at the town-house, and Thomas Gerry was chosen moderator of the meeting. The circular letter from the town of Boston and the pamphlet of "State Rights" were read by the town clerk, and it was voted to choose a committee "to take the whole warrant into consideration." Col. Azor Orne, Elbridge Gerry, Thomas Gerry, Jr., Joshua Orne and Capt. John Nutt were the members of this committee. The meeting then adjourned to meet again on the following Tuesday,





when the committee reported several resolutions, which were read separately and unanimously adopted. These resolutions denounced in the strongest terms the "recent act of Parliament and the British Ministry in sending troops and ships to parade about the coast and in the streets of the towns of the Province;" characterized the granting of stipends to the provincial judges as "an attempt to bribe the present respectable gentlemen to become tools to their despotic administration," and to "turn the seats of justice into a deplorable and unmerciful inquisition." The dissolution of the Provincial Legislature was condemned in language equally as forcible, and the resolutions concluded by declaring "that this town is highly incensed at the unconstitutional, unrighteous, presumptuous and notorious proceedings, detesting the name of a Hillsborough, Barnard and every minister who promoted them. And that it not only bears testimony against, but will oppose these and all such measures until some way for a full redress shall be adopted and prove effectual." It was voted to elect a Committee of Grievances now, and from year to year as long as may be necessary, to correspond with like committees in Boston and other towns in the province. The committee consisted of Azor Orne, Elbridge Gerry, Joshua Orne, Thomas Gerry, Thomas Gerry, Jr., Capt. John Nutt, Capt. John Glover and Deacon William Doliber.

The circular letter of the town of Boston was referred to this committee, with instructions to prepare a reply, and the meeting adjourned to meet on the 15th of December. When the meeting again assembled, Azor Orne, chairman of the committee, presented a letter in which every patriotic sentiment contained in the circular letter of the town of Boston was indorsed. The reply of the Committee of Grievance of Marblehead was worthy the patriots who composed it and the town which adopted its language as its own. "We beg leave," it concludes, "to bid adieu for the present, by assuring you that a determined resolution to support the rights confirmed to us by the Great King of the Universe engages the minds of this people, and we apprehend that all who attempt to infringe them are, in obedience to wicked dictates, violating the sacred statutes of Heaven. And for the honor of our Supreme Benefactor, for our own welfare, and for the welfare of posterity, we desire to use these blessings of Liberty with thankfulness and prudence, and to defend them with intrepidity and steadiness."

There were those among the merchants of Marblehead who, though firm friends of their country, and sympathizing fully with every proper method taken to obtain a redress of grievances, were unprepared to indorse the language of the resolutions adopted at these meetings. To their conservative minds the action of the town appeared "rash and inconsiderate," and they accordingly protested against it. The protest was signed by twenty-one well-known merchants,

and was published in the *Essex Gazette*. It was claimed that but a small faction of the inhabitants voted in favor of the resolutions, and that they therefore "did not fairly represent the sentiments of the people of Marblehead." To this a reply was made in the next issue of the paper, in which it was claimed that the resolves "were fully and fairly discussed for more than an hour, and that when the vote was taken there was but one person found in opposition." The writer also stated that the protest was faithfully circulated four days before the twenty-nine signatures were obtained.

During the year 1773 the attention of the people was for a time occupied in considering their danger from another source than the oppressive acts of the British Parliament. In June the wife of Mr. William Matthews was taken sick and treated for "poison." Her husband having recently arrived home from a voyage to the Grand Banks, it was supposed that she had been poisoned by washing his clothing with some soap which he had procured on board a French fishing vessel. In a short time other members of her family were afflicted, and in less than a month nearly all who had taken care of them were prostrate with the "poison." The kind-hearted neighbors of these unfortunates took their turn in watching with and caring for them, when, to their consternation and alarm, the disease which had thus far baffled all their skill was pronounced the small-pox in its most malignant form.

A very small number, comparatively, of the inhabitants had ever had the disease, and their excitement was increased when it was known that an old lady who had died with it had been visited by more than one hundred and fifty persons. The town—as an old gentleman expressed it in his journal—was now in an "uproar." The selectmen ordered all houses where the disease had appeared to be closed and guarded, and "all the dogs in town to be killed immediately." Many of those who were sick were removed to a house at the "Ferry," and in less than two months twenty-three persons died there. Eight others, who died during two weeks of July and August, were buried at the Neck in the plain, just above what was then known as "Black Jack's Cove."

In August a town-meeting was held, and Azor Orne, Jonathan Glover, John Glover and Elbridge Gerry petitioned the town to build a hospital on Cat Island for the treatment of small-pox patients by inoculation, "or allow certain individuals to build it at their own expense." The town voted not to build the hospital, but gave the desired permission to the petitioners to undertake it as a private enterprise, provided that the consent of the town of Salem could be obtained, and that the hospital should be so regulated that the inhabitants of Marblehead would be "in no danger of infection therefrom."

The consent of the selectmen of Salem was readily obtained, and early in September preparations were





made for the erection of the building. The work had barely commenced, however, before the people of Marblehead began to manifest great uneasiness, through fear that by means of the hospital the dread disease might take the form of a pestilence among them. The opposition at length became so great that a town-meeting was held on the 19th of September, and the vote whereby permission was granted for the erection of the building was rescinded. The report had been freely circulated that the proprietors desired to establish the hospital for their own personal gain, and "to make money by means of the dangerous experiment." To allay the indignation created by these rumors, and to show their disinterestedness, the proprietors proposed to sell the materials for the building to the town at their actual cost. The citizens, unreasonable now in their opposition, not only refused to buy the materials, but demanded that the work be abandoned.

Indignant at the injustice of this action, the proprietors continued their work in spite of all opposition, and in a short time the hospital, a large two-story building, was completed. Dr. Hall Jackson, an eminent physician of Portsmouth, New Hampshire, who had attained a distinguished reputation for his success in treating the small-pox, was appointed superintendent, and, on the 16th of October, entered upon his duties and began the work of inoculation. Several hundred patients were successfully treated, but, unfortunately, a few, who had taken the disease more severely than the others, died at the hospital.

The opposition to the enterprise which, from the beginning, had been very great, now took the form of the most bitter and angry hostility. The boatmen had landed patients at places nearer the town than those appointed by the selectmen, and for this the excited citizens demolished their boats. Four men, who were caught in the act of stealing clothing from the hospital, were tarred and feathered, and, after being placed in a cart and exhibited through all the principal streets of the town, were carried to Salem, accompanied by a procession of men and boys, marching to the music of five drums and a fife.

The fears of the people were still further increased when, a short time after this affair, it was announced that twenty-two cases of small-pox had broken out in the town. The storm of indignation which for months had been brewing, and manifesting itself at intervals, now burst upon the proprietors of the hospital in all its fury. Threats of lynching them were openly made, and the angry populace demanded that the doors of the detested "Castle Pox"—as the hospital was ironically called—should be closed forever. The proprietors momentarily expected to be mobbed, and it is said that one of them, Colonel Jonathan Glover, placed two small artillery pieces in one of the rooms of his house, fronting the street, intending to give the crowd a warm reception from the windows should they attempt to molest him.

At length, unable longer to resist the importunate petitions of their fellow-citizens, the proprietors closed the hospital and promised that no more patients should be received.

For a time the excitement was somewhat allayed, but the injudicious remarks of one of the proprietors excited the suspicion of the people that the promise would not be kept, and the opposition broke out afresh. On the night of January 26, 1774, a body of men closely disguised visited the island, and before they left the hospital and a barn adjoining were in flames. The buildings and all their contents were completely destroyed.

Naturally indignant at this outrage, the proprietors determined to secure the speedy punishment of the incendiaries. John Watts and John Gulliard were arrested as being implicated in the affair, and were confined in Salem jail. As soon as the news of the arrest became generally known in Marblehead, the cause of the prisoners was earnestly espoused by the inhabitants, and measures were adopted to rescue them from the hands of the authorities. A large number of men at once marched to Salem, and in a short time the jail was completely surrounded. At a given signal the doors were broken open, the jailer and his assistants were overpowered, and the prisoners were rescued and conducted in triumph to their homes. A few days after, the sheriff organized a force of five hundred citizens, intending to march to Marblehead and recapture his prisoners. A mob equally as large at once organized in Marblehead to resist them. Fearing the disastrous consequences to life and property which a conflict would engender, the proprietors decided to abandon the prosecution, and the sheriff abandoned his purpose.

Some time after this affair a man named Clark, one of the persons who had previously been tarred and feathered, went to Cat Island and brought a quantity of clothing into the town. He was at once ordered to take the bundle to the ferry for examination. On his return to the town he was surrounded by an angry crowd, who threatened to inflict summary punishment upon him. The selectmen appeared upon the scene, however, and he was released. At about eleven o'clock that night, by a delegation of twenty men, he was taken from his bed, conducted to the public whipping-post in front of the town-house, and was there unmercifully beaten. One of the perpetrators of the outrage was subsequently arrested, but the others were not detected. The town having been disinfected of the disease, and the hospital, the great cause of all the contention, having been removed, peace was once more restored to the community.

The events of the winter and spring of 1774 were full of exciting interest to the people of Marblehead. On the 16th of December the famous "Tea Party" occurred in Boston harbor, when the sturdy patriots of that town emptied three hundred and forty-two chests of tea into the sea, rather than allow them to



be landed contrary to the terms of the non-importation agreement. In March Governor Hutchinson resigned, and Thomas Gage was appointed in his stead. One Bill after another was passed by Parliament and readily sanctioned by the King, having for their object the subjection of the people of Massachusetts. The quartering of troops in Boston was legalized; town-meetings were abolished, except for the choice of officers, or by special permission of the Governor. Finally, the infamous Port Bill was passed, which closed the port of Boston to commerce, and removed the seat of government to Salem.

On the 23d of May, 1774, a town-meeting was held for the purpose, according to the warrant, "of taking into consideration the alarming situation to which we are all reduced (it being no less than this, *whether we shall hereafter be freemen or slaves*), to choose a committee of correspondence; and to adopt any other measures that may appear to be constitutional, and calculated to procure relief from the difficulties which are hastening in all the colonies of America by acts of Parliament taxing and unjustly depriving them of their interest."

After organizing by the choice of Deacon Stephen Phillips as moderator, the meeting adjourned to meet in the afternoon, when a Committee of Correspondence was elected, as follows: Joshua Orne, Deacon William Dolliber, Deacon Stephen Phillips, Edward Fettyplace, Capt. John Nutt and Ebenezer Foster. The meeting then adjourned to meet again May 31st.

Under the last clause of the warrant for these meetings, the town could legally take action upon almost any political measures; and, in order to avoid the necessity of calling new meetings to consider the various issues as they arose, they were held by adjournment from time to time under this warrant. Forty-six meetings, the largest number ever held in Marblehead under one warrant, were held pursuant to adjournment, the last taking place on the 3d of April, 1775, ten months and ten days from the time the first meeting was convened.

On the 31st of May, 1774, the very day that the adjourned meeting was to be held, an exceedingly complimentary address to the late Governor Hutchinson appeared in the columns of the *Essex Gazette*. This address was signed by thirty-three citizens of Marblehead, and declared, among other things, "that the public good was the mark at which the ex-governor had ever aimed in his administration, and that this judgement was sustained by the opinions of all dispassionate, thinking men." The publication of the address caused great indignation, and as soon as the citizens assembled in town-meeting it was referred to a committee, who were instructed to take it into consideration and report at an adjourned meeting.

On the 2d of June, at ten o'clock in the forenoon, the citizens again assembled, and the committee presented a long report concerning the address, which was unanimously adopted. The report denounced

the signers as enemies of the province, and declared that the address was "insulting to both branches of the Legislature and effrontive to the town;" "that it was false as it was malicious, and that its signers should only be forgiven by a public recantation of the sentiments contained in the address." One of the signers publicly recanted at the meeting, and the town thereupon voted "that any of the subscribers who shall signify before the further adjournment of this meeting that they are desirous of detracting themselves from all enemies in ye address so effrontive and justly obnoxious to the inhabitants of this town, shall be viewed in the same light as if they had not signed the address."

Other recantations soon followed, and in a short time all but ten of the subscribers had publicly expressed their sorrow for signing the address. Two of the signers, John Fowle and John Prentiss, through the columns of the *Essex Gazette*, expressed the wish "that the address had been to the devil before they had either seen it or signed it."

At the annual election in May John Gallison, Esq., had been elected representative to the General Court, and on the 6th of June a town meeting was held to adopt instructions which had been prepared by the Committee of Grievances. The instructions were similar in tone to all the votes of the town in relation to the troubles with the mother country. They declared that "We dare aver, will assert and maintain the invaded rights of a free people, however surrounded by a hostile band, pointing at their breasts glittering bayonets and threatening instant destruction." The sympathy of the town was expressed "for the metropolis of this Province under the operation of the detestable Port Bill." "Our hearts bleed for the distressed but truly respectable Bostonians. The sacrifice now making of their liberties is a sacrifice of the liberties of this province and of all America; therefore, let it be borne, if not by the provinces in general, by this in particular."

In July subscriptions were solicited by order of the town in aid of the poor of Boston, who were suffering from the operation of the Port Bill, and, among other contributions, eleven cart-loads of Jamaica fish and a cask of oil were donated. The town-house and powder-house were placed at the disposal of the merchants for the storage of goods, and the citizens generally tendered the use of their wharves, store-houses and other unoccupied buildings for this purpose. As soon as the determination to hold a "Continental Congress" was made known, the town voted to send one representative, and appropriated nine pounds and eight shillings for the use of the Congress. Jeremiah Lee, Azor Orne and Elbridge Gerry were in turn elected to represent the town, but all three declined the honor, "as the condition of their private affairs was such as to prevent their acceptance." At a subsequent meeting the town voted that "inasmuch as all three of the gentlemen chosen





had been unable to accept the choice," in case any one of them should find it convenient to set out for Philadelphia, "he was authorized to draw upon the town treasurer for the amount of his expenses." Eldridge Gerry, the youngest of the three who had been chosen, then only thirty years of age, was finally induced to accept the position, and thus began that distinguished public career which did not close until he had attained the office of Vice-President of the United States. During the month of July the constables were instructed to notify the inhabitants personally to be held on the 26th of that month, as the "disuse of tea" was to come under consideration. On the day appointed the town voted that "the use of tea at a time when our inveterate enemies are causing it to be enforced on the American colonies in the most violent methods, even by armed bands, is no less an injury offered to the colonies by all who vend or purchase it, than affording assistance to those enemies to raise revenues to pay dragoons who are to enslave us." It was also voted "that this town highly disapproves the vending or use of any India Tea . . . and views all persons who shall offer it for sale as enemies to America and this town in particular." A tea committee of eleven persons was chosen to warn the inhabitants not to sell or use India teas, and it was voted that all who refused to discontinue the sale of the article after being warned by the committee, "should have their names posted at the Town-House and at the several churches, that the town may know their enemies."

In defiance of the act of Parliament for the suppression of town-meetings, the people of Marblehead continued to assemble, and to express their sentiments concerning the great questions then agitating the country. Nor were they awed by the presence of a company of "British Regulars," which had been stationed on the Neck for the purpose of enforcing submission to this act, by order of the Governor.

The presence of the British soldiers was a source of constant irritation to the inhabitants, and several times a collision between them seemed imminent. The excitement and indignation which their insolence occasioned was fermented almost to fury when Captain Merritt, a worthy citizen, was wounded by one of the guards. The citizens hastily assembled, intending to march to the Neck and "exterminate the entire body of soldiers," but wiser counsel prevailed, and the officers in command, in order to pacify the angry populace, promised that the offender should be punished with five hundred lashes.

In September Governor Gage issued a proclamation dissolving the Massachusetts Legislature, which had been called to meet at Salem on the 5th of October. Notwithstanding this order, the Legislature convened on the day appointed, and immediately resolved itself into a Provincial Congress. As soon as this intention was made known, a town-meeting was held, and Jeremiah Lee, Azor Orne and

Eldridge Gerry were chosen delegates from Marblehead. At the same meeting a Committee of Observation and Prevention was chosen, with instructions "to co-operate with other towns in the province for preventing any of the inhabitants from supplying the troops with labor, lumber, spars, pickets, straws, bricks or any other material whatever, except such as humanity requires."

The militia of Marblehead consisted at this time of a regiment of seven companies of well-disciplined, active men. This regiment was under the command of officers, all of whom had been commissioned by Governor Gage or former Governors, and the town voted that it was "not expedient for the people to be led or influenced by any militia officers who conceive themselves obliged to hold and execute these commissions." The regiment was therefore reorganized, not, however, without considerable excitement caused by the refusal of several officers to resign in accordance with the request of the town.

## CHAPTER LXXII.

### MARBLEHEAD (Continued).

#### MARBLEHEAD IN THE REVOLUTION.

*The Minute-Men—British Frigate in Marblehead Harbor—British Troops Land on Beacon's Neck—Battle of Lexington—Jeremiah Lee—Fugitive to River St. Lawrence—The First American Privateer—Captain John Mudge in the Schooner "Lee"—First Naval Victory of the War—Daring Capture of James Mifflin on the Schooner "Fiddler"—Fugitives Driven from the Town—Superiority of the People—Deaths of Young—Return of the Refugees—Demonstrations on the Destruction of Private.*

IN accordance with a recommendation of the Provincial Congress, providing for the organization of an army, a town-meeting was held at Marblehead on the 2d of January, 1775, "to make provision to pay the persons who may enlist as minute men, and to take other suitable steps for perfecting the militia in the arts of war." The subject was referred to a committee, of which Gerry, Orne and Lee were members, and they reported that as a large proportion of the inhabitants would soon be called upon to "assist in defending the charter and Constitution of the Province, as well as the Rights and Liberties of America, it was necessary that they should be properly disciplined and instructed; and as those who were first to take the field would be required to devote a large proportion of their time to this exercise, it was but just and reasonable that they should be remunerated for their extra services." The sum of eight hundred pounds was accordingly granted for the purpose, and Captain James Mifflin was appointed paymaster for the detached militia or minute-men. A compensation of two shillings a day was allowed to each private; sergeants, clerks, drummers and fifers re-



ceived three shillings each; second lieutenants four shillings; first lieutenants four shillings six pence, and captains six shillings. A service of four hours a day was required, but compensation was allowed for but three days in each week.

During the month of January the British soldiers were withdrawn from the town, and on the 9th of February His Majesty's ship "Lively," mounting twenty guns, arrived in the harbor and anchored off the fort. All vessels arriving in the harbor were diligently searched by the officers of this ship, and arms, ammunition and military stores of every description found on board them were confiscated by order of the Governor. A vessel containing a chest of arms was compelled to anchor near the "Lively;" but a few nights after her arrival the prize was boarded by a party of intrepid young men, under the lead of Samuel R. Trevett, and the arms were removed and concealed on shore. Though a diligent search was made by the British officers, the muskets could not be found, and, as was supposed, were afterwards used in completing the armament of the Marblehead regiment.

On the afternoon of Sunday, February 26th, while the people were at church, a transport sailed into the harbor. Soon after a regiment of British soldiers, under command of Colonel Leslie, landed on Homan's Beach. After loading their guns, they marched through the town. An alarm gun was beaten at the door of each of the churches, and as the people came into the streets, the Marblehead regiment was mustered, and active preparations were made for the defense of the town. Suspecting the object of their expedition to be the seizure of several pieces of artillery secreted at Salem, Major John Pedrick hastened on horseback to that town, and gave the alarm at the door of the North Church. He was soon joined by a party of young men from Marblehead, and together they proceeded to the North Bridge, over which the regulars were obliged to pass. On their arrival the troops found the draw raised and a large body of people determined to resist their passage. Colonel Leslie demanded that "the draw be lowered in the King's name," but was told that it was "not the King's highway, but a private road." Several of the soldiers then attempted to cross in boats; but were told that, should they do so, the boats would be immediately sunk. While Colonel Leslie and his officers were debating with the citizens, Robert Wormsted, one of the young men from Marblehead,—who afterwards distinguished himself by his daring and bravery,—engaged in an encounter with some of the soldiers. He was a skillful fencer, and, with his cane for a weapon, succeeded in disarming six of the regulars. Finally, upon their agreement to march a short distance and then return, the draw was lowered, and the soldiers were allowed to proceed. Finding himself frustrated in his design, the disappointed colonel returned with his regiment to Marblehead,

and re-embarked on board the transport. Their discomfiture was rendered the more complete, as they were obliged to pass the Marblehead regiment, and realized that, had their mission proved successful, it would have resulted only in bloodshed and utter defeat on their return.

The events which followed in rapid succession, during the months of March and April, were such as to cause the utmost excitement in Marblehead. On the 19th of April the battle of Lexington was fought, and the news of the disastrous rout of the British was received with the greatest enthusiasm. The war for freedom had commenced, and the patriots everywhere declares themselves ready for the struggle.

The day before the battle the province Committee of Safety and Supplies, of which Jeremiah Lee, Elbridge Gerry and Azor Orne were members, held a meeting at Wetherby's Black Horse Tavern, on the road between Cambridge and Lexington. After the session was concluded, several members of the committee, including John Hancock and Samuel Adams, went over to Lexington to pass the night, while the gentlemen from Marblehead remained at the tavern. Without the slightest thought of personal danger, Gerry and his associates retired to rest. During the night an officer and a file of soldiers of the British army marched towards the house to search for the members of the rebel Congress. While the officer was posting their files the gentlemen found means to escape half-dressed into an adjoining cornfield, where they remained for over an hour until the troops were withdrawn. The night being very cold, the gentlemen suffered very keenly from their exposure, and Colonel Lee was soon after attacked by a severe fever, from which he never recovered. He died on the 10th of May following, at Newburyport, but his body was brought to Marblehead for interment.

The death of this eminent patriot, at a time when his inestimable services were of more value than ever to the town and province, was universally lamented. In the various positions of trust and honor which he had held, as an enterprising and successful merchant, and as "an ardent, active and able advocate for the Liberties and Independence of his country," he inspired the confidence and esteem of all who knew him. In his private intercourse with his fellow-men, he was admired for the urbanity of his manners, and beloved for his generous disposition and benevolence to the poor.

During the month of May the disturbed condition of public affairs caused great commotion throughout the town. Press-gangs prowled about the streets, seeking to impress seamen for the royal navy. An attack from the gun boat in the harbor, whose officers and men were irritated almost beyond endurance by the successful resistance of the people to their arbitrary measures, was considered as not unlikely to occur. This, together with the unprotected position of the harbor, led many of the inhabitants to remove





their families to places not so dangerously exposed. On the 21st, the artillery company, commanded by Capt. Samuel R. Trevett, marched to the "Old Meeting-House," where a sermon was delivered by the Rev. Mr. Whitwell. The next day recruiting officers marched about the town with drums and fife, enlisting recruits for the Continental Army.

On the last day of May the frigate "Lively" sailed for Boston, and her place was taken by the sloop-of-war "Merlin." A few days after the arrival of this ship a merchant vessel from the West Indies, belonging to Col. Glover, arrived in the harbor. The commander of the "Merlin" sent an officer on board to order the captain to anchor his vessel near the ship; but the vigilant owner had boarded her before him, and, disregarding the imperative commands of the officer and the threatening guns of the ship, had his vessel brought directly in to Gerry's wharf. Crowds of people were gathered along the wharves and headlands, expecting that the schooner would be fired into by the "Merlin;" but the angry commander, knowing that the people were determined to defend the owner at all hazards, wisely refrained from an act which must have resulted disastrously to himself and his men.

Colonel Glover's regiment consisted of ten companies, numbering in all four hundred and five men. On the 10th of June the valiant commander received orders to continue with his regiment at Marblehead until further orders; and to hold it "in readiness to march at a moment's warning to any post where he may be directed."

Having been stationed at Marblehead until "further orders," the brave seamen of the marine regiment were deprived of an opportunity to distinguish themselves at the battle of Bunker Hill, which took place on the 17th of June. But there were other sons of Marblehead who participated in that memorable engagement and fought like heroes in defense of their country. The company of artillery under command of Captain Samuel R. Trevett, forming a part of Colonel Gridley's regiment, arrived on the field in season to engage in the latter part of the action. Captain Trevett lost a small four-pound cannon in the action, but made up for his loss by capturing two of larger size from the British, the only cannon captured by the Americans. Two men of the Marblehead company were killed and three were wounded. Of the killed, one was William Nutting; and of the wounded, one was the intrepid Robert Wormstead, who was struck in the shoulder by the fragments of a bursting shell. He narrowly escaped having his head blown from his shoulders, the fate which befell a companion whom he was assisting from the battle-field.

On the 21st of June, Colonel Glover received orders to proceed with his regiment and report to General Ward at Cambridge. A general muster was held, and the regiment, fully armed and equipped,

made an imposing appearance as it marched through the town. Every officer, soldier and musician in the entire regiment of ten companies were citizens of Marblehead, except one captain and seven privates.

The officers, chosen some months before, were: Colonel, John Glover; \*Lieutenant-Colonel, John Gerry; Major, Gabriel Johnnet; †Adjutant, William Gibbs; Surgeon, Nathaniel Bond; Surgeon's mate, Nathaniel Harrington; Quartermaster, Joseph Stacey. The uniforms of the regiment consisted of a blue round jacket and trousers, trimmed with leather buttons; and Colonel Glover was said to be the most finely-dressed officer of the army at Cambridge. As no arrangements had been made for fitting out a naval armament, and as the army at Cambridge was greatly embarrassed by the scarcity of ammunition, General Washington, who had assumed command, was instructed by Congress to intercept and capture two English transports, which were bound to Quebec with ammunition and stores for the British Army. Accordingly, Nicholas Broughton and John Selman, both captains in Glover's regiment, were ordered to take command of a detachment of the army, and proceed at once on board the schooners "Lynch" and "Franklin," then lying in Beverly Harbor. On the 21st of October, having fitted their vessels for sea—the "Lynch" with six guns and the "Franklin" with four,—they sailed on the first naval expedition of the war. Each commander took his own company for a crew, and Broughton as commander hoisted his broad pennant on board the "Lynch." After a long passage, being detained by adverse winds and weather, they reached the river St. Lawrence, but found that the transports for which they were in search had escaped. They, however, captured ten other vessels as prizes, and hearing that the authorities on the Island of St. John were raising recruits for the British Army, the zealous commanders, thinking to do essential service to their country, landed their troops on the island, besieged a fort, and detained and brought off as prisoners the governor (Wright) and Judge Colback as prisoners of war. In December the expedition returned, when, much to their astonishment, the two naval officers were severely reprimanded by the commander-in-chief for exceeding their instructions, and the prisoners and prizes were released. It was the desire of Congress to adopt a conciliatory policy towards the Northern Provinces, and Washington feared that this hasty action of the brave but over-zealous seamen would cause a rupture of the friendly relations existing between these colonies, which might be fraught with serious consequences.

In the mean time the Legislature of Massachusetts had passed an act authorizing the fitting out of armed vessels to protect the sea-coast, and to cut off the sup-

\*William L. Lee afterwards became major and Gabriel Johnnet, lieutenant colonel.





plies intended for the British army. This act, which was adopted on the 15th of November, was chiefly due to the efforts of Elbridge Gerry, one of the representatives from Marblehead, by whom the preamble was drawn up. The first vessel to put to sea under this arrangement was the schooner "Lee," commanded by Captain John Manly, of Marblehead. On the 29th of November he fell in with the brig "Nancy," a vessel of two hundred and fifty tons burden, bound to Boston, with military stores, which he captured and sent into Gloucester harbor. Her cargo consisted of several brass field-pieces, two thousand stand of arms, one hundred thousand flints, thirty-two tons of lead, a large quantity of ammunition, and a thirteen-inch brass mortar, besides a complete assortment of tools, utensils and machines, necessary for military operations. Manly's schooner sailed under the Pine-Tree flag of Massachusetts, and this was the first naval victory in which the British flag was struck to American colors. The prize was of inestimable value to Washington, and the ordnance stores and field-pieces were at once forwarded to the army at Cambridge.

Early in the month of May, 1776, James Mugford, a young man who had previously sailed as master of a merchant vessel, applied to General Ward for permission to fit out the Continental cruiser "Franklin," then lying in ordinary at Beverly. During the previous year Mugford had been impressed into the British service and confined on board a gunboat then lying in the harbor. He was soon released, however, through the interposition of his wife, who went on board the ship and represented to the captain that they had been recently married, and that she was dependent upon him for support. While a prisoner, the young sailor learned from the conversation of his captors that a "powder ship" was soon to sail from England, with ammunition and stores for the British army. Immediately upon his release, he communicated the important intelligence to the proper authorities, and requested permission to attempt the capture of the transport. After much importunity, his request was granted. Without delay, the intrepid commander collected a crew, and after fitting his vessel for sea, pushed into the bay. On Friday, the 17th of May, the British ship "Hope," of three hundred tons, six guns and seventeen men, hove in sight. Notwithstanding the fact that a British fleet lay at anchor in Nantasket Roads, only a few miles off, and in full sight, Mugford at once bore upon the ship and carried her by boarding. While the crew of the "Franklin" were engaged in taking possession of their prize, the captain of the "Hope" ordered his men to cut the top-sail halyard ties, with a view to impede the sailing of the ship, and thereby give the boats of the squadron time to come up. Mugford, sensible of the danger of the situation, threatened the captain and all on board with instant death should the order be executed. His resolute manner terrified the crew, and they refused to obey the com-

mands of their officers. The prize was then taken through Pudding Point Gut,—a channel then but little known,—beyond the range of the guns of the British squadron, and arrived safely in Boston harbor. This was the most valuable capture that had been made during the war. The cargo consisted of one thousand carbines with bayonets, several carriages for field-pieces, fifteen hundred barrels of powder, and a most complete assortment of artillery implements and pioneer tools.

Having seen his prize safely in port, the gallant commander of the "Franklin" took a supply of ammunition, and on the following Sunday again put to sea. In sailing through Pudding Point Gut, the same channel through which the prize was brought up, the vessel grounded. This being perceived by the officers on board the ships of the British fleet, fourteen boats, manned by two hundred sailors fully armed, were sent to capture the unprotected schooner. Mugford, however, was prepared to meet them. Waiting until they came within range of his guns, he fired, and with such deadly effect that two of the boats were immediately sunk. The men in the remaining boats then surrounded the schooner and attempted to board. Seizing picks and cutlasses and whatever implements they could obtain, the heroic crew of the "Franklin" fought with desperation in defense of their vessel. Many of the British were shot as soon as the boats came alongside, while others had their hands and fingers cut off with sabres, as they laid them on the gunwales of the schooner. The brave Mugford, who throughout the conflict had been fighting wherever his presence seemed most needed, encouraging and animating his men by voice and example, was shot in the breast by an officer in one of the boats. With the utmost composure, and with that presence of mind which ever distinguishes heroes, he called to his lieutenant and exclaimed: "*I am a dead man; don't give up the vessel; you will be able to beat them off.*" In a few minutes he expired. The death of their gallant commander nerveed the crew of the "Franklin" to still greater effort, and in a short time the men in the boats were repulsed and gave up the attack. The engagement lasted half an hour. The British lost seventy men, while the only person killed on board the schooner was its heroic captain.

With the advancing tide the Franklin floated from the soft ground where she had struck, and taking advantage of the fresh breeze that had sprung up, the crew brought her in safety to Marblehead harbor. The news of the capture of the powder ship, and of the death of the captain in the contest with the boats, had preceded the arrival of the schooner, and the wharves and headlands were thronged with people as the victorious seamen sailed up the harbor.

On the following Wednesday the funeral took place from the "New Meeting-House," the Rev. Isaac Story officiating. Amid the tolling of bells and the firing of minute-guns, the body was conveyed to its



resting-place on the "Old Burying Hill," where a volley was fired by the Marblehead regiment, which did escort duty on the occasion.

On the 17th of June, the first anniversary of the battle of Bunker Hill, the citizens of Marblehead, in town-meeting assembled, declared:

"That if the Continental Congress think it for the interest of these united colonies to declare them independent of Great Britain, and should publish such declaration, the inhabitants of this town will support them in maintaining such Independence with lives and fortunes."

The patriotic citizens had not long to wait. Early one morning in July—so runs the tradition—a horseman rode into town, bringing the joyful tidings that independence had been declared. The joy of the people knew no bounds. The bells of the churches were rung for an entire week and every evening fires were lighted on the hill-tops, in honor of the great event. During the excitement occasioned by these demonstrations St. Michael's Church was entered, and the royal coat of arms was removed from its place above the chancel, while the bell was rung till it cracked, to punish some of the communicants for their loyalist sentiments.

In a few weeks printed copies of the Declaration of Independence were received, and Benjamin Boden, the town clerk, transcribed the entire document on the records of the town.

The year 1777 opened with little encouragement for the success of the American Army. True, glorious successes had been achieved at Trenton and Princeton, but the disheartening failures of the various expeditions north and south, and the extreme sufferings to which the soldiers in the army had been subjected, were rapidly breeding discontent and discouragement among the people. On the 1st of January two thousand of the regular troops were entitled to a discharge, and a general apprehension prevailed that their places might not be readily filled. But the people of Marblehead were not despondent; and though a large proportion of the able-bodied men were already in the service of the colonies, either on land or water, a meeting was held early in February for the purpose of enlisting one-seventh of the remaining male inhabitants "for the defense of the American states." An additional bounty was offered for volunteers, and in a short time the requisite number was obtained.

The treatment to which the loyalists should be subjected had been seriously discussed by Congress and by the State Legislature, and in May the latter body passed an act authorizing the towns to procure information against those who were known to be of an unfriendly disposition towards the colonies. A town-meeting was accordingly held in Marblehead on the 26th of May, and Thomas Gerry, Esq., was chosen to report the names of all persons who were inimical to the American States. The names of seven persons were reported, among them those of the Rev. Joshua Wingate Weeks, the rector of St. Michael's Church, and Mr. Woodward Abraham, who conducted the services

as a lay-reader for several years after the close of the war.

But the zealous inhabitants had taken it upon themselves to punish the "Tories" in their own effective manner, and a suggestion from the Legislature was hardly necessary to induce them to establish "an inquisition,"—the term applied by one of the sufferers to the measures of his fellow-citizens. Nearly two years before, Thomas Robie, one of the most defiant of the loyalists in Marblehead, had charged an exorbitant price for about twenty half-barrels of powder, purchased of him by the town, and the indignant citizens voted that no interest should be allowed him for the time of the town's indebtedness. The ill-feeling thus engendered continued to increase, until Robie and his wife rendered themselves so obnoxious that they were obliged to leave the town and take refuge in Nova Scotia. Crowds of people collected on the wharf to witness their departure, and many irritating remarks were addressed to them concerning their Tory principles and their conduct towards the Whigs. Provoked beyond endurance by these insulting taunts, Mrs. Robie angrily retorted, as she seated herself in the boat that was to convey her to the ship: "I hope that I shall live to return, find this wicked rebellion crushed, and see the streets of Marblehead so deep with rebel blood that a long boat might be rowed through them."

The effect of this remark was electrical, and only the sex of the speaker restrained the angry populace from doing her personal injury.

Another of the loyalists who suffered keenly from the displeasure of the townspeople, during these exciting times was Mr. Ashley Bowen. He had seen active service in the French and Indian War, and was a midshipman on board the frigate "Pembroke," at the siege of Quebec. So indignant were the citizens at his steady resolution in defending the King, and denouncing the acts of the colonists as treasonable, that at one time during the war it was with great difficulty that he obtained the necessaries of life. The store-keepers were afraid to sell their goods to him for fear of incurring the displeasure of their patrons, and he feared, with good reason, that the attempt would be made to starve him into submission. In 1778 he made the following entry in his journal, which tells its own story:

"This has been a year of trouble to me. I was drafted twice as a soldier, and taken by Nathan Brown before old Ward on the 25 of March. Then they trained with me so much that they would have me to get bondsmen for me not to speak nor look, nor deny them my money when drafted. As I would not get bondsmen, it was determined to send me on board the Guard ship at Boston."

Fortunately for Mr. Bowen, he met with an old friend, the captain of a merchant vessel, with whom he shipped as a mate, and so, as the journal expresses it, "was taken out of their way."

Whatever else may be said of the loyalists of Marblehead, it cannot be said that they were cowardly. They were sincere in their convictions, and had the





courage to declare them in defiance of an overwhelming public sentiment in opposition. To do this required a strength of character such as is seldom exhibited except by heroes in times of public peril. They were actuated by no mercenary motives. Estranged from friends and kindred, liable at any moment to be imprisoned or to have their property confiscated, many were obliged to leave the home of their childhood and seek a residence among strangers. Time has removed the prejudice, the last actor in the great drama has long since passed from earth, and to-day, though the impartial reader of history may not indorse the sentiment nor applaud the acts of the zealous loyalists, he will find much to admire in their evident sincerity and the fortitude with which they encountered danger and endured adversity.

The hardships and sufferings to which the people were subjected during the summer months of 1777 were severe in the extreme. Many of the soldiers in the army had been paid for their services in depreciated Continental notes, which passed for less than half their face value, while others had not been paid at all. As a consequence, their families at home were deprived of many of the necessities of life, and the town was obliged to adopt measures for their relief. The family of each soldier was allowed to draw provisions to the amount of half the wages due him, and for a time the distress was alleviated.

The terms of enlistment of many of the soldiers in the army having expired, the Legislature voted, on the 1st of May, to raise two thousand men for a service of eight or nine months, and apportioned the number upon the town. Ardent and spirited appeals were made to the people, and, as usual, the reply of Marblehead was prompt and decisive. Three days after, a town-meeting was held, and the sum of twenty-five hundred and fifty-two pounds was appropriated "to pay the bounty due the Guards at Winter Hill, and to raise thirty-four more men to serve in the Continental Army."

Though the people had assented willingly to the numerous assessments made upon them for war purposes, the collectors, in many instances, were unable to obtain the full amount of the tax levied by the town. The patriotic treasurer, Jonathan Glover, supplied the deficiency from time to time with private funds of his own, rather than the town should be delinquent, and interest was allowed him for the use of the money.

The financial embarrassment of the country, and the depreciated state of the currency, led the people, during the following year, to adopt measures for the prevention of extortion, and for the regulation of the prices to be charged by dealers and mechanics. "Any person guilty of buying or selling silver or gold for rent or otherwise" was to be deemed an enemy of the country, and treated accordingly. The price of wood was regulated at eighteen shillings per cord and candles at eighteen shillings a pound.

"Best made men's shoes were to be eight pounds a pair," and other shoes in proportion. Farriers, for shoeing horses all round, were to receive six pounds, and for shifting a single shoe, fifteen shillings. A committee of forty persons was chosen to detect any violation of these regulations, with instructions to deal summarily with every offender.

Though the condition of national affairs at the close of the winter of 1780 was far from encouraging, the patriotic citizens were determined that nothing should be left undone by which the war could be brought to a successful termination. On the 15th of June the sum of forty thousand pounds was appropriated to hire twenty-four men to reinforce the Continental army; and a few days later one hundred bushels of corn and one hundred hard dollars, or the equivalent of either, were offered to every man who would enlist in the army for six months. At the same time a committee was chosen to solicit subscriptions of cash (in specie) or provisions to be used as a bounty in raising recruits.

During the entire trying period of the war the people of Marblehead had submitted with becoming fortitude and resignation to the inevitable deprivations and distress incident to the struggle. Houses, stores and fish-fences were necessarily demolished and used for fuel; and in November, 1780, a committee was appointed "to estimate the value of those used since the beginning of the war. The whole number of men in town at this time was reported to be 831, of whom 477 were unemployed or out of business. There were 166 in captivity, and 121 were missing. The whole number of women was 1069, of whom 378 were widows, and of 2242 children, 672 were fatherless. Eight years before, the number of ratable polls was 1202, while at this time there were but 544. At the beginning of the war there were 12,313 tons of shipping owned, employed and manned by the citizens of Marblehead, while at its close the entire amount owned in the town was but 1509 tons.

The signal success of American arms during the year 1781, culminating in the surrender of Cornwallis and his army at Yorktown on the 19th of October, excited the utmost joy and exultation in Marblehead. Nowhere in the country had such sacrifices been made as those to which this people had uncomplainingly submitted. Nowhere was the dawn of peace more heartily welcomed. Their commerce was ruined; many who had been wealthy before the war were reduced to poverty, and the blood of their sons had been poured out like water. But there was no complaint. No sorrowing now, even for those who would not return. Only joy that the great struggle was ended, and that the independence for which they fought had been achieved.

Upon the publication of the preliminaries of peace, many of the refugees were glad to avail themselves of the opportunity to return to their former homes in America. During the month of April the town



was thrown into a state of the greatest excitement by the return of Stephen Blaney, one of the most objectionable of the loyalists who had left Marblehead. Rumors were prevalent that other refugees were also about to return, and, on the 24th of April, a town-meeting was held to consider the matter. Resolutions severely condemning the acts of the loyalists were adopted, and a committee of twenty-one persons was chosen to take measures to prevent their return. All refugees who made their appearance in town were to be given six hours' notice to leave, and any who remained beyond that time were to be taken into custody and shipped to the nearest port of Great Britain.

The restoration of peace to the United States was hailed throughout the land with every demonstration of joy, and nowhere with more hearty enthusiasm than at Marblehead. On the 29th of April a grand celebration took place in honor of the event. The day was ushered in by the ringing of bells, and a Federal salute from the battery at the fort. At noon the bells were accompanied by salutes from artillery on Training Field Hill. At two o'clock P. M. a large number of the most prominent citizens, together with invited guests from other towns, assembled "at the Coffee-House, and partook of a genteel entertainment." After dinner toasts were drank, with a discharge of thirteen cannon after each toast. Nor were the people in general forgotten. An ox, which had previously been provided and cooked, was sent to the town-house, where a sumptuous dinner was served. A large vessel filled with liquor—"rum punch," the tradition has it—was placed in front of the building, and the beverage was freely dispensed to all who chose to imbibe, the vessel being duly replenished throughout the day. In the evening many of the houses were brilliantly illuminated, and a beacon which had been erected at the beginning of hostilities was surrounded with combustibles and converted into a bonfire.

## CHAPTER LXXXIII.

### MARBLEHEAD—(Continued.)

*Departure of the Marblehead Regiment—Rescued as the Fourteenth Continental Regiment—The Retreat from Long Point—The Lands returned by Glover's Brigade—The Battle at West Chester—Gallant Behavior of Glover's Brigade—The Battle of White Plains—Washington's Army Crosses the Delaware—The Marblehead Regiment in the Adventure—The Victory at Trenton—Testimony of General Howe—Col. William R. Lee—Battle of Monmouth—Retreat of Gen. Burgoyne—Second Battle of Monmouth—Gallant Charge of Marblehead Men—The Attack at Swatara—Surrender of Burgoyne—Glover's Brigade at Valley Forge—Expedition Against Rhode Island—Volunteers from Marblehead—Thanks to Men of Marblehead and Salem—The Retreat from Rhode Island—Skirmish at Quaker Hill—Rent of the Fort—Evacuation of Rhode Island—Sufferings of the Soldiers—West Point—Evacuation of Andros—The Army at Pensacola—Surrender of Cornwallis.*

THE narrative of the exploits of the men of Marblehead on land and sea during the War of the

Revolution must of necessity be very much abridged for this work. While the events related in the last chapter were transpiring in Marblehead and elsewhere, the brave men of the Marblehead regiment were winning unfading laurels by their valorous achievements in the service of their country.

The regiment left town on the 22d of June, 1775, and at once reported to General Ward, then in command of the army at Cambridge.

Early in October, Colonel Glover was appointed by General Washington to superintend the equipment and manning of armed vessels for the service of the colonies. Through his agency the expedition to the St. Lawrence River, under Captains Broughton and Selman, and the privateer "Lee," under command of Captain Manly, had been fitted out.

On the 27th of November a long, lumbering train of wagons, laden with ordnance and military stores, and decorated with flags, came wheeling into the camp "at Cambridge," escorted by Continental troops and country militia. They were part of the cargo of a large brigantine laden with munitions of war captured and sent into Cape Ann by the schooner "Lee," Captain Manly, one of the cruisers sent out by Washington.

"Such universal joy ran through the whole camp," writes an officer, "as if each one grasped a victory in his own hands." "Surely, nothing," writes Washington, "ever came more *apropos*."

Shortly after this event an affair occurred in the camp, in which the Marblehead regiment figured rather prominently. It seems that "a large party of Virginia riflemen, who had recently arrived in camp, were strolling about Cambridge and visiting the collegiate buildings, now turned into barracks. Their half-Indian equipments, and fringed and ruffled hunting garbs, provoked the merriment of the troops from Marblehead, chiefly fishermen and sailors, who thought nothing equal to the round jacket and trousers. A bantering ensued between them. There was snow upon the ground, and snow-balls began to fly when jokes were wanting. The parties waxed warm in the contest. They closed and came to blows; both sides were reinforced, and in a little while at least a thousand were at fisticuffs, and there was a tumult in the camp worthy of the days of Homer. At this juncture (writes our informant) Washington made his appearance, whether by accident or design I never knew. I saw none of his aids with him; his black servant just behind him, mounted. He threw the bridle of his own horse into his servant's hands, sprang from his seat, rushed into the thickest of the melee, seized two tall, brawny riflemen by the throat, keeping them at arms-length, talking to and shaking them."<sup>1</sup>

This prompt and energetic action on the part of the general quickly put an end to the tumult, and in

<sup>1</sup> Memoir of an eye witness. Irving's Washington, Vol. II.





a few moments order was restored throughout the camp.

On the 19th of December an express arrived at General Washington's headquarters from Marblehead, with information that three British ships-of-war were standing in the harbor. Colonel Glover's regiment, with Captain Foster's company of artillery and a corps of riflemen, were ordered to march with all expedition for the defense of the town. As no attempt was made by the enemy to land troops, and the squadron having left the coast soon after, the artillery and rifle companies returned to camp and the regiment was sent to Beverly for the defense of that town, which was considered in imminent danger of attack.

On the 1st of January, 1776, the regiment was re-organized as the Fourteenth Continental Regiment, and the term of enlistment having expired, nearly every soldier enlisted for the war.

In July, Glover and his regiment were ordered to proceed at once to New York. They marched from Beverly on the 20th, and having arrived at New York on the 9th of August, were ordered to join General Sullivan's brigade.

During the memorable battle of Long Island, on the 27th of August, Glover's regiment was stationed on New York Island. It was not until the battle was over that the brave men of that distinguished corps performed the difficult feat which saved the American Army from total destruction. Early in the morning of the 28th of August the regiment crossed over to Long Island and was stationed at an important post on the left of the American Army.

"Every eye brightened as they marched briskly along the line with alert step and cheery aspect." On the morning of the 29th, being convinced that the only safety of his army lay in a successful retreat, General Washington called a council of war. The council decided upon a speedy withdrawal of the troops. The embarkation was to take place in the night, and preparations were made with the utmost secrecy, Colonel Glover being called upon with his entire regiment to take command of the vessels and flat-bottomed boats.

The colonel went over to Brooklyn with his officers to superintend the embarkation, and at about seven o'clock in the evening the officers and men went to work with a spirit and resolution peculiar to that brave corps. The retreat was conducted in silence and with the utmost precaution against discovery. With muffled oars and steady strokes, the hardy seamen of the Marblehead regiment rowed with such precision and regularity, that not a sound broke upon the stillness of the night. When the morning broke the whole embarkation had been happily effected.

"This extraordinary retreat," writes Washington Irving, "which in its silence and celerity equaled the midnight fortifying of Bunker's Hill, was one of the most signal achievements of the war, and redounded greatly to the reputation of Washington." But with-

out the aid of Glover and his heroic fishermen from Marblehead, by whose skill and activity the orders of the commander-in-chief were successfully executed, the retreat would have been impossible. By their efforts alone the American Army was saved from destruction.

It is impossible in the limited space at our command to recount the valorous deeds of the Marblehead regiment during the memorable campaign of the summer and autumn of 1776.

On the night of December 25th, when General Washington and his army crossed the Delaware River to attack the British army at Trenton, "Colonel Glover, with his amphibious regiment of Marblehead" to again quote Washington Irving—"was in the advance,—the same who had navigated the army across the Sound in its retreat from Brooklyn, on Long Island, to New York. They were men accustomed to battle with the elements; yet, with all their skill and experience, the crossing was difficult and perilous. Washington, who had crossed with the troops, stood anxiously, yet patiently, on the eastern bank, while one precious hour after another elapsed until the transportation of the artillery should be effected. The night was dark and tempestuous; the drifting ice drove the boats out of their course and threatened them with destruction." Before daybreak the transportation had been effected.

The story of the successful attack upon Trenton, which resulted in the capture of nearly one thousand prisoners, with their arms and ammunition, and compelled the British army to abandon New Jersey and retreat to New York, needs no repetition here. Years afterwards, in a speech before the Massachusetts Legislature, General Knox, who was chief of artillery at Trenton, paid the following tribute to the brave men of the Marblehead regiment: "I wish the members of this body knew the people of Marblehead as well as I do. I wish that they had stood on the banks of the Delaware River in 1776, in that bitter night when the commander-in-chief had drawn up his little army to cross it, and seen the powerful current bearing onward the floating masses of ice, which threatened destruction to whosoever should venture upon its bosom. I wish that when this occurrence threatened to defeat the enterprise, they could have heard that distinguished warrior demand, '*Who will lead us on?*' and seen the men of Marblehead, and *Marblehead alone*, stand forward to lead the army along the perilous path to unfading glories and honors in the achievements of Trenton. There, sir, went the fishermen of Marblehead, alike at home upon land or water, alike ardent, patriotic and unflinching wherever they unfurled the flag of the country."

Shortly before the engagement at Trenton, Congress had clothed General Washington with additional powers, and as soon as practicable, measures were adopted for recruiting new regiments of cavalry and artillery. The gallantry and meritorious conduct of





the officers and men of the Marblehead regiment had not escaped the notice of the commander-in-chief, and on the 1st of January, 1777, William R. Lee, major of the regiment, who for some time had been acting as brigade major, was promoted to the rank of colonel. Immediately upon receiving his commission, Colonel Lee returned to Massachusetts to recruit and organize his regiment. Many of the officers and men of the new regiment were from Marblehead. Joseph Swasey was major, Joseph Stacey quartermaster, and Joshua Orne was captain of one of the companies. Among the lieutenants were William Hawkes, Samuel Gatchell, Jeremiah Reed, John Clark and John Barker.

In March, the office of adjutant general having become vacant, Colonel Lee was recommended by Congress for that office. General Washington conferred the appointment, however, upon Colonel Pickering, of Salem, and upon his refusal to serve, Colonel Lee was immediately summoned to headquarters. Upon his arrival, Lee, with becoming modesty, declined the honor, and recommended Colonel Pickering, "whom he considered, from a very friendly and intimate acquaintance, as a first-rate military character, and that he knew of no gentleman so well qualified for the post."

Washington afterward declared, in a letter to Congress, that nothing derogatory to the merits of Colonel Lee, who held a high place in his esteem, and who had "deservedly acquired the reputation of a good officer," influenced him in giving the preference to Colonel Pickering.

On the 23d of February, Colonel Glover, who had temporarily left the army to attend to his private affairs, was appointed a brigadier-general by Congress. Receiving orders from General Washington to join the army at Peekskill, he immediately set out from home, and took command of his brigade on the 14th of June. From this time until the 27th of July the men under his command rendered efficient service in resisting the encroachments of the enemy at New York.

On the 7th of October, during the battle which resulted in the disastrous rout of the British, Glover's brigade, being a part of the right wing of the army, under command of Gen. Lincoln, was held in reserve. A part of the brigade, however, including the Marblehead regiment, were engaged under General Arnold during his impetuous assault upon the British camp during the latter part of the day. The British having abandoned their artillery, and knowing that the field was lost, retreated to their camp, which they were determined to preserve at all hazards. Scarcely had they entered their lines when they were attacked by the intrepid troops under Arnold. The attack was made by a determined charge with the bayonet, resulting in one of the most desperate hand-to-hand fights ever known. The camp was defended with great bravery, the Americans being greeted with a

tremendous fire of grape-shot and small arms. "Even the stolid Hessians," says a writer of the affair, "expressed their amazement when they saw these brave Marbleheaders dash through the fire of grape and canister, and over the dead bodies of their comrades, through the embrasures, over the cannon, with the same agility with which they had formerly climbed to the main-top or traversed the back-stays, bayoneting the cannoniers at their posts." During the engagement Gen. Glover had three horses shot under him.

On the following evening the British army retreated to Saratoga, and on the 13th of October Gen. Burgoyne surrendered to Gen. Gates. The duty of guarding and conducting the prisoners to Massachusetts were assigned to Gen. Glover and the men under his command, whose brilliant achievements during the campaign had made them famous throughout the country. The prisoners arrived at Cambridge on the 7th of November, and were received by Col. William R. Lee, as the commanding officer of the cantonment. Gen. Glover was detained in Massachusetts a much longer time than was expected would be necessary to finish the business with which he had been intrusted by Gen. Gates, and did not again join the army until the following summer. During that ever-memorable winter of 1778 his brigade formed a part of the army of Washington, and experienced all the suffering which must forever make the camp at Valley Forge famous in American history. But through it all they behaved like men. Neither want, nor hunger, nor nakedness, nor all combined could induce them to forsake the service of their country. To the patient forbearance and fidelity of men like these we owe the foundation of the American Republic.

We must pass, though regretfully, over the events of the intervening time to the summer of 1780, when, with the exception of a few weeks spent in Massachusetts, Gen. Glover was with his brigade at West Point. At the time of the capture of the unfortunate Major Andre, Glover had rejoined his brigade, and on the 29th of September was a member of the court which sentenced the spy to death. On the 2d of October, when the execution took place, General Glover was officer of the day, and was deeply affected by the scene. Even old soldiers, who had many times braved death on the battle-field, shed tears on the occasion. But though the necessity of the execution was sincerely regretted, no one questioned the equity of the sentence.

The surrender of Cornwallis at Yorktown in October, 1781, decided the great contest in favor of the Americans, and though the army was not disbanded, nor the treaty of peace signed till two years later, the war was virtually at an end. Enlistments for the army went on, however, for some time, and in the spring of 1782 General Glover was ordered to Massachusetts "to take charge of the mustering and forwarding recruits." This was the last service rendered



by Glover as a general in the American army, and with it must end our account of the part taken by the men of Marblehead in the various movements upon the land. Throughout the war they were distinguished for their bravery and the faithful performance of duty. Whether in camp, or on the march; leading the advance in an attack, or covering a retreat; everywhere, and under all circumstances, the same steady resolution characterized their actions.

## CHAPTER LXXXIV.

### MARBLEHEAD—(Continued).

*Naval History of Marblehead in the Revolution.—Exploits of Heroic Marines—Commodores John Manly and Samuel Tucker—Captain John Lee in the Privateer "Nancy"—Prizes Taken—Murder of Capt. John Harris—The Letter of Marque "Plebeian"—Exploit of Robert Womsted—Capt. Cudell's Victory—The Last Naval Battle of the Revolution.*

HAVING followed the men of Marblehead as far as possible through the various campaigns of the Revolution, let us now turn our attention to their exploits upon the water. The naval history of the war for Independence can never be fully written. Many of the most daring exploits of men in private armed vessels must forever remain unknown. The information to be obtained from the records of the period is very meagre, and reliance must be placed principally upon newspaper reports of engagements, and the log-books and private journals of seamen. The rest is traditionary.

In another chapter an account has already been given of the early captures by Captains Broughton, Selman and Manly, in privateers fitted out by order of General Washington, and of Captain Mugford's heroic capture of the transport "Hope," and his subsequent death while defending his vessel against the boats of the British fleet.

On the 1st of January, 1776, Captain Manly was given the command of the armed schooner "Hancock," and became commander of a fleet of six vessels fitted out by order of General Washington. The other schooners were the "Lee," Captain Waters; the "Franklin," Captain Samuel Tucker; the "Harrison," Captain Dyer; the "Lynch," Captain Ayres; and the "Warren," Captain Burke. Captains Waters, Tucker and Dyer were commissioned on the 20th of January, 1776, while the last three commanders did not obtain their commissions until the 1st of February.

It is related of Captain Tucker, that when the express with his commission rode up to his door, the gallant captain, with his sleeves rolled up, and with a tarpaulin hat slouching over his face, was engaged in chopping wood in the yard. The officer thought that he must have mistaken the direction, and exclaimed, somewhat roughly—

"I say, fellow, I wish you would tell me if the Honorable Samuel Tucker lives hereabouts!"

"Honorable! honorable!" said Tucker, with a shrewd look at the stranger; "there is not any man of that name in Marblehead. He must be one of the family of Tuckers in Salem. I am the only Samuel Tucker there is here."

The gallant look and deportment of the young man convinced the officer that he could not be mistaken, and, after handing him his commission and partaking of refreshments, he returned to the camp at Cambridge.<sup>1</sup>

On the following day Captain Tucker was at Beverly, superintending the fitting out of the "Franklin," and in a short time sailed on his first cruise. The small arms necessary for the proper armament of his vessel were purchased with his own private funds, and the banner under which he sailed was the handiwork of his wife. In a short time he fell in with the British ship "George" and the brig "Annabel."

The two vessels were transports, and had on board about two hundred and eighty Highland troops under command of Colonel Archibald Campbell. It was about ten o'clock in the evening, and a conflict ensued which lasted nearly two hours and a half. At length the British, having lost a large number of men, including the commander of one of the transports, struck their colors and surrendered. The prizes had on board a large amount of ammunition and military stores. Tucker sustained no damage in the loss of men, but the sails of his schooner were completely riddled.

During the month of April, Commodore Manly was transferred to the command of the frigate "Hancock," of thirty-two guns, and, on his promotion, the command of the schooner "Hancock" was given to Captain Tucker. Shortly after taking command of this schooner Tucker captured two brigs within sight of a British man-of-war, and carried them into Lynn. One of the brigs was from Cork, ninety-two tons burden, laden with beef, pork, butter and coal; the other, of about one hundred tons burden, was from the Western Islands, and laden with wine and fruit.

Early in the spring of 1776, Captain John Lee, of Marblehead, was commissioned commander of the privateer "Nancy," a small vessel carrying six guns. One afternoon, just before night, he discovered a heavy armed merchantman, which, though much larger than his own vessel, he resolved to capture. The "Nancy" was so low in the water that she was not discovered by the enemy. As soon as the night became sufficiently dark, Lee sailed up to the ship, having extended indistinct lights beyond the bowsprit and from the stern of his vessel, which gave her the appearance of great length. The English captain, thinking it idle to contend with a force so much superior to his own, as he thought her from this stratagem, struck his colors. His men were sent on

<sup>1</sup>Sheppard's "Life of Tucker."





board Captain Lee's small vessel in boat-loads, and were easily secured. The captain was among the last to leave the ship; and when he stepped on to the deck of the schooner, and saw how he had been deceived, he attempted to kill himself. He was prevented by Captain Lee, who, by courteous and gentle treatment endeavored to soothe his wounded feelings. During this cruise Lee captured thirteen prizes, which were sent into the port of Bilbao, in Spain. The last of these he followed, in order to superintend the trial, condemnation and sale of the vessels and cargoes, and to repair his own vessel.

After refitting, he sailed into the British Channel on a cruise, and was chased by the flag-ship of Admiral Jarvis. Captain Lee made every effort to increase the speed of his vessel by throwing his guns and other heavy ordnance overboard; but finding it impossible to escape, ran her on shore. The wreck was immediately surrounded by the boats of the ship; and the officers and crew were captured, and ultimately landed in England and sent to Forton Prison.

During the latter part of the month of October, Tucker captured the brig "Lively," bound from Air to Newfoundland, which, together with the cargo and crew, was sent into Boston. Mr. Sheppard, in his "Life of Commodore Tucker," states that during the year 1776 the number of prizes captured by that daring commander was from thirty to forty, including ships, brigs and smaller vessels, many of them with very valuable cargoes, and some of them armed vessels.

In March, 1777, Captain Tucker was received into the navy, and was commissioned as commander of frigate "Boston." It is probable that he did not assume the command of the frigate for some time after, however, as would seem from the following incident of naval warfare, during which the "Boston" was commanded by Captain Hector McNeil:

"In May of this year, the 'Hancock,' 32, Captain John Manly, and the 'Boston,' 21, Captain Hector McNeil, sailed in company from Boston, on a cruise to the eastward. A few days out, in the month of May, the 'Hancock' made a strange sail early in the morning, and succeeded in getting near enough to her to observe her broadside, on opposite tacks, the 'Hancock' using her starboard gun and the enemy her port and guns. At this time the 'Boston' was out of gunshot. Finding that he had to deal with an antagonist of superior force, the English vessel, which was a frigate, stood on, crowding sail to escape. The 'Hancock' now went about in pursuit, when Captain Manly sent his people from the guns, and ordered them to get their breakfasts. As the 'Hancock' was one of the fastest ships that was ever built, she quickly drew up ahead of the chase, which renewed her fire as soon as her guns would bear. Captain Manly, however, commanded his men not to discharge a gun until fairly alongside, when a warm and close action commenced that lasted an hour and a half, when, the 'Boston' drawing near, the Englishman struck. The prize proved to be the 'Fox,' of 25 guns. In this action the 'Hancock' lost eight men, and the 'Fox' thirty-two. The 'Boston' did not fire a gun until just after the 'Fox' had struck, when she is said to have given her a broadside, the 'Hancock' being in the act of lowering the boats to take possession as her consort ranged up on the beam of the prize.

"Captain Manly now put a crew on board of the 'Fox' and continued his cruise, but was not fortunate enough to fall in with anything of moment. On the 1st of June the three ships appeared off Halifax, in company, looking into the harbor. This brought out the 'Rainbow,' a 44 on two decks, Sir George Collier, the 'Flora,' 32, and the 'Victor' 18, in the chase. The Americans scattered, the 'Rainbow' and 'Victor'

pressing the 'Hancock,' the 'Flora' the 'Fox' while the 'Boston' had so much the start as to be able easily to keep ahead. The 'Flora' first closed with the 'Fox,' which ship she recaptured after a short but spirited action. The wind being very light, Captain Manly attempted to lighten his ship by pumping out the water, and is believed to have lost her sailing by altering her trim. Finding the 'Rainbow' closing, that gallant officer made his disposition for boarding, and, doubtless, would have made a desperate effort to carry his powerful antagonist had the wind permitted. The air remained so light, however, that the 'Rainbow' got him fairly under her guns before he could get in a enough to accomplish the object, the 'Victor' getting a raking position at the same time the 'Hancock' struck.

"Captain McNeil was much censured for abandoning his consort on this occasion, and was dismissed the service in consequence."<sup>1</sup>

Shortly after this event Captain Tucker, upon whom the rank of commodore had been conferred, sailed on a cruise in the "Boston." While out he fell in with a frigate much larger than his own and carried her by boarding. The marines were led by Lieutenant Magee, a brave young officer, who was killed the moment his feet struck the enemy's deck. Captain Tucker, who had brought his ship gun to gun with the British frigate, leaped into the midst of his adversaries, cutting down all before him. The loss of life on board the frigate was very great, and she soon struck her colors and became the prize of the "Boston."

During the latter part of October, or early in the month of November, 1777, the brigantine "Penet," Captain John Harris, of Marblehead, master, sailed for the port of Nantes, in the Kingdom of France. Captain Harris was charged by the Board of War with the important duty of conveying Mr. Austin, who carried important papers from the government, to the first port that could be made in France or Spain. The passage was made in safety, and the "Penet" returned with a cargo and several seamen who had been discharged from American ships in France. Captain Harris subsequently sailed in private armed vessels, and in 1779 was sailing master on board a ship commanded by Captain John Conway, of Marblehead. On the 19th of November of that year they fell in with and were captured by a British ship of a larger size than their own, though not without a spirited engagement. The American vessel was at length obliged to strike her colors. After the battle was over, and the American seamen had surrendered themselves as prisoners, a lieutenant of the British ship seized a musket, and aiming at Captain Harris, shot him through the head, killing him instantly. The murder was deliberate and intentional, and is only one of many instances of brutality on the part of British officers.

On the 10th of February, 1778, Commodore Tucker, who had again been commissioned as commander of the "Boston," received orders to carry the Hon. John Adams as envoy to France. Mr. Adams took with him his son, John Quincy Adams, then about eleven years of age. The "Boston" experienced a great deal of unpleasant weather during the passage, and

<sup>1</sup> "Cooper's Naval History."



was several times chased by British cruisers which had been sent out to capture her. Commodore Tucker succeeded in eluding them all. On the 11th of March he fell in with the armed ship "Martha," bound from London to New York with a valuable cargo. As the "Boston" sailed up to her, the decks were cleared for action, and the men were at the guns ready for battle. Noticing Mr. Adams standing among the marines with a gun in his hand, Commodore Tucker, in tones of authority, ordered him to leave the deck. Mr. Adams, however, continued at his post, when, at last, Tucker seized him and forced him away, exclaiming as he did so, "I am commanded by the Continental Congress to deliver you safe in France, and you must go down below, sir." Mr. Adams accordingly left the deck. The "Boston" fired but one gun at the enemy, who returned three, and then struck his colors. The prize was manned and sent into Boston, and Tucker kept on his course to France, arriving at Bordeaux on the 31st of March.

During the spring and summer of 1779, Commodore Tucker, in the frigate "Boston," sailed on several remarkably successful cruises. In the month of June alone he captured seven prizes, six of which were armed vessels. Of these, the most important were the "Pole," a frigate of two hundred tons burden, mounting twenty-four guns, and the sloop-of-war "Thorn," mounting sixteen guns. The "Pole" was captured without the firing of a gun on either side. As soon as Tucker saw the ships in the distance he knew her to be an English frigate, and boldly sailed up to her.

Disguising his own ship with English colors, he prepared for action, and, having obtained a commanding position, hoisted the American flag and ordered an instant surrender. The commander of the British frigate, seeing that resistance was in vain, struck his colors. The prize was subsequently sold for one hundred and three thousand pounds, the sale of the coal and provisions found on board increasing the amount to nearly one hundred and twenty thousand pounds.

In the meantime, Commodore Manly, who two years before had been captured by the British and sent to prison, was exchanged. Upon regaining his freedom he at once assumed command of the privateer "Cumberland." While cruising in her he was captured by the British frigate "Pomona," and carried into Barbadoes, where he and his officers were imprisoned. All their applications to obtain paroles were rejected. They finally succeeded in effecting an escape, and seizing a sloop, sailed for Martinico, where they arrived in safety. Manly was afterwards in command of the privateer "Jason," which had been captured by the British shortly before his escape. While on a cruise, during the month of July, he was attacked by two British privateers, one of eighteen guns, and the other of sixteen. In the engagement which ensued, Manly behaved with great bravery, and reserved his fire until he came close up with his adversaries. Running between them, he first discharged

a broadside into the eighteen-gun vessel, killing and wounding nearly thirty of her crew. He then gave her consort the other broadside, when both vessels surrendered, and became his prizes.

In November of this year the letter of marque "Freemason," Captain Benjamin Boden, sailed from Marblehead to Martinico. She carried six guns and fifteen men. On her passage she was taken by a British privateer sloop, mounting sixteen guns. The captain, second mate and a boy were left on board the "Freemason," but the first mate, Robert Wormsted, with the rest of the crew, was carried on board the privateer. The prisoners were handcuffed and thrust into the hold, and at night the hatchway was closed. Here Wormsted conceived a plan of escape which was successfully executed. His handcuffs were so large that he could with little exertion get rid of them and set the rest at liberty. He proposed rising upon the privateer the next day, when the captain should be taking the sun. At first the attempt was thought to be too desperate, they being so few in number compared with the crew on board. At length, however, Wormsted prevailed with his companions, and they solemnly bound themselves to do their utmost. His plan was to spring upon deck and knock down the captain, and they were to follow and do their part. At twelve o'clock the next day their courage was put to the test, and in a few moments the captain and many others were laid prostrate upon the deck. Their pistols were taken and aimed at the enemy in the cabin, who surrendered without opposition. Wormsted then bore down upon the schooner and ordered her to strike her colors. Captain Boden cried for joy, and his captors were as much chagrined as astonished at this unexpected reverse of fortune. Wormsted, as commander, had the English flag lowered and the American hoisted. Having ordered the British officers and sailors to be handcuffed and thrust into the hold, he appointed Captain Boden prize-master, and directed him to steer for Guadaloupe. There in due time they arrived in triumph, and were received with unusual testimonials of exultation. The crew of the privateer were sent to prison and the prize was sold at auction. Having loaded his vessel, Wormsted sailed for Massachusetts, and on the second day was again captured and lost everything.

On the second cruise of the sloop-of-war "Thorn," Capt. Richard Cowell, of Marblehead, was appointed commander, and she had a crew of one hundred and twenty men. Being a very enterprising and brave officer, he made many captures, to man out which took so many of his seamen that his crew was reduced to only sixty, including officers and boys. He therefore concluded to return to port for the purpose of obtaining a reinforcement of seamen.

Within a few days after having commenced his homeward passage he fell in with the British letter of marque "St. David," of twenty-two guns. He first asked the opinion of his officers as to the expediency





of engaging a ship of such superior size and armament, and apparently fully manned. Finding that the officers were in favor of attacking her, he ordered the crew to be mustered, and having represented to them the great disparity of force between the two ships, he observed, "Still your officers are anxious to attack her; are you ready to go into action?" They instantly gave three hearty cheers, as an emphatic affirmative response. The "Thorn" immediately ran down alongside of the enemy, and began a desperate engagement at close quarters. The contest lasted an hour and a half, when the "St. David" struck her colors. On boarding her it was found that she had a crew of one hundred and seventy men, having taken on board seventy marines from a transport, which she had fallen in with in distress. The captain was mortally wounded, and one-third of the crew killed or wounded. The cargo consisted of six hundred puncheons of Jamaica spirit. Captain Cowell put an officer and twenty-five men on board the prize, and ordered him to make the nearest port; but the ship was never heard of again.

On the next cruise of the "Thorn," she was commanded by Commodore Tucker, who had been released from his parole given at Charleston by being exchanged for a British officer of equal rank. The crew of the "Thorn" was composed of eighty-one men and eighteen boys. "She had been cruising about three weeks, when they fell in with the 'Lord Hyde,' an English packet of twenty-two guns and one hundred men. As the two vessels drew near, the commanders hailed each other in the customary way when ships meet at sea, and the captain of the English packet cried out roughly from the quarter-deck—

"Haul down your colors, or I'll sink you."

"Ay, ay, sir, directly," replied Tucker, calmly and complacently; and he then ordered the helmsman to steer the "Thorn" right under the stern of the packet, luff up under her lee quarters, and range alongside her. The order was promptly executed. The two vessels were laid side by side within pistol-shot of each other. While the "Thorn" was getting into position the enemy fired a full broadside at her, which did but little damage. As soon as she was brought completely alongside her adversary, Tucker thundered to his men to fire, and a tremendous discharge followed, and, as good aim had been taken, a dreadful carnage was seen in that ill-fated vessel. It was rapidly succeeded by a fresh volley of artillery, and in twenty minutes a piercing cry was heard from the English vessel: "Quarter, for God's sake! Our ship is sinking! Our men are dying of their wounds!" To this heart-rending appeal Commodore Tucker replied: "How can you expect quarter while that British flag is flying?" The sad answer came back: "Our halliards are shot away!" "Then cut away your ensign-mast, or you'll all be dead men." It was done immediately; down came the colors; the din of cannonading ceased, and only the groans of the

wounded and dying were heard. Thirty-four of the crew of the prize, with the captain, were either killed or wounded. Her decks were besmeared with blood, and in some places it stood in clotted masses to the tops of the sailors' slippers." On going on board the prize, Commodore Tucker is said to have exclaimed, as he witnessed the suffering of the wounded, "Would to God I had never seen her!"

During the year 1780, while cruising in the ship "Marquis" of sixteen guns, many of which were small four-pounders, Captain Richard Cowell fell in with a British letter of marque. She mounted twenty-four guns, and a complete set of men, far superior in numbers to his own. Relying, however, on the spirit and bravery of his officers and crew, he laid his ship alongside the enemy, and continued there for nearly three hours. So near were the two ships in this situation that the sponges were frequently taken from one to the other while the men were in the act of loading. One man on board the "Marquis" was nearly taken out of the port at which he was stationed, by one of the crew of the enemy. This gallant and heroic action would undoubtedly have resulted in a glorious victory for Captain Cowell; but the enemy, after having expended all his ammunition, hauled off from his opponent, and the disabled state of the spars and rigging of the "Marquis" prevented the gallant captain from pursuing him.

In the spring of 1781, Commodore Tucker, in command of the "Thorn," captured the English ship "Elizabeth" of twenty guns. The ship was bound for Halifax under convoy with the brig "Observer" of sixteen, and the sloop-of-war "Howe," of fourteen guns. Ascertaining that two smaller vessels with valuable cargoes were sailing under protection of the convoy, Tucker determined to intercept them. On the appearance of the fleet Tucker hoisted the English flag and boldly sailed into the midst of them. Coming up between the "Elizabeth" and the "Observer," he made friendly inquiries of them, and then, as if by accident, managed to get his vessel entangled with the "Elizabeth." When all was in readiness, Tucker lowered the English flag and hoisted the American, at the same time giving orders to fire a broadside. The "Elizabeth" fired at the same time. Before the English captain had time to discharge another gun, thirty picked men from the "Thorn" boarded his vessel. Obtaining possession of the deck, they drove the crew below, and hauled down the colors. The brig and the sloop-of-war then attempted an attack upon the "Thorn," but Tucker assumed a threatening attitude, and after the sloop-of-war had discharged a broadside both vessels sailed away. During the engagement the "Thorn" had nine men killed and fourteen wounded.

During the latter part of the month of July the "Thorn" was captured by the British frigate "Hind."





She was captured near the mouth of the River St. Lawrence, and Commodore Tucker, with his crew of eighty men, was landed at the Island of St. John's, to be conveyed to Halifax.

Shortly after they were landed at St. John's, Tucker and the officers of the "Thorn" were placed in an open boat for the purpose of being carried to Halifax. A verbal promise was exacted from Tucker, that he would coast along the shore and proceed direct for Halifax; but he was overpowered by his officers, who were determined to escape. They accordingly sailed across Massachusetts Bay, and about the middle of August arrived at Boston in safety.

This was the last cruise made by Commodore Tucker during the Revolutionary War. His biographer claims that he "took more prizes, fought more sea-fights and gained more victories than, with a very few exceptions, any naval hero of the age." And it is true.

During the month of November, 1782, the ship "St. Helena," commanded by Captain John Stillwell, sailed with a fleet from Havana for Philadelphia. She mounted twenty guns between decks,—ten of which, however, were of wood,—and had under convoy fifteen American vessels, which had previously been subjected to an embargo. On the day they were permitted to leave port the "St. Helena," in attempting to get under way, met with a disaster which detained her till sunset. The fleet was beating backward and forward during the night, which was dark, waiting for the convoy. The "St. Helena" passed and repassed a number of the vessels. In the meantime several guns were heard, supposed to be from one of the fleet. At length, about midnight, she was saluted with a broadside. It was something wholly unexpected; the men were fatigued; no one seemed to know his station, and great confusion ensued. Some of the guns, however, were soon got into operation, and the firing continued till daylight, when the antagonist was found to be His Britannic Majesty's brig "Lively," commanded by Captain Michael Stanhope. The "St. Helena" was also within reach of the guns of the "Jupiter," a ship of the line. Of course, her colors were lowered, and the men taken on board the "Lively." Six days afterwards it was discovered that the crew of the "St. Helena" were preparing to rise. All the men were consequently confined below, and were suffered to come up only through a narrow grating, one at a time, the hatchway being constantly guarded by a sentinel. After six days' close confinement, five of the Americans—namely, Anthony Carner, John Prince,<sup>1</sup> Seth Farrow, Lewis Russell<sup>1</sup> and Nathan Walker—concerted a plan for taking the brig. Accordingly, about noon, Walker disarmed the sentinel, took out the bar which fastened the hatchway, and the other four instantly rushed upon deck, fought in a most desperate manner and in

a few moments took the vessel.<sup>2</sup> The number of Americans on board the "Lively" was forty-six. They immediately bore away for Havana, and upon their arrival at that port a committee was chosen to sell the prize and settle with the crew.

The end of the year 1782 closed the maritime war of the American Revolution. As it had been begun by the men of Marblehead, so it was reserved for a Marblehead commander to close it with a brilliant achievement. Commodore Manly, who in 1775 hoisted the first American flag, and on board the little schooner "Lee" made the first important capture of the war, had been appointed to the command of the United States frigate "Hague." While cruising about the West Indies he was chased by an English seventy-four, and grounded on a sand-bank near Guadaloupe. Three ships of the line having joined the seventy-four, they came to anchor within gunshot of the "Hague." With springs on their cables, they opened a most tremendous fire. Commodore Manly supported this cannonade for three days. On the fourth day he succeeded in extricating his ship from her perilous position, when, hoisting Continental colors at the maintop-gallant-mast, he fired thirteen guns as a farewell defiance, and boldly sailed away. In due time the "Hague" arrived safe in Boston.

## CHAPTER LXXV.

### MARBLEHEAD—(Continued).

*Attempts to Restore Prosperity—Visit of General de Lafayette—The Federal Constitution—Gift and Address of Marblehead to Vice President John Adams—The Marblehead Academy—Established—The First Collector of the Port—Visit of President Washington—Poverty of the Town—The Grand Lottery—Methodist Church Organized—The First Postmaster—Death of Colonel John Orr—Hon. Samuel Sewall elected a Member of Congress—Bequest of John Marchant—Exercises on the Death of Washington—Doctor Elizer Story's Fatal Mistake—Ravages of Small-Pox—Marblehead Bank Incorporated—The English Ship "Jupiter"—Depredations of British Cruisers.*

ON the return of peace, with that determined spirit of enterprise for which they had always been distinguished, the people of Marblehead entered at once upon their accustomed commercial pursuits. Under the direction of merchants of the character and ability of Colonel William R. Lee, John Hooper, Thomas and Knott Pedrick, and a score of others equally well known and respected, large ships were fitted out, some of which made successful voyages to France, Spain, Portugal and the West Indies. The Grand Banks fisheries were also, in a measure, revived, and every attempt was made to restore the prosperity which the town enjoyed before the war. It was not until these attempts were found to be well-nigh futile that the disastrous effects of the great struggle were realized. The days when Marblehead gave promise of being a great commercial port were gone, and they

<sup>1</sup> Of Marblehead.

<sup>2</sup> Alden's Collections.



were gone forever. The only recourse of the inhabitants was to prosecute the fishing business, and in a few years it became almost the sole industry of the town.

On Tuesday, November 2, 1784, the Marquis de Lafayette visited the town. The general was accompanied by the Chevalier Grandchamps, the Chevalier Caraman and Samuel Breck, Esq., of Boston. The distinguished visitors were met on Salem Road by a procession of prominent citizens, and escorted to the entrance of the town, where they were received with a band of music by a large concourse of people. As the procession marched into town, the church-bells were rung, and the marquis was received on all sides with prolonged cheers and cries of "Long life to the Marquis de Lafayette!" Arriving at the residence of one of the citizens, he was introduced to "the gentlemen of the place," and was presented with an address of welcome, to which he feelingly and appropriately responded. He was then escorted to another private residence, represented in the newspaper reports as a "genteel house," where a grand dinner was served. After dinner, an hour was devoted to speeches, and the customary thirteen toasts were drunk, the sentiment offered by Lafayette being "The Town of Marblehead, and Unbounded Success to its Fisheries." At six o'clock the distinguished visitors departed amid the booming of cannon, the ringing of bells and the joyful acclamations of the people.

On the 29th of May, 1787, the Constitutional Convention, composed of delegates from all the States, met in Philadelphia. Elbridge Gerry, of Marblehead, was one of the delegates from Massachusetts, and labored earnestly throughout the entire session of the convention to "secure a Constitution adequate to the exigencies of the government and the preservation of the Union." He was, however, one of the sixteen members who withheld their signatures from the document when completed. When the instrument was referred to the States for ratification, Isaac Mansfield, Azor Orne, Jonathan Glover and John Glover, as members of the Massachusetts Convention, voted in favor of its adoption.

The election of George Washington and John Adams as President and Vice-President of the United States gave unbounded satisfaction to the people of Marblehead. For Mr. Adams, especially, they entertained feelings of the deepest gratitude for his inestimable services "in preserving to the United States of America in the Treaty of Peace the extensive advantage of the cod-fishery." These advantages were considered as especially beneficial to Marblehead, and the citizens, in the fullness of their hearts, resolved to present Mr. Adams with an address and some slight testimonial of their appreciation of his efforts in their behalf. Accordingly, on the 6th of March, 1789, a town-meeting was held, at which it was voted to "present his Excellency John

Adams, Esq., with six quintals of table fish." The gift was presented, together with an address, which concluded as follows:

"We therefore, being now legally assembled in Town meeting, pray your Excellency to accept this, our unanimous address, as expressing our sense of those essential benefits which we now enjoy in the preservation of the fishery, for which we believe ourselves more especially indebted to your Excellency. While we are enjoying the fullness of those benefits, we pray your Excellency will indulge us to furnish your table with a small share of the fruits of your good services, which we wish may be acceptable as a mark of our gratitude."

During the year 1788, or during the year 1789, several influential citizens, who appreciated the necessity of greater educational advantages for the youth of the town, contributed the funds for the establishment of an academy. These gentlemen, who styled themselves "benefactors," were Samuel Sewall, Robert Hooper, Samuel Hooper, William Raymond Lee, Elisha Story, Samuel Russell Trevett, John Humphreys, John Goodwin, Marston Watson, Richard Homan, Joseph Sewall, Samuel Bartoll, John Dixie, Richard Pedrick, Ebenezer Graves and Burrill Dvereux. In a short time a building was erected on Pleasant Street, and Mr. William Harris was employed as preceptor.

For many years previous to the Revolution Marblehead had been a port of entry, but as the records were taken away by the Tory refugees during the war, we are thereby deprived of much valuable information concerning the commercial and maritime history of the town. The first collector after the organization of the national government was Richard Harris, who was evidently commissioned in the autumn of 1789. The district comprised all the waters and shores in the towns of Marblehead and Lynn, though since that time the towns of Swampscott, Nahant and Saugus have been set off from Lynn and are still included in the district. The first entry made in the records is under date of October 2, 1789. The number of licenses granted during the year ensuing was one hundred and thirty-two, twenty-seven of which were sloops, schooners and brigantines registered in the foreign trade.

On the 29th of October President Washington, who was making a tour of the New England States, visited the town. He was accompanied by Major Jackson and Mr. Lear, gentlemen of his family, and was received at the entrance of the town by a procession composed of the selectmen, the clergymen of the town and a large body of citizens. The accounts of the celebration on this important occasion are very meagre; but we are informed that he "was conducted to the house of Mrs. Lee, where a collation was provided, of which he very cheerfully partook with the gentlemen of his suite, the selectmen, clergymen and other gentlemen of the town." President Washington was welcomed by the selectmen, who presented an address in the name of and on behalf of the town, in which he was assured that his presence "inspired the inhabitants of Marblehead with the most unbounded





joy; but they cannot express as they would wish, their great sense of the honor done them on this occasion. The too visible decay and poverty of this town must be their excuse that they have not offered to the illustrious character who now visits them a reception more answerable to his dignity and more expressive of their own veneration."

Before leaving the town President Washington visited one of the fish-yards and several other places of interest, after which he proceeded on his journey. Two days later, having arrived at Portsmouth, N. H., he forwarded a letter, saying that "the reception with which you have been pleased to honor my arrival in Marblehead, and the sentiments of approbation and attachment which you have expressed of my conduct and of my person, are too flattering and grateful not to be acknowledged with sincere thanks, and answered with unfeigned wishes for your prosperity."

The plea of poverty, offered in apology for not receiving the President of the United States in a manner more becoming to his station, gives but a faint conception of the condition of the town at this time. For two years the fishing business had failed to be remunerative, and many of the inhabitants were reduced to a state of extreme wretchedness. There were four hundred and fifty-nine widows and eight hundred and sixty-five orphan children in the town, nearly all of whom were dependent in some degree upon the tax-paying inhabitants for support. As the winter of 1790 advanced, their sufferings were greatly augmented, and several perished from hunger and exposure.

Added to the general distress from this cause, was the anxiety produced by the visible decay of property, both public and private. Houses, barns and fences were falling to pieces, and without the means to repair them, their owners were powerless to prevent it. The town house and work-house were in a ruinous condition, and River-Head Beach had been so long out of repair that it was in great danger of being entirely washed away by the constant inroads of the sea. The people knew not where to seek relief, and various expedients were resorted to for the purpose of obtaining money for the assistance of those in distress. At length, driven to desperation by the misery about them, the citizens, in town-meeting assembled, voted to petition the Legislature for permission to hold a lottery for the relief of their necessities. Permission was readily granted, and the final drawing took place on the 3d of June. By means of this lottery, and two others subsequently held, the beach at the head of the harbor was repaired; the distress of the inhabitants was alleviated and the general appearance of the town was greatly improved.

During the year 1790 the Methodist Church was organized in the house of Mr. Prentiss, on Mugford Street. The new society consisted of seven members only, but so rapidly did it increase in numbers that

in a few years a pastor was settled and religious services were regularly maintained.

The Marblehead Academy had now become an established institution. Education was encouraged in Massachusetts, as in no other State in the Union, by wise laws and judicious appropriations, and when, in 1792, an act of incorporation was applied for, it was readily obtained. The act became a law on the 17th of November of that year, and the corporation was established by the name of "The Trustees of the Marblehead Academy." Shortly after the Legislature granted a township of land, six miles square, lying between the rivers Kennebec and Penobscot, in the county of Hancock, for the purpose of supporting the academy. This land was subsequently sold to Samuel Sewall, Esq., for one thousand five hundred pounds.

The mails had been carried to Marblehead from Salem, regularly twice a week, for many years, and on special occasions it had been customary to dispatch a messenger on horseback to carry important news or documents. On the 20th of March, 1793, the first post-office was established, and Thomas Lewis was appointed postmaster.

On the 6th of June, 1799, Colonel Azor Orne, beloved and respected as one of the most prominent of the Revolutionary patriots, died in Boston, and his remains were brought to Marblehead for interment. On the Sunday following his death the Rev. Ebenezer Hubbard, pastor of the First Congregational Society, preached an appropriate sermon, taking for his text the words found in chapter eleven of the gospel according to St. John, thirty-fifth verse,—*"Jesus wept."*

Another event to which considerable local importance was attached was the election of the Hon. Samuel Sewall as a member of Congress. Mr. Sewall was an eminent member of the Essex bar, and had for several years represented Marblehead in the General Court. Having been prominent in all local matters, and deeply interested in the welfare of his fellow-citizens, his election gave the most sincere pleasure to the people of Marblehead, who felt that in him they had an able advocate of their interests at the national capital.

The first bequest made to the town was the sum of nine hundred and thirty-seven dollars, given by Captain John Marchant, for the benefit of the poor. During the month of June, 1797, Captain Marchant, who was about to sail on a foreign voyage from Philadelphia, placed a promissory note for that amount, which he held against a citizen of Dorchester, in the hands of Colonel William R. Lee, with instructions to collect it, and in case he never returned, to donate the amount to the poor of the town. Captain Marchant died in Batavia during the following year, and the note was collected in accordance with his instructions. It is doubtful, however, whether the benevolent intentions of the donor have ever been carried into effect.



After an unsuccessful attempt to invest the fund, the overseers of the poor turned it over to the town, and it was appropriated for the erection of two grammar school-houses.

On the 14th of December, 1799, George Washington died at Mount Vernon in the sixty-seventh year of his age. The day of the funeral was appropriately observed by the tolling of bells, the firing of minute-guns and a general suspension of business. In the afternoon a procession of the Lodge of Masons and the pupils of the public schools marched to the new meeting-house, where an oration was delivered by Joseph Story, then a student of law in the office of Hon. Samuel Sewall.

In the autumn of 1800 the town was once more thrown into a state of excitement, by the breaking out of the small-pox. Doctor Elisha Story, who had for many years been a popular and successful physician in the town, having learned of the important discovery by Dr. Jenner, that contagion from small-pox could be averted by inoculation with cow virus, sent to England and procured a quantity of virus, with which he inoculated several of his own children and those of some of his friends. It was soon evident that a fatal mistake had been made.

The virus proved to be that of the genuine small-pox, and as the disease spread from house to house, the people were panic-stricken with fear. Several town-meetings were held to consider the matter, and the town-house being too small to contain the crowd of excited citizens that assembled, the meetings were adjourned and again convened at the "New Meeting-house." All intercourse with other towns was prohibited, and a committee was chosen to adopt other necessary measures of precaution against the spread of the pestilence. The wrath of the unreflecting and ignorant portion of the community was directed with especial severity against Doctor Story, to whom they attributed the cause of the entire trouble. Threats of lynching him were publicly made, and fears were entertained by his friends that some serious injury would be done him either in person or property.

The counsels of the wise prevailed, however, and the good doctor, who suffered keenly in his mind on account of the distress which he had innocently caused, was unmolested.

To add to the general distress, a large proportion of the community were suffering from the most extreme privations of poverty. "Melancholy indeed," wrote the town's committee a few weeks later, "was the prospect of six hundred inhabitants (one-twelfth of our population), who, independent of disease, were destitute of the common comforts of life; who had little else than hunger and cold in prospect, with the approaching inclement season." The town had voted to care for the poor and destitute, but it was found impossible to furnish relief proportionate to such a demand. Succor was at hand, however, for upon their necessities being known, contributions

began to pour in from several of the neighboring towns, and in a short time the distress was alleviated. On the 13th of January, 1801, a little less than two months after the breaking out of the disease, the town was declared cleansed, and the inhabitants of other towns were invited to resume their usual intercourse. But before this could be done, the grave had received sixty-four victims of the pestilence, twenty of whom were adults.

Early in the month of January, 1804, the principal business men and capitalists of the town subscribed \$100,000, as the capital stock of a bank, and applied to the Legislature for an act of incorporation. The act received the signature of the Governor on the 7th of March, and the institution was established as the Marblehead Bank. Capt. Joseph Barker was elected president, and Mr. John Pedrick (3d) cashier. The "Lee Mansion" was subsequently purchased of Hon. Samuel Sewall for five thousand dollars, and has ever since been owned and occupied by the bank.

Instances of great bravery are not uncommon when men are fighting for the honor of their country or in defense of their homes. The deeds of the soldier who bravely faces death upon the battle-field are recorded on enduring monuments, and all men unite in doing honor to the hero. But there are deeds of heroism when the country is at peace, and the home is free from danger, when the ocean is the battle-field and the mighty wind the foe. These, too often, are allowed to fade from the memory, and to perish in oblivion. Thus there are few persons living to-day who have ever heard of the many acts of heroism performed by the Marblehead fishermen while at sea. Much has been done to perpetuate the memory of an act of injustice to an innocent man, who had been accused by a cowardly crew of wilfully refusing to assist a vessel in distress; but the following incident so worthy to be held in remembrance, has been almost forgotten:

In the spring of 1805 the English ship "Jupiter" foundered at sea, and three days after the sad event Skipper "William Powers" fell in with her long boat, having on board thirty-nine of the passengers and crew. The fresh wind and heavy sea rendered it impossible for the boat to board the schooner, and for a time it was feared that all attempts to rescue the unfortunate occupants must be abandoned. Finally, as a last resort, the heroic "skipper" placed a rope about his waist, and by flinging himself over the "lee quarter," succeeded in lifting each person separately on board the vessel. It was nobly done; but the disinterested skipper performed the act of mercy at the risk of his own life, and, though a strong and powerful man, was completely exhausted and severely bruised. The rescued passengers were shortly after distributed among three other vessels, commanded by Skippers John Powers, Green and Dennis, by whom they were brought in safety to Marblehead. Their arrival was the signal for similar acts of generosity on





the part of the inhabitants, who vied with each other in supplying their necessities, and making them as comfortable as their friendless situation would permit.

Shortly after this event the town was again thrown into a state of excitement by the news of an outrage committed by the British frigate "Ville de Milan" upon several fishing vessels from Marblehead, Salem and Beverly. The frigate was cruising on the banks, and her commander, Captain Lowrie, boarded the vessels and impressed twelve or fourteen of their best men into the British naval service. Though only one of many similar outrages, this incident is important as an illustration of the depredations committed by British cruisers upon American seamen, which resulted in the passage of the Embargo Act, and the subsequent war between the United States and Great Britain.

## CHAPTER LXXXVI.

### MARBLEHEAD—(Continued).

*The Embargo—Seizure of Marblehead Vessels—The True Story of Skipper Ireson—Action of Marblehead in Support of the Embargo Law—Adoption of Marblehead Resolutions in Congress—Marblehead Light Infantry Organized—F. Bridg, George Electel Governor—Baptist Church Organized—War Declared Against Great Britain—Patriotic Address of Marblehead First Fireteam Feted Out—Marblehead Men Man the Frigate "Constitution"—Heroism of William Furness—Battle between the "Constitution" and the "Guerrick"—Full Judge George United Vice-President—Engagement between the "Constitution" and the "Java"—The "Chesapeake" and the "Shannon"—The Town Invited—Two Men Shot on the Streets—British Cruisers Chase the "Constitution" into Marblehead Harbor—Heroic Death of Lieutenant John G. Cowell—Demonstration on the Declaration of Peace—Marblehead Men in British Prisons.*

THE repeated indignities to which American vessels were subjected by British cruisers had the effect to impress upon Congress the necessity of legislation for the protection of the commerce of the country, and on the 8th of January, 1808, the famous embargo law was passed. This act, which was adopted at the instance of the President, detained all vessels in American ports, and required all American vessels then away to return home. But the depredations of the British continued in spite of the embargo. Vessel after vessel was captured and confiscated, and many were overhauled while returning from foreign ports in compliance with the law. Among these were the schooners "Minerva" and "Perseverance," of Marblehead, commanded by Captains Poor and Meservey. The captain of the "Perseverance," on his arrival home, reported that he had left sixty American vessels at Plymouth, among which was the schooner "Betsy Hooper," of Marblehead, which had been confiscated.

Though firmly in favor of the embargo, and sincerely believing in its necessity as a measure of precaution, the inhabitants of Marblehead were among the greatest sufferers from its effects. With a popula-

tion of six or seven thousand, nearly all of whom were entirely dependent upon the fishing business for subsistence, the condition of the town was deplorable. Eighty-seven vessels, averaging eighty tons each, were necessarily idle; and the warehouses were stored with the fish caught during that and the previous year. The law prohibited their exportation and there was no market for them at home; consequently they could not be sold, and there was great distress among the people.

On Saturday, the 30th of October, the schooner "Betty," commanded by Skipper Benjamin Ireson, arrived from the Grand Banks. Shortly after their arrival the crew reported that at midnight on the previous Friday, when off Cape Cod light-house, they passed the schooner "Active," of Portland, which was in a sinking condition; and that the skipper had refused to render any assistance to the unfortunate men on board the wreck. The excitement and indignation of the people upon the reception of the news can be better imagined than described. Two vessels, manned by willing volunteers, were immediately dispatched to the scene of disaster, with the hope of their arrival in time to save the shipwrecked sailors. But their mission was a failure and they returned with no tidings of the wreck. The resentment of the people was still further provoked when, on the following day, the sloop "Swallow" arrived, having on board Captain Gibbons, the master of the ill-fated schooner. He corroborated the story told by the crew of the "Betty," and stated that the "Active" sprung leak at about eleven o'clock on Friday night. An hour later the "Betty" was spoken, "but contrary to the principles of humanity," she sailed away without giving any assistance. On Saturday, Captain Gibbons and three of the passengers were taken off the wreck by Mr. Hardy, of Truro, in a whale-boat. Four other persons were left on the wreck, but the storm increased so rapidly that it was found impossible to return to their rescue. Captain Gibbons was placed on board the revenue cutter "Good Intent," and afterwards went on board the "Swallow," in which he came to Marblehead. This statement by one who had so narrowly escaped a watery grave made a deep impression upon the fishermen, and they determined to demonstrate their disapproval of Skipper Ireson's conduct by a signal act of vengeance. Accordingly, on a bright moonlight night, the unfortunate skipper was suddenly seized by several powerful men, and securely bound. He was then placed in a dory, and, besmeared from head to feet with tar and feathers, was dragged through the town, escorted by a multitude of men and boys. When opposite the locality known as Work-house Rocks, the bottom of the dory came out, and the prisoner finished the remainder of his ride to Salem in a cart. The authorities of that town forbade the entrance of the strange procession, and the crowd returned to Marblehead.





Throughout the entire proceeding Mr. Ireson maintained a discreet silence, and when, on arriving at his own home, he was released from custody, his only remark was, "I thank you for my ride, gentlemen, but you will live to regret it." His words were prophetic. When too late to make reparation for the wrong they had committed, the impulsive fishermen realized that they had perpetrated an act of the greatest injustice upon an innocent man.

At this late day, when for years his memory has been defamed throughout the land, and the fair name of the women of Marblehead has been sullied by the fictitious story of one of our best New England poets, it is but just that the true history of the affair should be written. Skipper Ireson was not more to blame than his crew, and, it is believed, not at all. When the wreck was spoken, and the cry of distress was heard, a terrible gale was blowing. There was a consultation on board the "Betty" as to the course to be pursued, and the crew decided not to endanger their own lives for the sake of saving others. Finding that they were resolute in their determination, Skipper Ireson proposed to lay by the wreck all night, or until the storm should abate, and then go to the rescue of the unfortunate men. To this they also demurred, and insisted upon proceeding upon the homeward voyage without delay. On their arrival in Marblehead, fearing the just indignation of the people, they laid the entire blame upon the skipper. This version of the affair is generally accepted as true; and for the credit of the town, be it said, that it is one of the few incidents in its entire history that its citizens have any reason to regret.

The embargo, which had now been in operation nearly a year, had been strongly opposed by the Federalists from the beginning, and as the ill effects of the measure began to be felt, their hostility increased. Town-meetings had been held in nearly all principal sea-ports to remonstrate against the law, and many of the speeches at these meetings were seditious and inflammatory in the extreme. Not so in Marblehead. Though starvation stared them in the face, the citizens were loyal to the government, and at a town-meeting, held on the 7th of December, the following resolutions were unanimously adopted:

*"Resolved,* That this town continues steadfast in the faith that the embargo law was a law of wisdom, and that the President and Congress of the United States are entitled to and shall receive our warmest thanks for their early attention to the Independence, Liberty and just rights of the Union, and particularly the commercial part thereof.

*"Resolved,* That this town will use all the energy they possess to carry into full effect all the laws the present Congress have enacted or may enact for the support of our just and equal rights, against the unjustifiable and imperial decrees of the belligerent powers of Europe, by proffering to our country our property and services.

Captains William Story, Nathan B. Martin and Joseph Pedrick were elected a committee to forward the resolutions to the Hon. Joseph Story, member of Congress from this district. The resolutions were forwarded, accompanied by a letter signed by every member of the committee.

"Having learned that the government intends employing some cutters as gun-boats, to prevent evasion of the laws of the Country (they wrote), we with humility beg leave to suggest to you our opinion, that on this coast (that is to say, from Cape Cod to Cape Sable), any cutter which the government may send will not so well answer the purpose; the gun boats will be useless, for they would not, in this inclement season of the year, be able to keep at sea without great risk. From the knowledge we have of our fishing-vessels, we think they will answer every purpose and be a saving to the government to employ them in defense of their laws. We also beg leave to offer the government as many vessels of this description as will prevent any evasion whatever, from any ports or places between the above-mentioned capes, or wherever otherwise wanted, knowing, as you do, the peculiar situation of the people of this place, that they have now on hand two years catching of fish and no vent for the same. Notwithstanding this, they look upon the measures of the government as the only means of retaining our future commerce. They therefore feel disposed, to the utmost of their abilities, to support the general government with the risk of their lives and property, and beg leave through you to tender their services to man out, and have manned, any vessels which it may please for the service of the United States."

This action of the town gave great satisfaction to the friends of the administration throughout the country. The resolutions were published by Republican (Democratic) newspapers everywhere; and from one and all the town received words of praise and encouragement. Of the manner of their reception in Congress, Representative Story wrote to his brother, under date of December 21, 1808:

"This day I had the pleasure of presenting the Marblehead petition, and as a part of my address on this occasion, which was short, I read in the hearing of the House the resolves of Marblehead. The effect was electrical. It gave a degree of delight, it awakened a sensation of admiration far beyond what I ever knew in a public body. On every side the patriotism, the honorable, the tried and uniform patriotism of Marblehead resounded. All the Republicans declare their determination to assist in some way to honor and relieve the citizens of the Town, and I feel an assurance that some of our fishermen will be employed as protectors of our coasts. One able Republican member from South Carolina (Mr. D. R. Williams) declared that such was his sense of the virtue and character of the town, that he would willingly give them a thousand bushels of corn from his plantation. But all the friends of the Government rejoiced that in this day of disaffection in the Eastern States a people could be found who were so true to the honor and rights of their country. Mr. Giles, of the Senate, hearing of my having the resolves, sent for them, and, in a speech which he made to-day in the Senate, read them, and complimented you all. You may depend that a more reasonable and welcome resolution never came to Congress. It is an example worthy to be followed. When I named the facts to the President he appeared highly delighted."

The anxiety expressed concerning the effect of the opposition to the embargo, manifested by the people of the Eastern States, was not without reason. Senator Adams expressed his belief, in a communication to the President, that "from information received by him, and which might be relied upon, it was the determination of the ruling party in Massachusetts, and of the Federalists in New England generally, if the embargo was persisted in, no longer to submit to it, but to separate themselves from the Union, at least until the existing obstacles to foreign commerce were removed." This, it has been said, was a false alarm; but that such was the sincere belief of the citizens of Marblehead, is evident from the following resolutions adopted at a town-meeting, held on the 9th of February, 1809:

*"Resolved,* That we view with the utmost abhorrence and indignation the conduct of a party among us, who are continually endeavoring to



excite the good people of this commonwealth to a disobedience of the laws of the Union, by false and libellous publications respecting the motives and measures of the general government, and gross misstatements of the nature and sources of our present embarrassments; that the real object of this party is to separate the United States, and excite rebellion and civil war for the purpose of establishing a monarchy under the pretence of a Northern Confederacy, or force us into a destructive war with the continent of Europe, and consequently a fatal alliance with the corrupt monarchy of Britain, whose embrace is death.

*Resolved*, That we are determined never to yield our Liberties and Rights, purchased by the best blood of our country, either to external foes or domestic traitors; but we are determined, at all hazards, to maintain the Constitution of the United States and all laws made in pursuance thereof; and we do most solemnly pledge our lives, our property and our sacred honor for their support, through every peril of insurrection, rebellion or invasion.

*Resolved*, That we hold sacred these inestimable privileges resigned to our hands by a numerous class of brave and hardy townsmen, who sacrificed their lives for the achievement of our glorious independence; that in order to protect and defend these privileges, ever to be held sacred by Americans, we will arm and equip ourselves in such a manner as our circumstances will admit, and do hereby publicly declare that we will live Freemen, and never live slaves.

The people of Marblehead did not forget their resolution to arm and equip themselves, and during the month of June the company known as the Marblehead Light Infantry was organized. Joshua O. Bowden was the first commander, and the company has maintained its organization ever since.

The events of the year 1810 were of more than ordinary interest to the people of Marblehead. Early in the month of January two schooners were captured by British cruisers and carried into St. Jean de Luce. This was considered an evidence that the British government intended to continue its policy of seizing American vessels and impressing American seamen, and had the effect to increase the indignation felt by the people. "Free Trade and Sailors' Rights" was the cry everywhere, and when, in the month of May, the annual State election took place, Elbridge Gerry, the Democratic candidate for Governor, received four hundred and seventy-one of the five hundred and twenty four votes cast in Marblehead. Mr. Gerry was elected, and in both branches of the Legislature the majorities were Democratic.

By the census of this year, it appeared that the number of inhabitants in the town was five thousand eight hundred and forty-two, of whom sixty-three were people of color.

During the month of February the First Baptist Church was organized, twenty-one persons being regularly dismissed from the First Baptist Church of Salem for this purpose.

On the 18th of June, 1812, war was formally declared against Great Britain by the Congress of the United States.

From the moment when war was declared, the citizens of Boston, the metropolis of New England, "clamored for peace and reprobated the war as wicked, unjust and unnecessary." Many other towns in the State were only too ready to follow the example set by Boston, and on the 29th of June the citizens of Newbury declared:

"We consider the war ruinous to the property as well as the happiness and morals of the nation. It is brought on the country by surprise; it was conceived in darkness and secret conclave; the people were kept in profound ignorance of their impending destruction."

Far different were the resolutions adopted by the citizens of Marblehead. On the very day that the meeting was held in Newbury a town-meeting was held in Marblehead and the following resolutions were unanimously adopted:

*Resolved*, That we view the late solemn act, declaring war against Great Britain and her dependencies, as the last resort of a much injured people, freely persuaded that its justice and necessity will be acknowledged by all who candidly pass in review the doctrines of our enemy, and nothing short of a base submission would have prolonged peace.

*Resolved*, That, whatever sacrifices may result, we pledge ourselves to support our government, our laws, and our Liberty, through the present arduous conflict. We also pledge ourselves to support and protect the Union of the States as the ark of our political safety; and that we view all those who dare intimate a wish for the separation of the Union as the worst enemies to our peace, prosperity and happiness.

As soon as the news of the declaration of war was received in Marblehead the town was the scene of the utmost activity. Nowhere in the country did the people spring to arms with more alacrity. Four privateers, namely—the "Lion," the "Thorn," the "Snowbird" and the "Industry"—were immediately fitted out, and began a series of remarkably successful cruises against the ships of the British nation. This was not all. Forty private armed schooners were soon fitted out in Salem, a large proportion of which were manned by Marblehead seamen. One schooner, the "Growler," was commanded by Captain Nathaniel Lindsey, of Marblehead, and had an entire crew of Marblehead men. Of the ship "America," one of the most conspicuous and successful cruisers during the entire war, thirty were from Marblehead.

The fishermen of Marblehead were also largely represented on board the frigates of the United States Navy. Eighty men of the crew of the "Constitution" were from Marblehead, and were on board her throughout the entire period of her brilliant career.

The war had now begun in earnest. On the 20th of July the ship "Orient," of Marblehead, Captain Andrews, commander, while on the passage home from a merchant voyage to Gibraltar, was captured on the banks of Newfoundland by the British sloop-of-war "Harvard." The "Orient," which had on board a rich cargo and about thirteen thousand dollars in specie, was sent into St. John's, N. B. The crew, ten in number, were placed on board a prison-ship, from which they were subsequently released by the United States frigate "Essex," and sent to New York on board a cartel ship.

Early in the month of August the schooner "Dolphin," of Salem, was captured by the British cruiser "Belvidera." Among the crew of the "Dolphin," who became prisoners of war, was Joseph Furness, of Marblehead. Shortly after his confinement on board the "Belvidera" he was carried on board the ship





"San Domingo," where an attempt was made to impress him into the British naval service.<sup>1</sup> With manly heroism, Furness declared that he would not fight against his country, and told his captors to shoot him as he stood if they chose to do so. They then placed him on board the guard-ship, where his steady resolution and undaunted courage inspired the admiration of the British officers. Soon after, documents were sent down for his release and he returned home.

On the 19th of August the celebrated battle between the United States frigate "Constitution" and the British frigate "Guerriere" took place, which resulted in a glorious victory for the "Constitution." The loss on board the "Guerriere" in killed, wounded and missing, was one hundred and one. The loss on board the "Constitution" was seven killed and seven wounded.

The news of this engagement was received in Marblehead with the greatest enthusiasm; and so large a proportion of the crew of the "Constitution" were citizens of the town, it was considered almost a local victory.

The Presidential election of 1812 resulted in another triumph for the Democratic party, and the re-election of President Madison. This was accepted as an indorsement of the war policy of the administration and gave great satisfaction to its friends throughout the country. In Marblehead, especially, the event was hailed with great rejoicing. Elbridge Gerry, who was revered and honored as a patriot and a statesman, had been elected Vice-President of the United States, and nowhere was the honor conferred upon him and Massachusetts more sincerely appreciated than in his native town.

On the 29th of December a desperate engagement was fought off San Salvador between the United States frigate "Constitution," then commanded by Commodore Bainbridge, and the British frigate "Java," of thirty-eight guns. The combat lasted more than three hours, and when the "Java" struck she was reduced to a mere wreck. Of her crew, one hundred and sixty were killed and wounded, while on board the "Constitution" there were only thirty-four. Among the killed on board the "Constitution" in this action were two brothers named Cheever, of Marblehead, the only sons of a poor widow.

On the 1st of June, 1813, a battle was fought in the bay back of Marblehead Neck, in sight of a multitude of anxious spectators, between the United States frigate "Chesapeake," commanded by Captain Lawrence, and the British frigate "Shannon," commanded by Captain Broke. The action terminated fatally for the "Chesapeake," and the intrepid Lawrence was mortally wounded. Of the crew of the "Shannon" twenty-four were killed and fifty-six wounded. Of the crew of the "Chesapeake" forty-eight were killed and nearly

one hundred wounded. When carried below and asked if the colors should be struck, Captain Lawrence replied "No; they shall never while I live." Delirious from excess of suffering, he continued to exclaim: "Don't give up the ship!" an expression consecrated by the people of Marblehead as the last words also of the heroic Mugford thirty-seven years before. During the engagement three Marblehead sailors were on board the "Shannon" as prisoners of war, by whom the progress of the battle was watched with the utmost interest. They had been taken on board a prize of the privateer "America," several days before, and their hopes of a speedy delivery were suddenly brought to an end by the capture of the "Chesapeake."

The body of Captain Lawrence was carried to Halifax, but was subsequently brought to Salem, and reburied with great parade, the Hon. Joseph Story, a native of Marblehead, acting as orator of the day.

The large number of British sloops-of-war which were cruising about the bay, caused the inhabitants to fear an attack upon the town, and in the spring and summer of this year active preparations were made for its defense. Fortifications were erected, and batteries were stationed on Twisden's Hill, Goodwin's Head, Hewitt's Head and on the Neck. The town was divided into two wards, and all the able-bodied men remaining at home were enlisted into companies and detailed for general duty. The Marblehead Light Infantry, which now numbered one hundred men in its ranks, acted as a reserve force to be called upon in case of an attack. A company was also recruited and mustered into the service of the United States for duty at Fort Sewall. This company was under command of Captain John Bailey, and Joshua O. Bowden, the efficient commander of the Light Infantry, was its first lieutenant.

Guards were stationed along the coast, on the Neck and at various localities in the town, for the purpose of alarming the inhabitants should an attack be made.

These precautionary measures were not adopted without sufficient cause. The British cruisers had become so bold that in several instances unarmed American vessels were captured within full sight of the shore, and almost within range of the guns of the fort. On one occasion, during the month of August, two English ships-of-war sailed close to the Neck and captured six coasting-vessels which were bound to Boston.

During this period of excitement two men were killed by the guards in the public streets of the town. Both of the unfortunate incidents occurred in the night, when it was impossible for the sentinels to see who was approaching. One of the victims was a young man named Joseph Butman, who was foolishly trying to alarm the sentinels stationed at the town-house. The other was a negro known as Black Charley, who was shot by the sentinel stationed at Lovis's Cove. Charley was on his way home from a

<sup>1</sup> Twenty-one citizens of Marblehead were impressed into the British naval service.



dancing-party, where he had performed the important service of fiddler, and being somewhat deaf, it is presumed did not hear the challenge of the guard. These sad events cast a general gloom over the community, and were deeply regretted; but the stern necessities of war demanded that the guards should be commended for the faithful performance of duty.

On Sunday, the 3d of April, 1814, the people were alarmed by the sudden appearance of three ships-of-war, which appeared to be sailing directly for Marblehead harbor. Two of the frigates were ascertained to have British flags at their mast-heads, while the third, which was in advance of the others, carried the stars and stripes. It proved to be the frigate "Constitution," which for three days had been chased by the English frigates "Tenedos" and "Endymion." As the three stately ships neared the land, and the exciting chase could be more distinctly witnessed, the headlands and house-tops were filled with interested and anxious spectators. The "Constitution" succeeded in escaping from her pursuers, and as she majestically sailed into the harbor cheer after cheer rent the air, and from many a heart a prayer of thanksgiving went forth for the preservation and safety of "Old Ironsides." When about three miles out the commander of the "Constitution" inquired if any of the Marblehead seamen felt competent to pilot the ship into the harbor. "Aye, aye, sir!" was the answer from a score of volunteers, and from the number Samuel Green was selected, by whom the good ship was successfully brought in. Towards evening she again weighed anchor and sailed into Salem harbor, where she was not so much exposed, and was less liable to attack.

While these events were transpiring at home, the heroic sons of Marblehead were winning unfading laurels by their valorous conduct upon the water. In the spring of 1814, Capt. David Porter, in the frigate "Essex," engaged the British frigate "Phoebe," of fifty-two, and the sloop-of-war "Cherub," of twenty-eight guns, in the harbor of Valparaiso. For more than two hours he sustained the unequal encounter before he surrendered, and his crew fought with a bravery never exceeded. Of his intrepid officers and seamen, fifty-eight were killed, thirty-one were missing, thirty-eight were severely and twenty-five slightly wounded. During the action Lieutenant John Glover Cowell, a son of the intrepid Captain Richard Cowell, and a grandson of General John Glover, of Revolutionary fame, was wounded. After having the wound dressed a second time he returned to his station, where another shot severely wounded him in the leg. He was taken up to be carried below, but peremptorily refusing to go, he continued at his post until loss of blood rendered him insensible. He was then taken below and placed under the care of the surgeon.

After the battle he was taken on shore, where his leg was amputated, and after suffering with exem-

plary fortitude for twenty-one days, he expired in the presence of his gallant companions. "His case excited in Valparaiso the liveliest interest. The whole city most feelingly and deeply sympathized in his sufferings, and lamented his fate. His heroism had made everyone his friend and his mourner. He was buried with the most distinguished honors, both military and civil, that the place could afford. All the American and British officers, the crews of the 'Essex' and the 'Essex Junior,' of the 'Phoebe' and 'Cherub,' and of every other vessel in port, joined to swell the funeral procession. But the chief pomp that was displayed on this solemn and interesting occasion arose from the attention of the inhabitants of the place. It would be scarcely hyperbolic to say that the ashes of the gallant Cowell were watered by the tears of all Valparaiso. The concourse of Spaniards, headed by the Governor of the district and a large military escort, was immense.

"Followed by this vast and magnificent procession, and attended by solemn music and lighted tapers, the remains of the hero were carried to the principal church of the city. Here, after having been exposed to public view for two days, shrouded in elegant funeral apparel, they were interred in consecrated ground within the walls of the building, an honor never perhaps before conferred on a stranger in that part of the world."

The war virtually ended in December of this year, when the treaty of peace was signed at Ghent by the representatives of the United States and Great Britain. In February, 1815, the treaty was ratified by the two governments, and President Madison issued a proclamation to that effect. On the reception of the news in Marblehead, every house in town was illuminated and from nearly every house-top something was set flying to the breeze; those who could not procure flags, hoisting sheets, pillow-cases, and in some instances even petticoats, in honor of the great event. For an entire week the church-bells were rung, and as day after day their merry peals rang out, they left full conviction on every heart of the sincere joy and most ardent patriotism of the people.

Though peace had been declared, over seven hundred citizens of Marblehead were confined in British prisons. Halifax, Chatham, Plymouth and the loathsome prison-ships each had their quota, while in Dartmoor Prison alone more than five hundred were confined. The majority of these men were captured in privateers of many times their size and armament. Many, however, were taken from unarmed merchant vessels on their voyages to and from the various foreign ports.

During the massacre in Dartmoor Prison on the 6th of April, 1815, when the soldiers fired on the defenseless prisoners, John Peach and Thomas Tindley, of Marblehead, were wounded. Over one thousand men from Marblehead were engaged in the war





for "Free Trade and Sailors' Rights." Of these, seven hundred and twenty-six were on board privateers, one hundred and twenty were in the navy, fifty-seven were in the army, and one hundred were members of the Marblehead Light Infantry.

## CHAPTER LXXXVII.

### MARBLEHEAD—(Continued).

*Sacrifices Made by the Town—Visit of President Monroe—Sabbath-schools Organized—Second Visit of General de Lafayette—The Columbian Society—Public Streets Named—Shoe Manufacturing Established—First Local Newspaper Established—Gravel Bank Incorporated—Marblehead Seamen's Charitable Society Organized—Female Harmonic Society Organized—Visit of President Jackson—Ritual Celebrations on the Fourth of July—Reorganization of the Fire Department—High School Established—The Surplus Revenue Controversy—Eastern Railroad Opened—Lafayette Early Organized—Lyceum Hall Built—The Great Gale of 1846—Railroad Disaster of 1848—Ship-Building in Marblehead—The great of Moses A. Pocket—Presentations to Infantry Companies—Celebration of American Independence—Third Congregational Church Organized—Hibernian Friendly Society—Waterside Cemetery Dedicated—Catholic Church Permitted—Fire at Tinsell's Hall—Great Strike of 1893.*

At the close of the war the people applied themselves earnestly and industriously to the task of restoring their shattered fortunes. There were now only forty-eight vessels employed in the bank fisheries, eighteen of which were of less than fifty tons burden. When the embargo of 1807 went into operation there were one hundred and sixteen vessels engaged in the business, ninety-eight of which were of more than fifty tons burden. This great reduction in the number of vessels engaged in the industry, by which the inhabitants obtained a livelihood, is the best evidence that can be given of the sacrifices made by the town during the period of controversy and war with Great Britain.

On the 4th of March, 1817, James Monroe, of Virginia, was inaugurated President of the United States. A few months after his inauguration he made a tour of the Eastern States, and in so doing, honored the town of Marblehead with a brief visit. He was received at the entrance of the town by a procession consisting of the military, the boards of town officers, the pupils of the public and private schools, the clergy, and a large concourse of citizens. He was escorted to the "Lee Mansion, where a large number of prominent citizens assembled" to pay their respects, and afterwards visited Fort Sewall and other points of interest.

The organization of Sabbath schools in Marblehead, began in the spring of 1818, when measures were taken for the formation of the "Sabbath-School Union Society." Hon. William Reed was chosen president of the society. The schools of the several churches continued under the direction of this society for eleven years, when each church assumed control of its own school.

The year 1824 was marked by an event of the greatest interest to the people of Marblehead. The venerable Marquis de Lafayette, who had come to the United States at the express invitation of Congress, was traveling through the country, and the citizens voted unanimously to invite him to visit the town. The invitation was accepted, and a day late in the month of August was appointed for his reception. The distinguished visitor, accompanied by his son, George Washington Lafayette, was received at the entrance of the town by a procession of civic and military organizations, and escorted through the principal streets amid the joyful acclamations of the people. He was then conducted to the "Lee Mansion," where a grand dinner was served, and a public reception was given to the citizens. The dinner-table, it is said, presented a magnificent appearance. All the "well-to-do" families of the town contributed their silverware to grace the festal board, and neither pains nor expense were spared in its arrangement. General Lafayette remained in Marblehead several hours, and before departing made a brief call upon Mrs. Mary Glover Hooper, the wife of Robert Hooper, Esq., and the only surviving daughter of his old friend and companion-in-arms, Gen. John Glover.

Among other interesting incidents of this memorable day was the first appearance of the military company known as the Lafayette Guards, which had been organized a short time before, under command of Capt. William B. Adams.

Early in this year a society was incorporated by the name of the "Columbian Society," which, for more than fifty years, exercised a perceptible influence upon the political sentiments of the citizens. For many years the best moderators of our town-meetings were graduates of the president's chair of the Columbian Society, and the most skillful debaters who participated in town-meeting discussions obtained their experience at the weekly meetings of that institution.

During this year the public streets were named by vote of the town. Nearly all of them had been known as "lanes," from the time of the settlement of the town, and Mugford, Green and State Streets are still familiarly known to many of the older inhabitants as "New Meeting-House," "Ferry," and "Wharf" lanes. Previous to the breaking out of the Revolution, State Street was known as "King Street," but the patriotic citizens declined to recognize the name after the close of the war.

As early as 1825 the manufacture of misses' and children's shoes was introduced into Marblehead. Previous to this time the only boots and shoes made in town were heavy leather boots for the use of fishermen and custom shoes for ladies and gentlemen. The first manufacturer to engage in the new enterprise was Mr. Ebenezer Martin, who made his own shoes and sold them at retail. His work-shop was in the old "Reynolds House," on Darling Street. It was his custom to carry his goods about in a cart, and





drive from one town to another, until he disposed of them. The next earliest manufacturer was Mr. Thomas Wooldredge, whose factory was on Orne Street; and a few years later Messrs. Benjamin Hawkes, Thomas Garney and Adoniram C. Orne engaged in the business as a firm. Shortly after, Messrs. Samuel and Peter Sparhawk began business.

On Saturday March 13, 1830, the first local newspaper ever established in town made its appearance. It was called the *Marblehead Register*, and was published by Henry Blaney. For three years the editor struggled heroically to make the enterprise a success; but his efforts were futile, and he was obliged to suspend publication. Several newspapers have since been established, but a similar fate has befallen them all except the *Marblehead Messenger*, which was established in 1871, and is still published.

During the year 1831 several important local institutions were established.

On the 18th the Grand Bank was incorporated with a capital of \$100,000. Joseph W. Green was the first president, and John Sparhawk, Jr., cashier.

On the 30th of August the town voted to petition Congress for the erection of a light-house on Point Neck. The light-house was erected in accordance with the wishes of the town, Mr. Ezekiel Darling being the first keeper.

Early in this year the Marblehead Seamen's Charitable Society was organized. This society is still in existence, there being only one older society in town. The Marblehead Female Humane Society antedates it, having been organized in 1816.

In the summer of 1833, President Andrew Jackson, who had entered upon his second term as the executive of the nation, made a tour of the Middle and New England States. On the 28th of June, accepting the urgent invitation of the citizens, he visited Marblehead. He was received at the entrance of the town by a procession consisting of the military companies, a cavalcade of fifty horsemen, the Fire Department, pupils of the public schools and a large concourse of citizens. Along the route of the procession triumphal arches, decorated with flowers and bearing appropriate mottoes, were erected, and many private residences were elaborately decorated. President Jackson rode through the principal streets in an open carriage, after which the procession halted at the "Lee Mansion" where an address of welcome was delivered by Frederick Robinson, Esq. A dinner had been provided for the occasion, but to the great disappointment of the citizens, their distinguished visitor was obliged to proceed as soon as possible to Salem, and they were deprived of the pleasure of his company.

The violent opposition to the measures of President Jackson's administration gave rise to a new political organization, known as the Whig party. Between this party and the Democrats there existed a feeling of the most bitter hostility. This was especi-

ally true of the adherents of both parties in Marblehead. Their opposition to each other was so intense that on the occasion of a Fourth of July celebration in 1834, they refused to act in concert, and the result was two rival celebrations. The Democrats formed a procession, and, escorted by the Lafayette Guards, with a drum and fife and two bugles, proceeded to the Methodist Meeting-House, where an oration was delivered by Mr. Frank Knight, a native of the town. They then marched to Fort Sewall, where a dinner was provided, and appropriate speeches were made by prominent members of the party. The Whigs were escorted by the Marblehead Light Infantry, a majority of whose members were of that political faith. Led by a band of music, they marched to the old North meeting-house, where an oration was delivered; after which they sat down to a dinner at Academy Hall.

During the year 1835 the Fire Department was thoroughly reorganized. The town at this time owned four hand-engines,—the "Friend," the "Endeavour," the "Union" and the "Liberty." Beside these, there were two engines owned by private parties, one of which was named the "Torrent," and the other the "Relief." A committee, appointed by the town to examine the several engines belonging to the Fire Department, reported that only one, the "Liberty," was "worth spending a dollar on." That engine was accordingly repaired, and refitted with all the modern improvements, and two new suction engines—the "Marblehead" and "Essex"—were purchased.

During the year 1836 the Universalist Society was organized. For a time the meetings were held in the hall on the corner of Washington and Darling Streets; but the following year, so rapid had been the growth of the society, that a church edifice was erected on the corner of Pleasant and Watson Streets.

For years the town had maintained three grammar schools, known as the North, Centre and South Schools. In 1837 it was voted to establish a High School, with separate departments for boys and girls. The school was established in accordance with the vote of the town, and the building known as the Masonic Lodge was rented for its accommodation.

It was during this year, also, that the famous controversy over the "Surplus Revenue" took place. During the administration of President Jackson a large amount of money accumulated in the treasury of the United States. By an act of Congress the Secretary of the Treasury was authorized to distribute the amount among the several States, and the State of Massachusetts, on the reception of its proportion, distributed it among the towns of the commonwealth. By this act of the Legislature the town of Marblehead received about thirteen thousand dollars. The town voted to appropriate the money for the purchase of a town farm and the erection of a new almshouse. A controversy ensued in regard to the matter, and after the vote had been several times reconsidered,



it was ascertained that the town was under legal obligation to purchase the farm belonging to Humphrey Devereux, Esq. The farm was accordingly purchased for thirteen thousand dollars. Two years later the farm was sold for eleven thousand dollars, and the money was turned over to the treasurer, the town losing two thousand dollars by the transaction.

The date of the regular establishment of stage communication between Marblehead and Boston was about the year 1768. The establishment of a regular line of stages between Marblehead and Salem, however, did not take place until twenty-six years later. The first proprietor of a line of stages in Marblehead, of whom we have any knowledge, was Mr. Hooker Osgood, who drove regularly to Boston for many years previous to the War of 1812. He died in 1811, and the business was purchased by Messrs. Israel Putnam and Jonathan Cass. This firm subsequently sold out to a company, under whose management the business was conducted for several years. Upon the abandonment of the enterprise by the company, Mr. Cass resumed the business with Mr. Increase H. Brown as a partner. In 1829 Mr. Cass withdrew, and Mr. Brown entered into a co-partnership with Messrs. Stephen P. Hathaway and Benjamin Thompson, the style of the firm being I. H. Brown & Co. A stage was driven to Boston daily, and to Salem twice a day, Mr. Thompson being the driver of the former, and Mr. Hathaway of the latter. On the opening of the Eastern Railroad between Salem and Boston, in 1838, the stage to Boston was discontinued, and, instead, stages were driven four times a day to the Marblehead Depot, then located in Swampscott, on what is now known as the "Old Lynn Road." On the opening of the Marblehead and Salem Branch of the Eastern Railroad, in 1839, the stage to Salem was discontinued.

The year 1839 may be said to have been the period when the fishing business of Marblehead reached the zenith of its prosperity. At that time ninety-eight vessels, only three of which were under fifty tons burden, were employed in the business—a larger number than had ever sailed from this port since the time of Jefferson's embargo.

In February, 1841, an Anti-Slavery Convention was held at Georgetown, Massachusetts, and, as a result of its deliberations, the political organization known as the Liberty party came into existence. This party advocated the total abolition of slavery in the District of Columbia, over which Congress had the sole legislative power. The only person from Marblehead who attended the Convention at Georgetown was Mr. Samuel Goodwin, a gentleman who had long been an earnest and outspoken Abolitionist. Three years later, at the Presidential election of 1844, six votes were cast in Marblehead for the candidates of the Liberty party. These voters appeared regularly at the polls at each recurring State election, and their party gradually increased to

fifteen members. For years they made little or no progress, but they succeeded in maintaining their organization, forming the nucleus of the great anti-slavery party, which, under two names, has assumed such proportions in Marblehead.

The year 1844 was marked by the erection of the building known as "Lyceum Hall," and by the organization of two of the most prominent and influential societies in the town. These were Samaritan Tent of Rechabites and Atlantic Lodge of Odd Fellows.

In 1845 another engine was added to the Fire Department. This engine was the "Gerry," and upon its reception the engine company of that name was organized.

The year 1846 marked a memorable period of distress in the annals of the town. On the 19th of September of that year one of the most terrible gales ever known took place on the Grand Banks of Newfoundland, and ten vessels belonging in Marblehead, containing sixty-five men and boys, were lost. Forty-three of these unfortunate seamen were heads of families, leaving forty-three widows and one hundred and fifty-five fatherless children. This great calamity may be said to have given the death-blow to the fishing interests of the town. Gradually, as the years have passed, one vessel after another has dropped from the roll of "Bankers," until not one remains, and the great industry of former years is but a memory of the past.

In 1848 the Marblehead Seamen's Charitable Society erected a monument in the "old Burying Hill," in memory of its deceased members, fourteen of whom were lost in the September gale of 1846. The monument is of white marble, fifteen feet high, and stands upon the highest point of ground on the hill, being visible from ten to fifteen miles at sea.

The inhabitants had not recovered from the calamity of 1846, when another of a different nature, but not less appalling, cast a gloom over the entire community. The Presidential campaign of 1848 had nearly drawn to its close, when, on Thursday evening, November 2d, two large political gatherings were held, one in Lynn and the other in Salem.

The Hon. Daniel Webster was advertised to address the Whigs at Lynn, and Gen. Caleb Cushing the Democrats at Salem. Special trains were run to these places from all the towns in the vicinity, and more than two hundred citizens of Marblehead availed themselves of the opportunity to listen to the eloquence of the great orators. At twelve o'clock that night, as the Marblehead train was returning from Salem, a collision took place with the down train from Lynn. The engine, tender and forward car of the Marblehead train were utterly demolished. Six of the occupants of the car were killed, and five were seriously wounded.

During the year 1849 the ship "Robert Hooper," owned by Mr. Edward Kimball, was built at "Red





Stone" Cove. The launching, which took place on the 31st of October, was witnessed by hundreds of people, many of whom came from the neighboring cities and towns. Business was generally suspended, and the day was observed as a general holiday throughout the town. The enterprise thus begun, for a time, gave promise of becoming one of the permanent industries of the town. Six other ships, of from eight hundred to twelve hundred tons burden, were subsequently built for Mr. Kimball; and within a period of nine years twenty schooners, of from eighty-seven to one hundred and twelve tons burden, were built for various persons engaged in the fishing business.

In 1850 a hook-and-ladder carriage was bought and placed in the Fire Department. It was named the "Washington," and a company was organized for its management.

In 1852 the infantry company known as the Glover Light Guards was organized. The first captain was Mr. William H. Hooper, a descendant of General Glover.

On the 31st of March, 1853, Mr. Moses Allen Pickett, a gentleman who had for years been a noted character in the town from his odd, eccentric manners, died and was buried. The event attracted little or no attention at the time beyond the circle of his few immediate relatives and friends; but when his will was opened it was found that he had bequeathed the entire residue of his estate, after paying a few small legacies, to be used as a fund to "comfort the widow and the fatherless, the aged, the sick and the unhappy." His house he directed should be kept in repair and "let to widows at a moderate rent." The entire amount of the bequest was about \$13,400.

In his lifetime Mr. Pickett had been considered a man of a very penurious and miserly disposition; but when the contents of his will were made known, the mouths that for years had been sealed were opened. Then, for the first time, his quiet and unostentatious charities were made known. The widow, the fatherless, the aged and the sick had many times been the recipients of his never-failing help in time of need. They had not known the name of their mysterious benefactor, and the local dealers who were the almoners of his charity had been pledged to secrecy. It was not until he had been called to his reward that his fellow-citizens saw and appreciated the true worth of the man who had lived among them.

The remainder of the year 1853 is chiefly memorable on account of the three great military festivals which took place before it closed. On Tuesday, June 28th, the Marblehead Light Infantry, which had adopted the name of "Sutton," in honor of General William Sutton, appeared under command of Captain Knott V. Martin. Among the distinguished visitors present were His Excellency, Governor Clifford, the Hon. Charles W. Upham, who at that time represented the Essex District in Congress, and

a large number of military officers from other towns. The Glover Light Guards, under Captain John M. Anderson, appeared in a grand parade on the 29th of September, and on the 19th of October the Lafayette Guards, under command of Captain John Carroll, Jr., made a similar demonstration. On each of these occasions the company parading was presented with a silk banner, the gift of the ladies of the town.

The anniversary of American independence had been celebrated from time to time with great parade, but probably the greatest celebration of the kind ever known in town up to this time was that which took place on the 4th of July, 1856. At nine o'clock in the morning of that day a procession was formed in seven divisions, consisting of the three military companies, the entire Fire Department, the pupils of the public schools, the town officials and their predecessors in office, aged citizens in carriages, a party of mounted Indian warriors and a cavalcade of horsemen. Mr. Joseph P. Turner acted as chief marshal. The procession moved through all the principal streets to the "Old North Church," where an oration was delivered by W. C. Endicott, Esq., of Salem. The other exercises consisted of prayer by the Rev. B. R. Allen, and reading of the Declaration of Independence by Mr. Franklin Knight. An ode, written for the occasion by Mrs. Maria L. Williams, was sung by the choir. In the evening there was a brilliant display of fireworks, under the direction of a Boston pyrotechnist.

In 1856 a lodge of the "Sons of Temperance," was organized, known as "Washington Division, No. 3." The following year the Marblehead Musical Association was organized.

In 1858 several communicants of the First Congregational Church withdrew from that body and organized the society which, for nearly twenty years, was known as the "Third Congregational Church." During the year 1860 the society erected the house of worship known as the "South Church," on the corner of Essex and School Streets. This building was destroyed in the great conflagration of 1877, and the society united with the First Congregational Church.

On the 5th of December, 1858, the Hibernian Friendly Society was organized.

The year 1859 was as remarkable for local events as any in the history of the town. On the 1st of January a new engine, named the "Mugford," was added to the Fire Department, and the engine company of that name was organized.

A controversy had arisen relative to the purchase of another hand-engine, and many of the firemen were loud in their praises of a machine known as the "Button Tub." The town decided adversely to the proposition to obtain one, however, and the engine known as the "General Glover" was purchased. The "General Glover" Engine Company was organized upon its reception.



On the 16th of October the Waterside Cemetery was consecrated with appropriate exercises, consisting of prayer, singing and an address by the Rev. Benjamin R. Allen, pastor of the North Congregational Church.

For several years the people professing the faith of the Roman Catholic Church had maintained occasional services at private houses and in various halls in the town, going to Salem to receive the holy communion. In 1859 the Church "Our Lady Star of the Sea" was erected, and since that time services have been regularly held. During the same year Washington Lodge of Good Templars and the Young Men's Christian Association were organized.

On the 26th of January, 1860, a large building on Essex Street, known as Bassett's Hall, was totally destroyed by fire. This hall had been erected but a short time before, and was dedicated to the use of the Spiritualists of the town. The house of the General Glover Engine Company was also destroyed. Another house was erected on Pleasant Street, for the use of the company, and at the same time a house was built on State Street for the use of the Gerry Engine Company.

A reduction in the price paid for labor by the shoe manufacturers of Lynn and Marblehead in the spring of the year 1860 resulted in one of the greatest strikes ever known in either place. Nearly every man, woman and child employed in the manufacture of shoes in Marblehead participated in the movement, and there was a general determination not to submit to the reduction. On the 2d day of March the "strikers" made a grand demonstration, and in their parade about town they were escorted by the entire Fire Department and the three military companies. Five days later a similar demonstration took place in Lynn, when the shoemakers of Marblehead, escorted by the firemen and military, visited that city and participated in the proceedings. On the 29th of March the "women strikers" paraded about town and one of their number acted as drummer. With commendable gallantry the firemen and military again tendered their services as an escort, and the affair passed off very pleasantly for all concerned. At length, after a strike of six weeks in duration, the shoemakers accepted the terms of the manufacturers, and returned to their labor.

## CHAPTER LXXXVIII.

### MARBLEHEAD—(Continued).

*Industrial Development—New Settlements—Opening of the Railroad to Salem—Extension of Pleasant Street—Joseph R. Bassett—New Streets Opened—Panor. of 1857—William T. Haskell & Company—Joseph Harris & Sons—Method of Manufacturing Shoes—Industry of the People—The McKay Machine—Camp Work.*

THE end of the year 1860 closed a quarter of a century of great industrial development in the his-

tory of Marblehead. For a period of fifty years previous to the year 1835 not a street or road was laid out in the town. Nearly every street was overcrowded with houses, and there were few vacant lots to be obtained in the settled portion of the township. A general apathy seemed to have settled over the entire community. Those who owned land would not sell it for business enterprises or other purposes, and, as a natural consequence, there came to be little or no demand for it. In 1835 a new order of things was inaugurated. During that year, through the persistent efforts of Mr. Adoniram C. Orne, a road was laid out by the county commissioners, which may properly be called an extension of Pleasant Street. This road began at a point near the corner of Spring Street, and extended through a field known as the "tan-yard," in which the "Brick Pond" was situated, into Washington Street. This was a great improvement, as previous to that time Pleasant Street opened into Washington Street through what is known as Essex Street.

With the opening of the railroad to Salem in 1839, an impetus was given to the manufacturing interests of the town and an era of prosperity began. One of the first to avail themselves of the advantages presented by this ready means of transportation by rail was Mr. Joseph R. Bassett, an energetic and enterprising young man, who had established himself in the shoe business a few years before. As his business increased he built a factory near the depot, and began to devise measures for the improvement of the town. For years a twine-factory or rope-walk had been situated in a field fronting on Washington Street, and a few feet back of this building there was a tan-yard and cordage-factory. The only access to these buildings, until another way was opened by the extension of Pleasant Street, was by means of a narrow foot-path which led from Washington Street to a gate at the entrance to the pastures on Reed's Hill. The first venture of this enterprising shoe manufacturer was to purchase the field in which the rope-walk stood, and in a short time the foot-path was transformed into a street, now known as School Street. A short time after he purchased the "Sewall Lot," through which a street was laid out from the Cornish and Evans estate to a point on "Reed's Hill." This street was accepted by the town in 1844, and has since been known as "Sewall Street." "Spring Street" was laid out during the following year, and was so named from a spring of pure water on the premises. Mr. Bassett's next movement was to lay out and build four streets over Reed's Hill and in that vicinity.

The question which now perplexed the people was, "How could the house-lots on all these streets be sold, and by whom would they be purchased?" The problem was soon solved. On every street that he had laid out Mr. Bassett began to build neat and comfortable cottages, agreeing to furnish those of his





workmen who purchased them with constant employment, and to deduct a certain proportion from their earnings every week, until the houses and lots were paid for. This proposition was readily accepted by many of his workmen; and in a few years the entire section in the vicinity of the new streets was covered with houses.

During the year 1847 Mr. Bassett erected a steam saw-mill on the shore in the section known as the Ship-yard. This was for the manufacture of wooden shoe-boxes; but it had an effect little dreamed of, even by the sanguine projector. The necessity of a good road to the mill suggested the laying out of streets, and the founding of a new settlement. The idea was speedily put in execution. A large tract of land in the vicinity was purchased, and Commercial Street, the two streets running parallel with it, and the cross-streets intervening, were laid out. The growth of the settlement in this section was hardly less rapid than that of those in or near the depot and on Reed's Hill.

As before, houses were erected and sold to workmen at reasonable prices, and in a short time there was a village of comfortable homes and where once there were vacant fields and pasture lands.

There were other manufacturers who were contemporaries of Mr. Bassett during all these years; of some of them we have already written, and space will permit mention of but two of the principal firms. These were Messrs. William T. Haskell & Co. and Joseph Harris & Sons. The founders of both these firms began business as poor men. It is said of Mr. Haskell that he obtained the money with which he established his business by a fortunate rise in the price of wood. He was a clerk in his father's grocery-store, and one day a coaster with a load of wood arrived in the harbor, and the owner, after vainly endeavoring to sell his load, turned it over to young Haskell, telling him that all the money he could obtain for it over a certain amount should be his own. Shortly after there was a scarcity of wood in the market, and the wood was sold for a good price. With the capital thus obtained, the young man at once began the manufacture of shoes. His first place of business was in a building on the corner of Front and State Streets. He subsequently removed to a building on Washington Street, near the "Lee Mansion," and finally to a small building on Pleasant Street, which was enlarged from time to time as his business increased. Here he conducted operations during the remainder of the period of his residence in Marblehead. In 1861 he removed his business to Lynn. Mr. Haskell was eminently successful as a business man. By his energy and perseverance he built up an industry which gave employment to hundreds of his fellow-citizens and brought to him a rich reward.

Mr. Joseph Harris, the founder of the firm of Joseph Harris & Sons, began business in the year 1841. His workshop was an upper chamber of his dwelling-

house in Harris's Court, where for years he conducted his business. The sons of Mr. Harris, of whom he had a large family, entered heartily and with the utmost sympathy into all the plans he projected. With untiring industry they toiled, making all the shoes manufactured by their father until, by rigid economy and self-denial, they laid the foundation of a successful business. As the business increased a large number of workmen were employed and a factory was erected on Pleasant Street. This building was enlarged from time to time until it became one of the largest shoe manufactories in the town.

The shoes manufactured in Marblehead during the period of which we write were made almost entirely outside the factories. With the introduction of the sewing-machine the division of labor and the factory system began. This has had the effect to abolish nearly all outside labor. It was very gradual in its growth, beginning with having a certain proportion of the upper stitched or bound in the factory. Then, in 1859, came the McKey Sewing-Machine, introduced by Mr. Bassett for sewing uppers to the soles. Campo work began at about the same time.

## CHAPTER LXXXIX.

### MARBLEHEAD --(Continued).

*Breaking out of the Civil War--Marblehead Companies first to Respond to the Call for Troops--Provision for the Families of Volunteers--Action of the Ladies--Marblehead Soldiers at the Seat of War--Departure of the Magnificent Gunboats--Return of the Three-Months' Men--First Marblehead Men Killed in Battle--Death of William B. Hubbard on board the "Conestoga"--Activity in Recruiting--Bounties paid the Soldiers--The Nine-Months' Men--The Drafts--Fort Scrabble Reconstructed--Forts Miller and Gloucere Protected--One Hundred Days' Men--Work of the Ladies--Capt. Michael B. Gregory--Capt. Josiah P. Cressey--Marblehead Men at the Navy--Capt. Samuel B. Gregory--Demonstrations on the Surrender of Gen. Lee--Death of President Lincoln--The Truth Battery--Reception to Gen. Kilpatrick.*

It is not the province of this work to treat of the causes which led to the great Civil War which for four years threatened the life of the republic. The opening of the year 1861 found the people of the United States excited, as they had never been before, over the question of slavery and State sovereignty. Abraham Lincoln, the candidate of the Republican party, which advocated the abolition of slavery, had been elected President of the United States, and seven States had passed ordinances of secession. Nearly all the United States forts and arsenals within the boundaries of these States had been seized and fortified, and a large proportion of the arms, ammunition and military stores belonging to the general government were in their possession. On the 12th of April, General Beauregard, commanding the Confederate forces at Charleston, South Carolina, opened fire on Fort Sumter, a United States garri-





son commanded by Major Robert Anderson, in the harbor of that city. Major Anderson and the small force under his command fought nobly in defense of their flag; but at length, after sustaining a bombardment which continued two days without cessation, while their fort was on fire, and the magazines were beginning to explode about them, they were obliged to surrender and evacuate.

The news of the fall of Fort Sumter aroused the entire North to action. The war which had so long been threatened could no longer be averted, and in every town and hamlet from the Atlantic to the Pacific the people rose as one man to defend the integrity of the Union.

On the 15th of April President Lincoln issued his first proclamation, calling for seventy-five thousand militia for a three months' service. Late in the afternoon of that day Lieutenant-Colonel E. W. Hinks, of the Eighth Regiment, came to Marblehead and personally notified the commanding officers of the three militia companies to be in readiness with their commands to take the early morning trains for Boston. These companies were the Marblehead Sutton Light Infantry, Company C, Eighth Regiment, commanded by Captain Knott V. Martin; the Lafayette Guards, Company B, Eighth Regiment, commanded by Captain Richard Phillips; and the Glover Light Guards, Company H, Eighth Regiment, commanded by Captain Francis Boardman. Captain Martin was found in his slaughter-house, with the carcass of a hog, just killed and in readiness for the "scald." Taking his coat from the peg, he seemed for a moment to hesitate about leaving his business unfinished, and then, impatiently exclaiming, "Damn the hog!" put the garment on, with his arms yet stained with blood and his shirt-sleeves but half rolled down, left the premises to rally his company.

The morning of the 16th of April broke cold and stormy. Notwithstanding the rain and sleet which rendered the weather cold and uncomfortable in the extreme, the streets of Marblehead were filled with a throng of excited people. Wives and mothers and fathers and children were represented there in the dense crowd, all anxious to speak a word of farewell to the soldiers on their departure. The first companies to leave town were those commanded by Captains Martin and Boardman, which marched to the depot and took the half-past seven o'clock train for Boston. Captain Phillips' company took the train which left Marblehead about an hour and a half later.

Of the arrival of the Marblehead companies in Boston, Adjutant-General William Schouler wrote as follows:

"There has been some controversy in military circles as to which company can claim the honor of first reaching Boston. I can answer that the first were the three companies of the Eighth Regiment belonging to Marblehead, commanded by Captains Martin, Phillips and Boardman. I had been at the State House all night, and, early in the morning, rode to the arsenal at Cambridge to ascertain whether the orders from headquarters, to send arms, ammunition, overcoats and equipments,

had been properly attended to. Messengers had also been stationed at the different depots with orders for the companies, on their arrival, to proceed at once to Faneuil Hall, as a northeasterly storm of sleet and rain had set in during the night and had not abated in the morning. On my return from Cambridge I stopped at the Eastern Railroad Depot. A large crowd of men and women, notwithstanding the storm, had gathered there, expecting the arrival of troops. Shortly after eight o'clock the train arrived with the Marblehead companies. They were received with deafening shouts from the excited throng. The companies immediately formed in line and marched by the flank directly to Faneuil Hall, the fife and drums playing 'Yankee Doodle,' the people following and shouting like madmen, and the rain and sleet falling pitiously, as if to abate the ardor of the popular welcome. And thus it was the Marblehead men entered Faneuil Hall on the morning of the 16th of April."

On the morning after the departure of the companies, thirty more men left Marblehead to join them. The greatest enthusiasm prevailed throughout the town, and men everywhere were ready and anxious to enlist. Of the patriotic spirit of the people, no better evidence can be given than that contained in the reply of Governor Andrew to a gentleman who asked him if any more men would be needed. "For heaven's sake," replied the governor, "don't send any more men from Marblehead, for it is imposing on your goodness to take so many as have already come!"

The citizens were not less prompt to act than those who had rallied for the defense of the nation. On the 20th of April a town-meeting was held to provide for the families of the soldiers, and the old town-house was crowded to repletion. Mr. Adoniram C. Orne was chosen moderator. The venerable town clerk, Capt. Glover Broughton, a veteran of the War of 1812, was there beside the moderator, his hands tremulous with emotion, awaiting the action of his fellow-citizens. "It was voted that the town treasurer be authorized to hire the sum of five thousand dollars, to be distributed for the relief of the families of those who have gone, or are going, to fight the battles of their country." The town was divided into districts, and a committee of ten persons was chosen to act as distributors of the fund. The patriotism of the ladies of Marblehead at this time, and throughout the entire period of the war, cannot be overestimated. With loving hearts and willing hands, they contributed their time, their labor and their money for the benefit of those who had gone forth to battle. The work of some was of a public nature, and the deeds of these are recorded; but the only record of hundreds who worked quietly in their own homes was written on the grateful hearts of the soldiers for whom they labored.

On the 22d of April a meeting of the ladies was held at the town-house, and a Soldiers' Aid Society was organized. The object was to perform such work as was necessary for the comfort of the soldiers, and to furnish articles of clothing, medicines and delicacies for use in the hospitals. Mrs. Maria L. Williams was elected president. That lady subsequently resigned, and Mrs. Margaret Newhall became president, and Mrs. Mary M. Oliver, secretary.

On the following day eighteen ladies met at the



Sewall Grammar School-House, on Spring Street, and organized a committee to solicit money for the benefit of the soldiers. In less than one week from the time of their organization the ladies of this committee had collected the sum of \$508.17.

The teachers of the public schools generously contributed six per cent. of their salaries for the year in aid of the object; and there was a disposition manifested by the people generally to give something, however small the amount.

Stirring reports were now received from the companies at the seat of war. The blockading of the railroad to Baltimore by the Secessionists; seizure of the steamer "Maryland;" and the saving of the old frigate "Constitution," in which their fathers fought so valiantly, caused the hearts of the people to swell with pride, as they related the story one to another.

The sufferings of their soldier boys, who were obliged to eat pilot bread baked in the year 1848, brought tears to the eyes of many an anxious mother. But the tears were momentary only, and the sufferings of the boys were forgotten in the joy that Marblehead soldiers had been permitted to lead the advance on the memorable march to Annapolis Junction, and to relay the track which had been torn up to prevent the passage of the troops. The arrival of the troops in Washington; the new uniforms furnished in place of those worn out in eight days; and the quartering of soldiers in the United States Capitol building, was all related in the letters that came home.

During the latter part of April active measures were taken to recruit another company to join those already in the field. In a few days the "Mugford Guards," a full company of fifty-seven men was organized, and Captain Benjamin Day was commissioned as commander. Every effort was made to get the new company in readiness for departure as soon as possible. The men were without uniforms and the school-teachers at once voted to furnish the materials for making them at their own expense. Mr. John Marr, the local tailor, offered his services as cutter and they were gratefully accepted. On Sunday, May 5th, the ladies of the Soldiers' Aid Society, with a large number of others, assembled at Academy Hall and industriously worked throughout the entire day and evening to make up the uniforms.

On the following day the town voted to appropriate the sum of four hundred dollars to furnish the company with comfortable and necessary clothing.

On the 7th of June another meeting was held, and the town voted to borrow a sum not exceeding ten thousand dollars, to be applied by the selectmen, in aid of the families of volunteers.

On the morning of Monday, June 24th, the new company took its departure for the "seat of war." The soldiers were escorted to the entrance of the town by the Mugford Fire Association and a large concourse of citizens. Almost the entire community assembled in

the streets to say "farewell," and to bid them "God speed." On arriving at the locality known as Work-house Rocks the procession halted, and the soldiers were addressed by William B. Brown, Esq., in behalf of the citizens. Captain Day, in reply, expressed the most patriotic sentiments in behalf of the company.

The soldiers embarked for Boston in wagons which were in waiting, and departed amid the deafening cheers of the citizens. This company was known in the army as Company G, First Regiment Heavy Artillery.

On Thursday, August 1st, the three Marblehead company arrived home. Arrangements had been made to give them an enthusiastic welcome. At three o'clock in the afternoon a procession was formed, consisting of the Marblehead Band, the "Home Guards," the boards of town officers, the entire Fire Department, and the pupils of the public schools. An interesting feature of the procession was thirteen young ladies, representing the original States, wearing white dresses, and red, white and blue veils. The arrival of the train bringing the soldiers was announced by the ringing of bells, the firing of guns and the joyful acclamations of the people. They were received at the depot at about six o'clock P. M., and escorted to the Town-House, where an address of welcome was delivered by Jonathan H. Orne, Esq., a member of the Board of Selectmen. On the afternoon of the following day the veterans were given a grand reception. The procession was again formed, and they were escorted about town to Fort Sewall, where a dinner was served.

Shortly after the return of the companies Captain Knott V. Martin resigned as commander of the Sutton Light Infantry, and recruited a company for the Twenty-third Regiment. More than half the number of this company were enlisted in Marblehead. They left for the seat of war during the month of November.

On the 21st of December the town voted to appropriate the sum of three thousand dollars in aid of the families of volunteers.

The news of the splendid triumph of General Burnside in his expedition against North Carolina, resulting in the capture of Roanoke Island on the 8th of January, 1862, sent a thrill of exultation through every loyal heart in the country. But the joy of the people of Marblehead was turned to grief by the news that three of their bravest citizens had fallen in the battle. These were Lieut. John Goodwin, Jr., Sergt. Gamaliel H. Morse and Private John Show, of Company B, Twenty-third Regiment. Messrs. Goodwin and Morse were killed instantly; but Mr. Show was mortally wounded, and died after several days of severe suffering.

Just one month from the date of the battle of Roanoke Island the famous battle occurred between the United States frigates "Cumberland" and "Congress" and the Confederate ram "Merrimac," in Hampton





Roads, Va. After an engagement of fifteen minutes the "Merrimac" ran into the "Cumberland," crushing in her side. The frigate immediately began to sink. Over one hundred seamen on board the ill-fated vessel went down in her. One of the bravest of the heroes who lost their lives in this engagement was William B. Hubbard, of Marblehead. He was captain of one of the guns on board the "Cumberland." When the ship was sinking, and death stared them in the face, the first thought of many was naturally that of self-preservation. Not so with Hubbard. His powder-boy had become frightened and could not be found.

"I am determined to have one more shot at them," cried the gallant Hubbard, and immediately went below to procure ammunition. On his return, as he approached his gun to reload it, a shot from the enemy laid him on the deck. He went down with the ship, nobly dying at his post.

Among the crew of the "Cumberland" were David Bruce and John Hazel, of Marblehead. Nathaniel Roundey and John Flemming were on board the "Congress" throughout the action.

Late in the month of April the people received the precious bodies of their earliest dead, the first slain in battle. Then, for the first time, they realized the magnitude of the sacrifice to be made. Only the life blood of their best and bravest could preserve the institutions for which their fathers fought. The funeral services over the bodies of Messrs. Goodwin and Morse took place on Thursday, April 24th, at the Unitarian Church.<sup>1</sup> The services consisted of singing by the choir, prayer by Rev. George W. Patch, and an address by the Rev. Samuel R. Colthrop, pastor of the church. The remains were accompanied to their last resting-place in the Green Street Burying-ground by the three companies of the Eighth Regiment belonging to Marblehead and a large concourse of people.

It is seldom that heroes are so honored as were these dead soldiers. His Excellency John A. Andrew, the war Governor of Massachusetts, was there in the procession, accompanied by Adjutant-General Schouler and the members of his staff. Major-General Sutton and the field and staff officers of the Eighth Regiment were also in attendance.

On the 2d of July President Lincoln issued a call for three hundred thousand more volunteers to serve for three years or during the war. In accordance with this call, the most earnest efforts were made to recruit from Marblehead. On the 19th of July the town voted to offer a bounty of one hundred dollars to every man who would volunteer on the quota of the town; and Captains Richard Phillips, Samuel C. Graves, Francis Boardman, Messrs. Samuel Roads and John Goodwin were chosen a committee to assist the selectmen in recruiting. On the 31st of July the

town treasurer was authorized to hire the sum of fourteen thousand four hundred dollars, to be used as bounties for volunteers in the sum of one hundred dollars each. A committee was chosen to wait upon the Governor and request him to appoint an additional recruiting agent. \* On the 1st of August Governor Andrew issued the following permission to recruit:

"In consequence of the request of the town of Marblehead, made by a legal town meeting held yesterday,—a copy of the record of which is handed me, attested by the town clerk,—I appoint at the nomination of the other gentlemen who came to represent the town, Samuel Roads, Esq., additional recruiting agent for Marblehead. He will cooperate with the town's committee and use his influence to forward the enlistments, and I ask the good people of Marblehead to support and help him with all their hearts and hands."

Mr. Roads at once established his headquarters at an office on Washington Street, and the enlistment progressed rapidly. In a short time sixty-nine men had enrolled themselves for a service of three years, or during the war. Of these, thirty-two were assigned to the Tenth Battery, then recruiting at Lynnfield; ten to the Thirty-second Regiment; eight to the Seventeenth Regiment; seven to the Twenty-third Regiment; and the others were distributed among the First Massachusetts Cavalry, and the Twentieth, Twenty-fourth, Fortieth and Forty-first Regiments.

On Tuesday, August 26th, the town voted to pay a bounty of one hundred dollars "for each volunteer enlisting in the service of the United States for a period of nine months, until the quota of the town shall be full." It was also voted to request all shoe manufacturers, all store-keepers and all others to close their places of business each day during the remainder of the week from two to six o'clock P. M.; and that all citizens be entreated to abstain from customary labor during these hours, and assist the authorized agent in procuring recruits." It was ordered that the bells be rung each day from two o'clock to three o'clock P. M.

The Marblehead Band was invited to be present at the town-hall, and give their services during the hour in which the bells were to be rung.

On the 27th of September another meeting was held, at which it was voted to pay one hundred dollars as a bounty to every volunteer enlisting over and above the quota of the town for a service of nine months. This action was intended for the benefit of the two Marblehead companies—the Sutton Light Infantry and the Lafayette Guards. The company known as the Glover Light Guards was disbanded shortly after its return from the three months' campaign, in consequence of the enlistment of a large proportion of its members in the various three years' regiments.

On the 25th of November the Sutton Light Infantry, under command of Captain Samuel C. Graves, and the Lafayette Guards, under command of Captain Richard Phillips, left the State with the other companies of the Eighth Regiment for Newbern, N. C.

<sup>1</sup> The body of Mr. Shaw was not brought home.



The town had made generous provision for the families of soldiers from time to time since the beginning of the war. As the proportion of men who were absent in the army and navy increased, additional appropriations were found necessary, and in March, 1863, the treasurer was authorized to hire twenty-five thousand dollars for this purpose. In the spring of 1863 Congress authorized a draft to obtain reinforcements for the army.

The draft took place at Salem on the afternoon of July 10, in the presence of a large and deeply interested audience. The names of one hundred and eighty citizens of Marblehead were drawn from the box. Of these, a large proportion were exempted by the examining surgeons on account of physical disability, or other causes. Many procured substitutes, and others paid the commutation fee of three hundred dollars. A very few—not more than twenty, it is said—of the number originally drafted were mustered into the United States service.

When the war broke out old Fort Sewall was in ruins. The exposed condition of the harbor and the fact that Confederate gunboats were cruising about the coast, caused the citizens to turn their attention to the fortification of the town. At a town-meeting, held on the 15th of August, it was voted to appropriate the sum of four thousand dollars, to be paid to laborers employed upon the repairs of Fort Sewall. In a short time the fort was thoroughly repaired and considerably enlarged. The government also erected two other fortifications, one at the head of the harbor, overlooking the River-head Beach and the Neck, known as "Fort Glover," and another on Naugus Head, overlooking Salem Harbor, known as "Fort Miller." All three forts were garrisoned by companies from other parts of the State until the end of the war.

On the Fourth of July, 1864, Congress passed an act authorizing the enlistment of recruits for the Union army in the insurgent States. On 23d of July the town of Marblehead voted to deposit five thousand dollars with the treasurer of the Commonwealth for the purpose of obtaining a portion of these recruits to serve on the quota of the town; it was also voted to pay a bounty of \$125 to every recruit enlisting in its quota.

On the 24th of July the Eighth Regiment, which had returned from the nine months' campaign several months before, again left the State for a service of one hundred days. The regiment at this time was under the command of Colonel Benj. F. Peach, Jr., a Marblehead boy who had risen from the ranks. The Sutton Light Infantry took its departure with the regiment. The Lafayette Guards subsequently left town as an unattached company, and was assigned to the Fourth Regiment of Artillery, being known as Company A.

During the month of August the ladies of the Unitarian Society held a fair for the benefit of the sol-

diers. The people responded nobly,—as they had done to every patriotic appeal,—and the sum of one thousand five hundred dollars was netted. Of this sum four hundred dollars was given to the Sanitary Commission, and the balance was distributed among the sick and wounded soldiers and the needy families of those in the navy.

The desire to do something to alleviate the sufferings of those in the army was almost universal. Nearly every organization in town sent boxes of luxuries and medicine to the soldiers in camp. Early in the year the members of the Gerry Fire Association presented eighty-two dollars to the Soldiers' Aid Society, the proceeds of a dancing-party held under their auspices. The members of Washington Lodge of Good Templars presented thirty-five dollars, the proceeds of a social party held at their hall. These donations were applied to the purchase of materials which were made up into quilts, comforters and dressing-gowns for soldiers in the hospitals.

In November of this year the ladies of Marblehead supplied a table at a fair held in Boston for the benefit of the sailors, and by their efforts alone the sum of thirteen hundred dollars was netted.

Shortly after the return of the Eighth Regiment from the one hundred days' campaign, Captain Samuel C. Graves resigned as commander of the Sutton Light Infantry, and organized an unattached company. The company left town in February, 1865, and was stationed for some time at Fort Warren, Boston harbor. It was then ordered to Plymouth, where it remained several months after the close of the war.

We have written only of the companies actually organized or enlisted in Marblehead. But it is impossible to do otherwise. The history of the part taken by the men of Marblehead in the great Civil War can never be fully written. They were in nearly every regiment that went from Massachusetts. In every battle of importance, from Bull Run to Appomattox Court-House, they proved themselves worthy of their ancestors, and of Marblehead.

Though the citizens of Marblehead did not take so prominent a part in the naval service of the country during the Civil War as in the wars against Great Britain, the record of those who enlisted is, as a whole, creditable to the town. Captain Michael B. Gregory rendered efficient service at the Charlestown Navy-Yard in the summer of 1861, during which he was distinguished for his promptness and ability in fitting out government vessels. He afterwards commanded the United States ship "R. B. Forbes," during a short cruise along the Atlantic coast. Captain Josiah P. Cressy commanded the United States ship "Ino," eighty members of his crew being from Marblehead.

After cruising in the North Atlantic, his ship sailed to the Straits of Gibraltar and there formed a blockade for the Confederate steamer "Sumter." He subsequently sailed to the Island of Tangiers,





Morocco, and captured two Confederate officers, who were made prisoners of war. The distinguished services of Captain Samuel B. Gregory, in the U. S. steamer "Western World," and of his brother, Capt. William D. Gregory, in the steamer "Bahia," along the southern coast, are deserving of much more space than is at our disposal. Both were noted for their zeal, and were among the most successful commanders in the United States Navy. Their names are recorded, with honorable mention, in the archives at Washington.

Throughout the entire period of the war the news of every Union victory was announced to the people by the merry peal of the church bells. On Saturday, April 8, 1865, news was received of the surrender of General Lee, at Richmond, Va., and the bells rang out their joyful tidings. The event, however, did not take place until the following day. On Monday, April 10th, the citizens formed in procession and headed by a band of music, marched through the principal streets to Lyceum Hall, where addresses of congratulation were delivered by Dr. Briggs, of Salem, and other speakers. In the evening many of the houses were illuminated, and beacon-fires were lighted on the hills in honor of the great event.

The assassination of President Lincoln, on the night of April 14th, gave a tragic ending to one of the greatest civil wars recorded in history. In Marblehead, as elsewhere throughout the country, every mark of respect was paid to the martyred President. On the day of the funeral many of the shoe manufacturing, private residences and other buildings were appropriately draped in mourning; the church bells were tolled, and public services were held at the Baptist Church, where an address was delivered by the Rev. George W. Patch.

Though actual hostilities ceased in April, the soldiers who had enlisted for a service of three years were not discharged until June, when the war was considered as finally ended. On the 20th of that month the people of Marblehead gave a reception to the members of the Fifth Massachusetts Battery, a large proportion of whom were citizens of the town. This battery had been engaged in all the most important battles of the army of the Potomac, and had become distinguished for efficiency and bravery.

On the 4th of December, a reception was given to General Kilpatrick, who delivered an address on the steps of the town-house.

During the war Marblehead furnished for the army and navy one thousand and forty-eight men, which was a surplus of ninety-one over and above all demands. Eight hundred and twenty-seven were in the military service, and two hundred and twenty-one were in the navy. Of these, one hundred and ten were killed in battle, or died from wounds and sickness, and eighty-seven were wounded, many of whom returned home only to die after months, and, in some instances, years of suffering.

The whole amount of money raised for war purposes by the town, exclusive of State aid, was \$139,725. The sum of \$107,800.65 was raised by the town and paid to families of volunteers as State aid during the four years of the war. This sum was afterwards refunded by the Commonwealth.

## CHAPTER XC.

### MARBLEHEAD—(Continued).

*Improvements in the Shoe Business—New Streets—Increase of Business—Fire on Pleasant Street—First Observance of Memorial Days—John Goodwin, Jr., Post 82, G. A. R. Organized—Other Local Organizations—First Steam Fire Engine—Atlantic Oceanic Opened—Firemen's Demonstration—Catholic Church Burned—Small Fire Extinguished—Meeting House Burned—Sawmills at Branch Railroad Opened—William B. Brown—The Gregory Fund—Bequest of Benjamin Abbot—Abbot Hall—Courtesy of the Citizens—Celebration of Mayfield's Victory—Mayfield Monument Dedicated—Dedication of Soldiers' and Sailors' Monument—Abbot Public Library—Great Fire of 1877—New Local Newspaper Established—Murder of William Frank Hathaway—Marblehead Improvement Society Organized—Exercises on the Death of President Garfield—President Arthur Captured—The Lockout of 1883—Celebration of the Fourth of July—Horse Railroads Extended from Lynn and Salem—Attempts to Divide the Town and Form a New Township—Memorial Services on the Death of Ex-President U. S. Grant—Development of the Town as a Summer Resort—Marblehead as a Yachting Center.*

DURING the war, and the years immediately following its close, the shoe business of Marblehead was in a more prosperous condition than it had ever been before. With the introduction of the McKay Sewing Machine, a division of labor became necessary, and the entire system of manufacturing shoes was revolutionized. All work was now performed in the factories, and instead of the old system, under which boys were taught a thorough knowledge of shoemaking as a trade, they were taught to be simply proficient in some particular branch of the work. By the improved method of manufacturing, thousands of cases of boots and shoes were made in a much shorter time than it had formerly taken to produce as many hundreds. As the business increased and became remunerative, the effect was apparent in the improved condition of the town. Large buildings were erected in the vicinity of the depot for manufacturing purposes, while handsome residences in various parts of the town gave evidence of the prosperity of the people. The town was also greatly improved by the building of new streets, and by removing buildings and widening several of the older highways.

On the night of February 5, 1867, the town narrowly escaped a destructive conflagration. A fire broke out in the shoe manufactory of Joseph Harris & Sons, on Pleasant Street, destroying the building, together with the Baptist Church and the dwelling-house of Increase H. Brown. The flames were communicated to several other buildings in the vicinity, but the fire was fortunately controlled before doing further damage. The work of rebuilding began early in





the spring. A commodious factory was erected by Messrs. Harris & Sons on Elm Street, and the Baptist Society erected a new church on the site formerly occupied by their old house of worship. On the 14th of October, eight men at work on the new church edifice were thrown to the ground by the breaking away of a staging. One man was killed instantly, and another died from his injuries after several days of extreme suffering.

The custom of decorating the graves of soldiers with flowers was observed in Marblehead for the first time on the 13th of June, 1868, under the auspices of the "Soldiers' and Sailors' Union League." Nearly every organization in town participated in the procession. The exercises, which took place on the common, consisted of an oration by William B. Brown, Esq., an address by the Rev. William G. Haskell, and reading a poem written for the occasion by Benjamin K. Prentiss, Esq., of Lynn, a native of Marblehead. The procession then marched to the several cemeteries, where the graves of those who gave their lives in defense of the country were reverently decorated. This beautiful custom has been annually observed on the 30th of May under the auspices of the "Grand Army of the Republic."

The most notable events of the year, besides the excitement attending a presidential election, were the organization of the Liberty Hose Company, and the action of the town in authorizing the lighting of the public streets at night.

Little of importance marked the passage of the year 1869. A prominent local organization was chartered, however: John Goodwin, Jr., Post 82, Grand Army of the Republic. During the following year, Unity Degree Lodge, Daughters of Rebekah, and Neptune Lodge, No. 31, Knights of Pythias, were organized.

In 1871, the town voted to purchase a new steam fire engine, which resulted in a controversy among the firemen as to which company should have the custody of the new machine. At the annual March meeting, the citizens elected a board of fire-wards, in accordance with the time-honored custom of the town. This action was resisted by the Board of Selectmen, who appointed another set of fire-wards, and claimed that the election by the citizens was illegal.

The question was finally carried before the courts, and a decision was rendered declaring the election by the people to be the only legal method of appointment. The new engine arrived on the 8th of September, and was given the name of "Marblehead, No. 1."

The Marblehead Savings' Bank was incorporated early in the year, and in December a new local newspaper, known as the *Marblehead Messenger*, made its appearance.

During the year, also, Atlantic Avenue, which had been the cause of great controversy for several years, and which the town had been ordered to build by the County Commissioner, was completed and opened for travel.

On New Year's night, 1872, the fire department made a grand demonstration in honor of the satisfactory ending of the controversy concerning the new steam fire-engine. After a torchlight procession about town, the several companies assembled at the rooms of the General Glover Fire Association, where a dinner was served. The Marblehead Steam Fire Engine Company was organized the same evening.

On the 8th of July, a new church, which had been erected a short time before on Gregory street, by the Roman Catholics, was burned to the ground. Soon after, a parsonage was erected on the same site for the use of the parish priest.

During the month of August, Manataug Tribe, Improved Order of Red Men, was organized.

The year 1873 was one of the most eventful in the annals of the town. Early in the winter several persons were reported sick with the small-pox, and great excitement prevailed among the people. The first to die with the disease was George Hatch, Esq., a member of the Board of Selectmen, and a gentleman well known and highly respected in the community. Shortly after, a house on Water street was taken for a small-pox hospital, and several persons were placed there for treatment. The management of this hospital was not satisfactory to the citizens, and a controversy ensued which continued until the close of the annual town meeting.

On Thursday morning, September 11, a fire broke out in a stable on Darling Street, belonging to Mr. Thomas T. Paine, and before it could be extinguished a large hotel on Washington Street, known as the "Manataug House," and a dwelling-house adjoining, belonging to the estate of Samuel Homan, were destroyed. Several other buildings in the vicinity were badly damaged.

On Monday, October 19th, the railroad from Marblehead to Lynn, known as the Swampscott Branch, was opened for travel, and the event was celebrated in an appropriate manner. Five hundred persons were conveyed over the route in the first train, and on its return a dinner was served at Allerton Hall. The Marblehead Band was in attendance, and speeches were made by many of the prominent citizens and invited guests.

At the annual town meeting in March, 1874, William B. Brown, Esq., who had served as a member of the school committee for a quarter of a century, declined a re-election. As soon as his determination was made known to the citizens the following resolution was unanimously adopted:

"WHEREAS, Our beloved fellow-citizen, William B. Brown, has served his native town as a member of the School Committee for the long period of twenty-five years; as Chairman of the Board writing the annual report, and giving most freely of his time, his intelligence and his hearty sympathy to the cause of education in our midst, without one cent of remuneration, even to the prejudice of his pecuniary interest and bodily health; and whereas, for the present high standing of our public schools, we gratefully acknowledge a large indebtedness for his direct personal efforts, therefore be it

"Resolved, That we, the citizens of Marblehead, in town-meeting



assembly, do hereby vote him our most hearty thanks, for those rare and invaluable services."

At a town meeting held on Wednesday, May 27th, Mr. James J. H. Gregory generously presented two thousand dollars to the town, to be used as a fund, the interest of which is to be applied once in four years to promote the moral, mental and physical welfare of the inhabitants. The method of investment for this purpose is to be decided by a committee consisting of the chairman of the selectmen, the chairman of the school committee, and all the ministers of the gospel settled over religious societies in the town. The income of this fund has been appropriated to the use of the trustees of the public library.

During the year the selectmen were formally notified that Mr. Benjamin Abbot, who died in Boston, in September, 1872, had bequeathed all the residue of his property, after the payment of several other legacies, to the town of Marblehead. The property consisted of United States bonds and other securities to the value of one hundred and three thousand dollars. The will of the donor concluded as follows:

"I have made this provision for the town of Marblehead, because it was my birthplace. And it is my desire that a building shall be erected for the benefit of the inhabitants of said town, but I do not intend to limit the use of the legacy to that purpose or to impose conditions which would prevent the use of it for such other general objects as the citizens of said town may determine upon in their discretion. I desire that my name shall always be attached to said fund."

The legacy was formally accepted by the town, and it was voted unanimously to erect a building in accordance with the wishes of the donor, to be known as Abbot Hall. This building, which is of brick, with stone trimmings, was completed during the year 1877. It is situated on the Common, on Training-field Hill, one of the highest points of land in the town and is visible for several miles at sea. It contains a large audience hall which is capable of seating fully twelve hundred persons, a public library and reading-room, a fire-proof vault for the storage and security of the records, and rooms for the use of the various boards of town officers. Its total cost was \$75,000. Great credit is due to Messrs. Simon Dodge and Moses Gilbert, of the building committee, under whose supervision the building was constructed. Many of the conveniences which render the new hall superior to most public buildings, are due to the faithful manner in which these gentlemen performed the work assigned them by the town. Upon the completion of the building, several of the citizens and natives of the town residing abroad, generously contributed pictures and other articles to add to its attractiveness. The Hon. James J. H. Gregory presented a clock and bell for the tower and a large oil painting for the reading-room. Mr. Thomas Appleton also gave a picture for the reading-room; a piano for the use of the hall was presented by Mr. Henry F. Pitman; and a carpet for the stage by Mr. Joel Goldthwaite of Boston. Mr. Nathaniel Brimblecome, of Boston, gave a clock for the hall, and Mr. William F. Joy, of Boston, a book-

case for the use of the town clerk. Subsequently, General John H. Devereux, of Cleveland, Ohio, presented Willard's famous painting, "Yankee Doodle, or the Spirit of '76." The dedication of the building took place on Wednesday, December 12, 1877, under the direction of a committee of thirteen gentlemen elected for that purpose. The exercises consisted of instrumental music by the American Band, of Providence, R. I.; prayer by Rev. George W. Allen, Jr., of Marblehead; singing by the Marblehead Musical Association; an original ode written for the occasion by Miss Marcia M. Selman; and an oration by the Hon. Edward Avery, of Braintree, Mass. The benediction was pronounced by the Rev. Edward Crowninshield, of West Dedham, Mass. In the evening a concert was given by the American Band, of Providence, R. I.

Wednesday, May 17, 1876, the one hundredth anniversary of the capture of the British transport "Hope," by Captain James Mugford, in the Continental schooner "Franklin," witnessed one of the greatest celebrations ever known in the history of Marblehead. The day was ushered in by the ringing of all the church bells for an hour at sunrise, and a salute of thirty-nine guns from a battery on "Work-house rocks." The bells were also rung and salutes were fired at noon and sunset. At nine o'clock, A. M., a procession was formed, consisting of military companies of Marblehead and Lynn, seven bands of music, distinguished visitors, soldiers and sailors of the War of 1812, veterans of the Civil War, town officers, secret societies, pupils of the public schools, and the entire fire department. The procession marched through the principal streets to the square at the junction of Pleasant and Essex streets, where a monument, which had been placed in position the day before, was dedicated with appropriate exercises. The monument is a shaft of Hallowell granite, eighteen and one-half feet high, and four feet, nine inches square at the base. It is inscribed on all four sides as follows:

On the northern side,—

"A FRIGATE OF MARBLEHEAD.

"To the memory of the brave Captain Mugford and his heroic crew, who, in the 'Franklin,' of sixty tons, and four four-pounders, May 17, 1776, under the guns of the British fleet, captured and carried into Boston the transport 'Hope,' three hundred tons, ten guns, loaded with munitions of war, including 1,500 barrels of powder."

On the eastern side,—

"CREW OF THE 'FRANKLIN,' AS FAR AS KNOWN.

James Mugford.....	Captain.
Thomas Russell.....	Lieutenant.
Jeremiah Hubbard.....	Lieutenant.
William Thomas.....	Gunner.
Samuel H. Green.....	Quartermaster.
James Topham.....	Carpenter.
John Powers.....	Boatswain.

SEABOARD.

John Dove.  
Thomas Dove.  
John Witham.

Samuel Roff.  
James Quilty.  
Quinn Betts."





## On the western side,—

"CAPTAIN JAMES MUGFORD.

"Born in Marblehead May 19, 1719; killed May 19, 1776, while successfully defending his vessel against thirteen boats and two hundred men from the British fleet."

## On the southern side,—

"ERECTED MAY 17, 1876."

After the dedication of the monument the procession moved to the Unitarian Church, where the other exercises took place. They consisted of singing by the Marblehead Musical Association, prayer by the Rev. Benjamin H. Bailey, an ode written for the occasion by the Rev. John W. Chadwick, an oration by the Hon. George B. Loring, of Salem, and an ode written by Miss Marcia M. Gilman.

On the Fourth of July another celebration took place. At nine o'clock, A.M., a procession was formed consisting of the Marblehead Brass Band, the Mugford Monumental Association, the Hibernian Friendly Society, a delegation of the Mugford Fire Association, the Board of Selectmen, the clergy and the children of the North and South Church Sabbath Schools in carriages. The procession moved through the principal streets to the square at the junction of Mugford and Elm Streets, where a monument erected in memory of the soldiers and sailors of Marblehead who fell in the Civil War was dedicated with appropriate ceremonies. The monument is of Hallowell granite, being thirty-four feet high, and eight feet square at the base. It bears four tablets containing the names of one hundred and thirty-eight soldiers and sailors. On the face, directly in front, is the following inscription:

IN MEMORY OF OUR COUNTRY'S DEFENDERS,

1776, 1812, 1861.

ERECTED BY THE CITIZENS OF MARBLEHEAD.

Dedicated July 4, 1876.

The other exercises of the day took place at the Unitarian Church. They consisted of prayer by the Rev. Julius H. Ward; singing by the Marblehead Musical Association; reading the Declaration of Independence, by Mr. Charles H. Litchman; and addresses by Messrs. James J. H. Gregory and William B. Brown. At the close of the exercises a dinner was served at Allerton Hall.

The local events of the year 1877 were among the most memorable in the entire history of the town. At the annual March meeting the town voted to appropriate twenty thousand dollars from the Abbot fund, to be placed in the hands of trustees and devoted, principal and interest, in their discretion, to the founding and maintenance of a reading-room and library to be called "Abbot Library." It was also voted to place the unappropriated balance of the Abbot fund at interest, and to devote the income to the payment of the annual expense of maintaining the Abbot building, including heating, lighting, and the

care of the building and grounds. The library was opened to the public early in the year 1878.

On the 15th of May the town voted to make a reservoir of Read's Pond, and to lay water-pipes therefrom, with hydrants in suitable places for use in case of fires. The sum of ten thousand dollars was appropriated for the purpose and a committee was elected to carry the vote into effect. The work was finished during the summer of that year.

The most extensive conflagration ever known in the annals of the town took place on the morning of June 25, 1877. At about half-past one o'clock a barn in the rear of a large three-story building known as the "Marblehead Hotel," situated on Pleasant Street, in the midst of the largest and finest buildings of which this town could boast, was discovered to be on fire. Before assistance could be summoned the fire had communicated to the hotel, and when the firemen arrived on the scene the building was in flames. Every effort was made to stop the progress of the destructive element, but without avail. The General Glover engine-house, situated directly over the Brick Pond reservoir, was soon in flames, cutting off the supply of water from that source. The fire was now beyond the control of the firemen, and in spite of their almost superhuman efforts to stop it, spread from building to building with lightning-like rapidity. In a few moments a large shoe manufactory, known as Pope's Block, was on fire, the flames spreading to a barn owned by E. V. Bartlett & Co., and from thence to a shoe manufactory owned and occupied by that firm. The fire now defied all efforts at control. Leaping around the corner of School street, the conflagration extended all the way from Rechabite Building to a shoe manufactory owned by Nathaniel Glover, thence to a large block owned by Wormsted and Woodfin, and soon the shoe manufactory of William Stevens, a stable owned by Thomas T. Paine, and fifteen other buildings, mostly dwelling houses, comprising every building on Sewall Street, from the corner of School Street, to Spring Street were in flames. Extending along the North side of Pleasant Street, the fire consumed a building belonging to T. T. Paine, a small dwelling-house owned by William Humphrey, the beautiful depot erected a few years previously, said at that time to be the finest on the line of the Eastern Railroad, a barn and dwelling-house owned by Benjamin G. Hathaway, a boarding-house owned by Henry F. Pitman, a large shoe manufactory owned and occupied by Jonathan Brown, the dwelling-house of William C. Lefavour, and a barn belonging to the estate of the late Dr. H. H. F. Whittemore. On the South side of Pleasant Street every building save one was consumed, from a house belonging to the estate of Mrs. Leonora Chapman, nearly opposite the place where the fire originated, to the Mugford Monument at the junction of Essex and Spring Street. These included a large block owned by Joshua O. Lefavour.



a house owned by John H. Brown, was occupied by G. W. Forsyth as a boarding-house, a large and commodious four-story building known as "Allerton Block," a shoe factory owned by M. J. Doak, and several dwelling-houses. On the southern end of School Street every building was destroyed, including a large building owned by Henry O. Symonds, the frame and materials of a new engine house, in process of construction, a stable owned by Enoch A. Perkins, the South Congregational Church, a dwelling owned by Edward Glover, and several smaller buildings. On Essex Street, every building was destroyed, including a large shoe manufactory, belonging to the estate of John H. Wilkins, a small shop occupied by a marble-worker, and several dwelling-houses. On Spring Street, two shoe manufactories owned by William C. Lefavour, and four dwelling-houses were destroyed; the only building left standing being the Sewall School-house. On Bassett Street, two dwelling-houses were consumed, together with a barn, belonging to Henry F. Pitman, was destroyed, and several other buildings were seriously damaged.

At one time every church in town was on fire except the Baptist and Roman Catholic. Then it was that strong men trembled, fearing that the town would be destroyed. But their desperation only nerved them to greater effort, and at length, reinforced by assistance from Salem, Lynn, and other cities, the firemen were successful and conquered the fire. But what a scene of devastation met the eye when the morning sun broke forth. Where but a few hours before had been large factories and comfortable homes—monuments of the enterprise and industry of the people—were only stone walls and tottering chimneys. The entire business portion of the town had disappeared in a single night. Seventy-six buildings, with all their contents, representing over half a million dollars' worth of property, had been consumed. Only four of the large shoe manufactories were left standing in the town, while ninety families were made homeless, and fifteen hundred men and women were thrown out of employment.

During the afternoon a meeting was held at the town hall to devise measures of relief for the sufferers by the fire. The meeting was called to order by Capt. Knott V. Martin, and a citizens' relief committee was chosen to solicit donations of money and clothing. Before an appeal could be issued, however, donations began to pour in from all parts of the country, and in a short time the committee reported that enough had been received to alleviate the distress. The total amount of contributions received was \$23,498.30. The clothing was distributed by a society of ladies known as the Women's Centennial Aid Society, who rendered efficient assistance to the committee in its charitable work.

We cannot close our account of this terrible visitation without a few commendatory words concerning the fortitude and enterprising energy which charac-

terized the people during this trying period. They had received a blow, from which it was thought they could not recover; but with steady resolution they set themselves to the work before them, and in less than three months had rebuilt more than one-third of the number of buildings destroyed by the fire. During the years which have elapsed since the great conflagration every building destroyed has been replaced by a new and commodious structure.

Beyond the excitement incident to the State and Presidential elections, which intervened between this period and the year 1881, there is little of interest to record. On the 6th of January, 1881, a new local newspaper known as the *Essex Statesman*, and published by Charles H. Litchman, made its appearance. This paper was issued regularly for a period of three years, when it ceased publication.

Early on the morning of Tuesday, May 3, 1881, a gloom was cast over the entire community by the news that Mr. William Frank Hathaway, an estimable citizen, had been murdered during the night. His body was discovered lying face downward in a ditch in a field near the old Powder House on the "Ferry Road." A bruise on the forehead, evidently inflicted with a stone or some other blunt instrument, gave rise to the theory that he was accosted on his way home and stunned by a blow on the head. He was then placed in the ditch and held down until death ensued from drowning. Robbery evidently was the motive for the deed, as his pocket-book, known to contain considerable money, was missing. No clue to the perpetrators of the deed has ever been discovered.

On Tuesday, May 10th, the Marblehead Improvement Society was organized, and within a short time began its beneficent work by setting out shade trees in various parts of the town.

On the 2d of July President James A. Garfield was shot by Charles Guiteau. The news was received in Marblehead on the afternoon of that day, and the next morning arrangements were hastily made for a mass-meeting of the citizens to take action in regard to the matter. The meeting was held at Abbot Hall, on the evening of that day, and was called to order by Henry A. Potter, chairman of the selectmen. Benjamin F. Pierce was elected chairman, and Thomas Swasey, Jr., secretary. After prayer by the Rev. Benjamin H. Bailey, appropriate resolutions were read by Samuel Roads, Jr., and remarks were made by Capt. Benjamin Pitman, Jonathan H. Orne, Rev. J. H. Williams, William B. Brown and Charles H. Litchman.

September 26th, the day of the funeral of the murdered President, was observed by a general suspension of business. The public buildings and many private residences were draped in mourning. In the afternoon public exercises were held at Abbot Hall, consisting of singing by the Marblehead Musical





Association; prayer by the Rev. J. H. Williams; singing by the Marblehead Glee Club; remarks by Charles H. Litchman, chairman of the meeting; singing by the Glee Club; eulogy by the Rev. Benjamin H. Bailey; singing by the Marblehead Musical Association; and the benediction by Rev. Sanford P. Smith.

On Friday, September 8, 1882, the United States steamer "Despatch" arrived in the harbor. It was soon rumored that President Chester A. Arthur was on board the steamer and that he would take a carriage at Dixie's wharf for Salem. In a short time quite a goodly crowd had gathered at the wharf, and on the appearance of the distinguished visitor he was greeted with hearty cheers. After his departure arrangements were hastily made for a public reception on his return, and a messenger was sent to Salem to request him to meet the citizens at Abbot Hall. This the President at first declined to do; but as his carriage neared Marblehead he was accosted by Capt. Benjamin Pitman, who informed him that he had been instructed to capture the President and his entire party in the name of the people of Marblehead. Seeing that escape was impossible, the President laughingly consented on condition that he should not be subjected to the ordeal of handshaking. As the carriage entered the town a signal was rung on the electric fire alarm, and the church bells were rung. A detachment of the Marblehead Light Infantry marched to Work-house Rocks to act as escort. Fearing that an attempt would be made to drive rapidly through the town and thus deprive the people of an opportunity of seeing the President, some of the enthusiastic citizens brought out the Washington Hook-and-Ladder truck and placed it across the street near the side entrance to Abbot Hall to stop the progress of the carriage. This was unnecessary, however, as the President had no desire to escape. On his arrival he was escorted to Abbot Hall, where fifteen hundred persons had assembled and organized a meeting with Jonathan H. Orne as chairman and Samuel Roads, Jr., secretary. On his appearance, the President was greeted with a perfect ovation. The people cheered themselves hoarse in their delight and enthusiasm. After a brief address of welcome by the chairman of the meeting, and a few pleasant words in reply by President Arthur, the party again took the carriage for the wharf, where they embarked on board the steamer. As the boat in which the Presidential party was rowed to the steamer proceeded down the harbor, it was lustily cheered by hundreds of people who lined the wharves and headlands. Shortly after the "Despatch" steamed out of the harbor. This was probably one of the most hearty, enthusiastic and spontaneous welcomes a President of the United States ever received.

The year 1883 was marked by one of the greatest industrial disturbances ever known in the history of

the town. In the spring several of the manufacturers formed a combination to resist the power of the "Lasters' Protective Union," a prominent labor organization, and a general lock-out was ordered in nearly all the factories. This was attended by considerable excitement and was of about seven weeks' duration, a few of the manufacturers removing a portion of their business from the town before the contest ended. Fortunately for the town, an amicable settlement of the differences between the manufacturers and their workmen was arrived at early in the summer.

No special observance had been made of the anniversary of the declaration of American Independence in Marblehead for a period of twenty-eight years. The Fourth of July, 1884, was accordingly celebrated in a manner never to be forgotten by those who witnessed it. The bells were rung at sunrise, noon and sunset. At 7.30 A.M. a band concert was given at the stand at the Brick Pond Reservoir on Pleasant Street for one hour. At nine o'clock a procession, under the direction of Chief Marshal John Quiner, and headed by the Salem Cadet Band, moved through the principal streets. This was without exception the finest procession ever seen in Marblehead. There were six divisions, consisting of town officers, invited guests, veterans of 1812 and the orator of the day in carriages; secret societies; an industrial display; the pupils of the public schools; the entire Fire Department; and the Marblehead Bicycle Club. All the societies illustrated their teachings and precepts by tableaux. The industrial display taught the lesson of the nation's progress in the mechanic arts; and the public schools by appropriate tableaux beautifully illustrated every important epoch in the nation's history.

All the public buildings and many private residences along the route of the procession were decorated with flags and bunting.

At two o'clock the exercises of the day took place at Abbot Hall, consisting of an address by William B. Brown, Esq.; music by the Salem Cadet Band; prayer by the Rev. William R. Harris; reading the Declaration of Independence by Joseph W. Chapman; an original ode, written for the occasion by N. Allen Lindsey; oration by the Rev. John W. Chadwick, of Brooklyn, N. Y.; singing, "America," by the audience; and the benediction by the Rev. Frank R. Sanborn. Later in the day there were boat races and bicycle races, open to all who chose to participate. In the evening there was a grand display of fire-works from "Skinner's Head."

Early in the summer of this year the Lynn and Boston Street Railway Company extended its tracks to Marblehead and began running regular cars to and from Lynn. Shortly after, the Naumkeag Street Railway Company extended its tracks from Salem through the town to Franklin Street, establishing regular horse-car connection with that city.





In the autumn of 1884 great excitement was caused by the petition of Caleb Childs and others to the General Court, praying for a division of the town of Marblehead and the incorporation of a separate township to include Marblehead Neck and the section known as the "Farms district," the line being drawn near the village of Devereux. A similar petition was sent to the Legislature from certain citizens of Swainscott, who desired to have the sections known as Phillips' Beach and Beach Bluff annexed to the proposed town. This movement was vigorously resisted by the inhabitants of both towns in interest. The subject occupied the attention of the "Committee on towns" of the Legislature of 1885 for several weeks, and after a full, fair and impartial hearing, the petitioners were given "leave to withdraw." Another attempt to divide the town before the Legislature of 1886 resulted in a similar report.

On the 8th of August, 1885, memorial services were held at Abbot Hall in honor of ex-President U. S. Grant, whose death had recently occurred. Capt. Knott V. Martin presided. The exercises consisted of singing by a double quartette; reading of resolutions by Jonathan H. Orne, Esq.; remarks by Hon. James J. H. Gregory; an ode by Miss Marcia M. Selman; prayer by the Rev. William R. Harris; oration by Capt. Benjamin Pitman; singing, "America," by the audience; and the benediction by Rev. William R. Harris.

During the period of which we have written in this chapter, the town has gradually developed into a popular summer resort. Nearly every available spot along the shore has been purchased and built upon by summer residents, and every year brings a larger number of pleasure-seekers to our shore than its predecessor. The growth of the settlement on Marblehead Neck has been rapid and constant. Wide and well-kept avenues have been laid out in various directions, commanding a full view of the ocean, the town and the coast from Thatcher's Island to the South Shore. There are one hundred and fifty houses already occupied during the summer, and others are being erected. The beautiful club-house of the Eastern Yacht Club, on the harbor side, is the finest to be found on the New England coast. The harbor, being the headquarters of the boats of this club, has attracted the attention of yachtsmen to its superior facilities, and for a few years past the most famous yachts in America and Great Britain have been frequent visitors. The advantages offered for yacht-racing have also been recognized, and several regattas between the fleets of the great yacht clubs of the country have been sailed off our coast. What is true of the Neck is true also, though in a lesser degree, of various sections of the town. Peach's Point has grown within a few years into a beautiful village of commodious residences, and every year new houses are erected in the sections known as Devereux and Clifton. The boarding-houses in these sections are

always well filled during the summer, and the future prominence of Marblehead as a watering-place seems to be assured.

## BIOGRAPHICAL.

### URIEL CROCKER.

Uriel Crocker belonged to a family which has been well known in Barnstable County during its entire history. In 1634 two brothers, John and William Crocker, arrived in New England, and soon after settled in Scituate. William removed to Barnstable, October 10, 1639, and John followed soon after, dying there in 1669. He left a wife, Jane, and after providing for her he gave his estate to the sons of his brother. William Crocker, the ancestor of the subject of this sketch, was a deacon in the church, an influential citizen, and the owner of a large landed estate. He first settled in the easterly part of Barnstable, but in 1643 removed to the westerly part, where, in 1655, he owned one hundred and twenty-six acres of upland and twenty-two acres of meadow. His first wife, whom he married in Scituate in 1636, and who was the mother of all his children, was named Alice and died soon after 1683. His second wife was Patience, widow of Robert Parker and daughter of Henry Cobb, who had removed from Plymouth, where he had appeared as early as 1629. William Crocker died in Barnstable in September, 1692, probably about eighty years of age. His children were John, born in Scituate May 1, 1637; Elizabeth, born in Scituate September 22, 1639; Samuel, born in Barnstable June 3, 1642; Job, born March 9, 1644; Josiah, September 19, 1647; Eleazer, July 21, 1650, and Joseph, 1654.

Of the above children Job was also a deacon and a prominent business man. He lived on the estate of his uncle John at the northeast corner of the West Parish of Barnstable and there died in March, 1719. His first wife, whom he married in November, 1668, was Mary, daughter of Rev. Thomas Walley of Barnstable. She died in 1676. His second wife, whom he married July 19, 1680, was Hannah, daughter of Richard Taylor of Yarmouth. She died May 14, 1743, in the eighty-fifth year of her age. His children were a son born in 1669, who died early; Samuel, May 15, 1671; Thomas, January 19, 1674; Mary, June 29, 1681; John, February 24, 1683; Hannah, February 2, 1685; Elizabeth, May 15, 1688; Sarah, January 19, 1690-91; Job, April 4, 1694; David, September 5, 1697; and Thankful, June 14, 1700.

Of the above children Samuel, of Barnstable, married, December 10, 1696, Sarah, daughter of Robert Parker, who died in 1718. He afterwards married, April 12, 1719, Judith Leavet of Rochester. His children were Samuel, born December 12, 1697; Cornelius, October 24, 1698; Mary, April 8, 1700; Pa-





*Uriel Crocker*





tience, April 18, 1701; Elizabeth, February, 1702-03; Cornelius again, March 23, 1704; Rowland, June 18, 1705; Gershom, December, 1706; Ebenezer, June 5, 1710; Benjamin, July, 1711; Rebecca, Rachel, David, Sarah and Tabitha.

Of these children Cornelius, of Barnstable, married, November 9, 1727, Lydia, daughter of Joseph Sturgis Jenkins, and died December 12, 1781, his wife having died August 5, 1773, at the age of sixty-eight. His children were Elijah, born April 12, 1729; Elisha, September 14, 1730; Samuel, July 29, 1732; Joseph, April 12, 1734; Lydia, April 14, 1739; Cornelius, August 21, 1740; Josiah, December 20, 1741; and Sarah, 1749.

Of these children Josiah graduated at Harvard in 1765, and was for some time a teacher in the Barnstable Academy. He married, October 6, 1765, Deborah, daughter of Daniel Davis and sister of Daniel Davis, the distinguished solicitor-general of Massachusetts, and died in Barnstable, May 4, 1780. His widow afterwards married Benjamin Gorham. His children were Deborah, born 1766; Robert, 1767; Uriel, 1768; Josiah and Mehitabel. Of these Uriel removed to Boston and served an apprenticeship to Joseph Eaton, whose relative, Mary, daughter of Israel Eaton of Marblehead, he afterwards married. After his marriage he removed to Marblehead, making that town his home and place of business until his death in 1813. His wife died within a year after their marriage, and he afterwards married in February, 1792, Mary, daughter of Captain Richard James of Marblehead, who died in August, 1811. His children were Mary, born November 22, 1792; Richard James, October 19, 1794; Uriel, the subject of this sketch, September 13, 1796; Deborah, November 12, 1798; Richard James again, October 29, 1800; Josiah, November 9, 1802; Abigail, October 15, 1805; Francis Boardman, April 17, 1808; and Elizabeth James, October 9, 1809. Of these Josiah and Abigail alone survive.

Capt. Richard James, above-mentioned, the grandfather of Mr. Crocker, was a ship-master and performed distinguished service in the War of the Revolution in bringing munitions of war for our armies from foreign neutral ports. His commission from the State of Massachusetts, appointing him to that special service, is in the possession of Mr. Crocker's family. He married Mary, daughter of Colonel Jonathan and Abigail (Burnham) Glover of Marblehead. Colonel Glover was a brother of Brigadier-General John Glover, whose statue stands in Commonwealth Avenue, in Boston. The sword of General Glover and the portraits of Colonel Jonathan Glover and his wife are also in the possession of the family of Mr. Crocker.

Colonel Glover was the treasurer of the town of Marblehead during the whole war, and at the close it was found that a debt of twenty-seven hundred pounds had accumulated, more than half of which was due to the treasurer for advances made by him in behalf of the town. The services of General Glover, his brother,

at the head of the Marblehead (or Twenty-first) Regiment, designated by the army as the "Marine Regiment," in transporting the army across the East River, after the battle of Long Island, and saving it from further disaster, and also in crossing the Delaware on the eve of the victorious battle of Trenton, have been revived in our memories by the deeds of the soldiers of Marblehead on land and sea in the late war, deeds which deserve a repetition of the words of the gallant General Knox: "There went the men of Marblehead, alike at home, on land, or water; alike ardent, patriotic, and unflinching, wherever they unfurled the flag of their country."

Mr. Crocker in his earliest youth attended the common schools of Marblehead, his native town, and closed his education at the Marblehead Academy, under the preceptorship of Samuel Greeley, from whom he received the certificate for the best scholarship. Mr. Greeley, well known in Boston in his later years as deacon of the Berry Street Church, pursued in middle life the business of type-founder, and his former scholar became one of his chief customers.

Mr. Crocker's childhood and early life in Marblehead were peculiarly happy. He was the second of eight children, and relatives, old and young, were about him, bound together by the strongest ties of affection. Like every other Marblehead boy, the sea presented strong temptations to his youthful tastes, and his desire to adopt a sailor's career, approved by his father, was only checked by his grandfather, Captain James, who had seen enough of sea life to know its hardships and perils. One of his early memories was the tarring and feathering of skipper Floyd Ireson, celebrated by the ballad of Whittier, which occurred when he was twelve years of age. A later memory, though still a memory of his youth, was the death of his mother, which occurred in August, 1811, at the age of thirty-seven. A still later one, but immediately following the last, was a ride to Cambridge in the old family chaise, with his grandfather, to attend the commencement of 1811 at which his school-mate, Robert Hooper of Marblehead, graduated. The class of that year was a notable one, including, besides Edward Everett, who gave the English oration, Thomas G. Cary, Charles P. Curtis, Nathaniel L. Frothingham, Samuel Gilman, John C. Gray, Robert Hooper, George Morey, Harrison Gray Otis, Edward Reynolds, and John Fothergill Waterhouse. It is needless to say that the occasion made a deep impression on his mind. It is interesting, however, to note that the modest boy of fourteen, looking for an opportunity in some occupation more humble than that to which the graduates from an academic life were that day aspiring, became in later years their trusted and honored friend.

On Saturday, the 14th of September, 1811, the day after his fifteenth birthday, his father carried him again to Boston, and on the following Monday he entered as an apprentice the book-store and printing-



office of Samuel T. Armstrong, then numbered 50 Cornhill, the new building on the same lot being now numbered 173 and 175 Washington Street. He was the youngest apprentice, the so-called "printer's devil," and so remained until the Monday following the next Thanksgiving, when Osmyn Brewster, a boy eleven months younger, entered the office as an apprentice and Uriel Crocker received his first promotion. It was by his own choice that he was employed in the printing instead of the book-selling department. From the first he devoted himself with diligence to his work, and early acquired that knowledge and skill which qualified him to direct, afterwards, the labors of many others. His faithfulness and industry won the confidence and friendship of his employer, and at the age of eighteen, on the retirement of Ezra Lincoln, the old foreman, to set up an office for himself, he was made the foreman, though four of his fellow apprentices were his seniors in age and apprenticeship. When the apprenticeship of Mr. Crocker and Mr. Brewster ended, Mr. Armstrong, with a just perception of their ability and trustworthiness, and with a wise foresight as to his own interests, took them into partnership, November 1, 1818. The articles of partnership were drawn up by Jeremiah Evarts, the father of William M. Evarts of New York, and included the printing-office alone, Mr. Armstrong reserving, temporarily, sole possession of the book-selling business. On the first of April, 1825, Mr. Armstrong retired, and the firm of Crocker & Brewster established in 1818, assumed the entire business. Mr. Armstrong was connected with them, however, in several joint interests until 1840, and his warm friendship and almost daily visits to their counting-room continued until the very day of his sudden death, in 1850.

Crocker & Brewster continued in the building to which they had come as boys in 1811, until 1865, when their lease from Mrs. Armstrong, widow of their late partner, terminated, and they moved into the adjoining building. In 1876 they gave up business as publishers and booksellers, and sold out their stereotype plates and other partnership property to H. O. Houghton & Co. In the business of the firm Mr. Crocker had, from the first, the special charge of the printing office, and Mr. Brewster of the book-store. Mr. Crocker was always zealous for the credit of their press, and eager to introduce every improvement. Crocker & Brewster were the first in Boston to use the new iron and power presses, the product of the latter being more than tenfold that of the old hand-presses, which were both slow in their operation and fatiguing to workmen.

Many of their publications were sprinkled largely with Hebrew, Greek, and Latin, but they were always found remarkable for their correctness, and their publications were of the highest character, especially those in the departments of biblical learning and practical religion. Their edition of "Scott's Family Bible," in six volumes, royal octavo, containing 4200

pages, is believed to have been the first stereotyped issue of any large work in America. Their issues of the works of Professor Robinson and Andrews & Stoddard have largely contributed to the progress of sound learning.

Mr. Crocker himself has said,—“It is not for me to speak of the character of our publications. We believe they have done some good in the world, and it is pleasant to an old printer, when thinking of the many millions of pages issued from his press, to know there is

“Not one immoral, one corrupting thought,  
No line, which, dying, he could wish to blot.”

On the 11th of February, 1829, he married Sarah Kidder, daughter of Elias Haskell, of Boston. After his marriage he occupied for a few months a house at the corner of Atkinson and High Streets, in Boston, and then bought the house numbered 26 Lynde Street, being the house adjoining the West Church, where he lived until 1847. He then moved to 23, afterward 29, Somerset Street, where he lived until, in 1885, when his house, with others, was taken by the city to make room for the court-house now in process of erection. He has, since 1885, lived in the house numbered 319 Commonwealth Avenue, spending the warm weather in Cohasset, where he died July 19, 1887, having nearly completed his ninety-first year. His wife died in Boston, January 4, 1856, and his surviving family now consists of a daughter, who was devoted to the health and comfort of her father in his declining years, and two sons, Uriel Haskell Crocker and George Glover Crocker, both of whom have made their mark at the Suffolk bar and as writers on law. Uriel was one of the three commissioners who revised the statutes of Massachusetts in 1882. George was president of the Massachusetts Senate, in 1883, and in the early part of the present year succeeded Thomas Russell as chairman of the Massachusetts Railroad Commissioners.

Aside from his legitimate business career Mr. Crocker, though never holding public office, was connected with many public enterprises. The Massachusetts Charitable Mechanics Association owes much of its prosperity to his valuable service in its behalf, and the final success of the Bunker Hill Monument Association, of which he was a director since 1833 and several years vice-president, in raising funds for the monument, was in no small degree due to his ingenious plans and personal effort. His efficiency in the management of the Old Colony Railroad Company, in which he was director, with the exception of a few years, from the date of its formation till his death, and his services in rescuing from threatened disaster the Northern Railroad Company of New Hampshire, of which for more than thirty-five years he was a director, have been fully appreciated by the stockholders of the various companies. He was at various times director, vice-president, and president of the South Pacific Railroad, director and president of the United







*Benjamin P. Ware.*





States Hotel Company for many years, president of the Revere House Association, and trustee in the Boston Dispensary and in other institutions too numerous to mention. As recently as 1884 a list of corporations showed him to be president of four, vice-president of two, treasurer of two, and director in several others.

In accepting these positions, which in early years were much more numerous, he declined a merely nominal official title. The institution or association to which he lent his name was sure of having a careful oversight and a rigid inspection, and thus with his name went confidence and trust.

On the evening of November 1, 1868, the fiftieth anniversary of the co-partnership of Crocker & Brewster was celebrated at the house of Mr. Crocker, on Somerset Street by a gathering of a large number of their friends, on which occasion Rev. Dr. George W. Blagden made an appropriate address, which was responded to at length by Mr. Crocker. In the course of his remarks Mr. Crocker said: "Of Mr. Brewster and myself the fellowship in business and in friendship will, I trust, never be dissolved. During all the days of the seven years of our apprenticeship and of our fifty years of partnership, I have never received one unkind word from him, nor do I believe that he ever received one from me. If he did, I certainly never intended it, as I know that he never deserved it."

The ninetieth birthday of Mr. Crocker occurred on the 13th of September, 1886, while at his summer residence in Cohasset. During the day he received the congratulations of his neighbors and friends, and in the evening he was serenaded by the band of the Cohasset Musical Association. Again, on the 29th of November, 1886, the friends of the two aged partners celebrated the seventy-fifth anniversary of their business connection at the house of Mr. Crocker in Commonwealth Avenue. The gathering was a most distinguished one, including Governor Robinson, Lieutenant-Governor Ames, ex-Governor Rice, A. W. Beard, treasurer of the Commonwealth, Dr. Oliver Wendell Holmes, Hon. Sidney Bartlett, Hon. Leopold Morse, Hon. Samuel C. Cobb, Hon. R. R. Bishop, and other gentlemen well known in public service. Their fellow-citizens could not have shown more emphatically their appreciation of the fidelity and conscientiousness with which Mr. Crocker and Mr. Brewster had performed the work of life. The words of Hon. Robert C. Winthrop, the president of the Bunker Hill Monument Association, in his address to the annual meeting in 1883, still further emphasize the respect and honor in which the subject of this imperfect sketch was held.

"I cannot forget that first in the order of seniority on our roll of living directors, and at the head of our vice-presidents, stands the name of a venerable printer, bookseller, and publisher of our city, the imprint of whose firm, 'Crocker and Brewster,' has been the guaranty of a good book for more years than I can count; who has always been held and is still held in the highest regard and respect by our whole community; and who, having been elected a director in 1833, has this day in

the eighty-seventh year of his age completed a half century of faithful service. I call upon you all to rise and unite with me in offering our thanks and congratulations to our valued associate and excellent fellow-citizen and friend, Uriel Crocker, and in expressing the earnest hope that he may long be spared in health and strength, not only to this association, but to the community in which he has been so conspicuous an example of that industry, integrity, public spirit, and patriotism, which have characterized and distinguished the mechanics of Boston from the days of their illustrious leader, Paul Revere."

#### BENJAMIN POND WARE.

The subject of this sketch was born in Salem on the 9th day of April, 1822. He was of the seventh generation from Robert Ware, whose enterprise and recognized ability secured a land grant in Dedham on the 12th of July, 1612.

Robert Ware was undoubtedly a native of Wrentham, Suffolk County, England; from which place he emigrated to America.

The family of Ware, or Weare (as it is written in the early records), is easily traced to a great antiquity by the records of the counties of Devon and Somerset, England.

The three oldest sons of Robert Ware were settled in that part of Dedham now known as Wrentham, in 1673. The youngest, Robert by name, was the father of Michael; and the direct descent of the subject of this sketch is Jabez, Amos and Erastus, from Michael.

In the long line of ancestry, the Wares were owners as well as tillers of the land; and many of the descendants of Robert have been noted as leading teachers in ethics and practicing physicians.

Erastus Ware, the father of Benjamin P., moved from Paxton to Danvers in 1810, he, at that time, being a young man of twenty-two years of age; ambitious and full of manly hope and enterprise, he commenced work on a milk farm and soon made himself a recognized leader and authority in all that pertained to agricultural industry.

In 1831 he purchased the Hinkley Farm in Marblehead, and commenced work on the same in 1833, Benjamin P. at this time being eleven years of age. This farm had been greatly abused by tenants who had cultivated it for fifty years with a single eye to securing the best crop for the tenant, with the least outlay of either capital or labor, and with a total disregard of the good of the land or the interest of the owner. Erastus Ware saw the possibilities of good husbandmanship upon the worn-out land; and ably seconded by his son, Benjamin P., and a brother, commenced work in good earnest to repair the waste places and bring back this neglected soil to a much better than its primitive condition. The best methods of agriculture learned by reading and observation were adopted in this work, and the systematic and well-ordered labor soon made Erastus and his sons the observed of all observers. It is not too much to say that the production of vegetables for the market was a leading feature (as well as a novelty in the town) in the Ware system of farming.



With long-neglected buildings, poor fences, neglected orchards, the outlook was little better than that of a new country. But energy, frugality and persistent industry soon produced a transformation from negligence and shiftlessness to thrift and prosperity.

So much physical exertion was required of the subject of this sketch that three months in the winter was all that he could be spared for intellectual training and supplementary to this public school education, two terms at Phillips' Academy, concluded his opportunities for rudimentary education. At the age of twenty-five, Benjamin P. married Hannah Clifton, of Salem, having the year previous built the beautiful Clifton House as a seashore summer resort, being a pioneer in the adaptation of the coast-lined land of Marblehead as resorts for recuperation of professional and business men from the cares and anxieties incident to city life. This digression from the routine life of the farmer was the cause of many criticisms of doubt expressed by short-sighted and narrow-minded men. But the increased value of the land on the North Shore, and its now world-wide reputation as a place for rest and recuperation have convinced the most incredulous that the work has been that of a well-balanced and far-seeing mind, and the distinguished guests from this and other countries who have sought rest and repose amid the cooling breezes on this rock-ribbed coast gives full endorsement to this statement.

Nor has the enterprise of Mr. Ware been limited to the little spot which he has so beautifully adorned. The grand Atlantic Avenue connecting Swampscott and Marblehead is one of his early conceptions; and its completion was largely the work of his own enterprise. This great ocean boulevard met with violent opposition in its construction from both Swampscott and Marblehead, and but for the energy of Mr. Ware and a few others, the great increased valuation caused by its construction would have been long deferred.

The Swampscott Branch of the Eastern Railroad owes its construction and completion largely to his individual work.

Mr. Ware was also a valuable co-operator of John P. Palmer in what seemed, at the time, a most preposterous scheme,—the making free to the public of the Salem Turnpike. This act was unquestionably the initial cause of securing freedom by legislation of all the toll bridges and roads of the State.

In matters of public education, he has long been prominent, having served sixteen years on the school committee of Marblehead, and ten years a trustee of the Massachusetts Agricultural College. He has also served as trustee of the Marblehead Savings Bank for five years; trustee of the New England Agricultural Society for nine years; president of Marblehead and Swampscott Farmers' Club four years; Master of Subordinate Grange No. 38, six years; Master of the State Grange of Massachusetts two years; president

of the Essex Agricultural Society thirteen years, and a leading member of the State Board of Agriculture.

From the first of his public life he has recognized the necessity and importance of exact knowledge in every department of agricultural industry. With this end in view he was first and foremost by speech and resolution to urge the establishment of an Experiment Station by the commonwealth, and is a prominent member of its Board of Management. The acknowledged usefulness of the station, as now established, is a happy indication of his good judgment.

In his own farm industry he has never feared new methods; patiently watching and learning, he has often proved a leader where at first he appeared to be only a timid and distant follower. The adoption and introduction of the Silo and its successful result in the preparation of ensilage on his own farm, is a remarkable instance of his readiness and ability to adapt himself to new conditions in agriculture.

As a public speaker Mr. Ware has filled an important gap in the wants of the agricultural population. With a rich, full voice, an easy flow of language, an ability to express in a concise and readily understood manner the results of both observation and experience, he is an ever-welcome guest on all public occasions where words of counsel from practical stand-points are needed or desired. As one of the committee of the Massachusetts Ploughman Association he has been prominent by suggestion and speech, in making these well-known public gatherings pre-eminently useful and instructive. He has often presided and led at these gatherings, and his practical talks have had a wide reading as they have been reported phonographically in the *Massachusetts Ploughman*.

Mr. Ware has made many other addresses on agriculture and other subjects which have been reported to a greater or less extent in the daily and weekly papers.

At the age of sixty-five, he is in the prime of life and in full harmony and sympathy with every developing feature of science and art which has to do with the welfare of mankind and the prosperity and building-up of men and communities.

#### JACOB M. CROPLEY.

Jacob M. Cropley was born at Mt. Handly, Annapolis County, Nova Scotia, July 4, 1845. He remained there until he was twenty years of age. He then, in 1866, came to Massachusetts, and six years later, in 1872, commenced shoe manufacturing in Marblehead. This factory was burned in 1877 in the disastrous fire which swept the business portion of Marblehead. He commenced manufacturing again, and in 1882 formed a co-partnership with his younger brother, William W. Cropley, under the firm name of Jacob M. Cropley & Brother. A factory in which they were interested at Wolfboro', N. H., was burned August 9, 1887. It was soon after rebuilt, and is now







*Mr. Cropley*





"BELLAIR."  
RESIDENCE OF JACOB M. GROPLEY,  
MARBLEHEAD, MASS.





*Knott V. Martin*







*Francis. Bowditch*



the largest in the State. At the two factories in Woburn and Marblehead, about seven hundred operatives are employed, and the business of the firm, which has steadily increased since first established by Mr. Jacob M. Cropley, is now one of the largest in its line in the country.

Although a young man, Mr. Cropley already occupies a prominent position among the leading shoe manufacturers of New England. He is a clear-headed, practical, thoroughgoing business man. He is alive to the demands of his business, energetic in a marked degree, and with an indomitable will that commands success. Mr. Cropley is open-hearted and benevolent, and all measures tending to advance the general welfare of his adopted town find in him an earnest advocate.

In May, 1872, Mr. Cropley united in marriage with Sarah D. Lyle, of Marblehead, and their family consists of five sons, viz.: Eugene I., Jacob H., Walter L., Sydney M. and Ralph E.

#### KNOTT V. MARTIN.

Knott V. Martin was born in Marblehead July 11, 1820. His early education was received at the public schools of his native town. At the age of thirteen years he left school and learned the trade of shoemaking, at which he worked until his twenty-seventh year, when he was forced to abandon it on account of ill health. An out-of-door occupation of some kind being necessary for his recovery, he engaged in business as a butcher. A taste of military life led him while still a boy to join the Marblehead Light Infantry, as a member of which he became so proficient that he was rapidly promoted from one position to another, until on the 6th of October, 1852, he was commissioned as its captain. Under his command the company soon reached a high standard of excellence, and was recognized throughout the State as one of the best disciplined organizations in the Massachusetts Volunteer Militia.

It was while he was in command of this company that the Civil War broke out. Fort Sumter had been fired upon, and President Lincoln issued his famous call for troops to march to the defense of the National Capital. Late in the afternoon of April 15, 1861, Lieutenant-Colonel Hinks, of the Eighth Regiment, arrived in Marblehead, and notified the commanding officers of the three companies of that regiment located in that town to have their commands in readiness to take the first train for Boston on the following morning.

He found Captain Martin in his slaughter-house, with the carcass of a hog just killed and in readiness for the "scald." The captain was advised to have the bells of the town rung and to obtain as many recruits as possible. Taking his coat from a peg, he seemed for a moment to hesitate about leaving his work unfinished, and then, with the emphatic exclamation, "D—n the hog!" put the garment on, with his arms yet stained with blood, and his shirt sleeves half-rolled down, left the premises to rally his company. The patriotic impulse which inspired the words of the gallant captain was but a reflex of that which animated the men of the three Marblehead companies. The readiness with which they sprang to arms has been told again and again in the history of the opening days of the Rebellion. Leaving Marble-

head on the early morning train, they had the great distinction of being the first companies to reach Boston in response to the orders of Governor Andrew, and Captain Martin, with his sword-hilt, was knocking at the door of Faneuil Hall before it was opened for their reception. At the close of the first three months' campaign Captain Martin returned with his company to Marblehead, having been mustered out of the service, and immediately recruited Company B, Twenty-Third Regiment, which left Massachusetts for the seat of war November 11, 1861. While in command of this company he participated in the battles of Roanoke Island, Newbern, Kinston, Whitehall and Goldsborough, in North Carolina. In May, 1863, he resigned his commission. On the 24th of February, 1864, he re-enlisted in Fifty-eighth Massachusetts Regiment, but was transferred to the Fifty-ninth Regiment, in which he went to the front as acting first sergeant of Company I. In June of the same year he was again transferred; this time to Company K of the same regiment, being warranted as first sergeant. While a member of this regiment he took part in the battles of the Wilderness, Spotsylvania, North Anna River, Cold Harbor and Petersburg, Va. In the battle before Petersburg, July 27, 1864, he was wounded by a spent ball, by which he became permanently disabled, losing eight inches from the main bone of the right leg.

Immediately after the close of the war Captain Martin was elected a member of the Massachusetts House of Representatives, serving the people of his district in that capacity during the years 1866 and 1867. He was then appointed messenger to the House of Representatives, a position which he held for two years.

In May, 1869, he was appointed postmaster of the Marblehead post-office, retaining his place by successive reappointments until May 16, 1885, when he resigned and engaged in the business of raising poultry for the market. On the 14th of November, 1868, Captain Martin was united in marriage to Miss Mary P. Thompson, of Marblehead. His last connection with the military, as a member of which he had spent so large a portion of his lifetime, was during a period from June, 1866 to January, 1868, when he had command of the Marblehead Sutton Light Infantry.

#### FRANCIS BOARDMAN.

Francis Boardman was born in Marblehead, April 28, 1826, and was educated in the public schools and by private tuition. He came of patriotic stock, his father, Thomas Boardman, and his grandfather, Abel Boardman, having served in the militia during the War of 1812, while his maternal grandfather, Samuel Giles, was one of the many heroic privateersmen for whom the town of Marblehead was noted in the second great contest between the United States and Great Britain. After receiving as much instruction as was then thought necessary for a boy in his walk of life, he went to work with his father as a baker. Becoming a member of the Marblehead Light Infantry while yet a minor, he took an active interest in everything pertaining to the militia, and in 1852 was largely instrumental in recruiting and organizing the company formerly known as the Glover





Light Guards, of which he became second lieutenant. In 1857 he was commissioned captain of this company, and was in command when the War of the Rebellion broke out, becoming distinguished as one of the two Marblehead captains whose companies were first to reach Boston on the 19th of April, 1861, in response to President Lincoln's call for troops. On his return from the first three months' campaign he rendered valuable service to the government in recruiting volunteers for the army, and was for several months the commanding officer in charge of the recruiting camp at Reedville, Mass. Offering himself for duty in one of the regiments about to leave Massachusetts for the front, he was three times promised a command, only to be deprived of it by partisan intrigue. Then, resigning his commission, he went to New York and Philadelphia, engaging in business in both cities for a time; finally going to Baltimore, where he kept a hotel for several years. After an absence of twelve years he returned to Marblehead, and resumed his former occupation as a baker. In the winter of 1886 Captain Boardman received a very complimentary vote from the Democrats of the Massachusetts Legislature for sergeant-at-arms of that body. At the annual State election of the same year he was elected by the people of Marblehead as their representative in the General Court, serving during the session of 1887 so acceptably that on his re-nomination for the office he was re-elected by a largely increased majority. He is now serving his second term as a member of the Massachusetts House of Representatives.

On the 19th of December, 1847, Captain Boardman was united in marriage to Miss Susanna G. Harris, of Marblehead.

## CHAPTER XCI.

### ROWLEY.

BY GEO. B. BLODGETTE, M. A.

THE town of Rowley, Mass., was founded in 1639, by the Reverend Ezekiel Rogers and his company. The original grant was from Ipswich on the south to Newbury on the north, and from the ocean on the east to the Merrimack river on the west.

Mr. Ezekiel Rogers was the son of the Rev. Richard Rogers, a distinguished Puritan, of Weatherfield, Essex county, England, was bred at Cambridge, where, in 1604, he was of Corpus Christi, when he was graduated as a Bachelor of Arts, and of Christ's College, in 1608, when graduated as Master of Arts.

After leaving the University he became chaplain in the family of Sir Francis Barrington, of Essex, exercising himself in ministerial duties for about a dozen years.

He then was called to a public charge, at Rowley, in Yorkshire, where he continued with great favor for about seventeen years, when he was compelled to relinquish his charge—as he tells the story in his will, “for refusing to read that accursed book that allowed sports on God's holy Sabbath, or Lord's day, I was suspended, and, by it and other sad signs of the times, driven, with many of my hearers, into New England.”

The landing was made at Salem, Mass., in the au-

tumn of 1638, and the new town founded in April, 1639—the act of incorporation reading as follows:

“The 4th Day of the 7th Month (September) 1639, Mr. Ezekiel Rogers' plantation shalbee called Rowley.”

Mr. Rogers was a man of great note in England for his piety and ability; while the members of the company he brought with him to Rowley, were called, by Gov. Winthrop, “Godly men, and most of them of good estate.”

In the tract set off to Rogers' Company several farms had been laid out; these were purchased by the company for £800. The purchase money was contributed by such as were able to pay, and in the laying out of house lots, all who paid nothing were given one acre and one half, while those who paid were given lots in proportion to the amount they contributed. The distinction became more apparent when the rule of the assignment of rights—called “gates”—in the commons is known.

One and one-half acre house-lot was entitled to one and one half gates.

A two acre lot to four and one-half gates.

A three acre lot to thirteen and one-half gates.

A four acre lot to twenty-two and one-half gates.

A six acre lot to forty-five gates.

The time of laying out the several house-lots is unknown. On the 10th of Eleventh Month, 1643, Mr. Thomas Nelson, Mr. Edward Carlton, Humphrey Reynier and Francis Parrat, appointed by the town for that purpose, made a survey of the town and registered the lots to all the inhabitants as granted and laid out. The names of the fifty-nine persons to whom house-lots were registered in this survey, together with a brief account of each, is here given.

1. GEORGE ABRIOT, two acres. No further mention of him is found of record. The will of his son Thomas, dated 5th of Seventh Month, 1659, and a deed recorded with the Essex Deeds 1 Ipswich, 625, show four sons old enough to have been brought with him in 1639.

2. WILLIAM ACY, two acres. Had wife Margaret and four children all brought with him 1639. His death is not of record. He made his will 22d of April, 1689, “being very aged;” it was proved 30th of September, 1690. (Essex Probate).

3. THOMAS BARKER, four acres. Freeman, 13th of May, 1640. Had wife Mary, no children. He was buried 30th of Nov., 1650. His will was proved 25th of First Month, 1651.

4. JAMES BARKER, one acre and one-half. Freeman, 7th of October, 1640. Had eight children. Buried 7th of September, 1678. His will, dated 3d of Seventh Month, 1678, proved 24th of September, 1678, mentions himself as “born at Stragewell, in Low Suffolk, in old England.” (Essex Probate).

5. WILLIAM BELLINGHAM, four acres. No mention of wife or children. Freeman, 12th of October, 1640. His will was proved 24th of Seventh Month, 1650. Death not of record. He was brother of Gov. Richard Bellingham.

6. MATTHEW BOYES, two acres. Freeman 22d May, 1639. He was deacon of our church December 3, 1639. Had wife Elizabeth; ten children born here. He went back to England, and in 1661 was of Leeds, and about fifty-two years old.



7. WILLIAM BOYNTON, one acre and one half. Was about fifty-six years old in 1652. Had wife Elizabeth and seven children. Died December 8, 1686.

8. JOHN BOYNTON, one acre and one half. Was brother of William above. About forty-eight years old in 1662. Had wife Ellen (or Ellenor) and seven children. Buried February 18, 1670-1. His will was dated February 8, 1670, and proved March 28, 1671.

9. EDMUND BRIDGES, one acre and one half. Was a blacksmith. Sold out and moved to Ipswich in 1644. Had wife Alice. One child born here.

10. SEBASTIAN BRIGHAM, four acres, was captain of the first military company. Had wife Mary. Returned to England before 1657. Four children born here.

11. WIDOW JANE BROCKLEBANK, two acres. Brought with her two sons. Buried December 26, 1668.

12. JOHN BURBANK, one acre and one half. Death not of record. Will dated April 5, 1681, proved April 10, 1681, mentions himself as being "aged & decreped." Had wife Jemima and five children. Descendant in male line now residing here.

13. EDWARD CARLTON three acres. Had wife Ellen and four children. Returned to England.

14. HUGH CHAPLIN, one acre and one half. Had wife Elizabeth and four children. Buried 22d of First Month, 1653.

15. PETER COOPER, one acre and one half. Had wife Emma (or Ame) and four children. Buried January 15, 1667-68. Will dated January 3, 1667-68, proved March 31, 1668.

16. WIDOW CONSTANCE CROSBY, one acre and one half. She was buried January 25, 1683-84. Four children.

17. THOMAS DICKINSON, one acre and one half. Had wife Jennet and six children. Buried 29th of First Month, 1662. Will dated March 8, 1661-62, proved April 17, 1662. Descendant in male line now here.

18. JOHN DRESSER, one acre and one half. Had wife Mary and six children. Buried April 19, 1672. Will dated March 5, 1671-72. Descendants in male line now here.

19. THOMAS ELITHORP, one acre and one half. Had wife Abigail and four children. Death not of record. His widow petitioned the General Court for probate of his will May 14, 1654.

20. WIDOW JANE GRANT, one acre and one half. Death not of record. In the settlement of the estate of her son an affidavit was filed in Essex Probate containing so much of history of the family, that it is copied in full as follows: "I Sam<sup>l</sup> Stickney S<sup>c</sup> of Bradford do testify & say That I came over from England to New England in the same ship w<sup>th</sup> Thomas Grant & Jane Grant his Wife, who brought over w<sup>th</sup> them Four Children, by name John, Hannah, Frances, & Ann, whom I was well acquainted

with, & next or near neighbours unto in Rowley. And y<sup>e</sup> said John being deceased, I do affirm that the Sisters of John Grant above named, now by marriage known by y<sup>e</sup> names of Hannah Browne, Frances Keyes, & Ann Emerson are y<sup>e</sup> same y<sup>t</sup> came over w<sup>th</sup> their Father & Mother, & by them owned w<sup>th</sup> said John for their children." Sworn to July 20, 1698.

21. JOHN HARRIS, two acres. Freeman May 26, 1647. Brought with him wife Bridget. Had six children. Died "aged" February 15, 1694-95. Will dated January 8, 1691-92, proved March 27, 1695.

22. THOMAS HARRIS, two acres. Moved to Ipswich with his wife Martha 1644.

23. WILLIAM HARRIS, two acres. Had wife Edee or Edith. One child born here. Moved to Middle-town, Conn., about 1652.

24. ROBERT HASELTINE, two acres. Freeman May 13, 1640. Married 23d of Tenth Month, 1639, Anna —, being the first couple married here. One of the three first settlers of Bradford, where he died August 27, 1674. Will dated October 25, 1673; proved September 29, 1674. Ten children.

25. JOHN HASELTINE, two acres. Brother of Robert above. Had wife Jane and four children. One of the three first settlers of Bradford. Died in Haverhill, December 23, 1690, aged about 70 years. Will dated August 17, 1689; proved March 31, 1691.

26. MICHAEL HOPKINSON, one acre and one half. Was admitted to the First Church in Boston 6th of Eleventh Month, 1638; dismissed to "y<sup>e</sup> gathering of a church at Rowley," 24th of Ninth Month, 1639; freeman May 13, 1640. Had wife Ann and five children. Buried February 28, 1648-49.

27. ROBERT HUNTER, two acres. Freeman October 7, 1640. Had wife Mary; no children. Buried 5th of Sixth Month, 1647. Will dated 5th of Sixth Month, 1647. (Essex Deeds, 1 Ipswich, 87.)

28. WILLIAM JACKSON, one acre and one half. Had wife Joan and four children. Buried May 5, 1688.

29. JOHN JARRAR, two acres. Freeman May 13, 1640. Had wife Susannah and one child. Buried 11th of Twelfth Month, 1647. Will dated 11th of Eleventh Month, 1647; proved 27th of Seventh Month, 1648.

30. MAXIMILIAN JEWETT, two acres. Son of Edward and Mary (Taylor) Jewett, of Bradford, England. Baptized in Bradford, England, October 4, 1607. Freeman May 13, 1640; very early a deacon of the church. Had wife Ann and nine children. Died October 19, 1684. Will dated 17th of Eighth Month, 1684; proved 25th of Ninth Month, 1684. Is on file in office of Clerk of Courts, Salem, Vol. XLIII, page 46.

31. JOSEPH JEWETT, two acres. Brother of Maximilian above and baptized in Bradford, England, December 31, 1609. Freeman May 22, 1639. Brought with him wife Mary Mallinson, whom he married in





Bradford, England, October 1, 1634. Had nine children. Buried February 26, 1660-61. Will dated February 15, 1660; proved March 26, 1661, and on file in Essex Probate.

32. GEORGE KILBOURNE, one acre and one half. Freeman May 13, 1640. He was a son of Thomas and baptized at Wood Ditton, County Cambridge, England, February 12, 1612. Had wife Elizabeth and six children. Died October 14, 1685.

33. FRANCIS LAMBERT, two acres. Freeman May 13, 1640. Had wife Jane and six children. Buried September 23, 1647. Will dated September 20, 1647; proved 28th of First Month, 1648. Descendants in male line now living here.

34. THOMAS LEAVER, one acre and one half; "linen weaver." Married September 1, 1613, Mary Bradley. Had four children. Died December 26, and was buried December 27, 1683. No will.

35. THOMAS LINTFORTH, one acre and one half. Moved to Haverhill before 1649. On Haverhill records he is called "Linforth."

35. THOMAS MIGHILL, three acres. Was first of Roxbury, probably in 1637, thence to Rowley, where he was ordained deacon December 3, 1639, of the church then formed. Freeman May 13, 1640. He brought with him wife Ellen, who was buried July 12, 1640, and the first person buried here. He married second, Ann Parrat, sister of Francis Parrat. The date of his burial, of record, is 14th of Fifth Month, 1654, but as the inventory of his estate was taken June 24, 1654, doubtless the true date of burial is 14th of Fourth Month, 1654. Will dated June 11, 1654; proved 27th of First Month, 1655. Nine children. Descendants in male line now in Rowley.

36. JOHN MILLER, two acres. Was a minister and assistant to the Rev. Mr. Rogers, and first town clerk. Freeman May 22, 1639. Had wife Lydia and one child of record here. Moved to Yarmouth 1641, thence to Groton, where he died June 12, 1663.

37. THOMAS MILLER, one acre and one half. Was licensed to draw wine 1647, paying fifteen shillings annually. In 1661 he was of Rowley, with wife Isabel, and was then a carpenter. Soon removed to Middletown, Conn.

38. THOMAS NILSON, six acres. Freeman May 23, 1639. The wealthiest of Rogers' Company. He married here a second wife, Jane Dummer. Brought with him two children; second wife had two. Went to England on business and there died August 6, 1648. Will dated December 24, 1645; proved 21st of Tenth Month, 1649. Descendants in male line now in Rowley.

39. JOHN NEWMARCH, two acres. Was first of Ipswich, to which place he soon returned.

40. THOMAS PALMER, one acre and one half. Had wife Ann and three children. Death not of record. Will dated August 2, 1669; proved September 23, 1669.

41. FRANCIS PARRAT, two acres. Freeman May 13,

1640. Had wife Elizabeth and seven children. Was town clerk and deacon of the church. Went to England on business and there died in 1656. His will, dated November 18, 1655, proved September 30, 1656, mentions himself as "intending to take a journey to England."

42. JOHN REMINGTON, two acres. Freeman 22d of Third month, 1639. He was first of Newbury. Lieut. of the military company. Brought his wife, Elizabeth; had five children born here; sold out and left town in June, 1659.

43. HUMPHREY REYNER, three acres. Was "Ruling Elder" of the church from its formation and the only elder of record. He was born at Gildersome, in West Riding of Yorkshire, near Leeds. Brought with him wife Mary and three daughters. Buried 14 Sept. 1660. Will dated Sept. 10, 1660.

44. REV. EZEKIEL ROGERS, six acres. He was the founder and first minister of Rowley.

45. HENRY SANDYS (called Sands in town record), two acres. Was dismissed from the first church in Boston "to ye gathering of a church at Rowley" 24th of Ninth Month, 1639; freeman October 7, 1640. Brought with him wife Sybil; had two children born here. Returned to Boston before 1647.

46. EDWARD SAWYER, one acre and one-half. Had wife, Mary, and four children. Buried March 9, 1673-74. His nuncupative will was sworn to March 31, 1674.

47. WILLIAM SCALES, one acre and one-half. Freeman May 13, 1640. Had wife, Ann, and two (perhaps three) children. Buried July 10, 1682.

48. WIDOW MARGERY SHOVE, two acres. She was the mother of the Rev. George Shove, who was ordained and settled at Taunton November 16, 1665.

She sold her lot to Elder Reyner before 1661. I have heard a traditional story that her husband was a minister and intended assistant to the Rev. Mr. Rogers; that he died on the voyage from England, and Mr. John Miller was employed in his stead.

49. HUGH SMITH, one acre and one half. Freeman 18th of Third Month, 1642. Brought with him wife, Mary, and had six children. Death not of record. Will dated 19th of Ninth month, 1655, proved 26th of First month, 1656.

50. JOHN SPOFFORD, one acre and one-half. Full genealogy in Historic Gen. Register, vol. viii., page 335.

51. MARGARET STANTON, one acre, and the only lot of less than one acre and one-half laid out. No further mention of her found save this entry in the town record, "Anno 1646, Margaret Stanton, buried the Second Moneth, the 15th day."

52. WILLIAM STICKNEY, one acre and one-half. See "The Stickney Family, a Genealogical Memoir of the descendants of William and Elizabeth Stickney, from 1637 to 1869. By Matthew Adams Stickney, Salem, Mass., 1869."

53. THOMAS SUMNER, one acre and one-half. The





only further mention of him found is a petition and inventory on file in the office of the clerk of courts for Essex as follows:

"Petition of Robert Coates, Sr., of Lynn, and Jane Coates, his wife and daughter of George Sumner, who died by Small-Pox some forty years since, in Rowley, for administration of estate of Thomas Sumner, her brother, who married and died without issue; his wife is also dead, she having married twice, and said Jane is only heir living, she being about ten years old when her father died. To the Court to be held 1st Tuesday November, 1691.

"Inventory of above estate amounting to £106, returned by Robert Coates, administrator, 3 November, 1691. ('Historical Collections,' Essex Institute, Vol. V., page 141)."

54. RICHARD SWAN, two acres. Was admitted to the first church in Boston, 6th of Eleventh Month, 1638; dismissed to "y<sup>e</sup> gathering of a church at Rowley, 24th of Ninth Month, 1639; "Freeman, May 13, 1640; brought with him wife Ann, and here married Ann, widow of John Trumble; had eight children; buried May 14, 1678; will dated April 25, 1678, proved May 23, 1678.

55. THOMAS TENNEY, one acre and one-half. Brought with him wife Ann; had six children; died in Bradford, February 20, 1699-1700. Descendants in male line now in Rowley.

56. RICHARD THORLEY (now Thurlow), two acres. Sold out, and in 1651 was of Newbury with wife Jane.

57. JOHN TRUMBLE, one acre and one-half. Freeman, 18th of Third Month, 1640; brought with him wife Ellen; he married, second, Sixth Month, 1650, Ann, widow of Michael Hopkinson; he had seven children, and was buried 18th of Fifth Month, 1657; his family received pay from the town for his "keeping of a scoole."

58. RICHARD WICOM, one acre and one-half. Had wife Ann and three children; buried January 27, 1663-64; no will.

59. WILLIAM WILD, one acre and one-half. He was first of Ipswich, and again of Ipswich in 1661, and probably earlier.

In 1649 Mr. Thomas Nelson had erected a saw-mill where Glen Mills now are, and soon after, certainly as early as 1643, he added a grist-mill.

John Pearson came about this time with quite a company, and erected, near Mr. Nelson's grist-mill, a fulling-mill, the first in this country.

Many of the first settlers were weavers. Johnson, in his "Wonder-Working Providence" (London, 1654) says of the Rowley people:

"These people being industrious every way, soon built many houses, to the number of about three score families, and were the first that set upon making Cloth in this Western World; for which end they built a fulling mill, and caused their little ones to be very diligent in spinning cotton-wool, many of them having been clothiers in England."

Gov. Winthrop, under date of 12th of Fourth month, 1613, says: "Our supplies from England falling much men began to look about them, and fell to a manufacture of cotton; wherein, we had a store from Brittaines, and of hemp and flax; wherein Rowley, to their great commendation, exceeded all other towns."

Before 1660 other families appear of record as residents—some had come with Mr. Rogers as minors,

others to work about the mills. Few of them were given rights in the commonage.

The following are all the new comers who appear to have actually resided here before 1660.

1. JAMES BAILEY, 1644; had wife Lydia and eight children; was fifty-one years old 1663; buried August 10, 1677; will dated August 8, 1677, proved September 25, 1677. Descendants in male line now resident in Rowley.

2. RICHARD BAILEY, 1644; brother of James above. See "Historical and Genealogical Researches" by Alfred Poore, also "Reminiscences of a Nonagenarian" by Sarah A. Emery, page 139, and "Northend Family," Historical Collections of Essex Institute, Vol. XII.

3. SAMUEL BELLINGHAM, son of Governor Richard Bellingham, of Boston, and nephew of William Bellingham (above). Had wife, Lucy. Moved away July 23, 1650.

4. REV. JOHN BROCK, Harvard College, 1646; was assistant to Mr. Rogers from 1648 to 1650.

5. CHARLES BROWNE, 1647; had wife, Mary, daughter of William Aey, and nine children. Buried December 16, 1687. Will recorded with Essex Deeds, 5 Ipswich, 303.

6. THOMAS BURKBY (now Burpee), 1651; had six children. Died June 1, 1701.

7. RICHARD CLARK married here, Sixth Month, 1643, Alice ———; the second couple married in town. Had five children. Death not of record. Will dated February 7, 1673-74, proved March 31, 1674.

8. THOMAS COLMAN, 1653, then a minor, was a son of Thomas Colman, of Newbury. Removed to Newbury about 1673.

9. ISAAC COLESENS, 1644, blacksmith. He bought the rights of Edmund Bridges, and 30th of First Month, 1652, sold the same to John Pickard and removed to Haverhill.

10. MARGARET CROSSE, "a widdowe," admitted to the First Church in Boston 6th of Eleventh Month, 1638; mentioned 5th of Sixth Month, 1647, in the will of Robert Hunter as of our church; also mentioned 1650 in the will of William Bellingham. No other mention of her is found. Perhaps she married John Palmer.

11. THOMAS CROSBY, 30th of Second Month, 1656. Had wife, Jane. Came from Cambridge, Mass. He was buried May 6, 1661.

12. JEREMIAH ELLSWORTH, 1657; had three children. Died May 6, 1704. Descendants in male line are now residents here.

13. LEONARD HARRIMAN, 1650; had wife, Margaret, and five children. Died May 6, 1691. Will proved September 29, 1691.

14. DANIEL HARRIS, 1651, wheelwright; had wife, Mary, and one child. Moved to Middletown, Conn., in 1652.

15. EDWARD HAZEN (see full genealogy in "Historic Gen. Register," Vol. 33, page 229).



16. ANDREW HIDDEN, 1654, was about forty years old in 1662; had wife, Sarah, and twelve children. Died February 18, 1702 (Town Record); February 29, 1701-02, "an old man" (Church Record). Will dated February 18, 1701-02; proved April 1, 1702.

17. JOHN HILL, 1646. "At a Towne Meeting held twentie third of the second moneth 1651 It was granted by Towne that the parcel of ground which was Given unto John hill vpon Condition of his abiding in the towne and doinge service thering he beeing now removed from the towne should be henceforth Thomas burkbees he satisfieing John hill for the cost of fence and Agreeing with the select men for the ground" (Town Record Book No. 1, page 154).

18. WILLIAM HOBSON, 1652, was son of Henry and from Yorkshire, England; married 12th of Ninth Month, 1752, Ann, daughter of Elder Humphrey Reyner. Had three children. Buried July 17, 1659. Descendants in male line are now residents here.

19. RICHARD HOLMES, 1644, millwright, was eighty-eight years old March, 1692. Had wife, Alice, and eight children. Death not of record. Will dated July 15, 1695; proved January 13, 1695-96.

20. NICHOLAS JACKSON, 1645; had four children. Died February 13, 1697-98. Descendants in male line now live here.

21. ROBERT JOHNSON, JR., 1649, son of Robert Johnson, who came with Mr. Rogers, but settled in New Haven, Conn. Death not of record. Will dated 12th of Seventh Month, 1649; proved 26th of First Month, 1650. Legacy to poor in the church.

22. JOHN JOHNSON, 1650, brother of Robert Johnson, Sr., mentioned above; came with Rogers' company, but first sat down at New Haven. Had wife, Hannah, and five children; was captain of the military company. Died January 29, 1685-86. No will.

23. HENRY KINGSBURY was of Ipswich, 1648, of Rowley 1656 and '63, and of Haverhill 1668.

24. ABEL LANGLEY, 1647; had three children, all by his third wife. In a deed dated October 7, 1693, beginning "Joseph Quilter of Ipswich. . . in behalfe of his cousin Abell Langley who dwells with him, son of Abel Langley of Rowley, deceased." Quilter is called executor of the will of Abel Langley, deceased. I find no record of the will or death of Abel Langley.

25. WILLIAM LAW, 1645; had eight children. Buried March 30, 1668.

26. RICHARD LEIGHTON, 1650; had wife Mary and five children; buried June 2, 1682; will dated May 27; proved September 26, 1682.

27. RICHARD LONGHORNE, 1647; was about forty-five years old, 1662; had wife Mary and nine children. He died in Haverhill while there on business 12th of Twelfth Month, 1668; will dated February 19, 1668; proved March 30, 1669.

28. JEREMIAH NORTHEND came from Yorkshire, England, with Mr. Rogers' company, then but twelve

years old. He returned after a few years, and was buried in Rowley, England, April 14, 1702.

29. EZEKIEL NORTHEND (see full genealogy in Historical Collections of Essex Institute, Vol. XII).

30. JOHN PALMER, 1645; married Ruth, daughter of William Aey; and for second wife married Margaret Northend, sister of Ezekiel above. Had six children; he was about seventy years old, 1693, and died "aged" June 17, 1695; will dated August 23, 1693; proved July 1, 1695.

31. JOHN PEARSON, 1644; had wife Dorcas and thirteen children; was ordained deacon of our church October 21, 1686, and died December 22, 1693.

32. REV. SAMUEL PHILLIPS, 1651; settled colleague with the Rev. Mr. Rogers as second minister of Rowley; had wife Sarah and nine children; died April 22, 1696; will on file in Essex Probate.

33. JOHN PICKARD, 1644, "carpenter." His mother, widow Ann Lume, died here March 19, 1661-62. He had wife Jane and eight children; buried September 24, 1683. An abstract of his will is printed in Historical Collections of Essex Institute, Vol. IV, page 20. Descendants in male line now in Rowley.

34. SAMUEL PLATES, 1654; had wife Sarah and six children. I find no record of his death or settlement of his estate. His widow married April 9, 1690.

35. JONATHAN PLATES, 1655; cousin of Samuel Platts above; had wife Elizabeth and eight children; buried July 18, 1680; will proved September 28, 1680.

36. MARK PRIME, 1645; had wife Ann and two children; buried December 21, 1683 (see Essex Probate Book 4 leaf 76 for his will); descendants in male line now live in Rowley.

37. JACHIN REYNER, 1651; nephew of Elder Humphrey and son of John, of Plymouth. Had wife Elizabeth and six children; died July 8, 1708; will dated July 1, 1708; proved August 2, 1708.

38. HENRY RILEY, 1656; was the village blacksmith; died May 24, 1710, "in his eighty-second year" (grave-stone); "not in full communion" (church record); no children; will in Essex Probate, Book 10, leaf 123.

39. DANIEL ROUSE had in 1652 an estate valued for taxation £19, 10s. 0d. He soon left town.

40. JOHN SCALES, 1650; had wife Susanna and one child; buried January 12, 1683-84; will dated January 9, 1683-84; proved March 27, 1684.

41. BENJAMIN SCOTT, 1651. Brought with him his wife Margaret. She was the Widow Margaret Scott who was executed in Salem September 22, 1692, as guilty of certain detestable arts called "Witchcraft and Sorceries." He had nine children; death not of record; will dated June 6, 1671; proved September 26, 1671; inventory taken July 14, 1671.

42. HENRY SEWALL; a very early settler; the ancestor of three chief justices of our highest court; he was buried the "First Month, 1656."





43. JOHN SMITH, 1649; married Faith Parrat, sister of Francis Parrat; had three children, and was buried 19th of Fifth Month, 1661; will dated July 13, 1661; proved November 14, 1661.

44. HENRY SMITH was taxed here 1652-53, when his estate was valued £15, 3s. 4d. I find no other mention of him except the inventory of his estate taken 16th of First Month, 1655; personal property amounted to £14, 3s. 0d.; no real estate.

45. WILLIAM TENNEY, 1645; ordained deacon of our church February 3, 1667-68; had wife Katherine and six children; died August 5, 1685; will dated August 3, 1685.

46. JOHN TILLISON, 1645; had removed to Newbury in 1651.

47. JOHN TODD, 1648; had wife Susannah and ten children; he kept the "Ordinary;" died February 14, 1689-90; will dated February 13, 1689-90; proved March 25, 1690; descendants in male line now in Rowley.

48. THOMAS WOOD, 1654; had wife Ann and eleven children; buried September 12, 1687.

49. JOSEPH WORMWELL, 1642; lived a short time on a parcel of ground belonging to Thomas Nelson; not identified with our people and soon removed; had, while here, wife Miriam and one child; he died in Scituate.

As time advanced, a doubt existed as to the ownership of the several rights apportioned to the households, so that in 1661 the second survey was taken of the commonages and entered of record, a true copy of which, taken from the "Book with Clasps," is as follows:

[Page 83.]

A Survey of the Several Gates or commonages belonging unto The Several Inhabitants of The Towne of Rowley as They are now in possession having bene Transferred and sold from one to another since the beginning of the said Towne and so directed from that first order and state that was then made whereby they were proportioned unto the Several Lots according to the purchase and division that then was made.

By order and appointment of The Towne Taken By the Selectmen, Richard Swan, Thomas Tenney, Abell Latchey, John Dwyer, John Boscawen, with Samuel Boscawen, surveying with them upon the fourth of february, 1661, that there may be a true Record of them according to their present state they now are in, which is as follows:

In Primis The Towne did Grant and Give unto Mr. Samuel Phillips upon The said Towne Commons, Nine Gates.

There belongeth To William Ayre, his Lot foure Gates and one halfe; and more That he purchased of Mr. Joseph Jewett, Two one Gates, purchased of the town, one gate and one halfe gate.

To James Payley his Lot and halfe a gate purchased of the Towne Two Gates; purchased of Mr. Joseph Jewett, of them that belongeth to Mr. William Bellinghams lot, Two Gates and a halfe; purchased of Mr. Jewett as belongeth To Mr. Edward Carlton's lot, One Gate; purchased of the Towne, one half a gate.

To Thomas Leaver his lot and halfe one Gate; he purchased of the town Two Gates; purchased of Mr. Joseph Jewett, of them that belongeth to Mr. William Bellinghams lot, one Gate; and of Mr. Jewett's own property, Two Gates; also purchased of Mr. Anthony Crosbie, one Gate.

To John Palmer as to a halfe Two Acre lot, Two Gates And one quarter; purchased of Mr. Joseph Jewett, of them that belonged to Mr. William Bellinghams lot, Two Gates; purchased of Mr. Sewell, Senior,

One Gate; purchased of Darnell Harris, One Gate; And of William Hobson, halfe One Gate; purchased of the town, one quarter of a gate.

To William Tenney as to his Acre and halfe lot and halfe a gate purchased of the town, two gates . . . 2 Gates

Purchased of Mr. Edward Carlton that he had of the town for consideration of money lent . . . 1 Gate

William and Thomas Tenney, purchased of Mr. Phillip Nelson . . . 2 gates

And of John Harris, one; and of Thomas Crosbie, one . . . 2 gates

William purchased of the Towne one gate . . . 1 gate

[Page 84.]

To Richard Holmes as belonging to a half two Acre lot, two gates and one quarter; and a quarter purchased of the town . . . 2 and halfe

Purchased of Mr. Edward Carlton, that Mr. Jewett as his Attorney sold halfe one Gate . . . One halfe

Purchased of John Jonson, of Richard Thurley's propriety . . . 2 gates

To John Jonson left of his two Acre lot that was Richard Thurley's, One Gate and a halfe . . . 1 halfe

And as belonging to the lot that was Edward Bridges Purchased of the Towne One Gate . . . 1 Gate

To Edward Hassen his halfe two Acre lot that he purchased of John Smith, two gates and one quarter . . . 2 one quarter

purchased of John Tod one Gate . . . 1 Gate

purchased of the town one, and of Thomas Crosbie one . . . 2 gates

purchased of Thomas Nelson one, and one that he had of the town for land laid downe . . . 2 gates

To George Kilborne as belonging to his Acre and halfe lot, and halfe a gate purchased of the town as also one gate he had for land laid down at New plaine . . . 1

purchased of Mr. Jewett by exchange of village land . . . 2

To Thomas Palmer as to his Acre and halfe lot and halfe a Gate purchased of the town . . . 2 Gates

purchased of Mr. Phillip Nelson, one Gate . . . 1

purchased of Thomas Nelson, two Gates . . . 2

To Richard Longhorne as to a halfe two Acre lot purchased of John Newmarck, two Gates and one quarter . . . 2 and quar

purchased of Mr. Phillip Nelson, one Gate . . . 1

purchased of Samuel Mighill, two Gates . . . 2

purchased of The Towne, three quarters of one gate . . . 3 quarters

To Abraham Jewett as purchased of Thomas Nelson, Two Gates . . . 2 gates

purchased of the town, one Gate . . . 1 gate

To Thomas Nelson as Reserved to himselfe, Seven Gates and one quarter . . . 7 quarter

[Page 85.]

To John Pickard as belonging to the two Acre lot that was of Crosbie's, four Gates and one halfe . . . 4 halfe

also as to the privilege belonging to one acre and halfe lot Given by the town to Isaac Cousins and what the said Isaac purchased of the town, two gates and one halfe . . . 2 halfe

To Richard Clarke as to an acre and halfe lot that he purchased of Thomas Elathrope, one gate and halfe . . . 1 halfe

purchased of the town, one gate and one halfe gate . . . 1 halfe

To William Law as belonging to a halfe two Acre lot that he purchased of John Newmarck, two gates and one quarter . . . 2 quarter

purchased of the Towne three quarters of one gate . . . 3 quarters

To John Burbanke as to his Acre and halfe lot and halfe a gate purchased of the town, two gates . . . 2 Gates

purchased of Mr. Phillip Nelson, four Gates . . . 4 gates



To Leonard Harriman as belonging to the Acre and half lot that was John Spored's, and what was purchased of the town, two Gates.....	2 Gates
purchased of Ezekiel Northend, three Gates.....	3 Gates
To Thomas Burkle, as purchased of Mr. Joseph Jewett, three Gates.....	3 Gates
To Ezekiel Northend as belong to a half two Acre lot purchased of Thomas Harris, and a half two Acre lot purchased of John Harris, four and a half; purchased of Francis parrot, one gate; purchased of Mr. Anthony Crosbie, four and a half; purchased of Daniel Harris, one gate; purchased of William Hobson, one gate; purchased of Thomas Nelson, one; purchased of Mr. Philip Nelson, one; and purchased of Thomas Miller, three, two of which three the said miller purchased of Mr. Jewett; all these seventeen gates appeared under hand and seal, of from which the said Ezekiel hath sold to several men, see that there is left Remaining unto himself Eleven Gates.....	11 Gates

[Page 86.]

To Andrew Hiden as by hand made downe by way of exchange the which land was given by the towne unto the said Andrew, one gate; purchased one gate of Daniell Rouse.....	2 Gates
To Thomas Dickinson as belonging to a two acre lot four gates and one half.....	4 halfe
purchased of William Hobson, two Gates.....	2
purchased of Mr. Philip Nelson, one gate.....	1
To Charles Browne as to a one acre and half lot and given by the towne to be at cost to beate the drum for the benefit of the towne, two Gates.....	2 gates
purchased of the Towne, one Gate.....	1 gate
To vxor mighill as Remaining to her of a three Acre lot, nine Gates and one half.....	9 halfe
To vxor smith as to a two Acre lot that was purchased of Mr. John Miller, four Gates and one half.....	4 halfe
purchased of Mr. Jewett, one Gate and a half.....	1 halfe
To John Trumble, one gate that was given to his father in Relation to keeping of a scollie.....	1 gate
purchased of the towne, one gate.....	1 gate
To Abell Langley as to a two Acre lot given him by Robert Hunter, four Gates and one half.....	4 halfe
purchased of Mr. Jewett, one Gate and a half.....	1 halfe
To Nicholas Jackson as given by the towne, one gate, and two gates that he had by his wife [Widow of Hugh Chaplin] that were purchased of Thomas Miller Acre and half lot.....	3 gates
purchased of the Towne, two gates.....	2 Gates
To Thomas Tenney as to a one acre and half lot and one gate given by the towne, two and a half.....	2 halfe
purchased of Francis parrot, one gate.....	1 gate
purchased of the towne, one half gate.....	halfe gate

[Page 87.]

To Elizabeth Tenney, alias parrot, as belonging to Francis parrot a two two Acre lot, seven gates vsuold.....	7 Gates
purchased of William Hobson, six gates.....	6 gates
To William Jackson as to his Acre and half lot and purchased of the towne, two gates.....	2 Gates
purchased of Mr. Joseph Jewett, one gate.....	1 Gate
purchased of the Towne, one Gate.....	1 Gate
To Thomas Wood as purchased of Nehemiah Jewett a garden, with the house that sometimes was Mr. William Bellingham's, two gates.....	2 gates
purchased of the Towne, one Gate.....	1 Gate
To Henry Royley as given by the towne, two gates purchased of Mr. Anthony Crosbie, two gates.....	2 gates

To John Grant as Given by the Towne to his mother Jane Grant, one Gate.....	1 Gate
purchased of The Towne, one Gate.....	1 Gate
To Edward Sawyer as Given by the Towne, one Gate purchased of The Towne, two Gates.....	1 Gate 2 Gates
To Richard Swan as belonging to his two Acre lot four gates and one half gate.....	4 halfe
and as by purchase of one acre and half lot of Thomas Lalborth, one gate and one half gate.....	1 and halfe
purchased of Mr. Thomas Nelson one gate, given the said Mr. Nelson by the towne for forbearance of money lent for the use of the towne.....	1 Gate
and as by priviledge of marriage belonging to one acre and half lot and half a gate purchased of the towne that were John Trumble's 2 gates, as also one Gate more the said John Trumble purchased of Mr. Joseph Jewett.....	3 Gates
also as to the half two Acre lot that was maceall Hobkinson's, two Gates and three quarters.....	2 and 3 quarters

[Page 88.]

To John Tol as to one half two Acre lot that he purchased of William Harris Resuold vsuold one gate and one quarter of a gate.....	1 and quarter
and for hand purchased of Mr. Carlton and exchanged with the towne for one gate.....	1 gate
purchased of the towne one Gate and three quarters of a gate.....	1-3 quarters
To Maximillion Jewett as to his two Acre lot, four Gates and one half gate.....	4 one halfe
purchased of Mr. Philip Nelson, one gate.....	1 Gate
purchased of Mr. Joseph Jewett, half one gate.....	halfe one gate
purchased of William Hobson and assured by his wife as administrator, one gate.....	1 Gate
To James Barker as to his Acre and half lot and half one gate purchased of the towne, two gates purchased of William wild as to his acre and half lot, two gates.....	2 gates 2 gates
purchased of Daniell Harris, two gates.....	2 gates
and by exchange of land with the towne, one gate.....	1 gate
To John Pearson as purchased of the towne, one gate.....	1 gate
purchased of Thomas wood, two Gates.....	2 gates
purchased of Thomas Crosbie that belonged to John Heseltine's lot, two Gates.....	2 gates
also purchased and enjoyed by lease from Mr. Richard Dunmer, of Mr. Thomas Nelson's propriety belonging to Mr. Nelson's children in England, Mr. Dunmer being executor, four Gates.....	4 Gates
To John Mighill as purchased of Ezekiel Northend one gate; purchased of Mr. Jewett one Gate; purchased of Thomas Nelson one gate.....	3 Gates
To Dorothy Chapman as belonging to the half of a two acre lot was George Abbots, being the right of her former husband, Thomas Abbot, deceased, belonging to his property in the north east field two gates and one quarter of a gate.....	2 gates one quarter
and one gate that the said Thomas purchased of Mr. Joseph Jewett.....	1 Gate

[Page 89.]

To William Stickney as to his Acre and half lot and one half gate purchased of the towne two gates.....	2 gates
and as by gift from the towne one gate.....	1 gate
and more purchased of the towne, three gates.....	3 gates
To John Scalles as belonging to the two Acre lot that was John Jarratt, his by right of marriage, four gates and one half gate.....	4 one halfe
and as belonging to his owen Acre and half lot and half one purchased of the towne, two gates.....	2 gates
purchased of the Towne, one half Gate.....	halfe gate
To Mrs. Mary Rogers as belonging to the four acre lot, that was her former husband's, Thomas Barker, Twenty gates and one half gate.....	20 one halfe





To Richard Lighton as by gift from the towne one gate.....	1 gate
purchased of the Towne, one gate.....	1 gate
To John Bonten as belonging to his acre and halfe lot and halfe one gate purchased of the towne two gates.....	2 gates
purchased of the towne, two Gates.....	2 Gates
To Mr. Phillip Nelson as Reserved vnsould of his part of the propriety of Mr. Thomas Nelson's lot, his father deceased, eight gates and one quarter of a gate.....	8 gates one quarter
To William Scallies as to his acre and halfe lot and halfe one gate purchased of the towne two gates.....	2 gates
purchased of the Towne, one Gate.....	1 Gate
To Jacinb Rimer as belonging to the part of a two Acre lot he purchased of Leittenant John Remington four gates.....	4 gates
To Samuell Plats as purchased of Mr. Joseph Jewett three gates.....	3 gates
purchased of the Towne, one gate.....	1 Gate

[Page 90]

To marke prime as purchased of Mr. Phillip Nelson one gate; purchase of John Jenson belonging to Richard Thimley's lot one gate; purchased of Mr. Joseph Jewett of from McCarton's propriety, he being attorney, three gates.....	5 gates
To John Dreser as belonging to his Acre and halfe lot and purchased of the towne halfe a gate two gates.....	2 gates
purchased of the towne, two gates.....	2 Gates
To Samuell Brocklebanke as to a two Acre lot was his mother's, four gates and one halfe gate... as to a two acre lot he purchased of Mathew Boyes Reserved two gates and one halfe gate.....	4 one halfe 2 one halfe
purchased of Daniel Harris one gate.....	1 gate
To John Brocklebanke as purchased of Samuell Brocklebanke, two gates.....	2 gates
purchased of Leittenant John Remington, two gates.....	2 gates
purchased of The Towne, one gate.....	1 gate
To William Baynton as to his acre and halfe lot and one halfe gate purchased of the towne, two gates.....	2 gates
purchased of The Towne, two Gates.....	2 Gates
To Vxor Hobson as to a three Acre lot of her father's, Mr. humphray Ruiners, and to a two Acre lot he purchased of Mrs. Margery Shove eighteen gates.....	18 gates
and as Remaining vnsould of the right of a foure acre lot that her husband, wiham Hobson, purchased of Captaine Sebastian Pugham, twelve gates.....	12 gates
To mrs. Brocklebanke purchased of John Parmer that was of Mr. Nelson's propriety, two gates and one halfe gate.....	2 an halfe
To Mr. Ezekiel Rogers foure acre lot twenty-two Gates and one halfe gate.....	22 gates one halfe
To Samuell mighill Reserved of them he had of his father's propriety two gates; purchased of Mr. Joseph Jewett of the Right of Mr. William Belingham's lot, two gates.....	4 gates

[Page 91]

To John Harris as belonging to halfe two Acre lot two gates and one quarter; purchased of Ezekiel Northend that were Mr. Anthony Crosbie's two gates; purchased of Mr. Jewett one gate.....	5 one quarter 3 quarters
---	-----------------------------

To Jeremiah Elsworth as belonging to an Acre and halfe lot of high smith and halfe a gate purchased of the towne, two gates.....	2 gates
--	---------

purchased of Mr. Jewett assured by the excecutors two gates.....	2 gates
purchased of Thomas Nelson three gates.....	3 gates
To John Lambert as belonging to a two acre lot and one his father purchased of the towne five and a halfe.....	5 one halfe
purchased of Thomas Barker two gates.....	2 gates
purchased of the towne one halfe Gate.....	halfe gate
To petter Couper as belonging to his acre and halfe lot and halfe one gate purchased of the towne two gates.....	2 gates
purchased of Leittenant John Remington one gate.....	1 gate
purchased of the towne two Gates.....	2 Gates
To Richard Wickam his acre and halfe lot and one halfe Gate purchased of John Tod.....	2 Gates
and as from The towne for worke done for Mrs. Margery Shove when she was in her illness.....	2
To Jonathan Plats purchased of the Towne two Gates.....	2 Gates
1 To Daniell Wicom purchased of Thomas Lambert.....	2 Gates
To Daniell Wickam purchased of the Towne two Gates.....	2 Gates
1 To Daniell Wicom purchased of Thomas Remington.....	2 gates
To Thomas Remington purchased of The Towne two Gates.....	2 Gates
To Samuel Stickney purchased of The Towne two Gates.....	2 Gates

THE FIRST CHURCH.—Soon after the incorporation of the town a church was regularly gathered, and on the 3d of December, 1639, the Rev. EZEKIEL ROGERS was settled as pastor and the formal covenant adopted. Mr. Rogers brought with him his first wife, Sarah, daughter of John Everard, a citizen of London, who died in ten years; he married, second, Joan, a daughter of the Rev. John Wilson; she was buried on the 8th of May, 1649; he married, third, on the 16th of July, 1651, Mary, widow of Thomas Barker; she was buried on the 12th of February, 1678-79.

On the 10th of Third Month, 1643, Mr. Rogers preached the Election Sermon.

On the 5th of Eighth Month, 1647, he preached before the Synod at Cambridge.

In 1651, on the night of his marriage, his dwelling-house was burned, with his goods and the library he brought from England. Soon after, a fall from his horse so injured his right arm that it was ever after useless. Amid all these distressing calamities he held to his Christian fortitude and resignation. His house was rebuilt; his library replenished; his left hand substituted for the right; his ministerial labors were continued. But to him, as to the aged of to-day, the Golden Age is in the past; the wicked flourish like green bay-trees; even the servant-maids are an affliction, as shown by the following letter to his friend, the Rev. Zechariah Symms, of Charlestown:

"6th of the 12th month, 1657.

"DEAR BROTHER,—Though I have now done my errand in the other paper, yet methinks I am not satisfied to leave you so suddenly, so barely. Let us hear from you, I pray you. Both your ministry go on comfortably? Find you fruit of your labors? Are new converts brought in? Do your children and family grow more godly? I find greatest trouble and grief about the rising generation. Young people are little

<sup>1</sup> Interlined in different hand in original.





stirred here; but they strengthen one another in evil, by example, by council. Much ado I have with my own family; hard to get a servant that is glad of catechizing, or family duties. I had a rare blessing of servants in Yorkshire; and those I brought over were a blessing; but the young lived both much afflict me. Even the children of the godly, here and elsewhere, make a woful proof, so that I tremble to think what will become of this glorious work we have begun, when the ancient statute is gathered unto their fathers; I fear grace and blessing will die with them, if the Lord do not shew some sign of displeasure, even in our days. We grow worldly everywhere; methinks I see little godliness, but all in a hurry about the world, every one for himself; little care of public or common good. . . . Oh! that I might see some signs of good to the generations following, to send me away rejoicing! Thus I could weary you and myself, and my left hand, but I break off suddenly. O good brother, I thank God, I am near home; and you, too, are not far off. Oh! the weight of glory, that is ready waiting for us, God's poor exiles! We shall sit next the martyrs and confessors. Oh! the embraces, wherewith Christ will embrace us. . . .

"Your affectionate brother,

"EZEKIEL ROGERS."

It is said that a traveler, passing through the town, inquired of Mr. Rogers, "Are you, sir, the person who *serves* here?" Promptly came the reply, "I am, sir, the person who *rules* here."

Mr. Rogers died on the 23d of January, and was buried on the 26th of January, 1660-61 (not *June*, as appears on his present monument, erected 1851).

What he was to his people is truthfully shown in the inscription on the first monument erected in Rowley over his remains, which is as follows:

"Sacred to the memory of the Rev. Ezekiel Rogers, first minister of the gospel in Rowley, who emigrated from Britain to this place, with his church and flock, A.D. 1638. He finished his labors and life, January 23, 1661, in his seventieth year.

"He was a man of eminent piety, zeal, and abilities.

"His strains of oratory were delightful. Regeneration and union to Jesus Christ by faith were the points on which he principally insisted; he so remarkably described the feelings, exercises, motives, and characteristics of his hearers, that they were ready to exclaim, 'Who hath told him all this?' With the youth he took great pains, and was a tree of knowledge, laden with fruit, which the children could reach.

"He bequeathed a part of his lands to the town of Rowley, for the support of the gospel, which generous benefaction, we (in the first parish) enjoy to the present day; and here gratefully commemorate, by raising this monument to his memory, A.D. 1805."

The bequest above mentioned appears in his will as follows:

"Item. The rest of my estate in lands that are not given unto my wife during her natural life, that is, the land at planting hill, the land called Shatswell's ground, and all the rest, be it meadow, fresh or salt, or other land whatever, and one third part of gates or commons, I give to the church and town of Rowley."

A part of this gift still remains to the use of the church.

He also bequeathed to them other lands, as follows:

"First, I do bequeath and give to my well-beloved wife, Mary Rogers my dwelling-house, barn and all the out-houses, also, my orchard, gardens and the yard belonging and pasturage adjoining to the orchard on both sides of the brook, also, the hemp-yard, also the upper house-lot on the other side of the highway, with all the land and horse pasture adjoining to the same land; I give her also, six acres of meadow land, by the house of Ezekiel Northend, and my part of the ware-house pasture; also, I give her hay ground, salt and fresh, so much as my overseers shall judge sufficient to afford one year with another, thirty loads of hay, and where she shall choose it, and all this only for her natural life. . . .

All my houses, barn, and orchard, and all my lands, pastures and commons, and meadows, which I have given unto my wife, Mary Rogers, during her natural life, after her decease, I do bequeath and,

give unto the church and town of Rowley, to enable them the better to maintain two teaching elders in the church forever, and upon that condition, I do give them; the time which I allow them for the settling of an elder shall be four years; and so, from time to time, as God makes any changes either by death, or removal, or any other way; and in case that the church and town of Rowley fail of the conditions of providing themselves of two teaching elders, according to the time prefixed, that is, within four years after they have this to enable them the better, and so from time to time, within the said time of four years, after God, by His providence, has made any change, my will is that the above said house and lands shall be to the use of Harvard College, at Cambridge, in New England."

This condition was broken in 1700 for reasons given by the Rev. Mr. Payson below, and Harvard College took possession and sold the lands.

During Mr. Rogers' ministry Humphrey Reyner was the ruling elder, and the only person who has ever been appointed to the office in this church. The deacons were Thomas Mighill, Matthew Boyes, Maximilian Jewett and Francis Parrat. The Rev. John Miller assisted in the ministry during the first two years, and the Rev. John Brock assisted in 1648-50.

SAMUEL PHILLIPS, second minister, son of the Rev. George, of Watertown, born at Boxford, in Essex, England, 1625, came with his father in the "Arbella," 1630; was graduated at Harvard College, 1650; settled colleague with Mr. Rogers, June, 1651; died April 22, 1696. The many distinguished men in Massachusetts who have for generations made the name of Phillips illustrious are his descendants.

During the ministry of Mr. Phillips, when without a colleague, he was assisted by the Rev. Samuel Brackenbury for two years, and by Mr. Jeremiah Shepard, brother of the Rev. Samuel Shepard, for about three years. Samuel Brooklebank, William Tenney, John Pearson, John Trumble and Ezekiel Jewett were ordained deacons.

SAMUEL SHEPARD, third minister, son of the Rev. Thomas, of Cambridge, born October, 1641; was graduated at Harvard College, 1658; ordained and settled November 15, 1665; married, April 30, 1666, Dorothy, youngest daughter of the Rev. Henry Flint, of Braintree. He died April 7, 1668. He began a "Record of matters in the church of Rowley" with the day of his ordination. This record, the oldest extant, on the death of Mr. Shepard, passed to Mr. Phillips, as he wrote on the title-page "ex dono mei Josiah Flint April 22, 1668." From this record we gain some idea of the state of society in the town at that time; thus, January 8, 1665-66, Robert Swan, a leading citizen of Haverhill, though still a member of this church, is charged with the theft of corn from his neighbor Webster, and also charged by his father, Richard Swan, with "writing a letter full of lies."

October 6, 1667, a member was excommunicated, and the pious Shepard adds: "Afterward pray<sup>d</sup> was made that God would ratify the sentence & let loose Satan on him" (page 17).

December 19, 1667, Jonathan Platts desired his children baptized on his own account, he not being a member of the church nor having owned the cove-



nant; he is described as a man of bold carriage and an uncivil tongue. His request was denied until July, 1668, when he desired that the children should be baptized on account of his wife. She was admitted to full communion and her request granted. Some objected, as she had slandered Faith Parrat in accusing Faith of being guilty of burning Mr. Rogers' house. February 4, 1671-72, John Jackson was called upon to acknowledge his sin of breaking the Sabbath "by cutting up a bundle of small olders."

July 2, 1673, (page 44) Thomas Watson was excommunicated for several reasons, among which was this curious agricultural one: "He told Robert Shelton that his wife milkt 7 cows & made 20 pounds of butter a week, whereas she milkt but 3 & made but 6 pounds a week."

In 1678 Mr. Philip Nelson, the first graduate of Harvard College from this town, and a magistrate, "charged Deacon Jewitt, his aged uncle (who hath used the office of a deacon well, above thirty years), for unrighteousness and Rogury; . . . our other Deacon William Tenney he charged him with lying."

During this period members of the church were frequently charged with adultery, "unclean behavior" and drunkenness. That the charges were true we may believe from the usual entry in the register at the end of the case, "he confessed his sin and was restored."

EDWARD PAYSON, fourth minister, son of Edward and Mary (Eliot) Payson, of Roxbury, where he was born the 20th and baptized the 28th of June, 1657, was graduated at Harvard College 1677, came here to preach in 1680 and was ordained and settled colleague with Mr. Phillips, October 25, 1682. He married, November 7, 1683, Mr. Phillips' daughter Elizabeth, by whom he had seventeen children, of whom ten survived him. The second meeting-house was built in his time and the date is shown by the following extract from his record: "This was ye last child baptized in the old meeting-house, Which house we left, & went to worship God in our new house Nov. 7, 1697."

From the death of Mr. Phillips, in 1696, Mr. Payson continued as sole minister, and the bequest from Mr. Rogers vested in the college in 1700. Mr. Payson entered in the church register the following statement:

"TRANSACTIONS ABOUT MR. ROGERS' DONATION.

"About two years after Mr Phillips's decease; The Town had two meetings to try ye Towns mind abt holding Mr Rogers' Donation upon ye Terms expressed in his Will; at neither of which a vote in the affirmative could be obtained. at Their last meeting, ye Town choose a committee to send to me to know what Salary I would be willing to take up with, both while alone, & also in case another Minister should be called, by which committee (vizt Deacon Jewett, Capt Weirson, Capt Boynton, Lieut Dresser, Corn Pierson) I returned propositions to ye Town on both Articles aforesaid. But nothing was acted upon them, & says matter lay silent; till ye last winter in ye year 1699 sometime in October 1699 I fell ill, my ailment continuing and seeming to be of a threatening nature; The Town, sometime in November or December, had a meeting, and obtained a vote for holding ye aforesaid Donation upon ye condi-

tion that it was given upon, presently upon which, ye church conveyed to considr w<sup>c</sup> Minister to invite and d<sup>d</sup> I pitch upon Mr. Richard Brown of Nubury. At w<sup>ch</sup> time two Brethren vizt Capt Boynton and Lieut Dresser were chosen Messengers to send to Mr Brown to signify ye churches Act calling him to ye work of ye Ministry amongst us. About ye latter end of Decemb<sup>r</sup> ye Lord was pleased to give me liberty to come amongst my people again, & to exercise ye whole Sabbath, and so continued to do. After some time, some of or Brethren signified to me their desire ye something further might be done as to calling Mr Brown amongst us. I told them ye ch<sup>h</sup> had proceeded as far in ye matter as was convenient, not having as yet acquainted ye Town with w<sup>ch</sup> had bin done, not obtained their concurrence w<sup>th</sup> ye churches choice, therefore I thought ye next step must be to consult ye Town in ye matter upon which a Town meeting was quickly warned, after ye warning w<sup>th</sup> off, & before ye time appointed for s<sup>t</sup> meeting came I received a letter from Mr Brown, in which he writes as followeth vizt he pleased s<sup>t</sup> to understand, yt to come at present I could; and to tarry longer, as ye case is circumstanced, would be phaps greatly to yot detriment, & he [cause] I would not to yot damage deceive you, pray s<sup>t</sup> be pleas<sup>d</sup> to take it in good part, if I hereby Intreat you not to expect my coming at all. This letter I totally concealed from all persons living, till after ye aforesaid meeting was past, that none might any way be Influenced thereby. At this meeting nothing could be done in ye matter. The Lord having bin pleased to restore my health Again, the Generality of ye Town appeared very dull abt acting anything on my Proposition referring to calling another Minister, so ye meeting issued in words, sed preterita nihil. Some of the Brethren being still unsatisfied, motioned for another meeting, Whupon some of the selectmen came to me, and Informed that some desired another Town meeting to settle me a Salary if I continued alone & they would know of me whether I did desire it, my Answer was, that the time for settling my salary while I was alone, being lapsed, I did not desire yt ye Town should be convened meetly on ye account; But if they had anything further to transact in reference to calling another Minister & saving their Living, I would hind<sup>r</sup> nothing of that, they might wait a meeting as soon as they pleas<sup>d</sup>. The Select men seemed satisfied, and not Inclined to warn any meeting on that acct. But the aforesaid unsatisfied Brethren continuing to urge their former motion abt another Town meeting; one was at last appointed to Be on, or abt ye twenty third day of Febr<sup>y</sup>. At this meeting my aforesaid propositions were brought a foot many appeared as willing to comply with ye first, while I was alone but as to y<sup>e</sup> latter yt related to calling another Minister ye most were dull and would not stir to decide a vote. I had told some of the ch<sup>h</sup> of ye Town before this meeting yt seeing they had not taken up with my propositions, it was now their turn to make proposals to me; accordingly ye Deacon in The Towns behalf abated five pounds from my 2d proposition referring to calling another Minister which took off 30 pounds from my Salary then & so ye proposition was agn put to vote, but with as little success as at first, & so ye meeting ended without doing anything at all as to ye holding ye aforesaid Donation. So the matter lay till the College officer took possession of the several parcels of Land and meadows which they have improved since. At ye aforesaid ch<sup>h</sup> meeting to chuse a Minister, I proposed to make choice of Mr J<sup>n</sup> Emerson because I concluded he would surely come; which had they done they had certainly secured their Donation, if the Town had consented, & as it had been agreed on; But there was no likelihood that Mr Brown would come, & so it proved

"I did count it necessary to know before hand, what the Town would do for me in case they saved their donation by calling another Minister; and that for sundry Reasons First We are bound to provide for our own house. 2<sup>d</sup> soon After my Settlement my father Phil<sup>p</sup> was unwell about his salary, and told me yt ye Town was not able to keep two ministers. 3<sup>d</sup> I was Informed not long after my Ordination, That a chiefe man then in Town (vizt Capt Phil<sup>p</sup> Nelson) declared in a Town Meeting, that ye Town could not maintaine two Ministers, proposed to let one of them go. And 4<sup>th</sup> I found my own salary very scanty while we were two together. fifty & three pounds in grain was my whole allowance (w<sup>th</sup> my Wood) by ye year; five of w<sup>ch</sup> was yearly taken off for Passageage Lands y<sup>t</sup> I improved so I had but forty-eight pounds in Grain a annum, for sundry years after I had a family. Not long before my father Phil<sup>p</sup> decease, the Town added seven pounds to my salary, so made it Sixty in Grain, which in those times was allow<sup>ys</sup> counted a third at least Intenour to money. finally I was informed when ye aforesaid things abt calling another Minister, were in agitation, that it was said amongst some yt I must take what the Town would give me. I tho<sup>t</sup> it needfull therefore to know before hand a little about the matter, to prevent uneasiness afterwards but as is above specified,





nothing could be obtained. Now let any Indifferent persons Judge how this Donation came to be forfeited, and lapse to y<sup>e</sup> college."

POSTSCRIPT.

"The Reason of my secreting Mr. Brown's Letter (mentioned in the above Record, was, because the condition of holding s<sup>d</sup> Donation was almost expired, so that there was then no time to apply to any body else: Therefore if y<sup>e</sup> Town had known before s<sup>d</sup> Town meeting was over that he would not come, They might have counted it a sufficient Ground to Act nothing about the case. Therefore I kept the knowledge of it from them, till s<sup>d</sup> meeting was past. Yet nothing was done about it, tho they knew not but he might come—and did know y<sup>t</sup> they could go to no other."

All things considered the pastorate of Mr. Payson was more successful than that of any other minister of this church. From the death of Mr. Phillips to the settlement of Mr. Jewett, a period of thirty-three years, nothing appears of record in church or town denoting any differences between Mr. Payson and the people under his charge.

Samuel Palmer, Timothy Harris, Humphrey Hobson and Joseph Boynton were ordained deacons while Mr. Payson was alone in the ministry.

The record of his death, entered in the church register by his colleague and successor, is as follows:

"The Rev<sup>d</sup>. Mr. Edward Payson died Aug. 22, 1732, about y<sup>e</sup> rising of y<sup>e</sup> Sun, In y<sup>e</sup> 76 year of his age, after about a month's Languishment and after He had preached y<sup>e</sup> Gospel in Rowley more than 51 years."

"Beati Mortui ii qui Domini causa moriuntur etiam dicunt Spiritus at requiescant a laboribus suis & opera eorum sequuntur eos."

JEDIDIAH JEWETT, fifth minister, son of Jonathan and Mary (Wicom) Jewett, of Rowley, where he was born 1705, baptized June 3, 1705, was graduated at Harvard College 1726 and ordained and settled colleague with Mr. Payson November 13, 1729. The third meeting-house was built during his ministry, and was occupied in October, 1749. The last child baptized in the old house was Joanna Todd, October 15, 1749, while the first persons owning the covenant in the new house did so October 29, 1749.

The number of church members in 1744 is given by him in the church register as follows: "About 208 persons at present in full communion with this chh., 83 males 125 Females."

Mr. Jewett married, November 11, 1739, Elizabeth, only child of Richard and Dorothy (Light) Dummer, of Newbury, by whom he had three children *Dummer*, baptized April 30, 1732; *Paul*, baptized June 16, 1734; *Dorothy*, baptized May 9, 1736. In his time some men expressed their own opinions. On the 24th of October, 1748, the church voted that they were offended with the Hon. John Hobson, a leading citizen, who had been frequently a member of the General Court and Speaker of the House in 1741, in that Hobson had said in the meeting-house on the 5th of October, 1748, "That the Doctrine of Election, as preached by Rev<sup>d</sup>. Mr. Jedidiah Jewett, is Non-sense, and Because in explaining himself upon the matter of his said assertion s<sup>d</sup> Hobson

further said to s<sup>d</sup> Jewett, 'That you preach That there is certain number elected, and another number are passed over, and if it be so, say s<sup>d</sup> Hobson,' the consequence is that man does act necessarily." An investigating committee was chosen April 2, 1749; the committee reported that Hobson write out his explanation.

December 27, 1749, Hobson refused to write out any explanation of his speech, and the church voted the acknowledgment was satisfactory.

August 29, 1749, James Hidden was accused of having said that part of a sermon by the Rev. Moses Hale was false. The church voted his conduct disorderly.

December 21, 1768, Deacon Bailey complains that Eben Hidden had charged him with "telling a positive lye, and when he [Hidden], was asked why he sung a few Sabbaths ago, his answer was y<sup>t</sup> he did it to let y<sup>e</sup> congregation know, y<sup>t</sup> he knew and y<sup>t</sup> fool did not." He also said, at the same time, when Deacon Bailey set the tune, "that he was serving the Devil."

Several of the church were admonished for their sin of "disorderly walking" and many others for fornication.

Mr. Jewett died May 8, 1774. The Parish voted to pay the expense of the funeral and erect a suitable monument at his grave.

EBENEZER BRADFORD, sixth minister, born in Canterbury, Conn., May 29, 1716, was graduated at Princeton College 1773, settled August 1, 1782, died January 3, 1801. The funeral charges were paid by the Parish.

Here ends the permanent ministry of Rowley. They were able and godly men; the tie binding them to the church was severed only by death. Every minister since settled has been dismissed. Of the period since 1801, I may well use the language of a former pastor: "Pastors, since the commencement of the present century have been, themselves, more uneasy than before, and the people have been more uneasy, regulating their zeal for the truth, by their interest in the man who proclaimed it."

DAVID TULLAR, seventh minister, was graduated at Yale College 1771, settled 7th December 1803, dismissed October 17, 1810. He is said to have been a meek and godly man, better fitted to love his Lord than to fight the devil with fire. He died at Sheffield, 23d August, 1839, aged ninety years. Probably it would have been better if Mr. Tullar had declined his call to preach here, as he began with opposition in both church and parish. While Mr. Tullar slept his people did not sow tares in his wheat-field as there was no tare-seed to be obtained here but they did sow flax-seed over all his garden and cultivated land; cats were drowned in his well, his swine let loose, his gates destroyed, his fruit trees girdled, and he, himself twitted, before an ecclesiastical council, of inability to propagate his species.



**JAMES W. TUCKER**, eighth minister, was graduated at Yale College 1807, settled June 24, 1812, dismissed June 24, 1817, as the salary was insufficient to meet his necessities. He was much respected and beloved. He died at Springfield, N. J., February 11, 1819, aged thirty-two years.

**WILLARD HOLBROOK**, Brown University 1814, was the ninth minister, settled July 22, 1818, dismissed May 12, 1840. During his ministry the Sunday-school was established; and a stove placed in the meeting-house. Many opposed heating the meeting-house as a sinful innovation. The first Sunday, a very cold day, after the stove was set in the meeting-house many left the house, overcome with the intolerable heat, yet there was no fire or funnel connected with the stove.

**JOHN PIKE**, Bowdoin College 1833, was the tenth minister, settled November 18, 1840, dismissed January 5, 1869. The fourth meeting-house was built during his ministry; it was formally dedicated on Wednesday, July 13, 1842; the day was warm, nearly one hundred degrees in the shade. On the 19th February, 1853, the widow Hannah Kilbourne died here. She had been a consistent member of this church more than sixty-five years.

**LYMAN H. BLAKE**, eleventh minister, was settled November 9, 1869, dismissed April 27, 1874.

**WM. R. JOYSLIN**, twelfth minister, was settled December 2d, 1874, dismissed December 22d, 1875.

**CHARLES C. BRUCE**, thirteenth minister, was settled July 2, 1878, dismissed November 28, 1882.

Since the dismissal of Mr. Bruce the church has had no settled minister.

This church now having in full communion about one hundred and sixty-six persons, forty-six males and one hundred and twenty females, still maintains the faith of the fathers and still retains as a part of its "Confession of Faith"—

"... that God created man upright, that our first parents freely sinned and fell, and that all their posterity are born destitute of holiness, dead in trespasses and sins, and justly exposed to the wrath and curse of God."

"... that God, in his mercy, has not left all mankind to perish forever, but of his more good pleasure has, from eternity, elected some to everlasting life, and has determined to deliver them out of a state of sin and misery, and to bring them into a state of salvation by a Redeemer."

"... that without a change of heart, wrought by the special agency of the Holy Ghost, who is truly God, no one can be an heir of eternal life."

"... that there will be a general resurrection of the righteous and the wicked and a general judgment; at which all the righteous will be received to everlasting happiness, and the wicked sentenced to misery without end."

*Tempus habundantiae, nos et miseriam in diis*

From December 3, 1639, to the present time this church has had deacons, elected for life, as follows:

The dates of appointment and death are given.

Thomas Mighill, appointed December 3, 1639; died July [June] 14, 1655.

Matthew Boyse, appointed December 3, 1639; returned to England.

Maximilian Jewett, appointed December 3, 1639; died October 14, 1681.

Francis Parrat, appointed December 3, 1639; died in England 1656.

Samuel Brocklebank, appointed January 8, 1657-60; died April 21, 1676.  
William Tenney, appointed February 3, 1657-68; died August 5, 1685.  
John Pearson, appointed October 24, 1686; died December 22, 1693.  
John Trumble, appointed October 24, 1686; died March —, 1690-91.  
Ezekiel Jewett, appointed October 24, 1686; died September 2, 1723.  
Samuel Palmer, appointed February 1, 1707-8; died June 21, 1719.  
Timothy Harris, appointed February 1, 1707-8; died March 24, 1722-23.  
Humphrey Hobson, appointed April 21, 1723; died June 23, 1742.  
Joseph Boynton, appointed April 21, 1723; died November 25, 1755.  
Edward Payson, appointed February 12, 1739-49; died March 1, 1769.  
Francis Pickard, appointed February 12, 1739-49; died September 12, 1778.

David Bailey, appointed February 18, 1761; died May 12, 1769.

Moses Clark, appointed May 15, 1769; died April 29, 1791.

Thomas Mighill, appointed May 15, 1769; died August 26, 1807.

Jeremiah Jewett, appointed May 15, 1769; died December 3, 1809.

George Jewett, appointed March 9, 1791; died May —, 1820.

Joshua Jewett, appointed April 4, 1807; died January 3, 1862.

Nathaniel Mighill, appointed December 10, 1828; died August 3, 1845.

James T. Plummer, appointed October 1, 1845; now in office.

Nathaniel Bradstreet, appointed June 27, 1862; died June 1, 1879.

Daniel W. Bradstreet, appointed January 8, 1880; now in office.

**THE CHURCH IN BYFIELD PARISH.**—The inhabitants living in the northwesterly part of Rowley, as early as 1702, joined with such of the inhabitants of Newbury as were living near the "Falls" in the erection of a meeting-house, and in 1706 gathered in church order by themselves.

**MOSES HALE**, the first minister, was settled 17th of November, 1706, died 16th of January, 1743—44. The parish paid the expense of his funeral.

The present meeting-house of this parish is in Georgetown.

**THE CHURCH IN LINEBROOK PARISH.**—The inhabitants in the southwesterly part of Rowley, joining with a part of the inhabitants of Ipswich, organized a church 30th of November, 1749, with **GEORGE LESLIE** as first minister.

The present meeting-house of this parish is in Ipswich.

**THE BAPTIST CHURCH.**—This church was organized 16th of November, 1830, with twelve members.

In 1830 their present meeting-house was built. The following year a Sunday-school was established.

From the date of organizing, this church and society gradually increased in numbers, so that during the pastorate of the Rev. Mr. Carr the meeting-house was enlarged and beautified.

The regular pastors of this church have been as follows:

Caleb Clark.....	1831 to 1834
Jeremiah Chapin.....	1834 to 1836
Benjamin C. Grafton.....	1839 to 1841
Cephas Pasco.....	1841 to 1845
Zenas Wildes.....	1848 to 1850
Alexander W. Carr.....	1851 to 1862
James W. Lathrop.....	1862 to 1867
Edwin T. Lyford.....	1868 to 1870
Robert G. Farley.....	1870 to 1871
Andrew Dunn.....	1871 to 1874
Patrick Galeher.....	1876 to 1878
John W. Chase.....	1879 to 1881
James H. Gannett.....	1881 to 1884
Jonathan Tilson.....	1884 to

**THE FIRST UNIVERSALIST PARISH.**—This parish was regularly incorporated 1877, and a meeting-house





built, but it has never had a church or a settled minister.

EDUCATION.—When the first school was established in town is not known. In 1647 it was made an indictable offense for towns not to maintain schools.

Charles Browne taught school here before 1650, and John Trumble taught for several years before his death, 1657.

February 3, 1656—57, the town agreed with William Boynton to teach school, and advanced money to enlarge his house for that purpose.

Boynton continued as the town school-master for more than twenty years.

In 1682 Simon Wainwright was employed to teach the town school.

About 1696 Mr. Richard Syle was employed as town school-master, and so continued to the time of his death, 1721—22.

Mr. Samuel Payson succeeded Mr. Syle, and continued in service, with the exception of a few years, to 1757.

In the years 1742, 1746 and 1747, Mr. Benjamin Adams was the school-master.

From 1757 various persons were employed for short terms, until 1789, when the town was divided into school districts and continued so divided until school districts in towns were abolished by law in 1869.

The town now maintains seven schools. Below is given the names of those born in Rowley, or going out from our schools, who have been graduated at some college. Those in *italics* were ordained ministers:

Philip Nelson.....	Harvard, 1654
Thomas Mighill.....	" 1663
John Harrison.....	" 1667
Samuel Shepard.....	" 1685
George Phillips.....	" 1686
Spencer Phips (name changed from Bennett).....	" 1703
Samuel Payson.....	" 1716
Jedidah Jewett.....	" 1726
Thomas Hubert.....	" 1718
Amasa Jewett.....	" 1732
Jacob Raley.....	" 1735
Joseph Pearsall.....	" 1738
Thomas Lancaster.....	" 1761
Jonathan Searle.....	" 1764
Jonathan Searle.....	" 1765
David Tenney.....	" 1768
Jacob Jewett.....	" 1769
Greenleaf Dole.....	" 1771
Moses Johnson.....	" 1771
Samuel Tenney.....	" 1772
David Chaplin.....	" 1772
John Smith.....	Dartmouth, 1773
Moses Bradford.....	" 1785
Amos Wood.....	Brown Univ., 1786
Nathaniel Lambert.....	" 1787
Daniel Merrill.....	Dartmouth, 1789
Jeremiah Nelson.....	" 1790
Samuel Holden.....	" 1791
Elas Stickney.....	" 1791
Humphrey C. Perley.....	" 1791
Moses P. Payson.....	" 1793
Dudley Todd.....	" 1795
Eleazer G. Bradford.....	" 1796

Thomas Jewett.....	Harvard, 1797
Isaac Adams.....	" 1798
Samuel N. Gage.....	Dartmouth, 1798
William Lambert.....	" 1798
Jeremiah Chaplin.....	Brown University, 1799
Parker Cleaveland.....	Harvard, 1799
John M. Bradford.....	Brown University, 1800
Nathaniel Todd.....	" 1800
David Jewett.....	Dartmouth, 1801
Paul Jewett.....	Brown University, 1802
John Pike.....	Dartmouth, 1803
Samuel Adams.....	Harvard, 1806
Jonathan Cogswell.....	" 1806
Joseph Merrill.....	Dartmouth, 1806
William Todd.....	Yale, 1806
Charles Wheeler.....	Brown University, 1807
Nathaniel Merrill.....	Dartmouth, 1809
David Mighill.....	" 1809
John Richards.....	" 1809
Daniel Chute.....	" 1810
John Scott.....	" 1810
James Bradford.....	" 1811
Henry C. Knight.....	Brown University, 1812
Thomas C. Searle.....	Dartmouth, 1812
James Chute.....	" 1813
Humphrey Hobson.....	" 1814
Alfred W. Pike.....	" 1815
Joseph Searle.....	" 1815
Richard S. Spofford.....	Harvard, 1816
John S. Tenney.....	Bowdoin, 1816
Joseph Torry.....	Dartmouth, 1816
Milton P. Braman.....	Harvard, 1819
John P. Cleaveland.....	Bowdoin, 1821
Jeremiah Searle.....	Union, 1821
Moses C. Searle.....	Princeton, 1824
Henry C. Jewett.....	Brown University, 1824
Daniel Perley.....	Dartmouth, 1828
Charles Proctor.....	Harvard, 1828
Moses P. Stickney.....	Amherst, 1830
Ariel P. Chute.....	Bowdoin, 1832
Charles C. Taylor.....	" 1833
Benjamin Proctor.....	" 1834
Thomas E. Payson.....	Amherst, 1834
George W. Cressey.....	Bowdoin, 1835
Isaac G. Braman.....	" 1836
James W. Tucker.....	Yale, 1836
Richard T. Searle.....	Union, 1837
Charles N. Todd.....	Amherst, 1839
Amory Holbrook.....	Bowdoin, 1841
Francis P. Hale.....	" 1845
Daniel W. Pickard.....	" 1848
Amos J. Saunders.....	Brown University, 1855
Nathaniel Mighill.....	Amherst, 1860
Alfred Madlock.....	" 1861
James H. Foss.....	Brown University, 1863
John L. Euell.....	Yale, 1865
George B. Blodgett.....	Brown University, 1866
William Greenwood.....	Amherst, 1871
John M. Potter.....	Brown University, 1874
Edward H. Potter.....	" 1875
Jeremiah J. Cressey.....	Nashotah, 1879

Of Rowley men of recent times, none deserve mention more than FREDERICK KNIGHT, bred here, lived here, died here, educated in our school and at Harvard College and the law school at Litchfield, Conn. He was a poet and philosopher, a lover of nature and of nature's God. Those who had cultivated only the bigotry they inherited from an ignorant ancestry said he was "crazed in his understanding," but the poor and the children loved him. He died November 20, 1849, aged fifty-eight years. A marble shaft marks his grave. About thirty years ago was published a memorial volume, entitled "Thorn Cottage,





or the Poet's Home," containing a few of his poems and aphorisms. He wrote:

"He that cuts his own wood is twice warmed; he that earns his own bread is twice blest. The labor procures and sweetens the food. Let him try every other method—send to the Indies for condiments, and he will fail."

"While shallow brooks and slender rills,  
Derived from rains and little hills,  
Go tinkling on their way,  
As if they thought their noisy thanks,  
Would please the springs along their banks,  
As shallow things as they;  
Deep rivers, by the mountains fed,  
Exhaustless as their fountain-head,  
Roll silent to the sea."

**ROWLEY MEN IN THE WARS.**—In 1640 a military company was formed. Sebastian Brigham was captain, with John Remington as lieutenant. Rowley men were in service in September, 1642, to disarm Passaconaway, who lived near the river Merrimack.

In August, 1653, the town furnished men for the scouting party for service at Piscataqua.

In 1673 the court appointed Samuel Brocklebank captain, Philip Nelson lieutenant, and John Johnson ensign of the Rowley foot company. In service in "King Philip's War" in 1675-76.

In Captain Thomas Lothrop's company, called the "flower of Essex," was Joseph Pearson, who was killed at Hatfield, August 25, 1675, and John Harri-man, Jacob Kilborn and Ezekiel Sawyer were slain with Lothrop September 18, 1675, at Bloody Brook.

In this war our Deacon Samuel Brocklebank was captain, and under him were John Hopkinson, William Brown, Joseph Bixby, Simon Gawin, Caleb Jackson, John Jackson, Joseph Jewett, John Leighton, Stephen Mighill, Thomas Palmer, John Stickney, Samuel Tiller.

On Friday, April 21, 1676, at Sudbury, Captain Brocklebank and a part of his company, and Captain Wadsworth, with his company, were entirely destroyed by Philip and his warriors.

In 1689 Moses Bradstreet was captain, with John Trumble for lieutenant. This year Rowley furnished men for a guard at Haverhill and Dover.

In the expedition against Quebec, 1690, Rowley furnished one captain (Philip Nelson), one lieutenant (Abel Platts) and thirty non-commissioned officers and privates. All their names cannot now be found.

The town record May 6, 1691, shows payments to the following for military service in Canada, viz.:

	£	s.	d.
To Samuel Platts for Lieutenant Platts.....	13	1	2
To Joseph Scott for Samuel Brown .....	4	17	7
To Captain Fisk for Robert Chaffin .....	4	12	7
To Deacon Jewett for Ezekiel Jewett, his son .....	5	0	3
To Thomas Nelson, Jr., for Samuel French .....	4	15	11
To Goody Swan for Richard Swan, her husband.....	4	15	17
To Widow Wood for Ebenezer Wood, her son.....	10	1	2
To Margaret Wood for Samuel Wood, her husband....	4	12	9
To Mrs. Hammond and Nathl. Crosby for Jonathan Crosby.....	5	5	7
To Goody Bradstreet for Nathaniel Bradstreet, her husband.....	3	11	3
To Sergeant Jewett for William Jewett, his son.....	1	14	1

To Grace Harris for William Searle.....	6	2	0
To Sergeant Nelson for Jonathan Nelson, his son.....	1	15	9
To Nathan Wheeler for Benjamin Wheeler.....	2	10	0
To John Pickard for Jeremiah Chadwell.....	4	11	2
To John Platts for James Platts, his brother.....	5	2	7
To Caleb Boynton for William Boynton, his son.....	4	15	3
To Goody Todd for Timothy Todd, her son .....	4	12	3
To Goody Todd for Samuel Todd, her son.....	1	3	2
To Goody Todd for Timothy Todd, her son, to Quochica.....	0	18	0
To Widow Wood for Solomon Wood to Quochica.....	0	18	0
To Nathl. Crosby for Jonathan Crosby, his brother to Quochica.....	1	12	0

John Bailey died November 19, 1690, and Samuel Wood died November 25, 1690, on their way home from Canada. Others died during campaign; among them were Samuel Smith, Nathaniel Bradstreet, Lieutenant Abel Platts and William Searle.

In the Indian wars from 1690 to 1750, Rowley furnished men, but few names can be found.

Joseph Kilborn, Sr., and Jeremiah Nelson were "slain by ye Indians at Dunstable" 10th of July, 1706.

John Pickard "being wounded by ye enemy, dyed at Billerica" 5th of August, 1706. Ezekiel Northend was at Dunstable.

Lieut. Thomas Gage died at Port Royal August, 1707.

Samuel Ayres "slain by ye Indians at Winter Harbor," near Saco River, February, 1710-11.

Jeremiah Hopkinson was at Norridgewock in 1723-24, under Capt. Samuel Wheelwright. In 1745 James Jewett was "killed with a cannon ball."

Moses Davis, Jr., "with sickness."

Moses Platts "died of his wound" at Cape Breton before the place was taken, and John Platts, Humphrey Woodbury and Joseph Saunders "with the sickness" after the place was taken. Martin Ayers, Samuel Smith, Richard Harris and Moses Jewett also died at Cape Breton in 1745.

During the year 1754 Stephen Boynton was in service under Capt. John Lane. Lieut. Benj. Plumer, Sergt. Moses Richards, Sergt. Thomas Johnson, Nathaniel Getchell, Mark Cressey, Joseph Wallingford, Samuel Duty and Jonathan Trask were at the eastern frontier under Capt. Nathan Adams.

In 1755 a company was raised in this town for service at Lake George.

Captain, Thomas Gage; Lieutenant, Israel Davis; Ensign, Thomas Poor; Sergeants, Jacob Barker, John Smith, Israel Hazen; Corporals, Eliphalet Danforth, Samuel Stickney, William Hobson, James Smith; Privates, Isaac Burpee, Stephen Boynton, Caleb Brown, John Bowman, Timothy Burbank, Samuel Brackenberry, John Bradley, Asa Ladd, Jeremiah Hutchins, Edward Holland, Samuel Hoyt, Daniel Haseltine, Andrew Hood, Samuel Lusk, Samuel Palmer, Jr., Stephen Poor, Benj. Priestly, Matthew Pettengill, William Russell, Samuel Spiller, Samuel Stevens, Edward Saunders, Samuel Smith, David Woodman, Abraham Yone. This company was in



service from 7th of August to 17th of December, 1755. During this year Jabez Blackledge and Symon Chapman died in the army destined to Crown Point, and Thomas Johnson and Samuel Sterry died in the army at Menis.

July 26, 1756, Captain John Pearson, of Rowley, enlisted a company for service under him at Fort Edward; among them the following Rowley men: Ezekiel Mighill, Jonathan Rogers, John Boynton, Jonathan Stickney, James Tenney and Joseph Cressey.

James Jewett, of Rowley, served in a Gloucester company. Humphrey Saunders was a corporal under Capt. Israel Davis. Edward Saunders and Joseph Whitton were privates in the same company, for six months' service.

Jonathan Hidden died at Lake George, January 6, 1756.

Jonathan Stickney and John Boynton were under Capt. Jonathan Pearson, of Newbury.

Daniel Wood was in Capt. Israel Herrick's company.

Jonathan Bailey was at Fort William Henry.

August 9, 1757, Jonathan Bailey, Joseph Poor and Jedidiah Stickney were in Fort William Henry, and in the massacre which took place after the surrender.

In 1758, Thomas Gage, of Rowley, was lieutenant-colonel; and at Lake George, where, on the 20th of July, David Payson was slain by the Indians, James Cressey, Richard Easty and Joseph Whitten were out under Capt. Israel Davis, of Topsfield.

In 1759, Thomas Barker, Robert Gragg, Francis Nelson and John Smith were in Capt. Israel Herrick's company. Benj. Sawyer, John Searle, Jr., Ezra Clough, Nathaniel Clough, William Cheney, Abijah Dickinson, Abner Moores, Thomas Perrin and Thomas Pike were under Capt. Joseph Newhall, of Newbury.

Humphrey Saunders, lieutenant, and Daniel Scott, Joseph Spiller, Ezra Burbank, Samuel Stickney, Samuel Spiller, Anthony Bell, James Cressey, Moses Lowell, Mark Cressey, Thomas Tenney, Peirce Bailey, John Bennett, Samuel Hidden, Francis Palmer, David Plumer, Asa Todd, John Plumer, James Boynton, Stewart Hunt and William Bailey, privates, were under Capt. Thomas Poor, of Andover.

In the autumn of 1759 the following men were enlisted for service in Col. Daniel Appleton's regiment: Thomas Tenney, Benjamin Dresser, Thomas Barker, Nathaniel Wallis, Moses Lowell, Joseph Spiller, Jonathan Gragg, Clement Pingry, William Hobson, Benjamin Winter, John Boynton, Abijah Spofford, Wicom Johnson, Dudley Tyler, Amos Nelson, Abner Burbank, Moses Harriman and James Boynton.

During the year 1759, Benjamin Dresser and Clement Pingry died at Louisbourg, and Peter Cooper died October 22d, coming from Quebec.

1760. Men enlisted for service in Canada: Joseph

Smith, captain; Jonathan Stickney, first lieutenant; John Searle, second lieutenant; John Bailey, Peirce Bailey, Abel Cressey, Jr., Moses Duty (3d), Abijah Dickinson, Joseph Hobson, John Jackman, Ebenezer Martin, Abner Moores, John Plumer, David Plumer, Thomas Pike, Benjamin Sawyer, Ezekiel Stevens, Mark Thurlow, privates.

Also this year, under Captain Israel Herrick, of Boxford, Jacob Hazen, William Johnson, James Boynton and Abel Dodge.

Under Captain Stephen Whipple, of Ipswich, Benjamin Winter, Thomas Barker, Jonathan Gragg, Moses Lowell and Rufus Wheeler.

Under Captain Francis Peabody, of Boxford, Ezra Clough, John Easty, Peter Hardy and Jedidiah Stickney.

Under Captain Nathaniel Bailey, of Gloucester, was Oliver Bailey, who died at Crown Point in 1760.

Under officers unknown, Moses Platts, Samuel Spiller, John Bailey, Jr., and Ezekiel Mighill.

Of these, Captain Joseph Smith and Peirce Bailey died in the fall of 1760, at Albany, of small-pox. Samuel Spiller died the same year, at Glasgow, of small-pox; and William Bailey was drowned at the Isle of Sables on the 16th of November, 1760.

In 1761 Asa Plumer was in service under Captain Joshua Moody, of Falmouth.

In 1762 Benjamin Mansfield, James Cressey, Caleb Cressey, John Cressey, John Cromby and Moses Jewett were in service under Captain Gideon Parker, of Ipswich. James Martin, John Hart, Ezra Burbank, Abel Dodge and Moses Duty were also in the service.

Doubtless many others were soldiers whose names have not been found.

THE REVOLUTION.—April 19, 1775, word reached Rowley of the battle at Lexington, and the two Rowley companies, commanded by Capt. Thomas Mighill and Capt. Edward Payson, started immediately for the scene of conflict, arriving in Cambridge on the morning of the 20th; after remaining a few days, they returned home.

The following were in Capt. Thomas Mighill's company, Col. Baldwin's regiment (the Thirty-eighth Infantry), at Sewall's Point, 26th September, 1775:

Thomas Pike, first lieutenant; Mark Cressey, second lieutenant; Amos Bailey, Stephen Jewett, Samuel Searle, Ezekiel Sawyer, sergeants; Daniel Brocklebank, David Poor, Ephraim Hidden, Jonathan Stickney, corporals; Samuel Todd, drummer; Samuel Bailey, fifer; John Bailey, Ezekiel Bailey, Joseph Brown, Joseph Brown, Jr., Edward Bishop, Jeremiah Chandler, William Chandler, Abel Dodge, John Gage, David Hobson, William Harriman, Moses Howe, Edward Ellsworth, Thomas Ellsworth, William Ellsworth, Nathaniel Johnson, Amos Jewett, Jr., Nathan Kilburn, Samuel Lancaster, Samuel Pillsbury, Jonathan Pickard, John Pickard, Thomas Plumer, John Pearson, Thomas Pearson, Benjamin





Pike, Humphrey H. Richards, Thomas Smith, John Sawyer, Paul Stickney, John Spiller, Benjamin Scott, Benjamin Smith, William Smith, Josiah Stickney, Dudley Tyler and Benjamin Willett, privates.

Of the above, Amos Jewett, Jr., died at Cambridge, 28th December, 1775; John Pearson died at Cambridge, and his brother Thomas Pearson returned from Cambridge sick, and soon after died at home.

William Searle, aged twenty-six years, a sergeant, and Jacob Dow, aged eighteen years, a private, enlisted 24th of April, 1775, under Captain Jacob Gerish, Colonel Moses Little's regiment.

In Captain John Baker's company, Colonel Little's regiment, enlisted 2d May, 1775, were Daniel Dresser, aged thirty-five years, second lieutenant; and privates George Abbot, aged twenty-two years; Amos Jewett, Jr., aged twenty-one years; Joseph Nelson, aged thirty years; Moses Foster, aged twenty-two years, and David Sterry, aged twenty-two years.

Jonathan Ellsworth was in Captain John Kettle's company, and Thomas Pee was in Captain Stephen Pearl's company.

They were enlisted for what was called the eight months' service, ending December, 1775; no others having been enlisted to take their places, the following Rowley men enlisted for six weeks, viz., Daniel Foster, David Elwell, Paul Todd, Moses Richards, Moses Smith, Nathaniel Bradstreet, Jeremiah Dodge and Jeremiah Hobson.

At the close of the year 1775, men were enlisted for one year. The following is a copy of the roll of Capt. Thomas Mighill's company, March, 1776: Thomas Mighill, captain; Mark Cressy, first lieutenant; Caleb Clap, second lieutenant; Jonathan Stickney, Abner Whitney, John Morse, Daniel Coolage, sergeants; John Sawyer, Ansel Pope, Abner Hoyt, corporals; William Green, drummer; Edward French, fifer and privates William Adams, John Bailey, David Chaplin, Daniel Chaplin, David Clark, Benjamin Emerson, Moses Howe, Jeremiah Hobson, Nathaniel Johnson, Humphrey H. Richards, Moses Richards, John Spiller, Benjamin Spiller, Moses Smith, Joseph Stickney, John Thomas, Benjamin Willet, John Blandsen, Thomas Champney and Nathaniel Chase.

Others were enlisted in 1776, by Capt. Mighill, viz.: Joel Coolage, William Cushing, Jacob French, Nathaniel Bradstreet, Thomas Jones, Abner Hinds, Daniel Kimball, Timothy Kendell, William McIlvain, Benjamin Morse, George Dunlap, William Davis, Follensbee Dow, Thomas Giles, James Greely, Ezra Ross, Samuel Remick, William Simmons, Paul Todd, Nathan Willard, Comfort Whipple, Charles Flagherty, James Gray, James Barnes, Michael Irish, Thomas Harris, Philip Merchant, Enoch Jackson, William Jackson, John McIlvain, Daniel Wight, David Story, Edward Morrison, Elnathan Pope, Nathaniel Perry, Thomas Pee, Benjamin Richards, Samuel Russell, Samuel Burnet. At the close of the year 1776 men of Capt. Mighill's company were en-

listed for six weeks as follows: Abner Whitney, sergeant; Ansel Pope and Abner Hoyt corporals; David Clark, Nathaniel Chase, Jeremiah Hobson, Nathaniel Bradstreet, Thomas Giles, Benjamin Morse, Paul Todd, Moses Richards, William Jackson, John McIlvain, and Moses Smith as privates.

At the same time William Symons, Benjamin Richards, Thomas Pee, and Charles Flagherty were enlisted for a longer time.

In March, 1777, the town was called upon to raise fifty-eight men for the Continental Army to serve three years or during the war. The names of fifty-five of these men are here given from a roll made October, 1779:

Benjamin Elwell, Ebenezer Redington, David Redington, William Hancock, John Elwell, John Dorce, Thomas Payne, Stephen Staples, Samuel Procter, Ebenezer Stone, John Wilson, William Robinson, Samuel Plumer, Thomas Goodall, Timothy Pratt, George Graves, William McGill, John Witten, Samuel Starboard, James Wier, Edward Pratt, David Guston, John Parker, Winthrop Knight, John Romley, Josiah Millikin, Henry Warren, Thomas Pee, Paul Kilborn, John Kilborn, Francis Nelson, Elisha Dodge, Jeremiah Ellsworth, Benjamin Tenney, Samuel Clough, Asa Low, Jonathan A. Powers, Thomas Harris, Aaron Crombe, Daniel Elliot, William Batchelder, John P. Frost, William Mitchell, Moses Moore, Abner B. Lunt, James Page, Samuel Bailey, John D. Davis, William Harkman, Thomas Pingree, Thomas Stinson, James Blair, Samuel Turner, Joseph Applebee, Joseph Lovell.

In December, 1776, the following persons belonging to Rowley were enlisted to serve under Capt. John Dodge, of Wenham, for three months, in the State of New York:

John Tenney first lieutenant; Moses Scott, second lieutenant; Jedidiah Stickney, Humphrey Hobson, Moses Smith, sergeants; and as privates, John Bailey, Moses Chaplin, Moses Dickinson, John Daniels, John Gage, Reuben How, James Jewett, Caleb Jackson, Thomas Kilborn, Moses Lull, Asa Low, David Payson, Bradstreet Pearson, John Scott, David Searle, Daniel Safford, Daniel Tenney, Moses Wood, Phineas Dodge and Joshua Dickinson.

This company consisted of fifty-three men. They marched December 16, 1776, and were discharged April 1, 1777, in the State of New York, three hundred and forty miles from their homes.

In May, 1778, the town was called upon to raise twenty men to serve eight months, and nine men to serve nine months; the names of but twenty-one are found, viz.: John Ely, Thomas Pingree, Thomas Pike, Jr., Amos Pilsbury, William Chandler, Jr., Samuel Bacon, Jeremiah Andrew, William Priest, Abel Hardy, Samuel Woodsum, Joseph Brocklebank, Moses Clark, Thomas Ellsworth, Benjamin Bishop, John Pickard, Joseph Stickney, John Gage, Samuel



Hidden, Benjamin Pike, Stephen Pingree and Moses Wood.

They served six months from July 1, 1778, at North Kingston, Rhode Island, under Captain Jonathan Evans in Colonel Wade's regiment.

Other Rowley men served at some time during the war, but a complete list cannot now be given. It is known that the following named were in service, viz.: Moses Hobson and Jonathan Stickney served three months and fifteen days from April 24, 1775; Joseph Brocklebank and Joseph Todd were in service two months from April 29 to June 29, 1777, in Rhode Island, under Captain Benjamin Adams; Nathaniel Burpee (drummer), Ezekiel Lancaster and David Nelson were in service, under Captain Adams, from August 15 to November 30, 1777, in New York; Thomas Pike was drafted June 11, 1778, and served nine months at Fishkill, N. Y.; William Rutherford and David Pickard were drafted and served from July 6 to December 13, 1780.

Joshua Jackson, Nathaniel Smith, Joshua Saunders, Edward Saunders, Jonathan Lambert and John Crombee were stationed at Castle Island, under Captain James Maloon.

Samuel Bailey, Jr., Moses Merrill and Daniel Merrill served three years.

Paul Jewett died in the army in 1777 in New York.

Samuel Clough returned from Albany sick, and soon died in 1778.

John Crombee died in the service in New York of small-pox in 1781.

William Todd died while privateering in 1781.

Solomon Lowell, David Poor, Silas Dole, Moses Boynton and James Phillips were in the army. Samuel Burbank died of small-pox soon after his return from the army.

Jeremiah Ellsworth, Asa Low and Thomas Pingree were enlisted for three years.

Adoniram Hidden was in service and a prisoner in the old Mill prison in England, where he died August 8, 1781, of small-pox.

Rowley furnished its full proportion of men for the army of the Revolution, among them three captains, viz.: Thomas Mighill, Benjamin Adams and Edward Payson; nine lieutenants, viz.: Amos Bailey, Mark Cressey, Daniel Dresser, Thomas Green, Thomas Pike, Benjamin Stickney, Moses Scott, John Tenney and Rufus Wheeler, and many sergeants and corporals.

**SHAY'S REBELLION.**—To make up the army of four thousand four hundred men in January, 1787, Rowley was called upon to furnish one lieutenant and twenty-three non-commissioned officers and men. Ezekiel Sawyer was the lieutenant, and he enlisted men as follows: Abner Bailey, William Bailey, Peirce Bailey, Jacob Ellsworth, Humphrey Hobson, Nathan Jewett, Stephen Knight, David Pickard, Samuel Pulsifer, John Perley, Stephen Pearson, Joseph Pike, John Pike, David Rollins, Elliot Saw-

yer, Samuel Searle, John Searle, Thomas Stedman, and John Tasket.

**1812.**—In the War of 1812 the following men were paid by the town for services in the war, viz.: John Bridges, Jr., David Brocklebank, Moses Daniels, Bradstreet Emerson, Daniel Harris, Benjamin Spiller, Thomas Cressey, Francis Dole, Edmund Dole, Paul Dole, Jr., Ralph Dole, James Dickinson, Darius Dickinson, Nathaniel K. Farley, Nathan Hobson, Phineas Hardy, Matthew Johnson, Samuel Jewett, Thomas Merrill, jr., Nathaniel Pickard, John Prime, Daniel Palmer, Isaac Pickard, David Perley, Paul Stickney, Jr., Mighill Spofford, Benjamin Todd, Jr., Richard Davis, Parker G. Thurlow, Nathaniel Bradstreet, Daniel N. Prime and Nathaniel Prime. Some of the above named furnished substitutes. William Ellsworth and Joseph Haskins were in service as substitutes.

**THE REBELLION OF 1861-65.**—The following list of soldiers in the late war is arranged in the order of their first muster into the service of the United States; it is intended to include all who were credited to Rowley on any enlistment, and also those of our citizens who, when our quota for the time being was full, enlisted on the quota of other towns.

The "Record of the Massachusetts Volunteers" is taken as authority for names, dates, etc.

Those to whose name a \* is prefixed are now (1887) deceased.

1. Asa Warren Emerson, son of Timothy W. and Mary (Conant) Emerson, born in Rowley, June 23, 1819; Co. C, 2d Regt. Mass. Inf.; mus. in May 25, 1861; detached as wagon-master, pro. April 1, 1863, quartermaster; re-en. Dec. 30, 1863; pro. July 3, 1865, 1st lieut.; disch. July 14, 1865, exp. of service.
2. \*Nathan H. Hutchinson, son of Ira and Mary A. (Hobson) Hutchinson, born in Rowley, age 21 years; Co. C, 2d Regt. Mass. Inf.; mus. in May 25, 1861; died Sept. 25, 1862, at Annapolis, Md.; unmarried.
3. \*William H. Jellison, son of Moses and Dolly B. (Bradstreet) Jellison, born in Rowley, January 30, 1839; Co. H, 2d Regt. Mass. Inf.; mus. in May 25, 1861; capt'd May, 1862, near Winchester, Va., and held pris. of war at Belle Isle, Va., four months, then paroled; died Oct. 13, 1862, at Washington, D. C.; unmarried.
4. Josiah M. Kneeland, son of Levi and Margaret (Seward) Kneeland, born in Ipswich, age 30 years; Co. C, 2d Regt. Mass. Inf.; mus. in May 25, 1861; re-en. Dec. 30, 1863, vol. in as bonded pris. of war; disch. July 14, 1865, exp. of service.
5. David H. Saunders, son of David and Elizabeth S. (Howe) Saunders, born in Rowley, Nov. 29, 1839; Co. H, 2d Regt. Mass. Inf.; mus. in May 25, 1861; corp.; capt'd May, 1862, near Winchester, and held pris. of war at Belle Isle, Va., four months, then paroled; severely wd. May 8, 1861, at Chancellorsville; disch. May 28, 1861, exp. of service.
6. \*Fryville L. Smith, son of William and Elizabeth H. (Warburton) Smith, born in Danvers, age 22 years; Co. H, 2d Regt. Mass. Inf.; mus. in May 25, 1861; died April 28, 1862, at Harrisonburg, Va.; unmarried.
7. \*Thomas M. Todd, son of Thomas and Joanna (Chapman) Todd, born in Rowley May 9, 1839; Co. F, 2d Regt. Mass. Inf.; mus. in May 25, 1861; trans. Feb. 28, 1862, to gunboat service and honorably discharged; en. (2) Oct. 14, 1862, (quota of Melrose) in Co. D, 48th Regt. Mass. Inf. (nine months); mus. in same day; pro. sergt.; disch. Sept. 3, 1861, exp. of service; died Dec. 10, 1867, in Leonminster, Mass.; unmarried; buried in Rowley.
8. \*John Hale, son of M. P. and Nancy (Mead) Hale, age 34 years; Co. G, 11th Regt. Mass. Inf.; mus. in June 15, 1861; disch. Dec. 17, 1861; exp. of service. This record is taken from the "Record of Massachusetts Volunteers," but see the following





## "DEPARTMENT OF THE INTERIOR, PENSION OFFICE."

"WASHINGTON, D. C., March 9, 1877."

"Sir:—

"In reply to your letter of the 24th ultimo, I have to inform you that James Higgins was a pensioner by certificate No. 30,961, on the rolls of the Boston, Mass., agency, and whose name was dropped because of his failure to claim his pension for three years. The evidence on file in his case shows that one John Hale, on the 8th of March, 1879, was buried and that at that Newburyport, Mass., and that the name of John Hale and James Higgins was for the same person. That John Hale enlisted and served in the late war as James Higgins, private, Co. A, 3d N. H. Vols.

"Very respectfully,

JOHN C. BLACK,

"Commissioner."

"Geo. B. BRODLETTE,

"Rowley, Mass."

9. \*George W. Williams, age 18 years; Co. C, 11th Regt. Mass. Inf.; mus. in June 13, 1861; killed July 21, 1861 at *Ball's Bluff*; unmarried.
10. \*Joseph D. Todd, son of Calvin I. and Mary J. (Todd) Todd, born in Rowley, Jan. 13, 1841; Co. A, 12th Regt. Mass. Inf.; mus. in June 20, 1861; killed Dec. 15, 1862, at *Fredericksburg*; unmarried.
11. \*Ira Thompson, son of Isaac and Hannah (Miller) Thompson, born in Newburyport, Oct. 1827; Co. A, 1st Regt. Mass. H. Art.; mus. in July 5, 1861; re-en. Nov. 5, 1863; killed in action June 16, 1861 near Petersburg, Va.; left a widow and four children.
12. \*Alvin O. Cressey, son of Thomas B. and Rhoda A. (Whittier) Cressey, born in Rowley, age 28 years, Co. A, 15th Regt. Mass. Inf.; mus. in July 21, 1861; disch. Aug. 3, 1861, exp. of service; died Oct. 30, 1885, in Boston; buried in Rowley; left a widow.
13. \*John P. Morrison, son of Daniel and Harriet (Elwell) Morrison, born in Rowley, Jan. 20, 1812; band of the 17th Regt. Mass. Inf.; mus. in Aug. 21, 1861; disch. Aug. 30, 1862, by order of the War Dept.; died March 15, 1870, in Rowley; unmarried.

On the 26th of June, 1861, the company of militia long established here, and known as Company C, First Battalion Rifles, volunteered for the war. The company went into camp July 5, 1861, at the "Gage place," in Rowley; was soon transferred to the camp at Lynnfield, Mass., where it was enrolled July 26, 1861, as Company C, Nineteenth Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers, and mustered into the service August 28, 1861, for three years. The Rowley men of this company were as follows:

14. (1) Joseph Scott Todd, captain, son of Caleb and Susan (Todd) Todd, born in Rowley, July 6, 1828; resigned March 20, 1862; en. (2) Aug. 18, 1862, in Co. D, 18th Regt. Mass. Inf.; mus. in Sept. 24, 1861 (nine months); detailed as post-boy, in camp at Wenhams, Mass.; pro. Dec. 30, 1862, capt. Co. K, 18th Regt.; wd. June 14, 1864, in an assault on Port Hudson, La.; disch. Sept. 3, 1864, exp. of service.
15. (2) Samuel S. Prime, 2d lieut., son of Daniel N. and McIntah (Scott) Prime, born in Rowley, May 31, 1829; pro. July 1, 1862, 1st lieut.; resigned Jan. 21, 1863.
16. (3) Solomon I. Cummings, 1st sergt., son of George and Elizabeth (Lowell) Cummings, born in Rowley, July 24, 1834; disch. Sept. 24, 1862; disability; en. (2) in Co. M, 4th Regt. Mass. H. Art. (1 year); mus. in Aug. 20, 1864, 1st sergt.; disch. June 17, 1865, exp. of service.
17. (4) John W. Emerson, sergt., son of Timothy W. and Mary (Conant) Emerson, born in Rowley, July 19, 1836; disch. Oct. 28, 1861; disability, from injuries received in camp at Lynnfield, Mass.; en. (2) in V. R. C.; mus. in July 20, 1864; sergt.; disch. Nov. 17, 1865; exp. of service.
18. (5) Paul N. Hale, sergt., son of Thomas and Agnes (Bean) Hale, born in Rowley Oct. 4, 1836; disch. Oct. 30, 1862; disability.
19. (6) \*John F. Tarr, sergt., born in Salem, age 32 years; disch. May 16, 1862, disability; en. (2) in V. R. C.; mus. in July 18, 1864; 1st sergt.; died Feb. 19, 1865, in Newburyport, while on furlough; buried in Newburyport; left a widow.
20. (7) \*David S. Cressey, corp., son of Thomas and Mary (Saunders) Cressey, born in Rowley, Jan. 10, 1839; died May 28, 1862, at Douglas Hospital, Washington, D. C.; buried in Rowley; unmarried.
21. (8) Joseph Johnson, 2d, corp., son of Joseph and Hannah (Tappen) Johnson, born in Newburyport, May 1, 1830; pro. sergt.; disch. June 10, 1862, disability; en. (2) in Co. H, 3d Regt. Mass. H. Art. (3 years); corp.; disch. Sept. 18, 1865, exp. of service.
22. (9) \*Moses R. Littlefield, wagoner, son of Japheth and Lucy (McIntyre) Littlefield, born at Deer Isle, Me., Jan. 1, 1824; re-en. Dec. 22, 1863; disch. June 30, 1865, exp. of service; died in Rowley Jan. 31, 1866, of disease contracted in service; left a widow and four children.
23. (10) Stephen Armitage, son of George and Elizabeth (Nowell) Armitage, born in Newburyport Nov. 2, 1838; pro. corp., sergt. and 1st sergt.; wd. July 2, 1863, at *Gettysburg*; disch. Aug. 27, 1864, exp. of service.
24. (11) George W. Brown, son of William V. and Anna O. (Pulsifer) Spiller, born in Rowley, Jan. 5, 1821; trans. Oct. 1, 1863, to V. R. C.; disch. Oct. 1, 1864, exp. of service.
25. (12) Samuel Cole, age 21 years; disch. Oct. 17, 1863.
26. (13) George E. Cross, son of Benjamin and Mary Cross, born in West Newbury, age 28 years; disch. Dec. 17, 1862, disability; en. (2) in Co. H, 3d Regt. Mass. H. Art. (3 years); mus. in Nov. 20, 1863, artificer; disch. Sept. 18, 1865, exp. of service.
27. (14) \*Edward F. Currier, son of Daniel R. and Sally (Merrill) Currier, born in Georgetown June 26, 1818; trans. Sept. 27, 1863, to V. R. C.; re-en. in V. R. C.; disch. Nov. 17, 1865, ex. of service; died April 22, 1872, in Georgetown, Mass., buried in Byfield Parish; left a widow and one child.
28. (15) John C. Dailey, son of John and Mary Dailey, age 18 years; disch. Aug. 28, 1861, exp. of service.
29. (16) Milton Ellsworth, son of Simeon and Hannah (Jewett) Ellsworth, born in Ipswich, July 7, 1813; pro. corp., and, for bravery at *Gettysburg*, 1st sergt.; re-en. Dec. 22, 1863; disch. June 28, 1865, order of War Dept. The service of this man deserves mention. He was always on duty with his regiment, never in hospital, never wounded, was corporal of color guard that terrible day at *Fredericksburg*, and the only one unhurt. Besides the frequent reconnaissance and skirmish, so costly in human life, he was in the following battles: *Ball's Bluff, Yorktown, West Point, Fair Oaks, Peach Orchard, Savage Station, Glendale, White Oak Swamp, Malvern Hill, Second Bull Run, Antietam, Fredericksburg, Chancellorsville, Gettysburg, Brim's Station, Mine Run, Wilderness, Spottsylvania, Poltopotomac, Cold Harbor and Petersburg*, to about three o'clock P. M. June 22, 1864, when he, with his whole regiment and brigade, was captured by the enemy. From this time he experienced the horrors of Andersonville and other Southern prisons until, with about four thousand other prisoners of war, he reached our lines at Jacksonville, Fla., on the evening of the 28th of April, 1865. The war was over. Broken in health, he was ordered to his home to await discharge.
30. (17) \*Horace A. Fisher, son of Horace and Jane (Hill) Fisher, born in Georgetown, age 19 years; wd. June 30, 1862, at *White Oak Swamp*; disch. Nov. 27, 1862, disability; en. (2) in Co. B, 59th Regt. Mass. Inf. (3 years); mus. in Jan. 5, 1864; disch. Jan. 25, 1865, disability; died Feb. 12, 1865, in Rowley, of disease contracted in service; buried in Byfield Parish; left a widow.
31. (18) Richard Russell Foster, son of Philmon C. and Hannah (Pickard) Foster, born in Ipswich, Nov. 11, 1812; re-en. Dec. 22, 1863; pro. corp. and sergt.; capt'd May 15, 1864, and was in Andersonville and other Southern prisons for about ten months; disch. June 30, 1865, exp. of service.
32. (19) Joseph H. Frame, son of William and Margaret Frame, born in Montpelier, Vt., May 18, 1831; disch. Sept. 6, 1862, disability; en. (2) in V. R. C.; mus. in July 25, 1864; disch. Nov. 17, 1865, order of War Dept.
33. (20) \*Michael Gallagher, born in Ireland, age 23 years; wd. June 30, 1862, at *White Oak Swamp*; disch. Nov. 28, 1862, disability; en. (2) in V. R. C.; mus. in July 19, 1864; disch. May 4, 1865, exp. of service; died —; unmarried.
34. (21) James H. Heath, born in Haverhill, age 18 years; re-en. Dec. 22, 1863; disch. June 30, 1865, exp. of service.
35. (22) \*David Bradford Jollison, son of Moses and Dolly B. (Bradstreet) Jollison, born in Rowley July 2, 1843; wd. Sept. 17, 1862, at *Antietam*; pro. corp. and sergt.; re-en. Feb. 24, 1864; disch. June 30, 1865, exp. of service; died Jan. 18, 1869, in Haverhill; buried in Rowley; left a widow.
36. (23) \*William Littlefield, son of Japheth and Lucy (McIntyre) Littlefield, born on Deer Isle, Me., age 42 years; died Sept. 15, 1862, at Newport News, Va.; left children.





87. (23) Edward W. Morrill, son of Edward W. and Sophia (Fowle) Morrill, born in Newburyport, Nov. 15, 1827; wd. in thigh Sept. 17, 1862, at *Antietam*; disch. March 20, 1863, disability.
88. (25) \*Luke Murphy, son of John Murphy, born in Salem, age 18 years; killed June 25, 1862, at *Bur Oaks*; unmarried.
89. (26) Edward Parker, son of Samuel and Mary Parker, born in New York City, age 27 years; disch. June 10, 1862, disability; en. (2) in Co. H, 3d Regt. Mass. H. Art. (3 years); mus. in Nov. 20, 1863; disch. Dec. 8, 1864, disability.
40. (27) Edward D. Saunders, son of Amos N. and Elizabeth (Pickard) Saunders, born in Rowley, Oct. 12, 1831; re-en. Dec. 22, 1863; disch. April 28, 1864, disability.

#### Enlistments in other organizations in 1861:

41. \*Charles H. Sawyer, age 21 years; Co. B, 23d Regt. Mass. Inf.; mus. in Sept. 28, 1861; re-en. Dec. 3, 1863 (quota of Peabody); killed May 16, 1864, at *Way's Bluff*.
42. Thomas B. Cressey, son of Richard and Dolly (Bradstreet) Cressey, born in Rowley, Oct. 16, 1804; Co. I, 23d Regt. Mass. Inf.; mus. in Oct. 9, 1861; trans. June 1, 1864, to V. R. C.; re-en. in V. R. C.; disch. Nov. 15, 1865, order of War Dept.
43. Walter C. Foster, son of Philemon C. and Eliza (Felton) Foster, born in Ipswich, July 28, 1836; Co. I, 23d Regt. Mass. Inf.; mus. in Oct. 15, 1861, (quota of Ipswich); disch. Sept. 3, 1862, disability; en. (2) in Co. C, 19th Regt. Mass. Inf.; mus. in March 31, 1864, (quota of West Newbury); pro. corp. for bravery in action; disch. June 30, 1865, exp. of service.
44. Zeas W. Clark, son of Isaac and Otharine (Mahar) Clark, born in Pembroke, Me., June 23, 1839; Co. M, 3d Regt. Mass. Cav.; mus. in Oct. 19, 1861; pro. corp. and sergt. wd. and capt'd; in action June 3, 1863, at Clinton, La.; re-en. Feb. 19, 1864; pro. 1st lieut.; disch. Sept. 28, 1865, exp. of service.
45. Levi N. Call, born in New Brunswick, Canada, age 18 years; Co. M, 3d Regt. Mass. Cav.; mus. in Oct. 19, 1861; re-en. Feb. 19, 1864.
46. Samuel A. Haskell, son of Samuel and Harriet (Dickinson) Haskell, born in Rowley, Sept. 5, 1837; Co. M, 3d Regt. Mass. Cav.; mus. in Nov. 22, 1861; pro. corp. and sergt.; re-en. Feb. 19, 1864; disch. Sept. 28, 1865; exp. of service.
47. \*Nathaniel B. Jellison, son of Moses and Dolly B. (Bradstreet) Jellison, born in Rowley Aug. 22, 1837, Co. M, 3d Regt. Mass. Cav.; mus. in Nov. 22, 1861; disch. June, 1862; disability; en. (2) in V. R. C.; mus. in July 20, 1864, and honorably disch.; died July 9, 1870, in Rowley; left a widow and one child.
48. \*Edward P. Cressey, son of Bradstreet and Sarah W. (Hooper) Cressey, born in Rowley July 20, 1836; Co. K, 13th Regt. Maine Inf. (1 yr.); en. Nov. 1, 1861; mus. in Dec. 13, 1861; disch. Jan. 15, 1864, disability; died Dec. 31, 1873, in Rowley; left a widow.

#### The following-named men enlisted in the First Regiment Massachusetts Heavy Artillery for three years:

49. \*Hiram Guilford, son of Nathaniel and Abigail Guilford, age 34 years, Co. D, mus. in Feb. 17, 1862, re-en. Feb. 22, 1864, died Oct. 17, 1864, at City Point, Va.; buried in Rowley; left a widow and one child.
50. \*Nathaniel Downes, born in Rochester, N. H.; age 35 years; Co. L; mus. in Feb. 20, 1862; disch. July 15, 1862, disability; died March 3, 1865, in Georgetown, of consumption; was married twice; left a large family by first wife.
51. John Kneeland, Jr., son of John and Lydia (Peabody) Kneeland, born in Ipswich June 4, 1830; Co. L; mus. in Feb. 20, 1862; disch. Nov. 4, 1862, disability; re-en. (2) in Co. H, 3d Regt. Mass. Heavy Art.; mus. in Nov. 20, 1863; disch. Feb. 10, 1865, disability.
52. Lowell G. Wilson, son of Asa and Martha (Blinn) Wilson, born in Medfield March 25, 1825; Co. L; mus. in Feb. 20, 1862; disch. Feb. 20, 1865, exp. of service.

#### The following enlisted in Co. A, First Battalion, Massachusetts Heavy Artillery, for three years, stationed at Fort Warren, Boston Harbor, Mass.:

53. James Torian, age 30 years; mus. in Feb. 18, 1862.
54. Henry P. Boynton, son of Henry and Elizabeth W. (Chamberlain) Boynton, born in Rowley May 27, 1810; mus. in Feb. 22, 1862; disch. Feb. 27, 1865, exp. of service.

55. Moses Bartlett, son of George and Elizabeth (Merrill) Bartlett born in Newburyport; age 23 years; mus. in Feb. 25, 1862; promoted corp., sergt., 1st sergt., and Feb. 18, 1864, 2d lieut.; disch. June 29, 1865, exp. of service.
56. \*Joseph W. Clark, son of Edward and Sarah (Tucker) Clark, born in Ipswich; age 32 years; mus. in Feb. 25, 1862; re-en. March 1, 1864; disch. Oct. 20, 1865, exp. of service; died June 16, 1887, in Salem; buried in Ipswich.
57. Benjamin G. Cressey, son of Richard and Mary E. (Harris) Cressey, born in Rowley Feb. 8, 1841; mus. in Feb. 25, 1862; disch. Feb. 29, 1865; exp. of service.
58. \*George H. Farnam, son of Stephen and Susan (Smith) Farnam, born in Newburyport Sept. 13, 1831; mus. in Feb. 25, 1862; disch. Feb. 27, 1865; exp. of service; died March 20, 1885, in Rowley; left a widow.
59. William M. Hale, son of Daniel and Lydia (Merrill) Hale, born in Rowley Dec. 29, 1835; mus. in Feb. 25, 1862; promoted corp., sergt., and 1st sergt.; disch. Oct. 16, 1863, for promotion as 2d lieut. in 3d Regt. Mass. Heavy Art.; promoted Oct. 13, 1864, 1st lieut.; disch. Sept. 18, 1865, exp. of service.
60. Thomas W. Hicken, son of Thomas and Hannah (Reynolds) Hicken, born in Georgetown, Prince Edw. Isl., June 1, 1837; mus. in Feb. 25, 1862; pro. corp. and sergt.; disch. Feb. 27, 1865, exp. of service.
61. Aubrey C. Nelson, son of David O. and Eunice T. (George) Nelson, born in Newbury, July 23, 1842; mus. in Feb. 25, 1862; disch. Oct. 8, 1862, order of War Dept.; en. (2) in Co. B, 2d Reg. H. Art. Mass. Vols. (3 years); mus. in July 29, 1863; disch. Sept. 3, 1865, exp. of service.
62. Charles B. Cressey, son of Richard and Mary E. (Harris) Cressey, born in Rowley, Sept. 19, 1843; mus. in Feb. 26, 1862; disch. Feb. 27, 1865, exp. of service.
63. Moses Dole, son of Sewell and Jane M. (Knight) Dole, age 18 years; mus. in Feb. 27, 1862; re-en. March 1, 1864; disch. Oct. 20, 1865, exp. of service.

#### The following enlisted in Company H, Thirty-second Regiment Massachusetts Infantry, for three years, and were mustered in August 11, 1862:

64. \*Benjamin W. Pingree, son of Benjamin B. and Hannah (Patch) Pingree, born in Haverhill, Aug. 24, 1841; wagoner; died Dec. 14, 1862, at Falmouth, Va.; unmarried.
65. Gotham H. Hardy, son of Silas and Sarah (Savory) Hardy, born in Dracont, Dec. 24, 1826; (quota of North Andover) wd. Dec. 13, 1862, at *Federicksburg*; trans. April 10, 1864, to Vet. Res. Corps; disch. Jan. 1, 1865, order of War Dept.
66. Hiram Kneeland, son of Hiram R. and Rhoda (Kneeland) Kneeland, born in Rowley, July 12, 1841; re-en. Jan. 5, 1864; wd. and a pris. of war in Andersonville; disch. June 29, 1865, exp. of service.

#### The following were enlisted in Company K, Fortieth Regiment Massachusetts Infantry, for three years, and mustered in September 3, 1862.

67. Charles A. Riggs, age 19 years, corp.; disch. June 16, 1863, exp. of service.
68. \*Alvin T. Conant, son of Joseph and Ruth (Guilford) Conant, born in Ipswich, age 3 years; died Oct. 16, 1863, at Folly Island, S. C.
69. Cyrus W. Conant, son of William F. and Martha (Perley) Conant, born in Ipswich, age 25 years; disch. ———, disability.
70. George W. Conant, son of Joseph and Anna (Foster) Conant, born in Ipswich, age 33 years; disch. Feb. 6, 1864, disability.
71. \*Proctor S. Dwinells, son of Jacob and Dorothy (Rogers) Dwinells, born in Newbury, May 31, 1831; disch. June 16, 1865, exp. of service; died Oct. 20, 1874, in Georgetown, Mass.; left a widow and children.
72. Cyrus Foster, son of Philemon and Abigail (Hobbs) Foster, born in Ipswich, age 39 years; disch. March 25, 1864, disability.
73. George A. Francis, age 21 years; trans. Dec. 8, 1862, to Bat. K, 4th Regt. U. S. Art.
74. William H. Hanson, age 21 years; disch. Feb. 25, 1863, disability.
75. David O. Nelson, son of Isaac and Sybil (Rice) Nelson, born in Winthrop, Me., March 24, 1819; disch. June 16, 1865, exp. of service.
76. George W. Poole, son of James D. and Nancy (Burrill) Poole, age 23 years; disch. June 16, 1865, exp. of service.
77. David A. Reed, son of Philip and Priscilla N. (Saunders) Reed, born in Newburyport, June 3, 1845; disch. June 16, 1865, exp. of service.



78. \* Philip Reed, son of Richard M. and Susan (Stackpole) Reed, born in Newburyport, age 39 years; disch. June 16, 1865, exp. of service; died Sept. 1, 1871, in Rowley; left a widow and children.
79. Robert D. Ricker, son of Ira and Hannah (Downs) Ricker, born in Gloucester, Aug. 31, 1826; disch. June 16, 1865, exp. of service.
80. Moses S. Saunders, son of Amos N. and Elizabeth (Pickard) Saunders, born in Rowley, March 9, 1841; disch. June 16, 1865, exp. of service.
81. Alonzo M. Spiller, son of Daniel E. and Sarah (Emerson) Spiller, born in Rowley, March 30, 1834; disch. June 16, 1865, exp. of service.
82. Alfred G. Worthley, son of Jonathan and Mary (Favor) Worthley, born in Bradford, Vt., May 30, 1820; trans. Feb. 10, 1865, to Vet. Res. Corps; disch. July 12, 1865.

The following enlisted August 18, 1862, for nine months in the Forty-eighth Regiment Massachusetts Infantry. They were mustered in September 24, 1862. This regiment was in the First Brigade, First Division, Nineteenth Army Corps, was stationed in Louisiana, took part in the siege and capture of Port Hudson, La., May 18 to July 9, 1863, and the engagement, July 13, 1863, at Donaldsonville, La.

83. Calvin R. Titcomb, son of Solomon and Eliza G. (Woodman) Titcomb, born in Newburyport, March 1, 1839; Co. D, sergt.; pro. May 1, 1863, first sergt.; in the Port Hudson campaign to May 24, 1863; disch. Sept. 3, 1863, exp. of service.
84. George B. Blodgett, son of Nathaniel C. and Mary (Cressey) Blodgett, born in Georgetown, Dec. 6, 1815; Co. D, corp.; in the Port Hudson campaign; corp. of color-guard, and taken pris. in action July 13, 1863, at Donaldsonville, La.; disch. Sept. 3, 1863, exp. of service.
85. \* Joseph B. Hale, son of Daniel and Lydia (Merrill) Hale, born in Rowley, Nov. 18, 1849; Co. B, corp.; died July 16, 1863, at Baton Rouge, La.; unmarried.
86. Ezra Hale, Jr., son of Ezra and Rebecca (Adams) Hale, born in Newburyport, Feb. 1, 1816; Co. B, corp.; in the Port Hudson and Donaldsonville campaigns; disch. Sept. 3, 1863, exp. of service; en. (2) in Co. A, First Batt'n Mass. H. Art. (3 years); mus. in Nov. 17, 1863, corp.; disch. Oct. 20, 1865, exp. of service.
87. Charles R. Todd, son of James P. and Lydia M. (Gerrish) Todd, born in Rowley, July 27, 1813; Co. D, corp.; disch. Sept. 3, 1863, exp. of service.
88. Lewis H. Hale, son of Ezra and Rebecca (Adams) Hale, born in Newburyport, Jan. 31, 1813; Co. B; disch. Sept. 3, 1863, exp. of service; en. (2) in Co. A, First Batt'n Mass. H. Art. (3 years); mus. in Nov. 17, 1863; disch. Oct. 20, 1865, exp. of service.
89. Bartlett Kelley, son of Patrick and Mary (Conley) Kelley, born in Boston, July 21, 1847; Co. D, severely wd. May 27, 1863, in an assault on Port Hudson, La.; disch. Sept. 3, 1863, exp. of service.
90. \* David H. Kneeland, son of Hiram R. and Rhoda (Kneeland) Kneeland, born in Rowley, May 9, 1813; Co. D, in the Port Hudson and Donaldsonville campaigns; disch. Sept. 3, 1863, exp. of service. En. (2) in Co. D, 1st Regt. Mass. H. Art. (3 years); mus. in July 20, 1863 (quota of Northampton); disch. Aug. 16, 1865, exp. of service; died June 6, 1884, in Ipswich; buried in Rowley.
91. Edward Millett, son of Joshua and Deborah (Howe) Millett, born in Rowley, March 27, 1821; Co. D; disch. Sept. 3, 1863, exp. of service.
92. \* George D. Millett, son of Edward and Lucinda (Dodge) Millett, born in Ipswich, Nov. 5, 1815; Co. D; in the Port Hudson and Donaldsonville campaigns; disch. Sept. 3, 1863, exp. of service; died Oct. 12, 1869, in Rowley; unmarried.
93. Greenleaf A. Pickard, son of James and Mary (Foster) Pickard, born in London, N. H., Oct. 10, 1844; Co. D; in Port Huron and Donaldsonville campaigns; disch. Sept. 3, 1863, exp. of service; en. (2) in Co. H, 3d Regt. Mass. H. Art. (3 years); mus. in Nov. 20, 1863; disch. Sept. 16, 1865, exp. of service.
94. \* James A. Potter, son of Edward H. and Sarah A. (Prescott) Potter, born in Rowley, Oct. 17, 1815; Co. D; killed May 27, 1863, in an assault on Port Hudson, La.; unmarried.
95. \* James Tibbets, son of William and Mary Tibbets, born in Wolfborough, N. H., age 44 years; Co. D; died May 16, 1863, in Baton Rouge, La.; left a widow and three children.
96. John F. Titcomb, son of Solomon and Eliza G. (Woodman) Titcomb, born in Newburyport, May 1, 1828; Co. D; disch. Sept. 3, 1863, exp. of service; en. (2) in Co. H, 60th Regt. Mass. Inf. (100 days); mus. in July 23, 1861, corp.; disch. Nov. 3, 1864, exp. of service.

Other men were in the nine months' service as follows:

97. Ignatius S. Dodge, son of Phineas and Sophia (Chaplin) Dodge, born in Rowley, Aug. 31, 1836; Co. F, 50th Regt. Mass. Inf.; mus. in Oct. 18, 1862 (quota of Topsfield); detailed as member of the band of Third Brigade, First Division, Nineteenth Corps; in the Port Hudson campaign; disch. Aug. 24, 1864, exp. of service.
98. Leach Clark, son of Ichabod and Esther D. Clark, born in Leroy, N. Y., age 25 years; 1st lieut., Co. K, 48th Regt. Mass. Inf.; mus. in Nov. 1, 1862 (quota of Boston); in the Port Hudson and Donaldsonville campaigns; disch. Sept. 3, 1863; exp. of service; en. (2) in Co. H, 3d Regt. Mass. H. Art. (3 years); mus. in Nov. 20, 1863; disch. Sept. 18, 1865, exp. of service.

#### Enlistments for three years:

99. Lyman Whittier, son of Moses T. and Julia (Hobson) Whittier, born in Rowley, Dec. 31, 1841; Co. B, 1st Batt'n Mass. H. Art.; mus. in Oct. 11, 1862; disch. June 29, 1865, exp. of service.
100. William H. Fisher, age 28 years; 15th Bat. Mass. L. Art.; mus. in Dec. 11, 1862; no record of discharge.
101. John O'Neal, age 23 years; 15th Bat. Mass. L. Art.; mus. in Dec. 11, 1862. Deserted Dec. 24, 1862.
102. Frank Newell, age 22 years; 15th Bat. Mass. L. Art.; mus. in Feb. 17, 1863. Deserted Feb. 1, 1864.
103. Charles W. Rogers, son of Eben P. and Elizabeth (Woodman) Rogers, born in Rowley, Feb. 3, 1839; Co. A, 1st Batt'n Mass. H. Art.; mus. in May 9, 1863; disch. Oct. 20, 1865, exp. of service.
104. Edward Welch, age 19 years; Co. C, 32d Regt. Mass. Inf.; mus. in Aug. 19, 1863; disch. May 22, 1865, order of Dept.
105. William Thode, age 21 years; Co. G, 32d Regt. Mass. Inf.; mus. in Aug. 21, 1863; disch. June 29, 1865, exp. of service.
106. Calvin L. Todd, son of Calvin L. and Mary J. (Todd) Todd, born in Rowley, May 23, 1847; Co. F, 3d Regt. Mass. H. Art.; mus. in Sept. 16, 1863; disch. Sept. 18, 1865, exp. of service.
107. Thomas H. Risk, son of William and Sarah (Thomas) Risk, age 21 years; Co. A, 1st Batt'n Mass. H. Art., corp.; mus. in Nov. 17, 1863; disch. Oct. 20, 1865, exp. of service.

#### New enlistments in 1864:

108. David O. Nelsen, Jr., son of David O. and Eunice T. (George) Nelsen, born in Rowley, Feb. 17, 1816; Co. K, 40th Regt. Mass. Inf. (3 years); mus. in Jan. 4, 1864; trans. to Co. G, 24th Regt. Mass. Inf. (3 years); pro. corp.; disch. Jan. 20, 1866, exp. of service.
109. Levi Kneeland, son of Josiah M. and Lydia Kneeland, age 18 years; Co. B, 59th Regt. Mass. Inf. (3 years); mus. in Jan. 5, 1864; trans. June 1, 1865, to Co. B, 57th Regt. Mass. Inf. (3 years); disch. July 30, 1865, exp. of service; wd. in action.
110. Amos Goodhue, son of Moses and Rebecca Goodhue, born in Andover, age 31 years; Co. C, 59th Regt. Mass. Inf.; mus. in Jan. 14, 1864; trans. June 1, 1865, to Co. C, 57th Regt. Mass. Inf.; disch. July 30, 1865, exp. of service.
111. Robert B. Risk, son of William and Sarah (Thomas) Risk, born in Georgetown, age 23 years; 14th Bat. Mass. L. Art. (3 years), sergt.; mus. in Feb. 27, 1864; disch. June 15, 1865, exp. of service.
112. John L. Ewell, son of Samuel and Mary (Stickney) Ewell, born in Rowley, Sept. 4, 1840; Co. F, 60th Regt. Mass. Inf. (100 days), corp.; mus. in July 20, 1864; disch. Nov. 30, 1864, exp. of service.
113. Andrew Ellsworth, son of Simeon and Hannah (Jewett) Ellsworth, born in Ipswich, July 7, 1847; Co. H, 60th Regt. Mass. Inf. (100 days); mus. in July 23, 1864; disch. Nov. 30, 1864, exp. of service; en. (2) in Co. C, 1st Batt'n Mass. H. Art.; mus. in Feb. 14, 1865; disch. June 24, 1865, exp. of service.
114. Daniel W. Dresser, son of Daniel and Alice (Cook) Dresser, born in Georgetown, July 24, 1844; 17th Unat. Co. Mass. Inf. (100 days); mus. in Aug. 5, 1864; disch. Nov. 12, 1864, exp. of service.
115. Benjamin S. Nelson, son of George M. and Eliza M. (Dodge) Nelson, born in Georgetown, June 4, 1846; 17th Unat. Co. Mass. Inf. (100 days); mus. in Aug. 5, 1864; disch. Nov. 12, 1864, exp. of service; en. (2) in same company for 1 year; mus. in Nov. 13, 1864, corp. (quota of Haverhill); disch. June 30, 1865, exp. of service; afterwards on in U. S. Army.





116. William H. H. Spiller, son of Daniel E. and Sarah (Emerson) Spiller, born in Topsfield, Nov. 12, 1846; 17th Unat. Co. Mass. Inf. (100 days); mus. in Aug. 5, 1864; disch. Nov. 12, 1864, exp. of service, en. (2) in Co. F, 1st Batt'n Mass. H. Art. (1 year); mus. in Feb. 14, 1865; disch. June 24, 1865, exp. of service.
117. Alfred K. Blackinton, son of Oliver and Paulina (Bradstreet) Blackinton, born in Rowley, Jan. 15, 1841; Co. H, 6th Regt. Pa. Cav. (3 years); mus. in Aug. 7, 1864; disch. June 5, 1865, exp. of service.
118. Jacob Dwinells, son of Jacob and Dorothy (Rogers) Dwinells, born in Rowley, June 28, 1838; Co. M, 4th Regt. Mass. H. Art. (1 year); mus. in Aug. 19, 1864; disch. June 17, 1865, exp. of service.
119. \* George A. Howe, son of George W. and Olive (Jewett) Howe, born in Ipswich, Aug. 29, 1843; Co. M, 4th Regt. Mass. H. Art. (1 year); mus. in Aug. 19, 1864; disch. Dec. 4, 1864, disability; died Nov. 12, 1876, in Rowley; left a widow and three children.
120. Asa F. Howe, son of William F. and Susan E. (Potter) Howe, born in Rowley, Jan. 31, 1845; Co. M, 4th Regt. Mass. H. Art. (1 year); mus. in Aug. 22, 1864 (quota of Dracut); disch. June 17, 1865, exp. of service.
121. Alfred Chaplin, son of Jeremiah and Eunice (Stickney) Chaplin, born in Rowley, May 29, 1817; Co. M, 4th Regt. Mass. H. Art. (1 year); mus. in Aug. 25, 1864 (quota of Boxford); disch. June 17, 1865, exp. of service.
122. Lyman M. Cressey, son of Bradstreet and Susan W. (Hooper) Cressey, born in Rowley, January 23, 1846; Co. M, 3d Regt. Mass. H. Art. (3 years), corp.; mus. in Aug. 26, 1864 (quota of Worthington); disch. June 17, 1865, exp. of service.
123. \* Joseph W. Jellison, son of Moses and Dolly B. (Bradstreet) Jellison, born in Rowley, July 19, 1846; Co. C, 2d Regt. Maine Cav.; en. and mus. in Oct. 18, 1864 (1 year); joined the regt. as a recruit Feb. 1, 1865; disch. Oct. 12, 1865, exp. of service; died Oct. 31, 1865, in Rowley; unmarried.

Three men enlisted in the Twenty-fifth Unattached Company Massachusetts Infantry (one year); mustered in December 9, 1864; discharged June 29, 1865, expiration of service, viz:

124. Benjamin J. Howe, son of George W. and Olive (Jewett) Howe, born in Ipswich; age 26 years.
125. George W. Millett, son of Joshua and Deborah (Howe) Millett, born in Rowley, May 25, 1826.
126. John P. Millett, son of Joshua and Deborah (Howe) Millett, born in Rowley, Sept. 15, 1839.

#### Enlistments in 1865:

127. George H. Dresser, son of Daniel and Abner (Cook) Dresser, born in Newburyport, January 18, 1847; Co. C, 1st Bat. Mass. H. Art.; mus. in Feb. 14, 1865 (1 year); disch. June 24, 1865; exp. of service.
128. Timothy A. Emerson, son of Timothy W. and Mary (Conant) Emerson, born in Rowley, April 29, 1845; Co. C, 1st Bat. Mass. H. Art.; mus. in Feb. 14, 1865 (1 year); disch. June 24, 1865, exp. of service.
129. Pauline S. Todd, son of Calvin L. and Mary J. (Todd) Todd, born in Rowley, Nov. 21, 1848; Co. F, 1st Bat. Mass. H. Art.; mus. in Feb. 18, 1865 (1 year); disch. June 24, 1865, exp. of service.
130. Richard B. W. Cheney, son of John C. and Mary S. (Perley) Cheney, born in Rowley, Dec. 25, 1848; Co. D, 62d Regt. Mass. Inf. (1 year); mus. in March 4, 1865; disch. May 5, 1865, exp. of service.
131. Noah Spright, age 22 years; 1st Regt. N. C. Art.; mus. in March 13, 1865, on the quota of Rowley.
132. Caleb Williams, age 35 years; 1st Regt. N. C. Art.; mus. in March 18, 1865, on the quota of Rowley.

The town has filled its quota upon every call made by the President for troops, and a surplus of fourteen men remains to its credit. So Rowley stood at the end of the war!

The doings of the men at home in the dark days of the Civil War should be known to the generation then unborn. In this town the real Democrats, as well as the whole Republican party, did all in their power to aid enlistments and to care for the families of those who had become soldiers. All our citizens of foreign

birth were loyal. Of the men who enlisted, probably there were as many of one political party as of the other.

But there were a few political Ishmaelites who claimed affiliation with the Democratic party; these favored the enemy. They styled themselves "copper-heads." They were cowards, blatant and harmless. When our army met defeat and our men lay bleeding on the red field of war, these craven miscreants rejoiced. Such was the respect for law and order that they were unmolested.

From the beginning Rowley was a manufacturing as well as a farming town.

Many of the first settlers were weavers, and in connection with the fulling-mill, the production of cloth was long a profitable industry.

As early as 1680 ship-building was carried on at the warehouse landing by the Stewarts, who continued in this trade until they sold to Edward Saunders, about 1710. Saunders and his descendants continued the business for more than a century. About 1813 Capt. Nathaniel Perley built a vessel of ninety tons measurement, on Rowley common, one mile and a half from the river. This ship was named "Country's Wonder," and was drawn to the river in one day, by more than one hundred yoke of oxen. At the head of the warehouse road the teamsters stopped for lunch and Capt. Perley emptied a barrel of old Jamaica rum into the Saunders well that all might drink.

Deacon Thomas Mighill had a malt-kiln as early as 1615.

Tanneries were established here within a few years after the settlement. In 1800 there were nine tanners in town, and in 1839 about six hundred cords of bark were brought by ship.

Since the railroad passed through the town (1840) a gradual change has been going on in the farming interests—few oxen are now kept; less land under cultivation; less proportional profit in old style farming; less farmers.

The manufacture of boots and shoes was begun here by Abraham Jewett about 1703. He continued in the business to the time of his death, 2d of November, 1722. Among his old papers is this memoranda:

"The two sides of leather which I had of Capt. Osgood, Salem, Decem: 31: 1717; I waid Janu: 6: and they waid but 17 p<sup>d</sup> and half, one 7 p<sup>d</sup>: one 10 p<sup>d</sup> and I left 61—14—00 in money for them: they came to 1—6—3: there is due me from Capt. Osgood 0—7—9."

This business so begun was continued by various persons to the present century, and to Moses Dole, who, with his son, Lewis H. Dole, continued it to our day.

To-day F. W. Henderson & Co. are by far the largest manufacturers. Wm. C. Foster, John F. Todd and D. N. Prime & Sons are also engaged in the business. The total value of the yearly product of these four manufacturers is about \$200,000.



Within a few years the manufacture of *heels* and *rands* has been largely carried on here. So far as the total disbursements for local labor is concerned this exceeds any industry in town. F. L. Burke has the most employees. The total value of his average yearly product is about \$100,000. Milton Ellsworth and S. A. Boynton are also engaged largely in this business.

The manufacture of *inner-soles* is carried on by Bernard Damon.

Henry P. Boynton, John Boynton, Timothy W. Emerson, George Kimball, D. N. Prime & Sons, and Jeremiah M. Todd have general stores. Albert E. Bailey has a well filled drug-store. George E. Daniels has built up a good business in the manufacture of common-sense wagons and farmers' carts.

**THE GLEN MILLS.**—The grist-mill erected by Thomas Nelson and the fulling-mill erected by John Pearson became the sole property of John Pearson, Jr., and continued in the Pearson family until purchased by Samuel Dummer, father of the present owner, Nathaniel N. Dummer, in 1820. Mr. Dummer, Sr., introduced the carding of rolls to supply the county demand, also the manufacture of snuff. Since 1856 the milling of grain exclusively has been carried on by N. N. Dummer, and the mills now include not only the machinery and fixtures of all first-class establishments of this kind, but many original and important processes not elsewhere adopted.

The mills are now driven by three turbine wheels and a sixty horse-power engine. They have elevator capacity for fourteen thousand bushels of grain, beside storage-room for manufactured products. These products include almost everything produced from cereals for table use.

**TOWN RECORDS AND TOWN CLERKS.**—The town records of Rowley are very full and complete. Not a leaf is missing from the books containing the entries of births, marriages and deaths. All the births, intentions of marriage, marriages and deaths, from 1639 to 1844, have been lately copied, indexed and bound in two volumes.

The record of the doings of the town is contained in eight volumes.

The clerks have been as follows:

John Miller.....	1639-40
Francis Parrat.....	1641-50
John Trumble.....	1656, Fifth Month, 1697, died in office
Thomas Leaver.....	1657-82
Joseph Boynton.....	1683-86
Samuel Platts.....	1687-89
Robert Greenough.....	1690-93
Thomas Nelson.....	1694-96
Joseph Boynton.....	1697-1700
Samuel Platts.....	1701-18
Thomas Lambert.....	1719-54
Humphrey Hobson.....	1755; August, 1773, died in office
Thomas Mighill.....	August, 1773-99
Joshua Jewett.....	1800-21
Thomas Gage.....	1822-37

<sup>1</sup> The list of clerks prior to 1694 is given as correctly as the records will permit, but is believed to be incomplete.

Oliver Blackinton.....	1838-41
Nathaniel Mighill.....	1812; August, 1815, died in office
Daniel N. Prime.....	August, 1845-46
John Proctor.....	1847-48
Thomas E. Payson.....	1849-52
John S. Prime.....	1853-82
Albert E. Bailey.....	1883-89
Benjamin P. Mighill.....	1886

POST-OFFICE DEPARTMENT,  
{ OFFICE OF THE FIRST ASSISTANT POSTMASTER-GENERAL  
Washington, D. C., July 31, 1886.

Sir:—Complying with your request of May 28, 1886, I transmit herewith the history of the post-offices of Rowley and Byfield, Essex County, Massachusetts.

Very respectfully,

A. E. STEVENSON,

First Assistant Postmaster-General

GEORGE G. BLODGETTE, Esq., Rowley, Mass.

#### POST-OFFICE AT ROWLEY, ESSEX COUNTY, MASS.

Postmaster.	Date of Appointment
James Smith.....	December 11, 1806
Edward Smith.....	March 16, 1825
Frederick Lambert.....	November 11, 1829
Benjamin H. Smith.....	March 17, 1835
Oliver Blackinton.....	August 23, 1847
Richard Herbert.....	November 17, 1851
Joseph Johnson.....	December 21, 1853
Oliver Blackinton.....	March 28, 1854
Ezekiel Bailey.....	May 12, 1854
Thomas B. Ctessey.....	April 18, 1861
J. S. Todd.....	April 13, 1869
Frank E. Jackson.....	April 13, 1881
Albert E. Bailey.....	January 27, 1886

#### BYFIELD.

Benjamin Coleman.....	January 11, 1826
Samuel W. Stickney.....	April 11, 1827
Benjamin Coleman.....	May 26, 1828
Martin Root.....	April 1, 1847
Henry Durant.....	May 3, 1851
George C. Lincoln.....	September 23, 1852
Paul Titcomb.....	June 23, 1853
Samuel S. Moody.....	July 3, 1854
Benjamin Pearson.....	March 1, 1862
Harriet L. Moody.....	March 30, 1868
Justin O. Rogers.....	October 17, 1873

From Rowley, as originally incorporated, has been set off Bradford (then including Groveland) in 1675, Boxford in 1685 and Georgetown in 1838, while the Bradstreet, Hammond and Harris farms were annexed from Ipswich in 1784. For many years the population has been about twelve hundred.

#### AGGREGATE OF POLLS, PROPERTY, TAXES, ETC., MAY 1st, 1886.

Number of polls for taxation.....	360
Tax on each.....	\$2 00
Total value of personal property.....	87,441 00
Total value real estate.....	406,782 00
Total valuation.....	554,223 00
Increase in valuation.....	8,789 00
Total tax assessed for 1886.....	7,359 33
Rate per thousand.....	12 00
Number of tax-payers.....	602
Number of persons paying only poll tax.....	114
Number of persons paying tax on property.....	488
Number of horses.....	228
Number of cows.....	394
Number of sheep.....	27
Number of other neat cattle.....	115
Number of swine.....	90
Number of dwelling-houses.....	279
Number of acres of land for taxation.....	10,310

The following is a list of all persons qualified to





vote in the town of Rowley, November 2, 1886, as certified by Milton Ellsworth, Francis D. Henderson, George F. Kimball and Benjamin P. Mighill, registrars.

Adams, Edwin H.	Davenport, Byron S.	Jacques, Edwin L.
Adams, Frank H.	Davenport, John L.	Jacques, Harry A.
Adams, Lewis A.	Dillon, Edward.	Jellison, Nathan H.
Adams, Warren H.	Dodge, Ignatius S.	Jewett, Edward W.
Amittage, Stephen.	Dodge, Joseph D.	Jewett, Herbert.
	Dodge, Paul A.	Jewett, Herbert L.
	Dodge, Phineas.	Jewett, Mark.
Bailey, Albert E.	Dodge, Phineas A.	Jewett, Moses C.
Bailey, Edward.	Dole, Charles.	Jewett, Oscar A.
Bailey, Frederick.	Dole, Charles L.	Johnson, George J.
Bailey, George G.	Dole, Enoch I.	Johnson, Joseph.
Bailey, Willard L.	Dole, Frederick S.	Johnson, Joseph (2d).
Bartlett, Benjamin W.	Dole, John P.	Johnson, Nehemiah.
Bartlett, Merrill C.	Dresser, Charles P.	Johnson, Samuel P.
Bean, Josiah W.	Dresser, Daniel W.	Johnson, Walter N.
Beles, Appolon G.	Dresser, George H.	Johnson, William.
Bishop, Amos.	Dresser, John M.	Johnson, William G.
Bishop, Arthur.	Dresser, Samuel P.	Kelley, Bartlett.
Blackinton, Alfred K.	Dummer, Joseph N.	Kelley, William W.
Blackinton, Jacob P.	Dummer, Nathaniel N.	Kent, Jacob.
Blackinton, Oliver A.	Duma, Patrick.	Keyes, Eben S.
Blodgett, George B.	Durgin, Samuel A.	Keyes, Henry E.
Boyes, Frank A.	Dwinnels, John E.	Kimball, Charles.
Boynton, Henry.		Kimball, Edward A.
Boynton, Henry P.		Kimball, George.
Boynton, John.	Edgerly, Charles R.	Kimball, George F.
Boynton, John E.	Ellsworth, Milton.	Kimball, William.
Bradstreet, Alfred K.	Ellsworth, Simon.	Kneeland, Hiram.
Bradstreet, Charles W.	Elwell, William O.	
Bradstreet, Daniel W.	Emerson, John W.	Lambert, George N.
Bradstreet, Frank W.	Emerson, Leslie M.	Lambert, John.
Bradstreet, George H.		Law, William.
Bradstreet, Moses.	Foss, Benjamin W.	Littlefield, George D.
Bradstreet, Moses B.	Foss, Joshua.	Littlefield, Moses F.
Bradstreet, Thomas.	Foss, Joshua N.	Lunt, Charles A.
Brown, George W.	Foss, William A.	Lunt, George A.
Brown, Julian W.	Foster, Harland C.	
Barbark, Joseph H.	Foster, Walter C.	Maguire, Edward.
Burke, Solomon F. L.	Foster, William C.	Mahony, Edward L.
Burke, Tom Winthrop.	Foster, William S.	Mahony, John.
		Marshall, Charles E.
Campbell, Augustine.	Gilday, John.	Marshall, John.
Carpenter, Almon E.	Gilday, Patrick.	Marshall, John A.
Carter, John Q. A.	Goodwin, George P.	Merrill, Byron J.
Celby, Henry A.	Goss, Frank M.	Merrill, Daniel.
Chadbourne, Lewis G.		Merrill, Frank.
Chapin, Alfred.	Hale, Charles.	Mighill, Benjamin P.
Chaplin, Charles.	Hale, Charles W.	Mighill, Charles P.
Chapman, Benjamin D.	Hale, Daniel H.	Millett, Austin L.
Chapman, John.	Hale, Everett B.	Millett, Edward.
Ched, Thomas F.	Hale, Ezra.	Millett, Edward A.
Churchill, Willis E.	Hale, James O.	Millett, George W.
Clark, John P.	Hale, Joshua.	Millett, John P.
Collins, Charles.	Hale, Thaddeus.	Millett, Joshua R.
Conant, Gilbert R.	Hale, Thomas.	Morrill, Edward W., Jr.
Cook, Arthur L.	Hale, Thomas P.	
Cook, Charles E.	Hale, William M.	Nelson, David O.
Cook, James H.	Hardy, Gorham H.	O'Brien, Daniel.
Cook, Jeremiah.	Hardy, Gorham R.	
Crossey, George H.	Haven, John G.	Peabody, Willard.
Crossey, George J.	Hazen, Nathan T.	Perley, Allen.
Crossey, Moses B.	Henderson, Daniel S.	Perley, Charles H.
	Henderson, Francis D.	Perley, David E.
	Herbert, Charles.	Perley, James M.
Damon, Bernard.	Hicken, Albert A.	Perley, William.
Damon, Ebenezer B.	Hicken, Thomas W.	Pickard, Charles A.
Daniels, Adam F.	Hobson, Elvathan.	Pickard, Josiah T.
Daniels, Amos B.	Howe, Amos W.	Pickard, Moses.
Daniels, Edward A.	Hubbard, Calvin.	Pike, Daniel P.
Daniels, George E.	Hutclinton, Lewis.	Pike, John.
Daniels, George W.		
Daniels, John F.	Jackson, Daniel K.	
Daniels, Moses A.	Jackson, Frank E.	
Daniels, Solomon E.		

Fishbury, Amos D.	Samuel, David.	Thompson, Charles S.
Plummer, James T.	Samuel, John P.	Tilson, Jonathan.
Poor, George F.	Searle, Elijah P.	Titcomb, Andrew.
Potter, Amos B.	Searle, Samuel.	Titcomb, Calvin R.
Potter, Benjamin B.	Sheehan, John.	Titcomb, Calvin R., Jr.
Potter, Edward H.	Smith, David E.	Todd, Charles H.
Prescott, George.	Smith, Edward C.	Todd, Frank P.
Prescott, George K.	Smith, Jacob J.	Todd, Frederick.
Prime, Daniel B.	Smith, James H.	Todd, James N.
Prime, George B.	Smith, Walter E.	Todd, Jeremiah M.
Prime, John S.	Smith, Woodbury.	Todd, John F.
Prime, Samuel S.	Spiller, Alonzo M.	Todd, Joseph S.
Prime, Thomas.	Spiller, Thomas.	Todd, Lewis C.
	Spiller, William H. H.	Todd, Moses.
Richards, John M.	Stewart, James C.	Todd, Nathan.
Richardson, Edward.	Stockbridge, Seth.	Todd, William.
Richardson, Edward H.	Stockbridge, A. J.	Travis, Thomas.
Ricker, Robert D.	Swaney, William.	
Riley, William J.		Vining, Frank M.
Rogers, Charles W.	Taylor, Nathaniel C.	
Rogers, Harry B.	Tenney, Francis.	Walker, Charles H.
Rogers, William H.	Tenney, John.	Walton, Augustus L.
Rundlett, James P.	Tenney, John H.	Worthley, Alfred G.
Rundlett, Oliver A.	Tenney, Silas M.	

In the beautiful valley Rogers selected, with Muzzy and Prospect Hills to the south, Bradford Street and Hunsley Hills to the west, and Ox Pasture Hill to the north, on the same house-lots the first settlers laid out, their houses embowered in trees, dwell the Rowley men of to-day. For centuries from out this peaceful vale Rowley's sons have gone forth to mingle in the turmoil of the world; some in foreign lands, some in busy marts of trade, some to build new homes in far-off States, some to delve in mines, some to stand, as on Zion's Hill, pointing in the Master's name the way to life eternal, some 'mid clash of arms and cannon's roar to breast the death-shots of their country's foe. Aged grandsires sitting by the open fire, snow bound, tell to willing ears the story of these wanderers, how they succeeded, suffered or succumbed.

When summer has clothed in green the good old town, her sons return to view again the home of their ancestors or of their youth; they bring their little ones to roam in field and wood and mossy glens; they tell again the story of some old rock or rugged oak, and at even-tide listen to the resounding sea, until the curfew warns them of closing day.

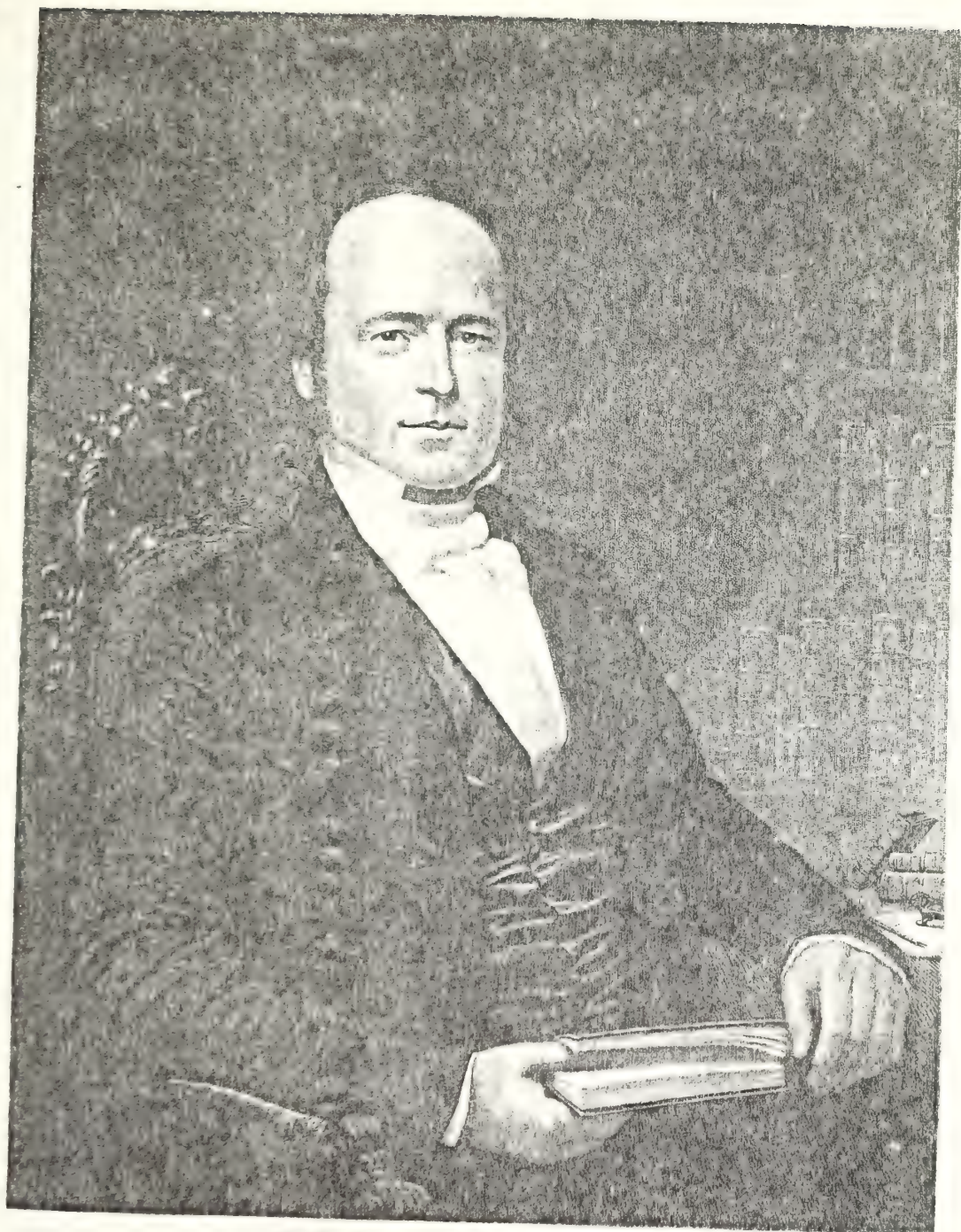
## BIOGRAPHICAL.

REV. JOHN PIKE, D.D.

The character of a man depends much on his ancestors, and to sketch one's life, in such a manner as to have an appreciative knowledge of it, we must look back to the characteristics of his fathers. The Pikes, from the first settlement of the town of Newbury to which they came pioneers with Parker and his followers in 1635, have been noted for intelligence, liberality of opinions and independence of action. John and Robert were here in time to listen to Mr. Par-







Very truly Your pastor  
John Wike.





ker's first sermon, delivered under the wide-spreading branches of a majestic oak, on the north side of the river, now called Parker, near where the bridge stands. They were men of education, and at once had influence in civil and religious affairs. They were the partisans of Winthrop for Governor as against Vane, and one of them went on foot to Cambridge, forty miles, to take the oath of a freeman and qualify to vote. They were men of ability and sterling virtues, ready to express and maintain their opinions with great power. Robert Pike, in Salisbury, was one of the first men of Massachusetts at that day, and more than a century in advance of his times. He resisted the dogmatic authority of the clergy and suffered excommunication from the church; he opposed the action of the General Court against the Quakers and was disfranchised; he condemned the witchcraft delusion with much efficiency; and in all these issues finally triumphed. Still all the time he was a Puritan of the Puritans, unshaken in his faith.

We should expect to find the descendants of such men, what we have found them, energetic, not appalled at difficulties, determined for what was right in their minds, and brave in defense of their sentiments. Such was Nicholas Pike, author of the first arithmetic published in America, the friend of George Washington, and the planter of the liberty tree in front of his residence in 1775, the branches of which arch State Street to this day. Such was Gen. Zebulon Montgomery Pike who explored the Rocky Mountains, gave name to Pike's Peak, and died in battle in the War of 1812-15. Such is the poet-soldier, Albert Pike, one of the heroes at Buena Vista of whom Gen. Taylor made honorable mention. The family has given us scholars, poets, clergymen, teachers, statesmen and jurists.

Of this family is Rev. John Pike, D.D., minister at Rowley for a whole generation; a high-minded gentleman and a devout Puritan, who has honored his profession and performed its duties under disabilities that would have long since retired a weaker mind. He was born in Newburyport, July 3, 1815, and is consequently seventy-four years old. His father, Richard Pike, a well-known and honored citizen, possessed of those Christian virtues that adorn and endear the individual, resided in the house, afterwards occupied by Hon. Caleb Cushing, on one of the finest streets of New England. His mother was Mary, daughter of Jacob Boardman, tender, benevolent and pious, who after her husband's death, devoted all her energies to secure for her son, a liberal education that should fit him for the highest usefulness in any calling he might pursue. It was by her, in that singularly Puritan home, yielding instruction in the Bible, the catechism and other books which secure clear thinking and correct living, such as formed the eminent characters in the early days of New England, that the lad's mind was moulded.

Carefully she blended amusement and work, and he has borne the marks of gravity and mirthfulness, each in its own place, ever since. His school instruction was largely committed to Alfred W. Pike, an excellent classical scholar and a thorough teacher. By him he was fitted for college; and while under him the greater light of the Holy Spirit broke upon his mind, and led him to accept Jesus Christ as his Saviour. This was the pivotal point of his life.

He entered Bowdoin College in 1829, when Parker Cleaveland was at the height of his intellectual achievements and glory; and when the youthful poet, Longfellow, was entering upon his career as professor of modern languages. In college he was diligent and brilliant, with a character mature above his years. He was graduated in 1833, and the next day, with six others of his class, elected a member of the Phi Beta Kappa Society, and was afterwards made president of his class. Bowdoin College has honored him as among her distinguished sons. From 1863 to 1887, when he resigned, he was a member of the board of overseers, and served on the committee that secured for the college two valuable presidents. He was also on the committee for the reception of President Grant, when he honored the college by his presence at its commencement, and was himself honored by it, with one of its highest degrees. Dr. Pike has always kept up his interest in his *alma mater* which bestowed on him the title of D.D. in 1866. We may say the same of many other institutions of learning with which he has had connection. He has been a trustee of Dummer Academy since 1842, and for thirty-five years president of the board. He was also a trustee of the Theological Seminary at Hartford, Conn., for some years. To all endeavors to advance education from the primary school to the college he has lent a willing hand and an eloquent tongue.

Leaving college he soon commenced his theological studies, entering the Andover Seminary in 1834. Here a formidable obstacle was to be encountered. In his last year at Bowdoin his eyesight weakened, and that weakness had so increased that he was obliged to employ a young man to read to and write for him; nor was it ever fully restored, but finally ended in total blindness. So strongly, however, was he impressed that he must be about his Master's work, that he resolutely persevered, graduated with honor in 1837, and at once entered upon his calling.

His first engagement was, for a few weeks, at North Falmouth; but he was induced by the excellent families with which he became acquainted; the varied and abundant assistance in reading and writing given him; the remarkable healthfulness of the village; the beauty of its scenery, its seashore and forests; and the zealous religious feeling that prevailed, to remain there three years. In 1840 he accepted the call of the Congregational Church at Rowley to become their pastor, and there has been his life-work, so beautiful in its results and so pleasant in all its relations. The





year following he married Deborah, only child of Hon. Daniel Adams, of Newbury, a lady every way adapted to the work which was before her. Carefully educated, of fine tastes and industrious habits, she continued the reading and writing for him; and thus was eyes and hands unto him. This pastorate at Rowley, we may not narrate in all its details; but this one fact he established, that the right man in the right place may continue his usefulness to old age or death. He had examples near at hand to follow, as Rev. Mr. Braman's, at Georgetown, and Rev. Dr. Withington's, at Newbury; but without such examples he was wedded to the Christian and Puritan idea, that when the minister accepts the pastorate, it is as much a life engagement as when he marries a wife. Thenceforth he belongs to the parish and the parish belongs to him; he is to serve the people, and the people to make due and proper returns therefor. He is to baptize, receive into communion, to marry, to teach the children, to counsel and encourage the adults, bury the dead, and stand by and assist them to the portals of heaven, unless first called to enter himself. All of this he has done, and in the doing had continuous reward. He has won the respect of the town and the affections of the people, so that now when blindness is upon him the little boys and girls even delight to hear him and listen to his pleasant words. We know of no man who has a more abiding place in the hearts of the community, or who has more formed the living generation by his labors among them and their parents. Widely known in the churches he has had many opportunities, in the almost half century of his busy life to go to more wealthy and fashionable parishes, but promptly he has returned answer: "It is not a thought to be entertained. Here are my people, faithful and true; and I am their servant in the Lord. So I promised to be, and so I shall remain to the end." That end came to him in 1868, when blindness made it necessary to terminate a pastorate of twenty-eight years, during which the church had a constant religious growth and many seasons of revival.

Since his resignation, not to be idle, or cease to act for the good of others, he has preached every Sunday for twelve years, at the house of correction in Ipswich; nor have his labors been in vain. His blindness, shutting out the light of the material sun seems to have given greater internal and spiritual illumination, which has fitted him for this later field of usefulness among what are termed the criminal and dangerous classes.

As a pulpit orator, Dr. Pike excelled. What he had to do he endeavored to do well. There was no lack of careful preparation. The end to be reached was to leave a thought in the mind that might germinate and bear fruit, rather than a word in the ear that would pass quickly away. He was always impressive. Such was his voice, his action suited to the words as the words were to the occasion that he left the im-

print of ability and full confidence in his sincerity and love for souls. His sermons were frequently of a very high order, combining the logic of the bar, the rhetoric of the school, and that pathos that so becomes the pulpit. His election sermon before the legislature of 1857, and that delivered on the twenty-fifth anniversary of his settlement are good specimens of his work. He was frequently called on for sermons and addresses for special occasions.

We have called Dr. Pike a Puritan, a designation honorable and fitting. From the beginning he has been fully identified with the doctrines and ecclesiastical polity of the Congregational Churches of Massachusetts and the country. He has been longer connected with the Essex North Association than any other member, and with one exception is the oldest man in it; was a member of the National Council at Boston in 1865, and presided over the State Association of Ministers at Westfield. He has presided over many councils and conferences, in which he has not failed to urge upon the churches the value of the faith of their fathers. Conservative by nature and tender in action, he has been highly useful in reconciling churches and pastors, when at variance, and restoring fellowship between different churches. He was one of the actors whose labors terminated the division of the Congregationalists of Massachusetts into two religious bodies and reuniting the Boston and American Tract Societies. His voice has always been for peace and harmony where they could be had without a sacrifice of principle: hence he was an admirable presiding officer and his services were invaluable on committees and at councils. He was a member of the famous Storrs-Buddington council at Brooklyn, N. Y. It was also upon his report, at the general Association of Churches, at Lowell, that the Board of Ministerial Aid, which was afterwards chartered by the Commonwealth, was formed, and on the executive committee he has been ever since.

There is something very beautiful in the picture of such a life--the life of a village clergyman, whose praises are in all the churches, but whose home and heart are in his own parish; who can look around upon the fruits of his labors and be cheered in ripened age by the voices of friends and comforters who welcomed him to their firesides as children would a father, feeling that they are purer and wiser for his words and acts. For twenty-eight years he stood with and for them; and now when retired, afflicted, but not discouraged, blind, but cheerful, he has the respect, good wishes and love of all classes and all ages. As years gather the world narrows, and we think less of what is distant and more of home and immediate friends. May Dr. Pike be long spared to enjoy the calm twilight of a well spent life.



## CHAPTER XCII.

## ESSEX.

BY JOHN PRINCE.

*Probationary—First English Residents (White, Bradstreet and Cogswell)—The Office and Elder Settlers—Original Town-holter—An Early Inhabitant of Essex—A Letter Concerning Massachusetts's Earliest Inhabitant was the Elder Winthrop—Further English Settlers.*

ALTHOUGH classed among the smaller towns of the county, this place may nevertheless take rank in historical interest and significance with some of the larger towns, and also with some of the cities.

Its ecclesiastical annals, its military record, and its progressive industrial development, furnish conspicuous examples of courageous resistance to the encroachments of prerogative in civil administration; of the sturdy, unyielding maintenance of the functions and independence of the separate parish and church organizations, which at an early and formative period materially helped to save New England Congregationalism from degenerating into virtual prelacy; of patriotic devotion to the common weal, unheededful of deprivation, exposure and personal danger, through all the alternating seasons of temporary triumph and disheartening defeat, in the different wars; and of patient endurance in manly toil, and of advancement in constructive skill, which in so many instances have secured worldly competence, and nurtured the steadfastness and reliability of character which are among the elements of the strength and prosperity of the nation.

Our people have been enabled to afford their sons the facilities for classical training and culture, which will readily recall some brilliant illustrations in mature scholarship and in legal and forensic ability.

From among the natives of this place have emanated two judges of the Court of Common Pleas, one of them of the colonial period; four judges of the Court of Sessions, one of them the chief justice; three judges of Probate, one of them of the colonial time; two college professors, besides one other of much distinction, who, though born in another part of the county, was the son of a native of Chebacco, of high repute as a physician, and for some time a surgeon in the Revolutionary army; six commissioned officers in the French and English War; seven commissioned officers in the Revolution, four of them of distinction; thirteen clergymen, nine of them college graduates, two of them doctors of divinity, and one a presiding elder; fourteen physicians, all regular graduates in medicine and surgery; eight members of the legal profession; two delegates to the State Constitutional Convention of 1789; two delegates to the State Convention of 1788, which ratified the Constitution of the United States; one delegate to the State Constitu-

tional Convention of 1829; three State Senators, and one Senator of the United States.

A native citizen, who commanded a regiment at the siege of Louisburg, was a member of the colonial House of Representatives (sometimes called deputies) for fifteen years, and at one session was chosen Speaker of that body, but the Governor, actuated by political hostility, negatived the election in the exercise of a power then vested in the executive. Afterwards, under the administration of another incumbent, this citizen was elected for six consecutive years a member of the Governor's Council. Of the native members of the colonial Legislature from the first settlement, a full enumeration is not here attempted.

One native clergyman, a graduate of Harvard College, officiated a few years as chaplain at a garrison during the wars with the Indians.

Of the earlier resident clergymen not natives, one of whom was pastor here for forty-five years, and another for more than half a century, four were army chaplains, three of them serving as such in two wars—one in King Philip's war and in an expedition against Quebec, and two in the war between the English and French and in the American Revolution. Two of the present pastors of churches in the town were army chaplains during the late Civil War.

FIRST ENGLISH RESIDENTS—WHITE, BRADSTREET AND COGSWELL.—Dr. Crowell, in his history of Essex, designates 1631 as the date of the beginning of the settlement of this place. He states that in that year, "William White and Goodman Bradstreet removed toward Chebacco River." He then says: "History gives us no account of these two families." But whether these data were given on the authority of tradition or of some brief entry in the town records of Ipswich, is not mentioned.

Two different persons, each named William White, are alluded to in those records as immigrants to Ipswich, but no particulars are stated as to their first abiding place. Reference is likewise made to two families of the name of Bradstreet. One of them was the family of Simon, afterwards Governor Bradstreet. He "possessed a planting-lot in High Street," in Ipswich town, in 1638, and "seven acres on the hill on the north side of the river," in 1647. Before 1658, he had removed with his family to Andover. There is no reason to believe that he was ever at any time a resident of Chebacco. Of the other Bradstreet, some personal details will be found further along in these pages.

A William White came from England, in the ship Mary-and-John, in 1634, and, as is recorded of him, "first sat down at Ipswich." He removed to Newbury, in 1635, with several of his fellow passengers, among them Rev. Thomas Parker, Nicholas Noyes, (ancestor of Rev. Nicholas Noyes, of Salem, so active and bitter in the witchcraft trials of 1692), Henry Sewall, William White, William Moody and Richard





Kent. They left thus early to begin a new settlement, the General Court having in that year ordered the bounds of Ipswich and Quascacunquen [Newbury] to be laid out. From Newbury, William White removed to Pentucket, now Haverhill; of which place, with the latter name, he was one of the original founders, his signature being appended to the deed of conveyance, as a witness to the signatures, by mark, of the Indians, Passagus and Saggahew, who sold the land to the English settlers in 1642.

It is not impossible that he may have been the identical William White, the early immigrant to Chebacco, tarrying there but a short time. He had one son, John White, who died in 1668, at the age of twenty-nine, leaving a son John, who had fourteen children, of whose numerous posterity many are still living in various parts of the country, some of them very distinguished people. He married, as his second wife, in 1682, widow Sarah Foster, of Ipswich, step-mother of Reginald Foster, Jr., of Chebacco. He died in Haverhill, in 1690, at the age of eighty years.

The eminence in Essex known as White's Hill, is supposed to have been originally so called, from its having been at some time owned by a resident of that name, but whether an early or later resident is not indicated by any record.

In 1647, a William White sold to Ralph Dix, of Ipswich, a farm at Chebacco containing two hundred acres; and in 1691, Thomas White sold to William Goodhue, Jr., eighty-two acres, comprising house, orchard, plowing and pasture adjoining Mr. Cogswell's farm—probably the present Marshall farm, in the angle of the road on Northern Avenue. But whether Thomas White himself or a tenant had occupied the premises at the time of the sale, does not appear.

An immigrant named Humphrey Bradstreet came in the ship *Elizabeth*, from Ipswich, in England, in 1634, with his wife Bridget and four children, one son and three daughters,—John, Hannah, Martha and May; and there were subsequently born to them, in this country, three more—a son and two daughters—Moses, Sarah, and Rebecca. This Humphrey was, I am satisfied, the Goodman Bradstreet who was one of the first two settlers mentioned.

Humphrey Bradstreet was made freeman, May 6, 1635, and was thereafter entitled to be called Mr. Previously, he was, of course, termed Goodman. He was undoubtedly the Bradstreet who came to Chebacco, and, according to the Ipswich records, had a house-lot granted to him, not long after his arrival, the precise locality of which, however, is not mentioned. Ten years afterwards, he had another house-lot granted him, which was in the central or western part of Ipswich; and still later he owned a farm, which was subsequently annexed to Rowley; in which latter place he died in 1665, leaving several children, one of whom, Moses, became a physician.

The John Bradstreet, of Rowley, of whom it is mentioned in Winthrop's Journal, that he was whipped for having "familiarity with the Devil," was one of this Humphrey's sons. He was accused of having bewitched a dog, and the dog was hung as a witch. The witnesses against him were Francis Parat and wife, of Rowley, and William Bartholomew, of Ipswich; who testified that he told them that he had read in a book of magic, and that he heard a voice asking what work he had for him; and the voice answered, "Go make a bridge of sand over the sea; go make a ladder of sand up to heaven, and go to God and come down no more." It is supposed that Bradstreet had related to these witnesses what he had heard in a dream; and yet, upon that testimony, principally, he was held on a charge of witchcraft, and, according to Winthrop, publicly whipped.

Felt mentions that in 1652, for the same alleged offence "familiarity with the Devil," a person was sentenced at the court in Ipswich, to pay a fine of twenty shillings or be whipped; but he does not give the name of the culprit. He may have been the John Bradstreet referred to, and perhaps he chose to have the "charge" "scored" upon his back, rather than to pay cash down as a fine. But, alas! what a degradation, not only to him, but to his silly and credulous accusers and the barbarously deluded jury or magistrate.

John Cogswell, an ancestor of Ralph Waldo Emerson, Oliver Wendell Holmes, and many other distinguished persons, came from England in the year 1635, and early in 1636 settled in that part of Ipswich which is now the town of Essex. He at first resided for a short time in the central part of Ipswich, upon a grant of land of eight acres, which comprised what was afterwards the site of the Ipswich court-house. In Chebacco he had a grant of three hundred acres.

He was a native of Westbury, Wilts County, England, and had been an extensive manufacturer of broadcloths and other woolen fabrics, having inherited mills and other valuable property which had been owned in the family for two or three generations.

With his wife and seven children he sailed June 4, 1635, from Bristol, England, in the ship *Angel Gabriel*, on which he had embarked May 23d. Winds delayed the vessel, which touched at Milford Haven, in Wales, sailing finally from that port, June 22d. Arriving off the coast of Maine in August, she was cast away in a storm, at Pemaquid,—Mr. Cogswell and other voyagers, among them Captain Andrews, commander of the vessel, and his three nephews, John, Thomas and Robert Burnham, losing valuable personal property, though escaping with their lives.

The *Angel Gabriel* was of two hundred and forty tons burthen, and carried fourteen guns, of what calibre is not stated. She was strongly built, but a slow sailer. It is said that the famous Sir Walter Raleigh sailed in her, on two voyages from England to South America. She was of the quaint model and rig of





the time of Elizabeth and James I. and would have made a grotesque appearance by the side of one of our modern vessels.

Of the residence here of Mr. Cogswell's predecessors, White and Bradstreet, already mentioned, little is definitely known beyond the tradition that they had been the only white inhabitants of the place previous to his arrival. The precise localities of their original dwelling-houses cannot now be determined with certainty, and there are no descendants from them now living in Essex, at least none bearing either of their surnames.

John Cogswell died in 1669, at the age of seventy-seven. His daughter Hannah had married Cornelius Waldo, and from them descended Ralph Waldo Emerson, the sage of Concord.

THE OTHER AND EARLIER SETTLERS.—The first occupants of this region of whom we have any account, either oral or written, were, of course, those swarthy or bronze-complexioned people, who occasionally improved their appearance, as they thought, but horribly disfigured themselves, as we think, by grotesquely painting or staining their faces. They lived in huts called wigwams, and subsisted upon corn and by hunting and fishing, and dressed themselves principally in the skins of wild beasts.

If any of their descendants survive, they might trace their genealogy to a source as aristocratic as that of any other people on the globe, for they were not in any sense democratic, but were monarchists in their ideas of government, and believers in the distinctions of caste.

ORIGINAL LAND HOLDER.—An Indian chief named Masconomo, sometimes written Masconomet, who was called the Sagamore of Agawam, claimed the ownership of the land of this entire township. In the year 1638 he sold his right, or "fee," in the soil of Ipswich to John Winthrop, Jr., son of Governor Winthrop, for twenty pounds, which would be the equivalent of about one hundred dollars, as pounds are now reckoned.

AN EARLY INHABITANT OF ESSEX.—The words which I have italicized in his deed of conveyance, which is as follows, indicate that he was a resident of that portion of the territory of Ipswich called Chabacco. The town of Essex can therefore claim, upon the most indubitable record-evidence, that he was one of its primitive inhabitants, as well as its original proprietor.

#### MASCONOMET'S DEED.

"I Masconomet, Sagamore of Agawam, do by these presents acknowledge to have received of Mr. John Winthrop the sum of £20, in full satisfaction of all the right, property & claim I have, or ought to have, unto all the land lying & being in the Bay of Agawam, alias Ipswich, being so called now by the English, as well as such land as I formerly received by purchase at Chabacco, as also all other land, belonging to me in these parts, Mr. Dummer's farm excepted only; and I hereby relinquish all the right and interest I have unto all the havens, rivers, creeks, shoals, landings and fisheries; with all the woods, swamps, timber, and whatever else is, or may be, in, or upon the said ground belonging; and I do hereby acknowledge to have received full satisfaction from the said John Winthrop for all former agreements, touching the

premises & parts of them; and I do hereby bind myself to make good the aforesaid bargain and sale unto the said John Winthrop, his heirs and assigns forever, and to secure him against the title and claim of all other Indians and natives whatsoever. Witness my hand, 28th of June, 1638.

Masconomet his mark.

"Witness hereunto, John Jowhill, James Downing, Thomas Citymore, Robert Harding."

INDIAN CUNNING.—This Indian Sagamore, Masconomo (or Masconomet, as the name is here signed), and his associate sagamores, seem to have taken a utilitarian and politic view of religious subjects generally, and especially of the distinctive theological tenets of the English settlers.

Masconomo and four other chiefs or sagamores, for the sake of being defended against their enemies, the Tarratines, and other hostile tribes, placed themselves under the protection of the government of Massachusetts, and agreed to obey its laws and receive instruction in the Christian religion.

The questions propounded to them by the government authorities were nine in number.

The answers to two of them evince the wary, cautious instinct of the Indian, and his disinclination to commit himself too strongly upon points of doctrine. They show that he viewed such subjects mainly from the practical standpoint of his own personal self-interest:

"Question 1st.—Will you worship the only true God, who made heaven and earth, and not idle phantasies?"

"Answer.—We do not intend to reverence the God of the English and to speak well of Him, because we see He doth better to the English than other gods do to others."

"Question 3d.—Will you refrain from working on the Sabbath, especially within the bounds of Christian towns?"

"Answer.—It is easy to us, we have not much to do on any day, and we can well rest on that day."

These replies could hardly be excelled by any civilized adept in adroit evasiveness.

MASCONOMO'S EARLIEST INTERVIEW WITH THE ELDER WINTHROP.—John Winthrop, Sr., in his journal, under date of June 13, 1630, while the ship "Arbella," in which he was a passenger, lay at anchor off Salem, near Beverly shore, which he called "the Land of Cape Ann," has this entry:

"Lord's day, 13."

"In the morning, the sagamore of Agawam and one of his men came aboard our ship and staid with us all day."

On the previous day, Saturday, the 12th, Winthrop had landed at Salem, but at night returned to the ship.

The acquaintance between him and Masconomo, originating at that time, may have been one of the circumstances which led to the subsequent settlement at Ipswich, by John Winthrop, Jr., the Governor's son, and his ultimate purchase of the territory of Agawam from that Indian chief.

FURTHER ENGLISH SETTLERS.—Several other immigrants became residents of this place not long after Mr. Cogswell took up his abode here, but the dates of their arrival can be now only approximately known.



In the town records of Ipswich, for the year 1648, there is a list of one hundred and sixty-one persons who subscribed the sums severally set against their names, as an annual contribution to a fund for expenses of military instruction, to be paid to Major Dennison,<sup>1</sup> "so long as he shall be their leader." Eight of this number were at that time undoubtedly residents of Chebacco, viz.: John Burnham, 4s.; Thomas Burnham, 3s.; William Cogswell, 4s.; John Choate, 5s.; Robert Crosse, 4s.; William Goodhue, 3s.; Thomas Low, 2s.; William Story, 2s. Probably the following, in the same list, were also inhabitants of this place at that time: John Andrews, Jr., 3s.; John Perkins, Jr., 5s.

More persons of the name of Burnham than those of any other family surname, have inhabited the place from a very early period; and they have all descended from the elder two of the three Burnham boys or youths, who were brothers, and who came from Norwich, England, in 1635, the first two mentioned, John and Thomas, settling here, and the youngest, Robert, residing in Chebacco about nine years, then at the age of twenty removing to Boston, where he was married to Frances Hill, and after ten years' residence there removing, in the year 1654, to Dover, N. H., where he settled and left numerous descendants. He died, however, at the residence of his brother Thomas in Chebacco, June 13, 1691, at the age of sixty-seven. His will, or an abstract of it, is on file with the court records in Salem.

## CHAPTER XCIII.

### ESSEX—(Continued).

*Business Occupations from the First Settlement to the Present Time—Improvement in General—Early Manufactures—Essex Masters of the Ipswich Grammar School—Fate of Mascanomo.*

**FARMING.**—The tilling of the soil was, of necessity, the first industrial pursuit of the majority of the early residents of this, as of the other New England settlements generally.

**FISHING** was their next occupation, as they drew their subsistence in part from the rivers and the sea; and this they were not long content to pursue merely by the use of single hooks and lines. So we find that a more comprehensive and expeditious method of taking fish was adopted at an early date, as ap-

pears by the following extract from the Ipswich town records.

"December 29th, 1643. It is consented unto that John Perkins, Junior, shall build a ware [fish trap] upon the river of Quascacunquen, [now Parker river, Newbury] and enjoy the profits of it, but in case a plantation shall there settle, then he is to submit himself unto such conditions as shall by them be imposed."

The northern boundary of Agawam, or Ipswich, which had been purchased of Mascanomo, was not then positively determined. Some claimed that the territory extended as far as Parker River. In a year or two from this time, a settlement was begun at a place called Quascacunquen, now Newbury. The General Court, in 1635, ordered that the bounds of Ipswich and Quascacunquen be definitely laid out; and in the same year William White, who came from England in 1634, and, according to the records, lived for a short time at Ipswich, removed northward, in company with Rev. Thomas Parker, Nicholas Noyes, Henry Sewall, William Moody and Richard Kent, and settled what is now the town of Newbury. Instead of the Indian cognomen the name of Parker was given to the river, in compliment to the clergyman of the new settlement.

John Perkins, Jr., surrendered his privilege upon that river, in accordance with the terms on which it was originally given, said river being no longer a hypothetical boundary of Ipswich, and the new settlers claiming the control of the stream, as within the limits of their grant.

Mr. Perkins, in 1636, was granted the right to build another ware, and also "5 and 40 acres of ground lying beyond Chebacco river, right against the Ware, bounded by the river on the northwest and by a swamp on the southeast." There was liberty granted to build a ware "which he hath built and is to enjoy the profits for 7 years, beginning 1636, for the which he is to sell alewives he there has taken at 5s. per 1000, according to his agreement with the town expressed in the town book."

It is recorded later that the "5 and 40 acres and the wares the said John Perkins hath sold to Mr. John Cogswell, his heirs and assigns."

John Perkins, Jr., was manifestly a stirring, enterprising inhabitant.

The records of Ipswich still further say: "John Perkins, Jr., is possessed of an Island having on the south the Chebacco river, on the north an arm of the same running between the said Island and another Island, called Hog Island, bounded east by Chebacco Bay, west by a meeting of many brooks coming out of the marshes."

Precisely when fishing began to be carried on in boats, either upon the river or on the ocean, cannot now be known, but it was probably at an early period—as early, perhaps, as the building, in this place, of the first boat; though exactly when that was nobody can tell.

<sup>1</sup> Daniel Denison, who was a son of William Denison, of Roxbury, was military instructor in Ipswich, in 1648, and entitled "Major Denison." He was born about 1612; and was admitted freeman at Boston April 1, 1624. The town of Ipswich granted to him, October 12, 1643, "two hundred acres of land for his better encouragement to settle amongst us."

He was a member of the House of Representatives for many years, and Speaker of that body 1691-92. He was appointed major-general by the General Court.





In 1721 three men from Chebacco, Gifford<sup>1</sup> Cogswell, Jacob Perkins and James Smith bought of John Babson, of Sandy Bay, twenty-seven acres of land at Straitsmouth. The land had originally been granted to Babson, who was the earliest settler in that region, "to sett up fishing upon."

Hon. John J. Babson, one of his descendants, says of the purchasers: "These were probably the Chebacco fishermen, concerning whose visits to the Cape tradition yet preserves remembrance, though it is said that fishermen from that place were accustomed, at an early date, to frequent the shores of the Cape for the purpose of landing and drying their fish. One circumstance keeps alive the memory of Babson and the Chebacco fishermen. The former, or some member of the family, was attacked one day by a bear, and, after a terrible struggle with his antagonist, succeeded in slaying him with a knife. He then flayed the animal, and spread out his skin to dry upon the rocks near the sea, at the end of a neck of land where it was seen by the fishermen, who gave the place the name of Bearskin Neck."<sup>2</sup>

The Chebacco men, after occupying the land for fishing purposes for about twenty years, sold it to Joshua Norwood, who settled upon it with his family. His wife was Elizabeth Andrews, daughter of Ensign William Andrews, of Chebacco.

*Codfish.*—At one time there were fourteen vessels, owned in Essex, employed in the cod-fishery, though not one is now fitted out from this place for that business.

*Shell Fish.*—The digging of clams, for bait and for food, has for a long time been a source of considerable income to a portion of the inhabitants of this place.

As early as the year 1763, the commoners of the town of Ipswich issued a regulation that no more clams should be taken from the flats than might be necessary for the use of the people of the town, and for supplying vessels engaged in fishing. The stipulated allowance was at the rate of one barrel for each of a crew to the Newfoundland banks, and a proportionably less quantity to boats in the bay, which made shorter trips.

The prices obtained have increased somewhat within a half century, dressed clams, so-called—that is, the clams taken from the shell—bringing, in 1837, from two dollars and fifty cents to three dollars per barrel, exclusive of the cost of barrel and salt; while during the year from February 15, 1886, to February 15, 1887, the net price realized was upwards

of four dollars. The aggregate amount of sales from Essex during the last named period was twelve thousand and eight hundred dollars.

Very recently, a controversy has arisen between residents of Ipswich and residents of Essex, as to which of these two towns has lawful jurisdiction over a portion of the contiguous territory where the clams are dug.

At a special town-meeting held in Essex, October 3, 1887, the following citizens were chosen as a committee to take such action as may be needful on account of this controversy: Wm. Howe Burnham, George J. Sanger, Enoch B. Kimball, Daniel W. Bartlett and Moses Knowlton; and money was appropriated to defray the expenses of any litigation necessary to defend the rights of the town and settle the division line between Essex and Ipswich, and decide to which town belong certain clam-flats, at the present time and prospectively of great value. The territory in question is said to contain about one hundred and fifty acres.

*MALTING OR BREWING.*—As, in accordance with the English custom, everybody drank beer, coffee and tea being then unknown in the colonies, the business of a malster was established early in most of the settlements. In many townships one person of this trade was probably sufficient for the inhabitants of the place, who would take their barley or other grain to his establishment to have it malted, as they took their corn to the grist-mill to have it ground, the malster receiving his compensation, as did the miller, by taking toll.

At the beginning of the eighteenth century, and probably much earlier, a malt-house stood upon the premises, now owned and occupied by Daniel Winthrop Low, the business having been carried on by one or more of his early ancestors. This fact concerning that locality is derived from the tradition of the family.

#### OTHER TRADES.

House-wrights, blacksmiths, rope-makers, tailors and shoemakers (the latter sometimes termed "cord-winders" in the Ipswich records), were prime necessities in the new settlements, and undoubtedly came here early; but the dates at which they severally arrived, it would be impossible now to determine. Farmers then, as a long time afterwards, may have had a shop on their own premises, for amateur shoe-making and shoe-mending.

*EARLY BOAT-BUILDING.*—Ship-carpenters and joiners came early to the settlements near the sea-board, and, of course, appeared in Chebacco not very long after the first-comers. The traditions which my wife's great uncle, Parker Burnham (the first), received from his grandfather, David Burnham (1st), who was born October 20, 1688, and was a grandson of Thomas, first settler, had been often repeated in the family for years prior to its publication anywhere. The story, which I have no doubt is entirely authentic, is

<sup>1</sup> Babson's "History of Gloucester," conforming doubtless to the local record, gives the name as *Jefford* Cogswell. His first name, however, was Gifford, his mother's maiden name. His father was John Cogswell, who was a grandson of John, the first Chebacco settler of that surname, and he married Margaret Gifford.

Gifford Cogswell married, in 1722, a daughter of Jeffrey Parsons, of Gloucester; and the local recorder may have confusedly written the name Jefford, which is a sort of cross between Jeffrey and Gifford.

<sup>2</sup> "History of Gloucester," pp. 331, 332.



this: A man named Burnham built the first Chebacco boat in the garret of a house which stood on an eminence at the right of what is now the road to Manchester, and not very far beyond the corner or beginning of that road, which is near the residence of Aaron Low, Esq.; and that the garret window-frame had to be removed, and the aperture enlarged, before the boat could be launched.

**CORDAGE.**—The manufacture of cordage for rigging, as well as for fishing-lines, was an essential auxiliary to vessel-building, and was pursued here quite early, upon a moderate scale. In the last quarter of the last century, it began to be carried on somewhat extensively at the Falls by the late Capt. Nathaniel Burnham; and Mr. Samuel Hardy, Sr., who had come from England with the knowledge of some valuable improvements in the method of making lines, and who married his sister, became associated with him in their manufacture. Mr. Hardy's sons, Daniel and Samuel, Jr., also conducted the same business for several years. There have since been several large rope-walks here, with machinery propelled for some time by steam, for the manufacture of lines, etc., owned and conducted by David, Wm. H. and H. W. Mears. Ship's cordage of the heavier sort, for Essex vessels, is now, however, made elsewhere.

**SAW-MILLS AND GRIST-MILLS.**—Saw-mills were early established here,—the first in 1656, on Chebacco River,—said to have been the first erected anywhere in the town of Ipswich. Two others were, afterwards, built in Chebacco, in the same part of this precinct, called the Falls; and in 1693 a grist-mill was established in the same neighborhood.

The saw-mill and grist-mill, erected about the year 1823, near the bridge over the Chebacco River, in the centre of the town, in connection with which wool-carding was for some years carried on, which were destroyed by fire, some years since, were the largest that had been built in the place prior to the establishment of the two steam saw-mills, one on Southern Avenue, built in 1872 by the Essex Steam Mill Company, and under the management of the late Jacob Burnham; and the other at the Falls, owned and operated by Edward Story.

**EARLY SAW-MILL IN THE EAST DISTRICT.**—About five hundred yards northeast of the ship-yard of the late Ebenezer Burnham is a piece of marsh which is known to-day as "Saw-mill island." The late Samuel Lufkin stated that he had heard his father say that John Burnham, who owned a farm near Haskell's Creek (which included the premises now owned by David L. Haskell), built a saw-mill on that island. The mill-dam was formed by obstructing the creek in a manner similar to that at the great bridge, and the rise of the tide furnished the water.

According to Mr. Lufkin's testimony, which doubtless rested upon authentic tradition, the saw-mills at

the Falls were not all that were established in Chebacco.

The John Burnham here alluded to was the eldest of the three brothers who came in 1635. He was one of the first two deacons of the first church here. He was an *uncle* of the John Burnham, who owned a saw-mill at the Falls, and *father* of John Burnham, Jr., who, as late as 1693, was granted "liberty to set a Grist-mill on Chebacco river, at the launching place."

**SHIP-BUILDING.**—For a century this has been the most important mechanical industry of the place. Originally it was confined principally to the building of Chebacco boats, a species of small craft, without bowsprit, having two masts, and two sails only, a fore-sail and mainsail, and being sharp at both stem and stern. At one time towards the close of the last century, there were, it is said, no less than one thousand and nine hundred of this class of vessels, many of them, of course, of small tonnage, employed in the fishery business, and sailing from Cape Ann.

The name, "Chebacco boat," was derived from the original Indian name of the territory of Essex, though it is a curious coincidence that in France there is in use a small vessel called a *chabek*.

In 1668, the town of Ipswich set apart an acre of land for the use of the inhabitants as a ship-yard. This land, which was the first granted by the town for that purpose, was situated in Chebacco; and as nearly as can now be ascertained from the phraseology of the grant, and from a consideration of what would then have been an available and eligible locality, with ready access to the water, it comprised in part the premises now occupied for the same use by Arthur D. Story, and perhaps also a part of the premises of Moses Adams.

**Larger Vessels.**—The building of the Chebacco boats began to be discontinued in the first quarter of the present century, larger vessels, with a square stern and bowsprit and full-rigged as schooners, generally superseding them.

Half a century ago, for the period of five years next preceding 1837, there were built two hundred and twenty vessels, aggregating twelve thousand five hundred tonnage, and valued at three hundred and seventy-five thousand dollars.

Vessels of much greater tonnage are now built, and a larger amount of capital is employed. Several three-masted schooners of large size and two steamers, one for General B. F. Butler and the other for Captain Lamont G. Burnham, have been built here within a few years.

Essex vessels, for staunchness of construction, symmetry, skillful workmanship, and all sea-going qualities, are everywhere of high repute.

**Yachts.**—Several yachts, as swift-sailing as any in the country, have been launched from the Essex ship-yards; and one of about two hundred tons was built here by Moses Adams for an officer of the Uni-





ted States Navy, who, with his family, made a voyage in it to Europe. Another, the "Gevalia," was built by John James & Co., for G. M. Winslow, of Boston. She was sixty feet in length, six feet in depth and nineteen feet and four inches in width. The first summer after she was launched, she sailed in three races and took three prizes.

*A Historic Vessel.*—Messrs. John James and Leonard McKenzie built here the vessel afterwards so widely known, in which Dr. Elisba K. Kane went to the Arctic regions in 1853, on the Grinnell expedition in search of Sir John Franklin, and incidentally to find, if possible, an open polar sea. She was originally called "Spring Hill," but when secured for Arctic service her name was changed to the "Advance." She was of one hundred and forty-four tons burthen, carpenter's measurement. Dr. Kane, in the first volume of his narrative of the voyage, says of her: "She was a good sailer and easily managed."

*Some Statistics of Former Years.*—The following are among various items gathered by Deacon Caleb Cogswell, a gentleman of long experience and extensive knowledge of the business, and contained in an exceedingly well written, comprehensive and interesting chapter contributed by him to Dr. Crowell's town history. Some of the statistics were furnished by members of the family with which the writer of this is connected:

Parker Burnham, 1st, was the builder of the first square-stern vessel; and his nephew, Captain Parker Burnham, built the largest square-stern vessel in the place, prior to the war of 1812. It was a brig of two hundred and twenty tons, named "Silk-worm;" and he made several voyages in it, as commander, the first one to Lisbon. He also built the schooner "July," of fifty tons burthen, which was commenced and entirely finished in the month of July, 1837,—the shortest space of time in which any vessel of that size had ever been begun and completed.

The largest number built by any one person was about two hundred, by Adam Boyd. The largest number built by one person in any year was thirteen, by Andrew Story.

In 1812, the ship "Ann Maria," of five hundred and ten tons, was built by a company of Essex shipwrights, of which Ebenezer Burnham was the agent, and his brother Jacob was the master-workman. She was purchased by David Pingree, of Salem, a prominent merchant of that time. This was the largest vessel that had been built in the place up to that date.

*Later Vessels of Larger Tonnage.*—Since the publication of Dr. Crowell's History, however, still larger vessels have been built here,—among them a three-masted schooner, named "Mattie W. Atwood," of seven hundred and seventy tons custom-house measurement, but having a carrying capacity of one thousand one hundred tons. She was built in 1872 by Messrs. James & Mackenzie. Of still larger ton-

nage was the steamer "Vidette," built for Captain Lamont G. Burnham, as before mentioned. She was of eight hundred and nineteen tons' burthen, and was launched from the yard of John James & Co. in 1880. She had two propellers.

**PRINCIPAL ACTIVE BUILDERS AT PRESENT.**—Moses Adams, Arthur D. Story, James & Co., Joseph, Samuel and Charles Oliver Story, Willard Burnham, Daniel Poland.

**SPAR-MAKING.**—Those essential adjuncts to a sailing vessel, the masts and spars, must have given employment to more or less persons, a part of the time at least, soon after the building of boats was begun here. This business is now conducted by Messrs. Timothy Andrews and Son.

**PRINTING.**—The first printing-office in the town was established by the writer of this history, in 1843, and a newspaper entitled *The Essex Cabinet* was published by him for several months of that year; and later, for a considerable length of time, a religious publication, entitled *The Universalist Cabinet*, was issued. Pamphlets, circulars, &c., were likewise printed, with a variety of other work.

Many years afterwards a printing-office, which is still continued, was established by Erastus S. Burnham, who for a short time published a weekly sheet entitled *The Essex Enterprise*.

**ATTORNEY AND COUNSELLOR AT LAW.**—Frank C. Richardson, Esq., a native, resides here and has an office at Salem. He was for some time a student at law in the office of Hon. Charles P. Thompson, now Judge of the Superior Court. He has appeared, in recent cases, in behalf of the town and its territorial rights.

In preceding years, the late Obed B. Low, Esq., a native, who studied with Rufus Choate, conducted several cases in this place, and appeared in some instances in behalf of the town, in courts and before legislative committees.

The late George F. Mears, Esq., a native, was also a recognized practitioner here, in addition to his legal business elsewhere.

If others of this profession were located here at an earlier time, I have found no distinct record of them.

**NOTARY PUBLIC.**—Daniel W. Bartlett.

**JUSTICES OF THE PEACE.**—Ezra Perkins, Nehemiah Burnham, Ebenezer Stanwood.

**BLACKSMITHING.**—This branch of mechanical industry must have been introduced here early; and during the hundred years and more in which boat-building has been carried on, it has been an essential auxiliary of that business. It is worth noting that, for a long term of years, the blacksmiths of the place were of the names of Andrews, Goodhue and Story, and lineal descendants of the primitive settlers of those names. Those at present of that occupation here are Francis Haskell & Sons, John Gilbert and Otis Story.

**WHEELWRIGHT.**—Deacon Caleb S. Gage, son of





Thomas Gage, Esq., the historian of Rowley, is still proprietor of the business he established here half a century ago.

**PAINTERS.**—Daniel W. Bartlett, Sr., Story & Closson, Charles A. Burnham, John P. Story.

**TELEGRAPHIC OPERATOR.**—Daniel W. Bartlett, Jr.

**TANNING.**—The manufacture of leather was carried on here early in the last century, and possibly in the century preceding. In 1743, Joseph Perkins and his father-in-law, Thomas Choate, Jr., bought, for £928, Old Tenor, twenty-six acres of land of Francis Cogswell, tanner, and Hannah, his wife: "one-half of this land to go to said Thomas, and the other half to said Joseph." The latter was for some years engaged in tanning upon these premises. His grandsons, the late John and James Perkins, pursued the same business for several years. Their tan-vats were near the brook, in the rear of the old burying-ground. Captain Francis Burnham followed the same occupation for many years at the Falls, the business being since conducted on the same spot by Francis Goodhue. Those adopting this trade, it will be observed, have all borne the surnames of primitive settlers.

**SHOE-MANUFACTURING.**—In 1872, a shoe-factory was established here, which is now under the executive management and control of Messrs. S. B. Fuller & Son, proprietors; with Frank E. Gilbert as general superintendent, and William S. Perkins as foreman of construction. A building, 35 by 65 feet, and three stories in height, with a basement, was erected in that year, which was enlarged in 1880 by an addition of the same height, and 28 by 75 feet. There is a box-maker's department, in which are made all the boxes used in the business. The whole number of persons employed in all the departments and divisions is about one hundred and twenty-five, to whom are paid in wages about fifty thousand dollars a year. Four hundred thousand pairs of shoes are made annually. The machinery of the establishment is, of course, propelled by steam.

The uppers of the shoes are now cut and fitted in Lynn; and for that part of the work about sixty five thousand dollars are paid yearly. The labor of this branch was formerly done at the factory in Essex; but, as the result of a strike, a few years since, it was transferred to the city mentioned, thus withdrawing from Essex a considerable portion of the money previously disbursed, although a number of those from this town, who had been employed there, are still employed on the same branch in Lynn.

**TWO SIAM CIDER-MILLS.**—One at the Falls Village and the other on Southern Avenue, in connection with the saw-mills in those localities, manufacture usually some forty thousand or more gallons, in the cider-making season; which are sold, in part, for the purpose of being turned into vinegar.

**MEAT AND PROVISION DEALERS.**—Wm. B. and Caleb Low, Jacob Quimby, Chas. H. Story.

The extensive establishment of Messrs. Low

Brothers has facilities for furnishing fresh meats not surpassed by establishments in the same line in the larger towns and cities generally, having an extensive refrigerator and other conveniences.

**EXPRESS BUSINESS.**—Joseph M. Marshall was the pioneer in this line, having begun the carrying of packages, etc., between this place and Boston, by stage-coach to Manchester, and thence by railroad, about forty years ago. He is still interested in it.

Thomas M. Procter and Horace Quimby have also for many years been engaged in this branch of business.

Elisha B. Annable has conducted, by private conveyance, for several years an express between Essex and Salem.

**STORES, TRADERS, ETC.**—*Groceries.*—Jona. M. Richardson, Henry F. Dodge, Arthur D. Story, Geo. A. Fuller, J. M. Marshall, Herbert P. Andrews.

*Dry-Goods.*—H. F. Dodge, Geo. A. Andrews.

*Cutlery, Fancy Goods, Books, Periodicals, Etc.*—Geo. F. Burnham.

*Furniture, Clocks, Watches, Watch-Repairing, and Printing.*—Erastus S. Burnham.

*Hardware, Mechanics Tools, Etc.*—Joseph M. Marshall.

*Drugs and Pharmacy.*—B. F. Raymond.

*Stoves, Tin and Sheet-Iron Work.*—J. F. Smith.

*Dealer in Tin Ware, Oil Cloths, Household Utensils, Etc.*—Wm. C. Howard.

*Hair-dressing Saloon.*—Edward Warren Lander.

**AN AGRICULTURAL AND HORTICULTURAL ASSOCIATION**, formed several years since, continuing its operations with well sustained interest, has done much to encourage and stimulate the culture of fruit, of which some of the finest specimens are displayed annually at its own exhibition in town, as well as at the county fair.

In the department of small fruit raising, especially of strawberries, of which, in this town, the late Abel Burnham was the pioneer,—Sylvester Dade and Miles S. Andrews have been extensive cultivators, disposing of very large quantities in various parts of the county and elsewhere.

**VEGETABLE GROWING, GRAPES, SOLD FOR PLANTING.**—Aaron Low, Esq., widely known as an extensive cultivator of choice vegetables of the mammoth varieties, who has often taken premiums for his products at the annual fairs of the Essex County Agricultural Society, and who has given much attention to grape-culture, has also carried on, upon a considerable scale, the business of a seedsman.

**HAY—MILK—BUTTER.**—English hay from this place is sold in as large quantities, probably, as from any other place of its size in the county.

Milk is daily furnished in large quantities to the summer watering-places in the vicinity; and with choice butter and other farm products is sent throughout the year to the neighboring City of Gloucester.

**ICE BUSINESS.**—This is carried on here quite ex-



tensively, large quantities of ice cut from Chebacco Pond or Lake being transported abroad by the Essex Branch Railroad to Wenham, and beyond in various directions over the lines of the Eastern Branch of the Boston and Main Road. Ice is also delivered to order about town.

This industry alone contributes a very large proportion of the freight traffic of the Essex Railroad.

There are two establishments, one comprising two buildings with an aggregate storage capacity of twenty thousand tons, conducted under the auspices of the Drivers' Union Company; Manning Story and Enoch Story, managing proprietors.

The other establishment is conducted by its proprietor, Charles H. Mears, cutting usually in the ice season about fifteen hundred tons.

IMPROVEMENT IN GENERAL.—Since the advent of the branch railroad, now just extended to the shoe-factory in the village on the south side of the river, the town is well nigh as eligible for the purposes of either a residence or business, as most of the larger places. An impetus has also been given to trade; and great is the change from the time, many years after the first settlement, when the residents must send out of town for most but the commonest commodities, to the present period, when the finest watch can be repaired and regulated as skillfully in town as elsewhere.

EARLY MISDEMEANORS.—"1641. Jo: Lee, accused for stealing of a Bible of the widow Hatfield, is found guilty; he shall restore 15s. to the widow, and pay 10s. fine for lying."<sup>1</sup>

"Jo:" must have been an obdurate person. There is no record of his having read the book, after he had stolen it.

How far from the border of Chebacco this widow Hatfield may have lived is not specified; but six years before the commission of the theft mentioned, as the records show, Richard Hatfield "had an house-lot granted to him in 1635, beyond Mr. Hubbard's, having the highway to Chebacco on the south, and an house-lot of Robert Andrews on the east." The widow Hatfield mentioned was probably the Goodwife Hatfield, from whom the name of "Hatfield's Bridge" was derived.

"1670, March 29, Thomas Bragg and Edward Cogswell, for fighting in the meeting-house on the Lord's day, in time of exercise, fined 10s. a piece and costs and fees."<sup>2</sup>

This Edward was a son of John Cogswell, first settler. The number of rounds fought, which of the two combatants received the worse pummelling, and which threw up the sponge, are points not stated.

ESSEX MASTERS OF THE IPSWICH GRAMMAR SCHOOL.—Of this venerable institution, sometimes styled in the early records the Feoffees' Latin School,

established about 1651, by the munificence of the wealthy Payne brothers and William Hubbard, Sr., father of the historian, and afterward liberally endowed by grants of land, six of the teachers have been of Essex origin,—the aggregate of their terms of service being about sixty years, or more than one-quarter of the time since it was founded. Those only of first-class qualifications were selected for this position.

*Thomas Andrews*, son of Capt. Robert Andrews, and cousin of the three Burnham brothers, immigrants, taught for twenty-three years from 1660. He was the immediate successor of the famous Ezekiel Cheever, the first teacher. *Henry Wise*, a graduate of Harvard College, son of Rev. John Wise, taught for eight years from 1720. *Major Thomas Burnham*, also a graduate of Harvard, taught about twenty-four years in all, beginning in 1774,—leaving the school for several years, to serve in the field in the Revolutionary War, and on retiring from the army, again taking charge of it. *Amos Choate*, afterward Register of Deeds, taught seven years from 1800. *Geo. Choate*, late Dr. George, of Salem, taught two years from his graduation in 1818; and *Charles Choate*, two years from 1823.

FATE OF MASCONOMO.—The sagamore of Agawam, who disposed of Chebacco and the rest of Ipswich for such a trivial sum, became in his later years very poor, and dependent upon charity—virtually a pauper, though I do not know, from direct statement in any record, that he was an inmate of an alms-house. He died about the year 1658.

It is said that some years after his burial, on Sagamore Hill, his bones were taken up and his skull was carried around on a pole by a reckless person who was arrested and held to answer for it. What was the motive for such sacrilege, other than wanton mischief, we are not informed.

## CHAPTER XCIV.

### ESSEX—(Continued).

#### RELIGIOUS ORGANIZATIONS.

*First Preaching, First Settled Minister and First Church in Chebacco—The First Meeting-house—The Second Minister—Whitfield's Power as an Orator—Rogers, of Ipswich, in Salem—Liverpool, the Fanatic, who, in his Prayers in Chebacco, insulted Mr. Packer—Great Disorders in Ipswich—The Disorders Described—Packing Street—Third Minister of the Original Church—Mr. Porter, the only Chebacco Minister Recognized in Manchester—Last Minister of the Church of Wise and Packer—A Dispute about Cleveland Preceptibles a Division of the First Church in Ipswich—The Church of the Separatists and its Ministers—Cleveland's and Murray's Army Chaplains—Persecution of Murray—Cleveland's Family—His Genealogy—Ruling Elders and their Functions—Cleveland's Successors—Later Preachers—Seating the Congregation—First Baptist Preaching—Christian Church—Elder Elias Smith—First Religious Newspaper in the County—Other Christian Preachers—The Universalist Meeting-house—Formation of a Church—A Deacon Deceased from Deacons—A Valuable Bequest by a Goodwife Descendant—Methodist Society and Church.*

FIRST PREACHING, FIRST SETTLED MINISTER, AND FIRST CHURCH IN CHEBACCO.—For about forty-

<sup>1</sup> Ipswich Records—Hammatt Papers, III. 127.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibidem*, II. 59.





four years after its first settlement by English immigrants in 1634, there was no preaching in this place at any time, by any regularly ordained minister. Either the pastor or teacher, and perhaps both, of the first church in Ipswich, doubtless occasionally made pastoral visits to the people here, and counseled, consoled and prayed with them, at their dwelling-houses, and probably offered prayer on funeral occasions, after which the dead were carried upon the shoulders of the bearers to the primitive burial-place in Ipswich. But there is no record of their having officiated here at any general and public religious meeting prior to 1667 or 1668. The missionary spirit does not seem to have been manifested in those days.

Early in the year last named, Rev. Jeremiah Shepard, a son of Rev. Thomas Shepard, of Cambridge, in response to an invitation of the people, came and preached here in a private dwelling-house; but he declined to remain and preach continually, because of the opposition of the Ipswich church, which was ostensibly, in part at least, based upon the fact that Mr. Shepard had not then formally connected himself with any Congregational church or other ecclesiastical body. But the members of the church were influenced by other considerations, practical and sentimental. Besides the disinclination to lose so much taxable property from the original parish, they undoubtedly felt a tender regret at the thought of severing the social ties and breaking up the associations of their early communion and fellowship.

The people here, however, felt so seriously the inconvenience, as well as the hazard to their health as they advanced in life, of being obliged, year in and year out, in all vicissitudes of the weather, to travel to and fro the distance of four and five miles between their homes and the place of worship in the centre of the town, that they petitioned to be set off as a separate parish, and allowed to erect a meeting-house. The first meeting for consultation, which led ultimately to the organization of the Second Parish in Ipswich, was held in February, 1677.

The church and town authorities having repeatedly refused to grant their request, some of the inhabitants, early in the year 1679, concluded to recur to first principles of natural justice and equity, and take the matter directly into their own hands for adjustment.

**THE FIRST MEETING-HOUSE.**—Three intelligent and energetic women, who seem to have been largely endowed with the executive faculty, with the connivance if not active aid of their husbands, successfully managed the whole business of superintending the raising of the frame of a meeting-house,—the sills and joists having been clandestinely prepared under their direction,—without leave or license of the civil or ecclesiastical authorities.

A few days afterwards, three women—Mrs. Goodhue, wife of William, Jr., Mrs. Varney, the wife of Thomas,<sup>1</sup> and Mrs. Martin, wife of Abraham, and

Abraham Martin<sup>2</sup> himself and his hired man, John Chub,—were placed under arrest, tried before a magistrate at Ipswich, found guilty of "contempt of authority in helping to raise a meeting-house at Chebacco," and bound over to a higher court. At that court, which subsequently met in Salem, the offenders appeared, pursuant to an order from the "Great and General Court" at Boston, and made humble acknowledgment of their offence, and confessed that they were sorry, and so all were legally forgiven.

The meeting-house frame thus surreptitiously raised, was allowed to stand, and permission was given for the completion of the building and its occupancy for public worship.

The site of this edifice was the spot now occupied by the house of the late Capt. Joseph Choate. This point would seem to be satisfactorily settled by the statement of Rev. Dr. Crowell, in his history of Essex. He came to this town to reside in 1814, and was then told that this was the location of the building by aged persons, whose parents had attended worship within it forty years after its erection.

The building is described as a plain, substantial structure, with a frame of white oak, and having a cupola surmounting the centre of the ridge-pole, and within it a bell.

**THE FIRST MINISTER.**—The first resident clergyman of Chebacco, Rev. John Wise, has for two hundred years been a prominent figure in the history of not only this little parish, but of the country. He was born in Roxbury, Mass., August 15, 1652, and was the son of Joseph Wise, who at one period of his life followed the occupation of a butcher. His mother was a daughter of Rev. William Thompson,<sup>3</sup> who came to this country from England in 1637, and after preaching for awhile at Kittery or York (now Maine), was in 1639 ordained as minister of the church in Braintree, Mass., in that portion of it which is now the town of Quincy. The parish of Mr. Thompson was substantially the same that is now the Unitarian parish in that place,—the place of worship of President John Adams and his descendants.<sup>4</sup>

Joseph Wise, in 1635, came over from England as the servant of Dr. George Alcock, and was held by an agreement to labor for him for a definite period, unless earlier released by his virtual master, in ac-

<sup>1</sup> Thomas Varney and Abraham Martin were ancestors of the writer of this historical sketch of Essex.

<sup>2</sup> Savage, Vol. IV. p. 289.

<sup>3</sup> A grand-son of this Rev. William Thompson (who was, of course, a nephew of Mrs. Joseph Wise and first cousin of Rev. John Wise) was the Rev. Edward Thompson, who died March 16, 1706, at the age of forty years, and over whose grave, near the Winslow tomb in Marshfield, Mass., is the following quaint epitaph.

"Here, in a Tyrant's hand, doth captive lie  
A rare synopsis of Divinity.  
Old Patriarchs, Prophets, Gospel Bishops meet  
Under deep silence in this winding sheet;  
All rest awhile, in hope and full intent,  
When their King calls, to meet in Parliament."



cordance with a rule somewhat similar to that involved in the contracts made with the Chinese coolies brought to the Pacific coast, within a few years past,—though the bargain of the Puritan settlers was upon a higher moral plane, the motives for emigration of both parties to the agreement, being above merely commercial or sordid considerations.

Joseph Wise was set free from the legal bond of service by a clause of the last will and testament of his master, Dr. Alcock, who died in 1640, expressly giving him "the rest of his time" from after the next following summer,—in the same way in which indentured apprentices to a mechanical trade were freed from the obligation of servitude, sometimes for meritorious conduct and sometimes because they had paid for their freedom a stipulated sum. The phrase "bought his time" I occasionally heard in my boyhood, when a custom prevailed, which is now entirely obsolete; the Young America of these days scorning the thoughts of any such trammels.

In December of the year he was set free, he voluntarily entered the more enticing servitude of matrimony, by uniting in wedlock with Miss Mary Thompson, whose parentage is hereinbefore mentioned.

Of their thirteen children, eleven lived to maturity; of whom John was the fifth. When he was ten years old, his mother's brother, Benjamin Thompson, graduated at Harvard College, and not long afterward became master of the Free School in Boston. We do not find recorded any particulars of his childhood and youth; but it is not an unwarrantable supposition that this uncle may have rendered him essential aid in his earlier years in acquiring rudimentary knowledge. This same uncle was an early tutor of the subsequently noted Cotton Mather.

John Wise graduated at Harvard College, in 1673. That institution was then probably not much (if any) superior in its facilities for a "liberal education," to a respectable academy of a later period—not the equal, as a whole, of the present Normal Schools of this State, or the High Schools, or even of some private institutions in our cities and larger towns.

Mr. Wise preached first, so far as is now known, at Branford, in Connecticut, and, under a regular appointment of the colonial authorities, officiated as a chaplain to a military expedition in King Philip's War. He afterwards preached at Hatfield, Mass., in the years 1677 and 1678; and there, as had been the case at Branford, he was urgently solicited to settle as pastor. It is stated that he was almost persuaded to remain at Hatfield and grow up with the place, which was then a new settlement. But he finally declined.

In December of 1678 he was married at Hatfield to Miss Abigail Gardner, daughter of Thomas Gardner, of Roxbury.

He came to Chebacco to preach in the spring of 1680, officiated at the dedication of the meeting-house, which had been raised a year previously, and was from that time the recognized minister, though

he was not regularly ordained, nor was the church organized, until three years later.

The narrative of his residence in this place, and of his ministerial career of forty-five years' duration to his death in 1725, at the age of seventy-three, has an interest which is in some respects romantic.

A notable incident of his pulpit ministrations, often mentioned in local notices and commemorative discourses, was his fervently uttered wish in public prayer for some of his neighbors then held captive by pirates, that if there were no other way of release, they might rise and slay their captors. On that same day they arose and, killing the pirates, effected their escape.

This may have been only a coincidence, or, for aught we may positively know, it may have been something more. While not assuming anything either way as a settled conclusion, we should not be disquieted by anybody's adoption of the sentiment expressed in one of Tennyson's idyls of King Arthur,—

"More things are wrought by prayer  
Than this world dreams of. Wherefore, let thy voice  
Rise like a fountain for me night and day.  
For so the whole round earth is every way  
Bound by gold chains about the feet of God."

Mr. Wise's published writings, "The Church's Quarrel Espoused" and "A Vindication of the Government of the New England Churches;" the oft-repeated and accredited tradition of his easy and speedy disposal of the doughty athlete Chandler, who had jogged all the way from Andover on horseback to try his hands and arms with him at wrestling, and who was at the very first bout laid upon his back on the ground, and at the second lifted over the fence, and who then said that if Mr. Wise would be kind enough to pass his horse over, he would go home; and his spirited resistance to the usurpation of Sir Edmund Andros, with his keen and incisive affidavit and petition for redress for the wrongs inflicted upon him and his associates by that despot, which have given him a national reputation, all demonstrate that in strongly marked individuality of character, as well as in physical strength, he surpassed the occupants generally of the Congregational pulpits of his time.

He was evidently what would be called, in the irreverent phraseology of the present time, a "muscular Christian." If the modern champion slugger, John L. Sullivan, had lived at that early day, and had undertaken to "fool" around Mr. Wise, his laurels would doubtless have soon withered, for he would probably have been knocked out of time in the first round.

Though above the average stature, he was well proportioned, and though of dignified and commanding aspect, he was free from arbitrary assumption of authority, and seems to have had a singularly modest estimate of his own intellectual powers, which, as evinced by his printed discourses and essays, were





decidedly superior. While of a lively fancy and a somewhat ardent temperament, which would have rendered him fearless of carrying all sail in a mental yacht-race, he was at the same time thoroughly ballasted with sound, practical sense.

In everything pertaining to ecclesiastical order and church government, he was thoroughly and consistently a Congregationalist. He was in favor of leaving each church and society to regulate and manage its own affairs, without dictation or interference from without, whether by Presbyteries or Associations. In his published writings on the subject he employed wit, sarcasm and invective, as well as sober argument, in controverting the position of those in his time who proposed a more stringent sectarian organization, with standing councils, to be empowered with what he regarded as a semi-popish authority over individual ministers and their congregations. Then, as has often since been the case, there was manifest a pruriency for a domineering sway over the many by the few.

But the most important event of his public career, which, at the time, gave him not only a colonial but also, to some extent, no doubt, a transatlantic distinction, wherever abroad the affairs of these new settlements were regarded with any interest, and which now secures for him an abiding national reputation, was his manly and courageous resistance to the assumption of the colonial Governor, Sir Edmund Andros, who, in 1687, levied upon the colonists, without warrant or authority of any deliberative assembly, a tax of one penny upon every pound of their estates.

**NOT THE FIRST.**—The fact that he was not, as he is commonly supposed to have been, the *first* person in the colonies to protest against taxation without representation, should not detract in the slightest degree from the pre-eminent merit of his heroic action; for which, with five others, he was fined and imprisoned.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> The first person in the New England colonies who remonstrated against taxation without representation, so far as can be known from any historical record, was Rev. George Phillips, ancestor (by his first wife) of Wendell Phillips, the orator and philanthropist, and by his second wife of the late Hon. Stephen G. Phillips, of Salem. He uttered his protest in 1672, fifty-five years before that of Mr. Wise, and twenty years before the latter was born.

Rev. George Phillips came from England in the ship "Arbella," in 1631, with John Winthrop, Sir Richard Saltonstall, Major William Hathorne, John Warrin and others, all worthy and some knightly.

Mr. Phillips settled in Watertown, Mass., and was minister of the church there fourteen years, until his death in 1641, at the age of fifty-one.

He was more liberal and tolerant than some of the other Puritan leaders,—in this respect harmonizing with his distinguished parishioner and church-member, the humane and estimable Sir Richard Saltonstall, who resided in Watertown about a year prior to his return to England. His enlightened views of civil and religious liberty led him early to the earnest advocacy of Congregationalism in church order and government.

In 1632 his fellow-passenger Winthrop, then Governor (who, notwithstanding his personal animosity and a spice of liberality, was fond of the exercise of magisterial prerogative), ordered the collection of a tax

Those who suffered with him in this persecution were John Appleton, at whose house was held the first meeting to consider the question of resistance to the collection of the unlawful tax; John Andrews, William Goodhue, Robert Kinsman and Thomas French. Wise and Appleton were fined £50 each; Andrews, £30; Goodhue and Kinsman, £20 each; and French, £15. Wise and Appleton were required to give bonds in the sum of £1000 each, and the others £500 each, for their good behavior for one year. Mr. Wise was suspended from his clerical functions, and they were all debarred from holding any civil office.

At a town-meeting held in Ipswich, pursuant to an order from the treasurer of the colony, acting under the command of Governor Andros, for the purpose of choosing a commissioner to join with the selectmen in assessing the inhabitants, the citizens, after having been forcibly and eloquently addressed by Mr. Wise, voted unanimously not to choose such commissioner, or take any steps whatever to collect the tax.

The whole town itself, of course, thus became as much responsible for the position taken as were the six men singled out for prosecution; but as an attempt to arrest and imprison the entire people of the place would have been undertaking too large a contract, they seized upon those whom they considered to be ringleaders.

In his petition for redress of his grievances, which accompanied his suit for damages, brought against the chief justice, Joseph Dudley, some two years afterwards, when Andros had been driven from the Governorship, in consequence of a change in the occupancy of the British throne, Mr. Wise told of the insolence of one of the judges at his trial, who said, "Mr. Wise, you have no more privileges left you than not to be sold for slaves."

King James II., of whom Andros, now deposed, had been the pliant tool, was now in exile; and William and Mary of Orange having acceded to the

from the people of the colony, without consulting them. Mr. Phillips and the Ruling Elders of his church, Richard Brown, called the people of Watertown together, and gave it as their opinion that it was dangerous to submit to the order of the Governor and his assistants to tax the people without their consent. For so doing they were arraigned before the Governor, and it is recorded that there was "much debate" on the subject.

Their action would seem to have had a beneficial effect; for not long afterward, before any further attempt to levy a tax, the court, on the 19th of May, 1632, ordered that "two of every plantation be appointed to confer with the Court about raising of a public stock;" and this led, a short time afterward, to the establishment of a representative body in the government of the colony.

Governor Winthrop claimed that Mr. Phillips afterwards "acknowledged his error." I cannot find, however, in any record, the slightest evidence that he ever made any such acknowledgment. Possibly, his respect for the Governor's really good qualities, and a compassionate feeling towards him on account of his mortification at the failure of his tax-raising scheme, may have induced Mr. Phillips to let him down easily.

As all this occurred twenty years before John Wise was born, it is possible that he may not have heard of it.





throne, the relative political and legal status of the oppressor and his victims had entirely changed. Mr. Wise recovered damages of Chief Justice Dudley, who had been Sir Edmund's companion-sycophant to royalty; and the town of Ipswich reimbursed the persecuted men for their pecuniary losses.

In 1689 he was chosen by the town as a Representative in an assemblage convened that year in Boston, for advisory purposes.

Mr. Wise lived thirty-six years after this triumphant vindication, and continued preaching until within a short period before his death, which occurred at the age of seventy-three years. The following is the inscription upon his memorial stone in the old burying-ground in Essex:

"UNDERNEATH LIES THE BODY OF THE  
REV. JOHN WISE, A. M.,  
FIRST PASTOR OF THE 2d CHURCH IN IPSWICH.  
Graduated at Harvard College, 1673.  
Ordained Pastor of said Church, 1681.  
Aged 73.  
Aged 73.

For talents, piety and learning,  
He shone as a star of the  
First Magnitude

He had seven children, five sons and two daughters, who survived him several years. His wife's death occurred only a few months after that of her husband.

The eldest son, Jeremiah, was a preacher, and was for forty-eight years, until his death, pastor of a church at South Berwick, Maine. A daughter became the wife of Rev. John White, of Gloucester. Ammi Ruhani was a military man, with the rank of major, and he and his brother Henry were actively engaged in secular business pursuits.

During the appalling witchcraft delusion in 1692, Rev. John Wise, with an equal, if not even greater, degree of intrepidity than when opposing Gov. Andros, interposed in behalf of one of the victims and his wife by heading a petition of thirty-two inhabitants of Chebacco, attesting the irreproachable character of the accused persons, who had for some years resided among them prior to their removal to Salem. This furnishes no proof that he did not share the general delusion of the times on the question of the existence of witches; but it demonstrates his bravery and generosity, in incurring the hazard of losing his own life by an effort to save the life of another.

A further mention of his friendly interposition, and the principal reason for it, will be found under the head of Witchcraft, in this history.

**THE SECOND MINISTER.**—Mr. Wise's immediate successor was Rev. Theophilus Pickering, a native of Salem, born in the Pickering mansion of several gables, still standing in Broad Street, in the vicinity of the State Normal School building. He was an uncle of Timothy Pickering, distinguished as an officer in the Revolution and as a member of the Cabinet of

President Washington, and likewise of that of the elder Adams. John Pickering, distinguished as a lawyer and scholar, author of "Pickering's Synonyms," and Octavius Pickering, who were brothers, I think, were also, I believe, nephews of Theophilus.

With Octavius, when he was a resident of Boston, I was personally acquainted, having first met him when he appeared as a witness before a legislative committee, and having had some conversation with him relative to the family traditions concerning the Chebacco minister, and his personal traits and characteristics.

I judge that the Rev. Theophilus Pickering was a person of varied learning and accomplishments; of fine literary tastes; intellectually able; dignified in manner, staid and decorous in his style of public speaking, yet animated and interesting; of strict integrity and a nice sense of personal honor; from natural temperament not so effusive and enthusiastic as some others, and having a constitutional abhorrence of rant and sensational utterances. He was devout and sincere, frank in the avowal of his exact opinions, and averse to a tacit or seeming acquiescence in anything of which he did not fully approve.

He had considerable mechanical skill, and found agreeable recreation in manual labor. Some of the interior finishing of the dwelling-house, which he owned and for some time occupied, now the residence of Mr. Edwin Hobbs, is said to be the product of his workmanship.

For fifteen or sixteen years after his settlement, the relations between him and his church and society were entirely harmonious and cordial, so far as can be known. About the year 1740, when the famous Rev. George Whitefield first preached in Ipswich, and visited Chebacco, or soon after, signs of discontent and disaffection towards him began to be manifested, first like drops of a slight sprinkling from the outermost fringe of a cloud, the cloud gradually increasing in density till it became dark and frowning, and the rain began to fall pitilessly. It chilled Mr. Pickering; and I have no doubt that like chills to the physical system, in damp and malarial regions, it shortened the number of his days on earth.

The story is too long to be given here in particularity of detail. The dissatisfaction of a portion of his church grew into a schism. Conferences and consultations were ineffectual to heal the breach, and at length the disaffected members withdrew and organized a separate society and church, of which Rev. John Cleaveland became the settled pastor.

The charge against Mr. Pickering was principally that he did not adopt nor approve of the measures introduced by Whitefield for the promotion of religious revivals. The controversy which had arisen was not professedly about theological *doctrines* so much as about *methods*—methods of impressing the doctrines upon the minds of the listeners and of testing the fitness of persons to become church mem-



bers, although some of the "specifications" of the charge against the minister, as they are termed in military trials, were to the effect that the distinctive doctrines of grace had not been presented with the frequency and cogency considered desirable and essential.

A majority of a council of neighboring ministers and churches, which had been called by the original church, with a view, if possible, to reconcile and harmonize the conflicting elements, while approving of Mr. Pickering's course in general, and censuring his opposers for withdrawing and setting up a separate assembly, nevertheless expressed the opinion that he had been "negligent about examining candidates for admission to the church respecting their religious experiences;" in other words, that he had opened the church door too widely and let people in too easily. Mr. Pickering probably judged them more by the rectitude of their lives and a calm expression of their hope and trust, than by a volubility of emotional and fervid utterance. The maxim that "still waters run deep" might appropriately have been adopted by him; and perhaps he would have applauded the man who, when asked, somewhat imperatively, by an over-zealous proselyter,—Have you got religion yet? quickly answered, "Not much to *speake* of."

Both parties in the controversy, however, were doubtless equally honest and sincere. A difference of temperament was probably, in part, the cause of their separation. People who were naturally enthusiastic and emotionally susceptible were "carried away" by the preaching of Whitefield.

WHITEFIELD'S POWER AS AN ORATOR.—To judge of his public speaking from a description of it by the wise and philosophical Benjamin Franklin, who heard him address a vast out-of-door assemblage in Philadelphia, he was unquestionably gifted in a wonderful degree as a brilliant, impassioned and persuasive orator. He was also gifted histrionically, and in pantomime especially could probably have become a star performer. Even the calm and reflective sage acknowledged himself to have been charmed and fascinated while listening to his discourse. But the magic influence was in the voice and manner of the speaker more than in the substance of the sermons. On reading some of them we wonder at the thought of the effect upon the hearers which tradition uniformly ascribes to them, and we think of the disappointment of the venerable lady, who, on perusing a printed copy of a discourse of her favorite minister, exclaimed: "They can never print that godly tone." As compared with Jeremy Taylor, Chalmers, or Channing, each materially different in style, Whitefield, in regard to anything like depth of thought and the affluence of illustration and expression which instruct and enliven when read as well as when heard, is like the sparkling effervescence of light beer contrasted with the flavor of old and mellow wine.

Nevertheless, Whitefield was always devout, ele-

vated in tone, circumspect in phraseology, and in keeping with the proprieties of civilized life. But this cannot be truthfully said of all his early followers in this country, a fact which was lamented by some of the better class of his admirers and adherents. Some of his disciples, particularly some of the preachers and exhorters, were fanatics and cranks. Especially was this the case with Rev. James Davenport, who preached for some time to the Separatist Church in Boston, to which Rev. John Cleveland preached, and which invited the latter to settle as its pastor. Davenport preached also in Ipswich, and seems to have been a favorite with the minister there, the Rev. Nathaniel Rogers, who, with him, came to Chebacco, and virtually insulted Mr. Pickering by holding forth in his pulpit without his consent, and alluding to him in their prayers as a man blinded, and asking God to open his eyes and cause the scales to fall from them. Mr. Pickering doubtless had reference to such persons, when, in a letter, he wrote of "the conceit of some that the sudden starts of their fancy are immediate impressions from the Holy Spirit." We can judge of the feeling cherished by some of the conservative ministers of that time by their strictures upon these Whitefield "New Lights," as they were termed.

ROGERS, OF IPSWICH, IN SALEM.—Rev. Mr. Brockwell, agent of the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts, wrote thus to the secretary of that organization at London:

"SALEM, Feb. 18, 1741-42.

"Rogers of Ipswich one of this Pseudo Apostles displayed his talent in ye Town on Sunday ye 24th January & continued here so doing untill ye Thursday following, when he left his auditory in charge to one Elvins a Baker, who holds forth every Thursday, and tho a fellow of consummate ignorance is nevertheless followed by great multitudes & much cried up. But I thank God, that few of my church went to hear either of them, and those y<sup>t</sup> did wholly disliked them."

DAVENPORT, THE FANATIC, WHO, IN HIS PRAYERS IN CHEBACCO, INSULTED MR. PICKERING.—In Barber's Historical Collections of Connecticut, Mr. Rogers' associate is thus portrayed: "Mr. James Davenport, of Southold, on Long Island, who had been esteemed a pious, sound and faithful minister, now became zealous beyond measure: made a visit to Connecticut, and preached in New Haven, Brandford, Stonington, and various other places; and went on as far as Boston. He gave an unrestrained liberty to noise and outcry, both of distress and joy in time of divine service. He promoted both with all his might, raising his voice to the highest pitch, together with the most violent agitations of the body. With these he united a strange singing tone which mightily tended to raise the feelings of weak and undiscerning people, and consequently to heighten the confusion among the passionate of his hearers. This odd, disagreeable tuning of the voice, in exercises of devotion, was caught by zealous exhorters, and became a characteristic of the separate preachers. The whole





sect were distinguished by this sanctimonious tone. It was Mr. Davenport's manner, when a number had cried out, and there had been great agitations of body, to pronounce them tokens of divine favor; and what was still worse, he would pronounce those persons who were the subjects of these outcries and agitations, to be converted; or that they had come to Christ; which were gross and dangerous errors. \* \* \* What had still more mischievous influence than all the rest, was his undertaking to *examine his brethren in the ministry*, as to their spiritual state, and publicly to decide concerning them, whether they were converted or unconverted. Some whom he had privately examined, and to all appearance were of as much grace as himself, he would in his public prayers pronounce unconverted. Thus, disorder, jealousy, and confusion were sown in the churches. He represented it as a dreadful thing to hear unconverted ministers; that their preaching was worse than poison; and he warned the people against it.

His brethren remonstrated against these wild measures, and represented to him that he must be under the influence of a wrong spirit; but he persisted in his measures. At Charlestown, in Massachusetts, he withdrew from the communion, on the Lord's day, pretending that he had scruples as to the conversion of the minister. The Boston ministers disapproved of his conduct, and rejected him. He was complained of, and brought before the General Court of Massachusetts, and was dismissed as not being of a sound mind. His conduct had a pernicious influence on the people.<sup>1</sup>

Still further illustrations of the semi-lunacy of some of the unbalanced Separatists of those days are furnished in the documents which follow:

"GREAT DISORDERS AT IPSWICH."

"From the MS. diary of Rev. Ebenezer Parkman, of Westboro', Mass., in the Library of the American Antiquarian Society in Worcester:

"N. B. Great Disorders (we hear) were lately at Ipswich by means of one *W. L.*, who with Mr. Gilman of Durham has sent Letters to many Ministers of ye Province as from ye K. of K. & L. of L's [King of Kings and Lord of Lords]."

"N. B. I received a letter at Mr. *Webster's* Study from Mr. C. Wright, of Ipswich to Mr. Denney of *Berwick* respecting ye Ipsw. Disorders in ye last month, horrible to relate. My Br. Saml P.—n, (Parkman) was present at Ipswich while some of these acts were done."

THE "DISORDERS" DESCRIBED.—The nature and character of the "great disorders" alluded to by Mr. Parkman, appear to be explained in the following extract from the diary of Rev. Samuel Chandler, of Gloucester, Mass., in which, it will be observed, he speaks of Woodbury and Gilman:

"Aug. 29, 1746, I set out on a journey to Durham to a fast, at ye desire of the Church there, they being under difficulty. I led up on Mr. Wise's [of Berwick] by the way. We got to Durham about 10 o'clock, cloudy, rainy weather, and the people, not much expecting any minister would come, had got into the meeting house and were praying.

"When we went into the pulpit Mr. Gilman went out and went into the pew. I began with prayer. I was under some restraint. Mr. Wise preached from John 15, 3, and concluded with prayer. In the exercise were a number, 4 or 5, that were extraordinarily agitated. They made all manner of mouths, turning out their lips, drawing their mouths awry, as if convulsed, staining the eye-balls, and twisting their bodies in all manner of unseemly postures. Some were falling down, others jumping up, catching hold of one another, extending their arms, clapping their hands, groaning, talking. Some were approving what was spoken, and saying aye—that is true, 'tis just so, and some were exclaiming and crying out aloud, glory, glory. It drowned Mr. Wise's voice. He spoke to them, entreated them, condemned the practice, but all to no purpose.

"Mr. Gilman came in, and after him a number of these high-flyers, raving like mad men, reproaching, reflecting. One, Hannah Hackins, in a boasting air, said she had gone through adoption, justification and sanctification and perfection and perseverance. She fell to dancing round the room, singing some dancing tunes, jiggs, minnits, and kept the time exactly with her feet.

"August 31. I preached from Gal. 2, 20. The people appeared very devout, excepting those that were of Mr. Gilman's party. They, as yesterday, made wry mouths and extraordinary gestures of body. I desired and entreated, if they loved the souls of sinners, that they would suffer them to hear what I had to offer to them, but all to no purpose.

"Mr. Gilman says he has a witness within him that I neither preached nor prayed with the Spirit. I told him I had a witness within myself that I did both. He said, 'how can that be when you have your thumb papers and you can hardly read them?' He says he can't receive those who don't receive Woodbury and all those persons, with their extravagancies."

To the credit of Mr. Cleaveland, it is to be said that he does not seem to have fallen into the extravagances of speech of some others, but in this respect was decorous and discreet. But the views of his newly organized Separatist Church, upon the subject of testing the reality and thoroughness of the conversion of preachers before employing them, seem to have corresponded substantially to those of Mr. Davenport. One article in a code of faith and discipline adopted by said church was as follows:

"Neither Pastor nor Elders shall invite any person to preach, until they are satisfied that he has a work of grace wro't on his soul."

To judge him impartially, it must be admitted that Davenport was really acting in accordance with the *spirit* of this article, although he was doing it in a wild and disorderly way.

Mr. Pickering published a pamphlet, entitled "A Bad Omen to the Churches in the Instance of Mr. John Cleaveland's Ordination over a Separation in Chebacco Parish;" and he was preparing for publication another document in reply to "A Plain Narrative by the New Church," when he died suddenly, October 7, 1847,—a little more than seven months after Mr. Cleaveland's ordination.

His church, on the 31st of the following December, approved a Letter in defence of their Pastor and themselves.

Mr. Pickering was never married. He was long remembered by devoted friends. An elderly lady, who, from her parents had heard the story of the opposition to him, and who a hundred years after its occurrence, pathetically told it to me, was wont to repeat some elegiac verses written soon after his departure, commencing with the words,

<sup>1</sup> Ancestor of late Rev. Francis Parkman, of Boston, and of his brother, Dr. George Parkman, who was murdered by Dr. John W. Webster.

<sup>2</sup> Rev. Jeremiah Wise, minister of the church in Berwick, Me., a son of Rev. John Wise, of Chebacco.



"Mourn and lament!  
Your excellent  
Theophilus is dead."

**PICKERING STREET.**—A street leading from Martin street to Western avenue, not far from the house erected and occupied by Mr. Pickering, has been named in memory and in honor of him.

**THIRD MINISTER OF THE ORIGINAL CHURCH.**—In January, 1749, about a year and a quarter after the death of Mr. Pickering, Rev. Nehemiah Porter, a native of Hamilton, was ordained as his successor.<sup>1</sup> He was a graduate of Harvard College; and though less is recorded of him than of his predecessors, yet he is reputed to have been a man of force and decision of character, and of highly acceptable talents, as a preacher, as evinced by his having sustained himself here for seventeen years in the same village with the energetic rival minister Cleaveland.

In 1766 he removed to Yarmouth, Nova Scotia, which had been settled in part by people of Chebacco origin; where he organized a society and church to which he preached for several years; and then removing to Ashfield, Mass., he became the pastor of the church there, continuing in the active discharge of his duties until his eighty-eighth year, and preaching occasionally for years afterwards. He died in 1820, in the one hundredth year of his age.<sup>2</sup>

He is said to have left, at his decease, more than two hundred surviving descendants. Rev. Charles S. Porter, first pastor of the present Congregational Church at Gloucester Harbor, was his grandson.

#### MR. PORTER THE ONLY CHEBACCO MINISTER

<sup>1</sup> Mr. Porter was of the same lineage as the writer of this historical sketch of Essex,—both being descendants of John Porter, who came from England to Hingham, Mass., in 1635, and to Salem in 1641; was of the first church in Salem, and afterward of that in Salem Village (Danvers); was Representative from Hingham and Salem; was a tanner and the largest land-holder in Salem Village.

His son Joseph married Anna Hathorne, daughter of Major Wm. Hathorne, who came to Salem, in 1630, in the *Arbella*, with Winthrop; and their granddaughter, Mary Porter, married Dr. Jonathan Prince, my great-grandfather. It is thus that I am a direct descendant of Hathorne, as of Porter.

Of the same Porter lineage also was Mrs. Helen O'Leary Choate, wife of the late Hon. Rufus Choate. Her maternal grandfather was Asa Porter, who graduated at Harvard College in 1792, and settled in Newbury as a merchant. About 1780, he removed to Haverhill, N. H., where he became a large land-holder. His daughter Sarah married Hon. Mills O'Leary.

Asa Porter's brother, Dr. Aaron Porter, who settled in Portland, Me., where he became eminent as a physician, married Paulina King, sister of Hon. Rufus King, a delegate from Massachusetts to the Convention that framed the United States Constitution, and first United States Senator from New York; and of Hon. William King, first Governor of Maine. Dr. Porter's daughter Harriet became the second wife of Rev. Dr. Ignatius Beecher, and by him had four children, viz., one who died in infancy, Rev. James Beecher, now deceased; Rev. Thomas K. Beecher, of Elmira, N. Y., and Mrs. Isabella Beecher Hooker, of Hartford, Conn., who, of course, were all second cousins of Mrs. Choate.

<sup>2</sup> There is a discrepancy in the statements in regard to his exact age. Rev. Dr. Chosell, in his *History of Essex*, and his son, Professor E. P. Crowell, in his *Church Anniversary Address*, state it as ninety-nine years and eleven months; while Hon. Joseph W. Porter, of Burlington, Maine, in his "Porter Genealogy," gives as ninety-nine years, three months and nine days. The difference is in the date of his birth, which in one account is March 20th, and in the other November 20th.

**RECOGNIZED IN MANCHESTER.**—Mr. Cleaveland, in a printed pamphlet, gave an extract from a letter addressed to him by Rev. Benjamin Tappan, pastor of the church in Manchester, in the summer of 1751, more than four years after Cleaveland's ordination, declining to recognize his "society," as he called it, "as a regular church."

Mr. Tappan's Church, in a previous communication, had said: "We know of no more than *one* Congregational Church at Chebacco, viz., that under the pastoral care of the Rev. Mr. Porter."

**LAST MINISTER OF THE CHURCH OF WISE AND PICKERING.**—Mr. Porter was the last settled minister of the society and church which from their original formation had been known respectively as the Second Parish and Second Church in Ipswich. In about eight years after his withdrawal, both society and church ceased to exist as distinct organizations, having become merged respectively in the society and church of Mr. Cleaveland, which had previously been known as the Sixth Parish and Fourth Church in Ipswich; and the corporate name of each was changed to the numeral designation of Second Parish and Second Church, by which the united organizations were always afterwards recognized until the incorporation of the Second or Chebacco Parish into a separate town; when, of course, they each became the First in Essex.

**A DISPUTE ABOUT CLEAVELAND PRECIPITATES A DIVISION OF THE FIRST CHURCH IN IPSWICH.**—In the same year in which Mr. Cleaveland was ordained in Chebacco, Rev. John Walley, Jr., preached for several months to the First Church and Society in Ipswich town, and was invited by a large majority of the parish to settle with them as pastor; but the friends of Rev. Nathaniel Rogers, who had also preached there, and was himself a candidate for the same position, strenuously objected to such an arrangement, partly because Mr. Walley declined to exchange pulpit services with Mr. Cleaveland; whereupon a considerable number withdrew, and organized a separate church and parish, over which Mr. Walley was ordained November 4, 1747. Thus, in part, from a controversy concerning affairs in Chebacco, was created the South Church in Ipswich.

It is true that a proposition had been made some time before, and repeatedly, for a second church and for a meeting-house the other side of the river; but the Cleaveland-controversy element appears to have hastened somewhat the divisionary movement.

**THE CHURCH OF THE SEPARATISTS AND ITS MINISTERS.**—Rev. John Cleaveland, who was for fifty-two years minister in Chebacco, first visited the place and preached a few times early in 1746,<sup>3</sup> while

<sup>3</sup> It is not improbable that he may have been recommended, and perhaps introduced here by William Story, a member of the Boston Separatist Society, who was of Chebacco origin or descent, and whom Mr. Cleaveland, in his army journal, speaks of as "my good and cordial friend."





officiating as minister of a Separatist Church in Boston, which worshipped in an edifice in School Street, which had been used by a society of the Protestant refugees called Huguenots, who had fled from France after the repeal of the edict of Nantes.<sup>1</sup>

Later in the same year, his brother, Rev. Ebenezer Cleaveland, preached here for several months, but does not seem to have "filled the bill" of the expectations of the people. Some years afterwards, he became the first settled minister of the Fifth Parish in Gloucester, Sandy Bay (now Rockport), where he resided many years, and where he died, in 1805. His grand-nephew, Hon. Nehemiah Cleaveland, says of him: "From all that I have been able to learn, Ebenezer Cleaveland fell a good way short of his brother John, both in natural and acquired talents. With a very large family, with very moderate means and many adverse circumstances, his life seems to have been one long and hard struggle."<sup>2</sup>

To the church in Boston, John Cleaveland preached for some time in the years 1745 and 1746, and received an invitation to become its settled pastor. This he declined, and accepted an invitation to settle in Chebacco. His distinguished grandson, Hon. Nehemiah Cleaveland, of Brooklyn, N. Y., in his notes and comments upon his grandfather's *Army Journal*, which he edited and furnished for publication in the Essex Institute Historical Collections, thus intimates the probable reason of his preference for the latter place:

"From a social and worldly point of view the Boston invitation must have been more attractive than the Chebacco call. But he found in that plain community of farmers and fishermen one magnet of superior power. I have no doubt that it was the bright and comely Mary Dodge,<sup>3</sup> known in these papers as his 'dear and loving spouse,' who virtually determined the question where he should stay. That the young minister was not without earnest competitors for her hand is still shown by documentary evidence."<sup>4</sup>

His ordination took place in February, 1747, the services being held out-of-doors, in front of the dwelling-house in the North District of the town, substantially the same building now owned by Capt. Lamont G. Burnham, and occupied by him as a summer residence. The place was then owned and occupied by Francis Choate, great-grandfather of the late Hon. Rufus Choate. He had been one of the most zealous originators of the new-light organization, and was a ruling elder of the new church.

<sup>1</sup> The same pulpit, years after Mr. Cleaveland preached in it, was, for awhile, occupied by the celebrated Unitarianist, Rev. John Murray. It was while discoursing here on one occasion that some bigoted and disorderly persons endeavored to create a disturbance, and one of them, to show his hostility to Mr. Murray's theological sentiments, threw a stone at him. It did not strike him, but fell upon the pulpit floor. Picking it up and holding it in his hand before the audience, Murray said: "This argument is solid and weighty, but not convincing."

<sup>2</sup> Essex Inst. Hist. Coll., XII, 53.

<sup>3</sup> Vol. xii., p. 86.

<sup>4</sup> The lady who, five months after his ordination, became his wife. She was a daughter of Parker and Mary (Choate) Dodge, and granddaughter of Capt. Thomas Choate, of Hog Island. Her mother was a sister of my great-great-grandmother, Rachel (Choate) Martin.

It was an inclement season of the year for religious exercises of any length to be held in the open air; but there was no building in the place sufficiently large to accommodate the audience, except the meeting-house of Mr. Pickering's society; and the bitter feeling toward the secessionists in all probability precluded the offer of a loan of that edifice for the occasion.

Of the subsequent ministerial career of Mr. Cleaveland, extending over half a century until his death, upon his seventy-seventh birth-day, April 22, 1799, I shall present here but little more than an outline.

While not intellectually the equal of either Wise or Pickering, and not a person of the scholastic attainments and culture of the latter especially, he was, nevertheless, a man of very respectable talents. His army journal and published discourses and controversial pamphlets, as well as his narrative of remarkable religious phenomena in his parish, while exhibiting some carelessness by their occasional lapses in grammar, show that he was a ready and vigorous writer, with considerable power and skill in graphic description.

HIS ORATORY.—As a public speaker, I judge, from authentic accounts of his manner in the pulpit, that he was usually more forcible than elegant. A lapidary might have figuratively classified him as a diamond in the rough. Rev. Dr. Crowell, who became one of his successors as pastor about fifteen years after his death, and who conversed with many who for years had been regular attendants upon his ministrations, has described him as speaking so loudly while preaching, that "persons sitting at an open window on the opposite side of the street, when the windows and doors of the church were open, have distinctly heard the greater part of his sermon." Rev. Dr. Daniel Dana, son of the minister of the South Church in Ipswich, who in his youth must have often heard him in his father's pulpit, said of him: "He was by no means a graceful preacher. His manner sometimes bordered on the rough and even the boisterous. In those good days, elegance in preaching was less in demand, and its absence less a topic of complaint, than in these fastidious times."<sup>5</sup> In the diary of Rev. Dr. Cogswell,<sup>6</sup> minister of the parish in Connecticut where Mr. Cleaveland spent his early life, is the following allusion to him, under date of October 26, 1766: "Mr. John Cleaveland preached for me to good acceptance in general. He was very loud and earnest, and preached without notes. His doctrines were good. The greater part of the Separatists went to hear him."

He was magnetic in his oratory, and from the recorded effect of it upon his hearers he was evidently at times pathetic. If unpolished, his elocution was probably in somewhat better taste than that of

<sup>5</sup> Sprague's "Annals of the American Pulpit," vol. 1.

<sup>6</sup> A descendant of John Cogswell, early settler of Chebacco.





Dickens's Rev. Melchisedec Howler, upon whose public services Captain Bunsby's landlady was such a constant and devout attendant.

**DISCOMFORT IN THE PULPIT IN WINTER.**—The intensity of emphasis, in voice and accompanying gesture, with which Mr. Cleaveland occasionally expressed himself, was sometimes an impulse of the moment, representing his mood of mind and feeling. An elderly resident, who passed away many years since, told me that in her youth she attended church on an unusually cold Sunday, when he preached; and there being neither stove nor furnace in the meeting-house, everybody present suffered from the keenness of the temperature. He appeared to be bravely enduring it as long as he could, and then pausing in his discourse, he stamped with his feet, and exclaimed, "O God! who can stand before thy cold?" (Psalm cxlvii. 17.)

**HIS ACCOUNT OF A REVIVAL.**—One of his publications was entitled "A Short and Plain Narrative of the late Work of God's Spirit at Chebacco in Ipswich in the years 1763 and 1764." Of this the following is an extract:

"After I had concluded the public service I went down among the Distresses; I then, while Congregation tarried, and found Divers in the deepest Agency of Soul Distress; young Women plowed with the greatest Impatience for Mercy. And I found several who received Comfort that Afternoon, and these were immediately filled with Bowels of Compassion for others, and were pleading with their Equals to give up their Hearts, then All, their whole Selves, to the blessed Jesus, saying, 'Christ is able and willing to save you—he came into the World to save lost Sinners. If you will not give up yourself, your All, to Christ, you must be damned.' \* \* \* Some that were brought into Soul Distress that Afternoon continued praying and crying for Mercy for three Days and Nights, without sleeping or taking any Thing for the Support of their Natures, and were brought to heavy work in Body before they found Consolation in Christ. The Kingdom of Heaven most evidently suffered Violence, and the Violent took it by Force; People pressed Inward. Such a Day and Evening I never saw before for the display of God's powerful Grace! it is beyond Description! \* \* \*

"On Monday, early in the Day, many came to my House, both young men and women, bowed down under a sense of their lost and perishing Condition, and my House was filled all that Day; some found Comfort before the Evening; and by some setting, or a little after, so many resorted to my house that it could not hold them, and we repaired to the Meeting House, which was soon filled, and by that Time we had prayed and sung, in Hymns, the Awakened were in such an Agency of Distress in every Part of the Meeting House, above and below, that there was no giving the congregation in general a Word of Exhortation that they could hear; and what Exhortations were given were given in a private way from Pew to Pew; and you might find Pews full of young Men in the greatest Anguish of Soul, as if the very Torments of Hell were kindled in their Consciences, crying out, saying, 'Oh, what a sinner I have been! O, what a stubborn Will and hard Heart I have!' And even Boys you might find in Corners of the House, in the Galleries, stretched upon the Seats and under the Seats, upon their Faces, crying for Mercy."

Evidently Mr. Cleaveland was deeply sincere in the belief that these manifestations resulted from the direct influence of the Spirit of the Infinite Being.

**WRITTEN EXPERIENCE OF ONE OF HIS CONVERTS.**—Appended to the "Narrative" is a communication written by a young woman of his congregation, to be read at the public service in the church. It is here given as copied *verbatim*. It illustrates the current religious thought and phraseology of that time:

"IPSWICH, FEB., 1765

"What follows is a Relation of some of the gracious Dealings of God with my Soul.

"I was from my Youth (or Childhood) at Times under Awakenings and Thoughtfulness about the Salvation of my Soul, which, I believe, were from the Spirit of God, knocking at the Door of my Soul; sometimes by awakening Providences; at other Times by his Word; and after living some time in this Manner, I went about to establish a Righteousness of my own, and so settled down upon a sandy Foundation, short of Union to, or saving Faith in the Lord Jesus Christ, the only Way of Salvation, and should have perished forever, if God, who is rich in Mercy, had not opened mine Eyes and showed me my fatal Mistake before it was too late! But the God of all Grace, who, I believe, had a design of Love, Grace and Mercy to my Soul from Eternity, did not suffer me to rest here; but sometime in December, 1763, when it pleased God to visit this place (Chebacco) in such a wonderful Manner by his blessed Spirit in the Conviction and hopeful Conversion of a Number of precious Souls, I was brought to some serious Reflections about the state of my Soul.

"I saw that Christ died for me, as much as if there had been no other Person upon Earth, and my Soul was filled with Astonishment at the dying Love of Christ. I found the Love of Christ shed abroad in my Heart, and I felt a sweet Calm in my Soul.

"But this View of Things was but short before a dark Cloud overspread my Mind again, but I still had longings of Soul after Discoveries of Christ, and that I might be more and more established; at Length, the LORD appeared in a more wonderful Manner; these Words were brought to me, 'I can do all Things through Christ strengthening me.' I believed that I could do all Things through Christ strengthening me; and that all Things were possible with God, and that God could freely pardon the greatest Sinner, that ever was, through the Merits of His Dear Son; and my Soul was so filled with the Love of Christ, that I was ready to cry out with the Spouse, 'Stay me with Flagons and comfort me with Apples, for I am sick of Love!' I seemed to myself like a little mote swallowed up in the Ocean of Love! I saw those that were interested in the Covenant of Grace were interested in a sure Covenant, and that Heaven and Earth shall pass away before one Word of God's Promise shall fail."

It is evident that at the time this was written it was customary to allude to the ocean as a symbol of Divine Love.

In this and other publications of that period, Mr. Cleaveland followed the old English usage of beginning each of the principal nouns with a capital letter. In his later writings he deviated from this rule.

**HIS OPPOSITION TO REV. JOHN MURRAY.**—He published, about 1774, a pamphlet entitled, "An Attempt to Nip in the Bud the Unscriptural Doctrine of Universal Salvation, and some other Dangerous Errors connected with it; which a certain Stranger, who calls himself John Murray, has of late been endeavoring to spread in the First Church in Gloucester."

The substance of this he had preached in Chebacco; and in it he had made a statement, which, though he doubtless believed it, was a transparent absurdity, as well as a falsehood. He was naturally a confiding man, and his credulity had probably been imposed upon by some less glibble and more crafty person. He represented that Murray, when preaching in Gloucester, turned towards that part of the gallery where sat some rough sailors, and told them to go on, do just as they pleased, swear, drink, and commit any sin, and it would be just as well with them hereafter, as if they had lived virtuously;—they would all go to heaven. The story was based upon an utter misconception of Murray's character, and of his doctrine; for he taught explicitly, so that no intelligent hearer



could possibly misapprehend, the "final holiness and happiness" of all human souls. I say nothing here of the respective merits or demerits of the theology of either of the preachers, who were, I believe, equally honest and sincere; but I now aim only to state accurately the precise facts.

He did not have the secretiveness of a fox, but on the contrary had a confiding simplicity and openness that were truly Arcadian and refreshing. For instance, in the sermon referred to, he exhorted the young especially not to hear Murray preach, and added that if they did, they would be in danger of getting some ideas into their heads which they would never be able to get out of them!

He and Murray had some traits in common. They were both decidedly frank and open in manner and bearing; both fearless in utterance of the opinions they sincerely cherished. In temperament, they were considerably alike, both being ardent and enthusiastic. Could they have met and shaken hands with each other, some degree of cordiality would inevitably have sprung up between them, and prejudice would have been softened if not dispelled. What a pity that the Chebacco minister had not ridden the short distance of seven miles which separated them, and called upon the man whom he deemed in error, even if only to reprove and warn. Murray was an elegant gentleman; and I picture to myself what a gracious and hospitable welcome Cleaveland would have received.

SUBSTANTIALLY ALIKE IN FAITH, EXCEPT ON ONE POINT.—Besides their resemblance in personal characteristics, it should be noted that in its general features the *theological system* of the one was exactly the same as that of the other, the only difference between them in belief being Murray's conclusion that finally the benefits of the Divine Atonement would surely be universal in extent. Murray had been a member of Whitefield's church and congregation in London, before his adoption of Universalism. He still believed in the trinity and a sacrificial, vicarious atonement; and this belief he retained to the last of his days on earth. In the Universalism of Rev. Hosea Ballou, these tenets are discarded; and on this account Mr. Murray's widow would not recognize him as sound in faith. The late Ellis Gray Loring, Esq., (brother of Hon. Charles G. Loring) once told me in conversation that he found among the papers of his grandfather Faxon, who was a deacon of Mr. Ballou's church, a letter from Mrs. Murray, addressed to him, in which she said: "I cannot sit under Mr. Ballou's preaching, because he has taken the crown from the head of my Redeemer."

She was Murray's second wife, his first having died in England when he was a young man. She was Mrs. Judith (Sargent) Stevens, the widow of John Stevens, and daughter of Winthrop Sargent, then an opulent merchant of Gloucester, afterwards of Boston. She was a lady of considerable literary talent and culture, and of much force and individuality of character.

HIS FRANKNESS.—Mr. Cleaveland was always outspoken and straightforward. The word sneak had no application to him. He had strong doctrinal convictions, and he adhered to them tenaciously. Moreover, he had the *courage* of his convictions, as was shown by his refusal to acknowledge that he had done any thing wrong in attending a Separatist meeting, for which he was, with his brother Ebenezer, who had done the same, expelled from Yale College, while in his junior year.<sup>1</sup>

CLEAVELAND'S AND MURRAY'S ARMY CHAPLAINCIES—PERSECUTION OF MURRAY.—Murray was appointed as a chaplain in the army of the Revolution, and was popular with both officers and soldiers. He was a more graceful speaker than Cleaveland, and was especially gifted and sympathetic in devotional exercises. The brothers Cleaveland, John and Ebenezer, served at the same time in that capacity,—as they had done previously in the French and English war. If they joined in the unjust personal warfare instituted against Murray on account of his theological belief, they undoubtedly did it openly. Several of the chaplains petitioned Washington, the Commander-in-chief, to remove Murray from his position, on account of his opinions.

The duty assigned to army chaplains was not to confuse the minds of the soldiers by speculative doctrinal discussions, or to proselyte them to any particular sectarian standard, but to inspire them with hope and endurance, to give them good counsel, and to pray with and console them when sick, wounded or dying.

The illustrious General Nathaniel Greene, Washington's favorite adviser and right-hand man, was a warm friend and admirer of Murray, and he and General Varnum earnestly advised his retention. Greene was of Quaker descent, and had learned from his ancestors the lesson of toleration. Those who opposed the friend of Greene did but bump their heads against a stone wall. But in addition to these influences Washington himself carried a level head, and sought union and harmony among all the supporters of the patriotic cause; and so he quietly disposed of the matter by directing that Murray be transferred from the chaplaincy of a regiment to that of a brigade; which change was a promotion. And he officiated thereafter as the chaplain of three combined regiments of Rhode Island troops. History furnishes no more signal instance of a rebuke of bigoted intolerance.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Years afterward reparation for the wrong thus done him and his brother was made, so far as then possible to make it, by granting both the degree of A. M. and enrolling them among the graduates.

<sup>2</sup> Washington was governed in his action by broad and national considerations. So far as his individual opinions were concerned, he was not in unison with the Calvinistic form of doctrine which Cleaveland and Murray both adopted. He was a reverent believer in the Supreme Being and the Hereafter; but, although he attended Episcopal services, and sometimes served as warden and vestryman, he did not accept the theory of vicarious, sacrificial atonement. This fact is shown by the





Alas! for the blinding influence of prejudice. The persecutors do not seem to have perceived the assumption of impropriety of their conduct in insulting not only Murray himself but also his devoted friends, the enterprising and patriotic merchants of Gloucester and Boston, who cheerfully endured sacrifices and gave freely of their worldly substance to protect and defend the liberties of America.

Theological opinions did not disqualify a man from carrying a musket. How could they alone have unfitted a person to pray for that man, to a Being in whose existence he believed?

CLEVELAND'S FAMILY.—Mr. Cleaveland was twice married: first in 1747 to Mary Dodge, by whom he had four sons and three daughters, and with whom he lived nearly twenty-one years. She died in 1768. His second wife was a Widow Foster, of Manchester.

Of his sons, three were in the Revolutionary war,—with himself—one, Dr. Parker Cleaveland, being an assistant army-surgeon, and another, Lieutenant John Cleaveland, Jr., serving throughout the entire war. The latter became a preacher, and was settled at Stoneham and afterwards at Wrentham, Mass., where he died in 1815, at sixty-five years of age. Dr. Parker Cleaveland settled in Byfield, and lived there till the age of 74. He had two sons, Professor Parker Cleaveland, of Bowdoin College, and Rev. John P. Cleaveland, for several years minister of the Tabernacle Church in Salem, whose ruddy countenance and general air and manner corresponded with descriptions given of the appearance of his grandfather. Nehemiah Cleaveland, M. D., settled as a physician in Topsfield, and became eminent as a civilian—serving as Associate Justice and Chief Justice of the Court of Sessions, and also as a member of the State Senate. He had several sons who became distinguished—Nehemiah, widely known as a classical scholar and instructor; John, a lawyer in New York; and Rev. Dr. Elisha L. Cleaveland, for some time minister in New Haven, Conn. Wm. N. Cleaveland, Esq., another son, was a few years since a resident of Oxford; and a daughter was the wife of Rev. O. A. Taylor, for some years minister at Manchester, Mass.

HIS GENEALOGY.—Mr. Cleaveland was of the same lineage as that of Grover Cleaveland, the twenty-second President of the United States. Both descended from Moses Cleaveland, who came, when a boy, in 1635, from Ipswich, Suffolk County, England, with a master-joiner, of whom he was an apprentice.

This Moses Cleaveland settled in Woburn, Massachusetts, where he married a lady whose surname was Winn.

testimony of Governor Morris, one of the few persons with whom Washington conversed upon theological subjects.

Among Mr. Cleaveland's papers an autograph note from Washington, inviting him to dine with him, was found by his grandson, Nehemiah. It is quite probable that a similar courtesy was extended to other chaplains, as occasions suited, by proximity of their stations to the General's headquarters. And then, too, like Lincoln, Washington had tact as a harmonizer.

If there is luck in names, as some say there is in numbers, the maiden name of the first ancestress in America of the Chebacco minister and the United States President, may have foreshadowed that the latter would win in the great national race of 1884.

The exact relationship between them is this: Rev. John Cleaveland was a second cousin of President Cleaveland's great-great grandfather, Rev. Aaron Cleaveland. Each was of the fourth generation from the immigrant Moses—John through two Josiahs, and Aaron through two other Aarons.

John Cleaveland had also a brother named Aaron, who served in the French War in 1758, as a subaltern officer, when John and Ebenezer were chaplains. He was also in the Revolutionary War, commanding a company from Canterbury, Conn., and serving under the famous Gen. Israel Putnam. He was afterwards a colonel in the Connecticut State Militia. He was a farmer. He is thus alluded to in a letter from Chaplain John to his wife at Chebacco: "Our Surgeon, Dr. Rea, Ebenezer, and I went through Springfield to Sheffield, where we came across the Connecticut forces in which was our brother Aaron."

This Aaron was the father of Moses Cleaveland, who laid out and founded the city of Cleaveland, Ohio. The name is now spelled without the letter a.

The founder of that city was, of course, a *nephew* of Rev. John Cleaveland.

RULING ELDERS AND THEIR FUNCTIONS.—During Mr. Cleaveland's ministry, four members of his church, were in succession chosen to the office of Ruling Elder, viz.: Francis Choate, Daniel Giddings, Eleazer Craft and Seth Story. The office, which once existed in several of the churches, has long been extinct, having been either formally abolished or allowed to fall into desuetude.

This officer usually read the psalm at the public service, and sat with the minister at the communion; and when any person present from some other church desired to partake of the sacrament, he applied to him and he proposed his name to the church to obtain their consent.

When a minister from another church occupied the pulpit, either on exchange or otherwise, the Ruling Elder, after the singing of the psalm, signified his permission by saying, "If this present brother hath any word of exhortation for the people at this time, in the name of God let him say on."

He also had jurisdiction, to a certain extent, in cases of complaint against church members, which were presented to him in private; which he had discretionary authority to adjust, if the circumstances warranted, without reporting them to the church.

When complaints had been submitted by him to the church he would, after the hearing, ask the church if they were satisfied. If they said yes, the case would be dismissed without censure; but if they said no, he committed it to the pastor to pronounce the sentence



of admonition, suspension or excommunication, which ever had, by vote of the church, been decided upon.

Whenever any person expressed a desire to become a member of the church, the Ruling Elder would give public notice of such request and specify the time for the admission, if no adequate objection should be offered; and at the church-meeting for the purpose, he would call upon all persons who knew any just cause for objecting, to state it, or forever after hold their peace.

Ruling Elders were consecrated by the laying on of hands.

CLEVELAND'S SUCCESSORS.—In November of the year of Rev. John Cleveland's death, 1799, REV. JOSIAH WEBSTER, a native of New Hampshire, was ordained as his successor, and preached for nearly seven years, resigning in the summer of 1806. He was a very acceptable preacher, and personally much esteemed.

REV. THOMAS HOIT, a native of Connecticut, a very worthy man, was the next minister ordained in 1809. He preached here a little more than four years, leaving in 1813. A funny circumstance occurring during his pastorate, was the request of the people that he would *write* his sermons instead of preaching extemporaneously, as he had been accustomed to do, as they thought his discourses were not up to the mark of their wishes and expectations, in interest and instructiveness. Their proposed method of remedying the defect complained of, recalls the good story of a constant attendant upon public worship (the town and State of whose residence I am unable to specify) who sold his pew, which was in the rear part of the church, not far from the door, and purchased one located very near the pulpit and in front of it, alleging as a reason for the change that he thought that perhaps the sermons might have some strength if he could take them in immediately after they issued from the minister's lips; whereas always before, by the time they reached his ears in the back pew, they had become weak and flat.

REV. DR. CROWLEY. Mr. Hoyt's first successor, the seventh in succession of the settled ministers of the place, and the third in length of pastorate,<sup>1</sup> was Rev. Robert Crowley, a native of Salem, who was ordained August 10, 1814, and died here November 10, 1855.

An intimate personal acquaintance with him for many years, would prompt me to present here a more extended sketch of him than the limits assigned me in this book will admit. As, however, his tastes and inclinations were not controversial, and circumstances did not bring him into personal or professional conflict with others, his career was not, in these respects, so eventful as that of some of his predecessors.

He was the model parish-minister. He had no aim nor ambition but to discharge worthily the duties of

that station. With him, it seemed more a consecration than a professional pursuit. Thoughtful and dignified in his demeanor, he was yet always accessible to old and young, and uniformly courteous, genial and social in his intercourse with parishioners or strangers.

When a youth, he was employed for a few years in a store in Boston, probably with a view to being ultimately engaged permanently in a business occupation. But an incident, which he once related in conversation, gave him, I have always supposed, a distaste for a life of trade. He said that a man came in one day to purchase cloth for a suit of clothes, and the proprietor of the establishment showed him his variety of fabrics, and recommended to him what he considered the finest piece of goods in the store, setting upon it, however, only a moderate and fair price. The customer, although seeming half inclined to buy, demurred, saying he would like something better in quality, and finally went out without making any purchase, the dealer assuring him that if he would call again soon, he would, he felt confident, be able to show him something which would give him entire satisfaction. After the man had gone out, the dealer turned to his young employee, and said, "Now, Robert, I am going to sell that man a suit off that same roll of cloth! You see if I don't. It is of the very finest quality. The only trouble was, I offered it at too low a price. Next time, I shall ask more for it." In course of a few days the man came in again; and the dealer, bringing forward one-half of the same roll (which he had cut into two equal parts, so that one end was literally a piece of cloth that the customer had not before seen), said, with animation of voice and manner, "Now I've got something that will suit you; but it comes higher in price." He then unrolled it, held it up in the light, and descanted earnestly upon its merits; and the customer was so much pleased that he bought a suit from it without hesitation, paying considerably more than the sum for which he might have had it when the uncut roll was first exhibited!

As a public speaker Dr. Crowley was clear and distinct in utterance, and while earnest was modest and unassuming in manner. He had not the inclination, if indeed he had the organization and temperament, for anything like impassioned oratory.

As a writer he was able and perspicuous; and his published discourses and especially his history of the town, are specimens of remarkably vigorous and pure English, never characterized anywhere by a weak line or an inappropriate or infelicitous epithet. His diction was never ambitiously ornate but always harmoniously rounded. His fancied visits to the houses of the early settlers, and imaginary attendance at a wedding and upon public worship in the primitive meeting-house; his narrative of a fishing voyage and his animated account of a deer hunt; the description of the clandestine raising of the first meeting-house,

<sup>1</sup> Mr. Cleveland preached here fifty-two years, Mr. Wise forty five, and Dr. Crowley forty-one,—their three pastorates covering a period of one hundred and thirty-eight years.





of the first training day, and of a visit to the farmer of Hog Island,—all evince that if he had chosen to devote special attention to descriptive literary effort, or to have wrought in the humorous vein, he would have been decidedly a success.

As a grammarian he was always faultlessly accurate, notwithstanding the fact that (as he once told me, while we were visiting a public school) he had never in his life formally studied English Grammar. He said he had studied the Latin Grammar pretty thoroughly; and while teaching a common school in Manchester, a comprehension of the structure of the English was readily gained, partly from the analogy of the languages and partly by familiarizing himself with the rules of the English text book while hearing recitations.

As a citizen his personal influence was uniformly upon the side of good causes, he having been an active member of the first temperance organization in the town, when it required moral courage to advocate total abstinence, and always manifesting an unabated interest in the education of the young, serving upon the board of town's school committee for a large portion of his long residence here, and officiating for many years as its chairman.

Mr. Crowell was a graduate of Dartmouth College, of the class of 1811, and that institution conferred upon him, in 1850, the title of Doctor of Divinity.

He was twice married—first, in the year of his ordination, 1814, to Miss Hannah Frost, of Andover, by whom he had a daughter. His first wife died in December, 1818. The daughter has since deceased. His second wife was Miss Hannah, sister of Hon. Rufus Choate, to whom he was married September 2, 1822, and who died February 9, 1837, and by whom he had six children, three of whom survive—two daughters and a son, Rev. Prof. Edward Payson Crowell, of Amherst College.

Dr. Crowell died November 10, 1855. He was, in theological belief, a Calvinist; and his last words, which were inscribed upon his monument, express his faith in the doctrine of the perseverance of the saints.

**HIS ANCESTRY.**—According to tradition he was of Welsh extraction, his first ancestor in this country having come from Wales to Charlestown, Mass., in 1635; removing thence, in 1638, to Yarmouth, then a new settlement within the Plymouth Colony; where he was a man of some distinction, who had a grant of land, and became a magistrate. He died in 1672 or 1673. His grandson John removed from Yarmouth to Salem, Mass.

In this latter place, Robert, the subject of this notice, was born December 9, 1787. He was a great-great-grandson of the last mentioned John, and son of Captain Samuel, who commanded a privateer during the war of the Revolution, and was lost at sea while master of a merchant vessel, on a voyage to the East Indies.

Dr. Crowell's mother, Lydia (Woodbury) Crowell,

was a daughter of Josiah Woodbury, and a native of Hollis, N. H. It is not improbable that she may have been of the same lineage as that of the late Hon. Levi Woodbury, of New Hampshire, who was a Judge of the Supreme Court of that State, U. S. Senator, Secretary of the Navy during President Jackson's administration and Secretary of the Treasury under President Van Buren, and who was at the time of his death a Judge of the Supreme Court of the United States. He was a descendant of John Woodbury, one of the first settlers of Beverly, as are most, if not all, of the Woodburies in New England, whose genealogy is clearly traceable. Of the same lineage was the late Robert Woodbury Burnham, of Essex, whose paternal grandmother's maiden name was Woodbury. She was a native of Beverly Farms.

**HIS PUBLICATIONS.**—A few of his discourses were published in pamphlet form soon after their oral delivery, the two most notable being a historical sermon, preached in 1815, with the words from Job, viii. 8, as a text or motto,—“*For enquire, I pray thee, of the former age, and prepare thyself to the search of their fathers,*”—relating chiefly to the persons and events of his parish and church;—and a sermon delivered in the year 1818, upon the occasion of re-interring the coffins which had been robbed of their contents. This discourse is noticed more fully in another chapter of this history.

A discourse on the death of Rev. Joseph Dana, of Ipswich, and one upon the death of Rev. David Jewett, of Sandy Bay, were also printed; and likewise his address delivered October 27, 1852, at the consecration of Spring Street Cemetery.

His most voluminous publication was his history of Essex, the first chapter of which, covering the period from its first settlement to the year 1700, was issued in a small, bound volume, in 1853, two years prior to his death.

He had, at the time of his decease, completed, in manuscript, his continuation of it as far as the year 1814, leaving some materials for its extension yet further,—his plan contemplating, as appears by the statement of his son, its close with the year 1819, when this parish of Ipswich was incorporated as a separate town.

In 1867, the manuscript, which had been completed only as far as the year 1814, was purchased by the town, and a committee, consisting of Edwin Sargent, John C. Choate and Hervey Burnham, made arrangements for its publication,—the work being continued down to the year 1868, by the author's son, Professor E. P. Crowell, of Amherst College. It was issued from the press in the autumn of that year, and is an octavo volume of four hundred and eighty-eight pages, comprising a memoir of the author, by his son, and some valuable contributions by Hon. David Choate, the principal of which is an elaborate account of the action of the town in sustaining the Union cause during the late Civil War, with inter-





esting personal notices and sketches of the soldiers. The work is, in general, lucidly arranged, and one of the best written of town histories. Dr. Crowell's fancy sketches of visits to the abodes of the early settlers, with descriptions of their household utensils, the usages and habits of their daily life, their wearing apparel, their English customs and their personal appearance, bring them vividly before us, as living, breathing entities of flesh and blood, instead of shadows. We seem drawn near to them, and have a more distinctive and quickening idea of their character and their experiences of despair and hope, of sorrow and joy, and their deep religious faith and trust, than would be derived from an impersonal and bare matter-of-fact recital of outline historic detail.

HIS CRITICISM OF THE QUAKERS. — Dr. Crowell so revered the memory of the Puritan settlers of New England, that he was unwilling to admit that they were deserving even of censure for their treatment of the Quakers. His entire sincerity will not be questioned by those of his acquaintances who dissent from his conclusions relative to those people, as expressed on pages thirty-nine and forty of his town history. I presume that he had been prejudiced against them by reading some of the unjust accusations of their enemies.

I shall say nothing in this connection but what I should have said in his presence, and to which he would have candidly listened, I have no doubt, as he more than once did, without the slightest jar in our amicable personal relations, when conversing upon some of our divergent opinions.

A stranger to him might perhaps suppose that if he had lived in the early period referred to, he would have been active and relentless in persecuting the Quaker immigrants. The probability is, however, that the genial old gentleman wouldn't have done any such thing! He was naturally very humane, and would not intentionally have given pain to a fly. On one occasion a young woman, who came into the town to attend an anti-slavery convention, arose in his meeting, on Sunday morning, just as he was about to commence the delivery of his sermon, and insisted upon speaking. He very properly declined to be forcibly interrupted, but told her that if she would wait until he had finished his discourse, he would not object to her speaking, but would hear what she had to say. This was certainly very gentle and liberal treatment, but as she pertinaciously insisted upon talking at that particular point of time, some members of the congregation led her out.<sup>1</sup>

I believe that some of the charges of Quaker ex-

travagance of speech and impropriety of conduct are gross exaggerations, though I doubt not that they may have been tinged with fanaticism; while it is difficult to see how they could have materially damaged anybody. They were charged with having made "rude and contemptuous answers" to questions before the Court of Assistants. But after carefully reading the said answers, as recorded by the court itself, I assert, without fear of contradiction, that they are in every particular as respectful, and not so defiant, as the answers of the famous John Rogers, the martyr, to the questions of the Ecclesiastical Court, that condemned him to be burnt at the stake. The answers in both cases were fearless and incisive, but entirely proper. Why should Rogers be pictured in the primer as the immaculate saint, expiring amid the flames, with his wife and "nine small children and one at the breast" in the foreground, to excite our sympathy; and the poor Quakers be at the same time denounced as contumacious criminals? The same argument which could justify the barbarous cruelty in the one case would justify it in the other.

Entirely impartial and just, I think, is the conclusion concerning this portion of New England history, adopted by a distinguished grandson of Rev. John Cleveland. In speaking of the Colonial Governor, John Endicott, who signed the death-warrant of the four Quakers hung on Boston Common, he says:

"This was the time of the Quaker persecution—an affair which says little for the liberality, or even the good sense, of our fathers. In the indelible reproach, then incurred by Massachusetts, our Governor must bear his share. Let us see that he does not bear more."<sup>2</sup>

In 1661, King Charles the Second sent an order or letter to the General Court, requiring them to discontinue all proceedings against the Quakers, and to send to England such as were then under arrest. The royal order was brought to Massachusetts by a Quaker, Samuel Shattuck, who had been banished. According to Macaulay's "History of England, that illustrious Quaker, William Penn, had great influence with King Charles II., as well as with his brother and successor, James II.

LATER PREACHERS. — Seven different persons have been pastors of the Congregational Church here since the death of Dr. Crowell: — Rev. James M. Bacon, who remained thirteen years, and who died in Ashby, Massachusetts, in 1873; Rev. D. A. Morehouse, four and a quarter years; Rev. Edward G. Smith, one year and seven months; Rev. John L. Harris, between one and two years; Rev. F. H. Boynton, two years and five months; Rev. F. H. Palmer, for a short period; and Rev. Temple Cutler, the present pastor.

Mr. Cutler was born in Lynn, Mass., May 4, 1828. His father was Temple Cutler, son of Rev. Dr. Marnasseh Cutler, so long the minister of the Hamlet Parish, both before and after its incorporation as a

<sup>1</sup> Miss Maria French, of Salem, in December, 1842; an undoubtedly sincere person, who had become fanatical upon what she regarded as the indifference of the church to the wrongs and woes of the slave. She had, herself, been a member of a Congregational Church, but had joined a class termed "congregaters," who felt burdened with a mission to cry aloud and spare not, anywhere and at any time,—much like some of the early Quakers, who were, no doubt, equally harmless.

<sup>2</sup> Hon. Nehemiah Cleveland, in Appendix to Topsheld Bi-Centennial Address, 1850.



town.<sup>1</sup> His mother was Hannah Appleton, daughter of Captain Oliver Appleton, of Ipswich, a descendant of the John Appleton who in 1787 joined with Rev. John Wise and others, in resistance to the illegal tax levied upon the colony by Governor Andros. John Appleton's wife was Priscilla, daughter of Rev. Joseph Glover, to whom he was married in 1651. Mr. Cutler is, therefore, descended from clerical stock of the olden time, as well as of a more recent period.

He matriculated at Yale College in 1853, and graduated at Marietta College in Marietta, Ohio, in 1857. He studied also at Andover Theological Seminary, graduating from that institution in 1857. His first settlement was at Skowhegan, Maine, where he was ordained and installed, February 20, 1861. He was chaplain of the Ninth Regiment of Maine Volunteers for nine months during the recent war, and in 1864 was for several months in the service of the Christian Commission. He was settled in Athol, Massachusetts, from 1868 to 1876; and was afterwards, for five years, in the service of the American Missionary Association, at Chattanooga, Tennessee, and Charleston, South Carolina. In 1881, he returned to Hamilton, where he preached for two years. In 1883, October 1st, he came to Essex, where he still officiates as pastor.

**SEATING THE CONGREGATION.**—In this place, as also throughout the Puritan settlements, it was for some time the custom to assign the most eligible seats in the meeting-house according to wealth and high social position, or official rank. This usage was an expression of the aristocratic exclusiveness engrafted upon their minds in England, and which they did not immediately outgrow. I have sometimes wondered if they ever read in their public services

<sup>1</sup> While pastor at Hamilton, Manasseh Cutler became qualified as a physician, often practicing gratuitously for the benefit of the poor. He was also a member of Congress. He was doctorally entitled Doctor, as Yale College, from which he had years before graduated, conferred upon him the title of LL. D.

Two incidents of his life, perhaps now known to but few persons, are of sufficient general interest to be related in a book upon Essex County.

1. In 1788, while journeying in a chaise between Hamilton, Mass., and the former settlement at Marietta, Ohio, of which he was projector and leader, riding a distance of more than seven hundred miles each way, he called upon Dr. Franklin, in Philadelphia, and was entertained by him at tea; and the weather being warm, the supper table was set in the garden. What a charming scene for the imagination to recall! The venerable sage and patriot, whose fame as philosopher, statesman and wise economist filled two hemispheres, entertaining his worthy guest from the east with such unpretentious cordiality and pastoral simplicity.

2. Dr. Cutler was probably one of the most thoroughly informed botanists in the country. When Dr. Samuel Thomson, once widely known as a botanic physician, was tried, in Salem, for alleged mal-practice in causing the death of a young man in Beverly, named Lovett, by administering poison as a medicine, and two physicians, one from Beverly and the other from Salisbury, testified against him, exhibiting a specimen of what they termed lobelia, which they declared was a dangerous poison, Dr. Cutler, who appeared as a witness for the defence, was not afraid to *swear* it in court to the surprise and amusement of the bench and bar! He said it was *marsh-mallows*, which he had often used for relief in asthma. And the gallows of the spectators, the case was thrown out of court, and Thomson was discharged.

the first four verses of the second chapter of the Epistle of that radical believer in human equality, the Apostle James:

"My brethren, have not the faith of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Lord of glory, with respect of persons. For if there come into your assembly a man with a gold ring, in goodly apparel, and there come in also a poor man in vile raiment; and ye have respect to him that weareth the gay clothing, and say unto him, Sit thou here in a good place; and say to the poor, Stand thou there, or sit here under my footstool: are ye not then partial in yourselves, and become judges of evil thoughts?"

**FIRST BAPTIST PREACHING.**—For more than one hundred and seventy years after its first settlement, there were no religious meetings in Chebacco, but those of Orthodox Congregationalists.

No meeting-house was erected in the place for any other sect, for one hundred and thirty years, from 1679, (the year the first house was built, without leave), to 1809. In the latter year, a plain, flat-roofed structure, without steeple or tower, was erected upon the site of the house now occupied by the Methodists. It was in dimensions about thirty-five feet square. Its pulpit was plain and of pine, and, instead of pews, it had long benches.

**CHRISTIAN CHURCH.**—The Christian Baptist Society and Church, which occupied this building, had been organized in the spring of the preceding year. The church had no written creed, and the members styled themselves Christians, without prefix or affix, citing the historical statement of the New Testament, that "the Disciples were called Christians first in Antioch." They accepted the Bible, especially the New Testament, without note or comment, as their confession of faith and practical guide. They were, in faith and organization, substantially the same as the Church of the Disciples, in Pennsylvania and in some of the Western States, the church of which the late President Garfield was a member and at one time a lay preacher. Its adherents are sometimes styled Campbellites, after Alexander Campbell, the principal founder of the sect at the West.

**ELDER ELIAS SMITH.**—The most distinguished of the preachers of this denomination in New England, who assisted in the formation in Chebacco of this Church of Christian Baptists, or Christians, as they preferred to be called, was Elder Elias Smith, father of Rev. Daniel D. and Rev. Matthew Hale Smith, and uncle of Dr. Jerome V. C. Smith, long the Port-Physician of Boston, for several years Mayor of that city, at the same time a Professor in the Berkshire Medical College, and widely known as a successful and entertaining lyceum-lecturer.

**FIRST RELIGIOUS NEWSPAPER IN THE COUNTRY.**—It was while preaching to the Christian Church in Chebacco, that Elias Smith commenced the publication of the first religious newspaper in the United States. The first number was issued in September, 1808, between seven and eight years prior to the establishment of the Boston *Recorder*. It was printed in Portsmouth, N. H., though much of the editorial





writing was done in this place. It was entitled "Herald of Gospel Liberty." Its publication was continued for about nine years.

Elder Smith was at first a Calvinistic Baptist. On the incorporation of the Free Will element in his theology, he joined the Christian denomination: or rather, he was, in fact, one of the founders of that religious order, particularly in New England. He afterwards became a Universalist, and is said to have been, later in life, of Rationalistic tendencies.

His early advantages for obtaining an education were limited, but he made amends for any deficiency in this respect by the force of his remarkable natural abilities. He was specially quick of apprehension and quick-witted. On one occasion, soon after he had left one sect and joined another, an adherent of his former faith greeted him in public, unexpectedly, and rather sharply, with the question, "Mr. Smith, why did you *turn* from us to another denomination?" Perceiving that it would be idle and useless to enter upon an elaborate explanation before a chance-gathered group of persons, listening from motives of curiosity, he merely replied that he did it in obedience to an injunction of Scripture. "Ah!" said his questioner, "how's that? What particular passage of Scripture was it?" Smith answered: "Your denomination gives such poor support to its preachers, that I couldn't live among you and provide for my family; and so I obeyed the command which says: 'Turn ye, turn ye, for why will ye die?'"<sup>1</sup> The questioner collapsed.

Mr. Smith finally became a physician, and was quite successful, using botanic remedies exclusively; for the sale of which he kept a store in Hanover Street, Boston, where, in passing, I often observed the sign of "Elias Smith," over the door.

One day, in a railroad car, an old acquaintance, by way of jocular reference to his changes of sectarian connection, saluted him with the abrupt question, "Brother Smith, what's your doctrine *now*?" He replied: "My doctoring now is for the body. I have done with doctrine for the soul."

He died in 1846, at the age of eighty-five.

**OTHER CHRISTIAN PREACHERS.**—Elder John Rand sustained the relation of regular pastor of this church for a longer period, I believe, than any other minister. He resided here about seven years. He was very acceptable as a speaker, and was personally popular. The only criticism of him that I ever heard of, was that of one of his people, who, it was said, expressed the opinion that he "spent rather too much time in currying his horse."

At various times, Elders Stinchfield, Jones, Boothby, Swett, Robinson, Banfield, Sylvanus Brown, Elam Burnham and his brothers, Wesley, Edwin and George, have officiated here for brief periods. With the exception of Mr. Rand, those preaching here the

longest time continuously, were probably, Elder Swett and Elder Elam Burnham.

The people of this society and church were from the first sincere and consistent believers in human equality. One of their preachers was a colored man named Tash, who is said to have been an interesting speaker, and of considerable mental ability. He preached here fifty or more years ago; and it is a curious circumstance that he used in one of his discourses a figure of speech which occurs in one of the printed sermons of the present celebrated London preacher Rev. C. H. Spurgeon, and has been cited in compilations of some of his particularly bright sayings. It was repeated to me in 1840 by the late Gilman M. Burnham, who had some years previously heard it from Tash's lips, at a time when Spurgeon could have been only a child, if indeed he had then been born, as his birth did not occur until 1834, and he commenced speaking in public as an exhorter as late as 1851, and the next year first preached to a Baptist society at the age of eighteen.

Speaking of the neglect of some people to read the Bible, Mr. Tash said they would lay it aside "till the dust gathered so thickly on it that you could, with the finger, write the word 'damnation' on the cover." Spurgeon expresses the same idea exactly in very similar, if not precisely the same phraseology.

Of the members of this society and church, it can with truth be stated that no more sincerely devotional and honest-minded people, and no better citizens, ever lived in the town. Of the early founders of the church, one of the most prominent was the late Deacon Aaron Burnham, whose zeal and devotedness have often been mentioned by those who heard him sing in the public meetings his favorite hymn, beginning with the lines,—

"How firm a foundation, ye saints of the Lord,  
Is laid for your faith in his excellent word."

Of the twenty-two original members of the church, probably not one is now living. Of those who were afterwards members of the society or church, or of both, Moses Knowlton, Frederick Andrews, William H. Burnham, John C. Burnham, and perhaps a few others, are survivors.

In 1819 a new edifice was built upon the site of the first meeting-house, which had been taken down a year or two previously. This building is styled the Century Chapel, from the circumstance that the land on which it stands was leased by the proprietors for one hundred years.

It is now occupied as a place of public worship by the Methodist Society and Church.

**THE UNIVERSALIST SOCIETY** was organized in 1829 by forty-three persons, who signed its constitution and agreed to its general statement of belief.

Clergymen of that faith had occasionally preached in this place before that date, among whom were Rev. Ezra Leonard, of Amisquam, originally settled there as an Orthodox Congregationalist, but who, having

<sup>1</sup> Ezekiel, xxxiii. 11.



become converted to the doctrine of universal salvation, went over, with his church and society, to that communion; and the successor of Murray, at Gloucester Harbor, Rev. Thomas Jones, a native of Wales, one of the best educated ministers of that town, having graduated at the famous institution founded in England by the munificence of Lady Huntington.

After the formation of the society, meetings were held more frequently. Of the preachers who from time to time officiated here were Rev. Fayette Mace, who some years afterwards joined the Shakers, Rev. Robt. L. Kilham, Rev. Henry Belden, Rev. Lemuel Willis, then pastor at Salem, and others.

In 1835 Rev. Joseph Banfield, who had been preaching steadily for the Christian Baptists, adopted the faith of the Universalists, and was by them employed for some time, being the first minister who preached for them regularly and consecutively.

Mr. Banfield was the father of Hon. Everett C. Banfield, a lawyer of some note, who during President Grant's administration was Solicitor of the United States Treasury Department at Washington.

The society held its meetings a part of the time in the Christian Baptist meeting-house, which was loaned them for the purpose, and on other occasions in the school-houses, at the Falls, and in the Thompson Island District, and a few times, as had been the case with Mr. Cleaveland's society in the preceding century, in a barn.

**THE UNIVERSALIST MEETING-HOUSE.**—In 1836 the edifice, now standing, was erected under the superintendence of a building committee, consisting of Jacob Story, John Dexter, Sr., Parker Burnham, (2d), Oliver Low and Samuel Hardy. The sale of the pews yielded five hundred dollars more than the entire cost of the land, house and furniture, which was the sum of four thousand five hundred dollars. The overplus of five hundred dollars was, by vote of the society, presented to the builder, Mr. Benjamin Courtney, who found, at the finishing of his faithful work, that he had lost money by his contract. Thus the society crowned the completion of its temple of worship by a deed of practical Christianity.

The house was dedicated December 14, 1836, Rev. Thomas Whitmore preaching the dedicatory sermon.

The preachers to this society have been as follows: Rev. Augustus C. L. Arnold, from the spring of 1837 till early in 1840, when he became minister of a Unitarian parish in Fall River; the writer of this sketch, from May, 1849, to November, 1844, and again from May, 1852, to July, 1856, when he resigned and engaged in secular business; Rev. H. H. Baker, for about four years; Rev. Willard Spaulding, one year; Rev. C. H. Dutton, for about the same period; Rev. Emmons Partridge, for one season; Rev. S. Goff and Rev. J. H. Tuller, for about two years each; Rev. F. F. Lovell; Rev. C. C. Clark, for a short time; Rev. Elmer F. Pember, for nearly four years; Rev. Benton

Smith, for a few months; Rev. Harrison Closson, for about four years; and Rev. George J. Sanger, the present pastor.

Mr. Sanger was born in Framingham, Mass., August 27, 1826, and was the son of Daniel and Clarissa Sanger. His education was received in the common schools of his native town and in the academies of Framingham and Marlboro'. He was ordained as a minister of the Universalist Church in Sippican, a village in the town of Rochester, Mass., September 8, 1847. He has been settled in Sandwich, Gloucester, Hardwick, Webster, Danvers and Essex. He served as chaplain of the Forty-second Regiment of Massachusetts Volunteers in the War of the Rebellion, and was taken prisoner at the battle of Galveston, January 1, 1863, and was discharged from the service August 20, 1863. He was a member of the Massachusetts Legislature in the years 1869, 1873 and 1874, representing the towns of Webster and Danvers. He commenced as pastor of the Essex Universalist Church September 1, 1884.

**FORMATION OF A CHURCH.**—During the ministry of Mr. Pember a church was organized, separately from the society. Before that time, the communion was administered to all of the congregation who chose to partake of it. This was the usage of the writer of this, who believed then, and believes still, that this manner of observance was consistent Universalism. With those who conscientiously think that the "covenant of grace" is limited in its scope, a separate organization within the society is entirely consistent, and may be considered as a logical necessity. But where it is held that the covenant embraces all souls, all may be communicants, if for the time they choose so to be; and if then sincere, (and who shall judge them?) the observance is one good act;—and of any insincerity I never saw nor heard of any sign or token.

When, in 1840, I stated these views of the communion service to the venerable Father Jones, then the minister of the Universalist Society at Gloucester Harbor, he said that he entirely agreed with me.

**A DEACON DESCENDED FROM DEACONS.**—The late Mr. John Goodhue, Sr., who officiated for some years as one of the Universalist deacons, a sincere and blameless man, was a descendant of William Goodhue, a deacon of the first church organized in Chelbacco, whose brother Joseph and father William had both been deacons of the first church in Ipswich.

**A VALUABLE BEQUEST BY A GOODHUE DESCENDANT.**—About the year 1845, the society received, by the will of Mrs. Betsey Story, wife of Jacob Story, the gift of a large tract of land within the township; which, after having been let for twenty years or more, was sold for a large sum, a part of which was expended in remodelling and fresco-painting the interior of the church-edifice, leaving as a balance the sum of one thousand five hundred dollars, which was added to the society fund.





Before becoming the second wife of Mr. Story, the donor was the widow of Col. William Andrews. Her maiden name was Goodhue, and she was of the same lineage as those of that surname before mentioned.

**METHODIST SOCIETY AND CHURCH.**—In February, 1874, a church of the Methodist Episcopal denomination was instituted here by Rev. Daniel Sherman, Presiding Elder. A society was also organized at or about the same time, and both are in a prosperous condition. They hold their public religious services in the Century Chapel.

The preachers, who, according to the established usage of that religious body, are customarily appointed by the Conference for a period of two years, have thus far been as follows; Revs. A. J. Pettigrew, Abner Gregory, Wm. Merrill, Frank T. Pomeroy, E. H. McKenney, Walter Wilkie, George E. Hill, O. E. Poland and Putnam Webber.

## CHAPTER XCV.

### ESSEX—(Continued).

#### ESSEX SOLDIERS IN VARIOUS WARS.

*The Pequot War—King Philip's War—Narraganset—Mr. Wise's First Campaign—Later Campaigns with the Indians—Hostilities with Spain—Siege of Imbabura—French War—Expedition to Fort Ticonderoga—Mention of Colonial Brothers—Dr. Prince—War of the Revolution—Chebacco Mass Killed and one Wounded on Bunker Hill—Col. Burnham's Antislavery—Spaulding Motives of Chebacco—War of 1812—Wars of the Revolution—Surnames of Early Settlers—Commissioned Officers from Essex, who served as such in Wars—Captains—Officers and Privates—"The Rank and File."*

**THE PEQUOT WAR.**—The soldier-record of Essex commences at an early date. In 1637 John Burnham and his brother, Thomas Burnham, Robert Crosse and Andrew Story were drafted to serve in the war against the Pequot Indians; and in consideration of the service thus rendered, they each received, two years later, a grant of land of several acres.

This was, no doubt, the beginning of the bounty-land system in this country, as a reward for military service.

1643.—John Burnham and his brother Thomas were again soldiers, this year, in an expedition against the Indians.

**IN KING PHILIP'S WAR.**—As well as in the immediately preceding hostilities, this place was represented, though to what extent precisely, as regards the number of men engaged, we are not definitely informed.

John Bennet was one of those killed at Deerfield, Massachusetts, in September, 1675. He was a son of Henry Bennet, and grand-son of John Perkins, the first permanent settler of that name in Ipswich, who was the ancestor of all of that surname now residing in Essex. Henry Bennet had a farm, of which the southern boundary was Castle Neck Creek, and

a part of the dividing line between Essex and Ipswich. He also owned land upon Hog Island, upon which his son Jacob lived, and which Jacob's widow and children sold to Captain Thomas Choate.

John Bennet was a member of the company from Essex County, styled, in the New England histories, "The Flower of Essex," which was commanded by Captain Thomas Lathrop, of Beverly, and which was surprised by Indians, at Deerfield, at the locality ever since known as "Bloody Brook;" where he and most of his command were slaughtered. The company numbered eighty-four. Seventy-six of them were killed, having been ambuscaded by about seven hundred Indians, said to have been led by King Philip in person.

Captain Lathrop's widow married Joseph Grafton; and in 1683, being again a widow, she became the third wife of Deacon William Goodhue, of Ipswich, the first settler of that name in that place, and father of Deacon William Goodhue, jr., of Chebacco, as well as first ancestor in America of the Goodhues generally throughout this region. Her maiden name was Bethiah Rea, and she was of the same lineage as that of my great-great-grandmother Prince, whose maiden name was Sarah Rea. Both were descended from Daniel Rea, whose name, with those of John Endicott and Hugh Peters, is signed to the covenant of the First Church in Salem.

**NARRAGANSET.**—Of the ninety-five names borne upon the roll of the company of Captain Joseph Gardner, of Salem, organized to join the expedition against Narraganset, were those of Robert Andrews, Zaccheus Perkins, John Prince, Samuel Rust, Samuel Story, and Joseph Soames. Rust and Story were from Chebacco. Andrews was probably of Chebacco kinship. Prince and Soames were from Gloucester. Prince was a kinsman of my first ancestor in this country, who was an early settler of Salem, where he had a grant of land. Andrews and Perkins were enlisted from Topsfield. The latter was a grandson of John Perkins, (1st), of Ipswich, and a nephew of John Perkins, jr., of Chebacco.

This company was mustered at Dedham, Massachusetts, December 10, 1675, and marched to the general rendezvous of the forces at a place called Wickford in Rhode Island. Captain Gardner, Robert Andrews, Joseph Soames, and six others of the company, were subsequently killed in battle in the Narraganset Swamp; and the command devolved upon the lieutenant, William Hathorne, of Salem.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Son of the Major William Hathorne, who came, in 1630, in the Arbella, with Winthrop, and who was the ancestor of Nathaniel Hawthorne, the distinguished author, who uniformly inserted the letter *w* in the surname, which had sometimes been so written in England, and was so spelled by Governor Endicott, in his will, in 1659, where he designated certain real estate as having been purchased by him of "Captain Hawthorne." Rev. Dr. Wm. Bentley spelled the name Hathorne. Of this Wm. Hathorne, or Hawthorne, senior, the writer of this sketch of Essex is a lineal descendant.





**MR. WISE'S FIRST CHAPLAINCY.**—Rev. John Wise officiated for a short time as chaplain, in this war, accompanying some forces sent from Connecticut. At the time of his appointment to the chaplaincy, he was preaching in Branford, Conn., where he was urgently invited to settle. This was five years before he commenced preaching in Chebacco.

**LATER CONFLICTS WITH THE INDIANS.**—Upon a recurrence of Indian hostilities about the year 1708 Chebacco furnished its proportionate number of the troops required; and in detachments of soldiers for defense at various points, and for aggressive service, this place was from time to time represented, although minute particulars in this respect are not now accessible.

Rev. Benjamin Choate, a native of this place, and son of John Choate, the first settler of that name, was for some time stationed as chaplain at the garrison in Deerfield, in this State; where, nearly thirty years before, Lathrop and his men were captured and destroyed by the savages.

**HOSTILITIES WITH SPAIN.**—Among the officers in a military expedition to the Spanish West Indies, in the year 1740, was Major Ammi Ruhami Wise, son of Rev. John Wise, and a native of this place. It is not improbable that others also from Chebacco accompanied that expedition, though we have no record of their names.

**THE SIEGE OF LOUISBURG.**—In this famous expedition, under Pepperell and Warren, in the year 1745, were several men from this place. In the Eighth Massachusetts Regiment were Colonel John Choate, Lieutenant Thomas Choate, Jr., William Andrews, Aaron Foster (maternal grandfather of Hon. Rufus Choate) and Daniel Giddings.

On the roll of Captain Prescott's company, of Colonel Moore's regiment, was the name of Jonathan Choate, undoubtedly a descendant of the first settler of that surname in Chebacco, whether he was at that time a resident of this place, or had previously emigrated to New Hampshire; from which State several of that regiment were enrolled. Among other soldiers in this campaign were Abraham Martin and four others of his surname, whose residence, however, is not designated.

**FRENCH WAR.—EXPEDITION TO FORT TICONDEROGA.**—In the company commanded by Captain Stephen Whipple, in Colonel Jonathan Bagley's regiment, which was the third of the regiments raised by the colony of Massachusetts to operate against Canada, and which participated in the disastrous campaign to Lake George, in 1758, three of the officers,—the first and second lieutenants and the ensign, Nathan Burnham, Stephen Low and Samuel Knowlton,—and also the chaplain, Rev. John Cleaveland, were from Chebacco. Five of the privates of the company, two of the name of Burnham and one each of the names of Andrews, Foster and Marshall, and doubtless others, were likewise from this place.

The two lieutenants, Nathan Burnham and Stephen Low, were fatally wounded in the attack upon Ticonderoga, July 8th.

The following letter of Lieutenant Burnham was written from the western part of Massachusetts, to his wife, while he was on his way to the seat of war:

"HADDEN, June 7, 1758

"TO MY DEARLY-BELOVED WIFE:

"I hope, through Divine goodness, you are in health, as I am at this time, and I pray God to be with you, and preserve you and our dear children from all evil. My duty to Mother Choate. My love to all my friends. We came into town last Sabbath day, about two o'clock, and billeted the company at private houses, and we are very kindly entertained at the widow Porter's. Her husband was a member of the General Court about thirty years. Yesterday the captain, I, and Lieutenant Low, went over Connecticut River to Northampton, to see about the affair, and returned at night. We expect to go over to Northampton to-morrow, to take seven days' provisions, to march near to Albany.

"I remain your loving husband,

"NATHAN BURNHAM.

"P. S.—I should be glad to hear from you. I have had blisters on one foot, but they are better. Colonel Bagley came to town yesterday. Colonel Doory's regiment is coming in, and it is supposed both regiments are to march together. We have twelve of our own guns, and had twenty-two at Worcester, and other companies are much so. It is supposed there is no great danger. The arms are at Albany."

This letter was directed "To Nathan Burnham, of Chebacco, in Ipswich."

One month later, his wife received the following letter:

"MRS. BURNHAM: I send you these lines to let you know the heavy news that you have to hear from the camp, and I pray God give you grace and strength to hold up under such heavy tidings. The truth is, your husband, our lieutenant, Nathan Burnham, being in the light at the narrows of Ticonderoga, July the 8th, 1758, received a ball in the bowels, which proved mortal. He came to me and told me that he was wounded, and that he would soon be in eternity. I desired him to retreat down the hill. I followed him, and found some help to carry him to the ground, namely, James Andrews, John Foster and Jeremiah Burnham. We carried him that night four miles to our boats. The doctor did what he could, but vain was the help of man. Next day, being the ninth day upon our passage up the lake, about eleven o'clock, after many heavenly expressions and prayers, he departed this life, and, I believe, made a good exchange. Please tell Mrs. Low the same heavy news. Stephen Low, being in the same fight, was, without doubt, shot dead on the spot. We had not the opportunity to bring off our dead.

"NHEHEMIAH BURNHAM.

"Lieutenant Burnham desired me to take care of some things that he had with him, which I will do in the best manner I can. Our Captain Whipple is wounded in his left thigh. I hope he will soon be out again."

This Lieutenant Nathan Burnham was a son of Thomas, grandson of John and great-grandson of Thomas, the second of the three Burnham brothers, early settlers. His wife's maiden name was Hannah Choate.

The following is from Roderick H. Burnham's notice of Nathan Burnham's army service, in his "Burnham's Genealogy," published in 1879:

"Tradition has it that before leaving for the war he took his sword on his hand to try the metal, and it broke. Turning to his wife, he said, 'I shall never come back.' He went on, but returned to pray with his family before taking final leave."

Chaplain Cleaveland, in his army journal, under date of July 9th, says:

"This evening Lieut. Burnham (Nathan) was buried, having died upon the water, of his wound. I understood he inquired much for me,



and desired to see me before he died; but I was in another bateau, and could not be found, the lake being full of them."

**THE SURGEON MENTIONS THE CLEVELAND BROTHERS.**—Dr. Caleb Rea, of Danvers, the surgeon of the regiment, kept a journal<sup>1</sup> during the entire campaign, in which he thus alludes to John Cleveland, for whom he evidently had a personal admiration, and also to his brother Ebenezer, who was likewise an army chaplain, in another regiment, Colonel Preble's.

"12th.—This day Mr. E. Cleveland returned to Greenbush in order to proceed home without at least half a bushel of letters."

"18th.—Sabbath, Mr. Cleveland preached in ye afternoon from Math. 3, 8, in which he showed what Repentance is and what ye fruits of evidence it, and urged it upon ye Acolity as speedily necessary to those engaged in a martial enterprise. There was a general attendance of ye Regiment on Divine Service, and I doubt not but many seriously affected."

**HE MENTIONS DR. PRINCE.**—In the same journal Dr. Rea thus alludes to my great-uncle, who was the surgeon of another regiment, in the same campaign:

July 1st.—"We arrived at ye Lake an hour by Sun, and Col. Ruggles very kindly treated ye Field and Staff Officers, as Col. Nichols also did at ye half way brook between F. E. and ye Lake, where he had been sometime stationed and had got a Populated Garrison; here I borrow'd some medicine of Doct<sup>r</sup> Prince, viz. Pul. Rhat one dr., Cim Tartar one oz., Laud. Liquid one oz., Diacum one oz., Pil Cochine one oz., Pul Corte one oz."

July 3d.—"I this day delivered one Johannes to Major Gage to keep till my return from ye expedition or deliver my exoner in case I return not. Present Doct<sup>r</sup> Prince and Capt. Moore."

July 18th.—"Paid Dr. Prince ye medicine I borrowed of him ye first instant at Halfway brook."

Dr. Rae was manifestly of careful habits, and punctiliously exact in keeping memoranda of indebtedness. As far as I have been able to trace the relationship, it appears that he and Dr. Prince were second cousins.

The discipline of the English army at that time was not only strict, but terribly severe. Dr. Rea records a case of hanging for theft of a few buckles, though it was said that the man hung had stolen before. This is probably the same case mentioned by Chaplain Cleveland in his army journal. For comparatively trivial offences men were severely whipped.

Captain Caleb Low, a native of Chebacco (an uncle of Colonel Joshua), served in the English army at Ticonderoga. In the Revolutionary War he was promoted to the rank of major; at which time he was a resident of Danvers.

In 1659 Mr. Cleveland, as chaplain, accompanied his regiment to Cape Breton, where it had been ordered for garrison duty in the famous fortress of Louisburg, which had been captured from the French. Here he stayed a few months, until the taking of Quebec, when he returned to Chebacco.

<sup>1</sup> Contributed to the Essex Institute Historical Collections, by his great-grandson, F. M. Ray, Esq., of Westbrook, Maine.

<sup>2</sup> Fort Edward.

<sup>3</sup> A servant, I suppose.

**WAR OF THE REVOLUTION.**—This place furnished, in all, for various periods of service in the army during the long Revolutionary struggle, more than one hundred men. Crowell's "History of Essex" gives a list of one hundred and five names, accompanied by the remark that "it is not to be supposed that the roll is a complete one." To this number may be added one more, a soldier who died in a military prison in Nova Scotia, making one hundred and six, at the least.

Seven men from this place, who bore the surnames of early settlers, were in the battle of Bunker's Hill, viz.: James Andrews, Benjamin Burnham, Francis Burnham, John Burnham, Nehemiah Choate, Aaron Perkins and Jesse Story, Jr.

**ONE CHEBACCO MAN KILLED AND ONE WOUNDED AT BUNKER HILL.**—The last-named was killed in the engagement. He was a brother of the late Ephraim Story, Sr., and uncle of Hermon Story and John Cleveland Story. Francis Burnham was wounded at the same action. I was told by his sister, Mrs. Hardy, who died forty-five years ago, that she had heard him say that before the battle began he felt frightened; but when young Story, who stood by his side, was shot down, the sight of his blood made him desperate in the determination to avenge his death; and during the remainder of the battle he had no fear.

He was a brother of Capt. Nathaniel Burnham, the grandfather of Luther, Calvin, Nehemiah and Nathaniel Burnham, of Essex, and of Dr. Caleb Burnham, of Lynn.

Two others from this place, Aaron Low and Samuel Procter, were employed during the night preceding the battle in making cartridges. Mr. Low was the grandfather of Aaron Low, Esq., and Warren Low, Jr. He was one of the seven from this place who were with the forces sent to suppress Shay's Rebellion; when his rank was that of sergeant. Subsequently he was recorded as lieutenant.

In the army of Gen. Gates, at the defeat of Burgoyne, were twenty-eight soldiers from Chebacco, and five of them were among those detailed to guard his forces, after their surrender, while they were on their way to Charlestown, Mass., and during their encampment there for a short time prior to their embarkation for England.

Among the officers from Chebacco, Col. Jonathan Cogswell served throughout the war, and won honorable distinction. When at the battle of White Plains, N. Y., Rev. John Cleveland was the chaplain of his regiment. Major John Burnham (a descendant in the fifth generation from the first John, the eldest of the three boy-immigrants) had a varied and eventful experience. He was a lieutenant at the battle of Bunker's Hill, when two men of his company were killed and three wounded. He was also in the battles upon Long Island, and was with the forces that





captured the Hessians, when, in the words of an old war-ballad sung by our fathers,—

"Through snow and ice at Trenton, boys,  
They crossed the Delaware;  
Led by th' immortal Washington,  
No danger did they fear."

He was with Washington at Valley Forge in the hard winter of 1777; served, at different times, under Generals Greene and Lafayette; was highly complimented upon the fine appearance of his regiment, by Baron Von Steuben, while inspecting it; and was spoken of, as an officer, in strong terms of commendation, by Gen. Benjamin Pierce, father of President Franklin Pierce, and by Col. John Brooks, afterwards Governor of Massachusetts.

He was among the early settlers of Marietta, Ohio, and commanded a military company of sixty persons organized for the protection of the infant settlement.

He removed to Derry, N. H.; where he died, in 1843, at the age of ninety-four years.

Major Caleb Low, of Danvers, who served as one of the line officers in Washington's army, and was present at the execution of the British spy, Major André, was a native of Chebacco, and had two brothers in this place, who also served in the army of the Revolution, rendering efficient service to their country. They were uncles of the late Col. Joshua, Capt. David, Thomas, Jeremiah, Caleb, Jonathan and Josiah; all residents of Essex.

Capt. David Low was commander of the Chebacco Company, which was the third company of the Third Regiment of Essex County Militia.

Other commissioned officers from Chebacco were as follows: Lieut. Samuel Burnham; Lieut. John Cleaveland, Jr., and his brother, Assistant Surgeon Parker Cleaveland; Capt. Francis Perkins, and Capt. William Story. Dr. Cleaveland's rank may have been equivalent to that of lieutenant, if the same rule of gradation now in vogue was adopted then; unless he may have been employed as a contract-surgeon, as were many in our latest war, whose rank, if any, was merely honorary, and in effect and significance, though not technically the same, was somewhat like that of a rank and title by brevet.

Col. Jonathan Burnham, who commanded a regiment of the Continental line, which had been raised in New Hampshire, was a native of Chebacco, and resided here and in Ipswich until after his marriage with Miss Ross,<sup>1</sup> of that place; when he removed to Hampton (Rye), N. H.; from which town he entered the Revolutionary army. He had served in the French war, at Ticonderoga, and under Gen. Wolfe at Quebec. He was an uncle of the Francis Burnham who was wounded at Bunker's Hill.

Some years after the Revolutionary War, he removed to Salisbury, Mass., where he died in 1823, at the age of eighty-five.

COL. BURNHAM'S AUTOBIOGRAPHY.—In 1814, he wrote an autobiographical sketch, which is decidedly interesting, and brings vividly before us the scenes and events and some of the prominent personages of his time. His allusion to Rev. Theophilus Pickering, whom, in his boyhood, he heard preach; the incident of an earthquake-shock during the services at the church in Chebacco; the gratification of General Washington, on the arrival of the New Hampshire reinforcements, with his complimentary exclamation which gives us a momentary glimpse of the by-play of Washington's mind, on one of the few occasions when he unbent from his usual stateliness of manner and became slightly jocular,—and the writer's *naïveté* and transparency of character,—all render the narrative highly entertaining as a specimen of life-like naturalness in personal description.

The title-page (which may have been written by another hand, possibly that of the printer), is as follows:

"The Life of Col. Jonathan Burnham, now living in Salisbury, Mass.; being a Narrative of his long and useful Life. Containing a Recital of highly interesting Incidents relative to the Revolutionary Services and Private Life of this distinguished Soldier and Friend of the departed and beloved George Washington. Part-moorth; Printed and sold at S. Whelden's Printing Office, Spring Hill. May, 1814."

Copies of this narrative are probably now very rare. I know of none but the one I have here transcribed, which I found among the valuable historical accumulations of the late Peter Force, in the Congressional Library at Washington.

Its insertion here, in full, is deemed appropriate, as a part of the blended military history and biography of Essex.

#### A HISTORY

of the

#### MOST REMARKABLE THINGS OF MY LIFE

I, JONATHAN BURNHAM, the fourth, was born at Chebacco, June the 9th, 1738, where I saw many remarkable things. The first, I went with my parents a Sunday-morning to hear the Rev. Mr. Pickering preach, and as I got to the meeting-house the minister and people ran out for fear the house would fall on them, for the earth did shake, and after sometime the minister says to the people, we will go in, for we are as safe there as anywhere, and the whole of them went in and were very attentive to hear him pray and preach, and the people were greatly alarmed and were concerned what they should do to be saved, and went from house to house to pray with and for one another, and the Lord sent two brothers, Mr. John and Ebenezer Cleaveland, and the people built a house and settled John Cleaveland, whose labors were greatly blessed, for in one year ninety persons were taken into his church; and many more wonderful things happened; the throat distemper killed many of my mates and many little children; and two other things: I merely escaped being drowned, but the Lord preserved me from a watery grave; and many more wonderful things I remembered; and when I was but fifteen years old I went to live at Ipswich town with Mr. Samuel Ross, to learn a blacksmith's trade, and was bound to him,—a good old man that built his house upon a rock and brought his family up in the nurture and admonition of the Lord,—where I lived till I was nineteen years of age, and then I bought my time, and enlisted in the service of King George, the second, and flung my pack and marched to Fort Edward, where I slept sweetly; and the next day I flung my pack and followed my colonel seven miles to Brook Fort, half-way to Lake George, where my colonel was ordered to halt and keep that fort, and

<sup>1</sup>The "Burnham Genealogy," on pages 324 and 339, erroneously states that he married Ruth Haskell. Her husband was another Jonathan Burnham, who was a son of Simeon. See Burnham Genealogy, pages 333 and 348.



guard the teams to Lake George that sold provisions to General Abercrombie's army. Early one morning the Indians gave us battle, and killed twenty-six of our brave men, and scalped them, and ran into the woods to Canada, and sold their scalps for a guinea a scalp to the French, who were worse than the Indians themselves, as it was said; then General Abercrombie ordered my colonel to lead on his men to Lake George and he crossed the lake of a Thursday and landed, and Friday marched his army to take Fort Denonville Fort, where he was beat and retreated back to his old encampment with his weed on his hat dragging on the ground, with the loss of more than nineteen hundred men; where I tarried till my time was out; this was in the year '58, and then I was honorably dismissed and returned back to my good old master in Ipswich, who was glad to see me alive, where I remained till the year '59, and then I enlisted again under the brave General Wolf, who went and did take Canada, and I enlisted again in the year '60 to finish the war, which gave me much pleasure, and then I was honorably dismissed at Lewising, and shipped with Capt. John Potter, of Ipswich, to sail with him to the place of my nativity, and we sailed a Friday and lost our sails in a gale of wind, and a Sunday was close to the Isle of Sables, where we dropt anchor and rode until our windlass bits gave way and cut our cable and ashore we went on the island call Sables; this was the fifth of December, '60, where we all got ashore alive, and glad were we for God's goodness was wonderful to us in preserving our lives from a watery grave, and we all laid down on a sand knoll and slept alike. A boat that was shot when he was asleep we carried home and sent a part to Capt. Furlong's men, of Newbury, who were cast ashore three weeks before we were, who hoisted a flag on a pole; and a vessel belonging to Marblehead carried the news, and as two fishermen were missing, the Lord and King Hooper sent the good old Archelaus Silman to come to the Isle of Sables after us, and the Lord rewarded him for his good works, for he took seventy men and women; but while we waited on the island for the good old Silman, I shouldered my gun and went fourteen miles toward the northwest barr—up jumped a sow and I shot her through the heart, and had it and the liver and lights for supper, and it was sweet as honey; and then I killed a bull eighteen miles from our house and carried it home, which was January, '61; and then I shouldered my gun and was all alone, and I shot eight balls into a great bull who tried to kill me, but I was his master, and glad was I, for the bull and I had it rough and tough, and then I was beat out, but got home that night and told my messmates to take the handsel and haul the bull home; and three days after, which was January 18, come the good old Silman and took us all off the Isle of Sables, seventy in number, and carried us to Halifax, and left Furlong and sixty men and women; and then good old Archelaus Silman brought Captain Potter and his crew, ten in number, into Marblehead, where we rejoiced and were glad, and gave him, the good old man, one hundred silver dollars and as many thanks, and got home to Ipswich, the place of our nativity, where we had gladness and joy for God's goodness in preserving us from a watery grave and returning us home to our friends, who were glad to see us alive; and my good old master, that built his house upon a rock, says to me, Jonathan, we read that a faithful servant shall be a dutiful son at length, and gave me his eldest daughter to wife, who was a beauty and loved me as her eyes; where we lived till July, '63, and then we moved to Hampton Falls in New Hampshire, on a place I bought, where we lived and did prosper for almost forty years, and as I had been in the British service three years to learn the art of war, the town of Hampton Falls chose me to be their captain, and I received my commission signed by Gov. Wentworth and sealed with King George's seal, and all things went on very well till King George sent that foolish Gage to Boston, who was neither weight nor measure, to burn our towns and kill our men at Lexington; and Governor Wentworth joined the British and I was angry and raised a liberty pole on the hill as high as Haman's gallows was to hang Mordecai on; which was my alarm post; and in the morning news came to me, that the British marched to Lexington and killed our men; and I ordered my drums to beat, and gave my company something to drink, and marched on to Ipswich that night, which was twenty miles in half a day; and in the morning we mustered about two hundred men, who chose me to be their captain, and the town was alarmed because two Men of Wars tenders were in the river, full of men and would land and take twenty British soldiers out of a goal, that was taken prisoners at Lexington battle, and would burn the town; so we stayed that day and night, and that night was rainy, and the British landed at Marshfield, to steal cattle and left the woods afire; and the Newbury people heard that Ipswich was burnt and that I and my men were all killed, and that the British were coming to burn Newbury, and the people were afraid and got boats to get over the river to run into the woods, and that news went to Exeter that

night, and very soon to Concord, that I and my officers were all killed; and in a few days I had a Colonel's commission to raise one-quarter part of Portsmouth, Dover, Hampton and Exeter militia as minute men, and General Sullivan came to me to march off to Portsmouth with a thousand men to fortify and defend it from being burnt, as the British had burnt Falmouth; and in twenty-four hours I and a thousand men were at Fort Washington to give the British battle; where we stayed about three months, then came a fifty gun ship to anchor one night, and in the morning, at break of day, I and my men were ready to give her battle, but she was afraid and went off; and in a few days the committee of safety, that set at Portsmouth in recess of Congress, sent for me to hear two letters read from General Washington and General Sullivan; the contents were that they expected the British would give them battle, and for the committee to send me on to Mistick, with thirty-one companies of New Hampshire militia, and the committee desired me to enlist four companies of my men that were in Fort Washington, and when I asked my men, four companies, they said, "yes, we will go with you," and marched that day and got to Mistick in three days and nights, and twenty-seven companies followed on, and were into Mistick in a few days; and the committee delivered me the two letters to carry to the two Generals to Winterhill and Cambridge, and I mounted my horse which carried me in less than a day, and WASHINGTON smiles and says, "NEW HAMPSHIRE FOREVER;" and further says to SULLIVAN, "Mount your horse, and ride on with Col. Burnham to Mistick, and open all your stores to New Hampshire militia, without weight or measure, and go to the good men of Mistick, who will be glad of Col. Burnham's men, for they were afraid that the British, that burnt Charleston, will come and burn Mistick;" and says to Col. Burnham, "Do your best for the honor of New Hampshire, and kill the British if they dare to come;" but they were afraid of my Brigade; and towards the last of January, '76, I received orders from General WASHINGTON that he would meet New-Hampshire militia to-morrow, at Winterhill, to review them; and I mounted my horse and, at twelve o'clock, formed my Brigade and marched to Winterhill with my band of music, fifty fife and drums, that the British might hear and see we were come on to Winterhill, to try our skill, which gave the British a fright to quit Bunkerhill in the night, and the British army and fleet made a quick retreat, and the Boston people were glad to see it. Where we remained 'till honorably dismissed by our Hon. General Washington, and received his thanks for our services and love, being ready at his call from New-Hampshire, and his blessings that we might return to our families and friends in safety, where we rested awhile and then part of us went to help take Burgoyne, Cornwallis and their armies; and then we had our independence from Great Britain, and peace and plenty and the love of the whole world, and were the happiest nation in the world. But God must have all the glory;—and our ministers were worthy, like Jacob, who wrestled till break of day, that God would bless Washington and America, and the world of mankind. Amen and Amen. And now I am an old man, this day seventy-five years old, and but just alive, and what I have written I have seen and know to be true.

**SPARTAN MOTHERS OF CHEBACCO.**—Three instances of female patriotism and fortitude are related by the local historians,—two by Felt, concerning one and the same person, and the other by Crowell.

Elizabeth Choate, a native of Chebacco, a great-granddaughter of the first settler John, married Gen. Michael Farney, of Ipswich; and during the Revolution, three of her sons, as well as her husband, were in the military service of their country. When her son Robert, about sixteen years of age, was about starting for the seat of war, she assisted him in putting on his accoutrements, and said to him, "Behave like a man." And on another occasion, when a regiment was about to march, in expectation of soon meeting the enemy and needed ammunition, she with her own hands filled every man's powder-horn, from a supply which had been stored in the garret of her dwelling-house.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Felt's Hist. Ipswich, p. 184, Hanmatt Papers, III. 99.





The other incident is thus given by Dr. Crowell: "During this year [1777] a British frigate was off our bay. Boats were sent from her into the harbor of Annisquam. Mrs. Marshall, a resident on Hog Island, said to the author that she distinctly saw the flashes of the guns in their boats and of the guns of our people on shore. A guard of twelve men, she said, was quartered upon the island to prevent their landing. At one time their boats were seen approaching to effect a landing, when all upon the island fled, except one resolute woman, the wife of William Choate, grandmother of the late Hon. Rufus Choate, who declared she would stay and keep house if all the rest ran.<sup>1</sup> She stayed with two of her children, and received no harm."<sup>2</sup>

This paragraph, without explanation, might, perhaps, to the casual reader, give an impression that probably the writer did not intend to leave. The statement that "all upon the island fled," undoubtedly referred to the women and children and to the military guard stationed there,—the words "stay and keep house," implying that other females who were housekeepers were among those who departed. President Brown's life of Rufus Choate makes the statement, which I have no doubt is entirely authentic, that the resident men of the island had previously left to drive the cattle and probably the other live stock to a place of safety. This sensible precaution was taken, I suppose, to avert the danger of their being seized to replenish the British commissariat.

Other women of Chebacco, no doubt, evinced the same patriotic spirit and an equal devotion to the cause of national liberty, willingly sacrificing personal ease and comfort to encourage and sustain their husbands, sons and brothers in active service.

IN THE WAR OF 1812.—This place was represented by nineteen men,—sixteen in one company and three in another. Among them was the well-known citizen, the late Abel Andrews, who was a sergeant.

Andrew Burnham, the centenarian, who was a native of Essex, and died here in 1885, at the age of one hundred years and two months, was also a soldier in this war. He was then a resident of Boston.

During this war, Enoch Burnham and Benjamin Andrews, of Essex, were captured in the Bay of Biscay, while on board the privateer brig "Essex," and were incarcerated for two years in Dartmoor Prison in England. The former was a brother of Captain Parker Burnham, and was himself for many years a ship-master, sailing from Boston and Baltimore; in which latter city he married and resided for the last fifty or more years of his life, and where he died in 1876, at the age of eighty-five.

WAR OF THE REBELLION.—During the four years' struggle for the perpetuity of the Union, Essex furn-

ished, in all, for longer or shorter periods of service, one hundred and eighty-two men, of which number one hundred and forty-four were her own citizens. Of these three served in the Navy. Twenty-three never returned, three of them having been shot dead in battle, and five dying of wounds received in action; one was accidentally drowned and fifteen died of disease contracted in the service, two of them perishing in a Confederate prison. Twenty-two were wounded in battle, (including the three instantly killed, and the five whose wounds proved fatal, as just previously mentioned); and of those who returned to their homes, six at least have since died of illness resulting directly or indirectly from the incidental hardships and exposures of the service. One who died in the army was wounded three times, once at Fredericksburg and twice in the Wilderness; and one who survived and is living at the time of the writing of this, was wounded twice—once at Antietam and once at Gettysburg.<sup>3</sup>

Essex soldiers participated in battles and skirmishes in no less than seven different states of the South, and in the one great battle fought upon the soil of Pennsylvania; their active service extending from the first Bull Run engagement in Virginia, to the battle of Olustee in Florida. They were on the field in thirty-seven of the more important conflicts of the war, including McClellan's series of struggles upon the Peninsula, and at South Mountain and Antietam, and all the battles of Grant's last campaign in Virginia.

ROLL OF ESSEX MEN IN THE WAR OF THE REBELLION.

In the Army.

Allen, Hervey.	Burnham, Andrew F.	Burnham, Wilbur
Allen, Joseph G.	Burnham, Charles A.	Burnham, W. Howe.
Allen, Robt. Wallace.	Burnham, Constantine.	Burnham, Zenas.
Andrews, Albert		Burnham, Wm. H. H.
Andrews, Albion.	Burnham, Daniel.	Butman, Ancill K.
Andrews, Charles E.	Burnham, D. Brain'd.	Butman, John C.
Andrews, Lt. Cyrus	Burnham, Francis.	Callahan, Daniel.
Andrews, Frank E.	Burnham, Geo. Foster.	Callahan, Maurice.
Andrews, Gilman.	Burnham, Geo. F., 2d.	Chase, Lyman H.
Andrews, H. Nelson.	Burnham, Geo. Wash.	Charnel, John C.
Andrews, Ira, Jr.	Burnham, Horace.	Claborne, Geo. C.
Andrews, Israel F.	Burnham, Harlan P.	Clifford, David E.
Andrews, Lyman B.	Burnham, Ira F., 2d.	Cogswell, George.
Andrews, Marston M.	Burnham, James H.	Cogswell, Addison.
Andrews, Prince A.	Burnham, Jas. Howe.	Coose, Wm. D.
Andrews, Reuben	Burnham, Jesse.	Coy, Michael.
Andrews, Rufus.	Burnham, John B.	Crafts, Franklin.
Andrews, Stephen P.	Burnham, Lamont G., 2d.	Crafts, John, Jr.
Andrews, Timothy, Jr.	Burnham, Leonard.	Crockett, Charles P.
Andrews, Wm. A., 2d.	Burnham, Lewis.	Cook, Moses.
Andrews, Wm. H.	Burnham, Mark F.	Dugan, Daniel.
Bartlett, Jacob O.	Burnham, Osgood E.	Dugan, Morty.
Burnham, Abner.	Burnham, Otis.	Dodge, George.
Burnham, Albert F.	Burnham, R. W., Jr.	Dodge, Wm. G., 2d.
Burnham, Albt. F., 2d.	Burnham, Rollins M.	Fields, Charles H.
Burnham, Alfred M.	Burnham, Rufus.	Gilbert, John F.

<sup>3</sup> For more minute details and particulars, see the carefully prepared and ably written chapter relative to the late war and its soldiers, contributed by the Hon. David Choate to Crowell's "History of Essex."

<sup>1</sup> Enlisted September, 1862, at the age of fourteen.

<sup>2</sup> Enlisted December 2, 1861, at the age of fifteen.

<sup>3</sup> Enlisted September, 1862, aged seventeen years and ten months.

<sup>4</sup> Enlisted September, 1862, aged eighteen years and one month.

<sup>5</sup> Enlisted August, 1862, at the age of fifteen.

<sup>1</sup> Her maiden name was Mary Goddings, and she was the daughter of Job Goddings.

<sup>2</sup> Crowell's Hist. Essex, pp. 218-19.





Guppy, Geo. F.	Kimball, James B.	Meats, Samuel, Jr.
Hardy, Geo. C.	Lander, Edward W.	Morse, Charles F.
Hart, John F.	Lee, John L.	Morse, Thomas A.
Haskell, Albert A.	Low, Aaron.	Parsons, John J.
Haskell, James F.	Low, Edward.	Poland, Jeremiah, Jr.
Haskell, Nathaniel.	Low, Wm. B. <sup>2</sup>	Prest, Robert.
Haskell, Wm. A.	Low, Wm. E.	Proctor, Charles W.
Hassell, Wm. P.	Lufkin, Albert E.	Procter, Joseph, Jr.
Hatch, Jason.	Lufkin, Alfred.	Ross, George.
Hayden, Luther.	Lufkin, Charles P.	Ross, George, Jr.
Hayden, Wm. H.	Lufkin, Hervey.	Riggs, Solomon A.
Howard, Wm. C.	Lufkin, William.	Sargent, Geo. H.
Howes, Charles. <sup>1</sup>	Maboney, Thomas.	Sargent, Oliver H. P.
Howes, Edwin A.	Martson, Charles E.	Story, Aaron Herbert
Howes, Erastus.	Martyn, John L.	Story, Asa.
Howes, Webster.	McLachlan, John.	Story, David Lewis.
Hull, Wm. H.	McIntire, Edward E.	Story, Otis.
Jackson, Andrew.	McIntire, Wm. H.	Swett, Simon.
James, W. Wilkins.	Mears, Francis G.	Tucker, Joseph W.
Jones, John S.	Mears, Henry C.	Varnum, John.
Jones, Samuel Q.	Morris, Rufus E.	Wentworth, Geo. S.
Kelchler, John.		

Of the foregoing, six were taken prisoners by the enemy, viz.: Geo. W. Burnham, John B. Burnham, Lewis Burnham, Albert A. Haskell, James B. Kimball and Rufus E. Mears. Three were released.

One soldier, Mark Francis Burnham, of the Second Massachusetts Cavalry, who was in fifteen or more different engagements, had four horses shot under him, two of them in the battle of Winchester, Va., under General Sheridan.

*Wounded Soldiers who recovered.*—Lieutenant Cyrus Andrews, H. Nelson Andrews, Stephen P. Andrews, George F. Burnham, D. Brainard Burnham, James Horace Burnham, David E. Clifford, Daniel Duggan, Erastus Howes, Wm. C. Howard, Wm. B. Low (wounded twice), Wm. E. Low, Thomas A. Morse, John Varnum.

*DEATH ROLL.*—*Killed*—Charles Edwin Andrews, Daniel Burnham, Jason Hatch.

*Died of Wounds.*—Wm. A. Andrews, Osgood E. Burnham, Jeremiah Poland, Jr. (wounded three times), Charles P. Lufkin, O. H. P. Sargent.

*Died of Illness in the Army.*—Reuben Andrews, Wilbur Burnham, Charles P. Crockett, George Dodge, James Frederick Haskell, Wm. P. Haskell, W. Wilkins James, Wm. Lufkin, John L. Martyn, Francis Gilbert Mears, Charles F. Morse, Asa Story.

*Died in a Confederate Prison.*—Albert A. Haskell, Rufus E. Mears.

*Drowned.*—George Ross, Jr.

*Died soon after his arrival home.*—John C. Channel.

IN THE UNITED STATES ARMY.—Albion Burnham was first mate of ship "Carnation," which was stationed off Port Royal, and afterwards of the squadron blockading Charleston, S. C.

Ezra F. Burnham served in United States steamer "Gettysburg," having enlisted at the early age of twenty years. He was in the engagement at Fort Fisher.

Gustavus S. Perkins served throughout the war

(four years) first, for fifteen months as second assistant engineer on board the United States steamer "Colorado," which had been ordered to Mobile; afterwards, having been promoted to the position of first assistant engineer (virtually the acting head engineer), he was on board the steamer "Donaldson," and later on board the "Gettysburg," stationed for blockading duty off Wilmington, N. C. He was also in the engagement at Fort Fisher.

Engineer Perkins was a machinist by trade, and was therefore from the start, by his practical knowledge, thoroughly equipped for the duties of his appointment. He was undoubtedly one of the best qualified and most efficient men in the service.

*SURNAMES OF EARLY SETTLERS* of Chebacco reappear to a considerable extent in the lists of those citizens of the place who have taken part in the different wars of the country, from the early hostilities of the Indians down to the conflict for the American Union. Of these names I find, in the aggregate, among those serving in the several wars the numbers following: Andrews, 32; Burnham, 68; Bennett, 1; Choate, 14; Cogswell, 7; Cross, 1; Foster, 5; Goodhue, 2; Haskell, 5; Jones, 5; Low, 9; Lufkin, 8; Perkins, 4; Proctor, 5; Story, 17; White, 3.

Of the names of the later residents from time to time,—Cleaveland, Howes, Marshall, Mears (four each), Putnam, Crafts, Eveleth, Knowlton, Poland, Ross (three each), Callahan, Dodge, Duggan, Hayden, McIntire, Morse, Sargent, Wise (two each).

*COMMISSIONED OFFICERS FROM ESSEX, WHO SERVED, AS SUCH, IN WAR.*—*Colonels*, Jonathan Burnham, John Choate, Jonathan Cogswell.

*Majors*, John Burnham, Thomas Burnham, Caleb Low.

*Captains*, Charles Howes, David Low, Francis Perkins, William Story.

*Lieutenants*, Cyrus Andrews, Nathan Burnham, Samuel Burnham, Thomas Choate, Jr., John Cleaveland, Jr., Stephen Low.

*Ensign*, Samuel Knowlton.

The names of these officers are not here given in the chronological order of their service, but alphabetically, by surname, under each separate title.

*CHAPLAINS.*—Seven clergymen who for some time resided here, and one of whom was a native of the place, officiated as army-chaplains,—one, Mr. Wise, in both King Philip's and the French war, and two others, the brothers Cleaveland, serving also in two wars, the war between the French and English, and the Revolution. Rev'ds John Wise, Benjamin Choate, Ebenezer Cleaveland, John Cleaveland, Nehemiah Porter, Temple Cutler, George J. Sanger.

*AGGREGATE NUMBER IN ALL WARS.*—This place, as Chebacco and Essex, has from time to time contributed for the military service of the country no less than three hundred and forty-two men. The names of that number are positively known from authentic records. There were others, no doubt, especially in

<sup>1</sup> Captain Company E, Massachusetts Forty-Eighth Regiment  
<sup>2</sup> Enlisted December 3, 1861, at the age of seventeen.



the earlier wars, whose names cannot now be ascertained.

In view of this record of patriotism of a community so limited in population, the people here, to use a Scotch phrase, can "stand unbattered" in the presence of those of any other town in the county.

**OFFICERS AND PRIVATES.**—Among the entire number who served in the various wars, seventeen, at least, were commissioned officers, ranking from ensign to colonel,—all of good repute as gallant, brave and trusty; with an aggregate private soldiery equally true and meritorious.

A spirited and sensible tribute to the latter grade, found floating upon the current of periodical literature, (the authorship of which, I regret to say, I have been unable to ascertain,) is presented as an appropriate conclusion to this chapter:

"THE RANK AND FILE.

"O blow for the Hero a trumpet!

Let him lift up his head in the morn;

A glory of glories in battle,

It is well for the world he was born.

Let him joy in the sound of the trumpet,

And bask in the world's proud smile;

But what had become of the Hero,

Except for the rank and file?

"O, grand is the earth in her progress,

In her genius and art and affairs;

The glory of glories is progress:

Let the great find a joy in their cares,

Let the kings and the artists and statesmen

Look round them and proudly smile;

But what would become of the nation,

Except for the rank and file?

"And when the brief days of this planet

Are ended and numbered and told,

And the Lord shall appear in his glory,

To summon the young and the old,

For the Hero there'll be no trumpet,

For the great no welcoming smile;

Before the good Lord in his glory

We shall all be the rank and file."

## CHAPTER XCVI.

### ESSEX—(Continued).

*Witchcraft—Disagreement among Hens—Slavery in Chebacco—Grave-yard Robbery—Incorporation of Chebacco Parish as the Town of Essex—Post-Office—Physicians—College Graduates—Other Learned Professions—Members of the Legislature—Temperance Organizations—Public Commemorations—Essex Railroad—Hog Island—Capt. L. G. Burnham—Native Centenarians—Nonagenarians—Summer Resorts—Historic Houses and Localities—Significance of the Indian Name "Chebacco"—Grand Army.*

**THE WITCHCRAFT DELUSION.**—*Petition of Chebacco People in Behalf of one of the Victims.*—John Procter, one of the twenty persons judicially murdered during that appalling eclipse of common sense and cyclone of superstition, madness and depravity, which passed over Salem in 1692, had for several years been a resi-

dent of Chebacco, where he had the respect and confidence of all his neighbors and acquaintances; thirty-two of whom signed a petition, which was headed with the signature of Rev. John Wise, and addressed to the Court of Assistants, appealing for clemency for him and his wife, who had both been convicted and sentenced. The petition failed of its object. Procter, as is well known, was hanged, but his wife escaped, simply on account of her condition at the time, which, under the English law, secured for her a reprieve; and before its expiration, the storm of delusion, frenzied malice and falsehood, had spent its force.

Procter was, in part, the victim of the spite of a servant girl, named Mary Warren, who had a grudge against him. She was one of eight female witnesses in several trials, of whom only two could write their names. She admitted, in private, to more than one person, that in her testimony in some of the cases she had lied, and that the accusers, who said they were afflicted by the accused, "did but dissemble;" and another, who cried out against Mrs. Procter, acknowledged afterward that she had spoken falsely, and did so "for sport," saying also, "we must have some sport."

Much of the so-called "evidence," in all the trials, was sheer drivel and inane twaddle, upon which no person now, upon any charge whatever, could be held two minutes in a police court.

The Chebacco petitioners admitted the reality of witchcraft itself, but interposed in behalf of Procter and his wife as persons innocent of it. Their friendly action, in this instance, is therefore no indication that they did not believe in the common superstition of that day. They said that they "reckoned it within the duties" of their "charity, to offer this much for the clearing of our neighbors' innocency;" saying that they "never had the least knowledge of such a nefarious wickedness in our said neighbors;" neither did they "remember any such thoughts concerning them," nor "any action by either of them directly tending that way." They further said: "What God may have left them to, we cannot go into God's pavilion clothed with clouds of darkness round about. But as to what we have ever seen or heard of them, upon our consciences, we judge them innocent of the crime objected."

The following are the names of the thirty-two signers, spelled as they were written: John Wise, William Story, Sen., Reinald Foster, Thos. Choate, John Burnum, Sr., William Thomason, Tho. Low, Sen'r., Isaac Foster, John Burnum, Jun'r., William Goodhew, Isaac Perkins, Nathaniell Perkins, Thomas Lovekin, William Cogswell, Thomas Varney, John Fellows, William Cogswell, Ju'r., Jonathan Cogswell, John Cogswell, Jr., John Cogswell, Thomas Andrews, Joseph Andrews, Benjamin Marshall, John Andrews, Ju'r., William Butler, William Andrews,





John Andrews, John Chote, Sr., Joseph Procter, Samuel Gidding, Joseph Eveleth, James White.

The petition was evidently written by Mr. Wise. As printed, the spelling is modernized. In the original, of which a verbatim copy is in my possession, there is, in accordance with the usage of the time, as liberal a use of capital letters at the beginning of words as in Cotton Mather's *Magnalia*. The following sentence is an illustration: "We cannot Go into God's pavilion Cloathed with Cloudes of Darkness Round About." Satan is spelled "Sathan."

Of the signers, three were near family connections of Procter, one of them being his brother Joseph, which fact will account for their special activity in his behalf, as well as for the visit of one of them, Thomas Choate, to Procter's cell, in the jail at Salem, where he witnessed the signing of his will. Thomas Varney's wife was a sister, whose maiden name was Abigail Procter; and Thomas Choate's wife was her daughter, Mary Varney. Three of the signers were ancestors of the writer of this history,—viz. Thomas Varney, John Choate, Senior, and Thomas Choate.

John Procter was born in England, and at the age of three years came in the ship "Susan-and-Ellen," in 1635, with his father, mother and a sister one year old. He had subsequently three brothers and four sisters, all born in this country; of whom Joseph was the eldest.

The family lived first at Salem, afterwards in Ipswich town, at one time occupying the house near the stone bridge, which was long the residence of the late Capt. Samuel N. Baker, and was standing a few years since. He went to Chebacco, probably, with others of his family, at what time is not known. Here he became owner of a farm, upon which he lived for several years, leaving this place for Salem Village. His age, at his tragical death, was about sixty.

It was his second wife, much younger, who with him was condemned, but reprieved.

DISAGREEMENT AMONG HEIRS.—In the court records of the county, under date of March 15, 1696-97, John Choate, eldest son of John, first settler, entered "caution to ye Honored Judge of probate of wills," saying, "I have matters of weight to offer that my father's Will may not be approbated while I have opportunity to allege against it, as witness my hand, JOHN CHOATE."

What the point or points of objection may have been, we do not know from anything in the entry; but some time later Rev. Benjamin Choate, his brother, "in consideration of having received a college education," renounced all claim to his father's estate.

It was in those times insisted upon as equitable, that where a son received a liberal education he should be content with that as his share of the property, or at least have the cost of it deducted from his share.

SLAVERY IN CHEBACCO.—Persons of African, and

sometimes of Indian, descent were held as property in this place at an early period; but the precise or even approximate number of them I have not been able to ascertain, after the most diligent research and inquiry. I think, however, that they were never more than a small proportion of the entire population.

In 1755, twenty-five years before the adoption of the State Constitution of 1780, there were in the entire township of Ipswich, including this parish, of course, sixty-two persons, over sixteen years of age, comprising both sexes, held as slaves.

The following specific allusions to four persons who invested in this species of personal estate were originally derived from a public journal, printed at the seat of the colonial government, and from written public records.

I. MR WISE'S RUNAWAY.—The *Boston News-Letter*, in the year 1713, contained an advertisement informing the public that a slave had run away from *Rev. John Wise*, of Chebacco, and that at the time of his departure he had on "wooden-heel shoes." A reward was offered for his capture and return. However wooden he may have been about the heels, he was not so wooden-headed but that he discovered a method of enlarging the area of his own personal freedom. Possibly he may have been reading, if he knew how to read,<sup>1</sup> or at least may have heard, of certain proceedings in 1787, when his master revolted against Sir Edmund Andros, who thereupon restrained him of his personal liberty, for exercising the gift of free speech.

I have not found any recorded evidence that the runaway ever complained of any ill treatment from his master; and from the known liberality and magnanimity of Mr. Wise, we might reasonably suppose that the fugitive had always had enough to eat and drink and wear, and had not been over-tasked. Perhaps he was allowed a pair of leather-heeled shoes to wear to meeting on Sundays; although leather may have been scarce and costly in those days, as compared with its abundance and cheapness at the present time.

II. *Jonathan Cogswell*, a grandson of John, the first settler of that name, in his will, dated July 9, 1717, mentions "my Negro man slave called Jack, and also my Indian maid slave called Nell," both of whom he bequeaths to his wife Elizabeth.

III. and IV. Three weeks later, July 30, 1717, *Capt. Jonathan Burnham*, of Chebacco, grandfather of the late Capt. Nathaniel, and great-great grandfather of Luther, Calvin, Nehemiah, Nathaniel and Dr. Celeb Burnham, paid £64 to Joshua Norwood, of Gloucester, for a negro boy. Norwood had previously bought him of *Capt. Thomas Choate*, of Hog Island. The wife of Norwood, Elizabeth Andrews, daughter of Ensign Wm. Andrews, was a native of Chebacco.

<sup>1</sup> A law or regulation of the colony required that servants be taught to read; and in 1681, an inhabitant of Ipswich was complained of for neglecting to so instruct his servant.



ONE OTHER CASE, LEARNED FROM AN ORAL SOURCE.—An elderly inhabitant, who passed away many years since, informed me that a family of the *ancestors of the late Mr. Jacob Story, senior*, held originally at least two slaves, a man and his wife; to whom several children were born while the parents were inmates of the Story household. These children followed their mother in legal status, as chattels personal.

Mrs. Story, the mistress, during the same years, also gave birth to several children; and during these recurring periods she and the slave-mother alternately nursed each other with equal care and patient faithfulness. This last-mentioned circumstance indicates that the relation of bond and free, in this instance, existed, probably, as much in name as otherwise.

In fact, slavery existed, in this precinct, in a mild form, the subjects of it, as a rule, being humanely treated; and it was, no doubt, maintained more from conformity to the usage and custom of the time than from any pertinacious desire for its permanent continuance.

In a mortuary record kept by John Cleaveland, there is, under date of July 8, 1795, less than four years prior to his decease, a mention of "Titus, a black belonging to Rev. Mr. Cleaveland," who, at an accident at a barn-raising, where one man was killed, was "disasterd, but like to recover." As the State Constitution of 1780, was held to have abolished slavery in Massachusetts, this Titus must then have served Mr. Cleaveland voluntarily. Perhaps he had been his slave previously to 1780.

LEGAL BASIS OF SLAVERY IN THE COLONIES.—It would seem from the reports of the ultimate results of the judicial proceedings in the two following cases, copied from the court records of Essex County, that the reliance of the claimants of slaves in this vicinity, failed entirely when sought to be based upon any express statutory provisions. It is probable that in the Massachusetts colony, at least, the common law of England, re-affirmed occasionally by a court decision, was regarded as the principal legal sanction of the institution.

*Jenny Slew*, a mulatto, brought suit against *John Whipple*, of the *Hundet*, Ipswich (now Hamilton), for restraining her of her freedom and compelling her to labor as his slave.

The Inferior Court of Common Pleas, sitting at Newburyport, in September, 1765, gave judgment in favor of the defendant, Whipple.

The plaintiff, Jenny Slew, appealed to the Superior Court of Judicature, sitting at Salem, in November, 1766, which reversed the decision of the lower court,—a jury giving a verdict in her favor, entitling her to damages in the sum of four pounds, besides costs to the amount of £9 9s. 5d.

In the Inferior Court of Common Pleas for the County of Essex, for the July term of 1774, a negro servant brought suit against *Mr. Caleb Dodge*, of Beverly,

to obtain his freedom; and a verdict was given in favor of the servant, "there being no law of the province [that is, no statute law], to hold a man to serve for life."

GRAVE-YARD ROBBERY.—In the month of April, 1818, the year immediately preceding the incorporation of this parish into a town, the people of Chebacco were startled and excited to an unparalleled degree by the announcement of the discovery that eight human bodies had been surreptitiously taken from their resting-place in the village burying-ground.

At this distant point of time, a verbal detail of the occurrence hardly conveys to those who have since come upon the stage of life an adequate idea of the intensity of feeling in regard to it at an earlier period. When I came first to reside here, twenty-two years after the event, there was still a pungency and acerbity in every occasional allusion to it by the majority of the adult population, who freshly remembered all the circumstances.

Hand bills with startling head lines, and printed verses of various degree of literary merit, were soon after the discovery, scattered throughout this and the neighboring villages. A printed sheet, the paper browned by age, given to me many years ago by a friend, who was a resident here at the time of the occurrence, contains two of these metrical compositions, from each of which I present an illustrative stanza:

Lines on a Recent Inhuman, Barbarous and Atrocious Affair  
Perpetrated at Chebacco in Ipswich.

Hark! the sad tidings from the hell now sounding,  
To warn the people of some wretched monster,  
Who, for the sake of gain and filthy lucre,  
Robb'd the grave-yard!

O! what is this mine eyes are now beholding?  
See the graves open and spectators mourning,  
Friends and relations stand amaz'd to see this  
Sad profanation!

THE INSOLUBLE MAN.

The man whose conscience feels no wound  
Is not alarm'd to fear the sound  
Of Satan's rattling strings;  
Pure innocence, like Noah's dove,  
Mounts on her wings to realms above,  
And joy and comfort brings

At the reinterment of the empty coffins, a solemn religious service was held in the Congregational Meeting-house, a few months after the discovery, and a discourse was delivered by the parish minister, from the touching and appropriate text in John xx. 13: "*They say unto her, Woman, why weepest thou? She saith unto them, Because they have taken away my Lord, and I know not where they have laid him.*"

The title-page of the discourse is as follows:

"Interment of the dead, a dictate of natural affection, sanctioned by the word of God, and the examples of the good in every age. A Sermon delivered in Ipswich, Second Parish, July 23, 1818, on the occasion of Re-Interment the Coffins which had been Robbed of their Contents. By ROBERT CROWLEY, Minister of said Parish. Preached and Published at





the Particular Request of the Inhabitants of the Place. Andover: Printed by Flagg and Gould. 1818."

The pamphlet is an octavo, of forty pages; and the subject indicated is ably and exhaustively treated.

The preface, which is here given in full, contains as concise and at the same time as circumstantial an account of the transaction as could be otherwise presented.

"ADVERTISEMENT."

"The following sermon was necessarily written in great haste, to meet the occasion for which it was designed, and without the most distant view to its publication. In revising it for the press, therefore, it was found necessary to condense some parts of it, and to enlarge upon others; but, in regard to the sentiments which pervaded the discourse, as it was delivered, no alterations, it is believed, have been made.

"The history of the occasion is briefly this. Some time in the course of the past winter, suspicions were excited, it should seem by no very definite circumstances, that the body of a young woman had been taken out of her grave, for anatomical purposes. These suspicions made such an impression upon several in the place, and particularly upon her parents and neighbors, that it was determined, in the Spring, to make an examination. An examination was accordingly made, and the painful discovery evinced that their suspicions were too well founded. Her body was gone! and the melancholy tidings gave such a shock to all in the place, as was never before felt. Further examinations, which were made to ascertain, if practicable, the extent of the evil, but chiefly with a view of quieting the troubled minds of those, who had recently buried friends, if peradventure they might be true, only deepened and confirmed the distress. Before the examination was closed, it was ascertained that the bodies of not less than eight persons had been sacrilegiously stolen, viz: Mrs. Mary Millett, aged 35; Miss Sally Andrews, 26; Mr. William Barnham, 78; Mr. Elisha Story, 63; Mr. Samuel Barnham, 40; Isaac Allen, 10; Philip Harlow, 10; the eighth was not certainly known, but supposed to be Caesar, a colored man, buried several years since. Thus, within the short space of five months, was the heavy draught of seven made upon the burying-ground of a country village, containing little more than a thousand inhabitants. This number, including as it did young and old, male and female, parent and child, brother and sister, spread the unusual distress through a very extensive and respectable circle of relations and friends. Meetings of the inhabitants were held on the occasion, and resolutions passed, expressing their abhorrence of the deed, and adopting measures to detect, if possible, and to bring to justice, the perpetrators of it; and the sum of five hundred dollars, or more, was subscribed by individuals to carry these measures into effect. A vote was also passed authorizing the standing committee of the parish to enter the empty collins, in a grave to be prepared for the purpose, and to request the minister of the parish to deliver a discourse suited to the occasion. The request was accordingly made, and the following is the discourse preached on that occasion."

From the following extracts the reader will obtain an accurate idea of the light in which the whole subject was viewed, at the time and on the spot.

"It is presumed that all who hover of the graves of the dead being disturbed and their bodies drawn out of them, must experience a degree of violence done to their own feelings, though the dead thus treated may have been strangers to them, and thus so remote from them. We, of course, except from this general sympathy those whose business it is to disturb the dead for filthy lucre's sake, and those who employ them in this unholy traffic. To whatever good purpose the latter may appropriate these stolen bodies, they certainly partake of all the guilt of the former, if the maxim be true that the receiver is as bad as the thief. Nor ought they to be screened from any of the odium which is attached to a stealth and merchandize of the dead; since, if it were not for their patronage and suggestion, none would be guilty of this outrage upon decency and humanity." Pages 11, 12.

"It surely cannot be our duty to inter our dead merely to give others the trouble of going in the night and stealing them away. Much less can it be the duty of a poor man to bear the expense of a funeral solemnity for the burial of his wife or children, merely that others may have the profit of selling their bodies." Pages 27, 28.

"If a single soul is hardened in sin by the practice of stealing dead bodies, the evil thus occasioned must infinitely outweigh all the good

which the science of Anatomy ever did or ever will do to the bodies of men." Page 31.

"It is far from being the only satisfaction we enjoy in the burial of our friends to lay them in the grave; it is another and equally great to know that they are resting there undisturbed; to know that they have not been torn from their collins for moneyed and scientific speculation, and exposed to the rude gaze of unbecoming youth." Pages 33, 34.

During the entire public solemnities an individual towards whom suspicion of having been concerned in the transactions had then begun to be directed, and who was afterwards adjudged in a court of law to pay a heavy fine and costs, sat among the audience and listened to the discourse. This was Dr. Thomas Sewall, the resident physician of the place; whose usefulness here in that capacity was, of course, immediately at an end.

The next year he removed to Washington, D. C., where he lived to the age of 59 years, and became very eminent in his profession; and where, in addition to his practice as physician, he discharged for several years, with distinguished ability, the duties of two professorships to which he had been appointed, in the Medical Department of Columbia College.

He was doubtless unsurpassed in this country or abroad, in proficiency in anatomy and surgery, if not also in clinics. His published and widely circulated lectures upon Phrenology, originally delivered before a class at the Medical College in Washington, illustrated by his own examinations and measurements of the brain and skull, and showing the variable widths of the frontal sinuses, had the effect to modify somewhat, so far at least as *craniology* was concerned, the views of some who had adopted the general conclusions of Gall and Spurzheim, and who still adhered to the theory that the brain is the organ of the mind.

Of surgical and anatomical science he was a devotee; and it is said that the immediate cause of his death was blood-poisoning, which resulted from an accidental inoculation through a cut or abrasion upon one of his hands, while making an autopsy of the body of Hon. Isaac C. Bates, United States Senator from Massachusetts, who died suddenly in Washington, in 1845.

It is probable that a very few persons only had any knowledge, either beforehand or during its progress, of this desecration of the village cemetery,—perhaps, no one besides those engaged directly in the labor of exhumation, pursuant to the direction of their employer; who, at that time, it is but just to say, had no connection with any church organization, nor had made any profession of religion. Years afterwards, at the National capital, he joined the Methodist church, and continued steadfast in his membership during the remainder of his life.

History does not originate circumstances nor occurrences, but simply states them as they actually took place. It is, therefore, deemed eminently proper that this impartial and truthful account should be here given of one of the most notable of the events that have transpired in this place since its first settlement.





The tradition of it, more or less minute in detail, has been and is continuously being transmitted from one generation to another of the resident population of the town and its vicinity. A permanent record, unlike mere oral narrative, can acquire no accretions, through decades or centuries. *Neque falsi dicere, nec veri reticere.*

**INCORPORATION OF CHEBACCO PARISH AS THE TOWN OF ESSEX.**—Chebacco was set off from Ipswich in 1819, and incorporated as the town of Essex by an act of the State Legislature of the 5th of February of that year, pursuant to a clause of which the new town paid thirty-one per cent. of the aggregate debt of the original town then due, which, after deducting the proportionate share of Chebacco in the public property of Ipswich, amounted to \$3,000. The committee of the town of Essex, who, with a corresponding committee of the town of Ipswich, adjusted the details of the final settlement, were George Choate, William Cogswell, Jr., and Elias Andrews.

**Population and Valuation Then and Now.**—The population in 1819, when thus set off as the new town, was 1197, including 21 paupers.

Population, according to United States decennial census for the year 1880, 1670,—a gain of 56 from 1870. Number of pauper inmates of the Alms-house in 1887, 13.

By the United States census for 1860, the population was 1791—the largest by any national census before or since that year.

In 1830, the number was 1333; in 1840, 1432; in 1870, 1614.

Valuation in 1819, \$248,813; valuation in 1887, \$836,717.

**Boundaries.**—At one time a part of the parish or precinct of Chebacco bordered upon the town of Wenham. But that portion of its territory having been set off to Hamilton, the town of Essex is now bounded only by Ipswich on the North, Hamilton on the West, Manchester on the South, and Gloucester on the South and East.

**Dimensions of Area.**—The territorial surface of the town, as nearly as can be ascertained by measurements and estimates, comprises about 9000 acres; 7000 acres of which are divided into tillage, upland-mowing, fresh meadow, salt marsh, woodland and roads. The remaining 2000 acres are under water.

**Organization.**—At the first town-meeting, the moderator was George Choate, father of the late Dr. Geo. Choate, of Salem, and grandfather of Joseph H. Choate, law-partner of U. S. Senator Evarts; Wm. G. Choate, distinguished lawyer of New York city, for some time a U. S. District Judge; Dr. Geo. C. S. Choate, formerly Superintendent of the Insane Asylum at Taunton, Mass., and proprietor as well as superintendent of the private lunatic asylum, in New York State, at which Horace Greeley died; Charles F. Choate, President of the Old Colony Railroad Co.; and Geo. F. Choate, Judge of Probate of Essex

County. The last named is a cousin of the four brothers previously enumerated. His father was William, brother to Dr. George.

**First Town Officers.**—Joseph Story, who served as a soldier throughout the entire Revolutionary War, was the first town clerk; George Choate, Jonathan Story, 4th, Elias Andrews, William Cogswell, and William Andrews, were chosen as the first selectmen, assessors and overseers of the poor; Nathan Choate was first town treasurer; and Rev. Robert Crowell and the selectmen were, by vote at the town meeting, designated as the first school committee.

George Choate was chosen as the first representative of the new town to the State Legislature; in which body he had three times previously occupied a seat as one of the representatives from Ipswich.

**Town Clerks.**—Joseph Story, the first town clerk, served six years; Jonathan Story, 3d, nine years; William Andrews, Jr., seven; David Choate, four; Aaron L. Burnham, thirteen; O. H. P. Sargent, six; John C. Choate, twenty-five; Noah Burnham, present incumbent.

**Post-Office.**—The post-office was established in 1819, the year of the incorporation of the town. The first postmaster was Dudley Choate, appointed in 1819; the next, Amos Burnham, 1826; Enoch Low, 1832; Albert F. Low, 1854; Charles W. Procter, 1864; Daniel W. Bartlett, Sr., and Daniel W. Bartlett, Jr., from 1868 to 1881; Leighton E. Perkins, 1881.

**Physicians.**—The first resident physician was Dr. Ebenezer Davis, who came here in 1770. He was succeeded in 1788 by Dr. Parker Russ, a native of the place. After him, in 1805, came Dr. Reuben D. Mussey, later in life distinguished in medical professorships in different States. His youngest son, Gen. Reuben D. Mussey, who served with distinction in the late war, is now a lawyer, residing in Washington.

Dr. Thomas Sewall, who succeeded Dr. Mussey, was practicing physician here for ten years. In 1818 Dr. Josiah Lamson was invited by a committee of the citizens to settle here, where he passed the remainder of his life.

Dr. Oscar F. Swasey came here in 1853, and after a few years removed to Beverly, where he now resides. He was expert in surgery, having had hospital experience at Deer Island. Dr. William H. Hull commenced practice here in 1859. He served in the war, and, on leaving the army, resumed his practice here, which was quite extensive. Dr. Towne succeeded Dr. Hull in his practice and in the occupancy of his residence.

Dr. John D. Lovering succeeded Dr. Lamson on his retirement in 1861, removing, in 1880, to Manchester, N. H., his successor being Dr. A. P. Woodman.

**JOSIAH LAMSON, M.D.**—The memory of this excellent physician and estimable citizen, who prac-



ficed his profession here for more than forty years, will long be cherished. In him everybody had implicit trust. Always patiently attentive and assiduous, his long experience rendered his services of great value; and the unvarying cheerfulness and promptitude with which he responded to every call, even "in the dead waist and middle of the night,"<sup>1</sup> in the most inclement season, and when sometimes the gratitude of the patient might be his only requital, should place his name upon the list of those who, without show or pretension, have been substantial benefactors of mankind.

He was a graduate of Harvard College, of the class of 1811. Among his class-mates who became distinguished were Rev. Alvan Loamson, D.D., many years pastor of the Unitarian Church in Dedham, and editor of the *Christian Examiner*; William H. Prescott, the historian; Judge Pliny Merrick; Professor B. A. Gould; Rev. Dr. F. W. P. Greenwood, for years minister of King's Chapel, Boston; and Rev. Dr. Andrew Bigelow.

COLLEGE GRADUATES.—Of the natives of this place there have been twenty graduates of different colleges since Chebacco was first settled; of whom six are now living, viz.: George F. Choate, Esq., who has been judge of probate for thirty years; Rev. Edward P. Crowell, professor in Amherst College, of which he was a graduate; Rev. Edward Norton; Rev. David O. Mears, D.D.; Caleb Burnham, M.D.; Rev. Michael Burnham.

Of the graduates deceased, among the Essex natives, was Rev. Thomas Sewall, D.D., the only son of the distinguished physician of that name. He was an eminent clergyman of the Methodist Church, and long a presiding elder. His mother was Mary, eldest sister of Rufus Choate.

OTHERS OF THE LEARNED PROFESSIONS.—Jacob Story, Esq., judge of probate, residing in Winona, Minn., studied at Yale College and graduated at the Cambridge Law School. David Choate, Jr., M.D., was a graduate of Massachusetts Medical College, and has long been in successful practice in Salem. J. Howard Burnham has been for several years a teacher in the State Normal School at Bloomington, Ill.

The brothers, Edward S. and Philemon Eveleth, are successful physicians, the former at Gloucester, and the latter at Marblehead. Dr. Alvin Story, after graduating in medicine in this country, traveled abroad, visiting hospitals and other institutions in Europe, and settled in Natick. Leverett Mears, who studied chemistry in Germany for some years, is professor of that science at Garfield's *alma mater*, Williams College, Williamstown, Mass.

MEMBERS OF THE LEGISLATURE.—The following have been Representatives to the General Court, since the adoption of the State Constitution in 1780, as members from Chebacco of the Ipswich delegation

until the incorporation of Essex, and since that date as members from this separate town until 1860, when, under an amendment of the State Constitution, this town became a part of a Representative District, first with Manchester, afterwards with that place and Hamilton, and since with a part of Gloucester:

John Choate, 1781, '83, '85, '86, '88; Jonathan Cogswell, 1792, '93, 1800, '13; George Choate, 1814, '17.

From Essex, after incorporation.—George Choate, 1819; Jacob Story, 1824; Jonathan Story (3d), 1827-30, '33, '34; Charles Dexter, 1835, '36; Oliver Low, 1837; George W. Burnham, 1838; David Choate, 1839; Samuel Hardy and Aaron L. Burnham, 1840; Grover Dodge, 1841; John Burnham, 1842; John Prince, 1843, '53, '55, '60; Moses Burnham, Jr., 1844; Ezra Perkins, Jr., 1845; Gilman P. Allen, 1851; William Burnham (2d), 1852; Samuel Story, 1856; O. H. P. Sargent, 1857; Charles Howes, 1858; Ebenezer, Stanwood, 1862; Nehemiah Burnham, 1864; Timothy Andrews, Jr., 1866; Leonard McKenzie, 1868; William H. Mears, 1870; John C. Choate, 1872; Aaron Low, 1874; Daniel W. Bartlett, 1876; John F. James, 1879; Stephen P. Andrews, 1882; David L. Haskell, 1885; William Howe Burnham, 1888.

State Senators.—Hon. Stephen Choate, 1781-83; Hon. David Choate, 1840, '41; Hon. John Prince, 1858; Hon. Charles Howes, 1876, '77.

TEMPERANCE ORGANIZATIONS.—The first temperance society was organized here in 1829, on the basis of total abstinence from all distilled spirits. It soon afterwards took the ground of abstinence also, as a beverage from fermented liquors.

In 1842, the Washington Total Abstinence Society was formed. The writer of this, as one of a committee appointed for that purpose, drafted the constitution, of which brief extracts are given on page 322 of Crowell's town history, and also engaged the first five lecturers, four of whom were reformed men, the first of the four being a native Englishman, Dr. Henry H. Northall, a British vice consul, and a man of remarkable ability.

PUBLIC COMMEMORATIONS.—Seven public celebrations of events of more or less interest to the people generally, have taken place in the town.

1. A celebration of the fourth of July, in 1807, when an oration was delivered by Dr. Reuben D. Mussey, then the resident physician of the place—afterwards the distinguished medical professor at Dartmouth, and later of a medical college in Ohio.

2. February 17, 1815, the declaration of peace after the war of 1812 was celebrated by a military parade, a public dinner, and an illumination in the evening, and an address at the church by the pastor, Rev. Mr. Crowell.

3. In 1825, the fiftieth anniversary (strictly speaking, the forty-ninth of the declaration) of our national independence was commemorated here, with considerable eclat, by a parade of the Essex Light

<sup>1</sup> Horatio, in *Hamlet*, Act i., Scene 2.





Infantry, and a public dinner in a pavilion on the grounds of Colonel William Andrews. The oration was delivered by Rufus Choate, Esquire, then a young lawyer practising his profession in Danvers, and comparatively unknown to fame.

4. On the fourth of July, 1838, Rev. A. C. L. Arnold delivered an oration at the Universalist Church, and a dinner was served in a tent on the premises of Enoch Low.

5. The one hundredth anniversary of the declaration of independence was celebrated on the fourth of July, 1876; when an oration was delivered out of doors, on the premises of Daniel Winthrop Low, to a large concourse, by Rev. David Otis Mears, D.D., a native of the town, now pastor of the Piedmont Church in Worcester.

An interesting coincidence was the presence on this occasion of two persons who had taken part in the celebration of a half a century before, when Mr. Choate was the orator. One was the late Robert W. Burnham, who was President of the day, at this later celebration, and the other was Denmark Procter, the venerable musician of Gloucester.

6. April 20, 1879, the fiftieth anniversary of the organization of the Universalist Society was celebrated by an address by Rev. Benton Smith, then acting pastor, from the text, "Ye shall hallow the fiftieth year." The church was tastefully decorated with flowers and plants, and there was a large audience in attendance, comprising many from other places, especially from Gloucester.

Addresses were also delivered by Rev. E. F. Pember, who presided on the occasion, and others; and the exercises were participated in likewise by Rev. F. T. Pomeroy, of the Methodist church, and Rev. J. L. Harris, then acting pastor of the Congregational church.

7. On the 22d of August, 1883, the Congregational church commemorated the two hundredth anniversary of its organization, as well as that of the parish, by a public memorial meeting, and a social festival. The occasion was one of more than ordinary interest, recalling as it did the varied events of so long a period of time, and the vast changes that had taken place, not only in the parish, but in the state and nation.

The audience-room of the church edifice was profusely adorned by wreaths, crosses and other floral designs; but for the accommodation of the audiences too large for the building, the public exercises were held in a mammoth tent, on the grounds of Daniel Winthrop Low.

In the forenoon, two interesting historical discourses were delivered: the first by Rev. Professor E. P. Crowell, of Amherst College, son of the seventh pastor of the church,—a thoughtful production, admirably written, and eminently fair and discriminating in its statement of the dissensions that had arisen;—and the second, a scholarly and appreciative tribute

to the memory of Rev. John Wise, the first pastor, by Rev. Dr. Henry M. Dexter, of Boston.

A particularly interesting incident was the introduction, at the close of the forenoon meeting, of a native resident, Mr. Andrew Burnham, then in his ninety-ninth year, (who lived to be over one hundred,) and who well remembered John Cleaveland, and the raising of the meeting-house in 1792.

The congregation then visited the grave of Rev. John Wise, in the old cemetery, where a prayer was offered by Rev. Prof. Edwards A. Park, of Andover.

In the afternoon, addresses were delivered by Rev. E. B. Palmer, pastor of the parent church, at Ipswich; Rev. F. G. Clark, of Gloucester; Rev. Dr. Jeremiah Taylor, then of Providence, R. I., for some years previously minister at Wenham, who gave personal reminiscences of Rev. Dr. Crowell; and Prof. Park, of Andover.

At the social re-union in the evening, brief addresses were delivered by Rev. F. H. Palmer, acting pastor, who was president of the day; ex-pastor Rev. J. L. Harris; Rev. George L. Gleason, of Byfield; John Howard Burnham, of Bloomington, Ill., a native of Essex, a descendant of John Choate, first settler, and of Deacon William Goodhue, who was fined and imprisoned with John Wise and others, under the despotic rule of Sir Edmund Andros; and Rev. D. O. Mears, of Worcester, a native of Essex. An original poem, written for the occasion by Mrs. Elizabeth (Choate) Lane, of Boston, a native of this town, was read by Miss Ida P. Howes.

William C. Choate, organist of the church, a descendant of the early settler, John Choate, conducted the musical exercises of the day.

A hymn was lined off, after "ye ancient style," by Rufus Choate.

Letters were received from several who were unable to attend, among them Rev. John Pike, of Rowley; Rev. Wm. S. Coggin, of Boxford; Rev. J. C. Webster, of Illinois, son of a former minister of this parish; and a letter peculiarly interesting in reminiscence and full of heart, from Rev. Michael Burnham, written while travelling abroad and dated at Paris.

ESSEX BRANCH RAILROAD.—Until 1872, no railroad track crossed any part of the territory of this town; and the nearest railroad station was at Manchester, on the line of the Gloucester branch road, upwards of four miles distant, the next in point of nearness, in the direction of Salem and Boston, being that at Wenham, a distance of about six miles, on the main line of what was then the Eastern road, but is now the Eastern branch of the Boston and Maine road.

On the 1st of July of that year, the first train of cars was run over the track of the Essex Railroad, which extended from Wenham to this town, and the building of which, just then completed, had been commenced in the preceding year.

It was built by the Essex Railroad Company, of





*L. G. Burnham.*





which Leonard McKenzie was President, and John C. Choate, Secretary; the town, in its corporate capacity, contributing the larger portion of the capital. It was afterwards sold to the Eastern Railroad Company, and is now held and operated by the Boston and Maine Company.

A continuation or extension of the road across the river and marshes to the Thompson Island settlement, near the junction of Southern and Eastern Avenues, has recently been completed; and on the evening of October 10, 1887, there was a jubilation over the event of the opening of the extension on that day, for the first time, for regular travel. Many buildings were illuminated, and a procession, preceded by the Essex brass band, marched to the residence of Addison Cogswell, to whom, more than to any other person, the success of the enterprise was due, and escorted him to a hall where a banquet was served; after which Elias Andrews, chairman of the committee of arrangements, called successively upon Mr. Cogswell, Morris C. Fitch, Rev. Mr. Sanger, J. R. Pringle, of the Boston Globe, and Aaron Low, Esq., who each responded in an appropriate speech. In the course of his remarks, Mr. Cogswell signified his intention to present to the town a building for a public library. This gratifying announcement was received with much enthusiasm.

It will be conceded that the persevering efforts of the late Leonard McKenzie, Esq., president of the company, contributed more than those of any other one individual at the time, to the pushing forward of the building of the original road.

**HOG ISLAND.**--This island is located in the bay, a short distance from the main land, and is said to have received its name from its fancied resemblance to a hog's back, as seen in the distance from certain points. It is now divided into three farms.

Portions of it have at various times been in possession of different persons. One of my ancestors, Robert Day, who came from England in 1635, in the ship Hopewell, was the owner in 1664, of four and a half acres on this island. The statement in the Ipswich records is, that he owned a share and a half; and it appears from other entries in the same records, that by an established rule a "share" contained three acres.

Philip Fowler is likewise recorded as the owner of shares in Hog Island, as well as on Castle Neck and Plum Island, in the same year, 1664.

Jacob Bennett, grandson of John Perkins, 1st, owned several acres here, with a house, in which he and his family lived, which his heirs, in 1704, sold to Captain Thomas Choate, who had long been a resident of the island. This Bennett was a son of Henry, an ancestor of the late Captain Parker Burnham, whose mother's maiden-name was Hannah Bennett.

Matthew Whipple, son-in-law of William Cogswell, grandson of John, first settler, was, at Mr. Cogswell's decease, appointed guardian of his minor

children and administrator of his estate; and one charge upon the estate, under date of May 16, 1717, was for "dividing the Island with Mr. Choate." From this it may be reasonably inferred that William Cogswell had been a part owner of Hog Island.

Captain Thomas Choate, it is generally understood, became finally the exclusive owner of the island; and from this circumstance, it is said, he was called Governor Choate.

In 1886, a road was constructed from the mainland to Hog Island by Captain Lamont G. Burnham, for the proprietors, Messrs. Marshall, Choate, and himself. The road across the marsh, about one-half mile long, from Low's to Dean's Island, was located and built, a few years previously, for his own use, by Rufus Choate, who also built a small ferry-boat, upon which he could drive a horse and light carriage, and, by the use of ropes and pulleys, could cross at any time of the tide. A substantial plank-road, thirteen hundred feet long and about twelve or fifteen feet wide, has been built to take the place of the ferry-boat. There are two bridges intersecting the plank-road, one of three hundred and eighty feet, the other of one hundred feet, left open underneath for the current on each side of the great thatch-bank. There are also spaces left between the piles which form the foundation of the road, for the passage of hay-boats and floating ice. All the lumber used about the bridge is hard pine, excepting the piles, which are of hemlock. The bridge and repairs upon the marsh road, which had gone somewhat to decay, cost between six and seven thousand dollars.

*Change of Name.*--The proprietors of the three farms upon the island, Rufus Choate, Nehemiah Choate Marshall, and Lamont G. Burnham, in October, 1887, changed the name to *Choate Island*, and requested the Selectmen to so record it upon the town books. The former inelegant name will, therefore, become obsolete.

It is said that no less than eighty-two persons of the name of Choate have been born upon this island.

The three present proprietors of the island are kinsmen, Captain L. G. Burnham being a descendant of George Giddings, who was ancestor also of Mary (Giddings) Choate, wife of Captain William Choate, and great-grandmother of Rufus, now the resident owner of one of the three farms.

**LAMONT GIDDINGS BURNHAM**--Was born in Essex, August 5th, 1844, and is the son of Washington and Mary (Giddings) Burnham, and a great-grandson of Benjamin Burnham, who was a soldier at the battle of Bunker Hill and served throughout the entire Revolutionary War, living to the age of ninety-two years. By two separate lines of ancestry, he descended from John Tuttle, sometimes written Tuthill, who came to Ipswich, from London, in the ship Planter, in 1635, of whose daughters one was the wife of George Giddings, who came in the same vessel, and another married Thomas Burnham.





second of the three Burnham brothers, early immigrants. Tuttle and Giddings became large land owners in Ipswich.

He received his education in the public schools in Essex, the Putnam school at Newburyport, and a business school in Boston. He enlisted, at the age of eighteen, in Company E. Forty-eighth Regiment Massachusetts Volunteer Militia, which joined General Banks' command in New Orleans, taking part in the battle before Port Hudson and at Donaldsonville. He was afterwards appointed Captain, First Brigade, Massachusetts Volunteer Militia, on the staff of General I. S. Burrill, and later, on the staff of General Hobart Moore, and elected Captain of Troop D. First Battalion of Cavalry, still later.

In 1868, he established himself in the coal business in Boston. Commencing in a moderate way, his business so increased that he is now the owner of several iron and other steamers, one of which, of eight hundred and nineteen tons, was built at Essex, and became proprietor of several large coal establishments, the most extensive, covering two acres, with buildings of storage capacity of eighty thousand tons.

He is President of the Boston Board of Trade, and fills many other prominent official positions in various business companies and corporations.

In 1880, he married Mrs. M. A. Wood. They have improved their summer residence in Essex, formerly in the possession of the Choate family, where Governor Robinson and wife were entertained by them, in 1886. In 1878, the farm adjoining the birth-place of Rufus Choate, on Hog Island, was purchased by him; and in 1886, a road and bridge from the main land to the Island, were constructed by him for the proprietors, Messrs. Marshall, Choate, and himself.

Capt. Burnham is a valued and esteemed citizen, liberal, public-spirited and hospitable, whose successful career is the result, not only of his remarkable business capability and enterprise, but of strict integrity and honorable dealing.

**LONGEVITY.**—The proportionate number of persons of advanced age, at different periods since the settlement of this place, has probably been as large as the average of that of other towns in the vicinity. Of 676 who died during one period of 43 years, 80 were upwards of 80 years old, and 20 were over 90. Of these *Joseph Marshall* was over 96.

**CENTENARIANS WHO WERE NATIVES OF THIS PLACE.**—*Mrs. Joanna Andrews*, who was born in Chebacco, and whose maiden name was Burnham, died in Gloucester January 20, 1847, at the age of one hundred and two years and three months. Her mother died at the age of ninety-two, and a sister was living at ninety-four.

*Rufus Cogswell*, a descendant in the sixth generation from John Cogswell, first settler, died in Essex in 1861, at the age of one hundred years. He was a

soldier of the Revolutionary War, and was with General Gates at the surrender of Burgoyne.

*Andrew Burnham*, a descendant in the fifth generation, from John, the eldest of the three Burnham boy brothers, who came from England in 1635, died in Essex in 1885, at the age of one hundred years and two months. It is said that during his long life, a large portion of which was passed in active business pursuits, he was never seriously ill. He was a soldier in the war of 1812. He had ten children—nine by his first wife and one by his second. He was the father of George P. Burnham, Esq., of Melrose, and of Susan H., wife of Judge Benjamin Kingsbury, of Portland, Me. He was a merchant in Boston for many years, in business at one time on May's wharf, in old Federal Street, and subsequently in Green Street. He was at first engaged in the shipping business and importing of West India goods; then in the wholesale tobacco and West India trade, in company with Jonathan Carlton, and later in the retail family grocery line. He was one of a family of thirteen children, of whom several lived to a very advanced age—one, a brother, to his eighty-seventh year, and a sister to her eighty-ninth year. His father lived to be seventy-nine, and his grandfather eighty-eight. His great-grandfather died at the early age of thirty years and five months, but his great-great-grandfather John, his first ancestor in this country, lived to be seventy-six. This ancestor was one of the first two deacons of the First Chebacco Church, of which Rev. John Wise was pastor. The centenarian was a member of the Methodist Church.

By his descent from Abigail Varney, who married his great-grandfather, Josiah Burnham, and who was the sister of Mary Varney, who became the first wife of Captain Thomas Choate and mother of all his children, Andrew Burnham was a third cousin of David Choate, 1st, father of Rufus.

**A CENTENARIAN WHO LIVED AND DIED HERE, BUT WAS NOT A NATIVE.**—*Joseph Eveleth*, who was born in Gloucester, about 1640, when about 34 years of age removed to Chebacco, where he spent the remainder of his life, dying here in December, 1745, at the age of one hundred and five years.

He was a son of Sylvester Eveleth, who immigrated to Boston from England, where he for some time carried on the trade of a baker; and who removed to Gloucester, where for some years he was a selectman. The name was frequently written Eveleigh, and is said to have been originally derived from an estate in England called Yeverleigh.

**ALMOST A CENTENARIAN.**—Widow *Hannah Ayres*, who had been a school-mistress, died here in 1776, at the age of nearly one hundred years.

**A FORMER RESIDENT, NOT A NATIVE, ALMOST A CENTENARIAN.**—*Rev. Nehemiah Porter*, born in the Hamlet (Hamilton), who preached here seventeen years and owned a house here, died at Ashfield, Mass., in 1820, in the one hundredth year of his age.



SOME OF THE NONOGENARIANS.—*Anne Choate*, widow of John, first settler, was ninety years old, at her death in 1729.

*Ned Choate*, a negro, a member of the church, died in the year 1800 at the age of ninety. He had been employed upon the Choate farm on Hog Island, and early in life may have been a slave.

*Thomas Giddings*, who died in 1802, at the age of ninety-four, walked nine miles in one day within a year of his death.

*A widow Smith* died in 1816, at the age of ninety-seven years and three months.

*Daniel Choate* died in 1820 at ninety-one.

*Mrs. Deborah Burnham*, widow of Wesley Burnham, 1st, a native of this place, a daughter of Deacon Zechariah Story, died here in 1821, at the age of ninety-eight. She was of the same lineage as that of Judge Story. She lived in the ancient house long occupied by Aaron Story, son of Ephraim, who was also of the same lineage. This house is the first on the left, after turning to the right from Western Avenue into the old road around the Falls village.

*Mrs. Anna Andrews*, who died in 1823, *Jesse Story*, who died in 1824, and *Major John Burnham*, the distinguished officer in the Revolutionary War, who many years after its close removed to Derry, N. H., where he died in 1843, all attained the age of ninety-four.

A recent instance is that of *Mrs. Lucy Boyd*, widow of John Boyd, who died in 1887, at the age of ninety-six. Her brother, *Aaron Burnham*, survives in his ninety-first year.

The list of nonogenarians might be considerably enlarged from among those deceased at different dates from fifteen to fifty-five years ago—a few notable instances being those of *James Andrews*, not far from ninety-seven; the three brothers, *David Burnham*, at 94 (whose wife survived him two years, and also reached ninety-four), *Benjamin Burnham*, at ninety-two, and *Parker Burnham*, 1st, at ninety-one years and eight months; and their nephew, *Captain Parker Burnham*, at ninety years and two months.

SUMMER RESORTS.—“Conomo Point,” so named, it is said, at the suggestion of Daniel W. Bartlett, Esq., in honor of Masconomo, the Indian-Chief, who owned the land in all the region round about, has for some time been an attractive place for persons of wealth and leisure, as well as active business men who have there built for themselves summer homes. Its nearness to the alms-house farm, from which can be obtained plenty of fresh eggs, genuine butter, and rich milk and cream, with other products of a fertile and well conducted farm, makes it exceptionally desirable in this respect. Cross Island, another refuge from the heat and dust of city and town, is exactly opposite to Conomo Point, across Chebacco River, and, of course, shares with it the advantage of having the poor-farm as its base of supplies. There were, at first, merely cabins of one room here, but

there are now quite comfortable houses, each containing several rooms.

On the line of the Essex branch of the Boston and Maine Railroad, which has a station near its entrance, in the western part of the town is located Centennial Grove. It is the most popular summer resort in the county. Religious Societies and Sabbath Schools of every denomination visit annually these beautiful grounds, as do also military organizations, benevolent associations and pleasure parties of every description. Picnic parties, including thousands of people, have frequently found abundant accommodation here. Upon the lake are boats of various descriptions, among others one called a Catamaran, built of two narrow, air-tight gondolas planked over and fitted with sails. There also has been a small steamer running there at times.

Mr. J. Leverett Story, one of the proprietors, was for some years business manager, as was also Mr. Charles W. Procter.

“Cross Island” derived its name from Robert Cross, an early settler, who is reputed to have been the owner of it, but of whom little is known, either from record or tradition, except that he was a soldier in the Pequot expedition in 1637, and in 1639 was awarded a grant of land for his services. His name, “Robert Cross, Senior,” was signed to a petition of the inhabitants of Chebacco, in 1679, to the General Court, for permission to build a meeting-house here. Whether he died here or removed to some other settlement is not known. The family name has long been extinct in this place. In 1710, two married daughters, Mrs. Mary (Cross) Herrick and Mrs. Anna (Cross) Fellows, were living in Connecticut.

HISTORIC HOUSES AND LOCALITIES.—1. The house now owned and occupied by Mr. Edwin Hobbs was built and owned by Rev. Theophilus Pickering, and was his residence until his death. It was afterward the home of Rev. John Cleaveland for two years; and was then purchased and occupied by Rev. Nehemiah Porter, who sold it to Dr. Davis, the first resident physician of the place; from whom it passed into the possession of Col. Jonathan Cogswell, and was inherited by his daughter Mary, afterward Mrs. Choate, who occupied it during her life.

In this house, on the night of July 18, 1817, occurred the first burglary in this parish of which there is any tradition, which was long spoken of because of the novel manner in which it was effected. The sum of one hundred dollars was taken from a desk in a room on the lower floor. Col. Cogswell, then the owner and occupant, slept in a room over it, and awaking in the night heard what he supposed to be the gnawing of wood by rats or mice. In the morning he found that his desk had been opened by sawing around the lock, so that the cover or top could be lifted, lock and all, without the necessity of using a key.

2. The farm at the North End, fronting on Northern





Avenue, upon which Capt. Lamont G. Burnham resides during the summer season, was formerly owned by Francis Choate, Esq., and afterward by his son, Hon. John Choate; and the dwelling-house on the premises is substantially the same in which they lived. It was here that Capt. Burnham entertained Gov. Robinson and his wife, during their visit to Essex, in 1886.

In this house, in 1747, assembled the ecclesiastical council at the ordination of Rev. John Cleaveland; and the public ordaining services took place out-of-doors in front of the house. Francis Choate, the occupant at that time, great-grandfather of Rufus, was a Ruling Elder in Mr. Cleaveland's church. The council which ordained Rev. Robert Crowell, in 1814, also met in this house, which was then occupied by George Choate, Esq., grandson of Francis and father of Dr. George, Senior, and Francis, so long residents of Salem.

3. On Hog Island, in an ancient house, on the farm now owned and occupied by his nephew and namesake, was born the distinguished lawyer and statesman, Rufus Choate. From time to time, the walls of the room in which he was born, resembling in this respect the cupola of Washington's Mansion at Mount Vernon, and the birthplace of Shakespeare at Stratford-upon-Avon, have been inscribed with the names of numerous visitors from abroad. Names are now recorded in a book kept for that purpose. Governor Robinson visited this house while the guest of Capt. L. G. Burnham.

Rachel Choate, the great-great-grandmother of the writer of this historical sketch, was born in this house in 1703.

4. The house owned and occupied by the late William H. Mears, Esq., was built in 1695, by Nathaniel Rust, Jr., who taught the first school known to have been established in Chebacco. A room of this house was presumably used for the purpose, there having been previously no school-house built.

5. The house of the late Colonel David Story, on the road to Hamilton, is a place of public interest, from its having been occupied for some days, in the summer of 1775, by Rev. John Murray, who took refuge in Chebacco, with several families from Gloucester, who brought their silverware and other portable articles of value during a panic caused by the appearance of a British sloop-of-war, which had chased an American vessel into their harbor, and sent several boat-loads of men to seize and carry her away. They were repulsed by the quickly-mustered local militia, who made a gallant resistance, and captured several prisoners who were attempting to land. The sloop-of-war opened fire on the town, but, failing of the chief object, finally withdrew.

6. A place of great historic interest is the spot on which stands the house lately occupied by Rev. Dr. Crowell and Hon. David Choate, and which is still in

the possession of their families. It was the site of the house built for the Rev. John Cleaveland and owned by him, in which he lived for half a century, and in which he died.

7. The ancient house near the margin of Chebacco Lake, occupied by the late Abner Burnham, Sr., was the residence of David Burnham (1st), who was the maternal grandfather of Hon. Nathan Dane, LL. D., the eminent jurist, author of the Digest of American Law, and author of the famous Ordinance of 1787, which secured to freedom the great Northwestern Territory, and to whom Daniel Webster paid such a magnificent tribute in his great speech in the United States Senate, in reply to Hayne, of South Carolina. It was in reference to the Ordinance mentioned, as well as to his high character and abilities, that Dane County, in Wisconsin, was named in his honor. He was the founder of the Dane Professorship of Law in Harvard University, and was frequently consulted as of high authority in the legal profession. His residence in Beverly, where he lived to the age of eighty-two, was on the Southwestern corner of Cabot and Federal Streets, opposite the Unitarian church, the latter street being said to have been named in honor of him, as virtually among the fathers of the Federal Constitution.

He was not what would be termed an orator, but, like Franklin, was an embodiment of sterling, practical sense. Whenever he spoke in public, it was with brevity and exactly to the point. On one occasion, in a Beverly town-meeting, when a local measure occasioned an animated debate, he said a few words, when an excited townsman on the other side of the question sought to counteract the manifest influence of his remarks by reminding him that he had, at some previous time, expressed a different opinion on the same subject. The hush of the listening voters was turned to merriment when Mr. Dane simply said, "Any man has the right to change his opinion every five minutes, *if he can give a good reason for it.*" He carried his point.

He was a man of method and punctuality in every thing. Frequently, in my boyhood, in the street in Beverly, have I, with my mates, paused in the midst of our play, and, with a feeling somewhat like awe, looked up at "lawyer Dane," as he passed in his daily walk for exercise, at about the same hour in each day, with his deliberate step and dignified manner, in his wide-brimmed hat and black suit, with small clothes buckled at the knee, and his high Suwarrow boots with black silken tassels.

To the now time-worn house in Essex, where his mother, Abigail Burnham, was born, Nathan Dane often came, in his childhood, on a visit to the old homestead, and played about the premises. His father was Daniel Dane, of the Hamlet, now Hamilton, where Nathan was born in 1752.

Nathan Dane was a lineal descendant of John Perkins, the first of that name to settle permanently in



Ipswich. His grandmother Burnham's maiden name was Elizabeth Perkins.

8. In this same old house lived Abner Burnham, a quaint, eccentric man, who was a zealous exhorter in the Christian Baptist meetings in Essex, and who had a large family, including several sons who became preachers, Elam, Wesley, Hezekiah, Edwin and George W., the last two residing several years in Newburyport.

9. The site of the first meeting-house in this place, which was raised furtively, as so often told, was the spot on which stands the dwelling-house of the late Capt. Joseph Choate, on Northern Avenue.

10. About opposite, on the northern corner, stood the parsonage, the first home of Rev. John Wise, the first minister, which he occupied for twenty years.

11. Afterwards he had built for himself a house on the spot where now stands the dwelling of the late John Mears, senior. In this second house, Mr. Wise resided during the remainder of his life.

*The Congregational Meeting-House—a Marblehead man's idea.* 12. This edifice, as well as its site, may properly be termed historic. Rev. John Cleaveland preached in it during the last seven years of his life, as he had previously done for forty years in a former structure which stood on the same spot. He and Dr. Crowell preached upon this spot for ninety years.

Everybody who knew the present house prior to its being re-modeled in 1842, will remember that the audience room was then on the ground-floor of the building, and the pulpit, instead of being, as now, at the end, was in the middle of one side, as was originally the case with New England meeting-houses generally.

An amusing illustration of the fact that people frequently derive their figures of speech from their business occupation, is afforded by the following incident, which I guaranteed to be authentic, as I had it from the person to whom the droll comparison was addressed.

One day a sea-faring man from Marblehead came to Essex, with a friend, on business concerning a vessel. The front door of the meeting house being open, he looked in, and glancing at the pulpit at the side, said to his companion, "Here's a craft that carries her rudder midships."

13. The ancient house built in 1732, now occupied by Jonathan Cogswell and the family of the late Albert Cogswell may be considered historic, having sheltered five generations of the descendants of John Cogswell, first settler, and standing upon land belonging to the farm originally owned by him.

SIGNIFICANCE OF THE INDIAN NAME, "CHEBACCO."—In the summer of 1878, while attending a picnic at Centennial Grove, on the margin of Chebacco Pond or Lake, in Essex, I was asked by Rev. Elias Nason, what was the meaning of the original Indian name of the place Chebacco. I replied that the only definition I knew of was that which I received

from Maungwudaus, the Ojibway Chief, who, about 1849-50, visited most of the towns and cities of New England, and lectured upon the habits, customs, manners, beliefs, language and other peculiarities of his people, presenting some novel and interesting illustrations of their speech, music, costumes, etc. He told me, in conversation, that from his acquaintance with Indian words, he thought it meant *place of spirits*. He was not only the most intelligent, generally speaking, but the most able intellectually, and the best educated Indian I had ever heard address a public audience; and I had heard many.

Mr. Nason, to whom, at his request, I furnished several data concerning the town, in his subsequent contribution to a county history, applied the term, as thus defined, to that particular location only where we had met; whereas the Indians designated by it a much larger part of the territory of this region.

Rev. Dr. Henry M. Dexter, of Boston, in his address, in 1883, at the bi-centennial celebration of the founding of the First Church in Essex, gives the following, as the interpretation of "Chebacco," furnished him by Hon. J. Hammond Trumbull, distinguished as a scholar, and specially as a student of Indian dialects: "The greatest pond, or principal source of some stream." This Dr. Dexter poetically and appropriately applied to Rev. John Wise, the first minister of this place, whose early and ultimately triumphant resistance to the despotic assumptions of the Colonial Governor, Andros, became, as he aptly states it, "the principal source of the great river of that democratic polity which now gladdens so largely our land."

The two somewhat varying definitions can both be favorably considered,—for one of them is applicable to the pond or lake, as the source of the river; and the other will fitly characterize the entire settlement, which, for more than two centuries, has been a "place of spirits,"—peopled by choice spirits of devotion, heroic patriotism, industry, integrity and personal worth, and the social virtues, of whose memories the place will long be redolent.

GRAND ARMY.—O. H. P. *Sargent Post*, of the Grand Army of the Republic, named in honor of a member of the Twenty-second regiment of Massachusetts Volunteers, who died of wounds received at McClellan's first advance on the peninsula, in May, 1862, and W. A. *Andrews Camp* of the Sons of Veterans, named in honor of a member of the Nineteenth Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers, who died of wounds at the battle of White Oak Swamp, in June, 1862, are flourishing organizations which keep alive the patriotic memories and associations of the war.





## CHAPTER XXVII.

## ESSEX (Continued).

*Prominent Personages and Public Events Associated with Essex and Essex People—Historical Descendants of John Cypwell, Early Settlers of Chebacco—Perpetration of Early Surnames—Orthography and Significance of Surnames—The Perkins Family—Ancestral Arms—Rites of the Church—Hon. David Choate—Capt. Parker Burnham—The Andover Family—The Burnhams—The Choate Family—The Goddards—The Story Family—Miscellaneous—Retrospective.*

PROMINENT PERSONAGES AND PUBLIC EVENTS ASSOCIATED WITH ESSEX AND ESSEX PEOPLE.—

James Fenimore Cooper, in his sea-romance of "The Pilot," gives an account of a colloquy between Captain Barnstable, commander of the privateer-cruiser Ariel, and Master Coffin, the boatswain of the vessel, in relation to the pilot they were expecting from shore, in which the boatswain says: "Give me a plenty of sea-room and good canvas, where there is no occasion for pilots at all, sir. For my part, *I was born on board a Chebacco-man*, and never could see the use of more land than now and then a small island to raise a few vegetables and dry your fish. I'm sure the sight of it always makes me feel uncomfortable, unless we have the wind dead off shore."<sup>1</sup>

The use of the word Chebacco in Cooper's story was erroneously stated by a correspondent of the *Boston Traveller*, of June 20, 1867, cited in the continuation of Crowell's History of Essex, on page 448, and repeated by Rev. Elias Nason in a note to his article on Essex, in a work upon the County. It will be seen, by reading the Pilot, that Captain Barnstable does not hail from Chebacco; neither does his boatswain Coffin; but the latter claims merely to be a native of a Chebacco boat, and says: "I was born while the boat was crossing Nantucket shoals."<sup>2</sup>

Thomas O. H. P. Burnham, of Boston, the proprietor of the well-known Antiquarian book establishment in that city, probably the most extensive of the kind in the country, is a native of Chebacco. The people of his native town have always felt a laudable gratification at his successful and honorable business career. Perhaps few of the general public know of the essential aid he has rendered to men of letters, and others, among them some of the most eminent persons of the times, by his wide range of acquaintance with whatever is valuable in the world of literature.

Hon. Daniel Clark, formerly United States Senator from New Hampshire, and since United States District Judge, taught school for some time in the South district in this town, when a young man.

The mother of the distinguished jurist, Nathan Dane, was a native of this place, as more fully noticed under the head of historic houses.

Samuel Dudley owned for some time a farm in Chebacco. He was son of Thomas Dudley, for several years Deputy Governor and Governor of the

Colony, and was a brother of the noted Joseph Dudley, who was the chief justice of the court before which John Wise and others were tried for resisting Governor Andros. His sister Ann was the gifted writer who married Simon Bradstreet, Governor of the colony. He married Mary Winthrop, daughter of Governor John Winthrop. He finally moved to Exeter, New Hampshire, where he became the minister of the town, and where he died.

Dr. Elisha Kent Kane, the renowned Arctic explorer, sailed upon his famous voyage on the Grinnell Expedition in search of Sir John Franklin and an open polar sea, in a vessel launched from the shipyard of Messrs. James & McKenzie, in Essex. She was originally called the "Spring Hill"; but when first fitted out for the Arctic region, she was named the "Advance." In his published narrative of the voyage, Dr. Kane wrote in praise of her sailing qualities.

She was selected on account of the peculiarity of her construction, which enabled her to sail near the shore with less liability of running aground, than a vessel of a different model.

Captain John Low, commander of the ship Ambrose, and rear admiral of a fleet of twelve ships which sailed from England, for Salem, in April, 1630, was the father of Thomas Low, the first settler of that name in Chebacco, and ancestor of the late Captain Winthrop Low, Enoch Low (so long the postmaster), Oliver Low, and others.

Sir Jacob Perkins, inventor of the steam-gun, and other ingenious forms of mechanism, who spent the later years of his life in England, where he received the honors of knighthood, although a native of Newburyport, was the grandson of Matthew and Phebe (Burnham) Perkins, of Chebacco, and a lineal descendant of John Perkins and Thomas Burnham, first settlers.

Rev. Samuel Phillips, who taught school in Chebacco, for a year after his graduation from Harvard College, became distinguished as a pastor in Andover for sixty years, and preached the annual election sermon in Boston in 1750. He was the father of John Phillips, who founded Phillips' Academy in Exeter, N. H., and of Samuel Phillips, who, with the aid of his brother John, founded Phillips' Academy in Andover, Mass.

The father, Rev. Samuel, was a brother of Deacon John Phillips, of Boston, who was the great-grandfather of Wendell Phillips, the orator and philanthropist. He was a benevolent man, giving to the poor annually one-tenth of his income, of which he kept an exact account, and yet at the same time so economical as to blow out the candle when he commenced his evening prayer.

Sarah Foster, daughter of Reginald Foster, 1st, of Ipswich, and sister of Reginald, Jr., of Chebacco, married William Story, who owned and occupied a farm here, and who was the ancestor of the eminent

<sup>1</sup> The Pilot, edition of 1813, chapter ii. p. 18.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid., chapter xvii. p. 168.





Joseph Story, long associate justice of the United States Supreme Court, professor of law in Harvard University, and distinguished in both hemispheres, by his legal commentaries and other works, which are standard authorities in jurisprudence; and whose son, William W. Story, is the sculptor who designed and modeled the statues of Chief Justice Marshall, at the west front of the United States Capitol, and that of Professor Henry in the Smithsonian grounds, at Washington.

Major Andrew Story journeyed with his family in an ox-wagon from Chebacco to Marietta, Ohio, in 1778, with a party of emigrants from this and neighboring towns, who became permanent settlers of Dr. Manasseh Cutler's infant colony. One of his children was instantly killed by falling from the wagon under one of the wheels; and while on the way a child was born.

Rev. Daniel Story, uncle of Judge Story, was also one of the settlers.

Colonel Joseph D. Webster, son of Rev. Josiah Webster, who was for several years pastor of the Congregational Church in Chebacco, was chief of General Grant's staff at the battle of Pittsburg Landing, April 6, 1862.

Dr. John Dennison Russ, a native of Chebacco, and grandson of Colonel Jonathan Cogswell, of Revolutionary distinction, was a graduate of Yale College in 1823. He was as distinguished for his philanthropy as for his skill as a physician. After his graduation in medicine, two years later, and spending a year in the hospitals of Paris, London and Edinburgh, he settled in New York city. Soon after, having his sympathies enlisted for the suffering Greeks, then at war with the Turks, he carried to them and distributed a vessel load of provisions, visiting for that purpose, it is said, nearly every town in Greece, and establishing a hospital there. He took seven blind children to educate at his own cost, that being the first attempt to educate this unfortunate class in this country, and invented maps in geography and arithmetic for them, which are still in use wherever the blind are taught. His services for the Greeks and his efforts for the blind, place him on the same lustrous roll with the distinguished Dr. Samuel G. Howe. He devised a plan for the abolition of slavery in the country, which he submitted, in 1837, to Henry Clay, by which he thought slavery could be abolished and slaves educated for freemen at the expense of three hundred million dollars in twenty-five years.

George P. Burnham, of Melrose, though born in Boston, is of Essex descent, being a son of Andrew, the centenarian, noticed more fully under the head of longevity. He received his education in the public schools of his native city, and at the age of fourteen years, at the Mayhew School, was awarded the Franklin medal. Though now living in quiet retirement, he led for many years an active and busy life.

For several years a commercial book-keeper in New York city, he was afterwards, for some years, assistant cashier and clerk in the Boston Custom-House. He was for some time one of the most extensive dealers in fancy poultry in this country; and in everything relative to the rearing, management and comparative values of the different varieties of this class of live stock, he was considered a connoisseur and an authority. He published no less than nine different hand-books, and descriptive and practical treatises upon these topics, some of them pictorially illustrated, and several of them being very extensively sold throughout the United States. He also published a volume upon song-birds, and other domestic pets. His other and more voluminous printed works consist of a book showing how to detect and avoid counterfeits; a "History of the United States Secret Service," and a volume of miscellaneous selections from a portfolio of his own writings upon various subjects. These books are all numerous illustrated by plates and engravings. He has had much experience as an editor, having for some time conducted a daily newspaper, and contributed at different times to various other journals and periodicals.

During the late Civil War he was, by President Lincoln, commissioned as a brigade commissary in the army, with the rank of captain, serving for two years in that capacity.

Parker and Elias Burnham, natives of Essex, established the first marine railway in Gloucester.

**DISTINGUISHED DESCENDANTS OF JOHN COGSWELL, EARLY SETTLER OF CHEBACCO.**—Ralph Waldo Emerson, who was descended from Cornelius Waldo, who married John Cogswell's daughter, Hannah; Oliver Wendell Holmes; United States Senator John J. Ingalls, of Kansas; Rev. Francis T. Ingalls, his brother; William Cogswell, the distinguished artist; Hon. John Wentworth, Congressman from Illinois and mayor of Chicago; Rev. Daniel Waldo, a soldier in the Revolutionary War, who lived to the age of one hundred and two years; Rufus Cogswell, a Revolutionary soldier, who died at the age of one hundred years; Horace Maynard, member of Congress from Tennessee, Minister to Turkey and Postmaster-General; Loren P. Waldo, member of Congress and judge of the Supreme Court of Connecticut; P. Brainard Cogswell, editor and author; O. B. Matteson, Congressman from New York; Elisha Whittlesey, Congressman from Ohio and long the first comptroller of the United States Treasury; Dr. Henry Daniel Cogswell, philanthropist and millionaire of California, who presented public drinking-fountains to the city of Washington and thirty other cities of the United States; Samuel S. Fisher, colonel in War of Rebellion and commissioner of patents under Grant; Arthur Oreutt Jameson, graduate of Dartmouth College, a brilliant scholar, died in early manhood; Edna Dean Proctor, distinguished as a writer of prose and verse; Rev. Dr. James Cogswell, who died



at the age of eighty-seven years, at the home of his son in Hartford, Conn., of whom it is related that in his last illness, when his memory had so far failed that he forgot that he had a son, on being asked if he remembered anything about Jesus, said promptly and with animation, "O yes, I do remember him;" the five brothers, Rev. Drs. Nathaniel and William, Judge Thomas, Francis, and Dr. George Cogswell; General William Cogswell, Congressman from Massachusetts, Seventh District; Hon. John B. D. Cogswell; Frederick Hull Cogswell, expert phonographer, founder of a school of phonography, and author of works on the art; William S. Robinson, the politician, editor and correspondent over the signature of "Warrington;" and many others of more or less note in different parts of the country.<sup>1</sup>

PERPETUATION OF EARLY SURNAMES.<sup>2</sup>—Of one hundred and ninety-six families residing in this town in 1820, one year after its incorporation, fifty-two were of the name of Burnham; and of the residue, a proportionately large number were of the names of Andrews, Choate, Cogswell, Goodhue, Low and Story. On the list of legal voters here in 1887 are the following: Andrews, 43; Burnham, 80; Choate, 4; Cogswell, 13; Goodhue, 3; Low, 22; Story, 47.

ORTHOGRAPHY AND SIGNIFICANCE OF SURNAMES.—Some of the early settlers spelled their names differently at different times, and sometimes differently in one and the same document. Andrews is sometimes signed Andros. Burnham was sometimes written Burnam and Burnum. In the eleventh century it was spelled Bernham and Byrnham.

On file in the office of the clerk of the courts in Salem is an affidavit, dated June 28, 1664, signed "John Choat." He was the first of the name here. In his signature to the witchcraft petition it is spelled "Chote," while that of his son Thomas is as now

uniformly written, Choate. John, Jr., in an entry at the Probate office, signed himself "Chote."

Goodhue was sometimes written Goodhew, as in the witchcraft petition.

Mears is written Meares, Meeres and Meers.

Lufkin is sometimes written Lovekin, as in the witchcraft petition.

The origin and significance of some of the names have not been traced, while those of others are clearly traceable, as well as obvious.

In books on English surnames the first syllable of Burnham is said to signify chief, hero and man; also a knight, a noble; and sometimes a small river or brook, as now in Scottish song—"the wimpling burn." Ham, the terminal syllable of a large number of names of localities, signifies a town, a village; and the two syllables combined mean a town by a river. Applied to a man, the word signified a lord of a town or village. In Shakespeare's "Macbeth" the same name, spelled Birnam, is applied to a forest, in act iv., scene 1, and in act v., scenes 3, 4, 5 and 7; and scene 4 of act v. describes how "Birnam wood" did "come to Dunsinane."

The meaning of Goodhue is, obviously, good color; and so the name was construed in a published tribute, in Latin, to Rev. Francis Goodhue, who died in 1707. "*Bonitas conjuncta colori cognomen præbent.*"

Lufkin or Lovekin implies attachment to kindred.

The name Mears, in England and sometimes in this country, has been written Meres, as the plural of Mere, which has two significations—one, a boundary; the other, a lake; as Grassmere and Windermere, and likewise as in Tennyson's, poem of the Two Voices, when, on the Sabbath morn,

"Like softened airs that blowing steal,  
When *meres* begin to uncoil,  
The sweet church bells began to peal."

Rev. Francis Meres was a distinguished clergyman and belle-lettres scholar of Shakespeare's time, who was probably a personal acquaintance of the great bard. He wrote appreciatingly of him when both were living, exhibiting fine literary taste, acuteness, and judgment; and were he now here, he would, I think, dissipate into vapor the idiotic hypothesis that Bacon wrote Shakespeare.

In the following verbatim copy of the will of John Mears, who at the age of three years, came in the ship Abigail, in 1635, from London, with his father, Robert Mears, the name is spelled in no less than three different ways:

"Boston: 26. 7 mo. 1663. I, John Meers, lying sick—declare this as my last will, if no other after this doe appeare. I make my deat ynkell, James Johnson, executor of this my last will. I give to my wife, Mary, my dwelling-house during her life, & if she marry, her next husband to give to her Child she now goes with, yt said house and ground, & after both her & her child's decease, then to my two brothers, or ye survivor of them. Moreover, I give to my beloved wife ye bed I now ly on with all ye furniture thereto belonging, six greene Chairs, a round table and two paire of sheets, besides them I had with her, with a Long table in the house. To my father Meares my best suit and Cloak and furr Cord of wood, with my Wedding hat. To my dear mother Meares my Chest

<sup>1</sup> "The Cogswells in America," by Rev. Ephraim O. Jameson, of Mills, Mass., seventh law of the late Rev. Dr. William Cogswell, is a large and elegant volume, finely illustrated, containing the foregoing details, besides much interesting history.

<sup>2</sup> I believe that the late Edwin P. Whipple, the brilliant essayist, literary critic, and popular lecturer, was a descendant of John Cogswell, of Chelms, and a kinsman of Ralph Waldo Emerson and Wendell Phillips. His father was Matthew Whipple, and he had also a brother Matthew, long employed in John M. Ives' book store in Salem, and for years afterwards a dealer in artists' materials, in Cornhill, Boston. The father died in Gloucester when Edwin was an infant, and the widowed mother removed with her children to Salem.

In 1685 William Cogswell, grandson of John Cogswell, first settler, married Martha, daughter of Rev. John Emerson, of Gloucester, son of Thomas, of Ipswich, who was an ancestor of Ralph Waldo Emerson.

Matthew Whipple married the eldest daughter of this William Cogswell, and was, I think, an ancestor of Edwin P. Whipple, whose older brother was given the name of Matthew, which was the first name of their father, as hereinbefore stated.

Another daughter of Rev. John Emerson, of Gloucester, married Samuel Phillips goldsmith, of Salem, and was the great-great grandmother of Wendell Phillips.

Collette Lovett Saltonstall, of Boston, is of the same Phillips lineage. Her great-great grandmother, Sarah (Phillips) White, was a daughter of Samuel Phillips last mentioned, the Salem gold and silversmith.





of drawers, two pairs of sheets and bed ticking. To my brother, Samuel Meers, a pair of blow Outlines; A my 24 suit and Coat to James Meers, with my musket and arms, to my wife, all the rest of my estate. John Meers.

"Witness, JAMES JOHN SON,  
"JAMES OLIVER."

THE PERKINS FAMILY.—Crowell's "History of Essex," on pages 130 and 255, is in error in giving the name of William Perkins as that of the first ancestor in Ipswich, of those of that surname in Essex. John Perkins, Sr., was their primitive ancestor in this country.

The mistake is noted here, let it be distinctly understood, not in any sense or degree whatsoever, as an imputation upon the general accuracy of that meritorious work, to which every one who writes historically of this place must be indebted for valuable information, the result of careful and conscientious research.

It occurred very naturally, as the records show that a William Perkins came early in 1633, as one of the company of John Winthrop, Jr., that made the first settlement at Agawam, afterwards called Ipswich. He was a preacher, who had no family, being then a single man; and he remained only about one year, when he removed first to Roxbury, where he married Elizabeth Wotton, and subsequently to Weymouth, which he represented in the General Court, and afterwards to Gloucester, and next to Topsfield.

John Perkins came later in the same year, 1633, to Agawam, from Boston, where he had lived for about two years, having arrived there in 1631, in the same vessel with the famous Roger Williams. He came from Newent in Gloucestershire in England; whereas the Rev. Wm. Perkins came, in 1632, from London.

This William left a few descendants in Topsfield; but most of the surname in that town and all who came from that place to Essex, were descendants of John, 1st, whose son Thomas, went from Ipswich to Topsfield, and about 1640 married Phebe, daughter of Zachariah Gould.

Dr. George A. Perkins, of Salem; Horatio N. Perkins, of Melrose; and Frederick B. Perkins, of Hartford, Conn., have collated and arranged authentic lists of his posterity. Horatio N. Perkins has the original manuscript of his last will and testament and his ancient Bible.

His descendants are very numerous, especially in this State and Connecticut, many of them highly distinguished in the learned professions and successful in business pursuits. One of them, Dr. Elisha Perkins, of Plainfield, Conn., was the inventor of the famous "metallic tractors," consisting of two small pointed rods, one of steel and one of brass, used for curing or alleviating rheumatism, sprains, etc., by touching with the points the pained limb or spot. About the beginning of this century, the use of them occasioned a great furor, some zealously approving and others violently opposing. Their discoverer and proprietor had anticipated, by many years, the

magnetic shields, rings, belts, and other appliances of the present time, for the relief of similar ailments. Dr. Perkins was grandfather of Hon. George P. Marsh, of Vermont, the distinguished scholar and diplomat, for some time Minister to Italy, and also to Turkey.

ON ANCESTRAL ACRES.—Miles S., Elias and Elihu Burritt Andrews are living on land purchased by one of their ancestors, Joseph Andrews, in 1678, of John Cogswell, who was a descendant of John, the first settler; from whom they are also descended, through Hannah Cogswell, whose daughter, Rachel Burnham, married the Joseph Andrews above mentioned.

Among others who are living on land which has been owned in the family between two and three centuries, are the family of the late Winthrop Low, Jonathan Cogswell and the family of the late Albert Cogswell, and persons of the names of Andrews, Burnham, Low and Story, too numerous to specify.

RUFUS CHOATE, LL.D.—The older portion of those who may chance to read these pages remember more or less of the brilliant career of this remarkable man, though more than a quarter of a century has elapsed since he passed away. I shall not, by attempting anything like an elaborate delineation of him, seek to "add another hue unto the rainbow," but beyond a brief summary of his personal history, shall merely note a few points and characteristics, chiefly from my own observation.

He and Judge Joseph Story, of the United States Supreme Court, professor at Harvard Law School, and eminent authority in jurisprudence, had a common ancestor in Reginald Foster, who came from England in 1638. He was born in this place, October 1, 1799; graduated at Dartmouth College at the age of twenty, and studied at the Harvard Law School, and in the office of Judge Cummings, of Salem, and afterwards at Washington for a year, with the distinguished William Wirt, United States Attorney General.

Mr. Wirt resided then in a house still standing in Washington, in G Street, opposite the United States Signal Service office, (head-quarters of "Old Probabilities,") and near the War Department. The edifice, in recent years, has been occupied as an Asylum for Soldiers' Orphans. Often, in passing the building, have I thought of Choate, Chief Justice Salmon P. Chase and other law-students of Mr. Wirt, who afterwards became distinguished.

His practice at the bar extended over a period of thirty-five years, from the opening of an office in Danvers, in 1824, to his decease, in 1859. He represented that town in the Legislature, and one year was a member of the State Senate. He removed in a few years to Salem, and in 1832 was elected to the United States House of Representatives. Declining to serve a second term in Congress he removed, in 1834, to



Boston. He was a Senator of the United States from 1841 to 1845, filling an unexpired term of Daniel Webster, who was Secretary of State in the cabinets of Presidents Harrison and Tyler. He also occupied for some years the honorary position of Regent of the Smithsonian Institute. He was once Attorney General of Massachusetts, and was a member of the State Constitutional Convention of 1853. These comprise all the official positions at any time held by him. In these he evinced distinguished ability; but his fame rests chiefly upon his wonderful achievements as an advocate at the bar, and in orations and addresses upon special occasions.

1. He owed nothing whatever at the outset of his legal career, to adventitious aids or circumstances, but made his way solely by force of his own genius and ability,—those of his family name who had in some instances been distinguished, having been principally of the colonial days, and at a remove of at least two, or even three and four generations.

2. An eloquent pleader and fascinating orator, he was at the same time a profound lawyer, a combination not always met with even in men of distinction at the bar. If there was anything in law which he did not know, it was probably not worth knowing.

3. His rhetoric was peculiar. As I recall the unique, picturesque, and sometimes gorgeous sentences in some of his speeches, I think of the song of Ariel, in the Tempest:

"Nothing of him that doth fade,  
But doth suffer a sea-change  
Into something rich and strange."

How apt was the allusion to the aged whiteman of New Bedford, as "tired out with the chase of his gigantic game!"

He had a faculty for saying things which nobody else said, which would at once attract attention and be widely commented on and remembered. One instance was his saying, in an address before the New England Society of New York City, forty years ago, on the anniversary of the landing of the Pilgrims, that they founded here "a State without a king, and a Church without a Bishop." Some will doubtless recollect the animated discussion which took place soon afterwards between two prominent divines, Rev. Drs. Potts and Wainwright, one a Presbyterian and the other an Episcopalian—one contending that there *could* be, and the other that there *could not* be, a true church without a bishop. The disputation was reiterated by the religious press of this country and of England, and the secular journals had a good time over it in a less serious vein. Very funny also was the device of a storekeeper on Broadway in that city, who suspended a cage, containing a parrot, upon each side of his doorway, after having trained the loquacious birds to participate in the controversy—one exclaiming, "There can be a church without a bishop," and the other energetically retorting, "There *cannot* be a church without a bishop."

His copious vocabulary, like his chirography, was occasionally the subject of good-natured, jocose allusions, which he enjoyed as much as did others. Horace Mann related to me that one day when he was present at the Supreme Court, in Boston, during a temporary recess, one of the lawyers mentioned, incidentally, that a new edition of Webster's Quarto Dictionary was about to appear, containing seventeen thousand new words. Chief Justice Shaw, whose eyes had been closed, apparently in a drowse, groaned and with mock gravity said, "I hope Rufus Choate won't get hold of it!"

4. His nationality, and his belief that to the question of the maintenance of the Union all else should be subordinate, which in his time were criticized in some quarters as ultra-conservatism, were somewhat differently judged after the late Civil War broke out. When the war-cloud was gathering, before the storm had actually burst upon the country, Mr. Seward took substantially the same position in his last speech in the Senate, just before he took his seat in Lincoln's Cabinet, when he said, "Republicanism is nothing, Democracy is nothing, in the presence of the Union." Choate, years before, had said in a speech, "We stand by the shipping articles and the ship, the whole voyage round. We go for the Union to the last beat of the pulse and the last drop of blood." I presume no one doubts that had he lived until the Rebellion, he would have stood with Everett, whose position previously had been the same as his. His utterances had contributed to strengthen and deepen that intense devotion to the Union which nerved millions of American people to sustain it by sacrifice and treasure, through the tremendous struggle. As it was with the son and grandson of Webster, so was it with the son and representative of Choate. His son and a son-in-law marched at the country's call, and the son incurred in the exposures of the service the malady that shortened his days. In the battle of Cedar Mountain, he stood shoulder to shoulder with comrades when several of his company were killed and others fell wounded.

Choate was at heart always anti-slavery. This is evident from some of his private correspondence, in which he could not reasonably be accused of saying anything for public effect. When Edward Everett was in the Senate, he said to him, in a private letter, under date of February 4, 1854, "We hope you may defeat the further extension of slavery, on grounds and by reasoning that will not lose you one American heart or judgment anywhere." In another strictly private letter to the same person, under date of November 17, 1857, he wrote thus in reference to President Buchanan, whom he had materially aided to elect: "I entreat you to give him and all conservative men an idea of a patriot administration. KANSAS MUST BE FREE—*sua sponte*—and the nation kept quiet and honest, yet with a certain sense of growth, nor unmindful of opportunities of glory."





5. His estimable personal qualities won the friendship of all who knew him. He was always unpretending, free from hauteur, accessible and genial. He was modest in his estimate of himself, and especially moderate in his charges for his professional services. President Brown, in his biography of him, says that his largest fee in any one case was \$2,500, and his largest retainer \$1,500; the largest amount of receipts in any one year was a little more than \$22,000; average for the last eleven years of his life, nearly \$18,000; and in one year only did they fall below \$13,000.

The late Hon. Matthew H. Carpenter, the brilliant lawyer of the West, and United States Senator from Wisconsin, used to speak with emotion of Mr. Choate's kindness to him, when, poor and unknown, he came from Vermont to Boston, and applied for admission to his office as a law-student. Although he had already as many students as his rooms would accommodate, he took him into his own room, bestowed upon him every attention, and when he started to begin a career at the West, he supplied him with money without solicitation or even intimation. This Mr. Carpenter promptly repaid as soon as able to do so. In some other cases, however, his generosity and good nature were imposed upon.

6. What may interest the people of this town, perhaps, as much as anything else concerning him personally, is the fond attachment he manifested for his native place. How naturally, when in the U.S. Senate, he expressed this sentiment in a letter to his son, then a little boy, at school in Essex. After telling him how warm the weather was, in the month of May, in Washington, where the grass was then mown and roses were in bloom, he added: "Give me the sun of Essex, however, I say, for all this. One half hour, tell grandmother, under those cherished button-woods, is worth a month under these insufferable fervors." Similar associations and memories were uppermost in his mind, only a short time before he died. He had for some time been an invalid; and in hope to regain health, he took passage, with his son, in a steamer, for Europe. On arriving at Halifax, he was too ill to proceed any further; and so he tarried there, intending, as soon as sufficiently recovered, to return to Boston. Only the day before his death, he considered himself better and gaining; and the surgeon of the Admiral's flagship of the British fleet then on that station, who had been called in, expressed himself encouragingly. But a little before two o'clock, the next morning, July 13, 1859, he ceased to breathe. In reply to a question, his last words were, that he felt very faint. An autopsy revealed that his death was due to granular dissolution of the kidneys, commonly called Bright's disease.

Nothing could be more touching than his conversation in his last hours, as thus recorded by his son: "He talked much of home, making little plans about the best way of getting there; talked of sending for

his family to come to him, but thought he should recruit so soon that it would be of no use; *talked about Essex, of wanting to go down there, and having a boat built for him, discussing her size and rig.*"

He who had held juries spell-bound, and charmed multitudes, thought, not at this time of courts or listening crowds, but tenderly recalled the scenes of his old home, the ancient town where he drew his first breath.

HON. DAVID CHOATE.—The experiences of this distinguished native and life-long resident were so interwoven with the affairs of the inhabitants, both civil and religious, that a personal sketch of him is a legitimate part of the history of the town. As surveyor, conveyancer, adjuster of estates, and adviser, his services were often in requisition; and his educational influence upon the place was greater, as a whole, than that of any other person, the recollection of him being ineffaceable from the minds of the large number, of both sexes, still living, who were among his pupils.

While firm and steadfast in adherence to his deliberately formed and cherished opinions, he was every mindful of the amenities of social life; and in his personal intercourse with any and all of those who entertained differing convictions, he never forgot to be a gentleman.

The elder brother of Rufus, he was born in the ancient house on the island, November 29, 1796, and was married, January 14, 1828, to Elizabeth, daughter of Col. Thomas Wade, of Ipswich. They had six children, of whom the following survive: Dr. David Choate, of Salem, Hannah, principal of one of the public schools in that city, Rufus and William C., who reside in Essex, and Rev. Washington Choate, pastor at Irvington-on-the-Hudson, N. Y.

He was a descendant, in the sixth generation, from John Choate, who came to this country in 1645, and also from John Perkins, 1st, George Giddings, John Procter 1st, Reginald Foster, and Thomas Varney.

*As a Teacher.*—As an instructor Mr. Choate was in his native element. He had not only a due appreciation of the dignity of this vocation, which he followed nearly thirty years, but he had a sympathetic and devoted attachment to it. He performed its duties not in a merely perfunctory manner; his heart was always in it. He gave to it more hours of preparation, labor, care and solicitude than any contract would require, and throughout his long career in this calling, he rendered vastly more than an equivalent for any remuneration. He was never a hireling who careth not for the flock. He shrank from no extra toil or effort to assist and encourage those of his pupils who might wish to gain knowledge beyond the established routine of school-studies in his time. He was the first in the town to introduce the study of Astronomy, which he made especially attractive.

He invited all who desired to learn some of its





sublime facts to meet at the school-house on cloudless evenings, when the starry host appeared undimmed; where, without fee or reward, he would, with the aid of a geography of the heavens and celestial maps, spend hours, first in familiar descriptive lecturing, and afterwards out of doors, pointing out the different constellations, explaining their geometric relations to each other and their mythological signification. He also imparted, in the same practical way, a knowledge of surveying and mensuration, in which he was an expert. A lady has often recalled how, in happy girlhood, she learned to designate readily every constellation above the horizon at any hour or season, and also how she had learned to find with exactness the area of any plat of ground, however irregular its shape or outlines.

His school, in educational advantages, had the status of an academy. He introduced illustrative apparatus and other appliances to aid in promoting the advancement of the scholars. His interest in educational matters extended beyond the periphery of his school. He was one of the originators of the Essex County Teachers' Association, and for years one of its most efficient members; and while chairman of the committee on education in the higher branch of the Legislature, he introduced, and carried through, some beneficial and important educational measures. He received an invitation to become the principal of the State Normal School at Albany, which he declined from apprehension that his impaired health would not warrant his assuming the charge of so responsible and laborious a position.

*As a Writer.*—Mr. Choate was facile and easy, having ready command of the most appropriate words for every occasion. He was never dull nor obscure, but always animated and translucent in his style; and he wrote as well upon one topic as upon another. His contributions to Crowell's completed town history, are favorable specimens of his literary manner. His descriptions, especially of the successive efforts and successive failures to procure railroad facilities, are pervaded by natural and genuine humor; and his chapter upon the transactions of the town relative to the late Civil War is, in more than one particular, very remarkable. Written when he was considerably past the age of seventy years, there is no falling off from the freshness and vivacity of his earlier days. To collect and methodically arrange the statistical details of enlistments and terms of service, and accompany them with personal descriptions more or less extended, of one hundred and forty-three soldiers, obtained in part from their oral statements, with occasional extracts from their correspondence and private journals, and make it all readable and attractive, could not have been a diminutive labor.

*As a Public Speaker.*—He was animated, sympathetic and interesting, and at times eloquent; and in an argument on a practical subject, he could be very

forceful and convincing. A prominent instance of this kind was his speech before the county commissioners in behalf of the petitioners for a new road (now Martin Street), which the voters at a town-meeting, by a large majority, had refused to lay out, on account of taxation. The writer of this, who was one of the petitioners, heard the speech, and thought it one of the clearest, most compact and telling array of facts and figures, with the most cogent arguments based upon them, that he had ever previously listened to in any discussion of projected public improvements, and he had had opportunities of listening to arguments upon practical questions before legislative committees, when the counsel on each side were attorneys of large experience and much repute.

If Mr. Choate had chosen the profession of the law, and established himself in some large town or city, under the stimulus of varied practice, in attrition with opposing counsel, and in the widened sphere of the courts, he would, I have no doubt, have arisen to distinction as an attorney. He did, in some instances, conduct cases in court as counsel.

*A Remark upon Lightning.*—In 1856, two persons having been killed by lightning in this town, in two separate thunder-storms, within one week, a proposition was made in a Congregational parish-meeting, to have a lightning-rod placed upon the meeting-house. A very sincere member arose and objected to it, saying that it might seem like defying Providence, as he thought that lightning went only where it was sent. Mr. Choate arose and said that the Bible taught that God "sends the rain," but, notwithstanding this, we hold up umbrellas to keep it off our heads.

*As Civil Magistrate.*—He served for a long series of years; first as justice of the peace, then justice of the peace and quorum, and later as trial justice; in the latter office conducting many trials in Gloucester, before the establishment of a Police Court there.

*In Agriculture.*—In youth and early manhood he had his father's farms to care for, and throughout life retained his interest in agricultural affairs. He wrote essays and reports upon the culture of various products, and was for some time vice-president and trustee of the Essex County Agricultural Society, attending its meetings and frequently taking part in its discussions. In 1860 he wrote an agricultural and geological survey of Essex County, which was printed among the transactions of the Massachusetts Society for the promotion of Agriculture.

*Various Offices.*—To the civil and ecclesiastical public positions held by Mr. Choate, at various times, he seemed to have gravitated naturally, being drawn to them by the desire of his neighbors and townsmen, and his associates in the various organizations of which he was a member. He served in both branches of the State Legislature, and the church, of which he was more than forty years a deacon, often delegated him to represent it in councils, at ordinations and on other occasions; and he was Superin-



tendent of the Sunday-School for many years. He was, for some time, a trustee of Dunmer Academy, and also of the Mount Holyoke Female Seminary at Hadley, of which latter he was an early and efficient friend and patron. He was in succession corresponding secretary, vice-president and president of the Essex County Teachers' Association. He was repeatedly chosen town clerk and town treasurer, and was for a long time an efficient member of the School Committee, and often its chairman.

*As a Musician.*—Having a fondness for music, he became a skillful performer upon more than one instrument, and did much to encourage and promote musical culture in the church choir, and in the town. Those who ever heard him play St. Martin's, on the flute, at the evening meetings in the old chapel, in the years so long gone by, will remember that restful and devotional melody.

*Personal and General.*—Mr. Choate was free from envy. The success of others, in any walk or sphere of life, seemed always to give him unalloyed pleasure, more especially if they had risen under adverse circumstances and by their own energy and perseverance. He had an admiration for eloquence, learning and intellectual ability, which he cordially recognized and acknowledged, whether in his own sect or party or in that of another. Horace Mann's educational reports he considered models in that line, and I remember on one occasion how charmed he was by the brilliant oratory of Burlingame. He was a most agreeable social companion, and enjoyed interchange of thought with those of kindred literary tastes. Once only did I ever know his equanimity to be disturbed or jostled. He was an admirer of the writings of Cowper; and at the time referred to he had just read, among some literary criticisms by a noted American writer, a depreciatory remark concerning the works of that gentle and contemplative poet. It was unjust, though half jocose, and its author, quite probably, as other brilliant men have done in regard to other authors, made the observation inconsiderately; for it would seem incongruous that one so tenderly susceptible as the critic himself was, at times, could for once seem to speak indifferently of him who wrote the lines to his mother's picture commencing, "O that those lips had language." Elizabeth Barrett Browning's tribute to him is profoundly and sympathetically appreciative.

Mr. Choate always felt a deep and hearty interest in everything pertaining to the welfare of the town. He was one of the original projectors of the branch railroad, and performed much gratuitous labor in connection with surveys to ascertain the most practicable route and in urging the importance of the enterprise upon his townsmen, as well as having the subject presented to the Legislature, on applying for a charter. When these cumulative efforts had at length, in 1872, culminated in the successful completion of the road, to no one were the sounds of the bell

and the whistle of the locomotive more welcome than to him. On the 1st of July of that year, when the road was opened to the public, he was able only to ride in his carriage to the Falls station, where he entered a car of the first train from Wenham, and came in it to the terminus of the road. Although of advanced age and feeble, he was, in relation to this enterprise, the fortunate Simeon, who, while others "died without the sight," had full realization of his long-expected vision, surviving the event until the 17th day of the following December.

*CAPT. PARKER BURNHAM.*—This veteran ship-master, who as youth and man sailed the seas for thirty years, and lived until 1871, when he had attained the age of four-score and ten, was in one particular unparalleled,—building, as he did, in 1811, and owning, the largest vessel which at that date had ever been built here, and then sailing in her for five consecutive years as captain, making voyages to Lisbon, and to various ports in the Mediterranean, with which he became as familiarly acquainted as with Boston harbor. He became one of the most skillful and trusted navigators of his time, sailing in the employ of the Sargents and other prominent merchants of Boston. He was never shipwrecked, and never met with disaster of any kind, though he experienced many terrific gales and tempests.

His crews attributed his good luck in this respect to the fact that he never procrastinated in his preparations for bad weather, giving orders instantly to reef all sails at the first portent of a violent storm, so that when it reached his ship he was ready for it. This promptness and punctuality continued through his life, enabling him sometimes to turn to advantage what delay might have made a business reverse. As we used to say of him, when on a business errand, he always took passage by the first boat.

His retirement from a sea-faring life was occasioned or at least hastened by a singular circumstance, which, to himself as to others, was always a wonder and a puzzle. He had been growing somewhat weary of life on the ocean, and had about concluded to become permanently a landsman; but yielding to the earnest solicitation of his employers, he had consented to go one voyage more. He had his sea-chest sent aboard, and the ship waited only for a fair wind. On entering the cabin, however, he felt suddenly a presentiment that if he sailed then he would never return. The impression was so strong that at the last moment, his engagement was, with the reluctant acquiescence of the owners, cancelled. Another captain was procured, and the ship started on her voyage; but neither she nor the crew were ever afterwards heard from!

After retiring from the sea, he engaged for many years in ship-building. He was the first of the builders in the town to discontinue the custom of furnishing rum to the workmen at luncheon. He was led to do this from a single circumstance. He





observed that an apprentice-boy was eager for the luncheon-hour, and drank his ration of liquor, each day, with an apparently increasing relish. He proposed to the men that if they would acquiesce in the change, he would add the cost of the rum to their wages, and furnish hot coffee as a substitute. They all promptly assented.

He was a person of great equanimity, and no losses in business ever deprived him of a night's sleep. One instance will serve as an illustration. He had sold a new vessel, entirely on credit, to Coolidge, Head and Poor, an apparently prosperous business firm, in Boston. Soon afterwards, they made a disastrous failure, and he lost the entire debt of several thousand dollars. He had then recently bought a horse which had been recommended to him as a first-class steed, with which he started, in a carriage, for Boston, to ascertain if there was a chance of recovering anything. He found that everything was swamped, and his loss was total and absolute. On reaching Salem, upon his return, his horse dropped dead. The first question asked him on his arrival home, was, "What luck?" He answered, "Coolidge, Head and Poor old horse have all gone together." He was never known to mention the subject afterwards, unless questioned about it.

He was of the most transparent truthfulness and integrity, and the white line of personal honor in his soul was never even faintly overshadowed. In his religion he was a Universalist, in the best sense of that term. An over-zealous but unquestionably well-meaning person once solemnly said to him, "Captain Burnham, have you made your peace with God?" He quietly replied, "I was never at war with Him."

As an instance of his good will and freedom from resentment, his compassionate treatment of one who had done him an unprovoked injury, is worth recording. A most unwarrantable and vexatious civil suit was brought against him for alleged trespass upon premises which he had sold, but over which, in the express language of the deed of conveyance, he had reserved a right of way. He won the suit, as defendant, the jury visiting the spot, and having the deed before them. On some technical point, a new trial was granted, in which he again won the case. The plaintiff then appealed to the Supreme Court, on a point of law; but that tribunal sustained the double decision of the lower court.

The plaintiff subsequently had continuous ill luck in business, and finally became dissipated, and removed to Boston, where he lived some years in needy circumstances. Captain Burnham met him in the street there one day, and he looked so forlorn and gaunt that he cordially invited him to the hotel where he was stopping and gave him a dinner, which he ate with the avidity of one half-famished. Over-

come by the kindness of the man he had wronged years before, he broke down with emotion, cried like a child, and declared that he would never have brought the suit if he had not been "put up to it." It was the offspring of envy.

That chivalric gentleman, the late Hon. Leverett Saltonstall, who conducted the case all through as counsel for the defendant, declared to him that the suit was the most outrageously unjust of any that he had known in his practice; and when the captain handed to him his fee, Mr. Saltonstall took from it a considerable sum and returned it, positively refusing to accept the whole amount.

Captain Burnham was a descendant of Thomas, second of the three Burnham brothers, early settlers. He was also descended by two lines of ancestry from John Perkins, first, whose daughter Lydia married Henry Bennett, ancestor of Captain Burnham's mother, Hannah Bennett; and one of whose later descendants, Elizabeth Perkins, became the wife of David Burnham, first, who was Captain Burnham's great-grandfather.

THE ANDREWS FAMILY.—From all that can be authentically learned, the progenitor of all of this surname in Essex was John Andrews, a first cousin of the original three Burnham brothers and a son of Captain Robert Andrews, who commanded the ship "Angel Gabriel," wrecked at Pemaquid in 1635.

It is not improbable that he may have been a kinsman of another Robert Andrews, who was in Ipswich as early as May 6, 1635, when he was made freeman, and of that still other Robert, at one time living in Topsfield, who was killed in King Philip's war. There were also two persons of the name of John Andrews in Ipswich, who in 1648 subscribed to pay Major Dennison for military instruction, one signing himself John, Sr., and the other John, Jr. What relationship, if any, they may have borne to John, son of Captain Robert, does not appear in any record that I have seen.

John Andrews, of Chebacco, was lieutenant of a military company here in 1683. He was the one who was fined and imprisoned with Rev. John Wise and others, for opposing the usurpation of Governor Andros. He died in 1709, leaving a widow named Judith, with four sons, John, William, Thomas and Joseph; and a daughter Elizabeth, who married James Giddings. He appointed "William Giddings of Jebacco" executor of his will.

I have a copy of the will of his father, Captain Robert Andrews, dated March 1, 1642, from the original on file at the office of the Registry of Deeds in Salem; in which he refers to his eldest son John as "yet under age." If he was then twenty years old, he was about fifty-five when appointed on a committee to confer with the authorities of Ipswich relative to being allowed to have a preacher in Chebacco. On page 46 of Professor Crowell's bi-centennial address, his age at that time is given as 60.

<sup>1</sup>This incident was related to me by the late Abner Burnham, Jr., who in early life was one of his sailors, and was afterwards employed in his shipyard.



Numerous inaccuracies and discrepancies of this sort are frequent in the early records, where in some instances they are probably given as approximations merely, so that they do not affect any general accuracy of statement.

THE BURNHAMS.—These are too numerous to be particularized to any considerable extent. The branches of the families of Seth, Josiah, Andrew, the centenarian, Abel, &c., are descendants from the first John; most of the rest are from the first Thomas. In the "Burnham Genealogy" they are given in minute detail.

THE CHOATE FAMILY.—John Choate, the first of the surname in Chelacco, came here, it is believed, in 1645, at the age of about twenty-one years.<sup>1</sup> He was from Sudbury, or its neighborhood, in Suffolk, near the boundary of Essex County, England. The tradition is, that his house stood within a few rods southeast of the spot where that of the late John Low now stands or formerly stood. His wife's first name was Anne, but her surname is unknown. He died December 4, 1695, at the age of about seventy-one. His wife survived him till 1729, reaching the age of ninety.

They had several children. Of these, John, the eldest, was a deacon. He had six sons and two daughters. Thomas settled upon Hog Island, where he had four sons and five daughters. Benjamin was a clergyman.

Of Thomas' children, John became very distinguished; he was a colonel in the French and English war; was fifteen years a member of the General Court; was chosen Speaker, but the election was annulled for political reasons by Governor Belcher, under a power that officer then had; but he was, under another Governor, an executive counsellor for six years. His advice was often sought in matters ecclesiastical, as well as civil, being a prominent member of the South Church in Ipswich. He planned and superintended the construction of the stone bridge, in 1764, at Ipswich Centre, where he resided. He was, no doubt, an uncommon man. It is said that he used to wear a scarlet cloak, and at his side a silver-hilted sword, in accordance, probably, with an old English custom. He was for some years judge of Probate, and judge of the Court of Common Pleas.

Thomas' daughter Mary, who married Parker Dodge, of Hamilton, was mother of John Cleveland's first wife. Rachel, his seventh child and third daughter, was ancestress of the writer.

Thomas' son Francis was a ruling elder in Mr. Cleveland's church. His wife was Hannah Perkins, a descendant of John Perkins, (1st.) They had eight

children. Their daughter Hannah Choate married Rufus Lothrop, and it was probably in compliment to him that her nephew, David Choate, (1st), gave his son, the eminent advocate, the name Rufus. Lothrop was living in Connecticut as late as 1795, only four years before Rufus Choate's birth, and probably later. He is referred to in Cleveland's army journal at Ticonderoga, where he says: "I received a letter from my dear friend Rufus Lothrop."

Francis' son William was a sea captain, as well as farmer on Hog Island. He was father of David, (1st), and grandfather of Rufus. He had also sons George, William and Job. Descendants of Job are living in Washington, D. C., children of Warren, who died there, in 1876, at the age of seventy-seven, leaving a widow, four sons and two daughters. His son, Dr. Rufus, is in the practice of medicine in Herndon, Va.

Stephen Choate, son of Lieutenant Thomas, Jr., and grandson of Captain Thomas, was for many years a deacon of Mr. Cleveland's church. He was for several terms Representative to the General Court, and also a State Senator. He married, as his second wife, Widow Elizabeth Potter, my great-grandmother, who was his first cousin, and by whom he had four children. Her daughter by her first husband, Elizabeth Potter, who became the wife of Abner Day, long a deacon of the South Church in Ipswich, was my grandmother; and the fact that here she resided in her girlhood, and here attended church and school, and the circumstance that my mother was born at Ipswich Farms, not very far from the Chelacco line, as well as my long residence here, where my children were born, would seem to identify me personally with this place almost as fully as if I had been a native of Essex, instead of originating in the neighboring town of Beverly.

There are now residing in Essex but four adult males of the name of Choate, viz.: Francis and John C., sons of our late prominent and respected citizen, John Choate; and Rufus and William C., sons of the late Hon. David. Many of the Choate lineage, however, both male and female, of various other surnames, are still inhabitants of the town.

THE GOODHUES.—In 1636, Rev. Nathaniel Rogers, who had been a minister in Assington, England, came to Boston, and in 1638 settled as pastor in Ipswich, Mass.; and soon afterwards he was followed by seventeen others who had been members of his church in England, including William Goodhue and Robert Lord, ancestor of the late Judge Otis P. Lord.

The former is alluded to in the Ipswich records as "William Goodhue, weaver." He became deacon of the first church in Ipswich, as did also his son Joseph. He was married four times: 1st, to Margery Watson; 2d, to Mary Webb; 3d, to Bethiah, widow of Captain Thomas Lothrop, of Beverly, killed at Bloody Brook; and 4th, to Widow Remember Fisk, of Wenham. The maiden name of his third wife was Bethiah Rea, and she was of the same lineage as

<sup>1</sup> There is a tradition (how authentic, I am unable to say) that he came to this country, when a child, with his father, and that they lived awhile in Newbury.

It is supposed that his father was the "goodman Choate" mentioned, as one desiring to emigrate to this country, in a letter to John Winthrop, Jr., sent from England as early as 1633, by Rev. Henry Dune.





my great-great-grandmother Prince, whose maiden name was Sarah Rea. As I trace the relationship, the Bethiah mentioned was her aunt.

William Goodhue died at the age of eighty-five, in 1699 or 1700, leaving two sons, William and Joseph, and a daughter Mary, who married Thomas Giddings. These children were all by his first wife.

*The Essex Goodhues.*—The son William settled in Chebacco, and became deacon of the church here. He married Hannah, daughter of Rev. Francis Dane, of Andover, and granddaughter of John Dane, Sr., who came from England with his sons, John, Jr., and Francis. John Dane, Sr., was an ancestor of the celebrated Nathan Dane; so that all the descendants of William Goodhue, of Essex, are of the same lineage as that of the distinguished jurist. William and Hannah (Dane) Goodhue had five sons and five daughters. The fourth son, Francis, graduated at Harvard College, and became a clergyman, settling at Jamaica, L. I. He died suddenly in 1707, while on a journey, at the age of thirty-five.

This was the William Goodhue who was fined and imprisoned by Governor Andros, with his pastor, Rev. John Wise, and others. Felt, a conscientious and generally accurate historian, is in error in supposing that it was his father, of Ipswich, who was thus persecuted.

This William Goodhue, jr., was selectman, and for several years member of the General Court. He was also a military captain. He lived on what is now the Marshall Farm, on Western Avenue, at the bend of the road, where he died in 1712. His son John lived till 1773, when he was eighty-seven years and five months old.

**THE STORY FAMILY.**—From all that I have discovered, by such records as I could obtain access to, I believe that all the families of the name of Story in Essex descended from William Story, who came, in 1637, from Norwich, England, the same place from which came the first Burnhams.

Some have supposed that a portion of the Story residents of this place descended from Andrew Story, the early immigrant, who served in the Pequot War. This, I think, is a mistake. I do not find any proof that he lived here for any length of time, if at all, after the close of his service in that conflict. I can find no record of his having had a family here, nor of his having been married. It is said that he went to Connecticut, and never returned. Though he had a land-grant for his military service, I have seen no record that he took up or improved any land hereabout.

William Story is thought by some to have been a brother of the first Andrew mentioned. Although this is not improbable, I have not found any positive assertion to that effect in any early record. He came to this country about two years after the arrival of Andrew.

Of William Story the record is clear that he mar-

ried Sarah Foster, daughter of Reginald Foster, who came to Ipswich in 1638, one year after he himself had arrived. He was the first ancestor, in this country, of the distinguished Judge Story. Reginald Foster was a lineal ancestor of Miriam Foster, mother of Rufus and David Choate.\*

William Story was an extensive land-owner in Chebacco. He bought of Henry Archer, of Ipswich, a farm of ninety acres "beyond Chebacco Falls." The deed of conveyance was signed by said Archer and his wife, Elizabeth, May 10, 1649. This probably included what is now known as the farm of the late Captain David Low. He also owned land elsewhere in this place, bounded in part by Belcher's Lane, embracing the premises of the late Adoniram Story, and extending to the river.

He had three sons, Andrew, Seth and William, who are mentioned in his will; in which it is said that the price for which William sold to Andrew one-half of Perley's meadow, was a just price.

He is believed by some of his descendants to have built the first saw-mill in Chebacco, in 1656, which is said to have been the first erected anywhere within the town of Ipswich. Two circumstances render this probable: he was by trade a carpenter, and he had bought the farm "beyond the Falls" seven years before that date.

ADDISON COGSWELL, a lineal descendant in the 8th generation from John Cogswell, the first permanent settler of Essex, is a son of William and Lucy (Choate) Cogswell, was born November 11, 1815, in Essex, Mass., and married Miss Elvira Dike, of Montague, Mass., January 6, 1886.

He is by occupation a farmer, and resides in Essex. His educational opportunities were limited to about twelve weeks annually in a district school, in which reading, writing, arithmetic and a partial initiation in grammar and natural philosophy, constituted the curriculum.

He has a taste for reading, with a preference for the solid rather than for the lighter kinds, and is a man of much and varied information, being specially well posted upon subjects of public interest.

Prompted by the spirit of business enterprise and a desire to promote the prosperity and welfare of the town and its people, he was led to associate himself with others like-minded in building an extensive saw and planing-mill,—which, so far, has not proved as successful as was desired. Mr. Moses Knowlton, a substantial and reliable citizen, joined with him in building an extensive shoe-factory, at great cost and risk, for the purpose of introducing the shoe-business into the town. This has met with such a measure of success as abundantly compensates for the risk and anxiety incurred in its introduction.

His energy and perseverance have since been directed through another channel, in part auxiliary to the enterprise last-mentioned, but also of much wider scope in the public benefit conferred. Through his







Addison Cogswell



personal exertions and the investment of his capital, in association with others who joined earnestly in the movement, the track of the Essex Branch Railroad, which for fifteen years has been such an advantage to the town as a whole, has been extended to the village on the south side of the river, its terminus being near the shoe-factory,—thus affording additional accommodation to the people residing in that locality and beyond it.

One trait in Mr. Cogswell's character may have been inherited from an ancestress (Mrs. Thomas Varney), who, in 1679, in common with others, desired the presence and privileges of a place of public worship in this parish or precinct. But their own church in Ipswich and the Great Court at Boston forbade them to do so preposterous a thing as to rear a meeting-house. They, however, having the fear of God, but not of Ipswich and the Great Court, before their eyes, did deliberately and with pertinacious audacity raise the First Church in Essex. This honored ancestress was arrested, and charged with, and tried for, contempt of great and mighty powers. She was doomed to acknowledge this, her great sin. Having secured the church, and there being no occasion for another, she very humbly promised to "doe see no more."

This possibly inherited characteristic has manifested itself in his steadfast adhesion to whatever he believes to be right and just, in all matters of either public or private concern, wherein anything like principle seems to him to be involved, whatever may be the opinions or conclusions of others.

He is a gentleman of spotless integrity and personal honor, who has the respect and confidence of the entire community, and to whom may be truthfully applied the proverbial declaration that his word is as good as his bond.

His training and reading, together with his own reflections, have led to convictions upon theological subjects, which are decidedly of the Calvinistic type. The lasting influence of early training, in the older mode, and perhaps also the force of heredity, may be seen, on reading the following, which is one of Mr. Cogswell's criticisms:

#### "OUR MOTTOES.

"One of our mottoes, 'Simply to Thy Cross I Cling,' is a simple, concise and comprehensive sentence, representing one of our oldest and best known hymns. Adopting the motto is adopting the hymn. Its words and its images are the things which Christian thought has taken. It is a Christian classic. It is founded on the Rock of Ages, and will endure.

"The motto is the hymn condensed; the amplification of the motto is in the hymn. It is the prayer of a suppliant; leprosy has made him an outcast from his Father's house and is consuming his life;—to remain as he is, is death. To elude his own cure, he is helpless. To purchase healing, his zeal and tears are valueless. He despairs of help, save from One. He sees above him the Cross, and on it One who points him to the Rock on which he may rest, to the Cliff in which he may hide from the Avenger, to the blood which will cleanse him, and to the robe which will clothe him for, and to the Dayman who will present him in, his Father's presence, and to the Cross he clings with all the energy that a dread of death, and a hope of life can awaken.

"It is an effective educator. Pliny relates that 'the Christians were accustomed to meet on a stated day, and to repeat among themselves a

hymn to Christ, as to a God.' All who accept and repeat this, will receive the appellation of Christian, and will be known to address Christ as God. It will carry an adequate knowledge of Him wherever it goes. He is its Alpha and Omega. Its doctrines are the mold in which Christian character is formed, and it will form a character which will be recognized as a likeness of Him.

"In juxtaposition to this, we have another, 'Nearer my God to Thee.' This is also a concise sentence, representing another hymn, one of a more modern date. It is a candidate for, and is receiving much favor. It is a religious, not a Christian hymn. To adopt this motto is to adopt its related hymn. It is the prayer of an aspirant. He is not an outcast. He needs no Cliff to hide him from the Avenger. He has no leprous disqualifications requiring costly blood. It is not death to remain as he is,—he needs no mediator; he is in favor with God, and is raising himself to a closer fellowship, but is overweighted with some goodly but over-loved object, which 'e'en though it be a cross' to do so, he lays aside; and it becomes a stepping stone, on which he raises himself to that desired nearness. It is full of negations. Had the early Christians repeated this, and only this, Pliny, with all his acumen, would not have discovered that they addressed Christ as God, and it would have been a misnomer to have given them the appellation of Christian. It does not extend a knowledge of Him. It does not notice Him, either expressly or impliedly, or even emblematically. The lithographer has shown his skill in setting forth the spirit of each hymn, by giving the emblem of the Cross on the one, and withholding it from the other. Its doctrines will more deeply mould every feature of a self-righteous character, and self identification will be more firmly assured. Used in public worship, it passes by Him, who alone can present, and from whom alone the Father will receive our service—the only dayman allowed between God and us. 'Ye would see Jesus, look not for Him here; we know not where it has laid Him.'

"Both mottoes incite the aspiration of nearness to God, but here their likeness ends; they seek it in different ways. The first points to, and is inseparably associated with, the Living Way, the other points to, and is inseparably associated with, another way. One is drawn heavenward by Him who is lifted up. The other, self-reliantly, raises himself fartherward. The one enters by the Door; the other climbs up another way. In one, the name of Jesus is above every name, and definitives and pronouns relating to Him find a ready welcome. It is *The* or *Thy* Cross. In the other, there is no beauty in Him that he should be desired, and no room for such relatives. It is a *cross*. Paul exulted probably in the Cross, as the most glorious of ways. The other reluctantly accepts the most unwelcome of ways, 'e'en a cross.'

"Here is an anomaly:—the devout accept the first, as the way, and the only way, that God hath appointed, and yet are receiving and teaching another way—one that God hath not cast up. On hearing the aspiration, 'Nearer my God to Thee,' they are moved by its perfect accord with their own, and with minds filled with the vivid imageries of the first, pointing to Him who is the Way, we are led in spirit by one, and in word by the other;—the first is the cause, the other is the occasion, of the benefit received.

"We sing it heartily and with great satisfaction, and feel that we have made one of our most acceptable approaches to God,—shall we approach a little nearer, and ask Him, who alone can, to present, for us, this our song, in which we have studiously ignored Him? Does He, who hangs on the Cross, notice if the suppliant, who is clinging to its foot, look wistfully on any other cross?

"We sing with the spirit, and do well,—let us sing with the understanding, which is still better. The suppliant, saved, will ascribe the whiteness of his robe to blood found in the Cross. The aspirant, saved, will owe the brightness of his array to his 'having found' and passed through the fountain opened in the Cross.

"Can this good motto be dissociated from a false way? Is it misleading? Are all provided with knowledge to supply its defects? Can we follow this, and yet be loyal to the first? Can mottoes so diverse be congruous in the same temple? Or songs so diverse be appropriate to offer on the same altar? If one offers sacred, does not the other offer strange, fire? With the pointers in our school-rooms guiding different ways, will it be a surprise, if some of us are found lisping in the speech of Ashdod?"

The writer of the foregoing criticism is likewise the author of a "Lay Sermon," upon the topic of "Christian Perfection," the doctrine of which is in general





accord with the sentiments of the preceding article, and which has been printed and issued in pamphlet form.

**DESCRIPTION OF CONOMO POINT.**—This attractive summer-resort was thus graphically and facetiously described by Mr. Cogswell, in a paper read at a public entertainment given on the occasion of the enlargement of the facilities of a manufacturing enterprise of the town:

"Parties have built and are occupying a cluster of cottages on a pleasant plateau on the south bank of the Essex River, in the town of Essex. On the opposite side of the river Cross' Island rises to the height of some one hundred feet—on this shore is another cluster of cottages. The river, in its passage between these villages, is compressed within narrow limits by the rocky and jagged banks, and given a wild and rapid current, which is broken into eddies and whirlpools of cavernous and unknown depths, and is the fit abode of mermaids and mermen, of elves and sprites, and all singular genii who delight in weird abodes. Here they must have held high carnival long before its mysteries were known to the lately arrived Saxon.

"On dark evenings, when the cottages on each side are lighted, and other lights, whether carried by jack or spitter or lantern, are flitting across the river, the whole scene becomes too mysterious to be visited by young people who have precarious imaginations, unless they are attended by some who are mature in judgment and imagination."

**MISCELLANEOUS.**—The winter of 1686 was so intensely cold that several cattle in this place were frozen to death.

Houses in this place were not painted, either outside or within, until a hundred years after the first settlement in 1634.

A remarkable instance of musical precocity occurred in this town in 1859, when a child of scarcely three years of age (Martha S. P. Story, now the wife of Dr. Fancher, of Middletown, N. Y.) commenced playing, without tuition, upon a melodeon, producing, not only the air of a tune, but its accompaniment, in correct time. She played before public audiences in several towns of the county, and in Boston. The occurrence was phenomenal, and has never been explained.

Mrs. Mary H. Andrews, an accomplished and successful teacher, was the first lady in the town, if not the first in the county, chosen Superintendent of Schools or a member of the school committee.

**Essex Brass Band.** This organization of twenty performers has won encomiums from the general public and the favorable judgment of those claiming to be connoisseurs and critics in music.

**Triplets.**—Israel Andrews and his sister, Mrs. Almira Holmes, residents of Essex, and their sister, Mrs. Susan Mears, a resident of Manchester, are the only triplets ever born in Essex, so far as is now known. The fifty-fifth anniversary of their birthday was commemorated by a social gathering at the house of Mr. Andrews, in this town, in the autumn of 1887.

**RETROSPECTIVE.**—How the tableau has changed since, in blossoming May, in the memorable year 1840, I came here to reside, and sat in my little study in the south-east chamber of the residence of the late Captain Moses Andrews, on Western Avenue; where through the golden summer the birds came and sang in the branches that embowered the window; and

during that romantic Presidential campaign, when the rival banners of Harrison and Van Buren waved in the breeze, the warbling of the robins and bobolinks would occasionally intermingle with the voice of my neighbor across the way, as he hailed the occupant of some passing vehicle, and energetically discussed with him the uppermost topics. I hear again, in fancy, the words "tariff," "bank," "Mr. Clay," "Mr. Calhoun." And how the sign on the gate, "I forbid all persons passing over my land," seemed to frown on me, until the genial proprietor signified that I might pass over it whenever I pleased so to do. He passed over it, for the last time, a long, long while ago.

The mystic shuttle of Time can weave no veil that will hide from my retrospective vision that radiant dawn of early manhood. The faces of those I knew,—the dear old friends who vanished year by year, as one after another they stepped into the silent, phantom procession that never halts in its march,—I seem to see them again beaming upon me, as if in placid benediction from some blessed region. And so now I look with yearning gaze through the vista of the intervening years at those early scenes, like one who from a winding and sometimes rugged road has glimpses of a charming landscape in a peaceful valley.

## CHAPTER XXVIII.

### HAMILTON.

BY DANIEL E. SAFFORD.

HAMILTON is a pleasant farming town situated about twenty-two miles north of Boston, in the eastern part of Essex County. It is near enough to the ocean to hear the roar of the surf, while it is nowhere touched by its waters. The landscape combines the elements of diversified and attractive scenery—the hill and valley, the meadow and stream, the forest and lake. The old Eastern stage road winds through the centre of the town. This road, long called the Bay road, because leading to Boston, was laid out in 1641, through the farm of Matthew and John Whipple, who were large land-owners in the Hamlet. The principal village lies along this street. The town has for neighbors Ipswich on the north, Essex on the east, Manchester and Wenham on the south and southwest, and Topsfield on the west. The Ipswich River forms in part the northwestern boundary line on Topsfield, and the northeastern on Ipswich. The Miles River rises in Wenham Lake, enters Hamilton on the southern boundary, and running northeasterly, crosses the line into Ipswich, and empties its shallow and sluggish waters into Ipswich River. The highest elevation is Brown's Hill, situated in the southeastern part of the town. The other



prominent hills are the Sagamore, at the northeast, and Vineyard, in the west. A recent visitor to the town describes Brown's Hill as "A beautiful, rounded eminence, from which may be seen the windings of Miles River, and the well-shaded village of Hamilton on the north; the Chebacco Pond and the dense forests of Essex and Manchester, and the ocean on the east; the spires of Marblehead on the south; and a broad sweep of land, with the State Insane Asylum, on the west. This hill and the neighboring ponds were favorite resorts of the red men." A charming feature of the scenery is formed by a cluster of ponds in the southeastern corner of the town. Chebacco Pond, a large sheet of water, lying partly in Essex, and Beck's Pond, Round Pond and Gravelly Pond, which are wholly within the limits of Hamilton. The area of the town is nine thousand four hundred and forty acres, of which three hundred and fifty-five are under water. Its greatest length from east to west is five and one-half miles, and its mean length three and three-quarters; its greatest breadth from north to south is three and three-eighths miles, and the mean breadth three miles. The soil is generally loamy and gravelly. In the southwestern corner lies an extensive tract of swamp land, called Wenham Swamp.

Hamilton was originally included in the ancient town of Ipswich and was known as the Hamlet; it does not appear when the earliest settlement was made, but land within its limits was granted to Matthew Whipple in 1638, and, as before mentioned, the old stage road was laid out through his and his brother's land in 1641, and his house was sold, July 10, 1647, to John Annable, tailor. It was incorporated as a separate municipality in 1793. This division was accomplished after several attempts and long delays.

The divisionists of that day, however, had a most persistent and able leader in Rev. Dr. Cutler, the second pastor of the Hamlet Church, who in this achievement displayed the skill which had distinguished him in a larger enterprise in 1787, in his negotiations with the Continental Congress, which is referred to later in this history. The name of Hamilton was selected by Dr. Cutler, who was a staunch Federalist, in honor of the statesman whose policy he so much admired. Fifty years later, on the incorporation of a new town, the representative of Hamilton then in the Legislature was approached by agents of the new town, which coveted the honored name, to negotiate for purchasing it; the proposals were promptly declined. But long before this complete separation from Ipswich, a movement was made in 1712, by the residents of the Hamlet, so called, to be set off as a separate parish. The citizens and estates of the Hamlet were then a part of the territorial First Parish of Ipswich, and taxable for the support of the ministry there, of which the Revs. John Rogers (2d) and Jabez Fitch were the incumbents.

The following petition was prepared and presented to the town:

"To the Inhabitants of Ipswich now Assembled, May 1, 1712. The humble petition of us whose names are hereunto subscribed humbly sheweth, That whereas by God's providence our habitations are so far distant from ye publick Worship of God in said Towne yt above forty families, tho with Great Difficulty repair to Wenham to Worship God. There where we have been att Great Charge to Build, but our Numbers being greatly Encreased Tho. Roome will not Containe us without some Infragement & ye Burden of Conveying our families to said house so Intolerable yt we cannot rest quiet, but if possible we might be silent were not ye circumstances of our condition so hard to bear, yfore after twice seven years past we Doe humbly renew our petition to you who are our fathers, yt you would consider ye circumstances of our condition, and find out some way for us to have ye word of God preached among us, or freely sett us off to be a precinct by ourselves & free us from paying to ye ministry with you, yt so we may with Greater comfort & more generally attend ye publick worshipp of God in ye midst of our Hamlett yt God may be glorified & our Souls edified, so hoping you will grant us our request Wee remaine yore humble petitioners, viz

Matthew Whipple, sen.	Richd Walker
Jno: Whipple, jun'r	Sam'l Browne
Matt: Whipple, jr	Matt: Whipple, 4th
Isaac Ringe	Jno Lovett
William Moulton	Nicholas Williams
James Whipple	Daniel Killum, sen.
Jona Whipple	Thomas Browne
Jno Deane	John Gilbert
Daniel Deane	William Quarles
Nath'l Deane	Richard Dodge
Ethmund Potter	Moses Welch
Nath'l Dike	Moses Stevens
James Browne	Richard Roberts
Jacob Browne	John Perkins
Parker Dodge	James Poland
Jno Walker	Wilhm Maynt
Jno Whipple	Jon Piper
Jno: Annable	Nath'l Potter
Mattw Annable	Jno: Hubbard
Jno Annable, jun'r	Abra. Tilton
Jno Rockwell	Bernard Thorne
Matt Whipple, 3d	John Thorne
Antho Dike	Timo. Knowlton
Christ'r Bodlock	Isaac Giddings
Samuel Poland	Benj. & Sam'l Knowlton
Daniel Gilbert	Jno & Thos Knowlton
Thomas Dury	John Hooker
Samuel Tilton	Matthew Annable
James Brown	Jno Davis jr.
Charles Tuttle	Wm Davison
Nath'l Browne	Joseph Browne.

This petition was granted by the inhabitants of Ipswich at a legal meeting held May 22, 1712, upon the recommendation of a committee which had been chosen to treat with their neighbors of the Hamlet. This committee say that they consider the request reasonable, if their brethren of the Hamlet consider that they are able to go through so expensive an undertaking, when the public burdens lay so heavy upon them, and they recommend that the citizens of the Hamlet be freed from all further charges for the support of the present ministers of Ipswich, when they shall have erected a meeting-house and called an orthodox minister to preach the Gospel to them; the committee, however, somewhat plaintively present the consideration that the old parish has two ministers to support, and that two have been maintained from the foundation of the town, and they express the hope "that these will continue to be to the end of





the world, and if it should ever be otherwise it will be a shameful degeneracy from the piety of our ancestors." Upon this recommendation it was voted to grant the request for a separate precinct or parish. On the 21st day of October following, a meeting of the inhabitants of Ipswich belonging to the Hamlet was held at the house of Matthew Whipple, Quarto; Cornet Whipple was chosen moderator, and it was voted that a "meeting-house be built and finished at or before the next November come twelve months," and a committee consisting of Cornet Whipple, Carpenter Knowlton, Mr. Nathaniel Brown, Mr. Isaac Ringe, Mr. John Whipple, Sergt. Gilbert, Mr. Thomas Brown, Mr. Samuel Poland and Mr. Matthew Whipple, tailor, were chosen for the carrying out said work and to take an account of every man's labor. At a session of the Great and General Court or Assembly of her Majesty's Provinces of the Massachusetts Bay in New England, held at Boston, October 14, 1713, upon the reading of the petition of Capt. Matthew Whipple and others of the Hamlet, it was ordered that according to a vote of the town of Ipswich they be made and allowed to be a distinct and separate precinct to be established as follows, namely: "all the Inhabitants of the Hamlet, so called, with all the inhabitants and lands lying within the compass of these farms, vs. Annable farm and Jacob's farm, and Abbott farm, Capt. Whipple's farm, the farm of Joseph Whipple, dec'd; Lovering's farm, from thence, bounding on Col. Saltonstall's farm exclusively, and all the farms lying upon Wenham bounds, and all the land and Inhabitants lying in Chebacco, that are not enclosed in Chebacco precinct."

Subsequently, on December 3, 1715, upon the petition of Matthew Whipple, John Whipple and others, to the General Court, the Saltonstall farm and other neighboring inhabitants, who had so petitioned, were set off to the new precinct.

In 1719, a dispute having arisen between the Hamlet and Chebacco Parish in regard to Knight's farm, and Knowlton and Buckman farms, the matter in dispute was referred to Hon. Addington Davenport, Samuel Sewell and John Clark, Esqs., who reported that it was their opinion that Thomas Knowlton and Jeremiah Buckman should continue to the Hamlet, as they have already been set off with their friends of Knight's farm by the General Court in the year 1718, and be freed from any further charge at Chebacco, each of the parties to bear their own charges. This report was confirmed in council, July 22, 1720.

The meeting-house was built according to the vote of October 21, 1712, on the site of the present house. Its dimensions were fifty feet in length, thirty-eight in width and twenty stud; the windows were small, with diamond-shaped panes; the rafters were not covered with plaster, so that the swallows, in course of time, literally built their nests among them, and kept up a lively twitter during divine service. This

house stood until 1762, when it was taken down to give place to its successor; this was built mainly by contributions of the proprietors, varying from the largest, that of Matthew Whipple, Sr., of £26 4s. 7d., to that made by John Stockwell, of 1s. 3d. Joseph Whipple, joiner, gave £8 in making the pulpit.

Rev. Mr. Gerrish, minister of Wenham, contributed five pounds. The rights to build pews were assigned by a committee of the parish, and each person to whom such assignment was made was to build his own pew. These rights were granted under the restriction that no owner of a pew should sell without leave of a majority of the proprietors. There were separate seats for men and women below and separate galleries. Seaters were chosen annually at the parish meeting, who were to assign seats for the year, and none were permitted to intrude into other seats. In 1730, probably in consequence of some laxity in this respect, it was voted "That if any person belonging to the precinct shall at any time presume or make it a practice to sit in time of worship in the meeting-house, in any other seat than he or they shall be duly directed by proper seaters, chosen for such purpose, they shall be proceeded with as disorderly in God's house, and shall suffer the penalty as such offender or offenders." In 1713 Rev. Samuel Wigglesworth was unanimously invited to be the minister of the parish, and in May, 1714, he was authorized to build a house on the land then in possession of John Walker, and it was voted to defend Mr. Wigglesworth's title, if the person who was the heir to the land should molest him, and to make good to him any damage he should sustain. This lot of land was adjoining the meeting-house, and this and the house built by Mr. Wigglesworth is undoubtedly that afterwards owned by Rev. Dr. Cutler and Rev. Mr. Felt, and now, by Mrs. Francis Dane. In 1720 seven acres lying on the main road southerly of Mr. Wigglesworth's house-lot were bought for a parsonage lot; this was retained until 1839, when it was divided into house-lots and sold, excepting that upon which the present parsonage stands. Mr. Wigglesworth's salary was fixed at sixty pounds for the first year, sixty-five pounds for the second and seventy pounds for the third; the salary was to be paid two-thirds money and one-third grain. He was also to receive twenty cords of wood and one hundred pounds towards building his house. In 1741 the custom was adopted of designating at the annual meetings eight parishioners, who should furnish the twenty cords of wood, each providing two and a half cords. The parish also took charge of schools, and in 1730 voted to build a school-house and set it up in the centre of the parish as near as may be, and that a school for writing and reading be kept in the centre of the parish, as long as the proportion of the one hundred pounds or one hundred and twelve pounds raised by the town, for the use of schools which belong to the parish, will maintain it. On the 20th of October of that year it





was voted that Mr. Joseph Secomb keep a school for four months, and Captain Matthew Whipple, Mr. Thomas Brown and Deacon Matthew Whipple were chosen the first school committee and authorized to collect the school money and pay the first teacher. This seems to be the beginning of public schools in the Hamlet. In 1748 the parish voted to raise, by taxation, fifty pounds, old tenor, and to choose a committee "to agree with a teacher to keep school for as long a time as to spend fifty pounds, old tenor." In the same year provision was made for a school in the north part of the Hamlet. Nine years later an appropriation was made for a school in the west part, by a vote November 9, 1757, "That the west part of the Hamlet begin to keep a school November 21, 1757, and keep it six weeks, and that they have their proportional part of the money for said school." Captain John Whipple (3d), Adam Brown and Joseph Bolles were chosen a committee to regulate schools, and it was voted that the scholars find wood and pay the schoolmaster's board. At this period in the history of the Hamlet schools, it was usually provided that each scholar should furnish one foot of wood within a reasonable time from the beginning of the school or be debarred from its privileges.

The subject of building a new meeting-house began to be agitated in 1761, and the following year the new house was built. It was sixty feet in length, forty-four feet in width, and twenty-six feet stud, and Dr. Cutler says, in his sermon referred to hereafter, "It has been admired for its just proportions and pleasing appearance." The house, with the exception of the pews, was finished by the parish. A committee was chosen to value the pew room, and determine the size of the pews; these were to be built by the purchasers of sites, and to be of one fashion. These rights to build were sold at "public vendue" October 28, 1763, Deacon John Patch being "vendue master." Until 1801 there were two long rows of seats on the right and left sides of the aisle in front of the pulpit; after that this space was taken up by the square pews. This house stood with the side fronting the street, the front door opening directly into the house; there were porches on the northerly and southerly ends, the tower and steeple being on the southerly end. The galleries were on the front side and on each end. In 1764 provision was made for seating the choir, by a vote that "any young men, that are good singers, sett in the men's sixth seat below, during the Parish pleasure." The pulpit was high, and overhung by the sounding-board; in front was the deacon's seat, occupied by Deacons Nathaniel Whipple and John Patch. Deacon Patch sat at the door, and Deacon Whipple at the farther end, wearing a full-bottomed wig. Deacon Patch used to interline the hymn, and Deacon Whipple set the hymn or psalm. No provision was made for heating the house until 1824, when box stoves were set up. The pews were square, with seats on the side, hung

on hinges, so that they could be turned up during prayer, and at the close would come down with a lively clatter. Chairs were placed in the centre of the pews for the elderly occupants, and considerable sensation was created by one good lady, who consulted her comfort so much as to take a rocking-chair into her pew.

The mode of lighting for evening meetings, which were occasionally held, according to the usual notification at "early candle light," was by candles, which members of the congregation would bring and set up in tin sconces hung in the pews.

The year 1768 was memorable in the annals of the Hamlet for the death of its pastor, Rev. Samuel Wigglesworth. He began his ministry with the organization of the church, in 1714, and continued in his office fifty-four years; he was able to discharge his duties as preacher and pastor nearly to the close of his life. He was the son of Rev. Michael Wigglesworth, author of the somewhat noted poem, "The Day of Doom," and was born in Malden February 4, 1688. He was graduated at Harvard College in 1707. He first studied medicine, and came to the Hamlet in March, 1710, to practice that profession, and remained until December 29th of that year, when he returned to his native place, took a school and began the study of divinity. In 1714 he returned to the Hamlet, prepared for his new profession and, after preaching some months, was ordained over the newly organized Third Church of Ipswich, in the Hamlet, October 27, 1714. That he was diligent and faithful in his duties may be inferred from his long pastorate. He was somewhat afflicted by bodily infirmity, so that at times he needed assistance in his work, and as early as 1724 the parish voted to pay whoever should preach for him one pound for every day's preaching; but still it was said of him that he preached long enough to wear out one meeting-house and have another built for him.

His successor, Rev. Dr. Cutler, in his century discourse, preached October 27, 1814, on the one hundredth anniversary of the church, says of him: "That he was possessed of very respectable talents—in his sentiments Calvinistical—in the strain of his preaching, evangelical, instructive and practical. Solemn and unaffected in his manner, he commanded attention and supported the character of amiable and sound divine, amiable and exemplary—respected and beloved, he filled up a long, peaceable and useful ministry."

In his private intercourse he was accessible and kind in manner, and instructive in conversation. In personal appearance he was small in stature, of light complexion and alert in his movements. His voice was clear, though not strong, but he spoke with such earnestness as to command attention. His intellectual ability was above the average standard. He was reputed to be especially well versed in ecclesiastical matters, and, in consequence, his assistance and



counsel were often sought by other churches in the settlement of their difficulties; and he was also prompt in the painful duty of discipline in his own. During his ministry very large additions were made to his church, particularly after the great earthquake in 1727, which occurred on Sunday evening, October 27th. The next Wednesday was observed as a day of humiliation and prayer, and an appropriate sermon was preached by Mr. Wigglesworth, which, at the request of his people, was published.

During the year following about one hundred were added to the church. In 1744 an earthquake took place on Sabbath afternoon during service; the audience were greatly alarmed; Mr. Wigglesworth endeavored to calm them, and remarked, "There can be no better place for us to die in than the house of God." Several of his discourses were published,—in 1733 an election sermon preached before the Legislature on the necessity of a general reform in morals and piety; in 1751 a discourse before the convention of Congregational ministers of Massachusetts; in 1755 two sermons to his parishioners during the French and Indian War; in 1760 the Duddleian lecture.

He showed himself ready to keep pace with the march of improvement by being one of the first to purchase a chaise; this was in 1753.

He was married, June 30, 1715, to Mary, daughter of John Brintnal, of Winnissimmet (now Chelsea); she died June 6, 1723. Their children were Mary, Michael, Martha and Phebe. March 12, 1730, he married Martha, daughter of Rev. Mr. Brown, of Reading; she survived him, and died at Newburyport, 1784, aged 89. Their children were Sarah, Phebe, Samuel, Katharine, Elizabeth, Edward, John, Abigail and William. Of his thirteen children, four sons and four daughters survived him. He died September 3, 1763; on the 6th the parish voted to bear the charge of his burial, to build a brick grave, to give eight pounds to Madame Wigglesworth, and to provide seven gold rings, six for the bearers and one for Rev. Mr. Hopkins, who was then preaching for them, and eighteen pairs of men's white gloves, presumably for the attending ministers. Deacons Patch and Whipple and John Hubbard were chosen a committee to have charge of the funeral. He was buried in the cemetery opposite the meeting-house. The inscription on his monument is:

"In memory of  
the venerable and beloved minister of Christ,  
THE REV. SAMUEL WIGGLESWORTH,

Pastor of the 3<sup>d</sup> church in Ipswich, who departed this life Sept. 3<sup>d</sup>, 1763, in the 48<sup>th</sup> year of his age, and the 34<sup>th</sup> year of his ministry. And Samuel said to the people, Fear not, for the Lord will not forsake his people, for his great name's sake. Only fear the Lord and serve him in truth with all your heart."

"After the death of Mr. Wigglesworth, Revs. Messrs. Hopkins, Brigham and Searl, successively declined the invitation of the parish to settle with them in the ministry. In May 1771, Mr. Manasseh Cutler, accepted a call to the ministry in this

Parish. He was then a young man, twenty-seven years of age, wearing a brown wig over his shorn head, in conformity to the clerical fashion of the day. He was a graduate of Yale College, of the class of 1765, and was a native of Killingly, in Connecticut. His father was a farmer, and he had himself worked on the farm, had been engaged in business, and had studied and practiced law; he had, however, for some years looked toward the ministry as possibly his life-work, and having married the daughter of Rev. Mr. Balch of Dedham, he commenced his theological studies with him in 1769. He was ordained September 11, 1771. Mr. Balch preached the ordination sermon. Mr. Cutler then began that affectionate and able ministry to the material, intellectual and spiritual wants of his people which continued for fifty-two years, and ended only at his death. The parish voted him £133, 6s. 8d. as settlement, and for salary, £85, and the use of the parsonage. He purchased the house owned by his predecessor, which he enlarged and greatly improved, leaving it at his decease, in external appearance, substantially as it is at present. In 1772, the parish voted "to sing Dr. Watts' psalms for the future."

It is an interesting item in the history of the parish, as illustrating the great depreciation of the currency in the latter years of the Revolutionary War, that at a parish meeting held November 14, 1780, a committee of five were chosen, "To calculate the amount of £85, which is the nominal sum of Mr. Cutler's salary, agreeable to y<sup>e</sup> first stipulated price of articles in this State in present current money." At an adjournment of this meeting held November 28, the calculation having probably been made in the mean time, the sum of eight thousand pounds in current money was voted for his salary for that year; this vote was however reconsidered, and it was voted to raise one hundred pounds in silver for that purpose; that probably being estimated as equivalent to the amount first voted. In March 1781, it was voted that five pecks of corn per month be paid to Benjamin Ayers, for ringing the bell, and that the herbage of the burial place be let out for two bushels, three quarts and one pint of corn, it being, probably, too intricate a problem to determine these values in currency. The scarcity of West India molasses, occasioned by the war, stimulated the ingenuity of some persons in the Hamlet to provide as a substitute the juice of corn-stalks, expressed from them after being ground in a mill, and then boiled down, and in 1778, a load of this was carried from the Hamlet to a Salem distillery, where it yielded the most satisfactory result in spirits.

The years 1773 and 1775, were noticeable in the annals of the parish for unusual sickness and mortality. The average mortality in the Hamlet for the twenty-one years preceding the incorporation of the town was twelve. In the year 1773, the deaths numbered twenty-nine, and in 1775, twenty-six. The





prevalent diseases were a malignant fever, afterwards known as typhus fever, and a disease which was called canker fever. In 1777, small-pox prevailed to an alarming extent; of the twenty-three deaths in that year, five were from that disease. A pest house was located in the eastern part of the parish, and a committee reported, June 30, 1777, that there were sixty-one cases. The diseases continued into the next year, and persons came from other towns to be inoculated.

At the close of the Revolutionary War, the people were so much straitened in their means that Dr. Cutler's salary was raised with difficulty, and his thoughts were turned to the West, as affording better prospects for his future, in providing support for his family. In 1786 several of the officers of the late army organized a company in Boston, called the Ohio Company, for the purchase of territory northwest of the Ohio river, for locating a permanent settlement.

This land was to be purchased with the government paper, with which the army had been paid off, and which had so depreciated in value that it was scarcely available for anything else than purchasing of the government its land. Dr. Cutler, through the influence of Major Winthrop Sargent, became a member of the company and was selected as its agent to undertake the delicate and difficult duty of negotiating with the Continental Congress for the purchase of the land; for this duty he was well equipped by his various learning and experience in agriculture, science, law, medicine and divinity, and more especially, by his tact in dealing with men, his affable manner, and great conversational ability. He had also gained a wide-spread reputation for his scientific attainments and contributions. He had already been chosen a member of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences, and to the first volumes of the memoirs of this society, had contributed astronomical and meteorological papers; he was also a member of the Philosophical Society of Philadelphia. Possessing all these natural and acquired qualifications, and indorsed by many letters of introduction from distinguished men, he started on his mission. He left his home in his sulky, in the latter part of June, for New York, where the Continental Congress was then sitting, and reached New York, July 5, 1787, after a twelve days journey, coming in, as he writes, "by the road that enters the Bowery," putting up his horse "at the sign of the 'Plow and Harrow' in the Bowery barns." He succeeded in obtaining a contract for one million acres, at one dollar per acre, with five hundred thousand more thrown in as an allowance for bad lands and incidental charges. He also at this time rendered a greater service for the northwestern territory, then and in coming time, and for the country at large by his influence, which was powerful if not decisive in securing the passage of the clauses in the ordinance of 1787, prohibiting slavery in that territory, and providing for education. The honor of proposing the

anti-slavery clause has been awarded to Nathan Dane, the eminent jurist, who was a member of this congress, but it is believed upon good evidence that his action was prompted, if not decided, by the counsel of Dr. Cutler. The Hamlet may claim further honor in connection with this ordinance, since Mr. Dane was a native of the Parish, though at this time a resident of Beverly. Dr. Andrew P. Peabody, of Harvard University, in a highly appreciative paper on Manasseh Cutler, April, 1887, says of him: "As I cannot but read our history Manasseh Cutler was the providential man who set impassable metes and bounds to the slave power. But for him American history would have taken its course in widely different channels. The free states would have made hardly as show of counterpoise to the slave states."

The next move was to provide for the territory emigrants of good New England stock. The dwellers in the Hamlet, who were near Dr. Cutler's house on a certain day in December, 1787, could have seen starting from his door a large wagon, covered with black canvass, having on its sides, in white letters, "Ohio, for Marietta on the Muskingum," and would have heard a volley fired by the armed emigrants, as a salute, as it moved off on its long journey. These emigrants numbered forty-five, from various towns, and among them, Jervis, a son of Dr. Cutler. They reached their destination in April, 1788, and commenced the first white settlement in Ohio, for Marietta. Dr. Jos. B. Felt, the historian, of Hamilton, says of the historic wagon, which so linked Hamilton with the then far west, "The use to which the wagon already spoken of was appropriated--the circumstances under which it left New England, and reached an uncultivated wilderness, where political power is soon likely to wield the destinies of our republic--have made this exploring vehicle an object of much interest among some of our literati, who have mentioned it, so that it is beginning to waken, in the mind, associations somewhat similar to those produced by the suggestions of the Mayflower, which landed the pilgrims on the shore of Plymouth."

The next summer, Dr. Cutler himself visited the new colony, starting from Hamilton in the sulky, in which he made part of the journey, but which was exchanged for the saddle at the Alleghanies; the last of the journey was made by water. He reached Marietta, August 19th, and preached the next Sabbath. He returned to the Hamlet October 15th, having formed the conclusion that it would be best for his family and himself to remain in New England. This must have been an interesting episode in the history of the Hamlet, turning as it naturally would the sympathies and interest of the people to "the Ohio," which was then the "Far West."

Early in the year 1788, the project of entire separation from Ipswich as a town was first agitated. Several meetings in reference to this matter were held before Dr. Cutler left for the west; at the first, held January



2d. it was voted that "the minds of ye parish is to be set off as a town," and to choose a committee to treat with an attorney. In June it was voted to petition the General Court to be incorporated into a separate town. The matter seemed to have then been dropped, but was revived in 1791, when similar action was taken. The project was pressed the following year, and in March, 1793, Rev. Dr. Cutler, Col. Robert Dodge, Mr. Joshua Giddings and Mr. Jonathan Lanson were appointed a committee to provide for the payment of such sums of money and the fulfillment of such conditions as the General Court may impose in granting the petition, which was then before that body, for incorporating the parish and certain other persons and estates into a separate town and parish. On June 21st, 1793, the long desired event was consummated, and the Hamlet ceased to exist, and the town of Hamilton was incorporated. Dr. Cutler in his century sermon says of this: "This separation from the ancient and highly respectable town of Ipswich was a transaction in which the inhabitants of both felt themselves deeply interested. In accomplishing this desirable object, every proceeding of the people was conducted with entire unanimity. Although the pecuniary condition appeared to be large, it was promptly and cheerfully paid. And let it also be noticed, with peculiar satisfaction, that the unpleasant feeling excited in the minds of any of our brethren in Ipswich appears to have very happily subsided." The number of inhabitants at the time of incorporation is not accurately known, but probably was about the same as by the census of 1810, when it was seven hundred and eighty. This sketch gives the names of many of the principal citizens of the hamlet who gave direction to its parochial and ecclesiastical affairs; of most of them, we know nothing but their names, and can only infer their characters from the trusts confided to them. This is especially true of those who are named in the earliest records; of some, however, we have a little fuller information. Dr. Velt in his history, to show the character of the Hamlet, quotes a remonstrance of the town of Ipswich in 1679, which characterizes it as follows: "One of the principal of these hamlets lies on the road to Boston, extending almost to Wenham, wherein are several of the better rank; members of the church, persons of public place and service, as well or better landed than any; and as wise to be sensible of their difficulties which they deeply share in as others."

Among the early residents in this part of Ipswich, were Matthew Whipple, who died in 1647, to whom land was granted in the Hamlet in 1638. He held the chief offices in town. John Whipple, to whom a large grant was made in 1639, was the incumbent of various offices; was deputy to the General Court for eight years, also a deacon and ruling elder in the First Church. Richard Hubbard, who died in 1681, was a graduate of Harvard College, and held the

prominent offices. He is said to have married the daughter of Governor Bradstreet. John Whipple, who died in 1683, leaving an estate appraised at £3,000, was representative to the General Court for four years, also captain of a troop, and county treasurer, as well as holding town offices. Still another John Whipple, who died in 1695, was lieutenant of a troop and deputy to the General Court for four years; his estate was valued at £1639, 16s. Deacon John Gilbert, the first deacon of the church, died in 1722. Among the petitioners in 1712 for the separation of the Hamlet, were four Matthew Whipples. The senior of the name was a person of substance and prominence; his wife was a granddaughter of General Dennison, and one of his grandsons, William Whipple, was signer of the Declaration of Independence, and was brigadier-general at the capture of Burgoyne. He was, by much, the largest contributor to the building of the first meeting-house, in 1713. He was a maltster and had a malt and oat mill, which is said to have been situated in rear of the present residence of Edwin A. Whipple. He gave freedom to his mulatto servant. He was a town officer, a justice of the Court of Sessions, representative in 1718, 1719, and 1729. He was an energetic and eminently useful citizen. His estate was valued at £3500. His house and lands were devised to his sons, Matthew and John. He died January 28, 1739. Major Symonds Epes, as he is called in the parish records, was a cotemporary with this Matthew Whipple, and like him was prominent in affairs. He served for several years as moderator of the parish meetings, and on the Board of Assessors, and as a member of committees. He was also colonel of a regiment, justice of the General Sessions court, and a member of the Governor's Council from 1724 to 1734, inclusive. He showed his interest in the Hamlet church by giving to it a large silver can. When he was a bachelor, of the mature age of fifty-two, he married young Mary Whipple, a girl of sixteen. He died August 30, 1741, in his seventy-ninth year. His wife survived him, and shortly after became the third wife of the Rev. Edward Holyoke, president of Harvard College; she died in Cambridge in 1790, in her ninety-second year. It is related of her, as indicative of her spirit, that in the Revolutionary War, when there was a demand for saltpetre, she was waited on to learn if she would consent that the oak wood on her farm in the Hamlet should be used for making it. She earnestly replied, "It is for liberty; take as much of the wood as you want." This was the farm now owned by George Brown. Major Epes left two minor children, Samuel and Elizabeth. He was buried in the tomb now marked by the stone monument erected by heirs of Deacon Nathaniel Whipple. The physician of the Hamlet was Dr. Elisha Whitney, who was a native of Watertown. He came to the Hamlet in 1772 and remained till 1793, when he removed to Beverly, where several





of his descendants now live. He served as a surgeon in the Revolutionary War, and during his absence Dr. Cutler, who had studied medicine, discharged the duties of a physician. Dr. Whitney took active part in parish business, as moderator of the meetings, as treasurer, and a member of the committee to visit the schools. He married Eunice Farley, of Ipswich. His house stood on the site of that now owned by D. E. Safford.

After the act of incorporation of the town of Hamilton was obtained, the first town-meeting was held for the organization of the new town August 1 1793. Deacon Nathaniel Whipple was chosen moderator; Lemuel Brown, clerk; Nathaniel Whipple, treasurer; Jonathan Lamson, Capt. Daniel Brown and Joseph Poland, Jr., selectmen. Nine hundred and ten pounds were raised to pay the town of Ipswich; and the building of a pound was provided for. At a meeting held in October, rules and regulations were adopted for the management of town affairs and the salaries of officers were fixed, which were for town clerk, six shillings; treasurer, twelve shillings; selectmen, assessors and overseers £2 14s. At the first annual town-meeting, held March, 1794, it was voted to raise the sum of fifteen pounds for Rev. Dr. Cutler, for his services in behalf of the town at Boston, this being intended as remuneration for his services in obtaining the act of incorporation. To this vote Dr. Cutler replied:

"Gentlemen I very sensibly feel my obligation to this town for the very generous compensation they have this day voted me for the little aid I afforded in obtaining their incorporation. I beg leave to inform the town that I cannot receive from them any pecuniary reward for any services they may suppose I have rendered them, the only compensation I can desire is, that they may live in peace and unity, this will be to me an ample reward: and permit me to add, that I very sensibly feel for the inhabitants of the town under their present heavy burthen, but my earnest prayer and desire is that they may be able, through the blessing of Providence, to extricate themselves, and that their incorporation may prove a blessing to them and their children after them. You will therefore please order that the sum voted may not be received.

"I am, with the most sincere affection and esteem,

"Your most humble servant,

"M. CUTLER

"To the inhabitants of Hamilton in town-meeting assembled."

A suitable committee was then chosen to thank Dr. Cutler for his services in obtaining the incorporation of the town. At this meeting Joshua Giddings was moderator, and the town officers chosen in August preceding were re-elected, except Col. Robert Doder was chosen selectman in place of Joseph Poland, Jr. The amount which, by the terms of separation, was to be paid to Ipswich, Dr. Cutler and Col. Dodge took over in silver dollars, and made a formal tender of it to the town treasurer, which he reluctantly accepted.

After the incorporation, until 1829, the new town constituted a territorial parish, and town and parish affairs were acted on together at the town-meeting. As this history now brings us to the point, where the town and parish unite, it will be more convenient to

follow along first the history of the parish and church to the present time, as distinct from those subjects which more appropriately relate to town affairs.

In 1818, the Sabbath-school was organized. Previous to that, Dr. Cutler was accustomed to catechise the children in the district schools, and as early as 1814 the girls in the congregation used to remain in the meeting-house at the close of the afternoon service, sitting in a long pew near the pulpit, and were questioned by Dr. Cutler as to the text and subject of the sermon. In May, 1818, a Miss Paget, of Charleston, S. C., who had been stopping in Beverly, came to Hamilton, and called on Mrs. Mary L. Faulkner, the wife of Dr. Faulkner, to consult with her as to the feasibility of establishing a Sabbath-school.

This was less than two years after the first Sabbath-school was established in the State, if not in the country. In October, 1816, such a school was started in Rev. Dr. Morse's Society in Charlestown. After consultation with Dr. Cutler, who excused himself from any active part in the enterprise on account of the state of his health, an arrangement was made for Miss Paget to meet several of the young ladies at Mrs. Faulkner's, where the subject was discussed. Miss Paget remained at Hamilton for a few weeks, and Mrs. Faulkner taking her with her horse and chaise, they made a thorough canvass of the town, calling at every house and urging the parishioners to send their children to the Sabbath-school. The children and young people generally, came and joined the school. It was a year or more before any man ventured into the school to render any assistance, and the duty of opening the meetings, and acting as superintendent, devolved on Mrs. Faulkner, who was, however, fully equal to the emergency. At this time no question books were used, and the exercises consisted mainly of recitation of verses from the Bible. One of the girls, Thankful Baker, was especially proficient in this exercise, and in one instance recited seventy, to the dismay of her worthy teacher.

The school, however, does not appear to have become very firmly established in Dr. Cutler's day. Dr. Cutler at this time was beginning to feel somewhat unfitted for the complete discharge of his duties by his growing infirmities. He had for many years been afflicted with the asthma. He, however, continued to preach until within a few months of his decease. It was for some time necessary to assist him into and out of the pulpit, and for him to sit in his chair while preaching. He died July 28, 1823, in the eighty-first year of his age, and the fifty-second of his ministry. Although his distinction was gained mainly by his achievements outside of his chosen profession, he was a most faithful and successful minister of the Gospel. He was a plain, earnest and practical preacher. From the nature of his mind he was indisposed to speculative or metaphysical reasoning. The propositions of his sermons were sustained





by liberal citations from the Scriptures, after the custom of the time, when preachers looked for their authority to the law and the testimony, rather than to the evolution of their "Christian consciousness." He exalted the Bible as the sure foundation of hope and belief. To quote his own words: "The Bible carries its own evidence with it. Infidelity has been met not merely with clear reasoning and strength of argument, which sophistry can always evade, but with the formidable weapon of the Bible itself—the Bible without note or comment." He was, as a pastor, genial, accessible, and sympathetic, in his intercourse with the people. He was especially interested in the schools, and frequently visited them and was always ready with a word of advice and encouragement. He received into his family and gave instruction to many boys and young men from other towns, in studies required to fit them for college, and also in navigation and mathematics, as a preparation for a business or maritime life.

In addition to his membership in the scientific societies already mentioned, he was a member of the Massachusetts Society for the Promotion of Agriculture, of the Massachusetts Historical Society, an honorary member of the Massachusetts Medical Society, president of the Bible Society of Salem and vicinity, of the American Antiquarian Society, and of the New England Linnæan Society. He received the degree of LL.D. from his *alma mater*, Yale College, in 1791.

From this summary we have evidence of the high estimate placed upon his character and services. Dr. Peabody, in the article before referred to, says of him: "For diversity of good gifts, for their efficient use, and for the variety and modes of valuable service to his country and to mankind, I doubt whether Manasseh Cutler has his equal in American history. Had he distinguished himself in any one way as he did in many ways, his would have been confessedly among the greatest names of his age. But because he belonged exclusively to no one department, he is hardly remembered in any, though in several that might be specified his inferiors have won wide and permanent renown." But notwithstanding his eminence and success in public life outside of his parish, his chief interest and joy was in the material and spiritual prosperity of his people. In some periods of his ministry large additions were made to the church. During his ministry one hundred and forty-two were admitted to membership. The deacons during this period were John Patch, Matthew Whipple, Nathaniel Whipple, and Benjamin Appleton. By a computation made by Dr. Cutler in his century discourse, which is not, however, based on any complete record, he estimated that for the first century of the existence of the church there had been, including the members at its formation, 736 communicants, 2266 baptisms, and 1196 deaths.

His theological views can perhaps be most fairly

stated by a quotation from the sermon preached by Rev. Dr. Benjamin Wadsworth, of Danvers, at the funeral of Dr. Cutler, July 30, 1823. He refers to a familiar interview with Dr. Cutler a short time before his death, and says, "To prevent a misrepresentation of his religious sentiments after his death, he particularly requested that it might be publicly announced that he bore his *dying testimony* against the modern liberal unitarian principles, which, after attending to the ablest discussions of the subject, in his judgment, he said, reduces the glorious economy of salvation by grace almost to a level with natural religion, and has a direct tendency to careless living; and that he bore the same *solemn testimony* in favor of the Calvinistical doctrines of the gospel as maintained by our pious forefathers, the early settlers of this country, specifying the depravity of human nature, the necessity of regeneration, the real divinity of Christ, the influences of the Spirit, and the perseverance of saints." This sermon was published by request of the church and congregation.

Dr. Cutler's wife was Mary, daughter of Rev. Thomas Balch, of Dedham, whom he married September 7, 1776. She died November 3, 1815, aged seventy-three. His children were Ephraim, Jervis, Mary, Charles, Lavinia, Elizabeth, and Temple. His sons, Ephraim and Jervis, became prominent citizens of Ohio. Ephraim was judge of the Court of Common Pleas, and was active in the convention that framed the Constitution of that State.

The successor of Dr. Cutler was Rev. Joseph B. Felt, who was installed over this church June 16, 1824. Rev. Samuel Gile, of Milton, preached the sermon; Rev. Wm. Cogswell, of Dedham, offered the installing prayer; Rev. Dr. Dana, of Ipswich, gave the charge to the pastor, and Rev. Eben Burgess, of Dedham, the address to the people. Mr. Felt records with satisfaction that everything was harmonious. Mr. Felt was born in Salem, December 22, 1789; was educated at Atkinson Academy, N. H., and Dartmouth College, where he was graduated in 1813. He was first settled over the Congregational Church in Sharon in 1821, from which he was dismissed in April, 1824. Like his eminent predecessor, Mr. Felt gained distinction largely outside of his chosen profession. He was enthusiastic and indefatigable in historical research, and made highly valuable contributions to local and ecclesiastical history. While he was in Hamilton, he published the "Annals of Salem," in two volumes, and the history of Ipswich, Hamilton, and Essex. After leaving Hamilton, in 1834, and removing to Boston, under an appointment from Governor Everett, he arranged and classified large numbers of State papers in the archives at the State-House, which were lying in great confusion, which made two hundred and forty-one bound volumes, chronologically arranged. Among other of his publications were "History of Massachusetts Currency," "A Memoir of Roger Conant," "The Customs of New England,"



"The Ecclesiastical History of New England," and many besides of great value as contributions to historical and antiquarian literature. He was librarian of the Massachusetts Historical Society and of the Congregational Library Association, and was president of the New England Historic Genealogical Society. In 1857 Dartmouth College conferred on him the degree of LL.D. Owing to infirm health, he was compelled to resign his pastorate here in December, 1833. While he remained in Hamilton, he was deeply interested in his duties as pastor and minister, and discharged them with conscientious fidelity. He highly regarded his profession, saying of it "that my experience can verily testify, that however subject to many and peculiar trials, yet, when heartily cherished and properly honored, it is the perennial spring of purer, more abundant, and sublimer joys than those of all other human vocations." He took, for that day, advanced ground in opposition to the social drinking customs which had prevailed here, as elsewhere, in New England, and preached and practiced total abstinence, which he regarded as essential to Christian living. He was a decided supporter of the theological doctrines of the fathers of New England, and was uncompromising in his opposition to everything which he regarded as pernicious in doctrine and practice. He undoubtedly somewhat lacked the tolerant spirit and tact in dealing with those who differed from him in opinion, which were conspicuous in his predecessor. He was very kind and courteous, as well as dignified in manner. He was a public-spirited citizen, and was sincerely desirous to promote the best interests of the community.

The town of Hamilton ought especially to honor his memory for his great service in bringing to light, and placing in accessible form the obscure facts of its history, which, but for his patient research, would have been unknown to the present generation. He was married, September 18, 1816, to Abigail Adam Shaw, who died in Boston, July 5, 1859. In June, 1861, he removed to Salem, and in 1862 was married to Mrs. Catharine B. Meacham, who survived him. He died September 8, 1869, at the age of eighty years, having been for four years incapacitated for useful labor by a paralytic attack, which he experienced in 1865. During his ministry forty-nine were admitted to the church. The Sabbath-school was revived after his settlement. Nathaniel A. Lovering was chosen superintendant and was succeeded by Dea. Ephraim Annable. In 1829, the inhabitants of the town of Hamilton, with all the lands in such town, except such inhabitants and such lands as do belong to some other parish, or religious society were incorporated as the First Congregational Parish in Hamilton, and after this, the affairs of the town and of the parish were distinct, and each corporation held its own meetings separate from the other.

The next pastor was Rev. George W. Kelly. Mr. Kelly was a native of Greenbrier County, Va., where

he was born August 5, 1808; he was graduated at the Ohio University in 1830, and from Andover Seminary in 1833. He was ordained over the church, July 3, 1834. On account of enfeebled health, he resigned in March, 1850, and removed to Haverhill, where he has since resided; he was married to Miss Mary Marsh, of Haverhill, who has recently deceased.

In 1843, the old meeting-house which had stood for eighty-one years without material change since it was built in 1762, was remodeled and almost rebuilt, the frame being all of the old structure that was retained. It was turned so as to bring the southerly end to the front, to which twelve feet were added for the vestibule, and the floor of the audience-room was raised to give room for the vestry beneath. Since that time very little change has been made in the structure, except in lowering the floor of the vestry and replacing unsightly benches by settees, and in the audience-room exchanging the pulpit for the modern desk and chairs. This year, 1843, is also especially memorable in the history of the church and town for an extensive and powerful religious awakening. Early in the spring, an unusual interest was manifested in religious meetings, and while the meeting-house was being rebuilt, the services held in the school-houses were fully attended. The meeting-house was rededicated October 12, 1843. Rev. Mr. Kelly preached the sermon before a large audience, from the text, "And let them make me a sanctuary, that I may dwell among them." On the following Sunday sixty-two persons were admitted to the church, the harvest of the recent revival. One hundred and twenty-six were admitted to the church during the seventeen years of his stay here. During the fifty-two years of Dr. Cutler's ministry the additions numbered one hundred and forty-three, and during the nine years of Mr. Felt's, forty-nine. Mr. Kelly was peculiarly happy in his pastoral and social relations with church and people. He made himself the friend of all and received their friendship in return, and his removal from the town was the occasion of universal regret. In 1835 the Sabbath-school numbered fifteen teachers, one hundred and thirty-four scholars. Choate Burnham was chosen superintendant in 1848.

Rev. John H. Mordough was installed pastor, June 12, 1850, and was dismissed, April 1, 1861. During his ministry seventy-six was admitted to the church,—fifty-nine upon profession and seventeen by letter from other churches.

Rev. Frank H. Johnson, a native of Boston, graduate of Harvard College and Andover Theological Seminary, was settled October 15, 1861. In December, 1862, Mr. Johnson resigned on account of the condition of his health, and ceased to labor here January, 1863. Rev. S. F. French was ordained September 29, 1864, as successor to Mr. Johnson, who was at the same time formally dismissed. Mr. French was a native of Candia, New Hampshire, a graduate of Dartmouth College and Andover Seminary. In





the evening of October 27, 1864, the church held services commemorative of the one hundred and fiftieth anniversary of its organization and passed appropriate resolutions. Addresses were made by Rev. Mr. French, the pastor, by Honorable A. W. Dodge, and D. E. Safford. The covenant was read and formally renewed by the church. During Mr. French's ministry nineteen were admitted to the church,—thirteen by letter, and six by profession. Having received a call to Tewksbury, he resigned September, 1871, and was dismissed by council October 2d. The next pastor was Rev. Calvin G. Hill, of West Medway, who was ordained September 5, 1872. Mr. Hill resigned May, 1876, having received a call to a church in Walpole. While he was pastor twenty-two were admitted to the church,—twenty on profession and two by letter. Since that date no pastor has been installed over the church and society. The acting pastors, who have been hired from year to year, have been Rev. Benson, M. Frink, Rev. Temple Cutler, a grandson of Dr. Cutler, and Rev. Edgar F. Davis, who is the present pastor. Since the resignation of Mr. Hill, thirty-two have been admitted to the church—twenty-three on profession and nine by letter. In 1873, a tasteful and commodious parsonage was built on the northerly end of the old parsonage lot. The grading and work on the cellar was largely done by volunteer labor. The cost of the house above the underpinning was two thousand six hundred and twenty-five dollars. The funds were obtained by the efforts of public-spirited and energetic ladies of the parish.

A few years after, a well was dug and a barn built. The subscriptions for building this house ranged from one dollar to three hundred dollars. Liberal subscriptions were made by some non-residents, who were interested in it from association with the town as their former home. The only bequest of money ever made to the parish or church was given by the will of Captain Isaac Knowlton. The amount of this legacy was three thousand dollars, which is to be held by trustees, and the income to be used annually for parish expenses. Captain Knowlton died November 7, 1884. He was an industrious farmer and a shrewd manager of money affairs. Having inherited some property from his father, he largely increased it by economy, industry, and thrift. He united with the church, July 4, 1858, and ever after was deeply interested in the prosperity of the religious society. His interest deepened with his advancing years and stimulated him to make this provision, that it should not sustain a loss of means by his death.

In 1883, it was found expedient to organize a new religious society, to be called the First Congregational Society, to take the place of the parish incorporated in 1829. There was great uncertainty who, if anybody, constituted its legal membership. The property of the old parish was conveyed to the new society. This action was confirmed by an act of the

Legislature passed, March 31, 1884, and the parish was dissolved by the same act. A compact was formally entered into between the church and society defining their respective rights in matters in which they were mutually concerned.

A Universalist Society was organized in 1827, by Malachi Knowlton and fifteen others, which existed only for a short time.

In 1875, a building was erected in the eastern part of the town on a lot opposite the school-house, which is called the Union Chapel. It was built to meet the wants of the residents, in that neighborhood, of a convenient place for religious meetings particularly, as well as for social gatherings. It is not to be held or controlled by any particular sect.

In 1860 Revs. E. O. Haven, C. L. Eastman, I. J. P. Collyer, L. R. Thayer, and N. O. Soule, clergymen of the New England Conference of the Methodist Episcopal Church, with ten laymen, representing the Lynn and Boston Districts, were associated together under the title of the Asbury Camp-meeting Association, for the purpose of establishing and holding camp and other grove meetings in the town of Hamilton, under the auspices of and in accordance with the usages of the Methodist Episcopal Church, and for the benefit of the churches of Lynn District, and such other churches as might hold and occupy church accommodations on the Association ground. The first camp-meeting was held in 1859. The location of the ground is in the southwestern part of the town. It was at first leased, but has since been purchased by the Association which now owns seventy-five acres of well-located land, including an extensive and beautiful hemlock and pine grove, with an abundant supply of pure water. The preacher's stand faces a gradually rising slope, well adapted to seating a large audience; surrounding this is a circle of sixty church tents. The grounds are now laid out in avenues, upon which a large number of tasteful and convenient cottages have been erected. In 1867 there were but three avenues, Fiske, Central and Pleasant, and only one shingled cottage on the grounds. Mudge Avenue was then unknown, and when Rev. A. D. Merrill built his cottage near it, at the corner of Ipswich Path, the entire background was a dense wood, almost impenetrable on account of the underbrush, and it was thought unsafe for him to be so far from the circle. In 1869 avenues were laid out and lots staked out; in 1871, three hundred and sixty-two private lots had been let, and one hundred and twenty-three cottages built. A branch of the Eastern Railroad was built to the grounds in 1870, and in 1874 twenty cottages were erected, and many enlarged and improved; at the present date four hundred and fifty-two lots are rented. In 1886 the Naumkeag Street Railway extended its track to Asbury Grove. It has now become a summer resort, and the cottages are mostly occupied during the season. The meetings are held annually in the month



of August, continuing about a week, and are largely attended. The first president of the Association was Hon. Thomas P. Richardson, of Lynn, who died in 1881. In June, 1870, a meeting of the National Camp-meeting Association was held at the grove, in charge of the Rev. Mr. Inskip. A neat and commodious chapel was erected in 1884, for the convenience of those living on the grounds, in which religious services are held during the summer. A post-office has been established at the grove, called "Asbury Grove."

The success realized by the Association in disposing of lots for cottages, has encouraged land-owners in that vicinity to undertake similar enterprises. A few years since, a Mrs. Jones bought about eight acres lying on the Topsfield Road, southerly of the camp-ground, which she inclosed and divided into avenues and lots. Nearly all the lots in this inclosure, which is called Hamilton Park, have been sold, and substantial cottages built upon them. J. P. Lovering, Esq., has sold from his land, upon the opposite side of the road, a number of lots, upon which buildings will probably be erected the coming season.

**SCHOOLS.**—From the incorporation to the present date, the town has maintained four ungraded schools, one in each of the four districts, designated as the North, East, South and West.

Until 1827 the school committee consisted of eight members, who were chosen annually, and intrusted with the care of the schools. After that, five were chosen as a town's committee, and four, as a prudential committee. This plan held until 1857, when the present system of choosing three, one of whom goes out of office each year, was adopted in accordance with an act of the Legislature. Until 1844, the pastor of the church was chosen chairman of the town committee. The choice of prudential committees was made by the town or delegated to the several districts as seemed expedient. This committee was usually intrusted with the authority of selecting teachers. The amount raised for the support of schools at the first town-meeting, in 1794, was £36; from 1796 to 1799, the annual appropriation was \$150; 1800 to 1822, \$200; 1823 to 1832, \$300; 1833 to 1846, \$400; in 1847, \$500, from which amount the annual appropriation has been gradually increased to the present sum usually raised, of \$1000. For many years, the school year was divided into winter and summer terms of twelve weeks each, for the former, males, and for the latter, females, were usually employed as teachers. In the year 1849-50 the average wages paid to the female teachers were \$9.75 per month, and to the male teachers, thirty dollars per month. This system of employing male teachers for the winter and females for the summer, giving about twelve weeks in each term, continued until 1858, when the duty of contracting with teachers having been intrusted to the town committee, they decided to employ female teach-

ers through the year, fixing their salary at five dollars per week, and thus securing thirty weeks of schooling in each district. Four graduates of the normal school were employed. The committee for that year report: "The idea of employing female teachers in our winter schools has obtained but a recent footing, and very many, perhaps a majority, do not favor it, and honestly think that it is an innovation not adapted to our situation. Others, and their number is very respectable, think that females will do as well as males, and as their services cost less, favor their employment. These two opinions must clash in this town, until experience shall settle it, either for or against the employment of females." Public opinion, on this point, continued halting and uncertain for some time, until 1880, since then female teachers have been exclusively employed. For the year ending March, 1887, the annual appropriation for schools was twelve hundred dollars, which increased by the amount received from the Massachusetts School Fund of \$207.59, and the sum received from dog licenses of \$242.89, gave for the support of schools for that year \$1650.48, and a term of thirty-eight weeks for each school. The wages paid the teachers were thirty dollars per month during the summer, and thirty-six per month in the winter. But while the appropriation for schools has been thus increased the number of scholars has diminished, and the interest among the citizens of the town does not seem to be as general as it was fifty or sixty years ago. This may be due in part to narrowing the number of those who have a direct responsibility for the management of the schools. The effect of the policy of centralization in the direction of educational affairs, and of removing them from popular control, is illustrated on a small scale in this town. Formerly, instead of three only, nine citizens were directly charged with the care of the schools for the year, each district having at least two representatives on the board. It was also then the custom of the committee, at the beginning and close of the winter term, to officially visit each school, accompanied by others who were interested. Upon the entrance of this august body the entire school rose and remained standing until the committee were seated. The several classes were called up and examined; the writing-books, and copy-books containing arithmetical problems, were passed from hand to hand and carefully scrutinized. At the close, such members of the committee as were disposed made remarks, generally congratulatory and complimentary, though occasionally seasoned with adverse criticism. The visitors then retired, the school rising as on their entrance. The committee instead of separating at once to their homes, adjourned to the residence of one of their associates in the district, where they were entertained with liberal hospitality.

These social interviews afforded pleasant opportunities for the interchange of opinions upon the merits





and of individual pupils. Thus each scholar felt that the eyes of the town were upon him, and that anything marked in his scholarship or conduct was a subject of general notoriety.

Some of the teachers of those days are deserving of note in this connection. Among them are Temple Cutler, a son of Dr. Cutler; Nathaniel A. Lovering, who from his long service earned the title of "Master," and whose grave and dignified demeanor is recalled with pleasure by some of his pupils still living; Azor Brown, and especially his brother, Arza Brown, who for many successive winters was master of the South School. He is well remembered for his thorough drilling in the studies then pursued. He was especially interested in penmanship, and laid great stress on the formation of a fair, legible hand, and upon a mastery of spelling and arithmetic. He was a strict disciplinarian, and was fully in accord with Solomon as to the use of the rod, which he wielded with vigor. Among other teachers of more recent date, who were successful, were William A. Brown, Drs. Daniel S. and Justin Allen, brothers, and natives of the town, and Hon. Charles A. Sayward, of Ipswich. Among the female teachers of long experience and enviable success, who have now retired from the profession, Mrs. Sophia C. Preston and Mrs. Sophia F. Whipple deserve honorable mention.

**POLITICAL.**—The town was incorporated about five years after the ratification of the Federal Constitution by the State of Massachusetts, and, as might be supposed from the influence which Dr. Cutler would be likely to exert, was by a large majority, if not unanimously, of the Federalist party. It has been said that Dr. Faulkner, who came here in 1800, was the first Democrat in the town. In 1796, April 25th, while the ratification of the treaty with Great Britain, which was advocated by the Federalist party, was pending in Congress, and being discussed in the House of Representatives, the town voted to present a memorial to the House of Representatives, "Praying that they would make provisions to carry the treaty with Great Britain into complete and honorable effect." In 1812, the town gave expression to its opposition to the National Administration, respecting the conduct of the war with Great Britain. It was resolved, at a legal meeting held July 1, 1812, "That the inhabitants of this town, deeply impressed with the awful prospect which duration of war with Great Britain presents to view, are ready to express with freedom and firmness their entire disapprobation of this rash and unjustifiable act of the National Government," also resolved unanimously, "That in the opinion of this town a war with Great Britain under existing circumstances is unjust, unnecessary and impolitic." At the Presidential election that fall, the Federalists polled one hundred and eight votes against fourteen of their opponents. In 1828 the vote for President was thirty for Adams and one for Jackson. In 1832, the Clay electors received fifty-six votes

against twelve cast for the Jackson ticket. In 1836 the Democratic Presidential ticket received sixty-six votes and the Whig eighty-one. In 1840, the Whig vote was one hundred and seven; Democratic, fifty-six. In 1844, when Clay was again the Whig candidate, he received eighty-one votes, and his opponent, Polk, sixty-one. In 1848 three parties were in the field, the Whig, supporting General Taylor; the Democratic, General Cass; and the Free Soil, Martin Van Buren. Hamilton gave Taylor eighty-two, Van Buren, sixty-two, and Cass, twenty-six votes. Four years later, with substantially the same division of parties, the Whig vote was sixty-eight; Democratic, forty-six; Free Soil, thirty-five. In 1856, the Whig party, then nearly extinct, presented for its last candidate, Fillmore; the Democratic, Buchanan; and the young Republican party, just coming to the front, had nominated John C. Fremont. The vote of the town then stood for Fremont, one hundred and five; Buchanan, forty-one; Fillmore, twelve. Since that election the Republican candidates for the Presidency have received a majority of the votes, except in one instance when a plurality only was received.

The first representative chosen to the General Court from this town was Manasseh Cutler, for the year 1800. The list of those who have since been chosen representatives from Hamilton with the year of their service, is as follows: Robert Dodge, for 1801, '02, '03, '06, '08, '11, '12 and '13; John Safford, for 1809, '10 and '15; David Dodge, 1816 and 1817; Temple Cutler, 1826; Azor Brown, 1827, '28, '29 and '32; Zachariah Standley, 1833; Israel D. Brown, 1834 and 1836; William Brown, 1835; George Appleton, 1837; Allen W. Dodge, 1840 and 1841; Nehemiah Woodbury, 1842; Levi Patch, 1848; Choate Burnham, 1850; Benjamin Woodbury, 1852; William M. Smith, 1855. Mr. Smith was the last representative chosen by the voters of this town alone. The next, chosen to represent a district formed of Ipswich and Hamilton, were Daniel E. Safford, for 1861, and George Dane, for 1865. After a re-districting of the State in 1865, George B. Dodge was chosen to represent a district composed of Beverly, Manchester and Hamilton, for 1867, and Francis R. Allen, for 1873. For a district including Manchester, Hamilton, Essex and the Eighth Ward of Gloucester, there were chosen as representatives from this town, William A. Brown, for 1880, and Otis F. Brown, for 1886.

Jonathan Lamson was a delegate to the Constitutional Convention held in 1820, and Oliver S. Cressy to that held in 1853. Allen W. Dodge was elected to the State Senate for the years 1842 and 1844, and Daniel E. Safford, from the second Essex Senatorial District, for 1871 and 1872.

At the fall election in 1867, a sudden revolution in political sentiment was indicated by the vote for Governor, which stood—J. Q. Adams, Democrat, 79; A. H. Bullock, Republican, 62; whereas, the previous year, the Republican candidate, Bullock, received 73;





and the Democratic, Sweetzer, 17. This sudden change was wrought by the "P. L. L." movement, so-called.

In the town elections, party politics have not been influential in the choice of officers, who have generally been selected for personal qualifications, or upon some local issue. A notable instance to the contrary, however, occurred in 1855, when the Know-Nothing cyclone swept over the State. At the annual meeting in March of that year all the offices were filled from that party, but the following spring the town returned to its non-partisan methods. Officers found to be fitted for their duties have been re-elected, in many instances, for a succession of years. The office of Town Clerk furnishes an illustration, the incumbents of which have been Lemuel Brown, from 1793 to 1813; Azor Brown, son of Lemuel, 1814-1827; N. A. Lovering, 1828-1844; Joseph Lovering, 1845-1854; J. P. Lovering, 1855-1867, and in 1875; Isaac F. Knowlton, 1868-1874; Otis F. Brown, 1876-1887. Mr. Brown is a grandson of the first clerk.

MILITARY.—The citizens of Hamilton, as well as of the Hamlet, have ever been ready to respond cordially and promptly to the calls that, from time to time, have been made upon their patriotism to render military service. In 1755, several of the young men of the Hamlet were enlisted for service in the French War, and upon the eve of the expedition against Crown Point, Rev. Mr. Wigglesworth delivered a discourse in presence of these soldiers. His text was in part, "And the Lord shall cause thine enemies, that rise up against thee, to be smitten before thy face; they shall come out against thee one way and flee before thee seven ways." In this discourse he predicts disastrous consequences to the colonies if the French should be successful in the impending war, warning his hearers that the victors would not be content with simply civil jurisdiction over the conquered provinces, but would divide private property as a prey, and that far worse even they would enforce their religion on their "unhappy vassals," to quote his words, "and the French being bigots to the religion of the Church of Rome, that mother of harlots, there is not the least ground to hope (in case they should prevail over us), but that they would strenuously obtrude their monstrous idolatries and detestable errors, and even enforce them upon us with fire and faggot and all the other horrible forms of persecution." Thus urged to action in defense of their homes and their religion, the soldiers of the Hamlet went forth to meet the enemy. Among these were Capt. Stephen Whipple, Benjamin Pinder, Ebenezer Porter, Joseph Whipple, Nathaniel Adams, William Poland, Stephen Brown, Stephen Lowater, Benjamin Glasier, John Baker, John Marshall, Thomas Adams, John Boynton, Antipas Dodge, John Jones, Joseph Symonds, Amos Howard and Elijah Maxey; of the last five, Amos Howard and Maxey were severely wounded, and Dodge, Jones and Sy-

monds were killed at Lake George. In 1759, in the expedition against Canada, Capt. Stephen Whipple, of the Hamlet, was severely wounded, and his two lieutenants, Burnham and Low, of Chebacco, were mortally wounded. Robert Dodge, afterwards colonel, and Abraham Hobbs, of the Hamlet, were present at the taking of Quebec, and Hobbs heard General Wolfe say to his men when the French were near them, "Now, my boys, do your best."

In the War for Independence, the citizens of the Hamlet showed that they had not lost the courage and patriotism which were conspicuous when they came forward so readily to sustain the mother country in the French War.

When the news of the first conflict of arms at the battle of Lexington reached the Hamlet, Dr. Cutler, who was always ready for leadership, addressed the company of Minute-Men, which were already mustered here to march to the scene of conflict, and himself rode on horseback to Cambridge, in company with Mr. Willard, of Beverly, who was afterwards president of Harvard College, and reached there in time to see the enemy on their retreat to Boston. He afterwards served as chaplain in the regiment commanded by Col. Ebenezer Francis, for six months, and afterwards in Col. Titecomb's regiment at Long Island and elsewhere. Dr. Elisha Whitney, the physician of the parish, served as surgeon in the army. An interesting incident is related in the memorial of Allen W. Dodge, by Gail Hamilton, of his grandfather, Col. Robert Dodge, in connection with the breaking out of the war; it is in the words of A. W. Dodge: "My grandfather was a brave and patriotic man. He was out on duty during the whole of the War of the Revolution, leaving the farm to be managed by my grandmother and her boys. My grandfather was sowing barley on the hill when the news of the fighting reached him. He left his barley on the hill, mounted his horse, rode to the village; and though he knew not a note of martial music, he knew enough to make a noise and raise the neighbors; he seized the drum and tore up and down the silent country road, till his company was mustered, and was at Charlestown in two hours. My grandmother heard the noise of the cannon as long as she could stand it, and the next morning, alone, with horse and chaise drove across the country to Charlestown to see what had become of her husband." From these facts we can imagine somewhat of the anxious excitement which must have settled on the quiet village in those trying days, when the pastor, the physician and the young men were off at the war.

In 1775 the company of Minute-Men chose John Whipple, Jr., captain, John Thompson, second lieutenant, and Jonathan Lamson, ensign.

In 1776 Joseph Lufkin, who was in the western army, was killed by a tree, which fell on him and broke his neck while the soldiers were cutting wood preparatory to their night encampment.



Capt. John Whipple, who died May 28, 1832, at the age of eighty-nine, was very active in the struggle for independence, and at the surrender of Burgoyne, was an officer in the cavalry. In 1832 there were in town seven pensioners, who had served as soldiers in the Revolutionary War. The military spirit was kept alive in town in the early part of the present century by the organization of a military company. I find the following record of a pleasant incident in the history of the company:

"Hamilton, May 31, 1817.—On Wednesday last, the military company of Hamilton under the command of *Capt. Azor Brown*, in a neat uniform, provided at their own expense, together with the *Washington Hussars*, commanded by *Capt. Temple Cutler*, in their elegant uniform and equipments, paraded for military duty, and went through their various exercises and marches in a very handsome style. In the course of the afternoon, an elegant standard, furnished by the ladies of the town, was presented to *Capt. Brown's* company, by *Miss Sally Roberts* (afterwards *Mrs. Ephraim Safford*), with the following address: 'Sir, anxious to evince to the officers and soldiers of the Hamilton Infantry, the high estimation in which we hold the important service of the soldier, the Ladies of this town beg leave to communicate to them through you their high esteem of that spirit of military ardor which has prompted them thus handsomely to uniform and equip themselves. May this laudable spirit be conducive to our country's honor, while it affords to us that protection which our sex demands. And although our beloved country now rests under the blessings of the benignant smiles of peace, yet we approve of your adopting that maxim of the immortal *Washington*: 'In peace prepare for war.' Accept our warmest desires for your military success, and should you be even called into the field of actual service, in defense of our country's rights, be assured our hearts shall accompany you, and our smiles greet your return. And, as a further proof of these sentiments, we present you this standard as a faint testimonial of our esteem, confident that you will defend it with your best blood, and never permit it to be soiled by the hand of an enemy without a struggle. May it never be unfurled but in the defense of the sacred cause of justice, virtue, liberty and our country.' To which the following reply was made by *Ensign William Brown*. 'Miss, in behalf of the company to which I belong, I accept this standard as a pledge of your esteem. Be assured we consider it highly honorable in a soldier to merit the esteem of the fair sex. It is with the greatest pleasure we contemplate supporting our country's honor, and affording to you our protection; and though we feel ready to risk our lives in defense of our country, and esteem it our duty to follow the advice of him who was first in war, first in peace and first in the hearts of his countrymen, yet we rejoice with you in the smiles of peace. We accept, with gratitude, your

kind wishes for our military success; and whenever we may be called into the field of actual service, we trust that we shall show to you, and our beloved country, that our attachment is sincere. May we never disappoint your confidence, by deserting our posts in time of danger, but rally round this standard and pour out our blood, before it shall be abandoned. May we ever protect the fair hands that presented it, maintain our country's rights and transmit them unimpaired to posterity.'"

This company kept up its organization for about twenty years later. The last officers were *Isaac Knowlton*, captain; *Dennison Wallis*, lieutenant; and *Joseph Knowlton*, ensign.

On Saturday, April 18, 1861, the news of the bombardment of Fort Sumter reached the town. The spirit of patriotism, inherited from the fathers of the days of 1775 and '76, was aroused, and on April 24th, the citizens gathered on the green in front of the meeting-house, where the stars and stripes were raised on a liberty pole which had just been erected. A salute was fired and patriotic speeches were made by *A. W. Dodge*, *D. E. Safford*, *B. C. Putnam* of *Wenham*, and others.

In May, 1861, the town voted to raise the sum of one thousand dollars as a fund for the assistance of volunteers in the service of the United States, and also that each person volunteering shall receive the sum of twenty dollars as a bounty when actually enlisted, and ten dollars per month in addition to his pay from the government as long as he is engaged in such service, and also to provide for his family during said time. In August, 1862, a bounty of two hundred dollars was voted to volunteers. In July, 1864, the town voted to pay one hundred and twenty-five dollars to any one who shall enlist on the quota of the town on any call of the President after July 1, 1864, and before March 1, 1865. There were enlisted during the war seventy-five men on the quota of the town; of these, fifty-five were residents of the town and twenty non-residents.

The enrollment of the citizens of the town is as follows:

*Francis W. Brown*, 2d Regt.; enlisted May 15, 1861, for 3 yrs.  
*George W. Barker*, 14th Regt.; enlisted May 15, 1861, for 3 yrs.  
*Francis Barry*, Lt. Battery, enlisted May 15, 1861, for 3 yrs.  
*James A. Chase*, 2d Regt.; enlisted May 11, 1861, for 3 yrs.  
*Jos. C. Conant*, 2d Regt.; enlisted May 15, 1861, for 3 yrs.  
*Isaac W. Brown*, 31st Regt.; enlisted Dec. 8, 1861, for 3 yrs.  
*Isaac K. Dodge*, 21th Regt.; enlisted Dec. 8, 1861, for 3 yrs.  
*John T. Dodge*, 23d Regt.; enlisted Oct. 10, 1861, for 3 yrs.  
*John Brewer*, 14th Regt.; enlisted July, 1861, for 3 yrs.  
*Thomas J. Dodge*, 14th Regt.; enlisted Jan., 1862, for 3 yrs.  
*George W. Dodge*, enlisted Oct. 30, 1861, for 3 yrs.  
*Richard Foss*, 17th Regt.; enlisted Aug. 11, 1861, for 3 yrs.  
*Nathl. M. Foss*, 17th Regt.; enlisted Aug. 11, 1861, for 3 yrs.  
*Samuel Groten*, 11th Regt.; enlisted July 5, 1861, for 3 yrs.  
*Peter H. Jowder*, 24th Regt.; enlisted Nov., 1861, for 3 yrs.  
*David Morris*, 21th Regt.; enlisted Oct., 1861, for 3 yrs.  
*Josiah Oliver*, 14th Regt.; enlisted July, 1861, for 3 yrs.  
*Charles E. Riva*, 12th Regt.; enlisted April, 1861, for 3 yrs.  
*Nathl. W. Saunders*, 11th Regt., enlisted July, 1861, for 3 yrs.  
*Oliver H. Saunders*, 23d Regt., enlisted Oct., 1861, for 3 yrs.





John E. Whittredge, 23d Regt.; enlisted Oct., 1861, for 3 yrs.  
 David B. Wallis, 2d Regt.; enlisted Oct. 10, 1861, for 3 yrs.  
 Charles Porter, 11th Regt.; enlisted Dec. 19, 1861, for 3 yrs.  
 Ira P. Knowlton, 35th Regt.; enlisted Aug., 1862, for 3 yrs.  
 William Hana Dodge, 35th Regt.; enlisted Aug., 1862, for 3 yrs.  
 James E. Gowen, 40th Regt.; enlisted Sept., 1862, for 3 yrs.  
 Reuben Morris, 50th Regt.; enlisted Sept., 1862, for 9 mos.  
 Allen Webster Dodge, 50th Regt.; enlisted Sept., 1862, for 9 mos.  
 James W. Patch, 50th Regt.; enlisted Sept., 1862, for 9 mos.  
 George W. Bowen, 50th Regt.; enlisted Sept., 1862, for 9 mos.  
 Elam W. Burnham, 50th Regt.; enlisted Sept., 1862, for 9 mos.  
 Hiram D. Bond, 50th Regt.; enlisted Sept., 1862, for 9 mos.  
 John Weeks, 50th Regt.; enlisted Sept., 1862, for 9 mos.  
 Henry P. Brewer, 50th Regt.; enlisted Sept., 1862, for 9 mos.  
 Alpheus Dodge, 50th Regt.; enlisted Sept., 1862, for 9 mos.  
 Arthur B. Trassell, 50th Regt.; enlisted Sept., 1862, for 9 mos.  
 Augustus H. Andrews, 50th Regt.; enlisted Sept., 1862, for 9 mos.  
 John C. McDough, 50th Regt.; enlisted Sept., 1862, for 9 mos.  
 John L. Woodbury, 50th Regt.; enlisted Sept. 12, 1862, for 9 mos.  
 Austin S. Kinsman, 50th Regt.; enlisted Sept., 1862, for 9 mos.  
 Samuel A. F. Whipple, 40th Regt.; enlisted Aug., 1862, for 9 mos.  
 Amos L. Whipple, 40th Regt.; enlisted Aug., 1862, for 9 mos.  
 Zeno A. Appleton, 47th Regt.; enlisted Sept., 1862, for 9 mos.  
 Alvah Tibbetts, 2d Regt.; enlisted Dec., 1861, for 3 yrs.  
 Edward Hall, Heavy Art., enlisted July, 1864, for 3 yrs.  
 George Howe, enlisted Nov., 1861, for 1 yr.  
 Charles F. Hawkins, enlisted Nov., 1861, for 1 yr.  
 John B. Knowlton, enlisted Nov., 1861, for 1 yr.  
 Joseph W. Dodge, enlisted Nov., 1861, for 1 yr.  
 Daniel Trow, enlisted Nov., 1861, for 1 yr.  
 Livermore D. Rogers, enlisted Nov., 1861, for 1 yr.  
 George Smith, enlisted Nov., 1861, for 1 yr.  
 Freeman Appleton, enlisted Nov., 1861, for 1 yr.  
 Nathaniel Appleton, enlisted Nov., 1861, for 1 yr.  
 Thomas Mountain, enlisted May, 1861, for 1 yr.

Of these, nine died while in the service—they were James A. Chase, who died at Gettysburg hospital July 16, 1863, of wounds received in that battle; Isaac K. Dodge, son of Elbridge and Elizabeth K. Dodge, at Newbern, N. C., of fever; Thomas J. Dodge, son of Luke and Margaret Dodge, at Andersonville, aged thirty-six; George W. Dodge, May, 1862; John E. Whittredge, son of John and Martha Whittredge, at Newbern, N. C., July 8, 1862, of fever, aged twenty-one; William H. Dodge, at Berryville, September, 1864, aged thirty; Elam Wright Burnham, son of Elam and Joanna Burnham, at Baton Rouge, La., May 23, 1863, aged twenty-two; Austin S. Kinsman, son of Jacob and Abigail S. Kinsman, at Memphis, Tenn., August 1, 1863, of fever, aged twenty-two, when on his way home with the regiment; Alvah Tibbetts, son of John and Sarah Tibbetts, at Andersonville, August 3, 1864, aged twenty.

Those who can recall to mind these young men of promise, as they were when they left their homes, can realize what a contribution Hamilton, like other towns, made to sustain the country in its peril.

**BIOGRAPHICAL.**—In a town like Hamilton, in which the business is almost exclusively farming, many of the young men are unable to find useful occupation, and, from necessity as well as choice, seek other fields for their talents and enterprise. Many of these have gained an honorable name by their success, and have reflected distinction on their native town. Of such are:

*Francis Dodge*, son of Colonel Robert Dodge, born here in 1782. He was a successful merchant in

Georgetown, D. C., where he died about thirty-five years ago, leaving a large estate. He was much interested in his native town, which he often revisited. The Gibney farm, formerly known as the Dodge farm, was owned by him at his death.

*Daniel Safford*, son of Samuel and Priscilla Safford, was born here October 30, 1792. He learned the trade of blacksmith of his brother in Salem, removed to Boston in 1812, when he commenced business. He was a skillful mechanic, as well as a shrewd and energetic man of business. He was widely known for his earnest Christian character and great benevolence. He became first known to the churches, where his praise has dwelt ever since, in 1826, by a contribution of one thousand dollars to the American Educational Society. He filled various public stations with great credit to himself. He was one of the founders of Mount Holyoke Female Seminary, a member of the Prudential Committee of the American Board of Commissioners for Foreign Missions and an active member of other charitable and benevolent societies. He died February 3, 1856.

*Rev. Isaac Brown*, son of Lemuel and Lucy Brown, was graduated at Amherst College in 1833. He studied for the ministry at the Theological Seminary at Andover, and was pastor of the church in West Gloucester. He was a man of marked piety, and possessed a singularly pure and earnest Christian character. But the fervent spirit wasted the feeble frame. He died, at Hamilton, of consumption September 14, 1841, aged 31.

*Rev. Isaac Woodbury*, son of Captain John Woodbury, was well-known as a clergyman of the Baptist denomination.

*Solomon S. Whipple*, son of Deacon Matthew Whipple, graduated at Dartmouth College in 1811, and practised law in Salem.

*David Roberts*, son of Samuel Roberts, born in 1801, was a lawyer in Salem, and was twice elected Mayor of that city.

*Rufus P. Cutler*, son of Temple Cutler and grandson of Dr. Cutler, born in 1814, was graduated at Yale College in 1838, and was the valedictorian of his class. He was a prominent clergyman of the Unitarian denomination, and was settled at Portland, Maine, Charleston, South Carolina, and at San Francisco and Oakland, in California. He died in Brooklyn, New York, in 1878. He was never married.

*Francis Dane*, son of John and Fanny Dane, who was born here, August 6, 1819, was an eminently successful shoe manufacturer and merchant. He began his business career in South Danvers, now Peabody, about 1840. After the first few years during which his progress was slow, his energy, industry and sagacity pushed him rapidly forward to success. In 1857, he began business in Boston, and in 1860 removed his residence to that city. He lost heavily soon after the war broke out, as his dealings had been largely with the South, but in after years his wealth increased rapidly,



and at his death he left a large estate. He was generous in disposition and unusually given to hospitality, and greatly enjoyed seeing his friends about him and in contributing to their pleasure. Some years before his death, he bought the family homestead at the north part of the town, and spent his money with a lavish hand in remodeling and refitting the dwelling-house, in erecting barns, and, especially, in building a substantial stone wall facing the road, that will last for generations. In the summer of 1875, he was suddenly stricken down with disease and died July 30th. He married Miss Zeruiah Brown of Hamilton, October 10, 1842. The New England Shoe and Leather Association, the trustees of Dummer Academy, the Essex Agricultural Society, and various financial institutions, with which he was connected, took appropriate notice of his decease by resolutions expressive of their sense of loss. His funeral was largely attended. The natives of the town, now living, who have achieved honorable success, we will leave to be cared for by the future historian.

There are also those who have been identified with the town by residence and who have filled the part of useful citizens. The first physician of the town was Dr. Nathan Lakeman, who settled here in the year of the incorporation, 1793. He was a native of Exeter, New Hampshire. In 1794 he married Elizabeth, youngest daughter of Peter Frye, of Salem, who died May 17, 1796, aged 29. Dr. Lakeman removed to Gloucester in 1800, afterwards to Manchester, thence to Beverly where he died. He lived in the house now owned by Benjamin Courtney.

Dr. Enoch Faulkner, who succeeded him, came here in 1800. He was a native of Andover. He was a popular physician, and built up a large practice in this and neighboring towns. He was interested in local and political affairs, and was largely influential in organizing the Democratic party in town. He married Mrs. Mary Lord, a lady of unusual gifts and graces by which she attained leadership in society. She survived him for many years, and died at the advanced age of ninety. Dr. Faulkner lived in the house at the corner of the Main and Essex roads, which is known as Faulkner's Corner. He died March 16, 1830, aged sixty-three.

Dr. Oliver S. Cressy commenced practice here about 1834. He was a native of New Hampshire. He was well liked as a physician, and was an active, stirring citizen. He was a member of the Constitutional Convention of 1853, and died in September of that year, shortly after the adjournment of the convention. He left a widow and three sons. His age at his death was forty-eight. Dr. Daniel S. Allen, who succeeded him, is a native of the town; he continued here in the practice of his profession until the Civil War, when he was commissioned as surgeon in one of the regiments. After the close of the war he resumed the practice of his profession in Saugus, where he

now resides. For several years following, in the absence of a local practitioner, Dr. J. L. Robinson, of Wenham, was generally employed by the citizens, until his removal to Manchester, N. H. Since that time Dr. S. E. Thayer has been the resident physician.

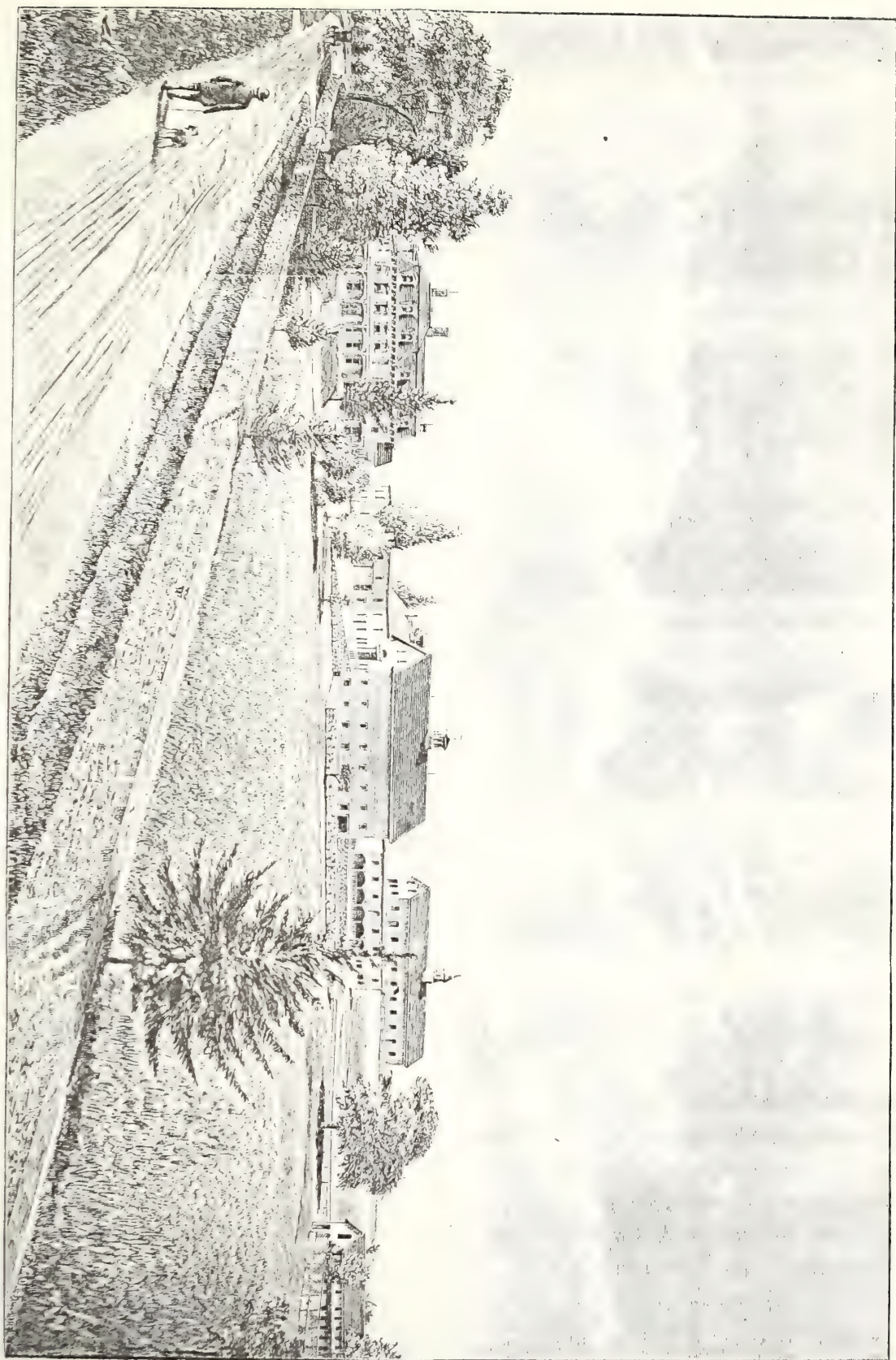
Hon. Allen W. Dodge, a most valuable and highly esteemed citizen, died May 17, 1878. Mr. Dodge was born in Newburyport, in April, 1804, and was a grandson of Col. Robert Dodge, frequently mentioned in these annals. He was educated at Phillips Exeter Academy and at Harvard College, from which he graduated in 1826. Among his classmates were Rev. Drs. Nehemiah Adams, Andrew P. Peabody, Richard Hildreth (the historian), Robert Rantoul, Jr., Samuel H. Walley, and other distinguished men. He studied and practiced law in New York City for several years, with good prospects of success. In 1834, he experienced such a change in his religious opinions and feelings, that he abandoned the profession of law, and commenced the study for the ministry, at Andover Seminary, in the class of 1838. He was never ordained. He preached on several occasions, but owing to failure of health soon relinquished his second profession. He then settled in Hamilton on the farm of his ancestors, and commenced an highly useful and honorable career. His service in the Legislature has been already mentioned. He was intimately connected with the Essex Agricultural Society as secretary, and afterwards as president. He was, also, a member of the State Board of Agriculture, a trustee of the State Agricultural College, and was the first president of the Essex Congregational Club. In 1852, he was chosen treasurer for the county of Essex, which office he held until his death.

He was warmly interested in public affairs, and was enthusiastically loyal to every institution which claimed his allegiance, whether it was Nation, State or his own town, with the parish and church of which he was a member. In the Civil War, no citizen was more intensely anxious for the success of the national cause or more ready to assist it. He was wise in counsel, and energetic in action. No trait in his character was more attractive than his quick and sincere sympathy with the young who were entering on the business of life, and his advice was prompted by a genuine interest in their welfare.

Mr. Dodge's voice was often heard in public, and his addresses were conspicuous for their vigorous presentation of sound, sensible opinions, seasoned by humor, and by pointed illustrations drawn from common life. His genial temperament, combined with a fund of information on subjects of common converse, made him a delightful companion. Like all men of his keenly sensitive and impressionable nature, he was subject to the alternations of buoyancy and depression. An highly appreciative memorial of him was prepared by his friend and neighbor, Gail Hamilton. His wife and two children survive him.







"LANE FARM."

RESIDENCE OF A P. GARDNER.  
HAMILTON, MASS.





*Miss Mary A. Dodge* (Gail Hamilton), who has secured widely extended fame by the brilliancy and vigor of her writings, is a native and resident of the town. She is the daughter of James B. and Hannah Stanwood Dodge. Her father was of Hamilton descent, and her mother was a member of a prominent Ipswich family.

Among her publications are "Country Living and Country Thinking," "Gala Days," "A New Atmosphere," "Battle of the Books," "Summer Rest," "Stumbling Blocks," "Wool Gathering" and "Woman's Wrongs," as well as numerous contributions to newspapers and magazines on the topics of the time.

**POPULATION—BUSINESS.**—The population of the town has varied but little since the incorporation. From causes already referred to, the tendency has been to emigration rather than to immigration. Dr. Felt states that the population of the Hamlet in 1773 was 870. Since the incorporation it has varied as follows: In 1810, 789; 1820, 802; 1830, 748; 1855, 891; 1865, 799; 1877, 790; 1880, 335; 1885, 850. The valuation was in 1831, \$211,888; in 1865, \$481,423; 1872, \$500,020; 1887, \$751,000.

As has been stated, the business of the town has, from the first, been essentially farming. Manufacturing has not been attempted to any large extent. About 1831, a stone factory was built on the Hamilton side of Ipswich River, and, also, a large stone dwelling-house for the accommodation of operatives; it was known for many years as "Manning's Mills," from the name of the builder. Since that time the manufacture of woolen goods has been carried on with varied success. In 1864, there were manufactured fifty-five thousand pairs of army and ribbed socks, and woolen goods to the value of one hundred and thirty-five thousand dollars. These mills were totally destroyed by fire January 12, 1884, and have not been rebuilt. For several years previous to their destruction they were operated by the Willowdale Manufacturing Company in the making of woolen blankets; a large number of operatives were employed, and quite a village of cottages was built in the vicinity of the factory. The population of the town was from this cause increased so that in 1880 it was about one hundred above the average for the last century. The valuation of the real estate and machinery of the corporation in 1883, the year previous to the fire, was about twenty thousand dollars.

Further down the Ipswich River there is a saw and grist-mill, near Warner's bridge, so called; this was formerly known as Dodge's mills, and afterwards as Smith's mills; it is now owned by C. J. Norwood.

The opening of the Essex Branch Railroad gave the opportunity for the development of a new industry in the eastern part of the town that is, the cutting, storing and shipping of ice. The Drivers' Union Ice Company have built ice-houses at the northerly point of Chebacco Lake, near the railroad. This affords employment for quite a number of hands,

mainly in the winter season. The value of the real and personal estate of the company, for the year 1885, was nineteen thousand seven hundred and fifty dollars.

This new railroad, which was opened in 1872, from the Wenham and Hamilton station to Essex, gave increased and much needed accommodation to the residents in the center and eastern part of Hamilton. There are two stations for the town on the road; one for the centre, at the crossing of the highway by Miles River, near Otis F. Brown's, and one for the east part near the house of William Woodbury.

The owners of the meadow lands lying on Miles River, most of whom are residents of Hamilton, were incorporated by the name of the Miles River Meadow Company, by an act of the Legislature, April 24, 1880. The purpose of this act was to secure better co-operation among the owners in removing obstructions from the river, and thus improving the drainage of their lands.

Before the extensive use of machinery in shoe manufacturing made it necessary that all the work should be done at the factory, a number of the citizens found employment in shoemaking. The town was dotted over with small shoe-shops, each accommodating two or three workmen; some of these followed the business for the entire year, others only during the winter interval between the seasons of active farm labor. Some carried on the business more extensively, and might be ranked as shoe manufacturers, although there was no large factory. In 1837, the value of boots and shoes manufactured was estimated at fourteen thousand seven hundred and two dollars. This industry has gradually dwindled away, until, under the changed conditions of business, it has entirely disappeared.

A business still more remote in point of time—that of vessel-building—was three-fourths of a century ago carried on considerably in the eastern part of the town. Fishing-boats, from ten to twenty tons, were built and hauled to the Chebacco waters by teams of cattle. Captain John Woodbury, an active and energetic man, who is still remembered for his brusque manner and kindness of heart, built some of these boats at his homestead, now owned by his son, John T. Woodbury.

In 1859, Mr. John Whipple, a native of Worcester County, but a descendant of a branch of the Whipple family of this town, bought the estate near Chebacco Pond, formerly the property of Edmund Knowlton. This place, attractive in its natural features, he greatly improved; he built a large house, since known as the Chebacco House, and fitted up the grounds with special reference to the entertainment of pleasure-parties. He made his establishment very popular, and until the time of his death carried on a successful business, which has since been continued by his sons.

The opening of the Eastern Railroad through the



town to Ipswich, in 1839, caused a great change in the mode of public travel, and was also the indirect cause of the disappearance of the public-houses, the necessity for which ceased to exist with the withdrawal of the stage-line from Newburyport to Boston. Dr. Felt, in his history, says,—“In 1774, a stage with four horses, from Newburyport to Boston, rode through Ipswich twice a week in going and the same in returning. This was an accommodation exceeding any of preceding years. But it was far less than now exists. Such facilities for traveling are twenty times greater than they were then.” At the time of Dr. Felt's history, a large number of stages passed over the main highway daily; the arrival of these vehicles, with their loads of passengers, was a prominent feature in the life of the quiet village. Of the public-houses referred to, there were then two in town,—one, near the Ipswich line, was kept by Jacob Brown; the other, near the meeting-house, designated by a sign-post, on which hung a portrait of Governor Hancock, was kept by Israel D. Brown. An incident in the early history of the town shows the popularity of this tavern, then kept by Captain Daniel Brown. At the first election of Dr. Cutler to Congress, in 1800, the records show that Dr. Cutler received sixty-five votes, Joseph Roberts, one, and “*old George Kezer*,” one. Whether this Kezer was a mythical personage, or a reality of unsavory reputation, is not known, but the ballot was evidently regarded as an insult to the worthy doctor. For this an apology was offered, which was unanimously accepted, and then the meeting, with equal unanimity, voted to adjourn, *immediately*, to Captain Brown's, where, probably, the means were taken to completely restore harmonious feeling.

A post-office was established in 1803, and for many years was kept at this place.

The entire length of highways is about thirty miles; from this it is seen that the duty of constructing and maintaining the roads imposes a heavy burden on the town. For many years, somewhat in the past, projects for building new roads, and for altering and improving those already built, were frequent; but of late, little has been attempted beyond keeping the existing highways in repair. The clearing of roads from snow is an uncertain, and, often, a large item of expense; for instance, for the year ending March, 1875, the expense on this account was \$56.92; 1877, \$66.14; 1876, \$961.65; 1874, \$1857.42. The last road constructed was that laid out in 1886, as a town-way, leading from the main road opposite the Wenham and Hamilton Railroad Station to the Topfield Road. This was built mainly for the accommodation of the horse railway, in order to avoid two railroad crossings.

**BURIAL-GROUND.**—In 1705, the Hamlet was granted by the town of Ipswich one acre of common land for a burial-place. This was, the next year, exchanged with John Dane for one-half acre, which is a part of

the present burial-ground. This lot was described in the deed as bounded by the southeasterly side of the road leading to Wenham, fronting on said road eight rods, southerly on land of John Hubbard ten rods, and on the easterly end, eight rods, and on the northerly side, ten rods, by Dane's land. John Dane, the grantor, died in 1707, and was buried in this lot; the stone erected to his memory bears the oldest date of any in the cemetery. The inscription is “*Memento mori, Fugit Hora*. Here lyes ye body of John Dane, Sen., who departed this life December 23d, 1707, in the 65th year of his age.” This John was the son of a John Dane who emigrated to this country about 1635. He was born in Ipswich about 1644, and lived at the Hamlet. In 1692 he was a juror in witch cases. He married Abigail Warner, and was an ancestor of the Dane family residing in this town. In 1763, John Hubbard gave one-quarter of an acre as an addition to the ground, for which he received the thanks of the parish, by a vote, passed February 3, 1763. In 1797 it was voted to enlarge the ground, and build a face wall in front, and to purchase of Mr. Roberts one-fourth of an acre at fifty cents per rod. In 1846, the ground was further enlarged by the purchase of one hundred and forty-four rods of Jacob Kinsman and wife, which included an adjoining lot in the rear, and also the lane which is now the carriage entrance to the cemetery. In 1866, the cemetery was extended at the easterly end by an acre, and, in 1886, by an acre and a fourth, purchased of Daniel Roberts.

**WIGGLESWORTH CEMETERY.**—About the year 1850 several of the citizens purchased one of the lots into which the old parsonage ground was divided to be used as a private burial-place. This was consecrated by appropriate services as the Wigglesworth Cemetery; Rev. J. H. Mordough making an address. For several years no burials have been made in this ground, and the remains of those already interred are being removed to the town cemetery. It will probably soon be abandoned.

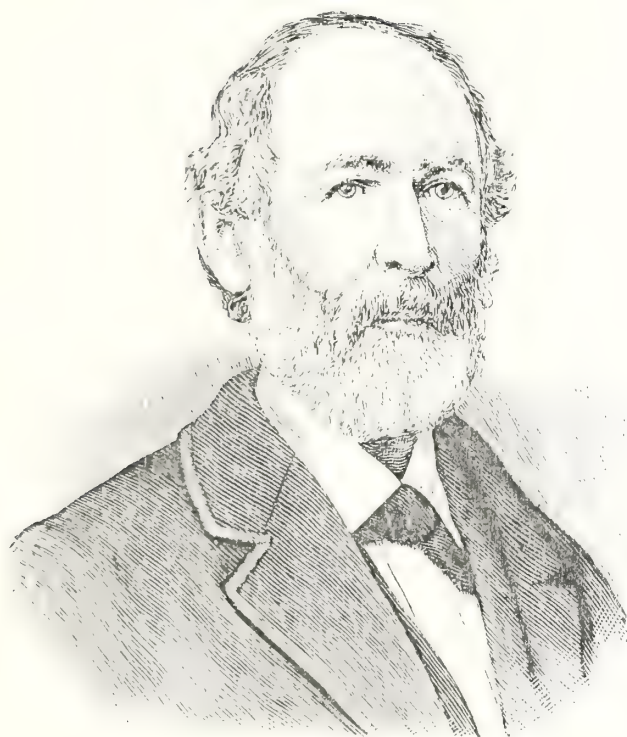
**MISCELLANEOUS.**—Since 1881 when George C. Rankins, an enterprising young man, bought of the Asbury Grove Association a tract of land on the Topfield road, adjoining the Eastern Railroad, a marked impulse has been felt in business in that part of the town. Mr. Rankins started the coal business, and in 1883, Daniel C. Smith leased part of the premises to be used as a lumber-yard. A severe loss was sustained by the death of Mr. Rankins in 1884. Since that time Mr. Smith has carried on both lumber and coal business.

Within a few years eleven dwelling-houses have been erected in this immediate vicinity, and near the railroad station; and five are now in process of erection. Two shops have also been built, and a large building, one hundred feet in length, for business purposes.

The town now seems to be progressing as favorably as at any time in its history. The report of the select-







*William A. Brown,*



men, made March, 1887, shows the expenses of the town for the current year to have been \$6055.16, of which \$1653.37 was for roads and bridges; \$649.37, for removing snow; \$583.96, enlarging and improving the cemeteries; \$662.78, for poor; \$1339.00, for schools.

The present Board of Selectmen are James F. Gwinn, John L. Woodbury and Isaac F. Knowlton; Town Clerk, Otis F. Brown; School Committee, Otis F. Brown, Jonathan Lamson and Andrew Haraden.

## BIOGRAPHICAL.

### WILLIAM A. BROWN.

William A. Brown is the son of William and Lydia L. Brown, and has always been a resident of Hamilton, where he was born September 21, 1820.

Mr. Brown has for many years been prominent and active in town affairs, and has held most of the local offices. He has served on the Board of Selectmen at different times, fifteen years in all; during the war he was chairman of the board and was active and efficient in promoting enlistments. He has been a member of the School Committee, and for seventeen years was a teacher in the schools of this town for the winter terms.

In 1880 the district, of which Hamilton was a part, was represented by him in the Legislature.

Mr. Brown is a farmer, and has also been considerably employed as a surveyor of land. The farm in the northern part of the town, now owned and occupied by him, has been the property of his family through five generations.

The first of his ancestors who owned the estate was Samuel Brown, who was the grandson of Edward Brown, an immigrant from England, but the date of whose settlement here is not exactly known. Edward Brown died probably in 1659, as his will was proved in 1660.

## CHAPTER XCIX.

### WENHAM.

BY SIDNEY PERLEY.

*First Settlement—General History—Physicians—Cemeteries—Railroads—Religious History—Military History—Schools, Libraries, etc.—Business and Manufacturing Interests—Notable Residents and Notices—Civil List.*

"Forlissing Townes and Churches now in wilderness they wander,  
First Plymouth and then Salem next were placed for asunder;  
Woburn, Wenham, Redding, built with little Silver Mettle,  
Andover, Haverhill, Berrie banks,<sup>1</sup> their habitation settle."

THUS wrote the author of "Good News from New England," in reference to our early towns, showing the

alacrity of our ancestors in establishing new homes and new governments, with little means, except the strong arm, undaunted will, and faith in the prosperity of their enterprise. Wenham was early fixed upon for a settlement; its large lake, its streams, hills and meadows being very attractive to the English emigrants. John Dunstan, Esq., an English gentleman, who visited the town in 1686, writes thus concerning it: "Wenham is a delicious paradise; it abounds with all rural pleasures, and I would choose it of all other towns in America to dwell in. The lofty trees on each side of it are a sufficient shelter from the winds, and the warm sun so kindly ripens both the fruits and flowers, as if the spring, the summer and the autumn had agreed together to thrust winter out of doors." Josselyn, in 1663, says of it: "Wenham is an inland town, very well watered, lying between Salem and Ipswich; consisteth most of men of judgment in *re rustica*, and well stored with cattle."

It is to-day a model town. It is supplied with nearly all modern conveniences, numbering among them the steam and street-cars, telegraph and telephone, churches, a town hall, public library and stores of various kinds; and its excellent roads passing across the shady plain and over gracefully curving hills, to the peaceful crystal lakes, present scenery that is rarely surpassed in beauty. The principal features of its topography are Lord's Hill, which is the highest elevation in the town furnishing a grand view of sea and land; and Moulton's Hill, which gives a less extended but more charming picture of Cedar Pond and the dark-green foliage above the swamp beyond. Wenham Lake, with its reputation for purity, gained in all the continents, is the distinguishing natural feature of the town. It contains about three hundred and twenty acres, two-thirds of which lie in Wenham, and the remaining third in Beverly. Wenham Lake ice is so pure that a newspaper can be read through a cake of it two feet thick; and its preserving qualities have been famous from its borders to all tropical lands. Wenham Great Swamp, covering about two thousand acres, about fifteen hundred of which are in Wenham and the remainder in Topsfield and Hamilton, is a notorious variation in the natural formation of the surface of the town. Its proprietors held it in common, and, Jan. 13, 1755, were incorporated by an act of the General Court for the securing of the growth of wood and timber thereon. By several legislative acts the corporate body existed until 1779. It was again incorporated March 21, 1836, the act of incorporation containing regulations in reference to fences and field drivers.

The territory of Wenham is mentioned for the first time in 1637. John Williams, a ship-carpenter by trade, was arrested in Ipswich for theft some time before, and imprisoned for his crime. He broke out of the jail with one John Hoddy, and they traveled together in the way to Ipswich. When they had

<sup>1</sup> Portsmouth.—Strawberry-banks.



reached the valley by the border of the lake, near where the bound-stone between Beverly and Wenham stands, by the highway leading from Wenham Centre to North Beverly, Williams murdered his companion, and took away what he had, even his clothing, which was bloody. He put on the clothing, and went in it to Ipswich. He was there apprehended, but would make no confession until a week after Huddy's body was found. He was tried, convicted and executed, by hanging, in Boston September 28, 1637. This is said to have been the first murder which occurred among the European settlers of the colony.

The next mention that we find made of this region is that of the preaching of Hugh Peters' sermon, about 1638, on a small conical hill, which formerly stood between the highway and the lake, where the ice-houses of Addison Gage & Company stand. To the few original settlers, the notorious Hugh Peters preached the Gospel here from the text, "Enon, near Salim, for there was much water there."—John iii. 23. This settlement was then called *Enon*, and Peters was the pastor of the church in Salem, a part of which town Wenham then was. He had particular friends among the early settlers of Wenham, one of whom Dea. Charles Gott, became his agent here after he had returned to England to become involved in the commonwealth and to suffer a terrible death as a regicide.

There is a tradition in the Killam family that the first three settlers of Wenham were one of the early Fiske settlers, Austin Killam and Richard Goldsmith. The first settlement must have been made about 1635. It was at first known as Salem village as well as Enon, and was incorporated as a distinct town May 10, 1643, in the following words: "It is ordered that Enon shalbee called Wenham. Wenham is granted to bee a towne, & hath liberty to send a deputy." The name is supposed to have been taken from one of the two parishes near Ipswich, in England, of the same name, from whence probably some of the early settlers came. The following is a list of the settlers of the town down to 1700: John Abby, 1644; Mr. Auditor, 1646; John Badger, 1645; John Barr, 1679; Joseph Batchelder, from Canterbury, England, 1644; John Beaman, 1669; John Berry, 1696; John Bette, 1666; Goodman Bibber, 1692; Richard Braybrook, 1674; Edmund Bridges, 1661; John Browne, 1695; George Byam, 1648; John Carpenter, 1676; John Clarke, 1665; Richard Coy, 1659; Robert Cue, 1696; John Dennis, 1669; Richard Dodge, 1644; Elijah Dubble-dee, 1696; John Edwards, 1663; Rice Edwards, 1653; James Ellis, 1663; Daniel Epps, 1699; John Fairfield, 1641; John Fiske, 1642; Phineas Fiske, 1642; William Fiske, from Boston, 1643; Samuel Foster, 1650; Joseph Fowler, from Ipswich, 1670; James Friend, 1692; William Geare, 1644; Joseph Gerrish, from Newbury, 1674; Richard Goldsmith, 1644;

Charles Gott, from Salem, 1644; Robert Gowen, 1650; Joseph Hacker, 1696; Henry Haggett, 1657; Robert Hawes, 1654; Joseph Herriek, 1691; Robert Hibbert, 1674; Thomas Hobbs, 1672; Mr. Hubbard, 1642; William Hultt, 1659; Isaac Hull, from "Bass River," 1681; John Hunkin, 1674; Richard Hutton, 1653; Alice Jones, 1651; William Jones, 1687; Edward Kemp, from Dedham, 1652; Austin Killam, from Dedham, 1649; Richard Kimball, from Ipswich, 1656; John Knowlton, 1679; William Knowlton, 1678; Mordcai Larcum, 1682; John Leach, 1681; Robert Mackelliflin, 1661; Alexander Maxey, 1659; James Moulton, 1644; Antipas Newman, from Rehoboth, 1657; Abner Ordway, 1659; Edmund Patch, 1654; John Perkins, 1679; Richard Pettingell, 1649; John Poland, 1656; Samuel Porter, from Salem, 1657; Esdras Reade, 1643; Nicholas Rich, 1687; Theophilus Rix, 1688; John Rogers, 1653; William Sawyer, 1643; John Severett, 1695; John Shepley, 1655; Samuel Smith, 1642; John Soolard, a Frenchman, 1652; Mr. Sparrowhawk, 1645; Edward Spaulding, 1654; Robert Symonds, 1685; Peter Tompson, 1695; Francis Urselton, 1655; Edward Waldron, 1653; Joshua Wallis, 1698; Jeremiah Watts, 1665; Philip Welsh, 1675; Thomas White, 1654; Edward Whittington, 1687; William Williams, 1673; Ezekiel Woodward, 1672; and Christopher Young, 1644.<sup>1</sup>

A church was organized the year following the incorporation of the town, a militia company was soon afterward formed, and the town government was begun. Highways were early laid out. What was, much later, the turnpike from Salem to Ipswich, was laid out in 1644 or 1645. November 13, 1644, the General Court ordered "that the comission's for laying out the roade way between Ipswich & Salem shall have power to alter the way layde out beneath Wenham towards the east, & to lay it through y<sup>e</sup> towne if they shall iudge it meete."

The people of Wenham obtained a deed of their territory from the Indians, bearing date December 10, 1700. The aborigines who claimed a title to the soil were Samuel English, Joseph English and John Umpee, heirs of Masconomet, the late sagamore of Agawam. The Indians were paid for their interest in the land four pounds and sixteen shillings. The early settlers were forbidden to sell arms and ammunition to the savages; and Robert Gowing was, in 1650, fined ten pounds for selling a gun to an Indian.

The burial-place of the first settlers was the same that is now used as the cemetery of the town. The earliest mention of this cemetery made in the records is in the year 1681; and tradition says that many years ago there was a gravestone in existence in the yard bearing date 1642. The oldest stone now standing there bears the following inscription:—

<sup>1</sup> These are the years of the first mention of the settlers' names on the records.





HERE LYES Y<sup>E</sup> BODY OF  
SARAH FAIRFIELD  
WIFE TO WALTER  
FAIRFIELD DEC<sup>r</sup> DEC<sup>r</sup>  
Y<sup>E</sup> 18<sup>th</sup> 1710  
IN Y<sup>E</sup> 71<sup>st</sup> YEAR  
OF HER AGE.

The cemetery was originally probably a part of Rev. Mr. Fiske's farm. It has been enlarged several times. The first grave-digger, as far as the records show, was John Severett, who was chosen by the town in 1694-95. In 1863, Rev. David O. Allen, the missionary, gave in his will five hundred dollars as a fund, the income of which to be applied to keeping the cemetery in proper condition. In the westerly part of the town is a private cemetery belonging to the Fairfield family,

"A place where all things mournful meet,  
And yet the sweetest of the sweet,  
The stillest of the still."

Dodge's Row Cemetery in Beverly, a part of which is thought to be in Wenham, has been used by Wenham people for one hundred and fifty years.

Extravagance was not tolerated in the early days, even in Wenham, where Thomas Fiske's wife was presented to court for wearing a tiffany, in the tenth month of 1652. Her sentence was ten shillings fine and two shillings and sixpence fees of court. Even rich men's wives could not wear silks more freely than others. It was self-evident that a tiffany could not be put on for its warmth, and there might have been moral reasons forbidding its being worn.

The little settlement had its inn from its earliest days. The town-meetings were usually held in the church, and adjournments to the tavern sometimes occurred.

Wenham never gave sufficient inducement to a lawyer to settle there in practice; but physicians have been residents of the town nearly all the years that have passed since the settlement was begun. The first minister, Rev. John Fiske, was the first medical man here. He went to Chelmsford with a portion of his church in 1654. Dr. John Fiske, a distant relative of the minister, was born here in 1654, and remained here in the practice of both physic and surgery. He removed in 1694 to Milford, Conn., where he practiced until 1715, when he died. He was somewhat eminent in his day. Dr. John Newman was here in 1695 and 1696, and Dr. Gott in 1704. No physician is again mentioned until Dr. William Fairfield began practice about 1760. He was born in Wenham September 4, 1732, and first practiced physic and surgery with good success in the French War. He resided on the William Porter place, at length removing to Salem, where he was noted for his proficiency and skill, and the excellence of his private character. He died of the small-pox October 10, 1773, at the age of forty-one years. Dr.

Isaac Spofford, who was born in Georgetown, then a part of Rowley, April 10, 1752, having studied medicine with Dr. Brickett, of Haverhill, settled in the practice of his profession in Wenham, but soon removed to Beverly, and finally became a surgeon in the army of the Revolution. Dr. Barnard Tucker, a native of Newbury, graduated at Harvard College in 1789, and, after practicing medicine for several years in Beverly, removed to Wenham, where he lived upon the place lately occupied by Charles Brown. He was familiar with the French and Spanish languages, which he taught; and had a kind heart, gentle disposition and simple manners. He paid but little attention to medicine, and at length removed to his native town. Dr. Samuel Dodge, by invitation of the town, settled here as a physician and surgeon in 1826. He was born in Wenham February 23, 1800. He remained here with general satisfaction to the people until October 30, 1833, when he died at the age of thirty-three years. While Dr. Dodge was practicing medicine here Dr. Sylvanus Brown came and stayed two years—1830 and 1831, and doubtless finding that the town could not support two physicians, removed to and died in Derry, N. H. After Dr. Dodge's decease, the next physician who settled here was Dr. Nathan Jones, who was a native of Lyndeborough, N. H., having been born April 25, 1794. He removed to Beverly in April, 1858, and died there March 11, 1860, at the age of sixty-five years, being interred in Wenham. A few years contemporary with Dr. Jones was Dr. Myron O. Allen, son of Rev. David O. Allen, missionary to India. Dr. Allen was born in Bombay in 1831, and graduated at Yale College in 1852, subsequently graduating at the Pennsylvania Medical College at Philadelphia. He commenced practice here in July, 1855, and removed to Lowell in 1860, dying there of a cancer August 1, 1861, at the age of thirty years. The next physician to settle here was Dr. John L. Robinson, who was born in Pembroke, N. H., January 3, 1835, came here from Manchester, N. H., in 1859, and remained here until 1879, when he sold out his practice to Dr. Samuel Ezra Thayer, and moved back to Manchester. Dr. Thayer was born in Trumansburgh, N. Y., in 1844, and graduated at Buffalo University in 1869. He practiced first in Southampton, Mass., seven and one-half years, then in Williamsburg about one year, and came to Wenham January 29, 1879. He removed to Hamilton some three or four months later, but continued his practice in Wenham until February, 1884. Dr. Frank A. Cowles, the present resident physician, was born in Elmira, N. Y., July 20, 1859, and graduated from the medical department of New York University in 1881. He practiced medicine at first in New York City. After staying there two years he came to Wenham, in January, 1884, and has since practiced here.

In connection with the physicians of the town are the apothecaries. Calvin B. Dodge, the first apothecary,



cary in Wenham, began business in 1862 or 1863, in a shop which he erected on land of Henry Perkins for that purpose. In 1864 he sold out to Benjamin F. Johnson, who, after a few years, removed the shop to its present location, opposite the engine house, and continued the business until 1873, when he removed from town. Procter K. Brown continued the business in the same building until 1885. In the spring of 1873, George E. Morgan of Beverly commenced the apothecary business in the Union Block, and ran it until 1875 or 1876, when he sold out to Andrew Geyer of Ipswich who had already opened a similar store here. Mr. Geyer sold out his store soon afterwards to Charles W. Batchelder, a dealer in dry goods, boots and shoes, etc., on Main street, who, after fitting up a portion of his store for the apothecary business, removed it thereto. He sold out January 5, 1877, to Mr. Benton, his clerk, who removed it back to its former place in Union Block. October 19, 1878, Mr. Benton sold out to John C. Gray, who sold to James H. Perkins and Dr. Samuel E. Thayer November 10, 1879. James H. Perkins, Jr., attended the store as clerk, as he had done for the previous proprietors. Dr. Thayer withdrew after about one year, leaving James H. Perkins, Sr., sole proprietor until August 1, 1882, when the business was transferred to his son, James H. Perkins, Jr., who still continues it at the store built and formerly occupied by Charles W. Batchelder, of which we have already spoken. Mr. Perkins removed from the old stand in Union Block to this store in the fall of 1885.

Wenham presents an appearance of neatness and comfort; and the village and country around it are alike noticeable for their quiet rural scenes and healthfulness. About a score of persons have died here at an age upwards of ninety years; and the large majority of them were of the gentler and, generally understood, weaker sex. The throat distemper, which prevailed so disastrously all through this section of the country from 1736 to 1738, visited Wenham and took away many of the younger portion of the inhabitants. John Gott and Richard Dodge lost all their children, the first five and the last four. About twenty persons died here in the course of three months in 1737, from the epidemic. A public fast was held, at which time Rev. Mr. Champney preached in the morning from Jer. ix. 24; and Rev. Mr. Chipman in the afternoon from Jer. ii. 30. Small-pox has prevailed here several times, resulting in 1760 in the death of Daniel Porter, at the age of thirty-eight years. In 1776 it broke out again, and continued at intervals for several years, terrorizing the people. At last a pest-house was provided, and vaccination introduced. In 1805 the dysentery carried away a considerable number of the citizens. From September 15th to October 20th, of that year, eleven persons died of that complaint. A few accidents and deaths by casualty are found recorded. In the journal of Rev. John Fiske, the first pastor of the church here,

is an account of his son being carried under the mill-wheel, when it was in motion, and coming out with not a bone broken. This was his son John, who was, June 6, 1647, when the accident occurred, in his ninth year. The journal says, that he "escaped a gte danger at Wenha in passing with y<sup>e</sup> streame under y<sup>e</sup> mill wheele, when y<sup>e</sup> mill was agoing, An. 1647, 6th of 3d, at wh time he recoj'd (as twere) a new life, not a bone broke, &c." Richard Goldsmith was killed by lightning at the house of Rev. Mr. Newman, who had lately died, on Sunday, May 18, 1673, in the presence of the Rev. Mr. Higginson of Salem, who had preached in Wenham that day, and, having but a few moments before returned from the service, was sitting engaged in conversation with Mr. Goldsmith, under whose chair was a dog, which was also killed. George W. Kimball, a lad of eight years, was killed by lightning here July 25, 1821. Samuel Ober, who was in his seventy-second year, was killed by lightning on the evening of May 22, 1876, while sitting with his wife in the house in West Wenham. Thomas Goodwin, who was probably a boy from Gloucester, was killed March 5, 1700-1, by "being catcht by the wheel of a saw-mill & so killed, att John Leeches." April 19, 1754, William Dodge, aged about two years, was drowned in a brook. On the town records is found the following: "William Batcheller the son of Peter Dodge's wife fell into y<sup>e</sup> Mill Pond and died Jan<sup>y</sup>. 13th, 1771, Aetatis 12." Benjamin Porter, aged fifteen years, was drowned in Wenham Pond Oct. 14, 1773. Joseph P. Cook, aged nineteen years, while skating on Pleasant Pond with other boys, broke through the thin ice, and was drowned December 19, 1856. April 15, 1876, Austin Morrill of Wenham, aged thirteen years, and his cousin, Clarence Henry Peirce of Beverly Farms, aged eighteen years, were accidentally drowned in Coy's Pond. May 8, 1731, Pompey, a negro-boy of Lieutenant William Dodge, was killed by a cart. He was fourteen years old. In 1789 a girl named Wyatt, four years old, was burned to death. Benjamin Steele Parsons, aged fourteen years, was killed by a horse-cart May 2, 1870. He lived thirty minutes after the accident. July 21, 1839, Lebbeus Dodge, aged seventeen months, was killed by a stage. John Baker, at the age of ten years, was killed by a sled February 17, 1841. Annie F. Alley was bitten in one of her hands by a white Spitz dog, which was kept in the neighborhood, March 4th, and died of hydrophobia May 3, 1876. She was ten years old.

The population of Wenham in 1885 was eight hundred and seventy-one. The town then had two hundred and ninety-three ratable polls, and two hundred and seventy legal voters, only ten of whom were naturalized. There were two hundred and nineteen families, and one hundred and ninety dwelling-houses, one of which being constructed of brick, the others of wood. The town debt is now (1887) \$6,465.92.





Emigration has reduced the size of many of the country towns, and, as with Wenham, a century ago their population was greater than now. The first extensive emigration from Wenham occurred in 1655, when the pastor of the church, with a large and influential portion of his parishioners went to the new settlement of Chelmsford. This removal took from the little town its minister and physician, and its main strength. Yet those left behind pushed forward in their work, settled another minister, added to their number of planters and thrived. After the commencement of the eighteenth century it seemed to be customary for one of the sons of the family to remain at home and inherit the farm, and the others to seek their fortunes in the newer towns. Many of the young men from Wenham reared homes in Maine, New Hampshire, Vermont, the central and western portions of Massachusetts and Connecticut, and later in settlements farther away. Jonathan Porter and his family removed to Ellington, Conn., in 1740, and John Porter and his family to Littleton, Mass., about 1745. The settlement of Marietta, Ohio, in 1787, projected and carried out by Dr. Manasseh Cutler of Hamilton, who, with his little colony, in "a long, ark-like wagon, covered with black canvas," on the outside of which was inscribed, in large letters, the name of the place of their destination, journeyed overland, was partially constituted by Wenham people. This was the first town settled in the State of Ohio.

The old turnpike from Ipswich to Boston ran through Wenham, causing taverns to be kept here constantly. In 1833 the steam-cars began to run through the centre of the town over the Eastern Railroad, which was completed as far east as Ipswich that year. The Wenham station is situated a few rods over the town line in Hamilton, and the North Beverly station is in Beverly near the Wenham line. The Newburyport and Wakefield branch of the Boston & Maine Railroad passes across the western end of the town, but there is no station on that road nearer than the Putnamville flag-station in Danvers. The latter road was built in 1853. The street-cars were first run from Gloucester crossing in Beverly to the soldiers' monument in Wenham, May 26, 1886. Later in the same season the lines were extended, in one direction to the Wenham station in Hamilton, and also to the camp-meeting grounds at Asbury Grove, also in Hamilton.

The post-office was established here in 1809. The first postmaster was Thomas Barnes, who was appointed April 21, 1809. His successors, with dates of their original appointments, follow: Uzziel Dodge, July 6, 1812; John Thorn Dodge, March 20, 1818; Ezra Lummus, August 19, 1836; Adoniram J. Dodge, March 24, 1837; John A. Putnam, June 25, 1846; Benjamin C. Putnam, August 3, 1857; Nathaniel S. Gould, April 25, 1862; Elisha P. Chapman, June 26, 1866; William W. Fowler, January 16, 1867; Henry

Hobbs, September 19, 1870; John W. Curtis, September 25, 1878; Andrew D. Trowt, November 5, 1880; Miss Kate M. Kavanagh, December 23, 1885; and Fred. P. Stanton, November 26, 1886. The post-office was, at first, in the old tavern, formerly the residence of Rev. Joseph Gerrish, which stood where the horse-railroad stable is situated. It was kept here until August, 1830, the first three postmasters being the tavern-keepers. On Mr. Lummus' appointment, it was removed to his tavern in the brick house, and there remained until Mr. Dodge's appointment in March, 1837, when it was removed to his wheelwright shop which stood near the western end of the house now owned and occupied by Mr. James H. Perkins. It remained here until John A. Putnam became the postmaster in June, 1846, when it was removed to his store, which was built at about that time, and burnt with the barn and shed connected therewith, a small dwelling-house, and the large barn and sheds standing near by, belonging to the late Dr. John Porter, early on Monday morning, May 23, 1870. When Mr. Hobbs was appointed, September 19, 1870, he kept it for six months at his harness shop, and then removed it to the new Union block, where it has been kept to the present time, except while Miss Kavanagh was postmistress, from December, 1885, to November, 1886, when it was in the house on Arbor street, built by B. C. Putnam, for one month, and afterwards at P. K. Brown's shop.

The Town Hall was erected in 1854, by a vote of the town which was passed by seventy-nine yeas to sixty-one nays. The committee to erect the building consisted of John Porter, C. A. Kilham, A. Dodge, F. Hadley, J. Cook, Benjamin C. Putnam and Moses Mildran. The hall was erected where it now stands, the pond hole that formerly occupied the site being filled up. The edifice is fifty-four feet long and thirty-eight feet wide, with a projection on the front sixteen feet by twenty-five. It is two stories in height, besides a large and convenient basement. It contains a hall, school-rooms and selectmen's room, besides ante-rooms. The cupola on it affords an extensive and beautiful view of the surrounding country. The hall will seat about four hundred persons.

The fire department of Wenham was established quite early. In 1821, the town ordered the selectmen to "procure six ladders and three fire-hooks for the use of the town, to be equally divided among the three separate districts." In 1835 a fire company of twenty-five members was organized; and the town voted to build an engine-house and to procure the necessary apparatus. An engine, costing two hundred dollars, was purchased by subscription. It was quite small, and had to be filled by hand. After several years of efficient service, the company disbanded, and the engine was sold. In 1849 another fire company was formed, and a new engine, "Enon, No. 1," built in Newburyport by Edward Leslie, in the same year, costing nine hundred dollars, was purchased by the



town. An engine-house was erected, and all the apparatus necessary for the successful operation of the company was procured. The company consisted of forty-eight members, to whom an elegant banner was presented by the ladies of the town September 25, 1850; and on the same day a silver trumpet presentation to the company further evinced the good-will of the citizens in general. The occasion of these presentations was a holiday at the lakeside. The company was kept together several years. The engine is still owned by the town, and a company of forty members was organized March 24, 1887, with Otis P. Brewer, foreman, and Fred P. Stanton, clerk and treasurer. When there has been no company, the fire-wards have had charge of the engine, and trusted to volunteer help to work it. This year (1887), the town voted to appropriate fifty dollars for fire-hooks and ladders. In 1886, the fire department cost the town sixty-two dollars and eleven cents.

The permanent and more important organizations of the town, besides the two religious societies, are the Wenham Veteran's Association, organized May 30, 1876; Wenham Mutual Benefit Association, organized August 19, 1876, and incorporated November 3, 1883; and the Female Benevolent Society, founded in September, 1833.

Wenham has one periodical publication, *The American Apiculturist*, established in January, 1883. It is a monthly, thirty-two, double-column paged magazine, devoted to bee culture. Its publisher is Mr. Henry Alley.

The two hundredth anniversary of the incorporation of Wenham was publicly observed May 10, 1843, when an address on the civil history of the town was delivered by Rev. Daniel Mansfield, pastor of the Congregational Church.

A "History of Wenham," written by Dr. Myron O. Allen, who was the resident physician at that time, was published in a neat bound volume of two hundred and twenty pages in 1860.

RELIGIOUS HISTORY.—For the first three or four years after Wenham was first settled, the inhabitants probably attended church at Salem. We have already mentioned the sermon preached by Hugh Peters at Wenham Lake. Mr. Peters was the successor of Roger Williams as pastor of the First Church in Salem; returning to England about 1642, he became a famous preacher, and was appointed chaplain by Cromwell; becoming conspicuous in the commonwealth, he was alleged to have been guilty of assisting in the death of Charles I., and was publicly beheaded therefor on Tower Hill after the restoration. The public initiative towards a church here was probably in 1639. Rev. John Higginson, the minister at Salem, in his church record, says: "There are divers passages set down about three villages to go out of y<sup>e</sup> brethren of Salem church, considered of in several church meetings, for several years together,

the first of which was 1639, August 24th. Mr. Downing and some with him were for one village (Danvers); other brethren for a village at y<sup>e</sup> pond (Wenham); and others for one at Jeffrey's Creek (Manchester)."

As early as 1641 a small meeting-house was built, and Rev. John Fiske, who had assisted Hugh Peters at Salem, came at about the same time and settled in Wenham. The most reliable tradition informs us that this building stood on a slight rise of ground near the present residence of Mr. Henry Tarr. A bell was added to it about 1650, and since that time Wenham has not been without its church-bell. The church was organized and Mr. Fiske installed its pastor October 8, 1644. The church flourished until 1655, when Mr. Fiske, with a majority of his parishioners, removed to the new town of Chelmsford, and became its first pastor. Mr. Fiske's removal was a great loss in itself. He was an excellent man, and was a physician as well as a clergyman, practicing the healing art to both body and soul. He died at Chelmsford January 14, 1676-77, aged seventy-six years. He was a son of a prominent and persecuted dissenter, and was born in the parish of St. James, county of Suffolk, in England, in 1601. He was educated at Immanuel College, Cambridge, and preached for several years in his native land; but, at length, "on account of the severe restrictions upon nonconformists, he became a physician." He came to America in disguise, bringing with him servants, husbandry and carpentry tools, and provisions sufficient to support his family for three years. He taught the Charlestown grammar-school, and afterwards the first grammar-school in Salem. Mr. Fiske was an earnest and successful preacher; he composed and published a catechism, entitled "Watering of the Olive Plants in Christ's Garden." His epitaph is as follows:

"Vixi, et quem doleras cursum, mihi Christo, peregi;  
Pertransi vixi, suaveret opto mori."<sup>1</sup>

Mr. Fiske's departure left the church and settlement small in numbers and means. The early settlers of Hamilton (then a part of Ipswich) soon afterwards came to this church, and it began to regain its former strength. The "neighbors," as they were called, are first mentioned as contributing to the support of the church here in 1659.

Rev. Antipas Newman, from Rehoboth, came very soon after Mr. Fiske's removal, being here in 1657. A new meeting-house was built in 1663, being probably "twenty-four feet square, and twelve feet stud." It stood in the square near the soldiers' monument, on land purchased of Austin Kilham. The old meeting-house and lot were sold. At this time the church was newly organized and a new covenant

<sup>1</sup> "I have lived, and the course which thou, Christ, gavest me I have finished;  
Weary of life, I long for death's sweet repose."





adopted. Mr. Newman was ordained and the meeting-house probably dedicated December 10, 1663. Here he continued his acceptable service until his death, October 15, 1672. He possessed an excellent religious character.

The next minister was Rev. Joseph Gerrish, who was ordained over the church January 13, 1674, after having preaching here about seven months. A gallery was added to the house the same year on account of the increase of the church. In 1688 a new meeting-house was erected on the site of the old one, which was sold and removed. The new one had a turret, and was probably built by Abraham Tilton of Ipswich.

In 1714 the Hamilton people formed a church of their own, and were dismissed from this church. Rev. Mr. Gerrish continued in his service here forty-six years. He died of apoplexy, at the age of seventy years, January 6, 1720. He was born in Newbury March 23, 1650, and graduated at Harvard College in 1669. He studied theology with Rev. Thomas Parker in his native town. He was a man of excellent piety, hospitable, gentlemanly and good. A parsonage was built for him soon after he was settled here, in which he resided. His salary was fifty pounds in money and twenty cords of wood, and the use of the minister's house and land.

The fourth minister was Rev. Robert Ward of Charlestown, who was ordained January 25, 1721-22. He faithfully and honorably served Christ here ten years, dying July 19, 1732, at the age of thirty-seven years. He was born in Charlestown September 23, 1694, and, graduating at Harvard College in 1719, taught the grammar-school at Charlestown for about a year before coming to Wenham. His service here was quite successful.

The fifth pastor of the church was Rev. John Warren, who was ordained January 12, 1733. He was born in Roxbury September 18, 1704, graduated at Harvard College in 1725, and began to preach as early as 1727. During his service here occurred the great revivals of 1740, in which he was prominent. He died here July 15, 1749, at the age of forty-four years, deeply lamented. The year before his death the fourth meeting-house was begun to be built, but was not completed until 1754. It was fifty-two feet long, forty-two feet wide, with twenty-foot posts, and stood on the site of the preceding church. The town voted that the committee appointed to build the meeting-house should "provide on the town charge six gallons of rum, eight pounds of sugar, two barrels of cider, two barrels of beer, one hundred weight of bread, one hundred weight of legs of pork, and forty pounds of cheese,—to be taken care of by said committee on raising day in the prudentest way they can for the end aforesaid."

The next minister, Rev. Joseph Swain of Reading, was ordained October 24, 1750. He was a native of Reading, and graduated at Harvard College in 1744.

Mr. Swain served as chaplain in the French and Indian war. He died June 29, 1792, at the age of seventy years, having been the pastor of the church forty-two years. He was a good writer, dull speaker, and reserved in his manners.

The seventh minister was Rev. Adoniram Judson of Malden, who was installed here December 26, 1792. He was born in Woodbury, Conn., June 25, 1751; graduated at Yale College in 1775; and was ordained at Malden, Mass., about 1787, where he remained until 1791, when he resigned. He asked for a dismission at Wenham on account of the smallness of his salary, and was thereupon dismissed October 22, 1799. He was installed at Plymouth, Mass., May 12, 1802; and, having become a Baptist in his religious faith, resigned his pastorate August 12, 1817. He removed to Scituate, and died there November 25, 1826, aged seventy-five years. The distinguished missionary to Burmah of his name was his son.

After Mr. Judson's departure the church was so divided that another minister was not settled until July 10, 1805, when Rev. Rufus Anderson of North Yarmouth, Me., was installed. He was born at Londonderry, N. H., March 5, 1765; graduated at Dartmouth College in 1791; and ordained at North Yarmouth, Me., October 22, 1794. He resigned in 1804, and came to Wenham. He continued here in his acceptable service until February 11, 1814, when he died, of pulmonic consumption, at the age of forty-eight. His funeral sermon, preached by Rev. Samuel Worcester, was published: the text was 2 Tim. i. 12. Mr. Anderson published sermons, and a treatise on baptism. He was blessed with pious parents, who trained, with the aid of the divine Spirit, his quick and strong passions. The following is his epitaph:—

"Piety, benevolence, integrity and nobility were prominent virtues in his amiable character.

"Sleep precious dust while here confined in earth,  
Till the glad spring of nature's second birth  
Thou quit the transient winter of the tomb,  
To rise and flourish in immortal bloom."

The ninth minister was Rev. John Smith of Salem, N. H., who was installed November 26, 1817. He was born in Belchertown, Mass., March 5, 1766, and graduated at Dartmouth College in 1794. He was afterwards honored with the degree of Doctor of Divinity. He was ordained at Salem, N. H., January 2, 1797, and resigned November 21, 1816. From the church in Wenham, having asked therefor, he was dismissed September 8, 1819, and became a professor of theology at the Bangor Theological Seminary. He died in Bangor, April 7, 1831, at the age of sixty-five. Mr. Smith studied theology with Rev. Dr. Emmons, of Franklin, and was himself possessed of a strong logical mind. He had an impediment in his speech, and was also faulty in manner and style. He discharged his duties faithfully; and was sympathizing, kind and pious, possessed of a firmness of purpose and great perseverance.





Dr. Smith's successor in the pastoral service here was Rev. Ebenezer Peck Sperry, who was installed March 29, 1820. He was born in New Haven, Conn., June 3, 1785, graduated at Middlebury College in 1808, and also at the Andover Theological Seminary in 1810. He was ordained at Dunstable (now Nashua), N. H., November 3, 1813, and resigned in April, 1819. It was during Mr. Sperry's service here that the Sabbath-school originated. "In 1815 Miss Elizabeth Shaw taught a day school and a Sabbath class, in the ancient house west of the town hall." The manual of the church goes on to say, that "she married a Rev. Mr. Nichols, and went as missionary to India; and that the first record of an organized Sabbath-school appears during Mr. Sperry's ministry, although it is stated that a school had been commenced as early as 1818 under Mr. Smith." It was organized in May, 1822, and at first held during the summer months only, but was soon continued the whole of the year. During Mr. Sperry's service was formed also the Baptist Church of Wenham, in 1831, and the Congregational Parish was organized in 1833. Mr. Sperry was dismissed, April 30, 1837, and became chaplain to the South Boston House of Correction, where he remained a little more than a year. He was subsequently settled as pastor at Peru, and afterwards at Lyme, Ohio. He died at Lyme, January 1, 1853, at the age of sixty-seven years. He was a successful minister, fifty-nine persons being believed to have been converted in one revival in 1826.

The eleventh pastor was Rev. Daniel Mansfield of Lynnfield, who was ordained July 26, 1837. He was born in Lynnfield August 8, 1807; graduated at Amherst College in 1833, and at the Andover Theological Seminary in 1836. It was during his ministry here that the present parsonage was built, in 1840, at a cost of two thousand dollars. The present church was also erected during his ministry. It was built by Mr. T. P. Dodge, and was sixty feet wide and forty-five feet long, being situated on land purchased by Deacon Moses Foster, and was dedicated December 20, 1843. Its cost was four thousand dollars. An addition was made to it in 1854. The bell then put in was made by Henry Hooper of Boston, and its weight was about one thousand pounds. Mr. Mansfield died, from the effects of general ill-health, April 8, 1847, aged thirty-nine years. He published two historical discourses delivered at the second centennial anniversary of the organization of the church, and another preached at the dedication of the new church. He was possessed of good talents and sound judgment, and was much appreciated for his modesty, gentleness and fidelity in his Master's service. His parishioners erected a monument to his memory above his grave.

Mr. Mansfield's successor was Rev. Jeremiah Taylor, D.D., who was ordained October 27, 1847. His ordination sermon, delivered by Rev. O. A. Taylor of Manchester, was published. He was dismissed

August 19, 1856, to accept a call from the First Congregational Church in Middletown, Conn., where he afterward settled in the ministry. We believe he is now preaching at Providence. Mr. Taylor's enterprise secured the church organ, in 1852, and also the row of elms which line Main Street. He was an able and faithful minister here, and the church and Sunday-school flourished under his guidance.

Rev. John Smith Sewall, D.D., was the thirteenth minister of the church. He was ordained April 20, 1859. After preaching here eight years, he was dismissed April 28, 1867, to accept the professorship of rhetoric and oratory in Bowdoin College. In 1875 he entered upon the professorship of homiletics in the Bangor Theological Seminary. Mr. Sewall was born in Newcastle, Me., March 20, 1830. While preaching in Wenham, for three months in 1864 he was chaplain in the Eighth Massachusetts Regiment. He had a happy temperament, and entered into all the interests of the people.

After Mr. Sewall's dismissal, Rev. William R. Joyslin preached here about a year. The next settled pastor was Rev. Will Converse Wood, who was installed October 13, 1870. He served here six years, being dismissed on the sixth anniversary of his installation. He was a graduate of Harvard College and the Andover Theological Seminary, and had preached two years at Lanesville, in Gloucester. He was a writer of marked ability, and the author of "Five Problems of State and Religion."

After Mr. Wood's departure from the town, Rev. Samuel W. Clarke preached for about a year, and he was followed by Rev. Alexander C. Childs, who also remained about a year. The next minister was Rev. John M. Hart, who was ordained December 11, 1878. He was dismissed, after less than a year's service, August 4, 1879, with reluctance, to accept a call from a church in California, which he felt bound to accept on good grounds, especially the ill health of his wife, who could not endure the rigor of a New England climate. Mr. Hart was a graduate of Yale College and of the Union Theological Seminary, New York City.

From 1880 to June, 1884, the pulpit was supplied by Rev. James H. Childs, who came from South Byfield. He was followed, June 26, 1884, by Rev. John C. Mitchell, who preached as the supply of the church until November 1, 1886, when his services were discontinued, because he had imbibed liberalism and departed from the faith of the church. He has since preached occasionally in the town hall to persons who have similar theological inclinations, and is now in Danvers.

The present pastor, Rev. George Masters Woodwell, from Dover, N. H., was ordained here September 14, 1887. He was born in Norwalk, Ohio, May 13, 1857, graduated at Dartmouth College in 1884, and at the Andover Theological Seminary in 1887.

The Sunday-school of the church is quite large, and



has a good-sized library of interesting books. Several gifts have been made to the church at different times. Thomas Fiske, of Wenham, in his will, which was proved in 1723, gave the church ten pounds, and the same year Captain Thomas Fiske donated a communion cup, which is still in existence. It is inscribed,—

"The Gift of Capt<sup>t</sup> Thomas Fiske  
to the Church in Wenham : 1723."

Benjamin Fiske, of Wenham, in his will, which was proved in 1742, gave the church five pounds. In 1820 the church received a donation of five hundred dollars for the support of the gospel here from Edmund Kimball of Newburyport. In 1827, the same gentleman gave to the church "six elegant silver cups, bearing his name and the date of the year."

The clock in the tower of the church was erected in May, 1867, by the enterprise of some of the citizens, who gave it to the town about two years afterwards.

**BAPTIST CHURCH.**—The Baptist church in Wenham can trace the history of its origin to a movement begun and carried on by Miss Rebecca Goldsmith, a young lady from Haverhill, who was teaching school in the Wenham Neck district, at the close of the eighteenth century. She was a Baptist, and by her earnestness persuaded others to embrace her religious belief. The converts, for several years, attended services at the Baptist church in Danversport. A Baptist church was organized at Beverly in March, 1801, and the Wenham Baptists worshipped there for a quarter of a century. A revival in Wenham in 1826 caused the number of Baptists here to increase, and a meeting-house, fifty-one feet long, and thirty-eight feet wide, surmounted by a tower and steeple, was erected about two miles east from the centre of the town, on the site of the present Baptist church, by Joseph Edwards, at a cost of about two thousand dollars. A bell was added to the tower sometime afterwards. The Baptist society was organized March 23, 1831. The church was founded October 12, 1831, with twenty-five members, eleven males and fourteen females, all dismissed from the First Baptist church in Beverly. The church edifice, free from debt, was dedicated on the same day by appropriate exercises. The sermon at the organization of the church was delivered by Rev. Cyrus P. Grosvenor of Salem, from the text, Amos vii. 12. The dedicatory sermon was preached by Rev. Jonathan Aldrich of Beverly, from Eccl. v. 1. Shortly after the church was organized, several persons were dismissed from the Congregational church to this, and within a year the membership had increased to forty-eight.

The first minister was Rev. Charles Miller, a native of Scotland, who supplied from April 4, 1833, until he was dismissed, April 9, 1835, to become pastor of one of the churches in Boston.

Mr. Miller's successor was Rev. Henry Archibald, who was informally installed August 4, 1836. His

pastoral relation with the church and society was dissolved August 3, 1837.

The next minister was Rev. Joel Kenney, a graduate of Bowdoin College, who was ordained June 20, 1838. He was dismissed April 13, 1840, and removed to Sturbridge, where he labored successfully until his health failed. In 1844 he took charge of the church in Conway. In 1846 he became pastor at West Springfield, where he stayed but a year. In 1849 he retired from the ministry, and afterwards made his home in Springfield, where he died July 28, 1880, at the age of seventy-three years.

The church was without a minister for more than a year. The Rev. George W. Patch, a graduate of the Newton Theological Seminary, and a young man of talent and energy, was ordained October 20, 1841. He was dismissed February 27, 1843, to accept a call extended to him by the Baptist church in Sharon. From Sharon he went to Marblehead, in 1848, where he labored in the ministry for twenty-six years. He died in Cambridgeport December 24, 1875, aged fifty-eight years. He was a member of the State Legislature in 1864 and 1865.

The next pastor, Rev. Josiah Keely, a native of England, and for many years resident in America, was ordained December 21, 1843. His pastorate continued for nine years; and he was dismissed, at his own request, November 4, 1852. He afterwards settled at Saco, Me., where he preached some years. Under his care, the church here was prosperous. He was talented, and earnest in his work. Courteous in his manners and enlightened in his views, he was respected and esteemed by the entire town. To be a peace-maker was his most delightful service. He died while serving as a chaplain in the War of the Rebellion.

Mr. Keely was succeeded the next March by Rev. Isaac Woodbury, a native of Hamilton. He was dismissed, at his own request, August 27, 1855, and removed to the West.

The next pastor of the church was Rev. Thomas Wormersly, who was ordained here February 20, 1856. He was a native of England, and a graduate of the Newton Theological Seminary, having been for many years a resident of America.

On the night of November 6, 1859, the church edifice was destroyed by fire. The friends of the church assisted in erecting a new one the following year, its dedication taking place on Christmas day. The sermon was preached by the pastor from Revelation v. 6. In the meantime preaching had been carried on in private houses.

Mr. Wormersly was dismissed April 6, 1862. He was a faithful and beloved pastor, and under his ministrations the church was increased in numbers and spirituality.

Mr. Wormersly's successor was Rev. Abner D. Gorham, who commenced his service here January 1, 1863, and still remains here, after twenty-five years





of faithful labor. He is a native of Tisbury, Martha's Vineyard, and was educated at Madison University.

The Sunday-school connected with the church was established at the same time. The library of the school consists of five hundred volumes.

The parsonage was built in 1834 at a cost of about fifteen hundred dollars. It is a neat and comfortable house, two stories in height, and situated in a quiet and pleasant spot. In 1873 a commodious chapel was built at a cost of about twelve hundred dollars, and was dedicated in August of that year, free from debt. Legacies have been left to the church by Mrs. Prudence Dodge and by Mrs. Susan Lord of Beverly, a native of Wenham.

The fiftieth anniversary of the constitution of the church was observed in October, 1881, by public exercises.

**MILITARY HISTORY.**—Wenham had its military company at a very early date. Thomas Fiske was the leading military man for many years in the early settlement of the town. He was chosen "clerk of ye band to ye company 28: 9: 1654." October 10, 1683, the General Court "ordered that Thomas Fiske be captain of the foot company at Wenham, Charles Gott be his lieutenēt, & W<sup>m</sup>. Fiske his ensigne." In 1789 Thomas Kimball was captain. The town-house now stands on the old training-field of two hundred years ago, whose western boundary was the street. The town had its own military company until the old militia [throughout the State was disbanded, about 1840.

The first military conflicts in New England with which the settlers had to do were with the Indians. The most serious conflict that Wenham people took part in was the War of King Philip, in 1675 and 1676. The Indians saw the gradual encroachment of the English settlers upon their domains. They saw their favorite streams and ponds, their loved hunting-grounds and dwelling sites taken possession of, one after another, by the pale faces; and they sought by this war to exterminate the families already living here, and to prevent new settlements. To be sure, some of the tribes remained friendly to the English, but most of them joined King Philip in his last struggle to recover the possessions of their fathers. The savages might have accomplished their purpose had not that Power, that can give the heathen for an inheritance, come to their aid and gave the settlers success. The savages fought against hope and with the energy of despair. Hundreds of the whites were killed, and town after town destroyed. Decisive measures were at length determined upon by the colonies, and a force of five hundred and fifty men were collected in Massachusetts Colony. Some had volunteered in Wenham, among whom were Thomas Abby and Caleb Kimball, to join the little army, and five—Mark Batchelder, Richard Hutton, Thomas Kimball, Samuel Moulton and Philip Welch—were impressed from the Wenham Company by Thomas Fiske, who

was then sergeant, November 30, 1675. These troops, with others from the Plymouth and Connecticut colonies, made a forced march through the deep snows to a swamp in the country of the Narragansetts, in Rhode Island, where the Indians had erected a fort, which the English called Fort Narragansett, and gathered their bravest warriors. They reached the fort December 19, 1675, and, notwithstanding they had camped out the preceding night, "with no other covering than a cold and moist fleece of snow," and had marched nineteen miles that day, wading through the drifts, the troops rushed to the attack at once. The Indians retreated to the middle of the swamp, where they had fortified an island, five or six acres in area, with palisades and a hedge nearly a rod thick. The English attacked and drove them to the centre of their fort, where the whole mass, there being three times as many Indians as English, was quickly engaged in a desperate and deadly struggle, which resulted at a great cost in favor of the latter. About one-fifth of the English soldiers were killed, and most of them wounded. Of those who went from Wenham, Mark Batchelder and Caleb Kimball were killed, and Thomas Abby wounded. John Fiske also served in the war, and was wounded. Others from Wenham took part in this conflict, but their names have not yet been determined.

Wenham was apprehensive that it might be assaulted by the Indians, and in 1691 voted, and chose a committee, to build a fortification, probably a sort of garrison house. Probably the vote was never acted upon, as nothing is afterwards mentioned regarding it.

In the Andros revolution of 1688, the people of Wenham were interested; and, on its happy termination, a public town-meeting of thanksgiving was held May 6, 1689.

Some of the people of Wenham took part in the French War. By the records we find that Thomas Perkins and Thomas Pousland were killed in an attempt to take the Island Battery, in 1745; and that Israel Porter died at Cape Breton, August 10, 1745.

The people here took a more prominent part in the French and Indian War, which began in 1756. Some of the inhabitants served in the regiment commanded by Colonel Ichabod Plaisted of Salem; their chaplain being Rev. Mr. Swain, pastor of the Wenham church, who accompanied the regiment in the expedition to Crown Point. By the records we learn that Eli Meservy died "in ye army" at Ticonderoga July 8, 1758, and Isaac Dodge at Cape Breton in 1759.

In 1756, the French, who occupied Acadia, as Nova Scotia was then called, having broken their agreement to remain neutral in the conflicts between the French and English, were removed to the English provinces and scattered through the many towns therein. Wenham had four to provide for. They were of one family, all females, consisting of a mother and her three daughters, one of whom was too young to earn



her own support, and the mother old and incapable of working. Her name was La Jean Deparis. They were received in Wenham February 9, 1756. The mother evidently died in 1757, and after that time the family only consisted of three persons. The family are supposed to have occupied the place lately known as Herriek's Corner. The house was then owned by Jonathan Porter. Dr. Allen says, in his history, that they "were finally disposed of December 20, 1762, to Dr. Putnam of Danvers."

The Revolutionary era approached soon after the termination of the French and Indian War. At a public town-meeting held June 30, 1773, it was voted, that the town was of the "opinion that the rights of the colonies, and of this in particular, are infringed upon in many instances, therefore it is a great grievance to all His Majesty's loyal subjects, and has a direct tendency to the destruction of our happy constitution." The people were thereafter gradually and thoroughly prepared for the opening incidents of the first year of the fearful struggle on the battle-field. A good stock of ammunition was kept on hand. An anecdote, showing the spirit of the Wenham people, is related as follows: William Fairfield at that time lived in the house lately occupied by William Porter. Some British troops were marching across the country, and, as they ascended the little eminence by the burial-ground, their uniforms were suddenly seen by several people, who proposed to flee, but Mrs. Fairfield manfully stood her ground crying, "not a step; give me a spit, and I'll pepper one of the villains." Armed with this rude weapon, she stood ready to receive the invaders, who, however, passed on their way without meeting her.

At the beginning of the year 1775 Wenham had one militia company. At the request of the Province a company of minute men were then formed, and prepared themselves to march at a moment's warning. On the morning of the battle of Lexington, the two companies set out for the scene of conflict, which was reached too late for them to participate in the fight. The militia company, consisting of thirty-seven men, was commanded by Capt. Thomas Kimball; the company of minute-men contained twenty-one men, and was commanded by Capt. Billy Porter; and both the companies were reckoned as a part of the regiment of Col. John Baker.

The following men from Wenham served until August 1, 1775, in the company of Captain Ebenezer Francis in Colonel Mansfield's regiment: Billy Porter, first lieutenant, Haffield White, second lieutenant, Nathaniel Ober, sergeant, Ezra Kimball, corporal, and eleven privates; and also the following served to August 1, 1775, in the company of Captain Benjamin Kimball, in the same regiment: John Dodge, lieutenant, Samuel Ober, sergeant, Asa Porter and Benjamin Brown, corporals, Billy Dodge, fifer, and two privates. Many, if not all, of these men undoubtedly took part in the battle of Bunker Hill.

July 20, 1776, Josiah Moulton died of a wound received on board a privateer; and January 21, 1777, Israel Batcheller died of small-pox in the army.

Some men went out in the company of Captain John Dodge, in Colonel Pickering's regiment, for service in New Jersey, being called therefore the Jersey company. These were three and a half months in service, marching from home December 16, 1777. The company numbered fifty-six men, John Tenny being first lieutenant, and Moses Scott, second lieutenant.

In Captain John Dodge's company in Colonel Jacob Gerrish's regiment April 1, 1778, there were seventy-two men.

Six six-months' men from Wenham enlisted in 1780 to reinforce the Continental army.

William Kimball served as a private in 1781, for five months, in Captain John Robinson's company in Colonel William Turner's regiment.

The History of Wenham says that one hundred and thirty-seven men from Wenham served in the Revolutionary army, some for a long and some for a short period. The town also spent much money towards carrying on the war. Up to December 23, 1776, it had paid out for this purpose five hundred and seventy-four pounds, five shillings, and sixpence since the battle of Lexington, and about a year and a half previously. The town regularly appointed a committee of safety and correspondence, who had to a certain extent the charge of the struggle. December 9, 1776, it was resolved by the town to supply the families of the soldiers, who were engaged in the continental army, with corn, pork, beef, wood, wool, flax and sauce; and Jacob Dodge, Thomas Kimball and Peter Dodge were chosen a committee for that purpose.

The people of Wenham, though suffering as much as the others in the province, supported the government which they fought to establish, when others sought its overthrow on account of the great burden of taxation which was imposed upon the people. Some of the old soldiers of the Revolution again buckled on their swords, and marched, under the command of Colonel Wade of Ipswich, to suppress the insurrection created by Daniel Shay in 1787.

In the war of 1812, although opposing the policy which inaugurated it, Wenham did what it could to sustain the honor of the country in the field, both with men and money. Some enlisted on privateers, and others in the United States army, and fought valiantly in those hardly-contested battles. An alarm came to Wenham that the enemy had landed at Salem; and the company of militia were immediately prepared to march, when, after bidding adieu to loved ones, news arrived refuting the report. The treaty of Ghent was welcomed by the people here.

One more season of warfare remains to complete the story of Wenham's military service. Not inferior to any that had preceded it in suffering or in loss, in





this conflict for the supremacy of the Union, huge armies opposed to huge armies swayed back and forth for five long fearful years. The rebellion stands out prominently as *the* war of modern times. Commencing with the shot fired on Sumter, it ended with the emancipation of millions of slaves and the establishment of the control of the general Government over the States. At the first call of President Lincoln, the young men of Wenham quickly responded. One hundred and thirty men in all from this town were in the service. The pastor of the Congregational Church, Rev. John S. Sewall, served as chaplain, and the physician of the town, Dr. John L. Robinson, as assistant-surgeon, in the Eighth Regiment. Dr. Arthur Kemble was assistant-surgeon in the navy on the "Gemsbok." Others from Wenham served in the navy on the "Young Rover," "Malvern," "Ino," "Cyane," "Kearsarge" (when she sunk the "Alabama"), "Wachusett," tugboat "Delta," and "Congress," on which was Elbridge Porter, when the "Cumberland" was sunk by the Confederate ram "Merrimac" in Hampton Roads.

On the field of battle Wenham boys were killed in the battles of Cedar Mountain, Antietam, Gaines' Mill, Olustee, Fla., and Cedar Creek; and one was shot in the battle of Cedar Mountain, and laid on the field two days and two nights for dead. Others were wounded in the battles of Spottsylvania, Chattanooga, Cedar Mountain, Gettysburg and in the guerilla fight in the Bonfocia expedition. Others fought in the battles before Petersburg, Resaca, Ga., Chancellorsville, Winchester, Cedar Mountain, Gettysburg, in Banks' Retreat, Antietam, Beverly-ford, Yorktown, Williamsburg, Chickahominy, Seven Days' Fight at Fair Oaks, Malvern Hill, Fredericksburg, Second Bull Run, Siege of Newbern, Kinston, Goldsboro', Whitehall, South West Creek, Blount's Mills, Roanoke Island, Cold Harbor, Olustee, Fla., and Drury's Bluff, and some were with the Army of the Potomac. Four of the Wenham soldiers were imprisoned in Andersonville Prison; four in Millen Prison, one of whom died there; one in Libby; and one in the prison on Belle Island.

The list of those who died in the service is as follows:—John H. Bailey, Aaron D. Barnes, Israel D. Barnes, Orville L. Brown, Addison A. Center, William Clark, Hugh F. Corbett (in the navy), Peter Dodge (killed in battle of Gaines' Mill June 27, 1862), John Dudley, James A. Evans (drowned in crossing Shenandoah River, three miles below Edinburg, Va., April 9, 1862), Thomas H. Gray (killed in battle of Cedar Mountain August 9, 1862), Charles H. Henderson (killed in battle at Olustee, Fla., February 20, 1864), Henry H. Homan, Frederick W. Howland, Benjamin A. Ingersoll (died in Millen Prison October 19, 1864), Dennis H. Kane (killed in battle of Cedar Creek, Va., October 19, 1864), Charles Kiernan, Harlan P. Merrill, James O'Brien (killed at battle of Antietam, Md., September 17, 1862), Daniel

H. Peabody, Moses P. Quimby, John M. Rowe, David Shea, Dennis Sullivan, Bradford H. Trowt, Thomas Turney and Stephen G. Tuttle.

Edwin Mudge, Esq., of Danvers represented the towns of Danvers and Wenham in the State Legislature in 1868 and 1869, and gave his salary to the town of Wenham, for the purpose of erecting a monument to the memory of the soldiers and sailors of Wenham who served in the Rebellion. Mr. Mudge's fund had amounted to five hundred and fifty dollars in 1878, when the town, by appropriations and subscriptions, raised a thousand dollars to be added to it. A suitable monument, made of marble, surmounted with the figure of a soldier, was erected in 1878. The total height is twenty-five feet. It is made of granite, quarried in Mason, N. H., and the statue was made by Alexander McDonald. Its total cost was \$1476.91. It is surrounded by an iron fence. The monument was dedicated with appropriate exercises on Memorial Day, 1879. The speaker on the occasion was Rev. Isaac F. Porter, a native of the town. On the right and left sides of the monument are the names of the soldiers who died in the service. The inscription on the front side is as follows:—

IN HONOR  
OF THE  
SOLDIERS AND SAILORS,  
OF WENHAM  
WHO DEFENDED  
THE UNION  
IN THE WAR OF THE  
REBELLION.  
ERECTED 1878.

Some of the soldiers in the rebellion were encamped on a plain near the depot during the conflict.

SCHOOLS, LIBRARIES, ETC.—The fathers of New England sought a common educational system, making the means of obtaining the benefit of an education equally accessible to both rich and poor. In the earliest small settlements this was accomplished as best it could at home, the parents feeling it to be their duty to instruct their children in the elements of learning. Books in those days were rare and costly, while the flood of reading material which is scattered broadcast to-day was then a thing, which would have been witchery to have dreamed of. Before schools were established the people of Wenham had acquired considerable education. Upon a complaint being made to the General Court, the town, September 9, 1700, appointed Captain Thomas Fiske to keep school to teach children and youth to read and write, and as his pay therefor he was to have what the parents, etc., of the scholars would pay and the amount of his taxes. The next year the town voted that if he could not get sufficient payment for his services in that way, it would pay the balance. The school was probably at first kept at the house of Captain Fiske, who was again chosen schoolmaster in De-





ember, 1701, and also in 1702. In the last named year, ladies began teaching school here. It was then "voted that the selectmen have full power to agree with such school-dames as are necessary to learn children to read." This is a very early date for ladies to be employed in teaching. In 1706, William Rogers was appointed schoolmaster. In 1709 it was "voted that the selectmen are empowered to agree with three school-dames to teach children for to read, and a schoolmaster to learn young people to write and cypher, and to engage forty shillings for their service." In 1710 Mr. Rogers was reappointed schoolmaster. In 1718-19 Mr. Rogers and Daniel Dodge were chosen to keep school, and each of them to have sixpence for each head per week. They all attended school at one place doubtless until 1733, when Nathaniel Brown was agreed with by the selectmen, "to keep a writing and reading school for the year ensuing; and whereas it is impracticable for all the children to come together in one place, it is covenanted and agreed that he be allowed to teach little children to read by suitable women, in the several parts of the town, that he shall agree with, by the approbation of the selectmen; also to teach to write by another man, in another part of the town." In 1735-36, Daniel Fiske sold to the town of Wenham about five square rods of land in the west end of the town, provided that it will thereon erect a school-house and maintain a school yearly therein. The school-house was built in 1739. In the latter year the town raised thirty pounds for the support of schools. This was the first appropriation of the town, properly speaking, for that purpose. November 30, 1742, Jonathan Perkins was agreed with to keep a school. The selectmen then had charge of the schools; hiring the teacher, the beginning and termination of the sessions, and the place where it should be kept. The first school committee in Wenham was appointed in 1772. In 1746 Mrs. Elizabeth Kimball was "approved of and approbated to keep school in our town, to teach children and youth to read and write, she having behaved in sober conversation." The history says that "three different schools continued to be supported in different sections of the town, and separate teachers employed for them, until the year 1770, when it was voted, that 'a grammar-school be constantly kept in this town, the year ensuing, and that provision be made for the support of the same.' It was moreover voted 'that a committee be chosen to provide a schoolmaster, and to apportion said school, according to the tax in this town.' This school, which seems to have been removed from district to district as occasion required, was continued for several years. In 1779, it was taught by Rev. Mr. Swain, in addition to his pulpit and pastoral labors." The old system of three schools, and division of the money among them equally, was resumed in 1782.

Since 1817, the general superintendence of the

schools has been entrusted to a committee annually chosen by the town for that purpose. The town has now five schools, grammar, primary and three mixed schools, known as the East, West and Neck Schools. Wenham's portion of the surplus revenue of the United States, distributed in 1837, was deposited with trustees for three years, and then divided among the several districts to aid in erecting and repairing school-houses. The town appropriated the present year (1887) sixteen hundred dollars for schools. Last year (1886) eighteen hundred and ninety dollars were paid out for schools.

An attempt was made in 1810 to establish an academy here. Later, private schools have been attempted several times. Mr. C. L. Edwards opened a private school in the Town Hall, as soon as it was in occupancy, in 1854. He remained about a year, and was succeeded by Mr. Francis M. Dodge, a native of Wenham, and a graduate of Waterville College. He continued the school two years, quite successfully. The room was afterwards and is now occupied by the grammar school.

Wenham has produced a good number of college graduates; and many others have attended Dummer and other academies.

For many years a public library was among the valuable acquisitions of the town; but on account of lack of funds, the books having grown old, new ones were not bought, and the interest in it failed. Some years ago a new library was formed. It is in a flourishing condition, the town this year (1887) having made an appropriation of more than a hundred dollars for it. Last year the town paid for its support one hundred and three dollars and sixty-six cents. It now contains nine hundred and thirteen volumes, which have a good circulation.

**BUSINESS AND MANUFACTURING INTERESTS.**—The business history of Wenham in many respects is quite interesting. The history of its old-style taverns, if it could be correctly written, would be delightful to read. From its earliest days the town had its public-house. March 7, 1643-44, William Fiske received authority to keep a tavern from the General Court, as follows: "Willi: Fiske is appointed & allowed to keepe an ordinary at Wennam." November 13, 1644, by the same authority, "Willi: Fiske, of Wennam, hath liberty to sell wine." Mr. Fiske died in 1654, and in the inventory of his estate is mentioned a sign and sign-post. He continued in business until 1647. His successor was Phineas Fiske, who was granted authority by the General Court October 27, 1647, as follows: "Phineas Fiske is granted to keepe an ordinary in Wenham." May 10, 1648, by the same authority, "Phineas Fiske, of Wenham, is allowed license to draw wine there for this yeare ensuing," and three days later he "hath libtie giuen to sell wine for this year ensuing." Samuel Foster was chosen by the town in 1654, and Walter Fairfield January 3, 1680, to keep the ordinary. March 18,



1684-85, the General Court licensed John Fiske, "a sore wounded soldier in the late Indian War, to keep a public-house of entertainment." Woodward and Fairfield were licensed to sell liquor September 28, 1686. August 7, 1694, the County Court licensed Ezekiel Woodward as an inn holder "at the sign of y<sup>e</sup> flower de luce." Thomas Fiske, Jr., was licensed to sell liquor in June, 1693, and the license was renewed in 1695 and 1696. A Mr. Symonds was the landlord in 1705 and 1706. Joseph Dodge was chosen to keep the public-house in 1709. He continued for several years. Ebenezer Kemball was the landlord in 1720. Jonathan Porter was an inn-holder here from about 1730 to 1755 and later. He lived a short distance west of the soldiers' monument. William Rogers was licensed as an inn-holder here in 1732. At the close of the Revolution there was a tavern kept at the sign of the "sun." Patty Lewis was the inn-holder here in 1799. From 1796 to 1798 Col. Paul Porter kept a tavern and store where the horse car stable is now located. It was afterwards kept at the same place by John Thorn Dodge, Esq., for several years, and he was followed by Thomas Barnes. Ezra Lummus, who was also postmaster and blacksmith, kept a tavern here for eight or ten years from 1827, in the brick house which he built for that purpose. He was a free-mason, and his sign consisted of his name, "E. Lummus, 1827," and the painting of a square and compass. William H. Bryant, in 1851, commenced keeping tavern in the Old Parvren building, which was taken down in 1853. He then opened the "Green House," so called, on the east end of the Common, and carried on the business here until all the buildings on the premises were burned, soon after midnight, on the 18th of April, 1869. The Union Block now occupies the same site. The present public-house, run by Mr. Stephen Currier, was opened in 1886, and its sign bears the words, "Enon Hotel."

Wenham has no water-power worthy of more than a mere mention. Miles' River, running through the easterly part of the town, is the principal stream. It is sluggish, and therefore offers no great water privileges, although in former times, two places, at which there are falls of a few feet, were improved to turn the machinery of a saw and grist-mill. As early as 1653 a mill, probably built by Goodman Hawes, was located here probably on the farm where Mr. David Pingree now lives. In 1682 John Dodge had a saw-mill. In 1691 there was a saw-mill near Lord's Hill, and John Porter and James Friend had liberty to flow the brook. In 1700 and 1701 there was a saw-mill where John Leach then resided. There was a grist-mill as early as 1686. In 1713 Josiah Dodge's corn-mill was situated a short distance above the ford. Mr. Henry Dodge has a steam saw-mill at the present time, at East Wenham. In 1699 Ensign John Porter was granted timber for a small malt-mill, to be set on the brook by his house.

The first blacksmith mentioned as having a shop in Wenham was Abraham Martin, to whom the town voted on the 11th of the first month, 1670, to give two acres of land if he shall follow his trade here seven years. Robert Symonds was a blacksmith in 1697. Josiah Bridges moved from Boxford, and was a blacksmith here from 1713 to February, 1715, when he died. Daniel Herrick was the blacksmith in 1773. Pelatiah Brown had a shop, and worked at his trade of a blacksmith here in the Revolutionary period, where the house of Mr. Benjamin F. Young is now situated. Ezra Lummus, the postmaster and inn-holder, was a blacksmith from about 1827 to about 1837. John J. Senter was a blacksmith at two periods; and George A. Lummus from about 1849 to 1875. Uzziel Dodge established a shop here about 1790, and ran the business a term of years. He was followed in the same shop by Jabez Richards, who was succeeded by Daniel Bradbury, about 1840. Mr. Bradbury, in 1882, sold out to Mr. Charles F. Dudley, who has since continued the blacksmithing business at the old stand. The other blacksmith is Mr. Henry H. Dempsey; both shops being located in Central Square.

Tanning hides was carried on here quite extensively at different times. In 1707 the town granted to Daniel MacCladlin sixty square rods of common land, on condition that he set up a tanner's yard. In 1708 he had liberty to dam up the brook; and in 1721 the land was given to him free from the condition. Samuel Gott carried on the tanning business from about 1725 for about forty years, on land now belonging to Mr. Michael Sullivan, situated across the street from the residence of Mr. Joseph G. Kent. Slight depressions in the ground still mark the precise spot of some of the old vats. This was one of the largest tanneries then operated in Essex County. A Mr. Flint had a tannery here for a few years about sixty years ago. He sold out to William Cleaves, and went to New Boston, N. H. The property was afterwards sold to Augustus Dodge, who filled up the old vats.

A kindred business is that carried on by Messrs. Austin C. Patch and Amos Gould, under the firm-name of Patch & Gould, who are morocco manufacturers. They established their business January 1, 1884, and built their new factory in 1886. They do quite an extensive business, using steam-power.

Charles B. Lander of Salem bought of the town of Wenham, the tract of land extending from the lake to the highway, including the hill on which Hugh Peters had preached, and removed the hill. On the level area thus made, he erected large ice-houses and run a branch railroad to them from the Eastern Railroad track. Mr. Lander established the business in 1843, and continued to do a large business in furnishing the world with the famous Wenham Lake ice until about 1850, when he sold out to Addison Gage & Co., who continued the business until 1882.





Since that date nothing has been done at this place. In its best days the company cut annually about twenty-five thousand tons of ice, valued at forty thousand dollars. The ice is now mainly cut on the Beverly shore of the lake.

Boots and shoes were manufactured here for many years. Amos Gould was engaged in the manufacture of boots from about 1834 to 1875, at his residence at the Centre.

Edward Perkins began manufacturing boots in a small shop at Samuel Porter's residence, in December, 1844, and added shoes to his products the following June. He moved into the shop of Edward Perkins (his great uncle) in the summer of 1847, and was afterwards a partner with Abram Patch about eight months. Mr. Patch had commenced manufacturing boots and shoes in "Egypt" in 1845, two years later removed to the place where Mr. George Howe now lives, manufactured there a few months, and in September, 1847, went into partnership with Edward Perkins, as above stated. In May, 1848, they dissolved partnership, and Mr. Patch went back to the Howe place, and continued to manufacture there until February, 1854. He removed to Danvers the May following. Then John P. Rust became a partner with Mr. Perkins, and they built a new shop near the Wenham line in Hamilton, removing thither in June, 1849. They dissolved their partnership in February, 1850, and, in April, Mr. Perkins moved the shop to where it now stands in Wenham, it being now the dwelling-house of Jeremiah Kavanagh, and opened a store in connection with his shoe business with Dr. Nathan Jones. About a year afterwards Mr. Jones went out of the firm, and his place was taken by his son, Nathan A. Jones. Mr. Jones afterwards sold his interest to Daniel J. Foster. In 1853 the firm built a larger factory a little west of the house of Mrs. S. A. Gould. Mr. Foster left the partnership and James H. Perkins took his place. The firm dissolved in 1856. Mr. Perkins then manufactured shoes alone in a shop near the brick house until May 25, 1858, when he removed to Lynn. George W. Peabody manufactured heavy brogans at West Wenham from 1846 to 1862. Arthur L. Merrill manufactured shoes in a shop on Larch Street in 1865 and 1866. He was succeeded in the spring of 1870 by Samuel K. Evans, who afterwards removed to Union Block, where he continued his business for about a year afterwards. Abraham A. Fiske and Mr. Evans formed a partnership in February, 1873, and manufactured shoes together until January, 1875. Then Mr. Evans continued the business at the same place for about a year. Mr. Albert R. Fiske of Peabody bought the John Meldrum estate, built a factory and manufactured shoes here from May, 1870, till the spring of 1876, when he removed from the town, and his brother, Abraham A. Fiske, continued the business until the factory was burned on the night of January 10, 1878. Deacon James H. Moulton manufactured shoes here in Mr. Dempsey's black-

smith shop from May 1, 1873, to May 1, 1878, and in Union Block from May 1, 1878, to July 1, 1882. In 1855 there were manufactured in Wenham four thousand and two hundred pairs of boots and twenty-five thousand pairs of shoes, of the estimated value of twenty thousand dollars, and in the manufacture of which were employed forty-six males and twenty females.

Wenham has several stores. Messrs. A. D. and W. F. Trowt keep a country store; Mr. James H. Perkins, Jr., deals in dry-goods; and Mr. George H. Wyatt is a grocer. Colonel Paul Porter kept a country grocery at his tavern in 1797 and 1798. It was situated where the horse-car stable now stands. About 1808 he built the house recently owned and occupied by the late Amos Gould, and kept a grocery store in the western end of it until 1813. In that year David Perkins of Topsfield and Nathaniel Perkins of Wenham bought the estate and business, which they carried on until they sold out to Samuel Clarke in 1823. In 1824 the stand was purchased by John S. Felton of Danvers, who sold, the following year, to Major David Starrett, a former clerk, who was then keeping a store at Herrick's Corner.<sup>1</sup> Mr. Starrett continued the business here, and after a while bought a building in North Beverly, moved it to Wenham, and fitted it up for his place of trade. He carried on the business until his death in March, 1845. Nathaniel Perkins, who came from Topsfield, opened a store in a small building located near the house of the late Henry Perkins in the fall of 1844. Mr. Benjamin Clayton Putnam, who was from Danvers, went into partnership with him in April, 1845. John A. Putnam, also from Danvers, bought out Mr. Perkins' interest in the business the following fall. Mr. Perkins was then in ill health, and died not long afterwards. The two Putnams built a new store, on a lot of land purchased of the late Dr. John Porter, located some five or six rods westerly of the soldiers' monument, in the fall and winter following, and moved into it in the spring of 1846. They continued in business together till the fall of 1856, when they failed. Mr. B. C. Putnam then conducted the business alone till 1860, when Mr. H. L. Eaton and Nathaniel S. Gould became his partners. Mr. Eaton retired in 1861, and the partnership between the other two terminated in the fall of the same year, Mr. Putnam removing from town in the spring of 1862. They made it their business to have on hand every article called for,—dry goods, groceries, hardware, crockery and glassware, boots and shoes, clothing, flour, meal and grain, agricultural implements, etc. Mr. Gould then conducted the business until sickness compelled his retirement in 1865. Messrs. William W. Fowler and Elisha P. Chapman then had the store. Mr. Chapman withdrew about 1869,

<sup>1</sup> A Mrs. Sweet and Samuel Ober had kept store at Herrick's Corner before Mr. Starrett.



and Mr. Fowler continued the business until the store was burned on the morning of May 23, 1870. A Mr. Rice kept a dry-goods store in the same building, and after the fire opened his trade in the new Union Block, where he stayed but a short period.

The Union Block, built by a company called the Wenham Co-operative Union, in 1870, was used as a store by the Union until the store and business was sold at public auction, in October, 1880. The purchasers were A. D. and W. F. Trowt, who then commenced the business which they still carry on.

Charles W. Batchelder erected a building on Main Street, and in it sold dry goods, boots and shoes, etc. He gave up business in 1884, and Mrs. Julia P. Messer afterwards occupied the store for about two years. Since the fall of 1885, it has been occupied by James H. Perkins, Jr., with his apothecary business, and a dry-goods and boot and shoe trade. G. D. and Austin S. Richards kept a country store in the store that Edward Perkins built from the spring of 1858 to the spring of 1860.

Mr. George W. Parsons is a wholesale dealer in salt, smoked, pickled and dry fish; and boneless cod-fish is his specialty. He commenced his business September 1, 1874, and has usually employed two or three hands to prepare the boneless fish.

The people of Wenham are in general agriculturists; the soil being fertile and finely adapted to cultivation. The farms and farm buildings, as well as the village, are neatly kept.

**DISTINGUISHED RESIDENTS AND NATIVES.**—We have already spoken of several distinguished and professional residents and natives of Wenham in connection with the history of the churches and the practice of medicine. There are some other residents who ought to be mentioned. Samuel Blanchard, Esq., was a prominent resident of the town during the early part of the present century. Hon. Timothy Pickering resided here for many years during the intervals of retirement from active life. He was very fond of agriculture, and was the first president of the Essex Agricultural Society. After a long life of eighty-three years, having been a general in the Revolution, judge of the Court of Common Pleas, and of the Maritime Court, Postmaster-General of the United States, Secretary of War, Secretary of State of the United States, member of Congress and United States Senator, he died in Salem January 29, 1829.

Wenham has produced a goodly number of distinguished people. Besides those we have enumerated in other parts of this sketch, the following are deserving of special mention among the distinguished and professional natives of the town:—

*Rev. Moses Fiske* (1642–1708) graduated at Harvard College in 1662, and was a clergyman at Quincy, Mass.

*Hon. William Fairfield* (1662–1742) was speaker, in 1741, of the House of Representatives in the State Legislature.

*Rev. Phineas Fiske* (1682–1749), who graduated at Yale College in 1704, was a tutor in that college, and pastor of a church at Haddam, Conn. He was also an eminent physician.

*Dr. Tyler Porter* (1735–1811) was a physician, and patriot in the Revolution.

*Dr. Josiah Fairfield* (1746–1794) was a physician in Pepperell borough, Me.

*Hon. Daniel Kilham* (1751–1841) graduated at Harvard College in 1777; and was a member of both branches of the State Legislature, and of the Governor's Council; and an apothecary in Newburyport.

*Rev. John Kimball* (1761–1824) graduated at Harvard College in 1792, and was a clergyman in Acworth, N. H.

*Dr. Benjamin Jones Porter* (1763–1847) was a surgeon in the army of the Revolution; physician in Scarborough, Westbrook, and Portland, Me.; fellow and treasurer of Bowdoin College; and a councillor and State Senator.

*Henry Porter* (1809–1851) was the inventor of Porter's Burning Fluid, and a nurse lamp.

*Rev. Francis Elliott Cleaves* (1816–1883) was a Baptist clergyman at East Sanbornton, N. H., North Reading and Littleton, Mass., and New Boston, N. H., respectively.

*Rev. John Henry Dodge* (1828–1863) graduated at Amherst College in 1856, and from Andover Theological Seminary in 1859; and was a missionary to West Africa.

*Edward Kimball* (1835), who graduated at Amherst College, was president of the Boston Board of Trade, and a merchant in Boston.

*Rev. Isaac Francis Porter* (1839) graduated at Madison University in 18—, and is a Unitarian clergyman at Chicopee, Mass.

*Arthur Kemble, M. D.* (1839), graduated at Boston Medical School, was assistant surgeon in the War of the Rebellion, on the bark "Gemsbok," and is now practicing in Salem, Mass.

*Dr. John Franklin Robinson* (1863) graduated at the Harvard Medical School, and is a surgeon at Manchester, N. H.

#### MEMBERS OF THE STATE LEGISLATURE.

1644. Joseph Batchelder.	1698–99. John Newman.
1645. Mr. Sparrowhawk.	1700. Walter Fairfield.
1646. Mr. Auditor.	1701. Wm. Fisk.
1647. Wm. Fisk.	1702. John Newman.
1648. Estlin Reade.	1703. Mr. Thos. Patch, Sr.
1649–50. Wm. Fiske.	1704–6. Dea. Wm. Fisk.
1651. Estlin Reade.	1707–8. Thos. Patch.
1652. Wm. Fiske.	1709–11. Wm. Fisk.
1653. Phineas Fiske.	1712. John Porter.
1654. Chas. Gott.	1713–14. Wm. Fisk.
1666. Chas. Gott.	1715. Capt. Thos. Fisk.
1669. John Fisk.	1716. Dea. Wm. Fisko.
1671–72. Thos. Fisk.	1717–19. Wm. Rogers.
1678–80. Thos. Fisk.	1720–21. Ens. John Gott.
1681. John Fisk.	1722. Wm. Rogers.
1686. Thos. Fisk.	1723. Wm. Fairfield.
1692. Walter Fairfield.	1724. Lieut. John Porter.
1694. Thos. Fiske.	1725. Wm. Rogers.
1697. Thos. Fisko.	1726. John Porter.





1727. Lieut. Samuel Kimball.  
 1728-30. Wm. Fairbaird.  
 1731. Wm. Rogers.  
 1732-41. Wm. Fairbaird.  
 1743-44. John Dodge.  
 1745-47. Jonathan Porter.  
 1754. John Dodge.  
 1767. Benj. Fairbaird.  
 1774-75. Benj. Fairbaird.  
 1791-92. Major Billy Porter.  
 1796-1800. Samuel Blanchard.  
 1803. Samuel Blanchard, Esq.  
 1808-10. Samuel Blanchard, Esq.  
 1811-13. John Dodge.  
 1815-18. Paul Porter.  
 1820. John T. Dodge, Esq.<sup>1</sup>  
 1828-30. Paul Porter.  
 1831-33. Moses Foster.  
 1834-35. John Porter.

1836-37. Moses Foster.  
 1839. Benj. Edwards.  
 1840-41. Andrew Dodge.  
 1842. Franklin Hadley.  
 1843. Joseph Cook.  
 1847. Edmund Kimball, Jr.  
 1849. Amos Gould.  
 1851. John Porter.  
 1852. Moses Midnam.  
 1854. Benj. C. Putnam.  
 1854. John A. Putnam.<sup>2</sup>  
 1855. Orin Midnam.  
 1858. Francis M. Dodge.  
 1862. Benj. C. Putnam.  
 1870. Abbott Johnson.  
 1875. Dr. John L. Robinson.  
 1880. Henry Hobbs.  
 1885. Nathaniel P. Perkins.

1785. John Dodge, 2d.  
 1786-87. Lieut. John Dodge.  
 1788-93. Isaac Porter.  
 1791. Ens. Wm. Dodge.  
 1795. Capt. Phalah Brown.  
 1796. Tyler Porter, Esq.  
 1797-98. Isaac Dodge.  
 1799. Jonathan Porter.  
 1800-01. Edward Perkins.  
 1802. Lieut. John Dodge.  
 1803-4. Nathl. Porter.  
 1805-6. Nathl. Kimball.  
 1807. Dea. Wm. Dodge.  
 1808. Capt. Ed. Batchelder.  
 1809-10. Thos. Kimball.  
 1811. Capt. Wm. Kimball.  
 1812. Jacob Dodge.  
 1814. Wm. Dodge.  
 1815. Benj. Edwards.  
 1816-17. John Dodge.

1818-25. Nathl. Kimball.  
 1828. Nathl. Kimball.  
 1829-30. Wm. Dodge.  
 1832-34. David Starrett.  
 1836. David Starrett.  
 1837-43. Edmund Batchelder.  
 1844. Joseph Cook.  
 1845-47. Edmund Batchelder.  
 1848-49. Stephen Dodge.  
 1850-51. Samuel Porter.  
 1852-56. Edmund Batchelder.  
 1857-62. Stephen Dodge.  
 1863-65. Amos Gould.  
 1866-68. Samuel Porter.  
 1869. Amos Gould.  
 1870-75. Warren Jones.  
 1876. Henry Patch.  
 1877-82. Samuel Porter.  
 1883-85. Henry Patch.  
 1886-87. Wm. F. Trowt.

**TOWN TREASURERS.**—In the early history of the town there were no town treasurers bearing that title; the constables performing the duties of a treasurer, collector of taxes, etc. The following is a list of the constables, as far as the records show, down to 1695, when treasurers began to be chosen, followed by the list of treasurers:

1644. Phineas Fiske.  
 1654. John Fiske.  
 1655. Robt. Hawes.  
 1657. Jas. Moulton.  
 1667. Jas. Moulton, Jr.  
 1669. Henry Kimball.  
 1670. Wm. Fiske.  
 1671. Wm. Fiske.  
 John Aldry.  
 1672. Wm. Fiske.  
 1673. Thos. Hobbs, Sr.  
 Richard Dodge.  
 1674. Thos. Hobbs.  
 Thos. Patch.  
 1676. John Fiske.  
 — Fairfield.  
 1677. Samuel Kimball.  
 1678. Richard Hutton, Sr.

1679. Samuel Moulton.  
 1680. Thos. Fiske, Jr.  
 1681. Henry Hagt.  
 1682. Robert Hibbert.  
 1683. John Porter.  
 1684. John Edwards.  
 1685. John Bure.  
 1686. Benj. Edwards.  
 1687. John Perkins.  
 1688. Samuel Fiske.  
 1689. Thos. Kimball.  
 1690. Samuel Fiske.  
 1691. John Dodge.  
 1692. Wm. Fairbaird.  
 1693. Nathl. Wadron.  
 Chas. Gott, Jr.  
 1694. Jos. Fowler.

#### TOWN TREASURERS.

1695. Lieut. Chas. Gott.  
 1696-97. Capt. Thos. Fiske.  
 1700. Sergt. Thos. Patch.  
 1701. John Newman.  
 1702. Thos. Fiske, Jr.  
 1703-4. John Perkins.  
 1705. John Gott.  
 1706-8. Thos. Fiske.  
 1709. Capt. Nathl. Wadron.  
 1710. Wm. Rogers.  
 1711-14. Jos. Herrick.  
 1715-18. Lieut. John Porter.  
 1719-22. Theophilus Rex.  
 1721-22. Thos. Tarbox.  
 1723. John Kimball.  
 1724. Benj. Fisk.  
 1725. Thos. Tarbox.  
 1726-29. Stephen Patch.  
 1730. Samuel Gott.  
 1731. Ens. Thos. Tarbox.  
 1732. Capt. Saml. Kimball.  
 1733. Jonathan Kimball.  
 1734. Jonathan Porter.  
 1735-37. John Gott.

1738. Josiah Dodge.  
 1739-40. Jonathan Kimball.  
 1741-43. John Kimball.  
 1744. Benj. Herrick.  
 1745-46. Samuel Gott.  
 1747. Capt. John Kimball.  
 1748-52. Benj. Kimball.  
 1753-54. John Friend.  
 1755-56. Capt. John Kimball.  
 1757-58. Samuel Porter, Jr.  
 1759-60. Capt. Nathl. Brown.  
 1761. Benj. Kimball.  
 1762. Capt. Nathl. Brown.  
 1763. Thomas Brown.  
 1764. Nathl. Brown, Esq.  
 1765-66. Josiah Fairfield, Esq.  
 1767-68. Ens. John Friend.  
 1769. Nathl. Brown, Esq.  
 1770-72. Ens. John Friend.  
 1773. Ens. Thos. Brown.  
 1774-76. Ens. John Friend.  
 1779. Dea. John Friend.  
 1780. Daniel Kilham, Jr.  
 1781-84. Capt. Thos. Kimball.

#### TOWN CLERKS.

1644-54. Wm. Fiske.  
 1654-94. Thos. Fiske.  
 1695-1701. John Newman.  
 1702-5. Thos. Fiske.  
 1706-11. Wm. Fairbaird.  
 1712-21. Wm. Rogers.  
 1721-30. Wm. Fairbaird.  
 1731-42. Capt. Wm. Rogers.  
 1743-51. Wm. Fairbaird.  
 1752. Capt. Wm. Rogers.  
 1756-37. Nathl. Brown.  
 1738. John Gott.  
 1739-43. Nathl. Brown.  
 1744-48. David Batchelder.  
 1749-53. Jonathan Kimball.  
 1754-58. Samuel Goodridge.  
 1759-63. Jonathan Kimball.  
 1764. Thos. Brown.  
 1765-70. Edward Wadron.  
 1771-72. Dr. Wm. Fairbaird.  
 1772. Thos. Brown.  
 1773-75. Dr. Tyler Porter.

1776. Joshua Orne.  
 1777. Dr. Tyler Porter.  
 1778-79. Capt. Richard Dodge.  
 1780-83. Dr. Tyler Porter.  
 1784-87. Stephen Dodge.  
 1788-89. Richard Dodge.  
 1790-91. Stephen Dodge.  
 1792-98. John Dodge, Jr.  
 1799-1806. Joseph Fairbaird.  
 1807-8. John Dodge, Jr.  
 1809-18. Paul Porter.  
 1819-22. John T. Dodge, Jr.  
 1823-29. Moses Foster.  
 1830-31. David Starrett.  
 1832-39. Moses Foster.  
 1840-48. John Porter.  
 1849-51. Stephen Dodge.  
 1852-56. John A. Putnam.  
 1857-61. Benj. C. Putnam.  
 1862-69. Joseph Cook.  
 1870-87. Wellington Pool.

#### SELECTMEN.

##### 1654.<sup>1</sup>

Phineas Fiske.  
 Charles Gott.  
 John Fiske.

##### 1655.

Mr. Gott.  
 Phineas Fiske.  
 Richard Hutton.

##### 1656.

Mr. Gott.  
 Phineas Fiske.  
 Richard Hutton.

##### 1657.

Mr. Gott.  
 Phineas Fiske.  
 Richard Kimball.

##### 1658.

[None recorded.]

##### 1659.

Austin Killim.  
 Richard Hutton.  
 Wm. Geare.

##### 1660.

Mr. Gott.  
 Austin Killim.  
 Phineas Fiske.

##### 1661.

Mr. Gott.  
 John Fiske.  
 Richard Kimball.

##### 1662.

Austin Killim.  
 Goodman Moulton.  
 Thomas Fiske.

##### 1663.

Austin Killim.  
 Richard Kimball.  
 Thomas Fiske.

##### 1664.

Mr. Gott.  
 Richard Kimball.  
 Thomas Fiske.

##### 1665.

Richard Kimball.  
 Richard Hutton.  
 Thomas Fiske.

##### 1666.

Mr. Gott.  
 Richard Kimball.  
 Thomas Fiske.

##### 1667.

Mr. Gott.  
 Richard Kimball, Sr.  
 Thomas Fiske.

<sup>1</sup> Delegate to State Constitutional Convention.

<sup>2</sup> Delegate to Constitutional Convention on representation.

<sup>1</sup> The names of no selectmen, prior to this date, are found recorded.





1668.  
Walter Fairfield.  
John Fiske.  
Mark Batchelder.  
Thomas Fiske.

1669.  
John Fiske.  
Richard Kimball.  
Thomas Fiske.

1670.  
Richard Kimball.  
John Fiske.  
Thomas Fiske.

1671.  
Mark Batchelder.  
Walter Fairfield.  
Charles Gott.

1672.  
Richard Kimball.  
Mark Batchelder.  
Thomas Fiske.

1673.  
John Fiske.  
Mark Batchelder.  
Thomas Fiske.

1674.  
Richard Kimball.  
Walter Fairfield.  
Thomas Fiske.

1675.  
[None recorded.]

1676.  
Charles Gott.  
Walter Fairfield.  
Richard Hutton.  
William Fiske.  
Thomas Fiske.

1677.  
John Fiske.  
Charles Gott.  
William Fiske.  
John Batchelder.  
Thomas Fiske.

1678.  
Walter Fairfield.  
Charles Gott.  
William Fiske.  
John Batchelder.  
Thomas Fiske.

1679.  
Walter Fairfield.  
John Batchelder.  
Charles Gott.  
William Fiske.  
Thomas Fiske, Sr.

1680.  
Walter Fairfield.  
William Fiske.  
James Friend.  
Richard Hutton.  
Richard Dodge.

1681.  
John Fiske.  
Charles Gott.  
John Batchelder.  
Thomas Patch.  
Thomas Fiske, Jr.

1682.  
Wm. Fiske.  
Charles Gott.  
Richard Hutton.  
Samuel Kimball.  
Thomas Fiske, Sr.

1683.  
Lieut. Gott.  
Ens. Fiske.  
Sergt. Fairfield.  
John Batchelder.  
Thomas Fiske, Sr.

1684.  
Lieut. Gott.  
Ens. Fiske.  
Sergt. Fairfield.  
Capt. John Batchelder.  
Thomas Fiske, Sr.

1685.  
Lieut. Gott.  
Ens. Fiske.  
Sergt. Fairfield.  
Corpl. Batchelder.  
Thomas Fiske.

1686.  
Lieut. Fiske.  
Ens. Fairfield.  
Lieut. Gott.  
Sergt. Hutton.  
Samuel Kimball.

1687.  
John Batchelder.  
Richard Dodge.  
Walter Fairfield.  
Thomas Patch.  
James Montton, Sr.

1688.  
Ens. Fairfield.  
John Batchelder.  
James Montton, Sr.  
Lieut. Fiske.  
James Friend.  
Thomas Fiske, Sr.

1689.  
Dea. Fiske.  
Lieut. Gott.  
Richard Hutton.  
Thomas Fiske.  
James Friend.

1690.  
Lieut. Fiske.  
Ens. Batchelder.  
Sergt. Hutton.  
Samuel Kimball.  
Thomas Fiske, Sr.

1691.  
Lieut. Wm. Fiske.  
Charles Gott.  
Ens. Batchelder.  
Thomas Fiske, Sr.  
John Perkins.

1692.  
Richard Hutton.  
John Porter.  
James Friend.  
Mr. Newman.  
Thomas Fiske, Sr.

1693.  
Lieut. Wm. Fiske.  
James Friend.  
John Porter.  
Mr. Newman.  
Thomas Fiske, Sr.

1694.  
Lieut. Wm. Fiske.  
Mr. Newman.  
Ens. Batchelder.  
Samuel Kimball.  
Wm. Fairfield.

1695.  
Capt. Thomas Fiske.  
Lieut. Wm. Fiske.  
Ens. Walter Fairfield.  
Wm. Fairfield.  
John Newman.

1696.  
Capt. Thomas Fiske.  
Ens. Walter Fairfield.  
John Batchelder, Sr.  
James Friend.  
John Newman.

1697.  
Serg. Thomas Patch.  
John Porter.  
Wm. Fairfield.  
John Perkins.  
John Newman.

1698.  
Capt. Thomas Fiske.  
Dea. Wm. Fiske.  
Ens. Walter Fairfield.  
Samuel Kimball.  
John Newman.

1699.  
Serg. James Friend.  
Ens. John Porter.  
Wm. Fairfield.  
Thomas Kimball.  
John Newman.

1700.  
Capt. Thomas Fiske.  
Thomas Patch, Sr.  
Samuel Kimball.  
Benjamin Edwards.  
Lieut. Wm. Fiske.

1701.  
Capt. Thomas Fiske.  
Ens. John Porter.  
Benjamin Edwards.  
Wm. Fairfield.  
John Newman.

1702.  
Ens. Walter Fairfield.  
Ens. John Porter.  
James Friend.  
Thomas Patch.  
Thomas Fiske, Sr.

1703.  
Dea. Fiske.  
Lieut. Thomas Fiske.  
Ens. Porter.  
James Friend.  
Thomas Fiske, Sr.

1704.  
Dea. Wm. Fiske.  
Dea. James Friend.  
Walter Fairfield.  
Lieut. Thomas Fiske.  
Serg. Samuel Kimball.

1705.  
Dea. James Friend.  
Lieut. John Porter.  
Benjamin Edwards.  
Samuel Kimball.  
Thomas Fiske, Sr.

1706.  
John Gott.  
Thomas Kimball.  
Thomas Patch.  
Dea. Friend.  
Nathl. Fairfield.

1707.  
Dea. James Friend.  
Thomas Patch.  
Lieut. John Porter.  
Ens. Samuel Kimball.  
Wm. Fairfield.

1708.  
Capt. Fiske.  
Benjamin Edwards.  
Dea. Fiske.  
Lieut. John Porter.  
John Gott.

1709.  
Ens. Walter Fairfield.  
Benjamin Edwards.  
Ephraim Kimball.  
John Gott.  
Josiah Dodge.

1710.  
Capt. Thomas Fiske.  
Serg. Ben. Edwards.  
Ephraim Kimball.  
John Gott.  
Wm. Fairfield.

1711.  
Lieut. John Porter.  
Ens. Samuel Kimball.  
John Gott.  
Josiah Dodge.  
Wm. Rogers.

1712.  
Lieut. John Porter.  
Josiah Dodge.  
Caleb Kimball.  
Wm. Rogers.  
Ens. Samuel Kimball.

1713.  
Lieut. John Porter.  
Ens. Samuel Kimball.  
Josiah Dodge.  
Caleb Kimball.  
Wm. Rogers.

1714.  
Lieut. John Porter.  
Samuel Kimball.  
Josiah Dodge.  
Caleb Kimball.  
Wm. Rogers.

1715.  
Benjamin Edwards.  
Wm. Fairfield.  
Joseph Hemick.  
Caleb Kimball.  
Wm. Rogers.

1716.  
Ens. John Gott.  
Benjamin Edwards.  
Thomas Kimball.  
Thomas White.  
Wm. Rogers.

1717.  
Benjamin Edwards.  
Ens. John Gott.  
Thomas Kimball.  
Thomas White.  
Wm. Rogers.

1718.  
Ens. John Gott.  
Thomas Kimball.  
Benjamin Edwards.  
Thomas White.  
Wm. Rogers.



**1719.**  
Ens. John Gott.  
Benjamin Edwards.  
Dea. Ephraim Kimball.  
Mr. Daniel Dodge.  
Wm. Rogers.

**1720.**  
Capt. Thomas Fiske.  
Benjamin Edwards.  
Ens. John Gott.  
Wm. Rogers.  
Samuel Kimball.

**1721.**  
Caleb Kimball.  
Nathl. Brown.  
John Moulton.  
Samuel Kimball.  
Wm. Rogers.

**1722.**  
Lieut. J. Porter.  
Benjamin Fiske.  
Rice Knowlton.  
Wm. Dodge.  
Wm. Rogers.

**1723.**  
Lieut. Porter.  
Samuel Killham.  
Nathl. Brown.  
Ens. John Batchelder.  
Wm. Rogers.

**1724.**  
Lieut. John Porter.  
Samuel Killham.  
Ens. John Batchelder.  
Nathl. Brown.  
Wm. Dodge.

**1725.**  
Lieut. John Porter.  
Capt. Wm. Rogers.  
Lieut. Samuel Kimball.  
Rice Knowlton.  
Samuel Killham.

**1726.**  
Lieut. John Porter.  
Wm. Dodge.  
Nathl. Brown.  
Thomas White.  
Wm. Fairfield.

**1727.**  
Lieut. John Porter.  
Wm. Fairfield.  
Thomas White.  
Nathl. Brown.  
Wm. Dodge.

**1728.**  
Lieut. John Porter.  
Capt. Wm. Rogers.  
Wm. Fairfield.

**1729.**  
Lieut. John Porter.  
Wm. Dodge.  
Capt. Wm. Rogers.  
Nathl. Brown.  
Wm. Fairfield.

**1730.**  
Lieut. John Porter.  
Capt. Wm. Rogers.  
Nathl. Brown.  
Wm. Dodge.  
Wm. Fairfield.

**1731.**  
Ebenezer Fiske.  
John Kimball.  
Phineas Dodge.  
John Dodge.  
Samuel Gott.

**1732.**  
Lieut. Wm. Dodge.  
Capt. Wm. Rogers.  
Jonathan Kimball.  
Robert Cree.  
John Gott.

**1733.**  
Dea. Wm. Fairfield.  
Stephen Patch.  
Ebenezer Kimball.  
Joseph Edwards.  
David Batchelder.

**1734.**  
John Porter, Jr.  
Jonathan Kimball.  
Ens. Thomas Tarbox.  
Josiah Dodge.  
Wm. Fairfield.

**1735.**  
Capt. Samuel Kimball.  
Capt. Rogers.  
Samuel Gott.  
Timothy Patch.  
Wm. Fairfield.

**1736.**  
Dea. Wm. Fairfield.  
Benjamin Herrick.  
John Kimball.  
Josiah Dodge.  
Nathl. Brown.

**1737.**  
Dea. Wm. Fairfield.  
Capt. Samuel Kimball.  
Jonathan Kimball.  
Josiah Dodge.  
Nathl. Brown.

**1738.**  
Jonathan Kimball.  
John Gott.  
Jonathan Porter.  
Edward Waldron.  
Nathl. Brown.

**1739.**  
Nathl. Brown.  
Richard Dodge.  
John Gott.

**1740.**  
John Gott.  
Richard Dodge.  
Nathl. Brown.

**1741.**  
Stephen Patch.  
Lieut. Kimball.  
Benjamin Herrick.  
Josiah Dodge.  
Nathl. Brown.

**1742.**  
Nathl. Brown.  
Benjamin Edwards.  
Jonathan Porter.  
John Baker.  
Zacheus Goldsmith.

**1743.**  
Benjamin Edwards.  
John Baker.  
Nathl. Brown.  
Benj. Herrick.  
Dea. Kimball.

**1744.**  
John Gott.  
Dea. Kimball.  
Richard Dodge.  
Josiah Herrick.  
Nathl. Brown.

**1745.**  
Dea. Kimball.  
John Gott.  
Benjamin Edwards.  
Josiah Herrick.  
David Batchelder.

**1746.**  
Capt. Jonathan Kimball.  
John Gott.  
Richard Dodge.  
James Kimball.  
David Batchelder.

**1747.**  
Ens. Samuel Gott.  
John Kimball.  
Capt. Thomas Tarbox.  
Benjamin Edwards.  
Capt. John Dodge.

**1748.**  
Mr. Samuel Porter.  
Dea. Jonathan Kimball.  
Lieut. Benjamin Herrick.  
David Batchelder.  
Phineas Dodge.

**1749.**  
Josiah Herrick.  
Benjamin Fairfield.  
Ebenezer Waldron.  
Jonathan Kimball.  
Samuel Rogers.

**1750.**  
Nathaniel Kimball.  
Josiah White.  
Timothy Patch, Jr.  
Samuel Tarbox, Jr.  
Jonathan Kimball, Jr.

**1751.**  
Timothy Patch, Jr.  
Samuel Tarbox, Jr.  
Edmund Kimball.  
Jacob Dodge.  
Jonathan Kimball, Jr.

**1752.**  
John White.  
Samuel Rogers.  
Abraham Kimball.  
Jonathan Kimball, Jr.  
Samuel Tarbox, Jr.

**1753.**  
Josiah Herrick.  
Abraham Kimball.  
Ebenezer Waldron.  
John White.  
Jonathan Kimball, Jr.

**1754.**  
Ebenezer Waldron.  
Benjamin Kimball.  
Samuel Goodridge.  
Daniel Porter.  
Samuel Tarbox, Jr.

**1755.**  
Benjamin Kimball.  
Samuel Tarbox, Jr.  
Samuel Goodridge.  
Ebenezer Waldron.  
Daniel Porter.

**1756.**  
Benjamin Kimball.  
Samuel Tarbox.  
Samuel Goodridge.  
Ebenezer Waldron.  
Daniel Porter.

**1757.**  
Benjamin Kimball.  
Samuel Tarbox.  
Timothy Patch.  
Samuel Goodridge.  
Ebenezer Waldron.

**1758.**  
Jonathan Kimball.  
Samuel Tarbox.  
Samuel Goodridge.  
John Friend.  
Capt. Nathaniel Brown.

**1759.**  
Samuel Tarbox.  
Samuel Goodridge.  
John Friend.  
Thomas Brown.  
Jonathan Kimball.

**1760.**  
Richard Dodge.  
Josiah Herrick.  
Benjamin Fairfield.  
John Killham.  
Jonathan Kimball.

**1761.**  
John Friend.  
Timothy Patch.  
Isaac Dodge.  
Benjamin Dodge.  
Capt. Brown.

**1762.**  
Benjamin Fairfield.  
Edward Waldron.  
Jonathan Kimball.

**1763.**  
Benjamin Fairfield.  
Benjamin Kimball.  
Samuel Tarbox.  
Edward Waldron.  
Jonathan Kimball.

**1764.**  
Edward Waldron.  
John Friend.  
Thomas Brown.

**1765.**  
Benjamin Fairfield.  
Samuel Tarbox.  
Edward Waldron.

**1766.**  
Benjamin Fairfield.  
Samuel Tarbox.  
Edward Waldron.

**1767.**  
Benjamin Fairfield.  
Samuel Tarbox.  
Edward Waldron.

**1768.**  
Benjamin Fairfield.  
Samuel Tarbox.  
Edward Waldron.

**1769.**  
Thomas Brown.  
Wm. Fairfield.  
Edward Waldron.

**1770.**  
Caleb Kimball.  
Daniel Killham, Jr.  
Edward Waldron.

**1771.**  
Caleb Kimball.  
Richard Dodge.  
Dr. Wm. Fairfield.





1772.

Thomas Brown.  
Caleb Kimball.  
Richard Dodge, Jr.

1773.

Caleb Kimball. }  
Stephen Dodge.  
Dr. Tyler Porter.

1774.

Dr. Tyler Porter.  
Stephen Dodge.  
Caleb Kimball.

1775.

Dr. Tyler Porter.  
Caleb Kimball.  
Stephen Dodge.

1776.

Joshua Orne.  
Josiah Ober.  
Edward Waldron.

1777.

Josiah Ober.  
Joshua Orne.  
Dr. Tyler Porter.

1778.

Capt. Richard Dodge.  
Josiah Herrick.  
Amos Batchelder.

1779.

Capt. Richard Dodge.  
Josiah Herrick.  
Amos Batchelder.

1780.

Dr. Tyler Porter.  
Stephen Dodge.  
Dea. Caleb Kimball.

1781.

Stephen Dodge.  
Dea. Caleb Kimball.  
Dr. Tyler Porter.

1782.

Dea. Caleb Kimball.  
Stephen Dodge.  
Tyler Porter.

1783.

Dea. Caleb Kimball.  
Stephen Dodge.  
Dr. Tyler Porter.

1784.

Dea. Caleb Kimball.  
Isaac Porter.  
Stephen Dodge.

1785.

Dea. Caleb Kimball.  
Isaac Porter.  
Stephen Dodge.

1786.

Dea. Caleb Kimball.  
Isaac Porter.  
Stephen Dodge.

1787.

Dea. Caleb Kimball.  
Isaac Porter.  
Stephen Dodge.

1788.

Lieut. Cornelius Baker.  
Lieut. John Dodge.  
Richard Dodge.

1789.

Lieut. Cornelius Baker.  
Lieut. John Dodge.  
Richard Dodge.

1790.

Capt. Richard Dodge.  
Lieut. John Dodge.  
Stephen Dodge.

1791.

Capt. Richard Dodge.  
Lieut. John Dodge.  
Stephen Dodge.

1792.

Capt. John Dodge.  
Richard Hood.  
John Dodge, Jr.

1793.

Capt. John Dodge.  
Richard Hood.  
John Dodge, Jr.

1794.

Capt. John Dodge.  
Richard Hood.  
John Dodge, Jr.

1795.

Joseph Fairfield.  
Benjamin Edwards.  
Daniel Herrick.

1796.

John Dodge, Jr.  
Ens. Wm. Dodge.  
Nathl. Porter.

1797.

John Dodge, Jr.  
Nathl. Porter.  
Ens. Wm. Dodge.

1798.

John Dodge, Jr.  
Nathl. Porter.  
Ens. Wm. Dodge.

1799.

Edmund Batchelder.  
James Dodge.  
Thomas Kimball, Jr.

1800.

Jacob Dodge.  
Edmund Batchelder.  
Thomas Kimball, Jr.

1801.

Edmund Batchelder.  
John T. Dodge.  
Joseph Fairfield.

1802.

Edmund Batchelder.  
John T. Dodge.  
Joseph Fairfield.

1803.

Edmund Batchelder.  
John T. Dodge.  
Joseph Fairfield.

1804.

Capt. Edmund Batchelder.  
Lieut. Isaac Dodge.  
Joseph Fairfield.

1805.

Edmund Batchelder.  
Isaac Dodge.  
Joseph Fairfield.

1806.

Isaac Dodge.  
Edward Perkins.  
Joseph Fairfield.

1807.

Capt. Isaac Dodge.  
Edward Perkins.  
John Baker.

1808.

John Dodge, Jr.  
Dea. Wm. Dodge.  
John Baker.

1809.

John Baker.  
Paul Porter.  
Nehemiah Standley.

1810.

John Baker.  
Paul Porter.  
Nehemiah Standley.

1811.

Paul Porter.  
Downing Gentlee.  
Caleb Kimball.

1812.

Paul Porter.  
Caleb Kimball.  
Downing Gentlee.

1813.

Paul Porter.  
Downing Gentlee.  
Caleb Kimball.

1814.

Paul Porter.  
Caleb Kimball.  
Downing Gentlee.

1815.

John Baker.  
Nathl. Kimball.  
Nehemiah Standley.

1816.

John Baker.  
Nehemiah Standley.  
Nathl. Kimball.

1817.

Nathl. Kimball.  
John Baker.  
Nehemiah Standley.

1818.

Paul Porter.  
Caleb Kimball.  
Benjamin Edwards.

1819.

John T. Dodge, Jr.  
Capt. Isaac Dodge.  
Samuel Friend.

1820.

Isaac Dodge.  
Thomas Kimball.  
John T. Dodge, Jr.

1821.

Isaac Dodge.  
Thomas Kimball.  
John T. Dodge, Jr.

1822.

Isaac Dodge.  
John T. Dodge, Jr.  
Samuel Hood.

1823.

Capt. John Moulton.  
Stephen Dodge.  
Moses Foster.

1824.

John T. Moulton.  
Moses Foster.  
Stephen Dodge.

1825.

Paul Porter.  
Moses Foster.  
Stephen Dodge.

1826.

Moses Foster.  
Stephen Dodge.  
Andrew Dodge.

1827.

Moses Foster.  
Stephen Dodge.  
Andrew Dodge.

1828.

Moses Foster.  
Stephen Dodge.  
Andrew Dodge.

1829.

Moses Foster.  
Andrew Dodge.  
Charles Brown.

1830.

Charles Brown.  
David Starrett.  
Richard Dodge.

1831.

Charles Brown.  
David Starrett.  
Richard Dodge.

1832.

Richard Dodge.  
Charles Brown.  
Ezra Lummus.

1833.

Stephen Dodge.  
Ezra Lummus.  
Warren Peabody.

1834.

Stephen Dodge.  
Ezra Lummus.  
Warren Peabody.

1835.

Stephen Dodge.  
Ezra Lummus.  
Warren Peabody.

1836.

Stephen Dodge.  
Ezra Lummus.  
Warren Peabody.

1837.

Samuel Conant.  
Benjamin Edwards.  
Wm. Moulton.

1838.

Wm. Moulton.  
Samuel Conant.  
Benjamin Edwards.

1839.

Wm. Moulton.  
Nicholas Dodge.  
Rufus A. Dodge.

1840.

Wm. Moulton.  
Rufus A. Dodge.  
Wm. Dodge.

1841.

Stephen Dodge.  
Amos Gould.  
Abraham Patch.

1842.

Stephen Dodge.  
Amos Gould.  
Abraham Patch.

1843.

Stephen Dodge.  
John Porter.  
Abraham Patch.



1844.  
Stephen Dodge,  
John Porter,  
Abraham Patch.

1845.  
Stephen Dodge,  
John Porter,  
Abraham Patch.

1846.  
Stephen Dodge,  
Abraham Patch,  
Joseph Cook.

1847.  
Joseph Cook,  
Henry S. Kent,  
Richard Dodge.

1848.  
Joseph Cook,  
Henry S. Kent,  
Richard Dodge.

1849.  
Augustus Dodge,  
Rufus A. Dodge,  
John Felt.

1850.  
Rufus A. Dodge,  
John Felt,  
Augustus Dodge.

1851.  
Rufus A. Dodge,  
Augustus Dodge,  
Harvey Parker.

1852.  
Joseph Cook,  
Charles Brown,  
H. N. Folsom.

1853.  
Joseph Cook,  
Charles Brown,  
Abraham Dodge.

1854.  
Joseph Cook,  
Abraham Dodge,  
Charles Brown.

1855.  
Joseph Cook,  
Charles Brown,  
R. F. Dodge.

1856.  
Joseph Cook,  
Charles Brown,  
R. F. Dodge.

1857.  
Joseph Cook,  
Charles Brown,  
R. F. Dodge.

1858.  
Samuel Porter,  
Wm. Moulton,  
R. F. Moulton.

1859.  
Wm. Moulton,  
Samuel Porter,  
John Gentlee.

1860.  
Samuel Porter,  
Wm. Moulton,  
John Gentlee.

1861.  
Samuel Porter,  
Wm. Moulton,  
John Gentlee.

1862.  
Samuel Porter,  
John Gentlee,  
Solomon E. Kimball.

1863.  
Solomon E. Kimball,  
Francis M. Dodge,  
Rufus A. Dodge.

1864.  
Rufus A. Dodge,  
Solomon E. Kimball,  
John Gentlee.

1865.  
Rufus A. Dodge,  
Francis M. Dodge,  
Wm. B. Morgan.

1866.  
Samuel Porter,  
Solomon E. Kimball,  
John Gentlee.

1867.  
Samuel Porter,  
John Gentlee,  
Solomon E. Kimball.

1868.  
Samuel Porter,  
John Gentlee,  
Solomon E. Kimball.

1869.  
Samuel Porter,  
John Gentlee,  
Wm. B. Morgan.

1870.  
John Gentlee,  
Joseph Cook,  
N. P. Perkins.

1871.  
Joseph Cook,  
John Gentlee,  
N. P. Perkins.

1872.  
Joseph Cook,  
John Gentlee,  
N. P. Perkins.

1873.  
Joseph Cook,  
John Gentlee,  
N. P. Perkins.

1874.  
Joseph Cook,  
John Gentlee,  
N. P. Perkins.

1875.  
Joseph Cook,  
John Gentlee,  
N. P. Perkins.

1876.  
Joseph Cook,  
N. P. Perkins,  
Wm. F. Trowt.

1877.  
N. P. Perkins,  
W. F. Trowt,  
A. A. Fiske.

1878.  
Wm. F. Trowt,  
Solomon E. Kimball,  
John I. Durgin.

1879.  
Wm. F. Trowt,  
Solomon E. Kimball,  
John I. Durgin.

1880.  
Solomon E. Kimball,  
John Gentlee,  
John I. Durgin.

1881.  
Solomon E. Kimball,  
John Gentlee,  
John I. Durgin.

1882.  
Solomon E. Kimball,  
John Gentlee,  
John I. Durgin.

1883.  
Solomon E. Kimball,  
John Gentlee,  
John I. Durgin.

1884.  
John Gentlee,  
John I. Durgin,  
James T. Brown.

1885.  
John Gentlee,  
John I. Durgin,  
James T. Brown.

1886.  
John Gentlee,  
John I. Durgin,  
James T. Brown.

1887.  
John Gentlee,  
John I. Durgin,  
James T. Brown.

## CHAPTER C. MANCHESTER.

BY WILLIAM H. TAPPAN.

*Boundary—Topography—Traditions—Early History, from 1662 to 1699—Aborigines.*

**BOUNDARY.**—This town is very favorably located on the sea-shore in the eastern portion of Essex County. Its greatest length is along the sea, which is about four and one-half miles, and its breadth from the coast inland is about two miles and one-quarter, containing some five thousand one hundred and thirty-four acres of land. It is bounded on the north by Hamilton and Essex, on the east by Gloucester, on the south by Massachusetts Bay, and on the west by Beverly and Wenham. The Congregational Church, which stands in the middle of the village, is in north latitude  $42^{\circ} 34' 30''$ – $41''$ , and in west latitude  $70^{\circ} 44' 24''$ – $43''$ . It is nine miles from Salem and twenty-four miles from Boston, with which it is connected by eight trains a day over the Gloucester Branch of the Boston and Maine Railroad.

The surface of the town is irregular and uneven, with picturesque valleys and rocky hills covered with the native forest, which cling lovingly to the very border of the ocean, as if to invite the winds to bathe their green limbs with the briny waters. The underlying rock is sienite, which crown the hill tops with great, grey, moss-covered ledges, and form the projecting head-lands of the coast. About the summits of many of the hills large boulders are found. In the "Essex Woods" is one called "Agassiz's Rock," it having been visited by that distinguished naturalist, who regarded it as a most interesting relic of the glacial period. It rests on the ledge, with an end upheld by a triangular rock; beneath the boulder the surface of the hill has been smoothed and polished by vast moving masses, and the triangular graver, pushed by an irresistible force, has recorded the line of its progress. Further down, in a swamp, is one of



gigantic size; it is as large as a house, and doubtless no inconsiderable part is buried in the soft ground in which it found a resting-place. On this a pine-tree is growing, and is probably the same spoken of in 1686 as "a pine-tree standing alone on a high rock, almost to the admiration of those who doeth behold it." This boulder is an interesting one, and should be better known.

Among the rocky eminences, wooded ravines, meadows and glades, alternating with clean, sandy beaches, make this region singularly attractive. The "Singing Beach" is one of great interest; it is somewhat more than half a mile in length, very broad and smooth, and whenever the dry sand is disturbed, it emits a musical tone. There are several theories offered in explanation of this phenomenon—some wise and some otherwise.

The harbor is capacious, with numerous creeks, beaches and picturesque headlands of weather-stained sienite, to whose uneven surface trees and shrubs of the deepest green find footing, and flourish. The inner harbor is divided by small bays and inlets; it is too shallow to admit the passage of any but small vessels to the wharf.

The soil is diluvial and well adapted to the growth of trees, fruits, grass and vegetables.

The township is well watered by several brooks, the largest of which is known as "Saw-Mill Brook." This is a collection of several pretty streams that flow from the woods, and of many springs of sparkling water that rise to the surface on the farm of T. Jefferson Coolidge, Esq., and are conducted through the centre of the town to the sea. The waters of this brook were the first in this vicinity to wear the harness of cultivation, for by its power the first boards were cut for the cabins of the pioneers; in that way it earned its name. A trifle later a new mill was added, when the docile water ground corn for the bread of the Puritans.

An old tradition says, "He who drinks from this brook can never permanently absent himself from the town." But we fancy the memory of the woods and the fascination of the boundless, mysterious ocean are much more potent.

In a swamp in the eastern part of the town is found the magnolia or sweet bay tree (*magnolia glauca*). It belongs to a genus named for Magnol, a distinguished French botanist. The family includes many interesting trees and shrubs common in the South, but very seldom found so far from their home. It bears a beautiful and very fragrant flower for a considerable part of the season; it seldom attains a greater height than ten or twelve feet.

Among the rocky portions of the woods the *Linnæa borealis* is found. In these two we have the representative of a northern and southern clime blossoming side by side.

In 1875, Bayard Taylor, while on a visit to his friend, James T. Fields, wrote an interesting descrip-

tion of the town for the *New York Tribune* from which we make the following extract.

"The village is a modest little place, about seven miles west of Gloucester and twelve from the end of the Cape. A shallow inlet here opens to the bay between headlands of gray rock, which are repeated, farther inland, in the shape of high knobs and bluffs, rising against a back-ground of long ridges of forest. All this picturesque, irregular coast is dotted with charming summer-castles and cottages. On Glass Head, at the mouth of the inlet, the Rev. Dr. Bartol has a mansion and a lofty detached tower, in the top of which he has established a study. Here he is able to take broad views of the world, in a double sense. The crest of the peninsula beyond—a rocky mount, called Thunderbolt Hill—is crowned with the quaint old-fashioned residence of James T. Fields; on the slope between it and the sea Junius Brutus Booth makes his perch; and Gilbert, (whom we all know), is near at hand, on the opposite side.

"From the cottage of a friend, to whom we are indebted for a delightful sojourn for three days here, all the beauties of the region are visible. The front verandah overlooks the line of coast, the picturesque rocky inlets, and the opposite shore of the world, in a double sense. The crest of the peninsula beyond—a rocky mount, called Thunderbolt Hill—is crowned with the quaint old-fashioned residence of James T. Fields; on the slope between it and the sea Junius Brutus Booth makes his perch; and Gilbert, (whom we all know), is near at hand, on the opposite side.

"A great charm of the place is the wild wooded scenery of the inland. There are many little valleys, branching and widening as if at random, where the forest of firs and pine, the great mossy boulders, the shade and coolness and silence seem to transfer you at once to the heart of some mountain wilderness. The noise of the sea does not invade them; even the salt odor of the air is smothered by the warm, resinous breath of the pines. Here you find slender brooks, pools spangled with pond-lily blossoms, and marshes all in a tangle with wild flowers. After two or three miles of such scenery, there is no greater surprise than to find, suddenly, a blue, far deeper than that of the sky, between the tree-trunks, and to hear the roar of the breakers a hundred feet below you.

"During a drive with my friend, we passed the home of Ernest Longfellow, who finds excellent work for his pencil at his very doorstep. Here is an instance, as in the case of Schiller and Browning, where the genius of the poet changes, by inheritance, into that of the artist. . . .

"A short distance further we came upon a castle by the sea, built of gray stone, and of a very original design, an Italian *loggia* being combined with Norman-Gothic features in the building. It is the residence of Mr. Greely Curtis, of Boston. Around it the roughness of the native pine forest has been softened in the most admirable manner, first borders melting naturally into thickets, and then into a growing amicably in the midst of ferns. I can conceive of no more fascinating employment than this beautification, without actual transformation, of nature,—but it requires money to do it properly.

"Returning our way a mile or so, we took a different road, and approached the coast through open, grassy fields, beyond which, on the edge of a lofty bluff, stood the gray old mansion of the venerable poet, Richard H. Dana. The place is singularly wild, lonely and picturesque. No other dwelling is visible; a little bight of the coast thrusts out its iron headlands at a short distance on either side, the surf thunders incessantly below, and in front the open ocean stretches to the sky. Mr. Dana's only neighbors are the vessels that come and go at greater or less distances.

"Here, on a portico almost overhanging the sea, we found the poet."

The Rev. Mr. Tenney in his "Coronation" says of it, the "Woods as well as sea conspire to make Manchester the most delightful resort on the whole New-England coast."

EARLY SETTLERS.—The first Europeans of whom we have record as having visited this part of the





New England coast are Bartholomew Gosnold, in 1602, and Martin Pring in 1603; but it does not appear that either landed. In 1614 Captain John Smith, who had already won a reputation for his successful efforts in behalf of the colony of Virginia, entered the employment of some London merchants, and with two ships and forty-five men and boys arrived on the coast. He says:—"Our plot was to take whales, and make a trial of the gold and copper mines." He does not appear to have been very successful in either of these enterprises, but he explored and made a map of the shore from Penobscot Bay to Cape Cod, and gave it the name of New England. His description of the country and the wonders of the newly-discovered fisheries are set forth in such glowing colors as to remind us of the early accounts from the gold fields of California. In his book, published in 1616, he says, "There man, woman and child, with a small hook and line, by angling may take several sorts of excellent fish at their pleasure. And is it not pretty sport to pull up two pence, six pence, and twelve pence as fast as you can haul and veer a line?"—"and what sport doth yield a more pleasing content, and less hurt or charge than angling with a hook, and crossing the sweet air from isle to isle over the silent streams of a calm sea?"

It is not surprising that these words should have awakened a very lively interest among the people of the Old World. "The great sea business of fishing" received a marked impetus; the distance was an obstacle, but the promised reward was in proportion, and companies were formed for the development of the new discoveries.

Some gentlemen from and about Dorchester, England, were the first to embark in the enterprise; they proceeded to raise the necessary capital for the establishment of a permanent colony, for the more successful prosecution of the business, and in the autumn of 1623 a ship of fifty tons was dispatched.

In the following year no less than fifty ships were engaged in the business, but we will follow the fortunes of the Dorchester Company.

Their ship having arrived at the usual fishing grounds, could not complete its load because of the scarcity of fish. So "the master thought good to pass into Massachusetts Bay, to try whether that would yield him any;" here he was more successful and completed his cargo. He then proceeded to Cape Ann (now Gloucester) where he left fourteen men for the commencement of the colony, and the ship with the fish, sailed for a market in Spain.

Thus the location of the colony at Cape Ann seems to have been the result of circumstances; there appears no evidence of any intention on the part of the company to have made a settlement there.

In the following year two more vessels and more men were sent, but, as before, it was not a pecuniary success; the fishing "sped very ill."

In 1625 three more vessels arrived with ample sup-

plies, and Roger Conant, already in the country, was appointed superintendent or Governor, and Rev. John Lyford was invited to join the plantation as their minister.

But the close of the year showed a continued loss,—the capital was exhausted; and in 1626 it was decided to abandon the undertaking, and remove to Naumkeag (now Salem), "where the prospects for a plantation were better—the land more fertile, and more abundant, so as to offer refuge for such as may join them."

William Allen, "Goodman" (Richard) Norman and his son John were in the employ of the Dorchester Company as fishermen. At that time most of the fish were caught from boats along the shore. In the pursuit of their calling they explored the harbors, bays and creeks of the vicinity. In this way they became acquainted with the site of what is now Manchester, and when the fishing station at Cape Ann was abandoned it is not improbable, that they again sought this beautiful, sunny spot, where there was shelter for their boats, a great variety of fish and game, and at the mouth of the brook, which tumbled over the rocks into the bay, they built their houses, as early as 1626 or '27.

William Jeffreys was also connected with that company; he having come from Plymouth to Cape Ann with Roger Conant, John Lyford and others. And when all were searching new homes he chose to unite his fortunes with Allen and the Normans; he built a cabin near theirs, and from that time the little settlement was known as "Jeffrey's Creek." The land belonged to Salem.

In 1628 Endicott arrived with about one hundred settlers.

The charter of the "Massachusetts Bay Company" was granted by Charles I. March 4, 1629, and on the 20th of April of that year three ships were sent with supplies and a considerable number of planters; among whom were the following ministers, viz.: Sheldon, Bright, Higginson and Ralph Smith. One of these vessels, the ship "Falbot," sailed into Manchester harbor on the 27th of June, 1629, and was probably the first European vessel ever anchored there.

From the journal of Rev. Francis Higginson we extract the following:

"June 27, 1629.—Saturday evening we had a westerly wind, which brought us, between five and six o'clock, to a fine and sweet harbor, seven miles from the head of Cape Ann. (In this harbor twenty ships may lie and easily ride therein), where there was an island near, with 4 of our men went with a boat, and brought back ripe strawberries, gooseberries and sweet single roses. Monday, 29th, as we passed along to Nahm Kecke, it was wonderful to behold so many islands replenished with thicke wood and high trees, and many fayer green pastures."

The affairs of the company had been managed by resident agents, having no authority except by and with the consent of the officers in England, but the uncertainty of communication, and the great delays were found so objectionable, that in October 1629 it was determined to transfer the government and



patent to New England; accordingly a Governor and Deputy must be found who were willing to settle with their families in the Colony.

Under these conditions John Winthrop was chosen Governor, and he took passage in the *Arabella*, which sailed from Yarmouth with six other ships, and three hundred settlers for the plantation at Salem.

On the 11th day of June 1630, she also anchored in our harbor; from the Governor's Journal the following interesting account of their arrival and reception is copied:

"Tuesday, 10th June, the wind continued all day a gale from the south, and yet we took all sail and at four o'clock, P.M., made land, called 'The Three Turks Heads.' To-night we could see the trees very plainly, and had a fine fresh smelt from the shore. The next day we stood off to sea, and as the wind would bear, on Saturday we stood in towards the harbor, and by the aid of some shallows we passed through the narrow strait between Baker's Island and another northern island (House Island), and came to anchor within the harbor. Our friends came down from Salem, and many of our Gentlemen returned with them at night, where they supped on good venison and beer; but most of them, disliking their lodgings, returned to the ships. In the meantime most of the people went on shore on the other side of the harbor (which is on the Manchester side), where they were feasted with Strawberries, and were like as merry as the Gentlemen at their venison and beer. Sunday Massachusett, the sagamore of the tribe, with another Indian, came on board and bade us welcome, tarrying with us all day. On Monday, the wind coming fair, the ships proceeded to Salem, where the planters landed. Here they found about 10 houses and some Indian corn planted, which was good and well liking."

Governor Winthrop brought the original charter of the Massachusetts Bay Company which is now deposited with the State archives at Boston.

These early settlers were not mere adventurers in search of new homes in the wilderness, having none in the land of their birth; they were not dissolute, idle men without property, for they all, had to a greater or less extent, contributed to the stock of the company, and upon their arrival they were entitled to land in proportion to the amount of their investment; for it had been "ordered that two hundred acres of land be allowed to each adventurer, for every fifty pound adventure in the common stock, and so on at that rate for more or less." They were not unknown, or unlettered men, for among them were some of acknowledged ability and education; they represented all classes; there were ministers, merchants, lawyers, mechanics, seamen, farmers, and soldiers.

They were men of strong religious convictions who contended for greater purity in worship, and practice, and that they might escape from the persecutions of their own country, they preferred to abandon their homes, their native land, and brave the terrors of the ocean, the unknown wilderness, and the savages, that they might worship God in their own way. The earnestness of their religious principles may be judged from the following letter from the company to the planters at Salem in 1629, declaring, "that propagation of the gospel is the thing we doe profess above all to be our ayne in settling this plantation." They were therefore extremely guarded, as to who they admitted into their fellowship; none were permitted to vote, or hold office, that had not joined

some Congregational church and taken the Freeman's oath of that period, which was as follows:

"I, A. B., being by God's providence an inhabitant and freeman in this commonwealth, do freely acknowledge myself subject to the Government thereof, and do swear by the great and terrible name of the everlasting God, that I will be true and faithful to the same, and will accordingly yeald assistance thereto, with my person and estate as in equity I am bound, submitting myself to the wholesome laws and orders made and established. Further I will not plot or practice evil against it, and moreover I do solemnly bind myself in the sight of God, that when I shall be called to give my voice for him in any matter wherein freemen deal, I will give my vote and suffrage as I shall judge in mine own conscience may best conduce to the public weal, without respect to persons, or favor of any man, so help me God, in the Lord Jesus Christ."

Residents, were those who were not allowed, or who had declined the privilege of becoming freemen, and were required to take the oath of fidelity when they had attained the age of sixteen. Every male citizen of sixteen and upwards, -inhabitant, lodger, child, servant or slave -were required to pay yearly one shilling eightpence a head, as a poll tax, and one shilling for every twenty shillings' value in real or personal estate.

But nearly all the settlers were "freemen," and had an interest in the common lands. In the earliest records we find they exercised the power of granting land to individuals. As the population increased, this method of holding land was found objectionable, and in 1713 the owners of the common lands under the provincial laws became organized into a sort of corporation with the title of commoners.

Grants of land, made by the General Court to individuals and towns, were known as "common land;" this is the kind of "enlargement" petitioned for, and which was granted at a later date.

The "Commoners" managed their affairs, elected their officers and members, very much as a corporation. Their books in Manchester shpw many very generous donations for worthy objects, and for the relief of the infant settlement from burdensome taxation.

The last division of the common land was made in 1763.

In 1631 six men were drowned by the upsetting of a canoe near Kettle Island; this is the beginning of a long list of casualties that continued to afflict the settlement.

In 1634 the General Court defined the power of the Legislature, and provided that the whole body of freemen should be present at only one of their General Courts, to be held each year, and that their deputies should act for them in the three others.

In 1635-36 the General Court passed the following order, which is the foundation of the various and important powers that have ever since been exercised by the towns.

"Whereas particular towns have many things which concerne only themselves, and the ordering of their own affairs, and disposing of business in their own town, it is therefore ordered, that the freemen of every town, or the major part of them shall only (alone) have power to dispose of their own lands and woods, with all the privileges and appurtenances of the said town to grant lots, and make





such orders, as may concern the well ordering of these our towns, not repugnant to the laws and orders here established by the General Court, as also to lay mulets and penalties for the breach of these orders, and to levy and distrain the same not exceeding the sum of 20s. Also to choose their own particular officers as Constables, Surveyors of Highways and the like, and because much business is likely to arise to the Constables of several towns by reason they are to make distresses and gather fines. Therefore that every town shall have two Constables, where there is need. That so their office may not be a burden unto them, and they may attend more carefully upon the discharge of their office, for which they shall be liable to give their accounts to this court when they shall be called thereunto.

Although Jeffrey's Creek was on the Cape Ann side, it was nevertheless a part of Salem, and early grants of land were made by Salem to Chubb, Glass, Gate, Graves, Cadner, Black, Foote and others, who gave names to localities which are still retained.

In February, 1636, the land of Jeffrey's Creek was ordered to be divided as follows:

	Acres.
Samuel Archer.....	50
William Allen.....	60
John More.....	40
John Black.....	40
Sargent W. Alf.....	40
John Sibley.....	50
George William.....	40
Sargent Dixey.....	40
Widow More.....	40

This was known as the "400 acres grant;" it included the central part of the present village, and was thickly covered with walnut, oak, and other trees of a large size.

The "fishing industry" was always encouraged by the colonists. The General Court, in 1639, ordered that all vessels so employed with their stock and fish should not be taxed, and their men exempt from military duty."

Among the early Salem records the following grants appear:

"27 11 mo, 1628. Seargent Dixey desires some hay ground about Jeffereys Creeke."

"4 12 mo, 1628. Granted to Robert Aldyn 25 acres of land; lying between the land of Wm. Bennett and Samuel Archer (their land) at Jefferys Creeke."

"18 4 month 1637. John Pickworth requesteth for a peck ground of land at Jeffereys Creeke." "8 5th mo. Jno. Pilwood, Geo. Gales, Jno. Norton & Wm. Bennett have allowed these powers by their of them 20 acres of land at Jeffereys Creeke."

"There is granted to Richard Graves half an acre of land upon the neck for the sitting of his house, he promising to follow fishing 5 10 mo, 1637.

"26 9 mo, 1638. Granted to Samuel Archer one neck of land lying out against the sea here unto Jeffery Creeke Island containing twenty acres of meadow to be layed him out in Kettle Island Cove."

"16 7 mo, 1639. James Standesh is granted 40 acres of land neere Jeffery Creeke."

"24 11 mo. Granted Benjamin Parnduster 10 acres of land at Jeff. Creeke when the former grants are made good."

"There was granted, 4 1 mo, 1643, by the 'seven men' of Salem to Richard Gardner, at Jeffereys Creeke 20 twentieth parts of land; to be layed out by the Town."

"Granted to Robert Miller 20 acres of land at Jeffereys Creeke to be layed out by the Town, if hee dwells there, if otherwise to desert the land."

In 1639 it was ordered that "all fishermen which are abroad during the fishing season, ship-carpenters

which follow their calling, and millers shall be exempt from training."

And it was desired that "the 13<sup>th</sup> day of the 4<sup>th</sup> month be kept as a day of humiliation in all the churches for the want of rain and for the help of brethren in distress."

It was also ordered that "care bee taken to prevent damage to Indians and procure them satisfaction for any damage done."

In the following year the General Court also ordered "that in all places the English shall keepe their cattle from destroying the Indians corne in any ground where they have the right to plant, and if any corne bee destroyed for want of fencing or herding the towne shall be liable to make satisfaction." The doctrine that an Indian has no right, that a white man is bound to respect, appears to have been unknown at this early period.

At this time there were but sixty-three people living here; yet those sturdy few, with the characteristic of their race, ask for more territory, and a greater degree of self-government, as will be seen by the following petition:

"Wee whose names are hereunto subscribed, belonging to the Church and towne of Salem (being straitened in our accommodations, for that wee are not able comfortably to subsist), having advised and taken counsel about our present state and condition, it being judged fit, and free liberty being granted us to remove, and noe place being so convenient for our easy removal as Jefferys Creeke, lying so neere us, and most of us having some small quantity of ground allotted to us there already, doe therefore jointly and handly request the Honorable Court to give us power to erect a village there, and to allow us such enlargement thereunto as is not granted to any other plantation. Thus leaving our request to your Wisdoms consideration, with our prayers for a blessing on your persons and proceedings we rest

"Your humble petitioners,

"1640 old style,  
14th 364 mo.  
24th May, 1640,  
new style.

William Walton,  
John Black,  
Wm. Allen,  
Samuel Archer,  
Geo. Norton,  
Wm. Dixey,  
John Sibley,  
James Standish,  
John Friend,  
John Pickworth,  
John Galley,  
Benj. Parnduster,  
Robert Allen,  
Edward Grover,  
Pascu Foote,  
William Bennett,  
John Notman.

"The petition is granted and referred to Mr. John Winthrop, Jr., and Mr. Simon Bradstreet to settle the bounds of the village."

The inhabitants of "Jeffrey's Creek," in 1645, petition the General Court for a change of name.

As many of the settlers were from Manchester, England, they desired the name of their old home should be made that of the new.

The record of the General Court reads as follows:

"May 3d, 1645.

"The Court allows Jeffereys Creeke to be called Manchester."

"29 4 mo. 1646. Ordered that William Woodburie & Richard Brackburie, Eusign Dixey, Mr. Conant, & Lieutenant Lathrop & Lawrence



Leach shall forthwith lay out a way between the ferry at Salem & the head of Jeffries Creek, and that it shall be such a way as men may travel on horse back & drive cattle & it such a way may not be found then to take a speedy course to sett up a foot bridge at Mackerell Cove."

This was the first road to the new town, and was essentially the present Beverly and Manchester road as far as Bennett Street, up which it went to Pine, up Pine a little above the old "Baker house," then along the foot of "Powder-house Hill" to Friends Court, which it descended to School Street, down that street, crossing the brook at the ford, and so on to the common.

The highway to Cape Ann was up North Street to Washington, and down Sea Street.

In 1886 it became necessary to rebuild the culvert at the foot of Bennett's Hill; and about twelve feet below the present surface street the corduroy road across the muddy banks of the brook, was found in excellent condition, the wood perfectly sound; as nothing was found beneath, it was believed to have belonged to the original road of 1646.

In 1646 "John Norman was allowed to keep a house of common entertainment."

The feeling in favor of educating the people was made evident by the action of the General Court of the following year, who ordered that "every town of fifty inhabitants should have a school for reading and writing, and of one hundred inhabitants to have a grammar-school, so as to fit scholars for college."

With great care our ancestors guarded the intercourse between young unmarried persons, as will be seen by the following law passed in 1647: "If any young man attempts to address a young woman without the consent of her parents, or in their absents, the County Court, he shall be fined £5; for the second offence £10; and imprisonment for the third."

The records of the court show even this law was sometimes disregarded.

Coin was very scarce, and to prevent its being taken from the colony the General Court appointed "Samuel Archer, of Salem, to examine all persons going out of Massachusetts, to see that they carry no more than twenty shillings in coin to pay expenses." This gentleman was a resident of Manchester.

In 1647 the town of Manchester appears in the list of presentments by the grand jury "for not training according to order, wants of a pound, and a pair of scales." In 1648 "for want of constable's staff."

In 1649 Kettle Cove was granted to John Kettle. Nathaniel Marsterson is "granted free feed for his cattle, and timber to build him a house;" this was probably the fifth minister settled in the town.

The scarcity of money and the low value of property is illustrated by the following record of 1651:

"Robert Isabell of Manchester, carpenter, for £15 sold his dwelling house and 49 acres of land, with his partition of meadow which is  $\frac{1}{2}$  acre allotted to him in 1638 to Richard Norman," and a little later "Jenkins Williams bought a strip of land two rods

wide to the waters edge, he paying forty shillings in money, thirty shillings in merchantable boards, and 10 shillings in goods." "He also purchased the land at 'Pitts' Cove' (where the Forster wharf is) for £2 15 shillings."

In 1651 the following persons were presented by the grand jury "for absence from public ordinances three or four Sabbaths, William Allen, Pasco Foot and John Sibley, and for wearing silver lace, silver and gold buttons, Robert Edwards, John Norman and —Norman."

The destruction of the timber by residents and by people from other towns became so much of an evil that regulations were made as follows:

"11th 5th mo. 1650. It is ordered at a town meeting that none shall cut any timber from the common land but a proper inhabitant, and if any stranger shall cut timber from the towns Common, it is left with the Townsmen to look after, and stop the timber from being carried away, and the damage shall be as they judge good.

"Samuel Friend	William Bennett
John Pickwith	James Standish
Pasco Foot	John Sibley
Robert Leach	Henry Lee;

and 4th 6th mo. 1668. It is ordered and agreed at a town meeting, that all orders as formerly made and entered as herein expressed in writing shall stand concerning masts, Yards, Clayboard trees, Pikestaffs, Hogsheds and Barrels.

"For masts for Barques and trees for each mast—£0. 5s. 0d. All yards, bowsprits and other yards as Goodman Jones shall judge who is appointed by the town.

"For a shallops mast.....	£0. 1s. 0d.
For a Claybord tree.....	0. 1. 0
For a Pikestaff tree.....	0. 1. 0
For Hogsheds, Barrels, each tree.....	0. 1. 0
For Canoes, trees sold out of the town for them.....	0. 2. 6

"Yet it is further ordered that no posts, or rails shall be cut from our commons transported out of the plantation to any other place on the forfeit of—10 and whoever makes use of any tree standing or lying on the ground, either oak, pine, or Cedar, for Clayboards, Boards, or Shingles, shall pay 1 and for all frames according to the dimensions here specified, a frame from 20 to 30 feet long 15 d. and so in proportion—for sawing boards 4¢ per hundred.

"Given under the hands of the Selectmen 4th 10th mo. 1658.

"PASCO FOOT.  
"JOHN SIBLEY.  
"ROBERT LEACH.

The earliest record of a piece of land having been devoted to burial purposes is in 1653, when the town grants to Samuel Friend the Island wharf property, now belonging to the A. W. Smith estate, in exchange for some land "taken from him and used for a burial ground, which was formerly planted by him." This is the old burial-ground at the junction of Washington and Summers streets; it extended across the present highway; the road to Gloucester at that time was down Sea street, through the "Towne" and "Dana estates."

Tradition tells of earlier interments which were made behind the meeting-house on the eastern side of Church street.

Our ancestors were always alive to their religious duties; as soon as their tents were pitched, they set up an altar by collecting in some convenient place where they could worship God on the Sabbath. Tradition says the first meeting of this kind was held under the shadow of a tree at "Gale's Point," near





an old wharf that may yet be seen. This was about 1640, and it is probable that Mr. Jenner or Ralf Smith was the preacher. Preaching was without doubt, carried on in the houses of the settlers until 1656, when it was decided to build a house of worship; the Town Record says;

"1656, ye 24 of ye 12 mo. It was at a general town meeting agreed upon that a meeting-house should be built, 18 feet long, with two Gable ends, to be set near the Landing-place, and the planters are to come and cut the timber this day fortnight. William Bennett, John Pickworth and Samuel Friend are to oversee the setting of the timber, and if any man neglects to work he is to give a sufficient reason for his absence, or pay 5 shillings for his neglect."

"In 1660 John Blackleach, gent., of Boston, sold to John West, planter, his land in Manchester, which was granted to him by the town of Salem."

The love of office does not seem to have affected the early pioneers, for we find Manchester is complained of by the General Court "for not sending a deputy from among them," and two years later Major William Hawthorne "is authorized to act for Manchester in the General Court, as legal difficulties exist requiring their vote, and no deputy having been sent from among them." And in Ipswich, in 1660, "the freemen of Manchester are fined £10 and cost for not appearing at the last term of the court, being summonsed."

In 1662 there were twenty land owners in town. Among whom were Samuel Friend, William Allen, James Standish, Robert Leach, John Norman, Nicholas Vincent, Widow Lee, William Bennett, Pitt, Maveric, Chubbs, Palmeter, Blackledge, Pickworth, Isaac Whichar and Ambrose Gale.

During the year 1664, the regulation requiring the administering of the freeman's oath was so modified as to grant those privileges to all such as had received from some respectable clergyman, testimony as to their correctness in doctrine and conduct.

In 1665 Thomas West was elected as the first representative to the General Court.

In 1667 the Dutch came and plundered some vessels; the loss sustained by John Norman was made up to him by the town. This early settler died in 1672.

John Pickworth was granted forty acres of land at Pickworth's Point.

In 1672 a treaty or covenant was made between the Indians and the planters of "Casco Bay," among them the name of Jenkin Williams, of Manchester, appears.

A committee appointed by Beverly and Manchester to settle the bounds between them, report as follows: "That the mouth of the creek called Chubb's creek, by the sea, and so taking the channel of said creek, to the head of said creek, and then to a rock on the western side of the head of said creek, and from there to a white oak tree near the east end of the pond, by turnip swamp, so-called, shall be taken as the standing bounds between Beverly and Manchester."

In 1675 a committee was appointed by the General

Court "to see Essex County fortified from the attacks of the Indians."

An uneasiness among the tribes had long been noticed, and evidently a crisis was approaching. With growing apprehension the red men had watched the increase of the pale faces; everywhere their hunting grounds were dotted with the cabins of the settlers, and the game had been driven away; their favorite fishing places were so frequented by men skilled in the art, as to be no longer productive with their rude appliances. Where there had been plenty, there was now a scarcity, and their families were often hungry.

The inevitable conflict between civilization and savage life was rapidly approaching. On the one hand organization, united action was the first step, but with the aborigines this was extremely difficult: for generations the neighboring tribes and bands had been hereditary foes; and to unite such, even for defense against a common enemy was almost impossible. This is the weakness of savage life.

In "King Phillip" a leader was found of rare capacity, who succeeded to a very considerable extent in overcoming these tribal differences. Under his leadership, quite a formidable force was collected and hurled against the settlements. It was a vigorous warfare, where savage skill and valor, was met by the courage and the patriotism of the white race, and with the natural result: the triumph of the more enlightened.

In consequence of the loss of the records, it is not known how many of her citizens Manchester sent to the early wars; but Samuel Pickworth, John Allen, Joshua Carter and Samuel Bennett were slain at Bloody Brook while serving under Captain Lothrop, of Beverly; whose command was described by a contemporary writer as "a choice company of young men, the very flower of the County of Essex, none of whom were ashamed to speak with the enemy at the gate."

In 1677 "Ambrose Gale of this town, petitioned the General Court for liberty to fish on the coast of Plymouth, he having been prohibited by the inhabitants of that town." The court appointed a committee to address a letter on the subject to the Plymouth Company.

In 1678 William Allen, Sr., died, and his wife Elizabeth was made executrix. In her inventory is the following list and appraisal:

"House and land adjoining.....	£140
15 acres of land adjoining Wenham pond.....	20
2 oxen, a cow, 2 heifers, 2 sheep and a (cow) house.....	18
Household stuff.....	8 "

In another inventory of the same period we find the "household stuff" is itemized as follows: "1 feather bed, 1 flock bed, pillows, 1 table cloth, 2 towels, pewter and tin vessels, 2 brass kettles, 1 copper kettle, 2 skillets and two chests.

The wants of those hardy people were evidently





very few and easily supplied; none possessed any luxuries, and there does not appear to have been any who suffered from the want of food or shelter.

Rev. John Winborn began to preach to the people for a salary of £13 10s. and his fire-wood.

In 1684 the town was assessed for the building of a "House of Correction" at Ipswich. "And a portion of land between the highway and Black Cove was laid out, and granted for the use of the fishermen."

During the following year a committee from Manchester and Gloucester lay out a county road between the two towns. This began at the common, went up Union to Washington Street, thence through the burial-ground, down what is now Summer Street, to near the "Row school-house," and thence by what is now known as the old road, it crossed the present railroad and connected with the road as now traveled, near the top of the "great hill."

Before this the road to Cape Ann was by Sea Street, through the Towne and Dana estates, and crossed the present county road at a point near the entrance of the most western of the "Dana Avenues."

The "first store" opened in the town was in the house now occupied by Joseph Proctor, Esq., on Sea Street. It was kept by Mrs. Samples, who afterwards became Mrs. Crafts, and had a store at the corner of Union and Church Streets.

1685. In laying out the common land belonging to Mr. West, the records speak of a pine tree, as a bounds, standing alone on a high rock, almost to the admiration of those who doth behold it. This was probably the same tree now standing on a high rock in a swamp near Essex Road, and northerly from "Agassiz Rock."

In 1686 the town's proportion of the tax for supporting his "Majesty's Government" was £1 7s. 2d. levied on thirty-one persons. At that time it was the custom for the constables to go to Boston and pay it to the treasurer of the Colony.

The "first tavern" of which we have record is yet standing on North Street. It was occupied as a public-house many years before 1690. This old house was originally two stories in front, with a long sloping roof to the rear, a common style of building at that period. The rear of the house was raised some sixty years since, and the whole structure was remodeled. It is now in excellent condition, and is owned by Alexander Kerr.

Seventy men were drafted for the Essex County Regiment to fight the French and Indians. Those from this town served under Maj. B. Gedney.

"Rev. John Everleth was ordained as a preacher" in the town.

In 1691 the church was found too small, and a new one was ordered; with reference to this house the town's record states:

"That whereas our old meeting-house being the most Considerable part of it rotten; and the said

house is too small to accommodate our people when convened for the worship of God. It is therefore voted, and fully agreed, to build a new meeting-house of the following dimensions, viz: length to be 30 feet, the breadth thereof to be 25 feet, the height between the sills and plates 16 feet and the form of the roof of the said house to be of the same form as the Wenham meeting-house, with a balcony on the top of said house, suited for a bell of 100 lbs. or more, and three galleries to be built, viz: one on one side of the whole length of said house, and the other two at each end of said house, the whole breadth of said house. And it was voted and agreed that the Committee, John Sibley, Robert Leach, Thomas West, John Lee, Samuel Leach, William Allen, Samuel Allen, are at this meeting fully empowered by the Town to agree with a workman to build the said house, for and in behalf of the town, at the said town's cost and charge, to be paid in money at two periods, viz: one to be paid when the above house is raised, which is voted to be by the 10th day of June next, evening; and the cash payment when the said house is finished, which is voted to be by the last day of October following. The said house to be seated near the Old meeting-house (on the Common), where the Committee shall determine, and the house to be in every way completely finished with seats, and all other decent and suitable appurtenances thereto convenient for the whole house, both within and without, as the said Committee so order. And the above said Committee, or a major part of them, are to place the people in the seats of said house."

In 1693 Thomas Tewkesbury represented the town at the General Court, and he received £5 and four shillings for a session of thirty-five days.

And the "Commoners organize, and enact laws for their government, and they provide for the keeping of their records distinct from those of the town."

At a town-meeting held 1st February, 1644,

"It was voted and agreed there should be a 'Grist mill' sett up upon the river near the meeting-house at some convenient place for the use of the town by John Knowlton, Sen., by the 1st of Sept. next. And if any damage shall accrue to any persons. And from the flowing of the water by occasion of the mill, the town shall be at one half cost, and the miller the other half said damage."

This mill was a one story log structure, about eighteen feet square, and boarded up and down. This old moss-covered mill stood until 1826, when it was taken down by John P. Allen, who built on its site a mill for sawing mahogany veneers.

After the decease of Mr. Knowlton, Mr. Obed Carter continued to run the mill for many years, and his son used to say the lobsters were so abundant, that whenever his father required any, he used to step across the stream at low tide, to a point of rocks, where Mr. Knight's coal wharf now is, and from beneath the rock-weed he could always select such and as many as he wanted.

This delicious crustacea, now so rapidly becoming



extinct, was then so plentiful as to be but little valued as an article of food.

In 1695 the town "granted Phillip Nichols a parcel of land at Newport, being a fisherman."

"And John Sibley, Robert Leach and Thomas West, were chosen as the first school committee, and they were instructed to agree with a school-master to teach our children to read and write."

"A watch-house was ordered to be built, and ammunition was bought."

A church bell was presented to the town by George Norton, and it proved a great comfort to the people, for before this, the hour for public service was announced to the clockless inhabitants, by the blowing of a horn or conch shell; that could not always be heard.

An imaginative writer of the period says "lions have been seen at Cape Ann," but the planters only complained of the "devouring wolves," who make sad havoc with the sheep and calves. And to encourage their destruction the town offers a bounty of twenty shillings for an old one, and five for a young one.

In 1696 Samuel Leach and John Lee were the owners of slaves.

In accordance with the custom of the times, the town appointed a committee to seat all persons in the meeting-house according as they had paid for the support of the minister, except "any antient, grave and sober person of good conversation."

1699 a quantity of the common land was sold, and the proceeds devoted to the building of a parsonage.

At a town meeting on the 23d of April, 1699, a committee was appointed to build a new parsonage house, forty-two feet long, eighteen feet wide, and fourteen feet stud, to be located near the meeting-house, at the discretion of the committee. A rate for £50 was made to defray the expenses; and much "common land" was sold this year at the "Great Neck" (old neck), and House Island, and the proceeds were devoted to the construction of the parsonage and settling the minister. This parsonage was erected on School street, near where the dwelling of Capt. Carter now stands.

It was occupied by Rev. Nicholas Webster, and in 1716 it was given to Rev. Amos Cheever, at the time of his settlement as a pastor in the town. The land belonging to it extended from near the saw mill brook, to the lot of land on which the Baptist church now stands: and was all on the western side of the road. The lot of land was given to the town by the proprietors of the four hundred acres.

**ABORIGINES.**—When our ancestors landed upon our shore they found it populated with a tribe of Indians, known as Agawams, who spoke the language of the Pequods, and over whom Masconomo ruled as their chief or Sagamore. But little is known of him or his people, except they had always been friendly to the pale-faces.

Mr. Felt, in his history of Ipswich, says Capt. Edward Hardy, and Nicholas Hobson sailed for North Virginia (New England), in 1611, and touched at Agawam (Ipswich), where the Indians treated them more kindly than others had done, and Capt. John Smith, who made several voyages, found, in 1614, the islands about Cape Ann thickly populated with them, for then food was plentiful, so abundant that

"The sounds and seas, each creek and bay  
With fry innumerable swarm, and shoals  
Of fish that with their fins and shining scales  
Glide under the green waves, in sculls that oft  
Bark the mid sea; or under rocks their food  
In jointed armor watch."

These, with the sea-fowl and larger game, that in such numbers frequented the valleys and water-courses in the vicinity of what is now known as Manchester, made it an attractive home for the aborigines, and several villages were found there of considerable size, but evidently they had been more populous.

They claimed this reduction was the result of an epidemic, that a few years ago had swept away a great many of their people.

The tribe of Tarrantines, whose home was on the coast of Maine, with a fleet of canoes, made frequent predatory excursions along the coast of Massachusetts. Masconomo had very successfully defended his people from some of their attacks, and had slain some of their warriors, and since their reduction by disease, they were in great dread of retaliation from their old enemies. Therefore it is quite probable they sought the friendship and protection of the English with a far greater warmth than they would have done at a time of greater prosperity.

This fear of the Tarrantines rendered it very easy for the Governor to arrange terms with the chiefs, for the fee to their lands. Thus the way seems to have been prepared for that little band of adventurers; instead of them finding a proud, bold race in possession of the land, they found a discouraged, disheartened people, ready to do anything, and to pledge anything for peace and protection.

Rev. Mr. Higginson thus describes them:

"For their stature, they are a tall, strong-limbed people, their colour is tawney, they go naked save only they are in part covered, their hair is generally black, and cut before like our Gentlemen, with one lock longer than the rest, like our Gentlemen, which fashion I think came from here to England. For their weapons they use bows and arrows, some of them headed with bone and some with brass. Their men for the most part live idly, doing nothing but fish and hunt. Their wives set their corn and do all their other work. They have little household stuff, as a kettle, and some other vessels like trays, spoons and baskets.

"They do generally profess to like well our coming and planting here, partly because there is an abundance of ground which they cannot possess, and because our living here will be a means of relief to them when they want, and a defence from their enemies. They will come into our houses by half a score at a time when we are at victuals, but will not ask or take anything but what we give them."

The company seems to have desired to deal justly with the Indians, for in their letter of instruction to Gov. Endicott they say:

"If any of the Savages pretend right of inheritance to all or any part





of the lands granted in our patent, we pray you endeavor to purchase their title, that we may avoid the least scruple of intrusion."

And this spirit seems to have governed the General Court, for in 1639 it was ordered "that care be taken to prevent damage to Indians, and procure them satisfaction for any damage done them," and in the following year it was enacted "that in all places the English shall keep their cattle from destroying the Indian corn, and if any corn be destroyed for want of fencing, or herding, the town shall be liable to make satisfaction."

"Hope deferred maketh the heart sick." Masconomo must have realized the full force of this sentiment, for having bargained his land for promises which were never kept, and feeling the infirmities of age increasing with every additional year, he gathered his few remaining subjects, the remnants of his worldly possessions, and placed himself and them under the protection of Massachusetts.

There, as the ward of the state, Masconomo, the last Sagamore of the Agawams, the friend of the white people, saw his once powerful tribe melt away, until only a vestige remained.

Poor, disheartened, and friendless, he at last found peace in death. He was buried on "Sagamore Hill," in Hamilton, about 1658.

June 18, 1658, the town of Ipswich "granted the Sagamore's widow to enjoy that parcel of land which her husband had fenced in, during the time of her widowhood. This was a parcel of land of six acres, set off to the Sagamore in 1655, but not property to any but himself."

The small sum for which this Indian Chief had bargained away his title to the soil, was not all paid until many years afterwards, as the deeds of several towns show, viz:—The deed of the township of Manchester from the Indians is dated December 19, A. D. 1700, and made from Sam'l English and Joseph English and John Umpee, all living in ye County of Middlesex, in ye Province of Massachusetts Bay in New England, Indians"—for the sum of three pounds, nineteen shillings current silver money of New England, paid by Robert Leach, John Knowlton and Samuel Lee, selectmen of ye aforesaid Manchester. This deed states "that whereas ye said town of Manchester, having quietly and peaceably, without molestation, enjoyed the soil of their Township with ye growth thereupon and appurtenances belonging thereto, and containing for ye space of thirty years and upwards, and that in ye first place by ye consent and approbation of our grandfather, Sagamore John, of Agawam, alias Masquenomoit, and ever since, by consent and approbation of his children, and by us his grandchildren, being the now surviving and proper heirs to our said grandfather."

The same year Beverly and Gloucester paid for their Indian deeds.

In speaking of the Indians Mr. Lee well says:

"It is melancholy reflection that comes over one who traces the melt-

ing away of the aboriginal possessors of the country, whether they embraced the Christian religion, and lived in peace with the whites, or whether they resisted the settlers and attempted to defend their homes and the graves of their ancestors from the invaders of their territory, the result was the same. Fate had marked them for destruction, whether they yielded or resisted the European settlers. The invention of gun-powder and firearms had placed in the hands of the invaders a power which the natives, with their rude implements of warfare, could not resist, or numbers overcome, so there was no other alternative left them but to take up their weary march for the setting sun, fit emblem of their destiny.

Lo! the poor Indian."

The following familiar letter from an intelligent settler in search of a new home, is interesting as showing how life in a region so new, and so different from that of England appeared to him. The writer was afterward a valued citizen of Manchester:

"PLYMOUTH, 1621.

"LOVING COUSIN: On our arrival at Plymouth, wee found all our friends and planters in good health, though they had been weak and sick and with small means. The Indians around about us are peaceable and friendly; the country very pleasant and temperate, yielding, naturally of itself, greates stores of fruits, and vines of divers sorts, in abundance. There is, likewise, walnuts, chestnuts, small nuts and plumbs, with much variety of flowers, roots and hereby no less pleasant than wholesome and profitable. no place has more gooseberries, and strawberries, nor better, timber of all sorts you have in England doth cover the land, that affords beasts of divers sorts, and great flocks of turkies, quail, and pigeons, and many great lakes abounding with fish, fowl, beaver and otter. The sea affords great plenty of excellent fish. Myne we find to our thinking, but neither the qualitie or quantitie wee doe know. Better graine cannot be than the Indian corn, and we can plant it on as good ground as we can desire. Wee are all free holders, the rent day does not trouble us, our companie are very religious, honest people, and the word of God is sincerely taught us every Sabbath, soe that I know nothing a contented mind can here want. I desire your friendly care to send my wife and children to me, where I wish all the friends I have in England—see I rest,

"Your loving kin-sunne,

"WILLIAM HILTON."

The following is a list of the early residents with date, as near as can now be ascertained, of their connection with the settlement:

1620.	1650.	1667.
William Allen.	Henry Lee.	Thomas Bishop.
Richard Norman.	William Everton.	Jenkins Williams.
John Norman.	— Graves.	1668.
William Jeffrey.	Joseph Pickworth.	Onephous Allen.
1620.	Nicholas Vincent.	1670.
John Black.	John Kettle.	William Hooper.
1630.	Robert Knight.	Nicholas Woodberry.
Robert Leach.	1651.	1671.
Samuel Archer.	Robert Isabell.	Ambrose Gale.
Sergeant Wolf.	Nathaniel Marston.	Conmit Marston.
John More.	Richard Norman.	Elodius Raynolds.
George Norton.	1651.	John Mason.
John Sibley.	Thomas Millett.	James Pittman.
1657.	1660.	1680.
John Pickworth.	Moses Maverick.	John Lee.
John Palley.	Samuel Allen.	Samuel Lee.
William Bennet.	John Blackledge.	Isaac Whitcher.
Pasco Foote.	1662.	John Cudner.
Thomas Chubbs.	— Pitts.	Robert Leach.
1610.	John Elihope.	John Marston.
John Friend.	1661.	Thomas Tewkesbury.
William Walton.	John Crowell.	Thomas Ross.
James Standish.	1665.	Samuel Allen.
Benjamin Parmiter.	John West.	Manassa Marston.
Robert Allen.	1666.	Walter Palmator.
Edmund Grover.	Richard Glass.	James Givers.
Rev. Ralph Smith	Rev. John Winborn.	1681.
		William Hosham.



John Foster.	Ephraim Jones.	Eliab Littlefield.
Mark Tucker.	John Allen.	Richard Leatherer.
John Knowlton.	Aaron Bennett.	John Bishop.
Emanuel Dav.	Felix Monroe.	Samuel Crowell.
Elisha Reynolds.	1687.	Rev. John Everleth.
Joseph Woolberry.	John Norton.	Rev. John Emerson
James Pittman.	William Allen.	John Burt.
Robert Knight Jr.	Thomas Ayhairste	Jonas Smith.

## CHAPTER CL.

## MANCHESTER—Continued.

*Annals from 1700 to 1800.*

IN 1700 the town paid Samuel English, a grandson of Masconomo, £4 5s. 8d. for relinquishing all his right, title and interest in the land of the township.

Lieutenant William Hilton, of this town, served under Colonel Winthrop Hilton in the war with the Eastern Indians.

In the year following the rate of the town was £23 10s. 11d.

The town granted John Knowlton the right "to erect a seat for himself in the meeting-house, next to the West stairs."

The proprietors of the "Common lands" authorize their committee to sell "Howes Island" to him that will give the most for it.

In 1701 the town ordered the burial-place to be fenced in and "whoever neglect to work on the same shall be fined 3 shillings."

The people were ordered to cut pine and hemlock brush from the fodder land two days. At that time the only hay for their cattle was cut from the natural meadows and swampy places, where there was a rank growth of a coarse variety of grass, and to keep back the encroachment of the woods the clearing above referred to was occasionally necessary. Dams were often built so as to kill the bushes and young trees by flooding them.

In 1705 a "saw mill" was erected at "Bushie plain;" this was where the "old Baker mill" now stands.

On July 4, 1711, a proclamation was received in town to take all deserters of His Majesty's troops in service in the expedition to the Canadas, on penalty of fifty pounds and twelve months' imprisonment of any person entertaining one of them.

At that time it was the custom to record any drift or stray property that had been found, in a book kept for the purpose; in 1715 is the following:

"Picked up by William Hilton, a boat (near Baker's Island) 20 ft. long and 9 ft. wide."

At the formation of the church November 7, 1716, Rev. Amos Cheever was ordained as its first pastor. He celebrated the first sacrament ever held in town. He was a graduate of Harvard College. The church at that time consisted of nine males and ten females.

In the following year John Pierce was murdered on board a vessel in the harbor, and it was long believed by the credulous that the moans of the murdered man could be heard on the approach of a storm. But it has since been ascertained that these mournful sounds proceeded from a sea-bird known as the loon.

The people of that time were extremely superstitious. On a hill near the beginning of the Essex woods two men used to make shingles; in a drunken quarrel one was killed, and that part of the town was long avoided after dark; for on stormy nights the deceased shingle maker could be heard filing his saw, and uttering the most distressing groans. For many years this story was fully believed. At length, some young men, who could not understand what possible use disembodied spirits could have for files and saws, resolved to investigate. On a windy day they ascended the hill, and found a long branch of a pine tree was resting heavily on a limb below, and when swayed by the wind their heavy, pitchy surfaces rubbed and chafed with the sounds described.

The number of inhabitants taxed in 1717 was sixty-four.

The people of Beverly Farms by petition "desire to have the bounds of Manchester include Beverly Farms."

The "Commons" voted to give one hundred acres of their land to the town, in consideration of their great cost in settling a minister in town." This grant included the Kettle Cove Pond, Kettle Island and half an acre near the Cove school-house, for a "clay-pit."

The town afterward sold Kettle Island to John Knowlton for three pounds.

Crow Island to Joseph Leach for six pounds.

The clay-pit was set off for the use of all the inhabitants. Then clay was used for mortar in the building of chimneys and for the brick walls often laid between the studding of the framed-houses, and in the construction of log-houses it was very much used in filling the spans between the logs.

Every pupil in the schools was taxed "5 pence per week for the support of the teachers;" and in cold weather every one was expected to contribute daily a stick of wood.

In 1718 the commoners "granted the Hon. Samuel Browne, of Salem, 10 acres of upland, and 5 acres of swamp, as he had been at great cost in settling a minister in town."

In December, 1719, Samuel Lee, Aaron Bennett, John Foster, Richard Leach, Benjamin Allen and John Dodge were chosen a committee to build a new meeting-house near the old one. It was forty-nine feet long and thirty-five feet wide.

Ezekiel Knowlton was drowned at Sable Island.

In 1720 the old meeting-house was sold for twelve pounds, and a committee was appointed "to take subscriptions of every man for his work, or stuff which





he will offer to build the new one, and to agree with an 'artificial' workman to over see the workers and work himself as cheap as can be done, and when the meeting-house is fit for the congregation to meet in, the committee are to make a satisfactory account of the same; and the committee are to seat the people according to their purchase in the said house, and all money which shall be received from other towns, shall be devoted to the building of the pulpit, and all pin money to building the minister's pew."

The front door, with its home-made lock, and heavy iron hinges, is yet preserved as the southern door of Major Foster's ware-house; and the sounding-board forms a part of the ceiling in a kitchen at West Manchester. These interesting relics should be preserved in some place of greater safety.

About this time John Hill opened a public house where the "Rail Road house" now is, on Union Street. This is the second tavern of which we have record. It was built by John Bishop in 1690.

In 1721 "Jabez Dodge was chosen school-master, and was not to have more than twenty pounds per annum."

And among other subjects voted upon, there was a majority against geese running any longer on the common.

The "fields at the Plain and at the Neck were held in common as pasture lands."

In 1722 the selectmen granted to John Lee, Jr., "a retailers license."

"Joseph Knight sells his farm at the the Cove to Ingersoll." This is the place now owned by the University of Pennsylvania.

The General Court assessed the town "£108 as their proportion of the debt contracted by the expedition to Canada, and trustees were elected with instructions to let it out at 6 per cent., in sums not less than £5, or more than £10, to any one person."

A road was laid out, one and one-half rods wide, from the county-road by the causeway up the "Great Hill," "for fishermen to cut their fire-wood."

In 1723 the town "ordered the trustees of the £108 shall have it for 5 years, and be allowed 20 shillings for bringing it from Boston."

A new school-house was built near the meeting-house, under the direction of John Foster and Richard Leach, "who are also required to survey the school lands and report on its quality and quantity."

This building was sold in 1811 and removed to Saw-Mill Brook, where it was converted into a dwelling-house by Mathew Giles.

John Foster was chosen school-master for four years, at ten pounds per annum. "And the town agrees to assess £100 for four years for the support of a free school, for bothe sexes to learn reading, writing English and cyphering."

Nathaniel Masters exchanges Poplar Plain with the town taking in lieu thereof land bordering on Lobster Cove.

1724 "The clerk is ordered to Alphabet the Town's Books."

And "the road  $1\frac{1}{2}$  rods wide, was built from the County Road to the White Beach."

In the following year "Benjamin Allen, John Bishop, Richard Leach, Jonathan Allen, Jeremiah Hibbetts, John Crowell, Jabez Dodge, Samuel Lee and Shadrack Norton petition for fifty feet of land in front of the landing place, off the point of rocks to build a wharf."

On the 29th of October, 1727, the people were alarmed by an earthquake.

The cause of such terrestrial disturbances was not understood by the people of that period. They were regarded as an evidence of the Deity's anger. A great religious revival followed and continued for several months, and forty people were united with the church.

In 1730 the town voted to pay Rev. Mr. Cheever, one hundred and twenty pounds, and he to release the Millet Swamp. "And every person is to pay his proportion by contribution every Lord's day, by writing his name on a piece of paper and handing it into the box."

Among the old papers of the town the following is not the least remarkable:

"Whereas that was no way layd out at Kettel cove landing-place formerly, we, the subscribers, on ye fifth day of Nov., 1731, have laid out half an Acre of land for ye landing place at Kettel cove on North side of ye Cove, as followeth: teen pole fronting to ye water to one ye up land, to one ye peple Stone beach, falling back to ye Nor ward to ye distance of teen p 1 to 3 pol in we lth, thence back up to 2 pls in weath to ye Este side of a Grate Rock; and also bunding out on Nor East side of ye way to Daniel Knight Howes 2 pol wide and so along ye way that goes to Knight saw mill, then one pol on half when ye way now is about teen pls beyond the old saw mill, &c.

AARON BENNETT,	} Selectmen
JOHN FOSTER,	
THOMAS LEE,	

Knight's saw-mill was above the old burial-ground on the road to the railroad station at the Cove.

At a town meeting held in 1731, it was ordered "that the valuable gift of Baxter's practical works from Mr. Holden, of London, by the Rev. Dr. Colman, to the town and church at Manchester, are thankfully accepted, and £8 appropriated for the binding of said works."

These volumes were kept for many years, but in consequence of frequent and incautious lending they were lost.

In the following year Ram Island was sold to John Knowlton.

And in 1732 the town "agrees to build a wharf of fifty feet in front of the Landing place by the meeting-house, from the south ledge of rocks to the channel, and assess £50 on the Town to build the same. And each man shall work one day on the said wharf, on penalty of paying 5 shillings to defray the cost of the wharf." This was the town's wharf by the Common.

In 1734 fifty pounds was ordered "to be assessed





for the schools, one-half of which is to support 4 School Dams, viz.: one at Nuport, one at the Meeting-house, one at Brierey Plain and one at Kettle Cove. The other half shall be expended in providing a good school-master to keep near the Meeting-house during the fall and winter season." The "School Dams" of that time taught reading, spelling and writing, using the "horn book" and psalter for reading, and "the goose quill pens" for writing. It is said the twigs of the grey birch were sometimes used instead of quills.

A proposition was made in several of the towns to divide the county of Essex, but the vote of Manchester was against it. "And a committee was chosen to draw up the reasons for their vote."

In 1736 Samuel Allen sold to John Foster, shoreman, ten acres of land at Graves' farm for fifty pounds.

"In 1739 the meeting of the Commoners was held in John Hill's tavern."

In June, 1740, while the people were on their way to church, an earthquake of such severity was felt that many were obliged to be seated.

John Driver was slain by the Indians at Cape Sable.

In 1741 a bridge was built across the river at the grist-mill. This was on the site of the present bridge in the centre of the town. And the "river bank near the school-house was leased for a lime kiln." This was about where the town hall now stands.

John Hill was chosen "A Inspector of Killing and Hunting of Dears," which were plentiful in the woods.

In 1744 "Samuel Lee was commissioned a Justice of the peace," a very important office at that time.

In March, 1745, the expedition against Louisbourg sailed from Boston, under the command of William Pepperrell. This was a strongly-fortified town that had been built by the French on the Island of Cape Breton. The town had a large business and was said to have employed six hundred vessels in its trade and fisheries. The feeling against this place was very strong, and was voiced by a noted divine in an adjoining town. In a sermon advocating the necessity of destroying the place, he said: "They harbor our enemies that come to lay waste our infant eastern settlements; they molest and break in upon our fisheries, and break them to pieces; they lie near the roadway of our European merchandise, and they sally out and take our corn-vessels; and therefore our oppressions from thence, so long as it remains in the hands of the enemy, are like to be intolerable. We must remove, then, our enemies, or they will destroy us. There is a plain necessity of it; and woe to us if it be not reduced!"

There was great rejoicing when the news of its surrender reached the town. No list of those engaged in this enterprise from this town has been preserved. But Samuel May was there as a lieutenant. David

Allen kept a journal of the expedition. Jacob Morgan and John Hassam were killed; and William Tuck was in the engagement on board a British frigate. Daniel Foster was lost by the sinking of a boat, and Jacob Foster never returned. A great deal of excitement prevailed lest the French fleet should make an attack, and many enlisted in the Essex County regiments and marched to Boston. In town the coast-guard was increased and ammunition bought. The town provided stocks for disorderly bipeds, and a pound for restraining unruly quadrupeds. The first stood on the common near the church.

In 1747, other toilers of the sea fell victims to the barbarities of the savage tribes on the coast of Maine. Captain Amos Hilton with his son and crew landed for wood and water, when they were surprised by the Indians and all massacred but one lad. Further particulars of this affair will be found in the article on the fisheries.

Mr. William Hilton, his son, son-in-law and one other man were surprised by the Indians at Niscopet, near Sheepscot. All were killed except the last named, who was made a prisoner. William Hilton was on his way to Muscongus to possess the land belonging to his father.

In 1748, the throat distemper prevailed and many children died, and Benjamin Allen and William Hassam were lost at sea.

The following year was also a sad one, for Isaac Preston, Benjamin Hassam and William Lee were lost on a return voyage from Lisbon. Ezekiel Masters was also lost at sea, and Andrew Leach died while in London.

"2 shillings paid for a new bottom to the Great Chair in the school-house."

In 1750 "Captain John Lee was paid 5s. 4d. for a journey after a school-master."

The town also voted to repair the meeting-house, and to buy the first row of pews in the front gallery, the front seats in the side gallery, and the men's seats below.

And it was further voted that those that *are proprietors*, and those that are not, shall *vote together*. This is the first instance of unrestricted suffrage in the town.

A church steeple was ordered to be built at a cost of £190, and in the following year an additional £100 was appropriated for the same purpose.

And again a gloom is cast over the village by the loss of six of their inhabitants while on their return voyage from Lisbon.

In 1753 "Mr. Samuel Wigglesworth was paid for keeping a school five sixths of one quarter year £5, 11s, 1½d."

The wolves were very destructive to the young stock of the settlers, and at town meeting it was ordered "that any sum of money be drawn to destroy them," and on the following year it was voted the money needful in conjunction with other towns, "to



Destroy those Devouring Wolves which are in, or may be found in, the woods between Ipswich, Gloucester, Manchester, Beverly and Wenham."

John Lee, Samuel Lee and Rev. Amos Cheever were owners of Slaves.

The town purchased a copper weather-cock for their meeting-house at a cost of £7, 10s. 8d. It has been in constant use ever since, and it as faithfully marks the wind's changes as it did for our Colonial ancestors.

In 1753 Benjamin Martin, who owned Smith's farm, died; his son, Nathaniel, married a daughter of Amos Pickworth.

In 1755 a "contribution was taken for the support of free schools, Samuel Lee giving the interest of £13 6s. 8d. for ten years, and many others subscribed liberally. The early settlers were always interested in the support of the church and the schools; and, considering their very limited means, and the great scarcity of money, their contributions were very liberal.

In the following year six citizens of the town were lost at sea. The men were a sea-faring race, and were much employed by the merchants of Boston, Salem, and Newburyport.

In 1756 Ambrose Allen, Moses Frank, Jacob Lee, Daniel Davidson, William Ireland, and John Ayers, belonging to the town, were lost at sea on a return voyage from Lisbon.

Rev. Amos Cheever, who had been pastor of the church for twenty-seven years, died January 15, 1756. He was lain in the old burial ground, but no stone marks his resting-place.

In the town records for 1757 is the following: "The selectmen are empowered to let the French men to John Foster for one year for one hundred and ten pounds, Old Tenor." There were neutral French (Acadians) who were compelled to leave Nova Scotia after it had been conquered by the English, and were town charges.

1758 was a disastrous season for the fishing fleet; many were lost. Of this town John Day, John Driver, Richard Leach, John Lee and Samuel Morgan perished.

And there were more victims for the savages, for Captain Samuel Leach, Joseph Allen, Jacob Crowell and Robert Bear were surprised and slain at Casco Bay. Two boys escaped.

Captain Leach was a justice of the peace, and noted for his great strength and activity. In numerous Indian battles he had made himself conspicuous, and was said to have destroyed many of his assailants before he fell, covered with wounds.

The third tavern, used to stand at the corner of Washington and North streets. It was kept by Deacon John Allen, about 1758. It had a long sloping roof, was two stories in front and one in the rear. The sign was a golden ball. It had two large, square rooms in front, a very large chimney in the centre,

and a long, narrow kitchen in the rear. It was taken down in 1883.

In 1759, Benjamin Orsement was granted a deed of the Old Way to Chebacco, around "Moses Hill," by laying out a new road, to the westward of "Millet's Swamp" lots to Chebacco. This was the original road to Ipswich, or Chebacco, as Essex was then called. It left what is now called the "Old Road" to Essex about opposite the "Cressey Orchard," and ran to the northward of "Moses Hill."

£9 11s. 8d. was paid John Foster for supplying the families of the Frenchmen" (Acadians).

In 1760 a subscription for the support of a free grammar school was circulated, and "John Lee agrees to give £30 old tenor: if Daniel Edwards arrives safe from Virginia: if not, then £15, and 10 others subscribed the last named sum."

The town was fined for not sending a representative to the General Court.

A wall was "ordered to be built about the burial-place, and the bars are to be replaced with a gate." This was probably an ordinary stone wall.

The following is a list of the school teachers in 1769:—

	£.	s.	d.
"Thomas Lee's wife, the School Dame at Kettle Cove, received...	1	4	
Widow Rebecca Towksbury, at Newport.....	2	5	
Nathaniel Lee's wife, at the Plate .....	1	3	4
Widow Sarah Leach, at North Yarmouth.....	18	3	
John Pickering, for 1 quarter hire, keeping Grammar School	6	13	6

"The town paid Thomas Lee for making a whipping-post, and a pair of stocks 13 shillings, 4d.; and 4s. 8d. for stock-irons." These indispensable institutions of our forefathers, were placed on the common near the church and the school-house.

A fine of five shillings was collected from a person "for swearing."

In 1761 a census of the town was taken, and gives the number of inhabitants as follows:—

Total of population.....	739
Families.....	135
Houses.....	163
Colored persons.....	23
Acadians.....	7
Indians.....	1

The last family of Indians lived at "Nichols," (near the Tenney place). They were very old, and were kindly treated by the people of the town who often contributed to their comfort by gifts of food and clothing.

During the revival at Chebacco in 1763, several of the Manchester people united with Rev. John Cleaveland's church in that place, much to the displeasure of Rev. Mr. Tappan, who had but little sympathy with the "Whitefieldian movement." Among the number was Edward Lee, "The Apostolic Fisherman," of whom Mr. Cleaveland gives an interesting account in his "Plain Narrative," published at Boston in 1767.

In the following year Benjamin Andrew, Charles





Leach and David Foster were lost with the "Mayflower," on their return from the West Indies.

In 1765 John Foster owned the "Smith Farm."

The parsonage land at the eastward of the meeting-house was divided and sold, and money was appropriated by the town for the building of an alms-house. It was the custom to let out the poor to board with those who would pay the most for their services; this was done annually.

Again the storms and seas make havoc, and shroud the village in mourning; for this year adds no less than ten to the list of *lost*.

In 1767 "the town orders £36, 13s. 4d. as a gift to Rev. Mr. Tappan, and continued the same in the year following, and in 1769 the amount was increased to £45."

A wind-mill was ordered to be built, that the exportation of corn might be prevented. It stood near School Street, on the land recently purchased by the town for a cemetery, and was taken down in about 1812.

A town-meeting was called "to see if anything could be done to the burial-ground, in consideration that those persons who are called to follow their deceased friends to the grave, may be delivered from the briers which so encumber them."

This year saw a marked change in the church—for seats for the choir were made in the gallery—before this they sat with the congregation, and did not sing by note as they now began to do. The time was started by a wooden pitch-pipe about a foot in length, on which the letters of the scale were cut; the tones were obtained by blowing in the end, and the pitch by sliding up and down the rod that filled the cavity of the instrument; only about a dozen psalm tunes were then in use.

In 1773 "the town agreed with Joseph Killam to ring the bell and sweep the meeting-house for one year for £1 6s. 8d., and further, to ring the said bell at 9 o'clock at night for 40 shillings."

The early settlers had paid their passages to this country, they had settled upon land they had already purchased before leaving England by buying shares in the stock of the company, and that there might be no doubt as to their right to the land, they had paid the Indians for a full and complete relinquishment of all their right, title and interest in it. As loyal subjects of the Crown they had always furnished their full proportion of men and money for preserving peace along the borders. They had contributed their quota of the taxes for the support of the colonial government. They felt they had made their new homes by privation, hard labor, and honest practices, and they were sensitive of any unjust interference of Old England in their affairs. After the signing of the treaty of peace, in 1763, by which all the French possessions in Canada were surrendered to the English—instead of a more liberal policy being adopted as they had been led to believe—the in-

dustrial pursuits of the young colony were more severely restricted than before: already over taxed for the protection of the colony, the impoverished settlers were still further harassed by burdensome taxation, and intolerable regulations on commerce and manufactures.

This feeling was greatly intensified by the attempted enforcement of the tea tax in 1773, which resulted in the destruction of three ship-loads in Boston harbor. This act of defiance roused the indignation of the British Parliament, and in retaliation they closed the port of that town, thereby paralyzing all business, and causing a vast amount of suffering there, and in the vicinity. The prospect of our fathers was gloomy in the extreme.

There were a considerable number in the town who remained loyal to the country of their birth, and reasoned against resistance. They said, "Our interests are almost entirely on the ocean, if war comes our fisheries will be destroyed, the markets of Europe, of the West Indies, and the trade with the southern colonies will be closed against us, our vessels will rot at our wharves: and how can we live?"

But a large majority of the people of Manchester felt they had been goaded beyond endurance; and they were willing to take any risk, and to make any sacrifice in the hope of greater independence. And in common with the inhabitants of other sections of the state they lost no time in seconding the measures of the leaders against the unwarranted aggressions of England.

May 18, 1774, a letter was received from the committee of correspondence at Boston, on the subject of a separation of colonies. A town-meeting was called and a committee was chosen to report thereon. At an adjourned meeting the following resolutions were adopted:

1st. "If any danger arise from this meeting, the town will be liable for the same.

2d. "To send delegates to the county congress and they be paid eight shillings per day.

3d. "John Lee, Andrew Mursters, and Andrew Woodbury are elected delegates to the County Congress to meet at Ipswich to consult in the critical state of our national affairs."

The resolutions passed at Ipswich were of unmistakable import, as will be seen by the following extracts;

"At the same time we frankly and with sincerity, declare that we hold ourselves subject to his majesty King George the 3d, and as such will bear him true allegiance, and are ready with our lives and fortunes to support and defend his person, crown, and dignity of his constitutional authority over us. But, by the horrors of slavery—by the dignity and happiness attending virtuous freedom, we are constrained to declare that we hold our liberties too dear to be sported with, and are therefore seriously determined to defend them."

On the 16th of September, "Andrew Woodbury was elected to the General Court, and in the event of its dissolution he was to attend as the Provincial Congress at Cambridge."

Since 1749 the hungry waves have engulfed no less than ninety-seven of the inhabitants of this little town.



In December of the same year the town voted that "the money in the hands of the constable should not be paid to the treasurer of the Province, but to Henry Gardner of Stowe;" thus the "sinews of war" were diverted from the customary channel to the popular cause.

And that importation might be reduced it was voted "that we give no Scarfs or Gloves at funerals, and wear no mourning for deceased friends, except a small piece of crape."

Minute men were appointed, ammunition purchased, and the militia organized by the election of Andrew Marsters, captain, Samuel Forster, lieutenant, and Eleazer Crafts, second lieutenant; and the company were more frequently drilled on the common.

The town also ordered "a subscription for the poor of Boston."

Early in 1775 the small-pox, a disease peculiarly dreaded at that period, appeared in the town, and a pest-house, with its attendant, the smoke-house, was built, and many people died.

The order from the Provincial Congress for supplying clothing for the army was cheerfully complied with; and fifty bushels of corn were purchased for the poor of the town.

Watch-houses were built along the coast that the movements of the British armies might be observed.

In April the news of the Battle of Lexington reached the town, and the militia under Captain Marsters started immediately for the scene of action. They went as far as Medford, where they received orders to return. (Twenty-one of this company enlisted in the Continental army). The colors carried by this Medford company was for many years preserved by Major Forster; and at his death it became the property of his grandson, James Knight, a veteran of the War of the Rebellion.

Dr. Joseph Whipple was the first physician that settled in Manchester. He was made captain of the Coast Guards, and the following is a copy of his orders.

"At a meeting of the Committee of Correspondence on Monday, the 25th of September, 1776.

"Captain Joseph Whipple—As you and the half company of soldiers stationed in the town of Manchester are under the care of the Committee of Correspondence, we order you to proceed as follows:—

"*Firstly.* We order you and your enlisted soldiers to meet on the Town Landing, complete in arms, as directed by the Congress, at two o'clock every day except Sunday, and to discipline your soldiers two hours and a half, and them that don't appear by half after two o'clock shall pay a fine for each default of eight pence to be taken out of their wages.

"*Secondly.* We order you and your soldiers to carry your arms to meeting every meeting day, according to the resolves of the Congress.

"*Thirdly.* We order you to keep three watches in town, two in each watch by night and one by day. One watch on Glasshead, and one watch on Image Hill, the Ballard place, and one on Crow Island.

"*Fourthly.* We order you to go the rounds two nights in each week, to see that there is a good watch kept, and in case any of them should be found default that they may be tried by the articles of war, as they are in the army at Cambridge.

"*Fifthly.* We order you to see that no night-watch leaves the watch till he is relieved by the day-watch, and no day-watch till relieved by

the night-watch, and see that the watch-houses are not left destitute the day or night,

"*Sixthly.* We order that the Town Landing be the Laram port at all times, that in case of any alarm that the soldiers make the best of their way to the Laram port to receive orders; except as is for Article Eightily.

"*Seventhly.* We order that if any shall leave the body and not appear on parade without leave of the officers, they shall pay a fine of six shillings, to be taken out of their wages for each default.

"*Eighthly.* We order that if any alarm should be at Kettle Cove that the men that are there shall keep there, and the rest to appear at the alarm post, and in case the alarm should be at Newport the men that are there shall keep there, and the rest to appear as above."

The committee of correspondence were, John Lee, Jonathan Herrick, Samuel Forster, Jacob Hooper, Aaron Lee, John Edwards, Isaac Lee, Isaac Proctor, Eleazer Crafts.

During this year an oration was delivered in town on "the Beauties of Civil Liberty, and the Horrors of Slavery." This is said to have been not only in the interest of the white race, but of the negro as well; in fact it was the first abolition address ever made in town.

In 1776 a town meeting was called "to do something further, for security from our unnatural enemies," and the construction of an entrenchment at Norton's Point was voted; one hundred bushels of corn was purchased for the poor, and sixty-eight pounds voted for soldiers' bounties.

Among the old papers of a tory family the following receipt was found, evidently written after a political discussion.

Received payment in full of all Demands, from this time, henceforth and Forever, as long as the World stands

"Manchester, 21.3d mo, 1776."

At a town meeting it was ordered that "Mr. Rogers should have 11 shilling 4d. for writing a petition to Gen. Washington." The nature of this document is not known.

In 1777 the warrant for the town-meeting began with: "In the name of the government and people of this colony" instead of "In the name of his Majesty George the Third, &c.," as before.

The town ordered £14 in addition to that given by Congress, as a bounty to enlisting soldiers, and agree to support the families of the soldiers.

There was much excitement in regard to the Tories in town, and a committee was appointed to examine all persons inimical to the state.

The town ordered to all soldiers that served in the Army of 1776 without bounty, a credit of £20 each.

A census reports a male population of two hundred and twenty-four over fifteen years old.

Eleazer Crafts was chosen first major of the Cape Ann and Manchester Brigade.

In July, of this year, the privateer "Gloucester," a new brig from the port for which she was named, went to sea with a total of one hundred and thirty men. Shortly after her departure she captured and sent in two prize brigs; after that nothing was heard of her. The loss of this vessel cast a deep gloom over Manchester, and made widows and orphans in many





homes. The surgeon was Dr. Joseph Whipple, who had won an enviable reputation as a physician in the town. He was an ardent patriot, a safe counselor, and greatly beloved by his fellow-citizens, eighteen of whom shipped with him, and with him sank to their eternal rest. Among them were Daniel Morgan, Daniel Ober, Nicholas Babcock, James Pittman, John Allen, John Coster, — Tucker, Amos Allen, David Brown, Andrew Brown, Jacob Lendall, Simeon Webber, Azariah Allen and James Morgan.

"Andrew Leach and ten others belonging to the town were lost in the privateer 'Barrington,' of Newburyport."

In April, 1778, a town-meeting was called to consider the Articles of Confederation between the States. The constitution was read by paragraphs, and its provisions discussed, but the decision was against it.

Liberty to be inoculated for the small-pox was desired. A meeting was called, and after a protracted debate, permission was refused.

Samuel Foster and Benjamin Obear built mills at Newport for making molasses from the stalks of corn, but the experiment was not successful and was soon abandoned.

All business with the Southern Colonies and the West Indies having been suspended by the war, there was much suffering for the want of corn, pork, molasses and sugar.

All the men capable of bearing arms were in the army, on board of privateer vessels or on duty in the wretched defenses called forts that lined the coast; so the care of providing for the families devolved on the women and boys, who cultivated the land, from it and from the sea, they gathered their food.

And that the raising of pork might be encouraged, it was voted "that swine be allowed to go at large, yoked and ringed to prevent their doing damage."

In the early part of 1779, £742 in paper was the equal of £100 in silver. In December, of the same year, it required £2,593 to buy £100 in silver.

The town taxes for that year were as follows:

County Tax	£804
State Tax	402
County Tax	2021
Town Tax	200
Relief Tax	200
	£19,031

The impoverished people could not pay their taxes. And so great was the difficulty in finding officers who would undertake their collection, that Amos Hilton, Joseph Day and Isaac Lee having been severally elected, each preferred to pay the fine of £5 rather than serve in that capacity.

£41, 5s. were paid for soldiers' shoes, and other sums were raised for the prosecution of the war.

In 1780 James Lee died in prison at Halifax, N. S.

The population of the town for this year was nine hundred and sixty-five; and the taxes, including soldiers' bounties, were £21,092.

The town expenses "were £800 for Rev. Mr. Tappan; £1280 for highways; £800 for the poor; £1000 for schools and town charges." Paper money had so depreciated that £75 was the common exchange for £1 in silver.

A great deal of distress is occasioned by this terrible depreciation in the value of the currency and consequent high price of all kinds of supplies; and a committee was appointed by the town "to regulate the price of articles of consumption."

As illustrating the condition of paper money of that period, a good woman in this town, whose husband was an officer of a privateer, was one day in the early part of the war made happy by the receipt of a barrel of sugar and £1,000 in Continental money, as his part of the prize money. The captain, as he paid it to her, advised that it be invested in some kind of real estate; but to the good wife the sum appeared a large one, and fearing to take the responsibility, she, like the unfortunate steward of old, hid it in a napkin, and neither she or her heirs ever realized a farthing from it.

Seven men were ordered from the town by the General Court, and £12 in silver was offered to soldiers who would enlist.

In October orders were received from Congress to provide beef for the army. For that purpose the town voted to raise £7000, but this was reconsidered and it was voted: "we will not comply, let the consequences be what they may."

Another widespread alarm was occasioned by that remarkable phenomenon, "The dark day." That was a superstitious period, and coming as it did at a time when harassed by want and war, it is no wonder that such an unusual condition of the heavens should have been regarded as the grand climax of their suffering, the final end of earth. This darkness extended over a great portion of New England, but was believed to have been darkest in this part of the State. A graphic description of that day from the pen of a young lady is worthy of preservation. She says,—

"The sun rose clear, but it soon began to be cloudy with some showers. Towards 9 o'clock it seemed to be breaking away, but every thing had a yellow appearance. Soon after 9 a dark, heavy cloud was seen rising from the northwest, which gradually spread itself till it covered the whole heavens, except a narrow space near the horizon. About 10 this was also covered, and the darkness increased so that we had to light a candle. All the folks out of doors, left their work and came in. Fear and anxiety were manifested on every countenance. It was quite dark when we set our dinner table. Early in the afternoon the darkness began to abate, and before sun down it was light, but clouded with a yellow, brassy appearance. After sun down it grew dark very fast, and the evening was more remarkably than the day. It seemed like darkness that might be felt. Some of our family who tried to go to a neighbor's, had to come back. We sat up late knowing that the moon would rise at nine, and expected it would make some difference as to the darkness, but it did not until after 11 o'clock when some glimmer of light began to appear."

This darkness was not observed by those at sea. It occurred on May 19, 1780.

In 1781 orders were again received for eight thousand two hundred and sixty-six pounds of beef or the





money to buy it; also a draft for eight men. Neither were complied with, and the town was fined £1027 6s.

Aaron Lee, William Tuck and John Edwards drew a petition to the General Court that they would appoint a committee "to see the poverty of the town." A letter on the subject was addressed by Aaron Lee to Esquire Phillips, of Andover.

The result was a proposition for the town to pay £50 for the beef, and give their note for £50, which was agreed to.

In November of this year £1000 was raised to hire soldiers for the remainder of the war. The town having been fined for not complying with the orders of Congress, Mr. Tewksbury was sent to confer with Col. Hutchinson, of Boston, and an abatement was procured.

The fourth public-house, or tavern, was situated on Union Street, and was known as the "Crafts House." It was kept by Eleazer Crafts, from about 1780 to about 1790, the time of his decease; it was afterward kept by his widow, who was a woman of remarkable energy and an active patriot during the Revolution.

This house was removed in 1873 to a spot on School Street, next above the Catholic Church, where it made two houses of good size.

In 1782 the General Court ordered a quantity of guns and ammunition, which were received, and an additional draft for men for three and five months was ordered. The town appointed William Tuck, John Lee and Jacob Tewksbury to draw notes for the soldiers; they drew interest and were signed by the town treasurer. Warrants for the town-meetings were dated according to the year of American Independence.

During the Revolution the yearly average of deaths in the town was twenty-one; but in 1777 there were fifty deaths; the total population was nine hundred and sixty-five.

The news of the suspension of hostilities between the United States and Great Britain was received with acclamations of joy. Every heart rejoiced that war had ceased, that peace had returned, and the great blessing of independence had been secured. It was a happy release from the grievous burdens which for seven long years had borne so heavily upon the impoverished people of the town. The old cannon that had so long stood in front of the church was dragged from its place, and in charge of Benjamin Leach, who had served all through the war upon the sea, and Joseph Kelham, who for the same period had served his country on the land, it was taken to every part of the town and discharged all day, the happy people joining in the celebration, and furnishing refreshments and powder. Everywhere the sound of rejoicing was heard, but from none were the prayers of thanksgiving more heart-felt, and earnest, than rose from the trembling lips of the mothers and daughters; they had silently borne terrible burdens of privations

and hardships; and very many had sacrificed their husbands, fathers and loved ones upon the altar of liberty. During that long war, all suffered; but none more than the women.

During the latter part of the war, the people of the town were greatly distressed for the means of living—paying taxes and meeting the drafts ordered by the Continental Congress. For seven years the productive labor had been called from their pursuits to the defense of the country. And in order to pay the soldiers and to meet the expenses of the war, Congress was obliged to issue notes which circulated as the currency of the people. These were counterfeited in England, and extensively distributed throughout the colonies, the county was flooded, and the value fell so rapidly, and so low that the people lost confidence in its ever being redeemed. And when the soldiers returned it was to find the people everywhere embarrassed by debt, commerce destroyed, the fishing fleet lost, or so decayed as to be almost useless, and with no means for the building of new ones. The outlook was extremely disheartening, but being a self-reliant and hopeful people, they went to work, and by industry and economy they gradually recovered, and as they became more prosperous, public improvements were recommenced.

This stagnation created in some parts of the State a feeling of disaffection which took the form of an insurrection known as "Shay's Rebellion" of 1786. The movement found no sympathizers in Manchester who furnished her quota for its suppression. Among them William Tuck acted as ensign, and Samuel Ayres served as a private. Ayres was in the Continental army during the War of the Revolution, and had previously served nineteen years in the English army, from which he had been honorably discharged.

During the seven long years of mourning and suffering, the schools had been somewhat neglected; but now money was raised for the free school, and in 1785 a new school-house was ordered. It was to be thirty feet long and twenty-six feet wide.

And a bell was purchased for the church. It weighed three hundred pounds, and cost £58 3s. 7d. This bell remained to call the people together until the remodeling of the later church in 1845, when a liberal citizen of the town exchanged it for a much larger one.

In 1788 the first regular communication with Salem and Boston was effected by the establishment of a line of two-horse open carriages from Gloucester. They ran twice a week, and nearly the whole day was consumed in making the journey. The arrival of this vehicle always created a sensation.

About this time Captain William Tuck's schooner "Race Horse" was towed to "Tuck's Point" in a damaged condition, and condemned. A portion of her was used in the construction of other vessels, but some of the timbers of the old wreck are still visible.



A grammar school was ordered.

Rev. Benjamin Tappan died. He was buried in the old burial ground, and his grave-stone bears this inscription :

"In memory of Benjamin Tappan, late pastor of the church in Manchester, who expired May 6, 1760, in the 70th year of his age, and the 45th year of his ministry. He was a sincere and exemplary Christian, a tender husband and parent, a judicious and sound divine, a prudent and faithful minister."

In 1789 a building for the poor of the town was built near the land where the Baptist Church now stands. It was known as the long house, it being but seventeen feet wide and sixty feet in length.

During the year 1791 a house was erected at Grave's beach for small-pox patients, and in the year following Daniel Low had "liberty to run a wharf to the point of rocks opposite the town wharf."

Rev. Ariel Parrish was ordained as the minister on the 12th of April, 1792; he was born in Lebanon, Conn., in 1764.

His ministry was a very brief one, for he died May 30, 1794, a victim to the "great sickness," as it was called, and which made that year a memorable one in the annals of the town. But little is known of the disease, except it was a fever of a very malignant type. The people were greatly alarmed, and the fear of contagion was so great that it was almost impossible to obtain nurses. Of a population of nine hundred and sixty-five, no less than ninety died.

Captain William Tuck, of this town, was appointed by President Washington to the office of Collector of Customs for the district of Gloucester.

In Feb., 1798, the schooner "Esther," Captain William Hooper, Jr., of Manchester, which, on a voyage to Bilboa, was captured by the French privateer "Vengeance," taken to Bayonne and condemned.

The town appointed a committee to view the road leading over the "great hill," and see if it is advisable to turn the same.

The financial policy of General Washington's administration proved a success, and public confidence in the government was secured to such an extent as to give an impulse to business, such as the people had never experienced before.

The Indian troubles in the West had been suppressed. The liberal policy of the general government in opening those fertile regions for settlement caused a large emigration thereto.

The revolution in France, and the general European war that followed, opened their markets to the commerce and productions of America. The people advanced in prosperity with a rapidity before unknown. In the space of ten years the exports were increased from nineteen million to ninety-four million dollars.

This wonderful growth in the commercial interests of the country was soon felt by the inhabitants of Manchester whose home was on the sea. The building and the fitting out of vessels for the merchant service,

and for the fisheries, created an increased demand for skillful navigators, and this want was fully met by Stilson Hilton, who was noted for his mathematical and nautical knowledge; he opened a school where young men were taught all the mysteries of navigation for a moderate tuition fee, and so successful was this teacher that there were soon more than forty sea-captains from this town in command of merchant vessels from the principal ports of the Commonwealth. And the fishing industry was no less prosperous. New fishing stations sprang up at the Cove, and in the little creeks and inlets of the town new vessels were built; warehouses, wharves and flakes for the drying of the catches were largely extended. Those too old to go to sea found employment in preparing the fish for market. All were busy.

The ocean has for the old mariner a charm that is very difficult to eradicate. As the old race-horses often strive to join in the struggle after they have been assigned to the monotonous labors of the road, so with them. As a case in point, we might mention the instance of skipper Samuel Allen, who for many years had commanded a fishing vessel, but getting old he retired to his farm on the Plain. One day a vessel was all ready to sail for the Grand Banks, but the captain (or skipper, as they were called), was nowhere to be found; the owner was in a great state of excitement; the vessel was at the wharf; the tide was almost high; men, provisions, everything on board, but no one to take command. Just then skipper Allen came in sight with cart, oxen and corn for the grist mill. Hurrying to him the excited owner exclaimed, "You are just the man I was looking for; my vessel is all fitted for 'the Banks,' men, provisions, all on board, tide is in, the wind is fair, but the skipper can't be found, and you must take his place!"

The old man stopped his team. It was a fine vessel, and, as he looked at her tugging impatiently at the ropes that bound her to the shore, the old love for the sea was kindled anew; it was too much for the old skipper, and he answered, "Yes, I'll go; but you must see to getting the oxen and the grist home, and tell my folks where I am." He went on board; in a few minutes he was out of sight, and in sixty-five days he returned with a famous cargo of fish, and again retired to his farm.

Having reached the close of the century, it is a good time to refer to some of the events of the war in which our people were actors.

It seems almost incredible that a people numbering only three millions, educated to the belief in the "Divine right of King," and scattered from Canada to the Gulf of Mexico, should have had the courage to wage war with one of the most powerful nations of the earth. It would appear almost impossible to have devised any system of intolerance and persecution that could drive a people to such desperation.

The Declaration of Independence was sent by Con-





gress to all the towns, with the request to have it read from all the pulpits, and to have it entered on the town records. This was done in Manchester, and the original copy is still preserved.

The town then numbered about eight hundred; the men had generally been employed in the fisheries and in commercial pursuits, so that, when the war began, their occupation being at an end, many engaged in the privateer service. Among them was Captain William Tuck, who in 1776 made several successful voyages in a schooner to Bilboa laden with dry fish, and returned loaded with powder for the colonies.

In 1777 he became part owner and commander of a privateer brig, the "Remington," of eighteen guns, and captured many prizes during 1778. In the latter part of the war he was unfortunate. In 1782 he took command of a ship mounting twenty-four guns and with one hundred men (many of them from this town); he was captured eight hours out of port by the English frigate "Higate Blonde," of thirty-six guns; the prize was sent to Halifax, and was wrecked off the coast of Nova Scotia. After the war he commanded the ship that hoisted the second American flag in the Baltic Sea. He became a large land owner in the town, and, on his retiring from sea-life, became a farmer, and was employed in many town offices. In the early part of the war he was a delegate to the County Convention at Ipswich, and represented the town in the General Court in 1777. He married four times, having children by each of his wives, numbering in all twenty-three. He died in March, 1826, aged eighty-seven years, and was buried under the forms and ceremonies of the order of Free Masons, of which order he was a member.

The following is a copy of the shipping-paper of the privateer "Hawke," commanded by Jeremiah Hibbert in 1777:

"Now fitted for sea and ready to proceed on a cruise, the privateer schooner 'Hawke,' a well-built vessel of 70 tons burden, mounting 10 carriage guns and eight swivels, small arms, &c. She is a privateer, and has on board every convenience for such a cruise, and is to be commanded by Captain Jeremiah Hibbert. The whole crew will draw one-half of the proceeds. Out of which the captain will have 8 shares, the 1st Lieut. will draw 4 shares, the 2d Lieut. will draw 4 shares, the Master will draw 4 shares, the Prize Master will have 1 share, the 1st muster will draw 2½ shares, the 2d muster will draw 2 shares, the Surgeon will draw 1 share, the remainder will draw a single share. Jeremiah Hibbert, Captain; Marston Watson, 1st Lieut.; Caleb Ray, Surgeon; Samuel Bennett, Master; Ezekiel Leach, Mate; Benjamin Leach, Prize Master." Except the Surgeon all the officers were from Manchester.

Those of the crew belonging to the town were Thomas Steele, Theophilus Lane, Joseph Perry, Nicholas Babcock, Stitson Hilton, Abial Lee and John Knight, carpenter.

It is related of "Captain Daniel Leach," who was then a mate under Captain Tuck: Their vessel was captured, and a prize crew placed on board to take her to Halifax. While on their way they put into a small harbor on the Nova Scotia coast. Captain Tuck was a fine conversationalist and of most excellent address, and he so ingratiated himself into the

good graces of the prize captain, that he was invited to accompany that officer to visit some of his British friends on shore.

During their absence Leach, who was on deck, was watching the doings of the prize crew, who were all in the rigging, making some repairs and shaking out the sails, that they might dry. In this Leach thought he saw his opportunity; and with him to see was to act. Some of the prisoners were on the deck, and soon comprehended the plan. Leach loitered towards the arm-chest, and, seizing an axe, burst the cover open; this being the signal agreed upon, the Americans were quickly armed, and the crew in the rigging were at their mercy. Leach and his crew were in charge, and the English crew were his prisoners.

After a pleasant visit on shore, the prize captain and his polite friend were rowed along-side. Leach received them courteously, and surprised the English captain by ordering him below as his prisoner; and Captain Tuck was informed that the ship was his again, and his old crew were awaiting his orders. Under his direction the vessel was taken safely to Boston.

From the *Salem Register* of July 30, 1838, we copy the following:

"At an early period in the great struggle for Independence, Mr. William Kittfield, when only 21 years of age, with John Gardner, of this town, and a young man by the name of Lawrence, of Gloucester, shipped at Boston with Captain Smith, of Salem, on a voyage to Bilboa. On their return voyage they were taken by a British ship of war, and carried to England and thrown into prison, from which they managed to escape and find their way to a sea port, where, as English men, they shipped on a vessel bound to Jamaica and Halifax. While at the former place Kittfield proposed to the other two a plan for taking the vessel while on her way to Halifax. They agreed to it, and the next day, while on shore, each bought a sword. When they were well to the northward, about midnight, when all three were in the same watch, Gardner, armed, was placed at the cabin door, Kittfield went to the second mate, who was at the helm, and told him the anchor was off the bow. Thus they got charge of the deck, and the officers were prisoners below. The crew, being promised a share of the prize, readily joined them and assisted in working the vessel. The next day they ran alongside an American privateer, and were taken into Salem, where the vessel was given up to the three daring youngsters. The Captain cried bitterly, and said he would not care so much about it if it were not the first time he had been captured."

Captain William Pert was so unfortunate as to have his ship captured by an English cruiser when he was quite near Boston. A prize crew was put on board and she was headed for Halifax.

Among the cargo of the captured vessel was a large amount of provisions and excellent liquors. For the first day the wind was very light, and but very little progress was made. The English officers had already discovered the merits of the food, and they very frequently refreshed themselves with the liquors. As the sun was setting there were indications of more wind. The prize officers, not feeling sufficiently familiar with the difficult navigation of this part of Massachusetts Bay, asked Captain Pert to work the ship, to which he very cheerfully agreed. But occasionally he found time to go below, and adding zest to the



festivities by bringing to their notice some untried varieties of brandies and wines, which were greatly relished.

The night set in very dark with a strong breeze. Captain Pert being pilot, managed to gradually change the course of the ship, and by daylight the following morning, the bewildered officers found themselves, with bad headaches, under the guns of the fort in Boston Harbor.

Captain Pert was never an intemperate man, but to the day of his death he believed there are times when intoxicating liquors may be profitably employed.

Captain John Lee commanded a privateer that sailed from Newburyport; he captured several prizes.

Captain Hibbert was in command of the "Civil Usage," which was lost in the great storm off Portland.

In 1777 the privateer "Barrington," Captain Hant, of Newburyport, was lost, and with her Andrew Leach and ten others belonging to Manchester went down.

The names of some of those who served in the army were John Lendall, Josiah Lee, Wm. Kellham, Henry Frederics, Jos. Kilham, Eleaser Crafts, Major Wm. Kittfield, Joseph Haskell, Samuel Bear, John Allen, William Dow, Benjamin Kimball, Thomas Hooper, John Knight, Joseph Knight, Lieutenant Joseph Leach, Ezekiel Leach, Isaac Preston, Dr. Joseph Whipple, Samuel Ayres, Amos Jones, Isaac Allen, John Kimball, John West, Abiel Burgess, Thomas Gentlee, Solomon Lee, John Danforth, Jeremiah Dow, Moses May, James Lee, Joseph Babcock, Asarius Allen, Hooper Allen, Benjamin Crafts, John Poland, Stephen Danforth, Nicholas Babcock, Israel May, Michael Tappan, Ebenezer Tappan, John Babcock.

In Governor Everett's oration on the History of Liberty delivered at Charlestown, July 4, 1838, we find the following:

"In the following year, 1775, in the month of July, Washington was present as an actor in the celebrated Battle of Bunker's Hill, and there is living in the State of Massachusetts, an individual who was also in the battle. He remembers the appearance of the *Colonel*, as he calls him. He saw him as he rode, for three long hours, through the storm of fire and steel, which beat on that desert as plain; flying from horse to horse, as two were successively shot from under him, the constant mark of the human war, as they afterwards told him, but preserved like the pious children of Israel, 'on whose bodies the fire had no power.' Not like them, indeed, in all respects, for it is recorded, that 'neither were their coats changed, nor the smell of fire had passed on them.' The garments of Washington were pierced with bullets in four places, but he was preserved through the fiery trial, to be the saviour of his country. The aged person to whom I have alluded, living, as I believe, in Massachusetts, in the county of Essex, is probably the sole surviving eye-witness of this scene."

The experience of "Mr. Nathaniel Allen" is so remarkable that we cannot fail to give it a place in these pages. From an account published in the *Salem Gazette* of February 1839, we extract the following:

At an early period of the Revolutionary War, he served in the Artillery under the command of Col. Harry Knox. He crossed the Delaware with Washington, was engaged in the battle of Trenton, Princeton

and other conflicts. After he had served his time he retired from the arduous duties and privations of a soldier's life, to what he supposed would be a more comfortable one on the ocean. How far these hopes were realized will be seen.

Early in October, 1780, he shipped on the schooner "America" of Gloucester, bound to the West Indies, Capt. Isaac Elwell commander, John Wood second mate, Jacob Lurvey, Aaron Witham, Nathaniel Allen and Samuel Edwards Cook. Nothing of importance occurred on the outward passage. They arrived at Point Petre, Guadaloupe, where they disposed of their fish, and took in a cargo of sugar, cotton, cocoa, coffee, rum and molasses and on the 10th of December, sailed for home.

Everything went well until they reached George's Banks, which was December 31, and they were happy at the prospect of soon meeting their friends. But a very violent gale came on in which they shipped a sea that carried away their sails, bowsprit and rudder, rendering the schooner wholly unmanageable. For two months they had a succession of gales from the west and north-west, and were tossed at the mercy of the wind and waves.

At the time of the disaster they had but one week's provisions, which they divided. They then lived on cocoa as long as it lasted. They succeeded in catching some shark, dolphin, and a small fish called the rudder fish. With these they sustained life, but at times they were reduced to the utmost extremity; one day they caught a rat that was instantly devoured and pronounced the sweetest of morsels. They suffered intensely for water, having at the onset but one barrel; during showers they drank all they could catch, but at one time they had no rain for three weeks; during this time the cook expired from thirst. Then despair was written on every face, for they knew not who would be the next victim. But the next day it rained plentifully.

They had been on this wreck since the 31st of December, and it was now the 17th of September, a period of two hundred and sixty-one days, and in all that time but three vessels were seen; one at a great distance, the second not far off, but they took no notice of them. The third they saw the day before the rescue at three leagues distance. They made signals of distress but soon after, to their great surprise and disappointment, the vessel changed her course and sailed away. But the next day a brig was seen bearing down upon them; when conveniently near, a boat with the mate and two hands came on board. After looking about the mate said "we saw you yesterday and wanted to come to your relief, but the captain was opposed to it; he said you were Americans, and if he took you on board you would rise and take the brig. To day we saw you again and as he had taken a 'stiff horn' and had gone to his cabin, we concluded not to let him know it until we got near you." The mate and the two men, then





returned to the brig and made their report to the Captain, who immediately ordered the survivors to be brought on board. He told them that if they behaved properly he would treat them well; he would not make them prisoners, for he thought they had been prisoners long enough, and had a hard time of it.

The only tools they had for preparing their fuel was a hand-saw, and a crow-bar; with these they began on the broken bowsprit, then the windlass, and bits; next they took off two streaks of planks from the waist, and sawed off the top timbers near the deck.

The brig took from the wreck six thousand pounds of cotton, three hogsheads of sugar, and two bags of coffee.

When they were rescued they were twenty leagues to the westward of the Western Islands; they had one hundred and fifty pounds of dried dolphin, half a barrel of water and one turtle which was taken on board the brig for food. For *two hundred and sixty-one days* these men were drifted in what is now the highway between America and Europe without succor. But it must be remembered there was but little commerce traversing the ocean then, and the war between Great Britain and the United States was then raging.

When near the entrance to New York harbor, the Captain gave them his only boat with a sail, oars and some provision, and bade them God speed. (He would not take them to New York, as it was then in the possession of the English). In this boat they traveled by day, and at night they slept beneath it on the shore, and in one week they reached Black Cove beach at Manchester, where they abandoned it and walked to their homes; so changed and emaciated that their friends hardly recognized them.

Mr. Allen lived for many years in Manchester, and died at the age of eighty-four, highly respected by all who knew him.

The first store in Manchester was kept by the Widow Samples, on Sea Street. She afterwards married Major Eleazer Crafts, and removed to his house on Union Street, which was opened as a hotel about 1780; here, as Mrs. Crafts, she continued her store keeping.

About 1775 there were no needles, pins or thread in town; they were needed in every family; and to be deprived of them was a very serious inconvenience.

Mrs. Crafts was a woman of great energy, and she resolved to secure a supply of them if possible. The British army then occupied Boston, and to pass in and out was not an easy matter.

She engaged two men with a boat, and was rowed to the vicinity of the town where she discharged them and walked on, and with some difficulty she passed the guard and gained the residence of a lady friend, with whom she remained a day or two and completed her purchases.

With her bundle in her hand she again passed the

English sentinel, took the ferry boat to Charlestown, and walked to Malden, where she knew of a man who kept a horse and chaise, which she hired and was driven to the ferry between Salem and Beverly. From the latter place she continued her walk until she reached home, where her bundle added greatly to the comfort of the community.

Obed Carter was the collector of taxes; he was a man of sterling honesty, but quite skeptical in his religious views. He lived where the "Annable House" now is. His friend, Samuel Bennett, lived in the old house still standing on the north side of the hill that bears his name. He was noted for his strong faith; "he trusted in the Lord at all times," and frequently endeavored to impress his views upon the mind of his friend. Of these men the following tradition has been preserved.

On the day fixed by law all collectors of the provincial tax must visit Boston and pay their collections into the treasury. Mr. Carter had started on his journey, and when opposite his friend's house his horse fell and broke his leg. For him the loss of a horse was a severe trial; but when Mr. Bennett assured him that it was all for the best, his indignation knew no bounds. Subsequently, when the news reached the town that the collectors that passed through Lynn were all robbed and those that resisted were murdered, it *did seem all for the best*, for Mr. Carter's life and money were saved. Brother Bennett was justified, to him it was a confirmation of a long cherished faith; to the other it was the breaking forth of a new light. From that day the two friends were in accord on the reality of a superintending Providence.

FISHERIES.—But little is known of the style of vessel with which the commerce of the early settlers was carried on.

In 1624 the Plymouth Company built two shallops. Of one, which was used in trading voyages to the Kennebeck River, we have the following description: "She had a little deck over her midships to keepe ye corne drie; but y<sup>e</sup> men were faine to stand out in all weathers, without shelter." The next year they cut one of the largest of this class in two "and lengthened her some 5 or 6 foote; and strengthened her with timbers, and builde her up, and laid a deck on her; and made her a convenient and wholesome vessell; very fitt & comfortable for their use, which did them service 7 years after."

The year after the arrival of Governor Winthrop he built "The Blessing of the Bay," a bark of thirty tons. Vessels of this class were frequently mentioned, but no complete description and no drawings of them have been preserved. The vessels employed in the fisheries were small, and many are believed to have been without decks. Among those owned in Manchester, in 1696, we find Samuel Allen had one of twelve tons; Aaron Bennett, one of nine tons; William Hassam, one of thirteen tons; and Samuel Lee's "Swallow," was thirty-five tons.





These vessels were all engaged in the fisheries, except, perhaps, the latter, which may have been for coasting or trading voyages.

A very considerable trade was carried on in these crafts with Virginia and the more southern colonies. These trips were made after the close of the fishing season. It was seldom that wages were paid the men, but they were allowed some space for private adventure instead. Their cargo generally consisted of fish, a few articles of hardware, cloth, stockings and wooden-ware.

They generally proceeded to a small bay or creek near some plantations where they bartered their goods for corn, beans, bacon, live hogs and other products of the country. Many went further south and to the West Indies where they exchanged their cargoes for salt, sugar, molasses, coffee and rum. These voyages began long before the war, and were pursued with no inconsiderable profit.

About 1750 we find mention of voyages to Lisbon and Bilboa; to these ports little but fish was taken and the proceeds were invested in salt, fruit, wine and specie.

The fish were taken from boats and small crafts that lay about the shoals and along the coast, where they took at different seasons cod, hake and pollock. As late as 1805 the average of the vessels engaged in the fisheries was but twenty tons, and they were extremely uncomfortable. The fire was made on a brick hearth on the floor, directly beneath the companion way, up which the smoke was expected to pass, and the only way to and from the cabin was through the smoke and fire.

The occupation of the early settlers was largely that of fishing; and when we consider the anxiety, privation and manifold dangers with which they were beset, we are constrained to believe that no portion of our country was populated at so great a cost. They do not appear to have suffered greatly from hunger, for the sea was always bountiful, and furnished a large variety of food. And the Indians whose soil they occupied gave them but little trouble; but the tribes more remote often caused serious alarm and filled many graves. But little could be gathered from their small farms, for they were fishermen: and were obliged to earn their livelihood from the reefs and shoals of the ocean. Along the rock bound coast these hardy men in their primitive and poorly equipped vessels groped in storm and fog among the unexplored and hidden dangers, buoying many a fatal rock with their wrecks: and if by stress of weather, or from exhausted supplies of wood or water, they sought the shore, they frequently fell a prey to savage ambush. At sea, pirates were not unfrequent; at home there were dreaded epidemics, contagious diseases, military drafts and press gangs to tear fathers from dependent families, and consign them to slavery in the ships of "Christian England." Then the embargo, and war, which forced their ves-

sels from the ocean where dismantled, they lay in bushy creeks. But one employment remained for these rugged toilers of the sea, and that was in the vessels of the Navy, or on board the numerous privateers, where they rendered noble service to the young nation.

As illustrative of the dangers above mentioned we will recount one instance.

In August, 1747, Captain Amos Hilton was fishing off the coast of Maine. Being out of wood and water, he entered a little harbor where he anchored his vessel, and with his son, and crew, was soon busy filling his casks from the brook, and cutting wood, when they were surprised by the Indians and massacred. It was a dreadful blow to the bereaved families, for whom every one in the village felt the deepest sympathy, and especially for the aged parents of Aaron Lee, a boy of twelve, who was on board the ill-fated vessel.

Some three years after this sad event, while the Lee family were taking their seats at dinner, the door opened, and a young man of swarthy complexion, with long black hair and clothed in skins, entered. In the few words they understood of the Indian tongue, they asked if he would have food. He made no reply, but gazed from one to another. At length walking to where Mrs. Lee was seated he called her mother. Their grief of many years was soon changed to joy, for he, "their son, who was dead, is alive again—he was lost and is found."

The story of his adventures is as follows: Soon after the attack was commenced he was seized by strong arms and hurried to the village, where his clothes were taken from him; and clad in skins he was made to work with the women in fetching wood and water. He soon learned their language, but was never allowed to leave the village; thus months and years passed with no opportunity of escape.

One day when all the warriors were away on some murderous expedition, he was at work under the direction of the women cutting faggots. When he had made a great pile, they told him he had cut enough, and when the braves returned he was to be placed upon it and burned to death.

The prospect was not pleasing to the poor boy, and he so excited the sympathy of the women that they advised his escape and promised to aid him. They pointed in the direction of the nearest white settlement, and went with him until they came to an abandoned house, where they concealed him in an oven, and then they went back to their homes.

When the warriors returned they were told their prisoner had escaped, and a vigorous search was made for him. Every part of the old house was examined, except the oven. At twilight the disappointed savages gave up the search, and when it was quite dark, Lee crept from his hiding-place and pursued his way through the forest. By concealing himself by day, and traveling by night, he reached the



settlement. Then concealment being no longer necessary he resumed his weary journey by daylight, until the long-wished for home was reached.

Aaron Lee lived to a good old age, and for many years he served the town as their clerk.

## CHAPTER CII.

### MANCHESTER—(Continued).

*Annals from 1800 to 1887.*

IN 1800 the population was one thousand and eighty-two of whom three were colored. The Rev. Abraham Randall was ordained September 2, 1801. On the following year the road to the cove was improved by a more direct way over the "great hill."

In 1803 the first post-office was established, and Delucena L. Bingham was appointed Post-master, which office he retained until 1837, when he died at the age of seventy-three.

Before the establishment of this office, letters for Manchester were carried to Gloucester, brought back by the stage-driver and stuck in a rack in the town. The total receipts of the office for the first quarter were seven dollars, of which the post-master had thirty per cent. Mr. Bingham was a native of Connecticut, came to Manchester in 1764, when he was but nineteen years old; he taught school for several years, was a deacon of the church for thirty-two years, a land surveyor, and one of the selectmen eighteen years, town clerk thirty-one years, and a member of the house of representatives in 1824.

1804. The first social library was established with forty-five subscribers and one hundred and fifty volumes. In 1806, the second social library was instituted; they both continued for a few years and then were broken up, and the books divided among the members.

In 1804 the subject of building a new meeting-house was considered in town meeting. During the year following a "daily stage" drawn by four horses enabled the people to visit Salem and Boston more conveniently: its arrival and departure was always an event of absorbing interest, and the drivers were the most popular of men. They were the autocrats of the road; the ladies always had smiles for them; they set the fashions for the men, and were the admiration of the boys. The dwelling and barn of Captain Samuel Allen was burned. These were the first buildings destroyed by fire since the settlement of the town. They stood on School Street on the spot now occupied by Thomas Willmington's house. The buildings were entirely consumed with the most of their contents, and long piles of wood in the rear of the barn, were also destroyed: it was supposed to have originated from a lighted pipe in the barn.

The embargo of 1808 occasioned a great deal of dissatisfaction all along the coast: by it trade was paralyzed, and commerce destroyed: vigorous remonstrances were sent out from all the seaports.

A meeting of the citizens of this town was held September 1st, 1808, and a petition, or memorial drawn up to be presented to the Congress of the United States, setting forth their loyalty to the government,—their distressed condition from the effects of the embargo by rendering valueless their catch of fish of the preceding year, and their hopeless prospect of future means of support of themselves and families. As this memorial failed to produce the desired effect, another meeting was held February 8, 1809, at which Abiel Burgess presided as moderator, and D. L. Bingham clerk, to petition the legislature of Massachusetts, for some action to induce the national government to relax the restriction on commerce. As this petition, or memorial will best show the state of feeling of the people at that time, a copy is here inserted verbatim.

*"To the honorable, the Senate and House of Representatives of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts, in general court assembled.*

*"The inhabitants of the town of Manchester in legal town meeting assembled, humbly represent that such is their local situation, the soil of the town being in general rocky, broken and barren, they are obliged to repair to the Ocean for the means of subsistence for themselves and families. This invaluable privilege which the God of Nature has afforded them, they have hoped to enjoy unmolested. But the restrictions laid on them in the the several Embargo Laws enacted by the Government of the United States, has excited sensations truly painful and distressing to your memorialists as well as many others. We have indulged a hope that the government of the United States would not continue to interdict that commerce on which we have depended for our support. Your memorialists do consider that the abandonment of the Ocean, to them is as oppressive, distressing and unjust as a prohibition on the produce of the land would be to the farmer. While our brethren in the country enjoy the privilege of cultivating their land and reaping the fruit of their labors, we are under the restraints which bind our industry and deprives us of our only means of support. Your memorialists have petitioned Congress for relief, but in vain, now turn their eyes to this honorable body, the more immediate guardians of their constitutional rights, praying them to take such measures as in their wisdom they shall conceive best calculated to afford us relief and save us from beggary and starvation.*

*"Your memorialists pledge themselves as ready at the risk of their property and lives, to support you in any constitutional measures you shall adopt for the redress of our grievances, and likewise to prevent an unjust war with Great Britain.*

*"Your memorialists, as in duty bound, will ever pray. Done in town meeting this 8th of Feb., 1809."*

Taking advantage of this discontent, wily agents from the mother country sought to effect a separation of the New England States from the Union; while the people loudly condemned the policy of the administration in imposing the embargo, the feeling of patriotism was too deeply rooted to admit a thought of secession.

This year the town lost two of her valued citizens, Dr. David Norwood and Captain Samuel Prince.

In 1809 the proprietors decided to build a new meeting-house, towards which the town gave the bell and two-thirds of the value of the materials of the old meeting-house, taking as their share of the house, the gallery seats, singing seats, minister's pew, the





porch, all the outside of the house, and two hundred and forty-seven pounds was ordered to be paid as the balance due the proprietors for the same.

The new meeting-house was completed July 9, 1809, at a cost of eighty-five hundred dollars. It was considered an unusually good example of the church architecture of that period, and was constructed of the best materials. The height from the ground is one hundred and ten feet; surmounting all is a gilded weathercock, that was taken from the old church, where it was placed in 1754. From its high perch this sentinel of our puritan ancestry has faithfully made visible the course of the wind's journeyings for one hundred and thirty-three years.

Rev. James Thurston was installed as pastor April 19th.

The Powder House that crowns the hill in the rear of the village was built in 1810. It is of brick, and the mortar is as fresh and sharp as when new; while that of the door that was bricked up a few years since is fast washing away, and the question is often asked, has the making of mortar become a lost art?

During the following year the town granted to Thomas Leach, two hundred and thirteen feet of land in front of his dwelling, in exchange for some of the land on which the meeting-house stands.

On July 19, 1812, William Tuck was elected delegate to the County Convention at Ipswich. This convention was called to consider the "awful and alarming situation of the country." The convention adopted resolutions strongly expressive of their opposition to the war.

The political clouds which had so long been gathering over the young nation, culminated in a declaration of war against Great Britain in June, 1812. This action was considered by many of the people of the sea-board as unwise and impolitic; they well knew the maritime interest of the country, upon which so many depended for their support, would be driven from the sea; but the injustice and the oppression of England had irritated them, until a feeling of resentment had been aroused, and they realized that longer submission would be unworthy of a people claiming to be free. While it remained a question of policy, there were many opinions; but now that war had been made the arbitrator, it became a matter of defense, and there was a much greater unity of sentiment.

At a public meeting Henry Story, John Allen, Andrew Marsters, William Tuck and Samuel Foster were chosen a committee of safety; they were required to set watchmen along the coast, erect flag staffs and provide flags for alarms. They petitioned the Governor for arms and ammunition and for two six pound guns. Breast-works were thrown up at Norton's, near those built in 1777.

In 1813 provisions were extremely high and scarce, and employment very difficult to procure; a peck of meal was the equivalent of a day's labor. Thirty

cents a cord was the price for cutting and piling wood and no money was paid; orders on the stores were given instead; there was much distress among the poor.

Mr. Ebenezer Tappan, who kept a store on Central Street, believed it possible to evade the enemy's ships, and get some supplies from Boston. His topsail schooner "Nancy" was noted for her sailing qualities, and Captain Jerry Danforth, Nathan Carter and his son, Benjamin Tappan, were placed in charge. They kept along the shore, entered Boston harbor by Shirley Gut at night; having secured their cargo, which consisted of flour, sugar, molasses, rum and lumber, they started homeward. All went well until they had passed Baker's Island, and they were congratulating themselves upon the success of their trip, for they were almost home. Suddenly the fog, lifting, disclosed the much dreaded cruiser quite near. A shot from her was a hint to stop, but, as there was a breeze, they kept on their course for Manchester. They could see two barges being made ready for a chase. When they reflected upon the damage they might inflict on the unprotected village, they resolved to run inside of Misery Island, and endeavor to reach the protection of the forts below Salem. But the wind became lighter and the barges were gaining so fast it was decided to run her on shore, which they did at Mingo's beach in Beverly. The men landed under cover of the vessel, but as they reached the high land near the road they were fired upon by their pursuers.

The English used every effort to get their prize afloat, but, failing in that, they took some of the goods, stripped the sails and set her on fire. The militia from Beverly and Manchester soon arrived, extinguished the fire, and hastened the departure of the barges by some musket shots.

The vessel was afterwards taken to Manchester and repaired.

This was the only serious alarm the people of the town sustained from the enemy's ships. But their presence occasioned a great deal of anxiety, especially among the women; who upon the first signal of danger from the coast guards, were accustomed to seize their infants, hurry a few valuables into bags, kept for the purpose, and flee to the woods until all was safe again. As in the earlier wars, the mothers and daughters were great sufferers.

Soon after the event narrated above an alarm came from the Cove, "the enemy are landing!" A part of the militia company at once responded to the call. The old six-pounder that always stood on the green in front of the church was carefully loaded, and, to the inspiring notes of the drum and fife, the company set forth, with the cannon and a long train of the bigger boys; some with shot-guns and others as spectators of the coming conflict. The six-pounder was placed in position on Crow Island. The men sought the cover of the rocks, the boys crouched behind the



boulders and the band found rest in the cool shade of the woods, where "with sweet melody they passed the weary hours."

As the boats from the frigate approached the shore they captured two citizens of the town who were fishing. Judging one was familiar with the coast, the officer in charge ordered him (Captain Danforth) to pilot them in; to which the captain responded with so much cheerfulness as to create a doubt if the people on shore (whose drum and fife they could occasionally hear), had not prepared for them an uncomfortable reception, and the innocent-looking fishermen were cunning decoys. They stopped rowing; with their glasses they could see the cannon, numerous bodies but half concealed behind the rocks, and the frequent notes of martial music seemed to tell of gathering forces.

They hesitated—they listened and consulted—and then with curses they dismissed the fishermen and returned to their ship.

The victorious land forces were called from the rocks, the band from the woods, and, with the old cannon and the rear guard of noisy boys, they started for home in high spirits.

In descending the "great hill," they were amazed at finding their long-treasured and *only cannon ball*, which they had so carefully placed in the gun, and from which they had expected such wholesale destruction to the "wooden walls of old England," had rolled out in ascending the hill, and was quietly reposing by the wayside. This incident somewhat dampened the enthusiasm of the officer in charge; but the rank and file, and the people, always regarded this expedition as a great military success—"a glorious victory."

A "Poor-house" that had been built near the site of the present Baptist Church, was destroyed by fire; it was called the "long house." It had become a nuisance, and the people made no effort to prevent its destruction.

1815 brought peace and terminated another period of suffering. Although the people had differed as to the justice and necessity of the war, they all united in rejoicing that it had been brought to a close. On that February day bon-fires, the firing of cannon, public gathering and gladness was everywhere. In this town the event was celebrated by a notable dinner at the tavern, when the emotions of the people found vent in speeches, patriotic songs, and shouts of great merriment until the small hours of the coming day.

At the beginning of the war the United States had but a small number of naval vessels; but privateers were soon fitted out from almost every port, and many prizes were taken from the enemy. This war was to a great extent fought upon the ocean and the great lakes. It was a naval conflict, where the seamen of the young republic exhibited such uncommon bravery, and nautical skill, as to win for their flag a

respect and a much higher position among the nations of the earth than it had ever occupied before.

Until about this time, agriculture and commerce had almost exclusively engaged the attention of the people, but the embargo and the war, had diverted a great deal of capital from commerce to manufacturing. Thus new fields of enterprise and industry were opened and a more varied occupation for the people was created. For a while there had been much distress among the poor, but the prosperity of the nation had advanced. Its strength had been perfected in suffering.

As in all the earlier wars Manchester performed her part loyally. Many of her citizens were in privateers, and in the naval service of the United States. With Perry in his victories on Lake Erie, and with M'Donough on Champlain there were Ephraim Clemens, John Babcock, Joseph Camp and William Camp. These two last named were probably killed, as they never returned.

Some of the sailors served in the navy on the ocean. Lambert Flowers was in the Chesapeake with Lawrence when she surrendered to the Shannon, after a hard and bloody engagement. Flowers was a giant in size, of wonderful strength, and of great courage; he boarded the Shannon before the surrender, and though badly wounded, with the head of a boarding pike deeply buried in his great frame, and its broken shaft hanging from it, he was in the thickest of the fight. After his cutlass had been broken he continued his bloody work with a carpenter's axe. For many years after the declaration of peace he remained a boatswain in the U. S. Navy.

The year following the declaration of peace was exceptionally cold, with frost in every month. It has often been referred to as the year without a summer. At this time this town furnished no less than fifty captains for the foreign trade of Boston, Salem, and Newburyport.

In 1817, William Hooper and others of the Cove were authorized to build a wharf or sea-wall from Crow Island into the sea. This structure yet remains; it was probably a break-water, under the protection of which the small vessels then engaged in the fisheries might discharge their catch. During this year the road to Essex was made. In the following year it was voted by the town to join the middle district in building a school-house, "the town to build one-half of the house, and become proprietors of the lower part, exclusive of furnishing the inside of the district room." This is the old building on School street, now used for the Public Library and engine house.

At a town meeting in 1818 it was voted to sell the corner seats in the meeting-house and invest the proceeds in a "stove, and set the same in the meeting-house." Later in the day it was voted to reconsider the above vote, and expend the money arising from the sale of the seats in the town and school-house.





In 1820 the town voted to furnish a room in the lower part of the school-house for the selectmen's office.

On the twelfth of September of this year Rev. Samuel M. Emerson was installed as pastor of the Congregational Church. He was a graduate of Williams College.

In 1821 the town voted to authorize the selectmen to purchase a stove for the meeting-house.

The early meeting-houses of our hardy ancestors were not built with reference to heating them. They had neither chimneys nor stoves; how the men, women and children could endure to sit on the hard board seats, where the temperature was the same as that which raged and howled over the snow and ice without, and listen to the long services of the period, can only be explained by a much greater degree of zeal and endurance than is possessed by their descendants. Judge Sewall tells in his diary of a certain day in Boston, in 1686. "This day was so cold that the sacramental bread is frozen pretty hard, and rattles sadly as broken into the plates." The people not only endured it, but stoutly resisted any measure that would lessen the frigid temperature of their places of worship. But very few stoves were used in the churches of New England before 1750, and in most places the movement towards greater comfort was successfully opposed until after 1800.

In Manchester the first action in that direction was in 1818, when the town voted to sell some corner seats in the meeting-house and buy a stove, but later in the day the opposition was aroused, and the vote was reconsidered. In 1821 the attempt was made again, and the stove was purchased. We are told the arguments against it were the questionable effect on the health of the congregation, and the belief that the young would be made puny and effeminate.

This original stove was used for many years. It was a heavy cast-iron box, and absurdly small for the large space it, was expected to warm. It stood in front of the pulpit, and was connected with the chimney at the opposite end of the church by a long pipe over the central aisle.

The first cold Sunday after it had been placed in position, the people all went to meeting fully prepared to watch the result of the experiment. Many felt it uncomfortably warm; and two young women were so overcome by the "baked air" they fainted, and were taken to the vestibule where the atmosphere was of a better quality. But the next day it was learned, the wood for the stove had not been received, and no fire had been made; this proved a fatal blow to the opposition, and but little was said upon the subject afterwards.

Many ladies used foot-stoves; these were tin boxes in wooden frames, in which, a dish of hard wood-coals was placed just before leaving home; but long before the close of the service they were always quite cold.

In 1822 the School and Town-House was finished, and a bell was purchased and placed in the cupola. This bell deserves a moment's notice. As a vessel in Gloucester Harbor was raising her anchor, this was found on one of the flukes. It evidently had been a ship's bell, and was believed to have been of Spanish origin. As no record or tradition existed of any vessel having been lost in that part of the harbor, it was thought to have been of great antiquity, and perhaps it had lain beneath the sea,—long before the advent of English adventurers.

When the building was no longer needed for educational purposes, the bell was exchanged for a larger one that calls the scholars to the High and Grammar Schools. The old bell, with its long service and mysterious history, should have been preserved.

Before a family took possession of a new house, it was thought necessary to invite the minister and the people, and with prayers and appropriate addresses, dedicate the house. The services concluded, a lunch, with a bountiful supply of stimulants ended the ceremony. This ancient custom was not discontinued until about this time.

The raising of the frame of a house, or barn, or the launching of a vessel, was an occasion for a general frolic; some eating, and a great deal of drinking.

In 1823 Capt. William Babcock was murdered at sea by pirates who attempted to take his vessel.

In 1825 John P. Allen was granted the privilege of setting a mill for sawing mahogany on the site of the old "Grist Mill," and on the following year the town voted thirty-seven dollars for the "Singing Society."

A hearse was purchased; before this the dead were borne to the grave on a bier carried by four men, hence the name of "bearers."

And once more the town voted against the division of Essex County.

On the 4th of July, 1826, the fiftieth anniversary of American Independence was celebrated; an artillery company from Gloucester took part in the parade and fired the customary salutes from the common. A conspicuous feature of the procession was a company of "twenty-four veterans of the Revolution," who marched in their service-worn uniforms with a banner, on which was inscribed "76." An oration was delivered in the church by Tyler Parsons, and a dinner was served in the town hall, where patriotic speeches and toasts closed the observances of the day.

In 1828 Lieutenant Henry Ward, U. S. N., while journeying with his wife, feeling unwell alighted from his carriage and sat by the road-side in the shade of an oak, where he died. A hewn stone on the southern side of the road beyond the "Crescent House," marks the spot.

This year the town purchased the first fire engine and twelve pairs of leather buckets, and the first engine company was organized.

In 1829 Mr. John Price, who had taught for one





season at West Manchester, took charge of the Central School; this had not been satisfactorily conducted, but under Mr. Price's management it soon attained a much better position than it had ever before occupied. From this time a very marked improvement in the educational system of the town may be dated; his influence was felt in every school; the rod was less used, reason and a system of rewards took its place, and far better discipline and greater progress was the result.

He continued in the public schools until 1834, when he became a teacher in the Franklin School, of Salem. He returned in 1836, and opened an academy, which proved very successful; not only were the seats sought for by the youth of the town, but from other towns and States, and from the West Indies. For twenty-one consecutive years he continued this academy, when he spent a year of rest in Cuba, and returning reopened his school and continued in his chosen profession until he had completed forty-two years of teaching in Manchester.

At one time, when he was the teacher of the Central School, his scholars numbered one hundred and five. At that time penmanship was an important branch of study, and all the copies were written by the teacher, who also made and repaired all the quill pens used. A man who can look back to an educational record of forty-two years has not lived in vain.

Mr. Price was born in Tamworth, N. H., in 1808, and is yet vigorous.

In 1830 there was reported to be 150 acres of tillage, 500 acres English upland, 1550 acres of pasture, 75 of meadow, 50 salt marsh, 1256 woodland, 50 acres unimproved, 281 unimprovable land. Population 1236.

In 1833 the stone wall was built along the Summer Street side of the burial-ground, and one hundred and fifty dollars appropriated for the same.

In December, 1834, Jonathan Lull, Benjamin Jones and Asa Woodbury sailed from Salem. A violent storm raged along the coast that day, and the vessel foundered at sea.

The steeple of the Congregational Church was damaged by lightning.

In 1835 the town petitioned Congress for the removal of a pile of rocks in the harbor known as "B. Bell rocks." They were soon after removed.

1835. The fishing and coasting trade employs about twelve hundred tons. Formerly the town was much more actively engaged in the fisheries, but for the last ten years the business has gradually diminished; but few vessels are now being built for that trade. Most of the youths were formerly trained to the sea, either in the fishing trade or in foreign commerce.

In 1816 there were fifty commanders of vessels in foreign commerce belonging to this town. At this period there are not twenty. The furniture business

is fast taking the place of nautical pursuits. This trade employs over two hundred men, and has given a stimulus to the activity of the town unequalled in any former period. Two packets are kept constantly employed freighting the furniture to Boston, whence it is shipped to the more distant markets. The sales for the present year are sixty thousand dollars. The estimated valuation \$356,674.82.

There are three grist-mills, three lumber-mills, one mahogany veneering-mill, one bakery, twelve carpenters, one cooper's shop, one wheelwright, three painters, one tailor, one brick-yard, six shoemakers' shops, two blacksmiths, one manufacturer of ship steering wheels, ten furniture shops and one tannery, and the following farm products and stock: 2500 bushels of corn, 450 bushels of barley, 290 tons of English hay, 160 cows, 60 oxen, 40 tons of salt hay, 28 horses, 59 swine, 35 tons of fresh meadow hay.

This year, Dr. Ezekiel Wallis Leach completed his history of the town. Many years ago, the doctor finding our early records in a lamentably defective condition, and feeling that no time should be lost, set himself at work connecting the missing links. For years he made it a labor of love, and succeeded in collecting from various sources a large amount of valuable historical matter bearing on our early history; he presented a manuscript copy to the town. And for greater security against probable loss, he prepared a revised copy, which he deposited with the Massachusetts Historical Society, in Boston.

In this Dr. Leach has rendered the town an invaluable service, and it is to be hoped that some measures will be adopted for its completion and publication.

Through the courtesy of the above named society we were granted every facility for a study of this manuscript, and much of the material in those pages was gathered from it.

A high school, where the ancient languages were taught, was opened by William Long. This excellent school was kept in the building afterwards remodeled into a parsonage for the Congregational Church.

It is often pleasant to know the age of trees.

The first shade trees planted on Central Street, was in 1835, when Col. Eben Tappan set the elms in front of his residence.

Those on the Deacon Enoch Allen estate, were planted in the following year.

The large elm in front of the "Gentles" home on School Street, was planted about seventy-five years ago. And farther up on the same street opposite the "Butler" house is one that was planted by Ezekiel Leach in 1810.

In 1836 the brick house of George W. Marble on Bridge Street, was destroyed by fire. The weather was very cold, and the water so scarce, that engines were useless.



The great fire began on the morning of the 28th of August, 1836. In the *Salem Gazette* of August 30th, we find the following account of it:

"It is with the deepest regret we announce that the thriving village of Manchester in our neighborhood, has experienced a severe calamity, in the destruction by fire of its principal business establishments, to which upwards of 100 industrious men have been thrown out of employment, and several worthy individuals have lost their all.

"About 2 o'clock on Sunday morning the Steam Veneering Mill of John P. Allen, situated near the centre of the village, was discovered to be on fire, and the flames spread with great rapidity, communicating immediately to the two cabinet shops, and the handsome dwelling-house and barn of that gentleman, and which were totally destroyed with their contents.

"Also the large cabinet manufactory of Mr. Larkin Woodbury which was destroyed. Part of the contents were saved in a damaged condition.

"Also the dwelling-house, barn and outbuildings of Dr. Asa Story which were destroyed.

"Also the dwelling-house and barn of Mr. Solomon Lee, an aged veteran of the Revolution; a total loss and no insurance.

"Also the house and shop of Mrs. Andrew Masters, and the stable and shed attached to the tavern of Nathaniel Colby, all of which were burnt.

"The loss sustained by Mr. Allen is very great, estimated from \$20,000 to \$30,000, but we are glad to learn he has considerable insurance. Besides his buildings, mahogany, tools, &c., all his valuable house furniture, a large number of mahogany logs, veneers, lumber and articles of new furniture were destroyed.

"A gentleman of this city, we learn, had \$1,000 worth of mahogany at this mill. Mr. Woodbury's loss is estimated at \$4,000; supposed to be insured. Both of these gentlemen were absent on a tour in the interior.

"Dr. Story's loss is about \$2,500; no insurance.

"Mr. Colby likewise had no insurance. When the fire was at its height it raged on both sides of the small stream, near which these establishments were situated, so that it was impossible to pass the bridge which crosses it. Owing to the dense fog the fire was not seen in this neighborhood, and it was not known until about 3 o'clock when the alarm was given, and one engine and many of our citizens proceeded to the scene of the conflagration."

Engines from Salem, Beverly, Gloucester, Essex, and Hamilton, were present and rendered most valuable assistance.

Soon after the town petitioned the County Commissioners for aid in building a stone bridge in place of that destroyed by the fire; and the present bridge was constructed, but of less width than now.

For a long time the only mementos of the original occupants of the soil, were the great heaps of shells by the water side, and several "mounds" which marked their resting places. One of them was to the southeast of the Congregational Church, on land then owned by Capt. Thomas Leach.

A much larger one was at the upper part of the Reservoir Pond, and was leveled by John Knight in 1836. This was where the Kelham & Fitz steam mill stands. It was more than one hundred and fifty feet in diameter, and some eight feet high; it was surrounded by a trench that was filled by the high tide. Great numbers of skeletons were found here in a sitting position, but the bones were as soft as the clay in which they were imbedded. No implements were found here.

In leveling the land for the "Union Cemetery" deposits of ashes and charred wood were found at a considerable depth, showing a long occupancy of the land.

In 1864, in a gravelly knoll to the south of this, four human skeletons were found lying side by side; and one was of unusual size; the skull rested on a plate of native copper some sixteen inches in diameter. The hair was still very black, and thirty inches long; here was also found an iron tomahawk, a knife blade, a pipe, some bone arrow heads, net sinkers, wooden ladles, and spoons, fishing lines of some fibrous material, and a kind of coarse cloth made of flags or rushes.

Thus, the lost traces are gone forever, and nothing remains to mark the former homes of that friendless race, whose footsteps, as they retreated westward from advancing civilization, were reddened by want and bloodshed.

The schooner "Vesper" of about sixty tons, owned by Jacob Cheever and his two sons, was lost in September, 1813. The "Vesper" had been spoken by a passing vessel. They had been very fortunate, were nearly loaded, and were to start homeward in a day or two.

Shortly after a severe gale came on, and it was supposed she sank at her anchors, or was run down by some other vessel.

The crew consisted of John Cheever, Capt. Rufus Cheever, his younger brother, Hilliard Moore, David Hall, Nathaniel Morgan, and Merritt Lennon. All but the second named were married.

These men were all valued citizens, and in the prime of life. They left five widows, each with one or more children. The waves closed over them, and no one could tell the story of their end.

On the 28th of February, 1811, the "Christian Church" was built on School Street, and Elam Burnham, of Essex, was the first pastor. It afterwards became the Baptist Church, and was very much enlarged and improved. It is forty-eight by sixty-four feet on the ground, is two stories high, and has a tower in which is a fine bell weighing twelve hundred pounds.

In 1837 the street was widened at the burnt district, and a "Suction Engine No. 2" was bought with the necessary hose and carriage for the same.

This engine was manufactured in the town by Colonel Eben Tappan, has been in use for fifty years and is yet a reliable and good machine.

1838. John and Henry Knight's bark mill and curry shop, containing two thousand dollars worth of leather was burned to the ground, February 1, 1838. The fire broke out at half past one o'clock at night. A barn filled with hay and bark, standing within six feet of the building burnt, was fortunately saved.

In 1839 the town received its proportion of the "Surplus Revenue," and voted to invest the same in the purchase of the "Poor Farm" at the Cove, at a cost of twenty-three hundred dollars: but few towns made so wise a disposition of their money,

In the following year the "Blooming Youth" and





the "Senator" were wrecked on Sable Island. After much suffering they reached the main land, and their homes.

September 18, Rev. Oliver A. Taylor was installed pastor of the First Congregational Church. He was a graduate of Union College.

The population is one thousand three hundred and fifty-five.

In 1844 a bounty of one dollar was offered by the town for destroying rattlesnakes. The woods in the eastern part of the town were much infested by these pests, and to the skill of one of her citizens the town is indebted for their total annihilation.

John D. Hildreth was long known as a remarkably successful hunter of these reptiles: he killed many and derived a considerable revenue from bounties, and from their oil which was highly prized as a remedy for rheumatism, and he also supplied living specimens for naturalists and showmen: upon the receipt of an order he would call his dog, shoulder a light pole, with a line and slip noose drawn through a hole at the end, and disappear in the woods: he took as many of these poles as he required in rattlesnakes. When his little dog announced the presence of one, he annoyed him with the pole until the angered reptile coiled and raised his head for a strike, then the noose encircled the neck, the cord was tightened, and his snakeship was soon dangling at the end of the stick. In that way he gathered them.

He had a theory, that they all collected in one place for the winter: and believing he knew where that place was, he resolved to bring about their extermination. After a snow had fallen, and they had become dormant in their headquarters, he built a fire on the ledge near the crevice which had been much worn by their passage in and out, for untold centuries.

When the rocks had become warmed, the unsuspecting reptiles crept forth to see how far spring had advanced, when the ever ready staff tossed them into the snow, where in a moment they became stiff and helpless; in this way, a large number was collected. Then he enlarged the fire and extended it across the entrance, so that none escaped. Not a snake of this kind has been seen in the town since Hildreth made war upon them. This public benefactor died in 1885.

In 1845 Richard H. Dana, the poet, being struck with the great beauty of the region about "Graves Beach," purchased some thirty acres and built a summer-house on the high bank overlooking the beach and the clear blue waters of the ocean. Here, away from the village and at some distance from the highway, the author of the "Buccaneer," lulled by the sound of the sea as it rolled upon the beach, found peaceful seclusion and rest. In speaking of this place, Charles Sumner pronounced it one of rare beauty, and much superior to the famous summer resort of Napoleon III.

Mr. Dana was the first of the summer residents to

purchase land in Manchester; he was the pioneer of that detachment of worthy gentlemen who with long purses invaded our shore, bought the old pastures and wrought marvelous changes in the landscape; they crowned the bald headlands with villas, civilized the briery thickets into grassy slopes, transformed the narrow cattle paths with carriage-drives, and beautified everything.

The change that three-score years has effected in the appearance of this town has been very marked. Then the fishing interest was at its height; it was the prominent industry; the streets were crooked and very narrow; many of the houses were innocent of paint, and frequently an old mast, a decrepid boat, or a net spread on the fence told the owner's occupation.

When cabinet-making became the occupation of the people, a decided change for the better took place. The streets were improved, the houses were painted and repaired, fences built, and shade trees were planted. An appearance of thrift became visible.

But as the town assumed prominence as a watering-place, the spirit of improvement which had made the shore so attractive, spread to the village, where streets were still more improved, new ones opened, residences beautified, and more trees and shrubs planted. The effect of a good example was to be seen everywhere, and Manchester became an attractive village.

In the early days the change in the occupation of the people was only from the sea to the land, but now the growing tendency towards the concentration of the trades in the great centres is fast taking from the towns all occupations, and their young people are forced to abandon their homes, the homes of their ancestors and seek employment among strangers; they feel they are being crowded from the fold. The change is an inevitable one, but it has its side of sadness.

This year the First Congregational Society purchased of the town, and of the proprietors, their interest in the old church. Capt. B. L. Allen presented a bell of twenty-two hundred pounds in exchange for the old one of three hundred.

This season there were thirteen vessels engaged in the cod and mackerel fisheries, and the value of their catch for the year ending April 1st, was \$21,435.

The railroad connection with Boston being completed, the cars began to make regular trips on the 2d of November, 1847. At that time the station was at the foot of the hill on Sea street; about five years afterwards it was moved to its present location.

The completion of this road added very materially to the prosperity of the town.

James Knowlton and others petition for the annexation of a part of Gloucester (Magnolia) to Manchester; the project was not favored by the people of the latter town.

1848. A high-school was established.



1849. This year was made notable by the immense emigration to the newly-discovered gold fields of California. The effect of this excitement upon the industrial and commercial interest of the county cannot be estimated; everywhere it was the absorbing theme of conversation, and all the marvelous stories from the diggings found ready believers, who abandoned their well-earned positions in banks, warehouses, counting-rooms, stores, shops, on farms, railroads and vessels, and hurried to the land of promise.

In this, as in all other excitements, Manchester had her full share. Every variety of business was neglected, and many of her citizens joined the multitude hurrying westward.

Some went by the treeless regions, and mountains of the Great West, where they trudged the dusty way for about two thousand miles.

Some by the hastily extemporized routes of the Isthmus, where they suffered from the effects of that baneful miasmatic climate.

A party of twelve purchased the schooner "Billow," of about one hundred tons, and fitted her for sea, at a cost of six thousand seven hundred and eighty-three dollars. Her cargo consisted of provisions and the material for a house. Thus equipped they joined the great fleet of gold hunters, who in crafts of every size and description, and under the flag of every nationality, sailed in search of the golden fleece.

The pecuniary successes were few, and disappointing, but the experience was valuable; and as a lesson in the geography of the continent, it was perhaps of still greater value.

On the 16th of May, 1849, Ebenezer Tappan died, at the age of eighty-seven years and ten months. He was the last survivor of the soldiers of the Revolution from this town.

In 1850 the population was 1604.

Rev. Oliver A. Taylor died on the 18th of December, 1851. He was well known as a scholar and a writer on religious subjects.

The stone bridge on School Street was built.

During the following year the railroad station was moved from Sea Street to its present location, and the street opened from it to Union Street.

In 1852 Rev. Rufus Taylor was ordained as pastor of the First Congregational church.

At a very early period the people of Manchester took a very decided stand in opposition to slavery. As early as 1775 the subject was agitated from the platform, and subsequently the free soil party became a large and controlling organization, and any measure that tended to promote the interest of slavery at the expense of human liberty, was always stoutly opposed. An example of this occurred in 1853, when at the town-meeting the following resolution was adopted:

"Whereas, The action of the United States Senate, in the introduction and passage of the Nebraska bill, which contains a provision for the repeal of the Missouri Compromise (by the terms of which slavery or

involuntary servitude was forever excluded from all the vast territory acquired by purchase of France) thereby prostituting the patrimony of Freedom to the detestable purposes of slavery;

"Therefore Resolved, That we view with alarm and indignation, this attempt of the slave power to enlarge the area of slavery, by the violation of compacts and its impingement on the rights of man.

"2d, Resolved, That we hold the Representatives of the North, who may vote for the violation of the Missouri Compromise, as false to the glorious cause of Freedom and recreant to the dictates of Humanity.

"3d, Resolved, That the Town Clerk be instructed to forward a copy of these Resolutions to our Representative in Congress, Charles W. Upham."

On the 9th of April, 1856, the old church built in 1809 having been remodeled and modernized was rededicated.

The town made an appropriation for planting trees about the school-houses.

On the 11th of September the Free Soil party of the county held a "mass convention in Manchester," in the interest of John C. Fremont, as candidate for the President of the United States. The gathering was held at Gale's Point, and not less than ten thousand sons and daughters of old Essex were present. Mammoth tents were erected on the grassy slope, and in their shelter eloquent addresses were delivered by Gov. Kent, of Maine, Henry Wilson, George W. Curtis, Richard H. Dana, Jr., Moses Kimball and others.

In 1858 Rev. Francis V. Tenney was ordained as the pastor of the Second Congregational church, August 15th. And during the same year Rev. George E. Freeman was installed as pastor of the First Congregational church.

In 1860 the population was 1698.

In 1862 Rev. Edward P. Tenney commenced his labors as pastor of the First Congregational church on the 3d of November.

In the town records we find the following:

"MANCHESTER, 1865.

"Monday, April 3d, of this year, was a day of great rejoicing. In the morning we heard our army had achieved a great victory over the enemy, but none of us dared to believe Richmond would fall soon, if at all. So in the afternoon when the dispatch announcing the occupation of Richmond by our forces was received, the people manifested their joy by triumphant shouts, excited congratulations and the ringing of bells. So long had we toiled for this event and so long had our hopes been deferred, our faith had grown weak, but now great joy fell upon us and we celebrated.

"April 10th, 1865."

One week later and we are the recipients of still greater and more glorious news: "Lee and his whole army have surrendered!!"

Such was the jubilant shout which went forth in the early morning, and the people heard wonderingly. As if moved by a spontaneous impulse the excitement and the enthusiasm of the town was immediate and intense.

Prompt action followed by the choice of a committee of arrangements under whose direction the event was celebrated.

April 11, 1865, was a day of rejoicing, for an account of which we copy the following from the *Salem Register*:





"Yesterday was a day long to be remembered. At an early hour we were aroused by the ringing of bells and the glad shout, 'Lee and his whole army have surrendered!'

"Col. F. R. Tannatt and Lewis N. Tappan had made haste to ride from your city with the joyful tidings. The people of the town were soon astir, flags were unfurled and flung to the breeze, drums and fife brought out, a procession formed and marched to the depot, where short speeches for the occasion were made by Rev. E. P. Tenney and Mr. Thayer, author of the "Bobbin Boy." Those speakers leaving in the early train, the procession returned to the common where a stage was erected at the foot of the flag-staff, from which Rev. F. V. Tenney read the despatch announcing the surrender of Lee.

"Several citizens addressed the people, setting forth in befitting terms the glories of the day. Col. Tannatt and Mr. Tappan also favored us with remarks pertinent to the glorious realities of the occasion.

"Loud and repeated cheers were given for the speakers, President Lincoln, his generals and the heroic soldiers of the army. "America," "Hail to the Flag, Boys," and "John Brown" were sung with thrilling effect. Allusions were made by most of the speakers to that "monster sin" which had well-nigh been our ruin. One of them was pleased to read an extract from "Helper's Impending Crisis," the same being a warning found in Jeremiah, 34:17, verse. To make his point stronger the speaker read the following extract from a letter written in May, 1847, by a former clergyman of this town (Rev. O. A. Taylor) while journeying in the border States:

"Slavery must and will be destroyed. It is inconsistent with the spirit of our institutions. Freedom flows upon it from every quarter of our land. The world is against it. God's curse rests upon it. If let alone it will sooner or later poison itself to death, as do some serpents, under the very malignancy of their own venom."

"The speaker had carried this prophecy in his pocket for eighteen years, and for the most part of the time, with but faint hopes of ever witnessing its fulfillment, but to-day he was glad, and thought the prophecy of an orthodox clergyman equal to that of Jeremiah. After other congratulatory exercises the procession re-formed and marched through different sections of the town.

"In the afternoon the fire department turned out and with the citizens escorted four wounded soldiers, three of whom had lost a leg and one an arm, through the principal streets amid the waving of flags and the ringing of bells. Notwithstanding the rain the enthusiasm was unabated, and at an early hour in the evening the Baptist Church was filled with joyous people of both sexes.

"John Lee was elected as the presiding officer and Rev. F. V. Tenney invoked divine blessing. The exercises were all of a very interesting character, consisting of singing by the choirs of the several religious societies, joined in part by the assembly, and of congratulatory addresses from the several clergymen of the town, and from other citizens, intermingled with cheers for the different speakers and of the great successes we celebrated—not forgetting the brave boys now absent and the equally deserving who have returned, nor the 29 of our *heroic dead*, 5 of whom died on the *glorious battle*, 3 in *rebel prisons*, and the rest in hospitals or at home. Tears were in many eyes in memory of those departed heroes.

"A collection for the Christian Commission was taken up. Altogether it was a day of jubilee, and one we may all rejoice to have been permitted to see.

L. R. N."

But on Saturday, April 15th, the great heart of the people so recently gladdened, is plunged into the deepest grief. From the town records we copy the following:

"The President is shot, and soon, ere we could comprehend or believe the first despatch, another said, 'Our beloved President, Abraham Lincoln, is Dead.'

"No words can describe the feeling of *surprise, grief, indignation and horror* which seized upon every one. All business was suspended. Funeral services were held in the Congregational Church, opened by the reading of the scriptures by Rev. F. V. Tenney, followed by an address by Rev. E. P. Tenney. Chastened and subdued by the solemn lessons of the hour, the people slowly dispersed to their homes."

In the War of the Rebellion, as in earlier conflicts, Manchester bore her part faithfully. The people readily responded to the calls of the President for men, and cheerfully raised their proportion of the money to sustain the government.

The town sent to the field one hundred and fifty-nine men; of that number no less than one hundred and fifty-three were *her own citizens*.

More than twenty natives of the town, but residing in other parts of the State, were actively engaged in the war; one a lieutenant-colonel, and one a captain. Of this number eight died in the service, and three perished in rebel prisons.

The whole amount of money paid by the town for bounties, and recruiting expenses was seven thousand eight hundred and eighty-five dollars. The amount of aid furnished to soldiers' families during the war was seventeen thousand four hundred and ninety-eight dollars.

Much of this has been reimbursed by the State, but the increase of the town's debt, by reason of the war, is ten thousand dollars.

The Manchester Lyceum library established with two hundred volumes, which was increased to four hundred volumes in 1835. This library, from a peculiar feature of its organization, viz.: Membership for one year, by paying a fee of fifty cents without becoming a permanent proprietor, caused its continuance up to 1871, when it was merged in the "Manchester Public Library."

From the trustees' report for the year ending March 1, 1887, we find the library contains over four thousand seven hundred volumes; and the circulation has reached eleven thousand one hundred and forty-three volumes, an increase of two thousand eight hundred and fifty-one over that of the previous year.

Doubtless this is largely due to the greater demand for books from the summer visitors.

In 1871 the Rust and Marshall mill was destroyed by fire. This mill stood on the site of the old "venering mill."

In 1873 the town purchased the site and the pond for a "reservoir" for fire purposes; there is always an abundant supply of water, and convenient to the thickly settled parts of the town.

Beach Street was opened.

The Catholic Church was built in 1873. It is a very neat, well-built structure on School Street. It is fifty by thirty-eight feet, and is very complete in all its appointments.

In 1875 T. Jefferson Coolidge, a wealthy and public-spirited summer resident, presented to the Public Library a complete set (twenty-one volumes) of the "Encyclopædia Britannica," a very generous and welcome addition to our excellent collection of books.

The winter of this year was very cold; the harbor was frozen so that parties on February 18th, walked to "Half Tide Rock," and from "West Beach" to "Misery Island."

In 1875 Julius F. Peabody, then postmaster, began the publication of a monthly journal called the *Beetle and Wedge*. This was the first paper ever started in the town. It was ably conducted, and in every respect highly creditable to the publisher, and





to the town. After about three years it was discontinued. It should have been a permanent publication.

On the 19th of June, 1876, it being the one hundredth anniversary of our National Independence, the people were called together by the peal of the church bells, and on the common within a few feet of where in early times stood the stocks and the whipping-post. A beautiful elm taken from the grounds of Lewis N. Tappan was replaced in the soil as the "Children's Centennial tree." It was planted with appropriate speeches, recitations, singing by the school children and by the grand old anthem of "America," in which all joined; it was thus consecrated to liberty. In the words of the "BEETLE AND WEDGE":

"May the tree live and may the future generations gather in its shade, a free and happy people; and as they shall weigh the purposes and deeds, the trials, successes and shortcomings of their fathers, with the light they will possess, may they not halt, but keep on the progressive march and look higher and higher to a still nobler sphere."

John Baker also planted one at the junction of School Street and the Essex Road; Captain John Carter, one at the town's landing; Dr. Priest set a rock maple on the common; and John Knight set a long row of Norway pines on the northern side of the "reservoir pond," and many others were set in various parts of the town.

The "Masconomo House" was built in 1878. This delightfully situated and very popular hotel, has from the first been a favorite resort of the pleasure-seekers.

In front lies "the Singing Beach," where surf bathing may at all times be indulged in with safety; beyond the boundless sea invites the yachtsmen; while in the rear, the bay and land-locked harbor allure the less skilled with smoother seas; and the many drives over unsurpassed roads among the primitive woods with ever-changing undergrowth are among the attractions to be found in this quiet and healthful retreat.

At the suggestion of Mrs. Alice N. Lincoln, the seashore residents of Manchester and Beverly contributed thirty-five hundred dollars for the purchase of a strip of the woodland seven rods wide on each side of the highway leading to Essex. The first purchase was made in the spring of 1879, and was followed during successive years by that of other lands, and several gifts of woodlands were received from residents of the town of Manchester, who owned lots bordering upon the road; until now the reservation extends with but few interruptions through the beautifully shaded part of the County Road known as the "Essex Woods." As a result of these purchases, many of the finest oaks and hemlocks in the vicinity have been preserved, and a beautiful shady drive has been secured through this lovely region.

At the desire of the trustees of the fund (Colonel Henry Lee and T. Jefferson Coolidge) the lands purchased in the township of Manchester were offered and very generously accepted by the town, to be held "for the public use and benefit of its inhabitants, for

the purposes of a public forest or woods, as an ornament of the town and for promoting the comfort and health of the inhabitants forever."

The Rev. Mr. Tenney, in his "Coronation," says of these woods, "a favorite drive for the lovers of Cape Ann scenery lies in this famous forest. The thick undergrowth, rough boulders, high ledges, swamp lands and brooks give a constant charm, which is heightened by the varying colors of different seasons, the changing light of morning and evening, the shade at noon, or quiet hours under the high moon near midnight."

Reaching out from this roadway are the paths of the wood-cutters; and if the pleasure-seekers, who roll along this hard way with their fine carriages would tie up and strike off into the timber and walk a score of miles, as they easily may do without seeing a human face or crossing a high road, they will know that the woods as well as the sea conspire to make Manchester the most delightful resort on the whole New England coast.

John Lee died July 9th, 1879. This gentleman had been identified with the affairs of the town for an unusually long time. At different periods he had served on the board of selectmen for twenty-five years; and for a considerable portion of that time he was the town clerk.

He represented the town in the Legislatures of 1846, '47, '48 and '68.

When the publication of the "Beetle and Wedge" began, he gave additional interest to its columns by a series of valuable articles on the "History of Manchester," but unhappily they were not concluded when the publication of the paper ceased.

He was buried from the town hall, where appropriate remarks were made by Rev. Mr. Gleason, Major Russell Sturgis, Jr., Albert E. Low, Rev. Dr. Bartol, James T. Field and Rev. Mr. Emery.

He was sixty-five years old.

On the 25th of February, 1880, Lewis N. Tappan died in Leadville, Colorado. He was always interested in any measure which advanced the interests of the town; and while a citizen of the west he proved a worthy representative of the "liberty-loving" people among whom he had been reared, as will be seen by the following sketch from the columns of the *Boston Journal*:

"In 1857 he went to Kansas, and was elected Secretary of the Senate under the Topeka Constitution. He was one of the 'Fort Scott Treaty' Commissioners, and also one of the fifteen armed men who went from Lawrence to Leecompton and captured the cattle box containing the altered election returns upon the adoption or rejection of the Leecompton Constitution. The premature discovery of these election returns, which were found buried under a wood-pile, caused the immediate destruction of the Proslavery party, and made Kansas a free State. In 1859 Mr. Tappan joined the Colorado pioneers, was a member of the first City Government at Denver, was active in raising and sustaining the Colorado Volunteers until reorganized by the General Government, was a member of Gov. Gilpin's Council, and one of Gov. Cummings' staff officers."

He represented the town in the Legislature of 1877.



Hooded in his forty-ninth year, and was buried with his ancestors in the old grave-yard.

In 1884 an important addition was made to the pleasure drives by the widening of the old road to White Beach; and making a new one along White and Black Beaches to the county road.

On the 12th of February, 1886, a very heavy rain fell, when the earth was thickly coated with ice, and that quiet stream called "Saw Mill Brook," for the first time since the settlement of the town, overflowed its limits, and became riotous, overleaping the bridge on School Street, and doing no little damage in that neighborhood; and on Central Street, from the "Seaside" engine-house to the foot of the hill, it was navigable for boats, and the base of "Powder-house Hill" formed the northern limit of the harbor.

A great improvement in the highways at West Manchester was made by the widening of Harbor and Bridge Streets at either junction.

## CHAPTER CIII.

### MANCHESTER—(Continued).

*Church History—The Parsonages—The Tithingmen—"Staying over"—Grave-yards.*

**CHURCH HISTORY.**—That the planters at Jeffrey's Creek had the Gospel preached to them at a very early date there can be no doubt. Tradition says the first meeting for public worship was held beneath the branches of a tree at "Gales Point," near the site of an ancient wharf that is yet visible; but the name of the preacher, about whom that little band of hardy men collected, has not been preserved.

Unfortunately there are no records of the churches' infancy save the few entries found in the town books. In Dr. E. W. Leach's history he has preserved an original note by Rev. Amos Cheever, dated November 29, 1726, in which are the names of thirteen who had preceded him in the ministry at Manchester. The following is the list: Jenners, Smith, Stow, Dunham, Millet, Hawthorn, Jones, Winborn, Hubbard, Emerson, Goodhue, Eveleth and Webster; it is accompanied by no explanation, and it may be but a memorandum of names without reference to their order. At that early period it certainly would have been easy for him to have collected reliable information on the subject if he had wished, for it is quite possible some of the older people of the settlement may have had personal knowledge of every name desired. That the list is defective is evident from the entire omission of the name of Marsterson. All things considered, we think we are safe in following Mr. Cheever's list until we reach the records, and to them we shall give preference.

The only mention we have of Rev. Thomas

Jenners, is that he was admitted freeman in 1636, and preached at Weymouth, and other places, and finally resided in Charlestown, where he died.

The second is Rev. Ralph Smith. He came to the country with Higginson, in 1629. A letter of the company to Mr. Endicott brought by the ship in which he took passage thus speaks of him.

"Mr. Ralph Smith, a minister has desired a passage in one of our ships, which was granted him before we understood of his difference in judgements, in some things from our ministers, but his provisions for his voyage being shipped before notice was taken thereof, through many occasions wherewith those entrusted with this business have been employed, and for as much as it is to be feared there may grow some distractions among you, if there should be any syding, though we may have a very good opinion of his honestie, yet we shall not . . . hope offend in charitie to fear the worst that may grow from their different judgements. We have therefore thought fit to give you this order, that unless he be comfortable to our government you suffer him not to remain within the limit of our grant."

His stay in Salem was brief, and he went to Nantucket, where he was found in 1639, "in a poor house that would not keep him dry, and desiring a better residence."

The people of Plymouth invited him to become their pastor, and with them he continued until 1635, when he left them as the Plymouth record states "on account of his own disinclination to stay, because of its irksom duties." "He is called a man of low gifts and parts." In 1647, his name appears among the members of the Salem Church. He remained here till about 1650, when he removed to Boston where he died.

It is said "he wanted candor, prudence and experience, and resembled his predecessors in Plymouth, in nothing except he was of the strictest sect of the Puritans. He was zealous and imprudent; his zeal was that ebullition of temper, which has done so much mischief in society, as well as caused great confusion in the church." Mr. Smith soon laid down his office at Plymouth, and this reflection was made. "Many times the total vacancy of an office is easier to be borne, than the under performance of it."

Mr. Smith was supported by a weekly contribution. Winthrop in his journal says: "On the 5th, 9th mo. 1645, the village at Jefferey's neck was incorporated and called Manchester. Not being in a church state, they have procured Mr. Smith, sometime minister at Plymouth, to preach to them."

The third and fourth preachers mentioned by Cheever are Stow and Dunham; of these we find no mention. It is probable they supplied for a brief period, and resided elsewhere.

In the town record, we find in about 1650, Nathaniel Marsterson, who was a minister, "was granted free seed for his cattle and timber to build him a





house." In 1654 he sold his house, and removed to Beverly. In 1660 he was appointed to office in Maine.

His descendants lived for many generations in Manchester, having changed their names to Martsters.

Although his name does not appear in Mr. Cheever's list, we feel justified in considering him as one of the early preachers in the town.

Thomas Millet's name is found in the Cheever list, and frequently in the records of the town. This name is affixed as a witness to the deed of the Martsterson house and land in 1654. The town granted him the use of the parsonage land. A swamp and wood lot has ever since borne his name. In 1655 he was married by Mr. Endicott, to a daughter of Sylvester Everleth; in 1660 he removed to Gloucester.

Mr. Millet probably dwelt in that town during his occasional preaching in Manchester. He died in 1707.

Mr. Cheever places Messrs. Hawthorn and Jones next to Millet. These gentlemen probably supplied occasionally, but resided in some neighboring town.

The next minister of whom we find record is John Winborn, who came in 1667. Of his early history but little is known. He was in Malden in 1667, where he married Mary Hart. His salary here was £27 with his fire wood and the use of the parsonage land. His residence here was far from a peaceful one. Continued difficulties existed which were often brought before the town. At length the patience of the people was exhausted, and in 1686 the following vote was passed: "that he forth with provide for himself and family some other place." This difficulty was adjusted, and he remained till 1689. In 1690 a town-meeting was called "to treat with Mr. Winborn about matters in controversy between the town and Mr. W. with respect to land or money, or monies, which he do or might challenge or lay claim to as his due, the same Winborn having desired this meeting to be called." A committee was appointed to examine his claim, either by gift or contract during his abode as minister in the town. Mr. Winborn claimed the Millet lot, which the town refused; the difficulty was settled by the town paying him £5 10s. 6d. He died in 1707.

In 1689 Rev. John Everleth was invited to preach as a candidate for settlement at ten shillings per Sabbath. In September he engaged to preach for them at £23 per year. His answer to the invitation is as follows: "In testimony of the conditions above written, promising the utmost fidelity in carrying out the work of the ministry of the Gospel, as above said, God enabling me, I do subscribe

"JOHN EVERLETH."

At the same town-meeting it was voted to give Sergt. Sibley three shillings per day for entertaining the minister, "diet and lodging."

In 1690 the town agreed with Mr. Everleth for the same salary, "quality and quantity," and in addition a contribution was to be taken up every Sabbath, and a vote was passed that what money the inhabitants see cause to give from time to time, towards Mr. Everleth's support shall be wrapped in a paper with the name of the contributor upon it; and whoever shall contribute without this superscription, it shall be counted as strangers' money.

February 3d, the town granted that a parcel of land called Millet's swamp, being six acres, "for the use, benefit and support" of the ministry forever.

At Mr. Everleth's request his salary was increased to £35, to be paid quarterly.

In October, 1693, a town-meeting was called

"To consider some effectual way for the encouragement and settling a minister in our town. Mr. John Everleth, whom we have already had experience of his preaching among us, and knowing it is our duty to do our utmost endeavor for the obtaining and maintaining the ministry of the gospel among us, consequences that may follow, if we neglect our duty here in, and so to detract of such means as God has ordained for the eternal salvation of immortal souls, of which we have remarkable instances in the Scriptures, which are written for man's instruction, viz: in the 2d book of Chronicles, chap. 1, verse 3-5, and in Proverbs 29 chap. 18 verse.

"Contrary wise, where duty is attended to in this great and momentous work, as we read in 2d Chronicles 21st chapter both verse; also in Corinthians.

"Do ye not know that they which minister about holy things live of the things of the word, and they that wait at the altar are partakers at the altar. God has ordained that they which preach the gospel, should live by the gospel.

"Under these and like considerations it was voted and fully agreed by the town on the above written.

"First, to pay Mr. Everleth the sum of £35 per annum for his yearly salary, to be paid quarterly in equal proportions, the first year to begin on the first day of next month, so long as he doth continue among us in the work of the ministry of the gospel according to the rule of the holy scriptures.

"Secondly, The said Everleth shall have the possession and the improvement of the parsonage house for his own proper use and benefit, with all the land and meadow belonging thereto, as already departed by said town for the use of the ministry, together with Millet's swamp.

"To hold the aforesaid premises during his abode as minister among us, and the town agree to fit the house, for his convenience, and build him a barn 15 ft in length, by 16 ft in width."

Mr. Everleth would not consent to settle, but he continued as minister until August 17, 1695, when he accepted an invitation to preach at Enfield, Mass.

He was a son of Sylvester Everleth, of Gloucester. Graduated at Harvard College 1689. He was highly respected while in this town. In 1695 he preached at Enfield. In 1700 he was settled at Stow, and left in 1716. In 1719 he was installed at Kennebeckport, Me., and resigned in 1729, on account of the infirmities of age. He is represented by the historian of Kennebunk as having been their "minister and school-master, a good blacksmith and farmer, and the best fisherman in the town." This dismission must have been regretted by his parishioners.

After the departure of Mr. Everleth several were invited to settle, among whom was the Rev. Edward Thompson, of Newbury, who it may be inferred accepted, for it is recorded the town ordered £6 to defray the charges of removing his family to Manches-



ter; but he did not preach, and a committee was appointed to procure a minister.

They obtained Rev. John Emerson, who settled with them for a few years at a salary of forty-five pounds per annum, with the use of the parsonage, land, etc. He was the son of the Rev. John Emerson, of Gloucester, graduated at Harvard College in 1689.

In 1697 his salary was increased to forty-eight pounds, and a contribution to be taken four times a year, viz., the last Sabbath of every quarter, which was to be accounted for by the selectmen. In 1698 he resigned, and in 1703 accepted a call from New Castle, N. H. In 1712 he left that place, and was installed over the Second Church in Portsmouth.

For the benefit of his health he visited Europe, and was favorably received by Queen Anne, of England. On his return he preached at Portsmouth and wrote the lives of the apostles, which were never published. He was spoken of as a faithful and eminent preacher of the Gospel.

In 1698 the Rev. Nicholas Webster was settled at a salary of fifty-eight pounds per annum. He was the first to occupy the new parsonage, afterwards given to Rev. Amos Cheever. In 1700 he was invited to remain permanently, but he was unwilling to do so, but continued as their pastor, with an increased salary of seventy-two pounds, until 1715. He was the son of Dr. Webster, of Gloucester, was born in 1673, graduated at Harvard College 1695, and died in Gloucester in 1717.

But little is known of him, but there is a tradition that he was a very useful minister.

A town-meeting was called on the 5th of December, 1715, to take measures to settle a minister, and a committee was chosen, consisting of the selectmen, Robert Leach, Sr., Samuel Lee, Sr., Aaron Bennett, William Hilton, John Bishop, Benjamin Allen, Thomas Pitman, Samuel Leach, John Foster, John Lee, Jr., and Nathaniel Marsters, who were to consult with the pastors of the neighboring churches on the subject. A day of fasting and prayer was appointed to seek the favor of God on ourselves and on our children, and to pray unto him that he would send forth a faithful laborer unto this little part of his vineyard.

Rev. Mr. Gerrish, of Wenham; Rev. Thomas Blower, of Beverly; Rev. Mr. Wise and Rev. Mr. White, were invited to aid in the services. The committee agreed with Rev. Amos Cheever to become their pastor, and on the 12th of March, 1716, they report as follows:

"We, whose names are herunto subscribed, being a committee chosen and empowered by the town of Manchester to agree with and covenant in the said town's behalf with the Rev. Amos Cheever, and to offer and to confirm unto him what may be needful for the encouragement of the said Cheever, to enable him with comfort and cheerfulness to carry on the work of the Gospel among us, to which work of labor he has already in legal town-meeting been unanimously called, although the minutes of the said vote is lost, or from some inadvertency was not inscribed on the town records.

"Now being sensible that it is our bounden duty, and being commanded by the Gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ, that we who are taught should contribute to him who teaches us in all good things, we do give, grant, make over, and fully and freely and absolutely forever contain unto the said Amos Cheever, his heirs, executors and assigns, the town's parsonage house, wherein Mr. Webster lived, and a piece of land on part of which the house stands, reputed to be an acre and a half, with the barn, fences, trees, and all the appurtenances and privileges, to have and to hold without let or molestation from any of the inhabitants of said town forever, to be his and his heirs' in fee simple, on his declaration of his acceptance of our offer for a settlement among us, and we will give him a legal conveyance thereof. We engage to pay him annually, in sickness and in health, during the whole term of his being our minister, or holding pastoral relations with the church, the sum of £70, New England currency, per annum, which salary to commence on the first of June. Also to give him the whole of the money of a free and generous contribution, to be upheld by us weekly on every Sabbath. We grant him the sole improvement of all the land or marsh that is or shall be deemed minister's land. Also to give him annually sufficient and good firewood for his family, and for neglect of this we will pay him £10 in current money in lieu thereof. Like wise we do covenant that when it shall please God to increase our numbers to 80 families, we will add to his salary the sum of £10, and we shall give him £10 when there shall be 100 families belonging to the town and congregation.

"In witness, &c., July 23d, 1716.

"JOHN FOSTER and others of the committee."

To which the following reply was received from Rev. Mr. Cheever:

"I do here my acceptance of the Manchester officers in order to a settlement among you, covenanting wh. you to do so, and accept ordination as soon as may be, whilst you are laboring to accomplish wh.—and I promise to live wh. you in y<sup>e</sup> labors of y<sup>e</sup> Gospel, whil I you continue in its faith and order, yielding to me all the honors y<sup>e</sup> Gospel demands from y<sup>e</sup> ambassadors of the glorious Lord. Brethren, pray for me Amen.

"AMOS CHEEVER."

Mr. Cheever was ordained October 4, 1716, and the church organized on the 7th of November following. They had communed with the church at Salem until 1677, when they were gathered in Beverly, with whom they met until October 20th of this year, when they were dismissed, "in order to their coming into a church state among themselves." The names of those dismissed were John Sibley and his wife, John Lee, Robert Leach, Samuel Stone, Samuel Lee, John Knowlton and children (John, Joseph and Abigail), Benjamin Allen, Joseph Allen and wife, James Baker and wife, Josiah Littlefield and Jonathan Allen.

The records of Mr. Cheever's ministry were lost for nearly one hundred years, when they were discovered among some old family papers by Rev. Mr. Harris, of Danvers, who married a daughter of Mr. Cheever, and who kindly forwarded them to the church. From these we make the following extracts:

"Nine males have signed the church covenant and ten females, with us, being in full communion with other churches.

"The holy ordinance of the Lord's Supper was first administered in Manchester January 6th, 1716-17; members admitted from Jan. 6, 1716, to Nov. 26, 1727, 15; recommended to communion before Nov. 26, 1727, 11; new members admitted in 12 months after the great earthquake Oct. 1727, 49; whole number admitted in full communion from Jan. 6, 1716, to April 3, 1743, 161; the number of marriages from Dec. 6, 1716, to December 16th, 1743, 106; Baptism of Adults and Infants from Jan. 6, 1716, to Feb. 12, 1743, 667."

BIRTHS		DEATHS	
1717	15	5	
1718	17	12	
1719	16	4	
1720	20	10	
1721	19	7	
1722	16	14	
1723	17	25	
1724	23	41	
1725	17	9	
		9	178
			97





This is an interesting statement as showing a most healthful preponderance of births over deaths.

The first deacon was Benjamin Allen, who was succeeded by Benjamin Lee in 1737.

On February 27, 1743, Mr. Cheever requested a dismission from his pastoral connections with the church at Manchester, which he had faithfully maintained for twenty-seven years. An ecclesiastical council was summoned and his desire complied with.

Mr. Cheever was the son of Rev. Samuel Cheever, of Marblehead, and grandson of the celebrated school-master, Ezekiel Cheever; he was born in 1686, graduated at Harvard College, 1707, and died in this town at the age of seventy. In 1717, he married Anne, the daughter of Rev. Joseph Gerrish, of Wrentham. She died in 1726. In 1732 he married Mary Saunders, of Boston. She died in 1734. In the year following he married Sarah Choate, of Ipswich, who died in 1750; he married again, in 1753, to Sarah Davis, of Gloucester, who survived him. He died January 15, 1756.

Of Mr. Cheever Dr. Leach, in his admirable history, says: "We are justified in recording his labors as a minister as faithful to the church, among the people, as highly useful. He came at a period when everything was to be done; when the condition of the society conspired to render these labors exceedingly arduous. A church was to be organized, disciplined, and a system of operations to be instituted among a people who, for seventy-six years, had had no other than the transient preaching of the Gospel, and among whom then existed a settled prejudice for old habits, and the insubordination of a small and scattered settlement. Not only was he faithful in his ministrations as a pastor, but he manifested a deep interest in the welfare of the people, by instituting schools, which had been neglected, by the introduction of implements in the art of agriculture. Throughout the entire period of his residence here the currency of the country was in an unsound condition. Towards the close of his ministration one hundred and twenty pounds was assessed to supply the deficiency of his salary. He was possessed of considerably property, and his library was larger, and was thought to have been as valuable as that of any clergyman in the vicinity. Among them were many of the Latin and Greek classics."

The manner of taking contributions in those days is thus described by Josslyn:

"The people held the minister should be supported by free will offerings rather than by laid revenues or tithes. At the time of taking the contribution one of the deacons stood up and spoke something of this kind, 'Now brethren there is left time for the contribution, whereof as God has prospered you so freely offer.' The congregation then came one after another, and brought their offerings to the deacon in his seat, and put it in a box if it be money or paper; or if it be any other chattel, it was put down before the deacon, and he passed another way to his seat. Contributions were taken in this way until about 1700."

In 1714, Dea. Benjamin Lee and Jonathan Herriek were chosen a committee to advise with Mr. Wiggles-

worth, Mr. Chapman, Mr. Champney, and Mr. Warner, as to the settlement of a minister. Several candidates were heard, and in July the town unanimously agreed to give Rev. Benjamin Tappan an invitation to settle among them, and a committee of eleven were chosen to arrange the terms of settlement. The original document together with Mr. Tappan's letter of acceptance is yet in the possession of a descendant, and of which the following is a copy:

"We whose names are herewith subscribed Being a Committee Chosen & empowered by the Town of Manchester in New England, to Agree & Covenant in said Town's Behalf with Mr. Benjamin Tappan who has lately, in a Legal Meeting of said Town, been called & made choice of to carry the work of the Gospel Ministry among us & who has promised & engaged to do so; Do agree with and Censure to him as followeth, viz.:

"1. We promise to give Mr. Tappan four Hundred and fifty Pounds old Tenor, towards his Settlement, and to pay the same when Demanded.

"2. We promise him, yearly, one hundred and forty Eight Ounces of Silver, or Bills of Public Credit equal to Houses. And this we promise to give him both in sickness and in health During the whole time & term of his being our Minister, or standing in Pastoral Relations to the Church of Christ in this place.

"3. We agree that Mr. Tappan's salary commence the first Day of April next.

"4. We promise that one half of his Salary Shall be paid him yearly the first of October, and the other half of it at the end of the year, viz. the last of March.

"5. We promise that Mr. Tappan shall have the use and improvement of all the Ministry Land in the Town of Manchester which is enclosed by a fence at this Day; and this we promise him so long as he shall continue in the Ministry among us.

"6. We promise & engage him a sufficiency of fire wood for his own family on the Ministry Wood Lots of the aforesaid Town and also the herbage on the same.

"7. We declare it our Intent and Design to Cut & Haul Mr. Tappan's fire wood, not absolutely engaging to cut & Haul it, but the same should come to be a Town charge.

"8. We promise the Contribution Box shall be held every Lord's Day & that all the money Contributed Shall be awarded to Mr. Tappan's use.

"Now in Witness and Confirmation of all & Singular the Articles and Clauses herein Contained, we have Set our Hands & Seals, this SIXTH Day of December Anno Domini, 1744.

Signed,	
John Edwards,	John Lee,
Benjamin Lee,	Robert Herriek,
Jonathan Lee, Jr.,	John Lee, Jun.,
Benj. Allen, Jr.,	Samuel Allen, Jun.,
Andrew Hooper,	Jonathan Herriek,
Richard Coya."	

To these conditions Mr. Tappan returned the following reply:

"To the Committee of the Town of Manchester:

"DEAR SIR; Since you have thought fit to give me a call to settle in the ministry among you, I hereby declare my compliance with your invitation on the following conditions:

"1st. yt, you give me £200 O. T. per annum -fit it on a Silver Standard.

"2d. yt, you give me for a settlement the house, barn, orchard, all the land within the fence, as it now stands, which belongs to Ezekiel Goodell, to be my own property.

"3d. or yt, you give me £150 O. T. when called for, for a settlement.

"4th. yt you grant me the use of the ministers land in Manchester, during the time I continue as your minister.

"BEN TAPPAN."

November 12th, the town agreed to comply with Mr. Tappan's conditions, and he was ordained on the 11th of December, 1745.

1749, one hundred and forty-eight ounces of silver, and eleven cords of wood purchased for Rev. Mr. Tappan's salary.





June, 1753, Dr. Watts' version of the Psalms of David introduced into the church, and his hymns to be sung at the Lord's table.

In 1761, the church ordered that the volumes of Baxter's works should be put into Mr. Tappan's hands to be lent by him, always subject to be returned to him at the expiration of four months.

In 1762, Rev. Mr. Tappan's salary was £83, 16s. 8d.

1767, the town ordered £36, 13s. 4d. as a gift to Rev. Mr. Tappan, which was continued 1768, and increased in 1769 to £46.

In 1774, on the occasion of the separation of the Second Church in Ipswich to form the Fourth, an unhappy misunderstanding existed between them and the church at Manchester.

October 25th, being the period to which the council adjourned, the Rev. Mr. Tappan with a delegation from Manchester appeared, and laid before them their proposal for pacification between them and the Fourth Church, with which the council complied.

1775, Deacon John Tewksbury died.

On the 6th of May, 1790, the church and town were called to mourn the death of their valued and beloved pastor, in the forty-sixth year of his ministry among them.

The selectmen with Dr. David Norwood were appointed a committee to make the arrangements for the funeral of their venerable minister, and to present mourning to the family of the deceased. The sermon was preached by the Rev. Mr. Forbes, of Gloucester.

Throughout the long period of Mr. Tappan's ministry he held a high place in the affections of his people, though at a time of severe, and continued political distractions, embarrassments by which the smallest and most remote precincts were sufferers. So much was this the case in this town, that the impoverished people were unable to pay the minister's covenanted salary. Yet Mr. Tappan maintained uninterruptedly, and with faithfulness, the ministrations of his pastoral duties.

During the period of his labors one hundred and eighty-two were added to the church.

He was a patriot of the most unyielding type. In times of unusual danger from the enemy's cruisers he urged the people to take their arms and ammunition with them on the Sabbath, and set the example by taking his own musket to the pulpit stairs. He believed in being always prepared to resist invasion, and frequently quoted that passage of Scripture, "He that hath no sword let him sell his garment and buy one." He sent two of his sons into the army, one of whom, Ebenezer, was the last survivor of the soldiers of the Revolution from this town. Dr. Leach writes as follows :

"Mr. Tappan's character as a scholar was very respectable, as appears from the testimony of his professional brethren, among whom, as among the people of his charge, he was highly esteemed, and his death deeply lamented."

Rev. Benjamin Tappan was the son of Samuel

Tappan, of Newbury; was born in 1720, graduated at Harvard in 1742. He married Elizabeth Marsh, of Haverhill. She died in 1807, aged eighty-four.

He had eleven children, among whom was Benjamin, an eminent citizen of Northampton; David, who was made Hollis professor of divinity at Harvard College in 1792, and who died in 1803. Of him Dr. Holmes remarks, "his death threw a gloom over his bereaved family, over the university, the church, the commonwealth and the country."

Samuel and Amos became successful educators, and Ebenezer and Michael were in the army of 1776.

"The descendants of this early pastor are numerous and highly respected."

After the decease of Mr. Tappan the vacancy was filled by Rev. Mr. Blake and Mr. Worcester until September, 1794, when the committee chosen in behalf of the church and parish gave an invitation to Rev. Ariel Parish to settle with them. He accepted, and a committee of eleven were chosen to determine the conditions of settlement, which were :

"1st. That Mr. Parish should quit claim the parsonage land, with the exception of 1st. A parcel of land bounded westerly on land of Captain David Pierce, northerly on land of John Cheever, southerly on the town's poor-house.

"2d. A pasture in the Plain field.

"3d. A piece of thicket bank at Kettle Cove.

"4th. Wood lots in the north division, one in the south division, one at Shingle place hill and one adjoining the Common.

"5th. The parsonage pew, excepting a seat for the widow of the late Rev. Benjamin Tappan.

"6th. The interest in the Parsonage money, viz : £64 11s. 8d.

"Mr. Parish should have the settlement and £50 as his annual salary."

These terms were accepted, and Mr. Parish entered upon his duties in March, 1792, and labored diligently until May, 1794, when the church and the people were called to mourn his early death. He died in the thirtieth year of his age, and in the third year of his ministry.

In the spring of this year an epidemic fever prevailed in town, and was very fatal. The distress was so great, and so general, that nurses could not be obtained to take the necessary care of the sick. In this distressing condition of the people Mr. Parish was untiring in his attentions to the sick, and to such a degree, that his exhausted constitution readily yielded to the fatal power of the disease. Almost every household was in mourning for its dead relatives and friends, but the loss of their beloved pastor was most seriously felt by this deeply afflicted people.

A special meeting of the town was called and Henry Story, Ezekiel Leach and Delucena L. Bingham were chosen a committee to make arrangements for his funeral.

Mr. Parish was the son of Elijah Parish, of Andover; was born in 1764; he graduated at Dartmouth College, 1788; he married Hannah Chute, of Byfield, and had one daughter, who died in Manchester in 1793.



A writer of an obituary notice thus remarks :

"While he was decidedly one of the strictest of the Calvinistic school, no man ever manifested a more candid or placid temper towards those who had adopted a different creed. The uniform decision, with which he encountered his own opinions, led him as decidedly to yield the same privilege to others. His sermons were uniformly plain and practical, without harshness of controversy or the show of ornament. His elocution in the pulpit was manly, distinct and pathetic, and doubtless had his days been prolonged, he would have risen to eminence. Whilst he lived, he was distinguished for his easy and social suavity of manners by which he won the affections and reigned in the hearts of his people; for he shared their joys and sympathized in their sorrows. A letter from a member of his church thus closes, 'he was cut off in the morning of life and the tears of many watered his grave.'"

"Even children followed with enduring wile,

And plucked his gown to share the good man's smile."

Until May 23, 1801, the people were destitute of a pastor, when Abraham Randall, of Stow, accepted the call to settle, and he was ordained in August following. He had a settlement of five hundred dollars and an annual salary of three hundred and thirty-four dollars with the improvement of the parsonage land.

In May, 1808, he requested his dismissal, which was granted him, and he removed to Stow. During his ministrations of seven years there were thirty-one added to the church.

Rev. Mr. Randall was born in Stow, October, 1771; graduated at Harvard, in 1798; studied divinity with Prof. Tappan, of Cambridge, and Dr. Dana, of Ipswich. Married Hannah Leverett, of Hampton, N. H., 1777, by whom he had ten children. He built the home now owned by the heirs of Ivory Brown.

On the 10th of January, 1809, Rev. James Thurston was settled as pastor of this church, with a salary of five hundred and fifty dollars and the use of the parsonage property. A great revival of religion followed, and during the year 1810 there were one hundred and ten added to the church. The following extract from Mr. T.'s diary is of interest:

"We met to worship in the new house for the first time on Thanksgiving day, 1809, and the pastor preached from Luke I. ch. 26, 27, 28, 29, and a great revival followed. On the 11th of February the meeting-house was dedicated to the worship of God. Sermon from Psalm 7, 1 verse."

Mr. Thurston's pastorate was not a peaceful one, and after many difficulties and dissensions, an ecclesiastical council was called, and he was dismissed July 9, 1819, and he removed to Exeter, N. H., in which place he was born in March, 1779. Ordained in New Market, N. H., 1800; resigned in 1808; installed in Manchester in 1809; left in 1819; and died at Exeter, January, 1836, leaving six children.

On the 27th of July, 1821, the church and society united in an invitation to the Rev. Samuel M. Emerson to become their pastor. They offered him a salary of four hundred and fifty dollars, fourteen cords of wood at his house and the improvement of all the parsonage land.

He accepted the terms and was installed September 12, 1821.

The discord that had prevailed in the church ex-

isted to some extent; but under the wise and energetic policy of Mr. Emerson, the tares were separated from the wheat and harmony was restored. In 1825 the articles of faith and covenant were printed for the first time, with all the names of the members of the church. And in 1833 the church took a stand against the use of ardent spirits as a beverage and declared for total abstinence, as will be seen by the following:

"Whereas the use of *Ardent Spirits* has been the fruitful cause of numerous evils, which admit of no remedy but that of *total abstinence*, and as it is the incumbent duty of the churches to maintain a high standard of Christian morality, it will from this time be required of all persons presenting themselves as candidates for admission to this church, to abstain from the use of *Ardent Spirits* in all its forms, except as a medicine.

"SAMUEL M. EMERSON,  
"Pastor."

Mr. Emerson labored faithfully and very acceptably until the spring of 1839, when his health began to fail, and in the September following he asked his dismissal, which was granted. As the result of his faithful labors, two hundred and four persons were added to the church.

Rev. Samuel M. Emerson was the son of Rev. John Emerson of Conway, Massachusetts, born November, 1785, graduated at Williams College 1810, was installed in Heath, September 16, 1810, and died there July 20, 1841, leaving a widow and five children.

Rev. Oliver A. Taylor, was the next asked to take charge of the church, at a salary of seven hundred dollars. Mr. Taylor accepted the call and was installed September 18, 1839. He continued his labors until December 18, 1851, when death called him. He was born in Yarmouth, Massachusetts, August 1804, graduated at Union College 1825, studied theology at Andover. He was buried in Manchester. He was somewhat noted as a scholar and a writer on sacred subjects. He left a widow but no children.

Rev. Rufus Taylor was installed May 6th, 1852. He was a brother to the last pastor. In September 1856, he made a voyage to Russia for his health. On his return he was very cordially received and presented with a purse of one hundred and twenty-five dollars, by his society. There was a little dissatisfaction respecting some exchanges, and the following vote was passed in April, 1857. "That it would be gratifying to the members of the First Parish, assembled at their annual meeting if Rev. Mr. Taylor would enlarge the circle of his exchanges." To this resolution Mr. Taylor sent a sharp and rather ill-natured reply, and concluded his note by resigning his charge.

His resignation was accepted by the Parish. He still however, continued to preach in the meeting-house, until late in the autumn, when with a minority of the church and society, he began to hold services in another building, they claiming to be the First Congregational Church.

A council held December 16, 1857, decided that





neither party without the other had a claim to be the Congregational Church, and dismissed Mr. Taylor "from all his church, and parish relations." The number of church members following Mr. Taylor was seventy-nine, and those opposing him were one hundred. Mr. Taylor accepted the decision of the council and left the town.

He was born in Hawley, Massachusetts, 1811, and during his stay with the church at Manchester fifty-eight were admitted.

The minority then secured the services of Rev. Francis V. Tenney, late of Byfield, who was installed as their pastor August 15, 1858, and a small chapel was fitted for the accommodation of this seceding church and society. Happily a reunion of the two churches was effected in March, 1869; and the chapel was generously presented by Mrs. A. H. Trask to the original society by whom it is now used as a vestry.

In 1856, the First Congregational Society purchased of the proprietors and the town their interest in the church and remodeled its interior. The whole house was put in thorough repair, and on the 9th of April, it was rededicated. An organ donated by Capt. Richard Trask, and Mrs. Sarah Allen, was first used on this occasion, and an original hymn by William B. Tappan was sung by the choir. A new bell weighing twenty-two hundred pounds was presented by B. L. Allen, Esq.

The successor of Rev. Rufus Taylor was Rev. George E. Freeman, who was ordained October 5, 1858. His pastorate was a brief one, as he was dismissed at his own request November 18, 1862. He was born in Nova Scotia November, 1833.

Rev. Edward P. Tenney became the pastor on the 3d of November, 1862, and continued to preach until September 30, 1867. Mr. Tenney is the author of the "Silent House," "Coronation" and several other admirable books.

Rev. George L. Gleason was installed on the 7th of April, 1869, and dismissed by Council Sept. 21, 1881.

Rev. D. Olin Clark was installed April 20, 1882, and dismissed by Council at his own request February 6, 1885.

Rev. Daniel Marvin, Jr., became the pastor on the 1st of March, 1886, and is still in charge.

**BAPTIST CHURCH.**—It is not difficult to picture in imagination a small shallop bearing down from Salem Harbor to Jeffrey's Creek on a summer day, somewhere from 1631 to 1635, having on board Mr. Roger Williams, "teacher," and afterwards "minister," of the First Church in Salem, on his way to break the bread of life to the few fisher folk who lived along the shore, and whose log cabins began to rise here and there in the woods. There is no historical mention, however, of such a visit; and if the modern apostle of "soul liberty" had ever stepped foot on the shores of Manchester, he appears to have left no disciples behind him.

The history of Baptist *opinions* in the town it is impossible at this late day to rescue from oblivion; but the history of the Baptist *Church* may be briefly told.

There had no doubt been persons in town who held more or less clearly and fully the views of doctrine and Christian ordinances which serve to differentiate Baptists from their fellow-believers of the orthodox faith. But events waited long for the hour and the man; and the first movement was not in the direction of the formation of a regular Baptist Church.

It was in the summer and fall of 1842 that Elder Elam Burnham, of Essex, began to hold meetings from time to time in the room now occupied by the Public Library on School Street, and afterwards in a hall in the tavern. The preaching gave special prominence to the Second Advent of Christ, and, as in other places at that time, it aroused a good deal of interest, and was met by corresponding opposition.

Elder Burnham was a man of strong native character and indomitable will, and his preaching was with power. A number were baptized by him, and on the 10th of April, 1843, thirteen men and women met and formed themselves into a church. A few days later fifty-seven others joined the new organization, making seventy in all. The body called itself a "Christian" Church. It adopted no creed but the New Testament, and claimed to be independent of any religious denomination. It was organized, however, on the model of the so-called "Christian Connection," although it was not admitted into the Rockingham Christian Conference until the following year. Mr. Burnham was chosen pastor.

Measures were taken to build a meeting-house and on February 28, 1844, the building was opened for worship, Rev. P. R. Russell, of Boston, preaching the dedication sermon. It is said that some deprived themselves of the necessities of life to aid in the erection of this building.

Mr. Burnham remained as pastor but one year, and was succeeded by Rev. O. J. Waite, from 1844 to 1848. Rev. P. R. Russell became pastor in 1848 and remained three years. Mr. Russell was a man of ability and character; during his ministry he preached a series of lectures on the Life of Christ, which were afterwards published. He also lectured and wrote on Universalism and Materialism. It was during Mr. Russell's pastorate that the church, under his lead became a regular Baptist Church, and on February 28, 1850, was regularly recognized by an ecclesiastical council called for that purpose, according to the usages of the Baptist denomination. The pastors who have served since 1851, have been Rev. G. W. Davis, 1852; Rev. G. F. Danforth, 1853-56; Rev. C. W. Redding, 1856-61; Rev. L. B. Hatch, 1863-68; Rev. H. F. H. Miller, 1870-71; Rev. C. D. Swett, 1873-75; Rev. C. T. Holt, 1879-81. The church was then without a pastor for nearly three years, Rev. D. F. Lamson, of Hartford, Conn., becoming stated supply



January 1, 1884. There have been but few Sundays when the meeting-house was closed for want of a preacher, although there have been several periods of from two to four years when the church was without a pastor. During these times recourse was often had for a pulpit supply to Newton Theological Institute.

The church has never been a strong one in numbers or wealth. It has suffered much at times by removals and deaths; the manner of its formation was peculiar, and its subsequent history not favorable to home generous growth. It has not been without its internal trials, which once threatened a formal division, but wiser and better counsels have latterly prevailed, and the church has grown in harmony within, and increased by additions from without. Its present membership is eighty-seven.

The church has licensed and sent out three ministers of the Gospel.

The expenses of worship are met by pew rents and weekly offerings, and the church and society have been out of debt since January, 1884, when the last indebtedness incurred by a second remodeling of the house of worship was cancelled. Since that time other improvements have been made in the way of carpeting, painting and furnishing, including a baptistery, all of which have been provided for partly by the generous help of some summer attendants.

The church is connected with the Salem Baptist Association.

The Sunday-school connected with the church has twenty officers and teachers, and one hundred and fifty-eight scholars. It has three hundred and fifty-eight volumes in the library.

THE PARSONAGE.—The first parsonage, or minister's house of which we have record, was built in 1685; it occupied the site on which the residence of Daniel W. Friend now stands, on School Street. The lot of land was given by the proprietors of the four hundred acres, and the following is a copy of the conveyance:

"Whereas there is no place so convenient for a house for the ministry to be built upon, as a small parcel of land lying on the northern end of the Brook, and the southern end of being about 1/4 of an acre lying between said Brook and the highway, and to be sold to the proprietors of the four acres. We, whose names are hereunto subscribed being the rightful and true proprietors of the said 1/4 of an acre, do by these presents, on the day and year underwritten, for ourselves, our heirs, assigns, executors and administrators, freely and lawfully, grant, give, alienate, assign and set out and convey unto the town of Manchester to them, and their heirs, the above said parcel of land, to have and to hold forever, to be used as of for the sitting of a parsonage house, to be improved for the use of the minister, and in confirmation thereof we have this 24 day of March 1685 hereunto set our hands and seals.

Thomas Tuckersbury  
William Hassam  
John Lee

witnesses  
to the  
Conveyance

Samuel Allen  
Samuel Leach  
Robert Leach  
John Sibbey  
Onephons Allen  
William Allen

"This house was sold in 1690 to John Torran, shoemaker, with 1/4 acres of land adjoining, for the sum of 500 current money, which is to be repaid to the town of the ministry."

Many years after this sale it was moved, enlarged and finally taken down in 1853.

At a town meeting April 23, 1699, a committee was appointed to build a new parsonage house, forty-two feet long, eighteen feet wide and fourteen feet stud, to be located near the meeting-house, at the discretion of the committee. A rate for fifty pounds was made to defray the expenses; and much common land was sold this year, particularly at the Great Neck (Old Neck) and House Island, and the proceeds of the sales were devoted to the building of the new parsonage house, and settling a minister in town. This parsonage house was located near the spot on which the dwelling-house of Captain John Carter now stands, and was occupied by Rev. Nicholas Webster until 1715. In 1716 it was given to Rev. Amos Cheever, at the time of his settlement in the ministry in Manchester, together with an acre and a half of land adjoining, extending on the road from near the Sawmill Brook to the lot of land on which the Baptist Meeting-house stands. This lot of land was given to the town by the proprietors of the four hundred acres April 6, 1716, by the following instrument of conveyance, recorded in the town records, viz.:

"1716, April 6th. We the proprietors of the 400 acres do for ourselves, our heirs, give up all our rights in that parcel of land lying on the West side of the highway that goes to the Sawmill and joining to Samuel Lee, Northwestly; and to the old Parsonage land and Meadow Southwestly, to the town, use as a Parsonage. Forever, as witness our hands, and this to be entered in our town Book as a firm conveyance as appears under our hands.

"Samuel Leach,  
Daniel Williams,  
Nathl Masters,  
Joseph Allen,  
John Bishop,  
Ezrah Eastman,  
Richard Leach

John Allen,  
Anton Bennett,  
Onephons Allen,  
Benjamin Allen,  
Robert Leach,  
Jonathan Allen

"Entered,

"John Lee, Town Clerk, Attest."

The same year "a committee was appointed to lay out for a pasture for the Rev. Amos Cheever 15 acres near the Mill,—10 acres in Poplar plain, or 8 acres near Millett's Bridge as Mr. Cheever shall desire."

The third parsonage-house was purchased by the town in 1715 for the Rev. Benjamin Tappan. It was formerly the homestead of Ezekiel Goodall, who died in 1734. The estate comprised a dwelling-house, barn and about five acres of land, pleasantly situated on the northerly side of the "Saw-Mill Brook," and opposite the first parsonage-house. This house was of the long, sloping-roof style, two stories in front, one story in the rear, and was probably built about the time of the first parsonage-house; it is now standing, and in good condition, the back part of the roof having been raised to two stories. It was a fine, old house in early times, the walls being plastered with mortar made of burnt clam shells and sand. It has three large rooms on the ground floor, and the same for the second story, with an enormous chimney near the centre of the house, containing the large oven of early times. The house had been painted red from the time of the earliest recollection of the "oldest in-





habitant." It is now owned by the descendants of Mr. Tappan, having been held in the family since 1745.

The fourth parsonage-house was built for the Rev. Abraham Randall in 1803, the town furnishing the timber and lumber from the Parish Woodland. The building lot, three-fourths of an acre, was purchased of Ezekiel Leach for two hundred and sixty dollars. It was situated on Union Street, and is now owned by Ivory Brown. It is a large-sized house, of the pitched-roof style, and is in good condition.

The fifth parsonage-house was built in 1811-12 for the Rev. James Thurston, the town making a conveyance of the building lot, about half an acre, to Mr. Thurston for the consideration of one dollar (which was paid for him by a friendly parishioner), situated on the northerly side of the "Saw-Mill Brook," and being a portion of the "Old Mill" yard. It was a large, square, two-story house, hipped-roof style, having a hall running through the centre, with large rooms on each side, and having four large rooms on the second story. It was occupied by Rev. Mr. Thurston, the Rev. Samuel M. Emerson and the Rev. Oliver A. Taylor as a parsonage or minister's house, and was afterwards purchased and occupied by Thomas P. Gentlee, lately deceased, who enlarged it.

The sixth and last parsonage is situated on a court leading from Union Street, and near the railroad station. It is a large, pitch-roofed, two-story building, and was formerly used as an academy by William Long and John Price.

The house, with suitable out-buildings and about an acre of land, with a wharf on the bay, was given to the Congregational Church by Mrs. Sarah Allen (now deceased) in 1853 for a parsonage forever. It has been occupied by all the pastors of that church since the pastorate of Oliver A. Taylor.

**TITHING-MAN.**—As the "Tithing-man" is an official that has long been out of date, it may not be inappropriate to give a sketch of one who still lives in the memory of the older inhabitants. They were elected annually by the town a sort of constable whose jurisdiction was confined to the meeting-house—where his duties were numerous and arduous. He was expected to ring the bell, beat the dogs out of the sanctuary, watch the unruly boys "that they might be contained in order," keep the sleepers awake, sand the floors on great occasions, and, after the introduction of the stove, he had care of the fire; and at the evening services it was his duty to make regular rounds and snuff the tallow candles.

About three-score-and-ten years ago the tithing-man (or "tidy-man," as it was pronounced) was a grizzly veteran of the War of the Revolution, who strode about with a heavy, martial tread, and with an air of unqualified authority. He had long held the position, and had grown old in the office. In ringing the bell he never ceased until the minister had crossed the threshold, and if the reverend gen-

tleman was at all late he never escaped a reprimand. His seat was a raised one in the gallery, where the inconsiderate boys were congregated. From his high perch his grim visage, his restless, piercing eyes and his long stick, tended to render their youthful meditations appropriately solemn, but if some irrepressible youngster chanced to forget the warning, a heavy blow from the official stick was an effectual reminder of the tortures to come, unless stayed by speedy reformation.

This manner of preserving order and making complaints, though not unusual then, would scarcely be approved now. For example, during the delivery of the sermon a heavy rap from the stick of the tything-man caused the preacher to stop and all eyes to turn to the dignitary in the gallery; pointing to a little urchin of some eight years he exclaimed in a voice that resounded through the edifice, "I see you! serving the devil in the Lord's house." The little victim suffered keenly when all the eyes of the congregation were turned to him, but he still lives an honored citizen of the town.

In severe weather the old hero of Valley Forge would occasionally descend from his seat, and with heavy tread stalk down the stairs, up the bare floor of the aisle, open the stove with much clatter, fill it with crackling wood and close the heavy door with a bang, that sadly interfered with the thread of the discourse; then straightening himself to his full height, the old warrior would calmly survey the congregation, in search of some offending boy; shake his stick or long finger at him until the culprit gave signs of repentance, when he would slowly march back to his seat.

Some of the ladies not liking his method of trimming the candles, presented him with a large pair of snuffers; but he continued to pluck the burning wicks with his thumbs and fingers, and then leisurely place the sooty mass in the bowl of the snuffers. He did not approve of the "new fangled invention," it was too slow. Upon his death the office was abolished.

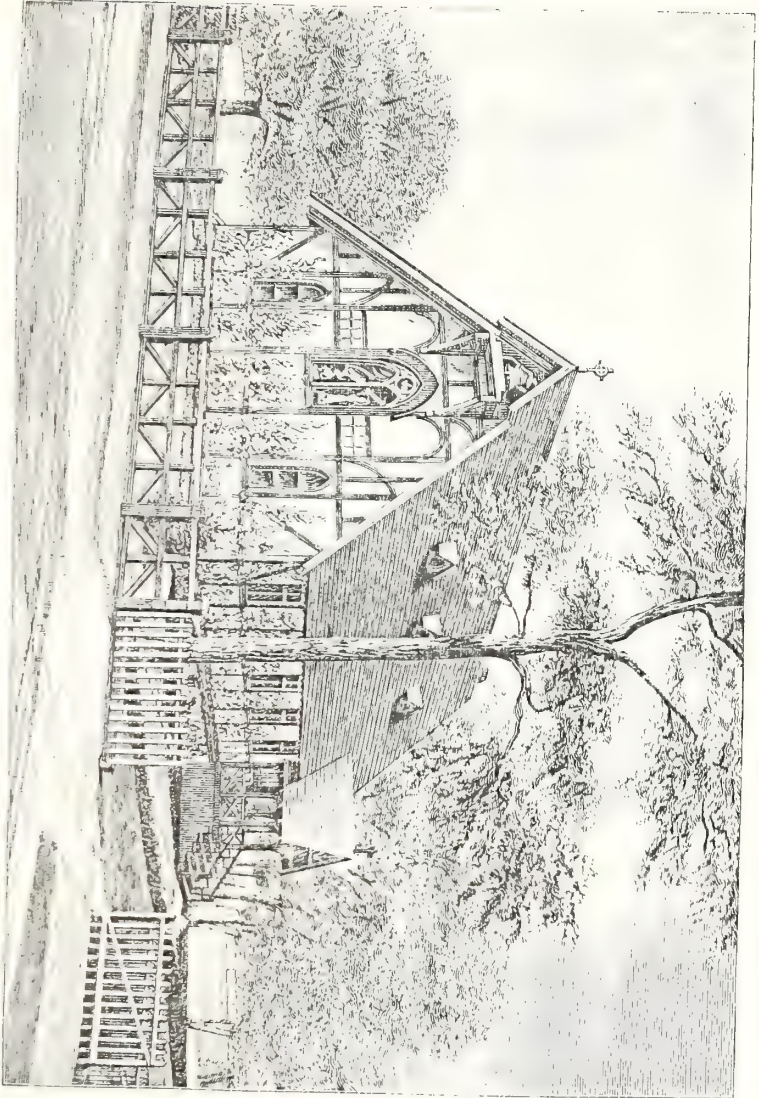
**"STAYING OVER."**—It was the custom of those living at a distance to "stay over" in the church until the afternoon service. This was especially the case in stormy weather.

An old lady who has long since passed to her final rest, used to relate the following experience: One day there were but two of us stayed over. After lunch had been disposed of Lucy went to the pulpit as minister, and I repaired to the singing seats as the choir. We managed to get through with a hymn or two, then Lucy began the sermon, but it proved more difficult than she had expected, so she abruptly concluded it and began to search about the pulpit. From beneath the cushion an old folded paper was found. As it did not look interesting it was left on the desk.

The preacher was a stranger, and when he resumed the service in the afternoon he astonished us by reading this very document. In accordance with the cus-







EMMANUEL CHURCH,  
MANCHESTER-BY-THE-SEA, MASS



tom, it was a note from the widow of the deceased, announcing the death of her husband, and asking the prayers of the congregation, that her bereavement might be sanctified to her.

The effect of this note upon the audience was electrical; their amazement was beyond measure, for this man had been lain in the burial ground for more than thirty years, and his wife had followed him but a few weeks later, leaving no heirs or kindred; at so late a date to ask intercession in her behalf was certainly a very unusual proceeding.

For well nigh a generation this note remained an unexplained mystery.

GRAVE-YARDS.—The earliest record we have of a piece of land having been set apart for burial purposes, is in 1650, when the old "burial-ground" at the junction of Washington and Sumner Streets, was devoted to that purpose. As we have before stated, it extended to the foot of the hill until a more direct way was made to the Cove and beyond, in 1684.

Prior to 1650 tradition tells us that interments were made in the rear of the meeting-house, a little to the northeast of the present church. All traces of graves have long been obliterated, and no record remains to tell whose bodies were placed there.

The oldest monuments remaining in the Washington Street Cemetery are Jacob Woodbury and wife, 1714; George Norton, 1717; Elizabeth, wife of Thomas Lee, gent., 1720; Lieut. William Hilton, 1723; and on a plain piece of granite are the initials E. H., probably those of Edward Hooper. Doubtless there were many older graves with simple inscriptions on the granite blocks, but the tooth of time has obliterated them.

Captain John Marston is buried here, and the following ambiguous inscription marks his resting-place:

"Capt. John Marston lies here, who died May 22d, 1794, being 57 years and 3 mo. old. Art thou curious, Reader, to know what sort of a man he was?—Wait till the final day of Retribution, and then thou mayest be satisfied."

A very aged citizen, whose debut on the stage of life was only thirty years after the Captain's exit, used to say, "When quite young I was curious to know what sort of a man he was, and by diligent inquiry I learned he lived on what is now known as Smith's farm. Until late in life he was a bachelor, and was very eccentric. In the presence of women he was extremely diffident." A young farmer living in his neighborhood had long desired to purchase a certain field belonging to him, but without success, until one day he renewed the proposition, when the usual reply came, "No, I won't sell it;—but—if you will go to Beverly and get the widow A—— to marry me, I will give you a deed of the land on the day of my marriage." Thus delegated, the widow was interviewed, and in a few days he drove with her to the farm. She was so pleased with the bashful Captain and his broad acres, that an early day was fixed for the wedding, and when they were made happy by matrimonial

bonds, the proxy rejoiced in the possession of the long-coveted field. He was an excellent citizen, but very peculiar. His epitaph was written by himself, and inscribed on his grave-stone by his direction.

The resting-place of a rugged, old-time mariner bears this inscription:

"Sacred to the memory of  
CAPTAIN JOHN ALLEN,  
who died

August 27, 1834, aged 59 years.

Though Boreas' blasts and Neptune's waves  
Have tossed me to and fro,  
In spite of both, by God's decree,  
I hat not here below  
Now when at anchor I do lie,  
With many of our fleet;  
In hope again for to set sail  
My Saviour, Christ, to meet."

At the Cove a "burial-place" was made near the junction of the county-road and the road to the railroad station. This is probably older than that in the village, but the records make no mention of it. With in the memory of some still living, numerous stones which marked the graves were visible, and one of white marble, bearing the name of Abigail Gilbert. The old wall having been neglected, it became a favorite resting-place for the cattle of the neighborhood, and the slab was broken.

Within this rough enclosure were laid the bodies of that hardy race who aided in laying the foundation of that liberty we now enjoy. Probably John Kettle lies here, with the Hoopers, Allens, Gilberts, Northeys, Kithelds and the Stones, whose descendants are scattered all over the country. This old Colonial burial-place should be better cared for.

## CHAPTER CIV.

### MANCHESTER—(Continued).

*Early Houses: See Maps of old Mills - Cabinet Making - Machinery -  
Houses - Ship Makers - Captain Richard Bass - Captain Thomas Leach -  
John Carter - Longevity in Manchester - Education.*

EARLY HOUSES.—We very naturally desire to know where the early settlers of the town made their homes. As the greater part of them were fishermen and gathered their subsistence from the sea they built near the coast.

William Allen was a carpenter, and tradition says his dwelling was where the Congregational parsonage now stands, and the old well covered by the side-walk was dug by him. He built the first saw-mill, and died in 1678.

William Jeffrey appears to have been the most unsettled of settlers. He does not seem to have remained long with Allen after his name had been given to the creek. We hear of him at Ipswich where he gave his name to a tract of land known as "Jeffrey's Neck."





In 1630 his name appears as one of the attorneys for Richard Vine's land on the Saco River, and he also appears at Weymouth as the owner of a lot of land there.

The proprietors of what was called the four hundred acre grant constructed their houses in what is now the populous part of the village.

John Kettle's house was at the Cove, near the eastern line of the town. He was here as early as 1638, and that part of the town bears his name, "Kettle Cove," as also the island off Crescent Beach. He died in 1677.

Richard Graves was an inhabitant of Salem in 1637, and was interested in the four hundred acre grant. His home was known as "Graves' Farm," and along its front was a fine beach that was named for him. This property was purchased by Richard H. Dana, the poet, in 1845, as a summer resort, and it still remains in his family.

Samuel Friend was here in 1645 and his abode was near the old burial ground, which was a part of his estate.

John Pickworth was granted forty acres of land at "Pickworth Point," in 1667, where he undoubtedly built his house. His father, Joseph Pickworth, was an old settler in the town and died in 1677. This point is now the residence of Mrs. Augustus Hemingway and Louis Cabot.

Ambrose Gale built his house at "Gale's Point," in 1670. His cabin was probably near a fine spring which continues to flow, though doubtless with a decreased volume since the heavy forest trees which at that time fringed the harbor have been cut. He removed from town in 1670, leaving no descendants.

John Codner came in 1786 and made his home in what is called Sandy Hollow. Several old apple trees, probably planted by him, marked the site of the house.

George Norton was here in 1645, and built his house on a ridge about midway from the old Forster Mill, and the house at the point, the property of Rev. Dr. Bartol. He died in 1659, leaving a son George, who built a house on county road, which divides the Norton estate. He died in 1716.

Richard Glass came in 1660, and located at "Glass Head," about where Rev. Dr. Bartol has his summer residence and observatory.

John Black was here in 1640. He lived on what is now the Boardman estate, and probably "Black Cove Beach" was named for him. He died in 1675.

Thomas Chubbs came in 1636, and settled at the western boundary of the town. His house was probably near where the summer house of Dennie Boardman now stands.

William Bennett came in 1637 and made his abode at the foot of the hill named for him. He built a grist-mill on the site of the old Forster Mill.

**SAW-MILLS.**—To the early settler a saw-mill was very necessary, and many were built in different sections of the town. One was on what was called

Cheever's Creek, in the pasture north of the High school-house; one still north of that at a place now known as the "old mill dam;" one on School Street, by the "Saw-mill Brook," which was referred to in the records as the "Old Saw-mill," as early as 1694, when it was sold. There were three other saw-mills at the Cove; one known as Knight's Saw-mill, stood on the road to the railroad station at the Cove, and one on the stream near the Gloucester line. The only one now standing is known as Baker's, and is just beyond the junction of the road to Essex and School Street. All three streams are now dry for the greater part of the year, but then they were quite large, and they well illustrate the effect of the thinning out of our forests. Take for instance the vicinity of the Magnolia Station, where formerly the heaviest forests in town were situated, and the stream was quite large, flowing the year round. About the time the railroad was completed it was all cut, and soon after a fire swept over it and consumed the deep accumulation of vegetable mould. In this dark wood the snow often lay until June, and the regular flow of water furnished an abundant power for the mill. But after the forest had been removed there was nothing to protect the snow, and with the first warm days of April it ran to the sea, leaving the bed of the stream dry through the summer. To strip the trees from the land is to increase the freshets and the droughts.

**GRIST-MILLS.**—Grist-mills are of the utmost importance in a new settlement, not only for grinding grain for the food of the settlers, but as gathering places, where, while waiting for their meal, the people discussed the political and religious problems of the day. They were the nurseries where patriots were commended and disloyalty to the new flag condemned. There was one on Chubb's Creek, just where the railroad now crosses the stream. One where the old Forster mill now stands. One in the central part of the village and one on the estate of T. Jefferson Coolidge, known as the Gilbert mill.

**CABINET-MAKING.**—Doubtless the early settlers were quite content with such stools, tables and bedsteads as their unskilled hands could fashion. As the village increased and larger houses took the place of cabins, more and a better class of articles were required. These were satisfactorily supplied by the house and ship-carpenters. But soon something better was demanded, and Moses Dodge, who had worked somewhat at the trade of cabinet-making in the old country, was induced to open a shop and manufacture articles of this kind. The cost of furniture from "over sea" was altogether beyond the means of any but the wealthy of the large towns.

Mr. Dodge lived on School Street, in the house now occupied by John Price. The original house was much smaller than the present one, but it is altogether probable one room was used as a work-shop, and here was the germ from which grew an industry that became the leading occupation of the inhabitants,



and made this beautiful town celebrated through the country for the excellence of its furniture. Mr. Dodge died about the beginning of the Revolutionary War.

With the establishment of peace and the disbanding of the Continental army, Ebenezer Tappan returned to his home and opened a store on Central Street, and in the rear of it he fitted up a furniture-shop. Here he manufactured from birch and maple such chairs, tables, desks and bureaus as the community required.

In 1805 Caleb Knowlton commenced business and John Perry Allen became his apprentice, but soon after the beginning of the war of 1812, he became so alarmed at the threatening aspect, that he closed his shop and retired to a more peaceful abode among the hills of New Hampshire.

Mr. Allen worked in other towns until 1814 or 15, when he returned to Manchester, hired a shop at the junction of North and Union Streets, and began to manufacture on his own account.

In 1815 Eben Tappan, Jr., who had worked with his father, built a shop on the opposite side of the street and began the business of cabinet-making.

These were the pioneers. Some years after many others opened shops, among whom may be mentioned Larkin Woodbury, afterwards Woodbury & Long; Kelham & Fitz, the latter an apprentice of E. Tappan, Jr.; Bingham & Co., Smith & Low, Long & Danforth, Isaac Allen, Cyrus Dodge, a grandson of Moses Dodge; H. P. & S. Allen, Samuel Parsons, Samuel Boardman, Prætor & Godsoe, Jewett & Severance and others.

For a while Mr. Allen employed one journeyman and one apprentice—the very limited home market was soon supplied, and it became necessary to find a new one; to this end he shipped on a fishing vessel two mahogany bureaus and sailed with them to Boston; there were but three or four furniture dealers there at that time, and none of them would buy the lot at the price he asked, so he sold cheap with the understanding that if a good profit was realized on their sale, orders for more were to be at the larger price. Ready purchasers were found, more were ordered, and from that time his business steadily increased.

In 1822 he went to New York and arranged to send a vessel load to that market to be sold at auction. This experiment proved an entire success, and much larger orders, and better prices were obtained; the difficulty now was to find skillful workmen enough to keep pace with the increasing orders.

At that time the workmen were obliged to saw their own veneers by hand; it was a slow and very laborious kind of labor. All attempts to saw the mahogany logs into three thin divisions by machinery had failed. Parties in New York and elsewhere had made the trial, but none had been successful.

Mr. Allen had seen one of these, and being con-

vinced he could improve on it and make it successful, he purchased the "Old Grist Mill," and on its site built a mill for his machine. But upon trial it did not prove a success; the first two or three were all right, but the later ones became uneven and worthless. To discover the cause of this, they worked a long time in vain, until accident, which so often proves the friend and ally of inventors, came to their assistance.

The saw consisted of a heavy cast-iron circular frame, about four feet in diameter, flat on one side, beveled to a thin edge on the other; thin saw-plates, in segments of about a foot in length, and closely fitted to each other at the ends, were screwed to the flat part of this frame.

In some way the rapidly-revolving saw came in contact with a mass of iron, and the teeth were terribly damaged. After they had been recut the diameter was so reduced as to appear to Mr. Allen objectionable, and the only way of remedying it was by moving out the plates, which left an open space between them, which seemed a very serious fault. However, they reluctantly tried it, and, to their surprise and astonishment, it was a complete success, and their troubles were at an end.

It may be profitable to consider the nature of the difficulty that had so long defied the skill of those engaged in this enterprise. The running of the saw at the high rate of speed in such hard wood soon heated it, and as there was no room for expansion, it necessarily became wavy, and the hotter it became, the more uneven was the cutting. With the separation of the plates, room for expansion was provided, and all went successfully. In those days the effect of heat upon metals was not understood by the average mechanic. Had the accident above referred to occurred some weeks earlier, Mr. Allen's machine would have been the first successful one in the United States.

With power-cut veneers, furniture was more rapidly produced, and the market was extended by Mr. Allen until the store-houses of Charleston, Mobile and New Orleans were stocked with it, and the reputation of Manchester furniture was fully established. A large trade was grown up in the slave States, but it was well-nigh ruined by unthoughtful packing. The different articles were enclosed in rough cases, and, to prevent chafing, rolls of paper were used. One day a packer, who had exhausted the supply, went home and got a lot of his weekly papers and used them.

The goods arrived at New Orleans and were opened on the sidewalk upon a windy day, and these papers were scattered broadcast over the neighborhood. When they were found to be copies of "Garrison's Liberator" the excitement was intense, and for awhile the fate of that store was doubtful. The agent was a religious man, but his letter to his principal at Manchester was so emphatic that no more Liberator was used in packing furniture going South.





The sawing of veneers became an important branch of Mr. Allen's business; his mill supplied the greater part of the furniture and piano establishments of the State. It contained two upright saws, four veneering saws, jig saws, turning laths, &c. In 1835 he increased his power by the addition of a steam engine.

These saws were capable of dividing a plank four inches in thickness into one hundred veneers. They were kept from public view, under lock and key, and all sorts of subterfuges were used by people from many parts of the country, who desired to see their operations that they might apply the principle to similar purposes.

About one hundred men were employed by this, the most successful cabinet manufacturer of his day.

On the night of the 27th of August, 1836, a little spark fell upon mahogany dust, where it lay smouldering and spreading until it had gained possession of the room above and forced a tongue of flames through the roof, which aroused the sleeping villagers to their danger.

Mr. Allen was absent at the time, and he returned to find his mill, shops, great piles of pine lumber from Maine, heaps of mahogany logs from Cuba and Honduras, and his own dwelling a mass of ashes.

One of the first acts of Eben Tappan, Jr., was to build a turning lathe, and this was the first with a continuous action ever used in town. Before that all the turning had been done with that primitive contrivance known as the spring pole lathe. Mr. Tappan did not long continue in the furniture trade, but he built fire-engines, two of which have been in use for more than fifty years in this town. At a later period he manufactured steering wheels for vessels, which were sold by his agent in Boston. He was regarded as a superior mechanic. He retired from business in 1845, and died in 1875, at the age of eighty-two years.

Mr. Allen's losses by the fire was estimated as over sixty thousand dollars, of which there was an insurance of only nine thousand and three hundred. He resumed business with a new mill and new shops, but he was not successful; the zenith of the trade had been passed, the West was dividing it and Manchester was losing it. He died in 1875, in his eightieth year. He was a man of unusual force of character. He took great interest in the affairs of the town, and was always prominent in the advocacy of public improvements.

Besides the competition from the west, where cheaper lumber and abundant water power gave them an advantage, those engaged in the southern trade during the rebellion suffered very severely from losses.

The following is a list of the manufacturers at the present time: William E. Wheaton, Cyrus Dodge, A. S. & G. W. Jewett, Claudius Hoyt, Rust & Marshall, William Johnson & Son and Leach & Annable. The old time excellence of the work is still fully sustained, but the quantity is much reduced.

**SHIP-MASTERS.**—Manchester has long been noted

for the great number of navigators she has sent to the ports of New York, Boston and Salem, where they have earned enviable reputations for the energy and skill with which they did their part in extending the commerce of the country to every part of the globe. Many might be mentioned, but we must content ourselves with a very few.

**CAPTAIN RICHARD TRASK.**—He was born in Salem, July 13, 1788. His father was at that time chief mate of a vessel in the West India trade. He died at Havana at the early age of twenty-one years. The news of his death coming to his young wife shortly after the birth of her son brought on a dangerous illness, which resulted in permanent mental derangement. The child being thus wholly deprived of parental care and protection, was placed in charge of a Mr. Lee in Manchester. Good Mrs. Lee supplied a mother's place to him, and was rewarded by his affectionate helpfulness through the whole of her long life. Mr. Lee was engaged in the fishing business, and the lad, at the age of twelve years, commenced his sea-faring life by a voyage to the Grand Bank. He was remarkable for his great physical strength as well as for intelligence and sobriety; and when he reached the age of eighteen years he was unexpectedly offered a second mate's berth by a ship-owner who was a total stranger to him, but who had heard favorable reports of the young man, and sought him out while he was at work on his vessel. This was his first real start in life. His school advantages, like those of many other village lads of his day, had been of the slightest, but he set to work to supplement them by solitary and diligent study. He procured books on navigation to which he devoted his spare time when at sea, and commenced keeping a pro-forma log-book; practicing writing on the lid of his sea-chest and thus formed a hand that was noticeable for clearness and elegance.

Thus, alone in the world, without external aid or encouragement, he fitted himself for and obtained a chief mate's position, and finally secured command of the ship "Adriatic" in the employ of Messrs. Loring & Cunningham of Boston. Here may be said to end the period of struggle against adverse circumstances. From this time on his career was a more than ordinarily successful one. A life of industry, thrift, temperance and integrity produced its legitimate fruits. He had accumulated the means to purchase an interest in a vessel. About 1828 Mr. Enoch Train (then the junior partner in the firm of Samuel Train & Co. of Boston) induced him to join with his firm in the purchase of a vessel to be employed in the Russia trade.

The connection thus formed lasted to the end of Captain Trask's life. Their first joint investment was in the brig "Edward," which not long afterwards was lost in the Bahamas. They then purchased the new brig "Oregon," and shortly after the ship "Forum." This latter vessel Captain Trask com-





manded for several years, taking his proportionate interest in the cargoes, and combining the functions of ship-master and merchant. The outward cargoes consisted either of Havanna sugar or American cotton; the proceeds of which were invested in St. Petersburg in return cargoes of Russia hemp, cordage, sail-cloth and feathers. The business was skillfully conducted, and was almost uniformly successful.

In 1839 Messrs. Enoch Train & Co. turned their attention to the cotton-freighting business, and Captain Trask joined them in building at Medford the ship "St. Petersburg," of about eight hundred and sixty tons. It is significant of the changes which the last fifty years have brought about in naval architecture that the "St. Petersburg" was the largest merchant ship that had ever been built in Massachusetts up to that time, and after she was launched it was found necessary to enlarge the draw of the bridge on the Mystic River to let her through. She attracted great attention in Boston and foreign ports, not only on account of her size and carrying capacity, but in her elaborate finish and her luxurious cabins, finished with the most costly woods, and furnished with cut-glass and solid silver-ware—more suited to a pleasure-yacht than to a trading ship.

Captain Trask took charge of this vessel at intervals for two or three voyages to Liverpool and St. Petersburg, but about this time he began to withdraw from active service. His old friend, Mr. Train, always relied greatly upon his judgment and advice; and when "Train's Line," of Boston and Liverpool packets, was established in 1844, Captain Trask took an interest in it which he retained to the time of his death, which occurred at his home in Manchester August 5, 1846, after a brief illness, and in the fifty-ninth year of his age.

He was a man greatly beloved. The flags of the shipping in Boston Harbor were at half-mast on the day of his funeral, and his death was felt as a personal bereavement by all who knew him.

In Trask we have an excellent example of the best type of the old-time "sea captain." They were a class of men that were not only navigators, but they were merchants as well. They rendered invaluable service in the development of commerce; they honored their country at home and abroad. But they are now rapidly passing away with the changes that have come through the introduction of steam.

CAPTAIN THOMAS LEACH was another of the old-time sea captains of cherished memory. He too was a representative of an enterprising, hardy race of men, now almost extinct.

He was born in Manchester in 1807. His father, whose name he bore, was a noted mariner, "who had sailed the seas over" in the employ of William Gray, of Salem.

Young Leach had developed a strong attachment for the sea at a very early age; and when only nine years old his entreaties prevailed, and he went with

his father as a cabin boy. As the boy had often expressed the wish for making his father's profession his own, his stern instructor determined he should be thoroughly trained in every branch of a seaman's life, and then, if he should be called to command, he would be qualified. Therefore he received no parental favors, and discipline was never relaxed because he was the captain's son.

For four years he served as cabin boy; then he became a sailor; and thus step by step, under various commanders, he worked his way upwards until 1832, when he was made captain of the brig "Oregon," which was owned by Samuel Train & Co., of Boston, and in their employ he made many voyages to Russia; and subsequently he sailed for Enoch Train & Co., William Ropes and others, until he had made twenty voyages to Russia, three to China, and to many other ports.

For fifty-one years his home was on the ocean. The icy blasts of the north, and the sultry calms of the equator were alike familiar, and every sea had been ploughed by him.

After this long term of service, and feeling that his life of anxiety and exposure was having its almost invariable effect, he left the restless ocean for his home on the land.

But to one of his active, restless temperament, quiet soon became irksome and he was made one of the Port Wardens for the City of Boston in 1874, which position he filled with rare ability until his failing strength made it no longer possible; he resigned in November, 1886.

He was a vigorous, self-made, self-reliant man; a strong reasoner, always ready "to lend a hand" to any one in distress. Everybody knew him, and for all he had kindly words. This cheerful temperament remained to the last. During the few hours he was confined to his room, his feeble, pain-racked body sent forth no words of complaint or despair; but he conversed as of old with his afflicted family until almost imperceptibly his spirit passed to that bourne from whence no traveller returns.

He died in the house in which he was born on December 5, 1886, aged seventy-nine.

Of the *one hundred* old-time captains this town has sent forth to battle with the winds and waves in the merchant service of the country, only one remains.

Capt. John Carter began his profession in the fishing fleet at the age of fourteen. He soon shipped on a merchant ship and was mate at twenty-two, and at twenty-seven he was promoted to a captaincy; he was almost constantly afloat, either on the waters of the Atlantic or the Pacific, until he was sixty-five years old, when he retired to his home and well earned rest. Like the two above mentioned, Capt. Carter's success was the result of patient industry and an undivided attention to his duties. May his kindly presence be long spared to us.

The training of the young men in former years was



not such as would be enjoyed by the youth of the present.

For example. When the late Captain Leach was making his first voyage, they had reached the North Sea, and one morning when it was bitterly cold, the boy, came on deck with a pair of mittens on, which his good mother had made for him.

"Tom," said his father, "what are those things on your hands? let me see them;" and holding them in a contemptuous manner, he exclaimed, "Tom, 'aint those nice things for a sailor!" and tossing them into the sea he added, "don't you ever let me see you with anything on your hands."

All through his sea-faring experience of fifty years his hands knew no coverings.

Another instance of the severe training of our ancestors may be mentioned. During the Revolutionary War, young Lee, was making his first voyage with his father, whose vessel was being chased, and the shot, becoming unpleasantly abundant in the vicinity of the quarter-deck, the boy became nervous, which the father observed, and seizing him by the collar with a ropes' end belabored him soundly, exclaiming, "I will teach you to dodge the balls of your country's enemy."

LONGEVITY IN MANCHESTER.—It is often said the people of the present do not live to so great an age as the earlier generations did; but statistics prove the duration of life is increasing as our civilization becomes older.

There are no records of the deaths in this town prior to 1749; but from that time to 1800, a period of fifty-one years, we find but thirty-two who had reached the age of eighty and upwards.

From 1800 to 1859 we find seventy-one; although no record appears to have been kept from 1809 to 1821.

And from 1850 to 1887, a period of only thirty-seven years, we find no less than one hundred and thirteen.

And Mrs. Lucy A. Roberts, who died in 1881, reached the remarkable age of one hundred and three years and ten months.

VALUATION.—The financial condition of Manchester appears unusually good, the total valuation being over \$5,000,000; and the rate of taxation \$4.40 on \$1000.

Manchester has not produced any men who have won distinction in the literary or scientific or political world; but her people have always been patriotic, law-abiding and honest in their dealings.

## BIOGRAPHICAL.

### MAJOR ISRAEL FORSTER.

Major Israel Forster was born in Manchester May 28, 1772. Having acquired the rudiments of his education in the schools of the town, he was sent to

Phillips Academy, Andover, where he mastered the higher branches of an English education, and returned to his native village with no little reputation as a young man of culture. The advantages of which the people were not slow in appreciating; for in 1804 he was elected one of the selectmen, and was retained on that board for eighteen consecutive years; in all he served in that capacity nineteen years.

In 1808 he was chairman of the committee chosen by the town to draw a petition for the removal of the embargo.

Soon after his return from Andover, he looked about for some occupation, for he sprang from an enterprising race with whom idleness was unknown.

The grist-mills of that period were of the first importance in every community; those in town were getting old, and seeing that new ones would soon become a necessity, he purchased the Bennett mill property, demolished the old log structure, enlarged the pond, and, under the direction of two skillful mill-wrights, a new mill with all the improvements then known was soon completed. It proved a success, and a great convenience to the people. Adjoining this property he built a wharf, warehouses, and a large area of flakes along the sunny slope for the drying of fish. He also built the schooner "Hannah," secured interest in other vessels and engaged in the fishing business.

With his brother he built on the Merrimac a vessel for the Grand Bank trade, which was launched about the time the battle of Waterloo was fought, and that became the name of the schooner. Her arrival in Manchester was a gala day, for so large a vessel had never before belonged to the fishing fleet of the town. She was about one hundred tons.

It was an innate principle with Major Forster to do everything he undertook thoroughly, and to that end he spared no pains. This habit of his soon gained for him the reputation of curing fish better than his competitors, and vessels from Cape Cod and from Maine landed their fares at his wharf that he might prepare them for market. Thus his enterprise soon made the pretty bay about the mill a very busy place.

In 1809 he was made one of the committee for building the present Congregational Church. He took a great interest in the enterprise, and soon became the active member of that board; and to his habits of thoroughness and excellent taste we are largely indebted for the admirable structure that adorns the village.

He represented the town in the Legislatures of 1810 and 1836.

He always took an active interest in military matters, and was a major of the militia in 1812.

His residence in the centre of the village is an excellent example of architectural taste of the last century. It is now the summer-home of his grandson, George C. Leach, Esq., of Boston, who carefully pre-








Israel Forster





Yours respectfully  
E. W. Leach  




serves every feature of the original structure, and retains the same colors with which it was first painted in 1804.

Major Forster closed his active and useful life on the 5th of April, 1862, at the age of eighty-four. He was first married to Hannah Lee, of Andover, who died in 1805. He afterward married Hannah, the daughter of Major Henry Story, of Manchester. He left five daughters, the eldest of whom, Mrs. Hannah L. Allen, of Boston, is the only survivor.

THE GENEALOGY OF THE FORSTER FAMILY.—*John Forster* came from Danvers to Manchester about 1684. He was a very prominent man in town affairs; was one of the selectmen for many years; was also town clerk and land surveyor; as such aided in the laying out of the common land. Among his children was

*Israel Forster*, who was a ship master, and removed to Marblehead, where he became a very successful merchant. He married Jane Stone, of Manchester, and died in 1818, at the age of eighty-six, leaving property to the amount of \$100,000. His son

*Samuel Forster* was also a ship master. He made his home in Manchester, where he married Bethia Bennett. He died about the close of the Revolution, leaving three sons and five daughters, and property to the amount of \$27,000. *Israel Forster*, the subject of this sketch, was his youngest son.

#### DR. EZEKIEL W. LEACH.

Dr. Ezekiel W. Leach was born in Manchester July 1, 1809. The foundation of his education was laid in the public schools. Under the tutelage of Rev. Samuel M. Emerson, the village pastor, he studied the classics with such success that at the age of fifteen his instructor declared him fitted for college. Soon after a horse and chaise was hired, his trunk strapped between the springs, the boy bade adieu to home and all its attraction, and commenced his journey to Amherst. The good pastor, wishing to make the advent of his pupil into the busy world as pleasant and profitable as possible, managed to stop at the cheerful homes of his relatives and clerical friends where he and his youthful charge were most kindly received and hospitably cared for; and not a few of these acquaintances then made ripened into life-long friendships.

Arriving at Amherst he passed a most satisfactory examination, and was admitted to the college September, 1824; being a good scholar and of industrious habits he soon gained an excellent standing, and at the end of the first year was a prize speaker.

He continued to advance in scholarship until the morning of July 4, 1828, when, chancing to take up a newspaper, he read, with great surprise and distress, a notice of his father's death at sea some twelve days before; the poor boy was overwhelmed with grief. His great love for his mother, now his only

parent, caused him to abandon all and hurry to her side; and this decision was strengthened by his health, which, never good, had shown a marked decline during the last year; and prudence would seem to dictate a period of rest before entering upon the study of his chosen profession.

The fall and winter were spent in Manchester, where he taught a private school and assisted his mother in the care of her estate.

On the 4th of July, 1830, he delivered an oration before the people of the town, and aided in the establishment of the Manchester Lyceum, which may be considered the foundation of the present Public Library. He delivered the introductory and several subsequent lectures.

In the autumn he went to Boston and began the study of medicine in the office of Dr. George S. Shattuck, where he labored most diligently; but the cold and damp atmosphere of the dissecting room proved too much for his feeble constitution.

A long sickness and utter helplessness followed, and it was a year later before he recovered strength enough to embark from Boston on the ship "Forum," Captain Richard Trask, of Manchester, bound for Marseilles.

He reached home the following year, much strengthened, and at once resumed his studies, and received his medical degree in February, 1835.

In the following June he married Miss Charlotte Forster, daughter of Major Israel Forster, of Manchester.

In the autumn he began the practice of medicine in Boston. Dr. Leach, who, from boyhood, was religiously inclined, was baptized by the Rev. Baron Stowe, and united with his church in February, 1836. He was very active in church and educational matters, and held important offices in several organizations of this character.

He served as one of the Representatives of Boston in the Legislatures of 1839 and '40; was elected for '41, but from illness he was obliged to resign.

His feeble constitution could not endure the labor he imposed upon himself; and in October, 1841, he again sought recuperation from the ocean, and sailed from Boston in the brig "Havre," Captain James Allen, of Manchester, bound for Savannah. But the climate of the South did not benefit him; in his own pathetic words, "daily we gather hope, and daily meet disappointment—pain is still my constant companion."

When the brig had taken in her cargo of cotton she cleared for Havre, and the doctor accompanied her; but he continued to become weaker, and when ten days from their destination, the spirit passed gently to the better world, where sickness and pain are unknown. Consumption had done its work, and the sea received his body.

Soon after his father's death he wrote the following:





" No monumental pile, — neatly graven stone,  
 Thy friends can raise thee on the deep blue sea;  
 There thou wilt rest, unmarked, unknown,  
 Thy monumental heart, thy tablet memory."

On a beautiful monument erected to his memory by his son, in the family burial-ground at Manchester, this verse is inscribed.

He died March 2, 1842, in the thirty-third year of his age, leaving a wife and two children.

To the people of his native town the news of his death was received with the deepest regret; his kindly ways and warm sympathies had won for him many friends, and his labors in behalf of the public were not forgotten. He found the records of the town detached, unfiled papers, and many had been lost. To collect in a volume the contents of these scattered papers, and to supply the gaps before it was too late was the task to which he applied himself, without hope of reward, and which he accomplished. To him the town is indebted for this great service.

During his residence in Boston he had endeared himself to a host of friends who deeply felt his loss. Of him the *Boston Atlas* said, "He was an accomplished gentleman, a skillful physician, a warm-hearted and faithful friend." His industry and familiarity with the historical records of the State rendered him a very useful member of the Legislature.

#### THE GENEALOGY OF THE LEACH FAMILY.

*Laurence Leach* came to Salem from Devon, England, in 1628, with his wife and two children. His son, *Robert Leach*, came to Manchester and settled in the Plains in 1640. His home yet remains in the family. He was a proprietor of the "Common lands," and died in 1687, leaving two children; his eldest son,

*Samuel Leach*, was born in 1655; he was one of the selectmen in 1680 and '84, and on the commission for dividing the "common lands." In 1691 he was one of the committee for building the new meeting-house. He died in 1696, leaving four children.

*Richard Leach* was born in 1690; he was for a number of years one of the selectmen. He built the school-house in 1724, and died in 1739, leaving seven children.

*Benjamin Leach* was born in 1723; he was a shipmaster, and died at sea in 1757, leaving four children.

*Ezekiel Leach* was born in 1755; was in the army of the Revolution, took part in the battle of Princeton and in several other engagements. Impaired health caused him to enter the Navy, where he soon rose to the rank of lieutenant and gained a reputation for gallantry. Upon the establishment of peace he engaged in mercantile pursuits. He died in 1821, leaving eight children.

*Thomas Leach* was born in 1780; he was a shipmaster, was owner in the brig "Jones" and in the "Statesman," both of Boston. While making a voyage from Havana to Hong Kong in the latter vessel, in

1828 he died. He had been one of the selectmen in 1826 and '27. He left nine children.

*Ezekiel W. Leach, M.D.*, the subject of this sketch, was the second son of Thomas. Of the doctor's children only two survived him, and they are now living; they are *George C. Leach*, president of the People's National Bank, Boston, and *Mrs. Helen F. Hooper*, of New York.

## CHAPTER CV.

### GLOUCESTER.

BY R. EDDY, D.D.

*Settlement—Growth—City Government.*

IN preparing the following sketch of the history of this ancient town, the writer has drawn very largely from the "History of Gloucester," by the late Hon. John J. Babson, published twenty-seven years ago. Of course, in noticing events which have transpired since the time Mr. Babson's valuable book was issued, other sources of information have been sought; but the industry of that accurate writer in gleaning the field of fact covered by the period embraced in his pages, leaves little to be discovered by others, and shuts up all who may succeed him as narrators of the history of the Cape or any portion of it, to the use of what he then presented to the public. The publication of "Champlain's Voyages," put into English since the date of the completion of Mr. Babson's history, and the different light which some recent discoveries throw upon a few of the events as narrated by Mr. Babson, constitute about the only deviations made from his narrative, whose general correctness is, and will always remain, a fitting monument to his accuracy and integrity in dealing with the facts and traditions of a locality and people whom he loved and served so well. The citizens of Gloucester may well be grateful that one of their own number reduced from oblivion and put in such orderly array, the story of the settlement and progress of the town, and the laboriously obtained genealogical information which is so valuable a feature of the pages of his history.

The original town of Gloucester included in its territorial limits what is now the town of Rockport, the whole area forming what is known as Cape Ann. Its northern boundary was Ipswich Bay, its eastern the Atlantic Ocean, its southern Massachusetts Bay, and its western the towns of Manchester and Essex.

Its extreme length was about nine miles; its width varied from four to six miles. What is commonly called Annisquam River, but which is in reality an arm of the sea extending from Ipswich Bay, first in a southwesterly course and then southeasterly, about four miles towards Gloucester harbor, from which it is separated by a narrow neck of land, but through



which, for conveniences of navigation, a canal was cut, about 1644, dividing the territory into two nearly equal parts. .

The surface of the Cape is, for the most part, very uneven, and now presents to the beholder a succession of bald, rocky hills, bold ledges of granite, with many acres covered with boulders of various sizes and some curious shapes. When first discovered by the whites it was, as we shall see from Champlain's account, covered also, wherever there was sufficient soil between the rocks, with a fine growth of various kinds of wood which not only served the settlers with material for their dwellings, ships and fuel, but also furnished a profitable commodity for exportation. Mr. Babson, in his history of the town, notes that "a stray leaf from an old account-book reveals the fact that in about three weeks, in 1711, over five hundred cords of wharf wood were shipped to one firm in Boston." Wherever the soil is cleared it is found to be strong and fertile, well-suited for the rapid growth and sure harvest of the average agricultural products of New England. The chief botanical novelty of the Cape is the *Maquillet glauca*, not found as a native growth elsewhere in Massachusetts. It grows to the height of ten feet in this locality, and yields a beautiful fragrant flower through nearly the whole of the warm season.

The highest elevation of land is called Thompson's Mountain, situated near the western border of the town, and elevated two hundred and fifty-five feet above the level of the sea. Its summit affords an extensive prospect of land and ocean. Pigeon Hill, on the northeasterly part of the Cape, is the first land which the mariner sees as he approaches the coast from the east.

The principal harbor of Gloucester is on the south side of the town, and is formed by Eastern Point, which extends with unequal width about three miles in a southwesterly direction, and affords on its side towards the land safe anchorage and shelter for hundreds of vessels approaching the town from Massachusetts Bay. The harbor on the Ipswich Bay, or northerly side of the town, is at Annisquam. The tradition, as mentioned by Mr. Babson, that the Indians in giving it that name to the locality, compounded it from English *Ann*, the name of the Cape, and *Squam*, the Indian for harbor, is worthless, since it would show that the Indian had no name for it till about the time that he left the territory, and because, also, *harbor* is not the signification of the word *Squam*. The earliest mention of the name is on Wool's Map, 1661, where it is spelled *Wonasquam*; in Winthrop's Journal, under date 1635, it is spelled *Annisquam*; and in Josselyn's "Account of Two Voyages to New England," the first commenced in 1638, it is spelled *Wondisquam*. These varieties in spelling may be considered as simply so many different ways of attempting to express by English letters the sound of the Indian word. What does the word

mean? The diversity of answer is almost equal to the diversity of spelling. James Davis, Esq., a native of Annisquam Village, in his poem entitled "Pleasant Water," says in an appended note: "That it may well be translated pleasant water would appear from the following: In Colton's 'Indian Vocabulary,' many of the names begin with such prefixes as 'Winne,' 'Wonne,' 'Wenne,' and all words so beginning have an agreeable, pleasant signification. Thus, on page 163, the name 'Winne tahansha' is said to mean a *pleasant laughter*, and on page 173 'Wonnohquot' is said to mean *pleasant weather*. . . . It is difficult to find authority for translating the Indian word *Squam* by the word *water*. I believe the word does not occur in Colton's 'Indian Vocabulary,' before referred to. The fact that it was so frequently applied to bodies of water and lands bordering on the water, as in New Jersey and New Hampshire, would seem to show pretty conclusively that such must have been its meaning. . . . A gentleman, said to be good authority in such matters, says that *Squam* means *broken water*; so *Wonne Squam* would mean 'beautiful broken water,' referring, perhaps, to the breakers on the bar; and *Squam Beach*, in New Jersey, means 'broken or breaking water beach.' " The Hon. J. Hammond Turnbull, LL.D., the only person living, it is said, who can read Eliot's Indian Bible, favors the writer with the following from his MS. notes on Indian names in Massachusetts: "The name is certainly derived from *wanushque-ompsk*, 'the top (or 'the extreme point') of the rock.' Eliot, in Ezek. 26: 14, has this name, with the locative suffix, *wanushquompskqut*, for " [at or to] the top of a rock; " but the prefix *literally* denotes the 'extreme point' or 'end' as well as the 'top' of. With the locative suffix, it survives as 'Squamscot.' " Dr. Turnbull adds that he has little doubt that *Wanushquompskqut* originally belonged to the head-land of the Cape, and was transferred to the harbor and river." This would be very natural, especially if, as is probable, those who made the transfer had little or no knowledge of the significance of the name, and made more frequent use of the harbor and river than they did of the headland.

Incidentally, Mr. Babson mentions, without seeking to give the English equivalent, and probably as a mere matter of tradition, that the Indian name of Cape Ann was *Wingaersheek*. But Prof. Trumbull says that "Wingaersheek is not Indian," and that, if it is a corruption of an Indian name it is so much corrupted that conjectures as to its original sounds would be wasted; and Prof. E. N. Horsford, of Cambridge, Mass., who has given a good deal of attention to local names, says, "Wingaersheek is an undoubted corruption of the German name (Low Dutch) *Wyn-gaerts Heck*, which occurs on many maps of the period between 1630 and 1670; especially in Ogilby's America." *Wyn-gaerts Heck* is from *Wyn-gaerten*, and is the equivalent of what the North-men design-





nated as Vineland. Since, as we shall soon see, grapes were the prominent fruit found by the first whites, so far as we know, who set foot on the Cape, their presence in greater or less abundance may very naturally have caused some of the discoverers to give to the Cape, or a portion of it, the name we are considering, as expressive of that fact.

Just when this part of the coast was first seen by white men is largely a matter of conjecture. Possibly Captain Bartholomew Gosnold, who made an unsuccessful attempt to plant a colony in New England (then called North Virginia) in 1602, sighted Cape Ann as he sailed from the coast of Maine to Vineyard Sound, where he tried in vain to induce several of his ship's company to attempt a permanent settlement. It is also matter of conjecture that Capt. Pring, another English explorer, came in view of Cape Ann, if indeed he did not land there, in 1603, as according to the ship's log, he, after leaving what Gosnold called "Savage Rock," (some point on the Maine coast where he had an interview with the natives), "bare into that great gulf which Capt. Gosnold overshot the year before, coasting, and finding people, on the north side thereof." But the first visit to the Cape on the part of Europeans, of which we have positive assurance, was made by Frenchmen.

The famous voyager, Samuel De Champlain, sighted Cape Ann, at its eastern extremity, on the 15th of July, 1604, and anchored near its shores before the morning of the following day. A little while after light a few Indians timidly approached them in a canoe, and then, retiring, set up a dance on the shore, indicating their friendly greeting of the strangers. Champlain was sent out to interview them; and providing himself with crayon and drawing paper he sought from them some geographical information; and by a generous distribution of knives and biscuits, was soon able to win their confidence, when he proceeded to exhibit his drawing of the bay to the north of the Cape. Seizing his offered crayon, the Indians proceeded to surprise him by the accuracy of their knowledge of the coast on either side of the Cape, by introducing into his sketch the location of the Merrimac River, hidden from his view by the intervention of Plum Island which stretches before its mouth; and by making an outline of Massachusetts Bay, to the south of the Cape. They then volunteered to him some valuable historical information. Placing six pebbles at equal distances, they made him understand that Massachusetts Bay was occupied by six tribes, governed by as many chiefs. The accuracy of this information is fully confirmed by the statement of the historian Gookin, Superintendent of Indian Affairs in Massachusetts in 1656, who wrote in 1674: "Their chief sachem held dominion over many other petty governors, as those of Weechagaskas, Neponsit, Punkapaog, Nonantum, Nashaway, and some of the Nipmuck people, as far as Pokomatucke, as the old men of Massachusetts affirmed." The Cape In-

dians were also accurate in their drawing of the outline of Massachusetts Bay, as Champlain states that in sailing through its waters he "found all that the savages had described to me at Island Cape," "le Cap aux Isles." This, so far as any record informs us, was the first name given to the Cape by white men, and it is so designated by Champlain in other portions of his writings. The name was suggested by "these islands near the main land, full of wood of different kinds, as at Chouïacoet [Saco], and all along the coast; and still another flat one, where there are breakers, and which extends a little farther out to sea than the others, on which there is no wood at all." The three wooded islands are now known as Straitsmouth, Thatcher, and Milk Islands, and the fourth was probably the ledge called "The Salvages."

Sailing half a league farther Champlain observed several savages on a rocky point, [probably Emons' Point]. "We anchored," he says "near a little island [Thatcher's Island] and sent our canoe with knives and cakes for the savages. From the large number of those we saw, we concluded that these places were better inhabited than the others we had seen." Their stay here was short, when they sailed into Massachusetts Bay, and after a brief landing near Noddle's Island, crossed over to Cape Cod, which from its white appearance they named "the White Cape," "le Cap Blanc." The following September they were again at Cape Ann, but encountering bad weather and fogs, were in despair of finding shelter, until Champlain bethought him of a harbor which he had noted on the map made while on the previous voyage, but which they did not then enter. At the mouth of this harbor, Gloucester Harbor, they anchored at night and in the morning sailed in. Sieur de Poutrincourt, commander of the Barque, landed with eight or ten of the company. What they saw and what their experiences were with the natives, Champlain thus describes:

"We saw some very fine grapes just ripe, Brazilian peas, [the New England bush-bean], pumpkins, squashes and very good roots [artichokes], which the savages cultivated, having a taste similar to that of chards. They made us presents of some of these, in exchange for little trifles which we gave them. They had already finished their harvest. We saw two hundred savages in this very pleasant place, and there are here a large number of very fine walnut trees, cypresses, sassafras, oaks, ashes and beeches. The chief of this place is named Quiohameene, who came to see us with a neighbor of his named Cohouépech, whom we entertained sumptuously. Onemechin, chief of Chouïacoet, came also to see us, to whom we gave a coat, which he, however, did not keep a long time, but made a present of it to another, since he was uneasy in it, and could not adapt himself to it. We also saw a savage here, who had so wounded himself in the foot, and lost so much blood, that he fell down in a swoon. Many others surround-



ed him, and sang some time before touching him. Afterwards they made some motions with their feet and hands, shook his head and breathed upon him, when he came to himself. Our surgeon dressed his wounds, when he went off in good spirits.

"The next day, as we were calking our shallop, *Sieur de Poutrincourt* in the woods noticed a number of savages who were going with the intention of doing us some mischief, to a little stream, where a neck connects with the mainland, at which our party were doing their washing. As I was walking along this neck, these savages noticed me; and in order to put a good face on it, since they saw that I had discovered them thus seasonably, they began to shout and dance, and then came towards me with their bows, arrows, quivers and other arms. And, inasmuch as there was a meadow between them and myself, I made a sign to them to dance again. This they did in a circle, putting all their arms in the middle. But they had hardly commenced when they observed *Sieur de Poutrincourt* in the wood with eight musketeers, which frightened them. Yet they did not stop until they had finished their dance, when they withdrew in all directions, fearing lest some unpleasant turn might be served them. We said nothing to them, however, and showed them only demonstrations of gladness. Then we returned to launch our shallop, and take our departure. They entreated us to wait a day, saying that more than two thousand of them would come to see us. But, unable to lose any time, we were unwilling to stay here longer. I am of opinion that their object was to surprise us. Some of the land was already cleared up, and they were constantly making clearings. Their mode of doing it is as follows: After cutting down the trees at the distance of three feet from the ground, they burn the branches upon the trunk, and then plant their corn between these stumps, in course of time tearing up also the roots. There are likewise fine meadows here, capable of supporting a large number of cattle. This harbor is very fine, containing water enough for vessels, and affording shelter from the weather behind the islands. It is in latitude forty-three degrees and we gave it the name of *Le Beauport*," [the Beautiful Harbor]. "The last day of September we set out from *Beauport*."

We have no further account of visits from French explorers. Elsewhere Champlain says of the "savages from the Island Cape," that "they wear neither robes nor furs, except very rarely; moreover, their robes are made of grasses and hemp, scarcely covering the body, and coming down to the thighs. They have only the several parts covered with a small piece of leather; so likewise the women, with whom it comes down a little lower behind than with the men, all the rest of the body being naked. Whenever the women came to see us, they wore robes which were open in front. The men cut off the hair on the top of the head like those at the River *Chouacot*. I saw,

among other things, a girl with her hair very neatly dressed, with a skin colored red, and bordered on the upper part with little shell-beads. A part of her hair hung down behind the rest, being braided in various ways. These people paint the face red, black and yellow. They have scarcely any beard, and tear it out as fast as it grows. Their bodies are well proportioned. I cannot tell what government they have, but I think that in this respect they resemble their neighbors, who have none at all. They know not how to worship or pray; yet, like the other savages, they have some superstitions, which I shall describe in their place. As for weapons, they have pikes, clubs, bows and arrows. It would seem from their appearance that they have a good disposition, better than those of the North, but they are all in fact of no great worth. Even a slight intercourse with them gives you at once a knowledge of them. They are great thieves, and if once they cannot lay hold of anything with their hands they try to do so with their feet, as we have oftentimes learned by experience. I am of opinion that, if they had anything to exchange with us, they would not give themselves to thieving. They bartered away to us their bows, arrows and quivers, for pins and buttons; and if they had had anything else better they would have done the same with it. It is necessary to be on one's guard against this people, and live in a state of distrust of them, yet without letting them perceive it. They gave us a large quantity of tobacco, which they dry and then reduce to powder. When they eat Indian corn, they boil it in earthen pots, which they make in a way different from ours. They bray it also in wooden mortars and reduce it to flour, of which they make cakes, like the Indians of Peru." (*Voyages of Samuel De Champlain*, volume 2, pp. 79, 85, 111).

Ten years elapsed before the Cape again attracted the attention of the whites. In the spring of 1614 Captain John Smith, who had been distinguished in planting and sustaining the colony of Virginia, arrived on our coast with two ships and forty-five men and boys, with the intention of planting a colony in the North. While an experiment with this end in view was being made at the Island of Monhegan, on the coast of Maine, Captain Smith explored the coast from Penobscot Bay to Cape Cod, making a map of the territory visited and affixing names to its most prominent parts. To Cape Ann he gave the name *Tragabigzanda*, in honor of a Turkish lady of that name who had showed him great kindness while he was a prisoner in her country. And to the "three islands fronting the fair headland, *Tragabigzanda*" (*Thatchers*, *Straitsmouth* and *Milk Islands*) he gave the name of the "Three Turks' Heads," in memory of his slaying three Turkish champions in personal combat. To the whole portion of "North Virginia" explored by him he gave the name of "New England." On his return home, Prince Charles substitu-





ted for the name Tragabigzanda, that of his mother, Anne of Denmark, and from that time Cape Ann has been the name designating this important locality.

In 1623 some merchants and other gentlemen about Dorchester, England, organized a company, and despatched a small ship of fifty tons to the New England coast, to begin, in the prosecution of the fishing business, the establishment of a colony.

We have no means of knowing whether any particular spot, whereon to plant their colony, was in mind by the company when its ship left Dorchester. But arriving on the customary fishing-ground late in the season, and seeing no prospect of filling their ship, "the Master thought good to pass into Massachusetts Bay to try whether that would yield him any." He was successful, and having left fourteen men "in the country of Cape Ann," the vessel sailed for Spain. Concerning these pioneers we know not even their names. We only know that their ship returned the next year, and that the number of settlers was then increased to thirty-two, and that of the number two were appointed overseers of the business of the plantation; John Tilly of the fishing and Thomas Gardener of the planting. At the commencement of the third year, Roger Conant, who had settled at Nantasket, was selected by the Dorchester Company "for the management and government of all their affairs at Cape Ann." The Rev. John Lyford, a minister of the Established Church, expelled from the Plymouth Colony, was also invited by the company to settle at Cape Anne, as the minister of the new plantation. But at the close of the same year the company, having made a pecuniary failure of their experiment, sold their ships and abandoned the establishing of the colony. Nearly all the settlers returned to England. Conant and a few others resolved to stay and take charge of the property, but as it was manifest that Naumkeag, now Salem, was better adapted to agricultural pursuits, they removed to that place in 1626. Marks of the abandoned settlement at what is now known as Stage Fort, the Stage being the name of the spot used for landing fish, were observed three years later by a passenger in the ship "Talbot," which was anchored in the harbor a few days in June of that year, who says that he saw no English people, though there were signs of "buildings and plantation-work."

The permanent settlement of Gloucester, possibly began in 1631. The tradition is that Abraham Robinson, a son of the old pastor of the Pilgrims at Leyden, Rev. John Robinson, came with his mother and her family, to Plymouth, in 1630, and that the following year Robinson and a few others sailed over from Plymouth, and landing at Annisquam, were so well satisfied with the conveniences which it seemed to afford for the fishing business that they set up a fishing-stage, and made preparation for the accommodation of their families. There may be some doubt as to the paternity of Abraham

Robinson, as no such name occurs in any list of children of the Rev. John Robinson, but that a person of that name settled on the Cape about 1631 there is good reason to believe. The Rev. Eli Forbes, in a sermon given in the First Parish Meeting-house, in 1792, "quoted from what he called an "Ancient Manuscript," which is unfortunately lost, that there were settlers on the Cape as early as 1633, who "met and carried on the worship of God among themselves, read the word of God, prayed to Him and sung psalms." We may therefore safely take the last-mentioned date as fixing the time for permanent settlers.

In 1639 the General Court passed an "act for the encouragement of Mr. Maurice Thompson, merchant, and others, who intend to promote the fishing-trade," in which it was "ordered that a fishing-plantation should be begun at Cape Ann, and that the said Mr. Thompson should have places assigned for the building of houses, and stages, and other necessities for that use; and shall have sufficient lands allowed for their occasions, both for their fishing and for keeping of cattle, and corn, etc.; and that such other fishermen as will join in the way of fishing, and inhabit there, shall have such lands and other liberties there as shall be needful and fit for their occasions." "Mr. Endicott, Mr. Humphrey, Mr. Winthrop, Jun., Mr. William Pierce and Joseph Grafton," or any three of them, were empowered by the court "to set out the said plantation and all lands and other accommodations to such as should be planted there; and none to be settled there but by their allowance." The General Court, also, for the encouragement of such settlers as would engage in this branch of industry, and in especial expectation that Mr. Thompson would establish the business, passed an act granting to fishing establishments certain privileges and exemptions. But Mr. Thompson did not take advantage of the legislation in his favor, except to erect a frame on a lot at the harbor. He is represented as having been a merchant in London, who was at one time engaged in the Canadian beaver-trade. As late as 1650, in a grant of land by the town authorities, the contingency of Mr. Thompson's coming is provided for. The town records, under date of 4th month, 1650, say: "Will Southmead hath given him that psell of land in the harbour upon which Mr. Tomson's frame stood; provided yt if Mr. Tomson or his agent shall demand it, that then upon compensation for the charges about it, this said grant is to be surrendered up."

At a General Court, October, 1641, the Deputy Governor, (Mr. Endicott), and Messrs. Downing and Hathorne, deputies from Salem, were appointed commissioners to view and settle the boundaries of Ipswich, Cape Ann, and Jeffries' Creek (now Manchester); and to dispose of all land and other things at Cape Ann. The commissioners subsequently ap-





pointed the following named eight men to manage the affairs of the plantation for 1642: William Stevens, Mr. Sadler, Obadiah Bruen, George Norton, William Addes, Thomas Milward, Mr. Fryer, and Walter Tybott. They probably had charge of all affairs, although most of the orders issued by them, relate to highways, trees, and timber. How many people were then residing on the Cape it is impossible to say. But about this time a large and influential accession was made to the population by the coming of Rev. Richard Blynman with several families from Plymouth. In May, 1642, the settlement was incorporated by the simple form then employed, and called Gloucester, from Gloucester in England, the native place of several of the settlers. How many came with Rev. Mr. Blynman cannot be ascertained, as no discrimination is made in the town records, between the earliest and later inhabitants. Mr. Babson gives the following list of persons who are believed to comprise all known to have been residents, or proprietors of the soil, from 1633 to the close of 1650.

William Addes.	Oeman Dutch.	Ralph Parker.
Christopher Avery.	William Evans.	John Pearce.
James Avery.	Robert Fawell.	Capt. Perkins.
William Ash.	Sylvester Evelyn.	Thomas Prince.
Thomas Ashley.	Henry Felch.	Hugh Pitt-Lord.
Isabel Babson.	Mr. Fryer.	Phenas Rider.
James Babson.	James Legg.	Abraham Robinson.
Alexander Baker.	John G. Gripe.	Edward Rouse.
Richard Becket.	Charles Gwyer.	Mr. Sadler.
George Blake.	Stephen Glover.	Robert Sadler.
Richard Blynman.	William Haskell.	William Sargent.
Obadiah Bruen.	John Holgrave.	Thomas Skelton.
John Broom.	William Hough.	James Smith.
Thomas Bray.	Zachariah Hall.	Thomas South.
Hugh Brown.	Samuel Hareward.	Morris Sones.
William Brown.	George Henshall.	William Southmeade.
Hugh Calkin.	Thomas Jones.	William Stevens.
Thomas Calkin.	Thomas Julian.	Stephen Street.
Mr. Clark.	William Kettle.	John Stoney.
Matthew Cox.	John Kettle.	Walter Tybott.
John Collins.	Nicholas Linton.	Thomas Vary.
Thomas Coddish.	Andrew Lister.	William Vinson.
John Cull, Sen.	John Luther.	Thomas Wakley.
John Cull, Jun.	Solomon Martin.	John Wakley.
William Cotton.	William Moyses.	Henry Walker.
Clement Cuthbert.	Thomas Milward.	William Wellman.
Anthony Day.	George Norton.	Philip Youell.
William Dudbridge.		

Two-thirds of these eighty-two subsequently emigrated to other places, but the remainder continued to be citizens of Gloucester. Mr. Babson estimated that not more than ten of the names given above "are perpetuated by families now (1860) living in town, though descendants of several others in the female line are numerous." During the next forty years the population was increased by the coming of eighty-seven persons from various localities, about fifty of whom became settlers. "Although the date of the first settlement of Gloucester cannot be ascertained, it appears probable that Felch, Streeter, Thomas Smith, Baker and Cotton were here before the incorporation of the town, and were located at

Done Fudging (the spot where, by means of the canal before referred to the waters of Massachusetts Bay were united to the waters of Ipswich Bay) that Ashley, Milward, Linton, Luther, and perhaps two or three others, were also here before that date, and had lots at the harbor. These persons may have been here in the employment of Mr. Thomson; or they, or some of them, may have been companions of Robinson in the removal from the other side of the Bay, if such removal actually took place. Of the whole number who were here before 1651, it appears that about thirty had their habitations at the harbor, and that nineteen of these lived on the north border of the Harbor Cove; five had lots at Vinson's Cove; three resided on Duncan's Point, between the two Coves; and two lived on the south-east side of Governor's Hill. About forty of the first settlers had houses on the "neck of house-lots," by which term they usually designated that portion of the territory stretching north from Governor's Hill, and lying between Annisquam River and Mill River. Of the rest of these settlers, there is nothing to indicate the place of residence. The first settlers, or those before 1651, were not all here at one time. The records show frequent changes in the ownership of lots; and other circumstances give evidence that many of the persons who lived in town before that date, were only brief sojourners. Of all the first comers, not more than thirty became permanent citizens of the town. Before 1651, it is not certain that there was a single family residing in any part of the town than the two sections above named, excepting one or two on the easterly side of Mill River; but soon after that year, settlers are found near Little Good Harbor, at Walker's Creek, at Little River, at Fresh-water Cove, and at Annisquam. A few years later, inhabitants gathered around the Coves on the north side of the Cape; and finally, about the end of the century, the head of the Cape itself received a few permanent occupants; Kettle Cove had become the abode of one family or more; and no considerable district of the town now remained unoccupied to attract the attention of new comers.

"The spots selected by most of the early settlers for their homes were chosen with reference to the fitness of the soil for agricultural purposes; and such is the rugged and broken character of the territory, that even the small number of people that then composed its population covered almost every acre of land that could be easily cultivated. Nearly all of the first settlers had land in several different places. Besides their home lots, those who resided at the Harbor had grants at 'Fisherman's Field;' and those living on the neck of house-lots had them on 'Planter's Neck, between Lobster Cove and the sea.' Possessing thus different lots in widely separated places, without, in many instances, any mention of a house, the exact spot on which every settler located himself cannot be ascertained. Many of them had grants



which were not recorded; and of those which are recorded, a few are stated to have been made by the Commissioners of the General Court; some are entered simply as given, some as purchases, and some as possessions. Planter's Neck, where lots were laid out and numbered, was at Annisquam,—the spot which tradition has always reported to have been the first to receive permanent occupants. Abraham Robinson and his companions may have set up their fishery there, as early mention is made of a 'stage' at that place; but no evidence exists now to show that any of the earliest families resided there. Robinson owned land and a house, the location of which no one can tell; but in it, says the record, 'he lived and died,'—the first of the early settlers that passed away to the great congregation of the dead." (*Babson's History*, pp. 183-185.)

The population of Gloucester at different periods, has been:

1704. By estimate.....	700
1765. " ".....	2745
1765. " Colonial Census.....	3763
1775. " estimate.....	4945
1790. " U. S. Census.....	6317
1800. " ".....	5313
1810. " ".....	5943
1820. " ".....	6381
1830. " ".....	7510
1840. " ".....	6350

The falling off in 1840 is accounted for in the loss of 2650 residents of the territory set off to form the town of Rockport. This portion of the Cape, although the latest settled part of the territory, was far in advance of other portions in its growth during the first forty years of the present century. The interest and convenience of the people seemed to demand a separation several years before it was accomplished. The subject was brought into town meeting in 1818, and a committee was chosen to consider it, but, failing to agree, nothing further was attempted till 1827, when, from inability to agree among themselves, the matter ended as before. The act for the incorporation of the town of Rockport passed both branches of the Legislature, and received the approval of the Governor on the same day, the 27th of February, 1840. The territory set off to the new town included all of the Fifth Parish and that portion of the Third adjoining it, situated on the northeast end of the Cape. It contained about two-sevenths of the property of the old town, and about one-fourth of the inhabitants.

The population of Gloucester since the division has been:

1850. By U. S. Census.....	7786
1860. " ".....	10,394
1870. " ".....	15,389
1880. " ".....	19,329

At the May town-meeting in 1871 the citizens by a vote of 261 to 82, voted to petition the Legislature for a city charter. The petition was granted, and a charter, submitted to the people at a town-meeting

in the summer of the same year, was rejected; yeas, 249; nays, 477. A second attempt for a city charter grew from a special town-meeting held on the 20th of February, 1873, at which, by a vote of 394 against 48, it was decided to petition the Legislature therefor. A charter was granted, and on the 15th of May, it was accepted by 689 yeas, against 353 nays. The city government went into operation January 1, 1874, with Hon. Robert R. Fears, mayor; who served two years. His successors have been, Allan Rogers, 1876-77; J. Franklin Dyer, M.D., 1878; William Williams, 1879; Joseph Garland, M.D., 1880-81; William Williams, 1882; William H. Wonson (3d), 1883-84; John S. Parsons, 1885-86; David I. Robinson, 1887.

There has been but one city clerk, John J. Somes, elected in 1874. The city treasurers have been John Corliss, elected in 1874; Francis Bennett, elected 1875; Edward Doliver, elected 1879.

## CHAPTER CVI.

### GLoucester.—(Continued).

#### *Ecclesiastical Affairs.*

THE FIRST PARISH.—As has been previously noted, the Dorchester Company, in attempting to establish themselves permanently at Gloucester, provided a minister for the settlement, the Rev. John Lyford, in 1625. On the breaking up of the settlement the following Spring, he went to Virginia, where he died. Rev. Mr. Forbes, in his sermon preached in September, 1792, already cited, says of the successful attempt at permanent occupancy in 1633, that "the first settlers of Cape Ann were early solicitous to set up and maintain the public worship of God among them. Though they were few in numbers and strangers in the land, yet, like Abraham, as soon as they pitched their tent, they set up an altar;—i. e., they agreed on a place where they might meet for the public worship of God on the Sabbath." "So long ago as in 1633 the first settlers of this town consecrated a house for public worship." The town records are silent about the erection or location of this first meeting-house, although they show that there was a place of worship. Thomas Lechford, who was in Boston in 1639, but soon returned to England, where he published a book, says in it: "At Cape Ann, where fishing is set forward, and some stages builded, there one Master Rashley is chaplain." Of him but little is known, except that he was at one time member of the church in Boston, and subsequently was officiating as minister at Bishop-Stoke, England. Probably his stay at Gloucester was brief.

The organization of a church was the work of Rev. Richard Blynman, in 1642. It was the nine-





teenth, in the order of formation, in Massachusetts Colony. Aside from the fact of its organization, it has no recorded history for about sixty years. Mr. Blynman was in Gloucester, and probably pastor of the church, until early in 1659, when, with many who were associated with him in locating in Gloucester in 1642, he settled in New London, Connecticut. Mr. Babson quotes from "an order passed for assigning a piece of land for a burial-ground, February 8, 1644." "that, at the end of these lots (viz., Mr. Blynman's, Thomas Jones's, Thomas Kent's and Tho. Skillings's, betwixt and the old meeting-house place) shall be half an acre laid out for a common burial-place." "This language," Mr. Babson adds, "will perhaps justify an inference that, even at this early period, the second meeting-house had been built, and that the one mentioned in the order was erected by earlier inhabitants than Mr. Blynman and his company. In a grant of land to Sylvester Eveleth, recorded next after a grant bearing date December, 1648, allusion is made to his house on Meeting Hill; and in April, 1653, it is recorded that Christopher Avery and John Collins measured the Meeting-house plain, and found it '39 rods from the creek and William Evans's fence; and from the northwest corner of Goodman Wakley's fence to Mr. Perkins's fence, 20 and a half rods; and from Mr. Perkins's garden fence over straight east to Goodman Wakley's fence, 17 1-2 rods.' From these allusions, and other notices of the Meeting-House plain of subsequent date, it appears probable that a house of worship was erected soon after the incorporation of the town, on or near the spot occupied by three successive buildings for this purpose, about half a mile north of the place indicated as the site of the first one." (History, pp. 191, 192.)

Mr. Blynman's departure from town, accompanied by so many of the former inhabitants, greatly weakened the ability of the church to procure another pastor; but the selectmen gave the subject immediate attention, and by an order passed December 30, 1644, provided "that 10 acres of upland shall be reserved, and laide out, for a teaching Elder, near to the place of the old meeting-house, upon the plaine lying neere to the Swampe betwene the harbor & the plantation; and soe to be reserved unto the use of teaching Elders unto all posteritie. Alsoe half an acre of Upland reserved for the Towne to build an house upon for the use of teaching Elders under the meeting-house where now it stands. Likewise 10 acres of fresh marsh in the marsh yt lyeth above the head of Little River." A year later William Perkins removed from Weymouth to Gloucester, and became the "teaching elder." He remained five years, when he moved to Topsfield, where he died in 1682. How long the church remained without spiritual leadership is unknown, but the probabilities are that they soon arranged to avail themselves of such religious assistance as the most gifted of their own laymen

could afford. The court records show a litigation between two of these in March, 1658. Thomas Millet then appeared as plaintiff in an action against William Stevens "for withholding a wrighting of the subscription of the inhabitants of Gloster for payment of their several sums to Mr. Millett for his labours among them, & his own proportion included, which is 50 shillings." Mr. Babson says: "The jury gave their verdict in favor of the plaintiff; but no permanent estrangement between the two brethren was produced, as may be inferred from their appointment by the court, in June, 1659, to exercise their gifts jointly for the edification of the inhabitants, who were ordered to meet in one place together to attend the public worship of God on the Lord's Day, and so to continue till Mr. Emerson should be here or come to settle." (History, p. 195.)

Rev. John Emerson, here alluded to, was negotiating with the town with reference to his settlement, as early as 1659, but does not appear to have taken the pastorate till 1661. In July of that year his salary was fixed at sixty pounds per annum as long as he should serve the church; and the salary was to be paid "in Indian corn, pease, barley, fish, mackerel, beef, or pork." Eleven years later the town voted that one-eighth of the salary should be paid in money. In 1673 the town voted him eighty pounds with which to provide himself a hoase to dwell in. Possibly disputes arose in regard to the commodities which he received as the largest part of his salary, for in 1684 the town appointed John Fitch, Thomas Judkin and Joseph Allen "to judge of any pay brought to Mr. Emerson for his salary, whether it be merchantable, and fit to pass from man to man." Mr. Emerson graduated at Harvard College in 1656, was ordained at Gloucester in October, 1663, and continued pastor until his death, December 2, 1700, aged seventy-five years. All that is known to have been furnished by his pen, is a letter preserved in Cotton Mather's *Magnalia*, vol. ii., concerning "Many wonderful and surprising things, which happened in the town of Gloucester, in the year 1692." This was the period of the witchcraft excitement, a delusion which obscured the reason of some of the most eminent men in the colony. There were no executions of the inhabitants of Gloucester, though several were accused and imprisoned. Abigail Somes was charged with being a witch, and was confined in Boston jail from May, 1692, to January, 1693. Ann, wife of Captain William Dolliver, was also accused, but did not become a victim. Four other women were sent to prison on the evidence of accusers from other places. Mr. Emerson makes no mention of these in the letter referred to, but gives a detailed account of several marvelous manœuvres of certain spectral visitors and disturbers of the peace. He tells that in the midsummer of 1692, Ebenezer Bapson [Babson], with the rest of his family heard noises as if persons were running past his house at night; and that coming



home late one night, he saw two men come out of his door and run into the corn. Getting his gun, he started in pursuit, when he came upon the men behind a log, whence they ran into the swamp, saying to each other, "The man of the house is come now, else we might have taken the house." Whereupon Babson got his people up and they went with all speed to a garrison near by. Not many nights after, Babson, John Brown and the rest of the men in the garrison saw, within gun-shot of the garrison, half a dozen men, whom they pursued and attempted to shoot, but the guns missed fire. Three of the number reappearing, Babson discharged his gun at them, when they all fell; but on going to the place, they all suddenly rose up and ran in different directions. Babson saw one of them getting over the fence, and shooting at him, saw him fall off the fence to the ground, but when he came to the spot he could not find him. So they all made diligent search, and while searching "they heard a great discoursing in the swamp, but could not understand what they said; for they spoke in an *unknown tongue*." As Babson went to the harbor the next day, to carry the news, he heard a bullet "whiss close to his ear," and turning about, discovered four men coming towards him; whereupon he went into the bushes, fired at them and then ran away. Not long after this Richard Dolliver and Benjamin Ellery [Ellery], "creeping down a hill on discovery," saw several men come out of an orchard and strike with a stick upon John Row's deserted house, the noise of which was heard by others at a considerable distance. Ellery counted eleven persons, and Dolliver shot into their midst, where they stood thickest, and "immediately they dispersed, and were quickly gone out of sight." The people becoming greatly alarmed, sent abroad for help, and were answered by Major Appleton, who sent sixty men from Ipswich. John Day being in company with Ipswich and Gloucester forces at a garrison two and a half miles from town, word was brought that guns were being discharged in a swamp not far from the garrison, whereupon he and others ran to discover what they could, when they saw "a man with a blue shirt and bushy black hair run out of the swamp and into the woods." Day pursued, trying to get a shot at him, but the woods were so thick that he could not, and the man soon disappeared. When search was made for his track none could be found, "though it were a low miry place that he ran over." A week later Babson, being in the woods looking for his cattle, saw three men standing on a point of rocks overlooking the sea. Creeping among the bushes till he was within forty yards of them, he aimed his gun at them and snapped it, but it missed fire, "and so it did above a dozen times, till they all came up towards him, walking at a slow pace, one of them having a gun on his back." They took no notice of him, "than just to give him a look; though he snapt his gun at them all the while

they walked toward him, and by him: neither did they quicken their pace at all, but went into a parcel of bushes, and he saw them no more." All this and more Mr. Emerson relates in detail, and adds that "the *devil* and his agents were the cause of all the molestation which at this time befel the town."

During Mr. Emerson's ministry a new meeting-house was erected, though it is probable that it was not occupied till after his decease. In town-meeting, the 23d of December, 1697, there "was discourse concerning a new meeting-house of forty foot square, and sixteen foot stud between joyns." The erection of the building was committed to Benjamin Haskell, John Parsons and Samuel Sargent. There was evidently delay, as in January, 1699, the committee were empowered to order the dimensions of the building, and the selectmen to assess the first tax towards its cost. Not long after this "the inhabitants did pass an act, that the meeting-house which is now to be erected should be plaistered with lime and hair." Not till May, 1700, was the frame ready to be raised. To accomplish this, the town voted "to provide vills and drink for as many men as the selectmen should think convenient for the raising." In September the town voted that room should be left in the meeting-house for pews; that the "draught of seats to be built should be after the form of three front seats, as was showed in the meeting-house at the meeting; and that the women should be seated in the east gallery." And the final action of the town concerning it was the appointment of the two deacons and three other prominent citizens, to seat the people in the new house of worship. The cost of this structure was £253. It was placed on Meeting-house Green, not far from the old building, and was the third house of worship, as far as known, that had been built on this spot.

After two unsuccessful attempts to settle a successor to Mr. Emerson, Rev. John White was chosen, and entered on his duties in September, 1702. His pastorate extended through more than fifty years, being terminated by his death, in 1760. By the terms of his settlement his salary was assured at sixty-five pounds for the first year, seventy pounds for the second and third years, and eighty pounds per year during the remainder of his ministry. The church at that time had seventy members, twenty-one of whom were males. About this time it adopted the platform of discipline put forth by the Synod of Cambridge, in 1649, and entered into the following covenant:

"We do give ourselves up to that God whose name alone is Jehovah,—Father, Son, and Spirit,—as the only true and living God; and unto our Lord Jesus Christ, as our only redeemer and Saviour; as the only Prophet, Priest, and King over our souls, and only Mediator of the Covenant of grace; engaging our hearts unto this God in Christ, by the help of his spirit of grace, to cleave unto him as our God and chief good; and unto Jesus Christ, as our Mediator





by faith, in a way of gospel obedience, as becometh his covenant people forever.

"We do also give up our offspring unto God in Jesus Christ; avouching the Lord to be our God and the God of our children, and ourselves, with our children, to be his people; humbly adoring the grace of God in Christ Jesus, that we and our children may be looked upon as the Lord's. We do also give up ourselves one to another in the Lord, according to the will of God, to walk together as a church of Christ in all the ways of his worship and service, according to the rules of the word of God; promising in brotherly love faithfully to watch over one another's souls, and to submit ourselves to the discipline and government of Christ in his church; and duly to attend the seals and censures, and whatever ordinances Christ hath commanded to be observed by his people, according to the order of the gospel, so far as the Lord hath or shall reveal himself unto us."

In 1716 a new parish was set off for the accommodation of the western part of the town, and in 1728 another was granted to meet the convenience of the people on the north side of the Cape. After this last date the affairs of the First Parish ceased to be managed in town-meetings. In 1738, the population having largely increased at the Harbor, seven members of the First Parish residing there—viz., Epes Sargent, Andrew Robinson, Thomas Sanders, Nathaniel Ellery, William Ellery, Philemon Warren, Jr., and William Parsons—erected a new meeting-house, and Mr. White immediately commenced preaching in it. To reconcile those who resided in the north part of the parish to the removal of public religious services a mile distant from the old location, they were, in 1742, set off and became the Fourth Parish. Mr. White's health failing in 1750, Rev. Samuel Chandler was chosen as his colleague. In 1753 the inhabitants of Sandy Bay were set off, and became the Fifth Parish. Mr. Chandler continued pastor of the First Parish after the death of Mr. White until his own decease, in March, 1775. Mr. Babson says that his declining days "were rendered painful and wearisome by long sickness and suffering; but no bodily infirmity or distress could move him to sorrow or repine, while his soul was filled with the deepest anxiety and alarm on account of the danger of fearful magnitude that threatened the eternal welfare of his beloved flock. A new teacher had come to his people, and, with plausible arguments and captivating eloquence, was 'wresting and torturing the word of God,' and, in opposition to the venerable authority of ancient interpretation and universal belief, was proclaiming the final salvation of the human race as a doctrine of the Holy Scriptures. The sick pastor could not send forth from the pulpit a voice of warning against the dangerous heresy; but he called to his brethren in the ministry to come and sound the alarm, and then, as a last effort of his concern for the people of his charge, sent to his pulpit to be read, a few weeks before his death, a short address,

in which he admonished them, as one drawing near the eternal world, to take heed lest they should be drawn away with error, and to beware of the false prophet, who, if it were possible, would deceive the very elect."

The warning here given was against the efforts of Rev. John Murray, Universalist, concerning whose labors in Gloucester we shall speak farther on. The First Parish, in view of the dissensions growing up in their own ranks, and of the threatening aspect of political affairs, deferred the election of Mr. Chandler's successor till the spring of 1776, when they made choice of Rev. Eli Forbes, who was installed on the 5th of June. He remained in charge till December, 1804, when his pastorate was terminated by his death. In the summer of 1805 Rev. Perez Lincoln was settled as pastor, on a salary of one thousand dollars, and was ordained on the 7th of August. His health failed him in 1810, and in June of the following year he died of consumption. For four years thereafter the pulpit was supplied by various ministers, but in the summer of 1815 Rev. Levi Hartshorn was called to the pastorate, accepted and was ordained in October. His ministry, like that of his predecessor, was soon terminated by his death. Being on a visit to his father, in September, 1819, he was taken with typhus fever, of which he died on the 27th of that month.

For nearly six years the parish was without a settled minister, though several attempts were made to unite the church and parish in the choice of one; but the Unitarian controversy, which had separated many New England parishes from their church relations, was making itself felt in Gloucester and beginning its disintegrating work. The pulpit was not, however, without preachers. Many supplied, and Revs. Albert Barnes, Andrew Bigelow and Orville Dewey each remained several months. Rev. Hosea Hildreth was chosen pastor in the summer of 1825, and was ordained on the 3d of August. Mr. Hildreth had been for many years a teacher in Phillips Academy, Exeter, N. H., and he brought to his ministerial work many rare gifts and an earnest, consecrated spirit; but changes in theological thought prevented that union in the parish which had once made it strong and vigorous. Some of the members were drawn off to the Baptist and Methodist congregations, and seven members of the church, complaining that the preaching of their pastor was not sufficiently explicit on doctrinal points which they deemed of great importance, withdrew from the communion. Being greatly interested in the cause of temperance, Mr. Hildreth was selected as a public lecturer and agent by the Massachusetts Temperance Society, and his connection with the parish was dissolved at his own request, December 31, 1833. During Mr. Hildreth's ministry the meeting-house erected in 1738 was removed, and another, still standing and in use by the parish, was built on the same site. The last service in the old house was held on the 6th of April, 1828, and the new





building was dedicated on Christmas day, the same year.

At the time of Mr. Hildreth's resignation of the pastorate a majority of the parish had become Unitarian in their theological opinions, but the male members of the church—seven in number, one being a non-resident—held to the ancient faith. In 1834 the parish extended an invitation to Rev. Luther Hamilton to become their minister, and on his acceptance fixed the day for his installation, before seeking the concurrence of the church.

The six resident male members held a meeting September 6th, before the time fixed for Mr. Hamilton's installation, and voted to "consider the vote of the Parish asking their concurrence only as a mark of their contempt for the church," and also "voted 2d that no further notice be taken of the said Parish request, only that the scribe be directed to lay a certified copy of the doings of this meeting before the council that may convene for the installation of Rev. Mr. Hamilton." A month later five male members of the church held a meeting, and voted to reconsider the last vote noted above, and also "voted that for the reasons stated in a vote of the church of 6th of September last, all connection between this church and the First Parish in Gloucester be now dissolved." At this time the female membership of the church was about seventy-five; but it does not appear that any of these were present at the church meetings which have been mentioned. The act was clearly illegal, and would have been so if it had been concurred in by the entire membership; since the highest legal tribunal in the commonwealth had more than once decided that a church organized in a specifically defined parish has no existence separate from the parish. So the First Parish treated this action of the male members of the church, from the first, and the church has never ceased to exist in that parish. The old records, which were retained by those who were concerned in this illegal act, were mysteriously returned by unknown hands to the minister of the First Parish in December, 1862. The last record made by those who had retained them for nearly thirty years was under date of "May 3, 1837." They claimed that at that time the church ceased to exist, and Mr. Babson, in his history (p. 496), adopts their conclusion; but, beyond question, they were in error, and the church, with slight modification of its covenant, is still connected with the First Parish.

Rev. Mr. Hamilton's installation took place in November, 1834. His connection with the parish ceased in about a year, on account of offense given to a majority of the parishioners, who were Whigs in politics, by his accepting a nomination as Representative to the Legislature from the Democrats, who secured his election. In 1836 the parish made choice of Rev. Josiah K. Waite to be their minister. He was installed in July, 1837, and resigned in 1849. His successor was Rev. William Mountford, who began

to preach in the parish in 1850, although his installation was deferred till August, 1852. He resigned his office May, 1853, but continued to supply the pulpit till the following fall. Subsequent pastors have been Rev. Robert P. Rogers, August, 1854, to February 19, 1869; Rev. Minot G. Gage, January 9, 1870, to February 1, 1878; Rev. John S. Thomson, November 21, 1879, to October 1, 1881; Rev. John B. Green, the present incumbent, began his pastorate July 27, 1885. Sunday-school first started in 1816, but suspended in 1819. Reorganized in 1823.

**THE SECOND PARISH.**—The inhabitants of the westerly part of the town had, by reason of their distance from the meeting-house, been put to great inconvenience in attending public worship. Most of them were compelled to travel from three to five miles for this purpose. They therefore petitioned the town, in 1710, for land on which to erect a meeting-house. Their petition was not granted, but the selectmen were instructed that, in engaging a schoolmaster for that section, they should endeavor to select a man "who, in the judgment of their reverend pastor, was suitably qualified to preach to them on the Lord's Day, for about three or four months in the winter season, in some convenient place to be designated by the inhabitants." He should be paid out of the town treasury, and the engagement should be made for three years. Mr. Samuel Tompson was selected as possessing the necessary qualifications, and he was engaged to keep a school and preach during three months in the year, beginning January, 1712, for twelve pounds each season. A further agreement was made at the end of the third year by which, for a year's teaching and four months' ministry he should receive £40. In March, 1716, the people petitioned the town that they might be set off as a separate precinct. The town gave consent by voting "that the inhabitants that live on the northwest and westerly side of this line, viz.: beginning at the mouth of Annisquam River, the river to be the line unto the mouth of Little River, then Little River to be the line unto the head of said river; from thence on a straight line to the sea, on the easterly side of Kettle Cove; to be set off as a precinct, in order to the settling and maintaining a gospel minister among them." The parish was incorporated by the General Court the 12th of the following June. At once a meeting-house was erected, and in October Mr. Tompson was unanimously chosen as their minister, and was ordained on the 28th of November. His ministry terminated at his death, on the 8th of December, 1724.

The parish took immediate steps for the settlement of Mr. Tompson's successor, and agreed on a unanimous call to Rev. Richard Jaques, to whom they offered "One hundred pounds settlement, and one hundred pounds yearly salary, so long as he should perform and carry on the whole work of the ministry." He accepted and was ordained the 3d of November, 1725. In the spring of 1764, Mr. Jaques



having been rendered unable to perform his ministerial duties, by an attack of paralysis, his salary ceased, according to the terms of his settlement. He considered himself ill-used, and council was sought from abroad to adjust the differences between himself and his people. At length, at a meeting in March, 1769, the parish voted their pastor an allowance of twenty shillings per month, and called Rev. Daniel Fuller to settle with them as Mr. Jaques' colleague, on a salary of £70 per annum, and the use of the parsonage wood-lot so long as he continued to be the minister of the parish. Mr. Jaques died on the 12th of April, 1777, having been confined to his house, and most of the time to his bed, for thirteen years. Mr. Fuller was ordained on the 10th of January, 1770. His ministry with them lasted a half a century, when, feeling the infirmities of age, he voluntarily withdrew, and made his home with his son, at Dorchester. He died on the 23d of May, 1829. He was a man greatly beloved, and was a pastor true, pure and generous. During the Revolutionary War, as also in the second war with Great Britain, when, by reason of distress and poverty, the people were unable to meet their pecuniary obligations to him, he generously remitted what was due him, and encouraged his flock to bear the hardships incident to the struggle for liberty and their just rights.

In the warrant for the parish meeting in the spring of 1830 the following article was inserted: "To know of what denomination the parish will be most united." The vote on this item was just three to one in favor of the Universalist denomination. Rev. Calvin Gardner was the first minister under this vote, and his support was provided for by voluntary subscriptions. The following year the parish voted to assess a tax, and to grant to each person assessed, "the privilege of having his own money appropriated to support a minister of his own Denomination." Similar arrangements were made for a few years, but in 1838 the orthodox portion of the parish withdrew, and after this till 1843, when the parish organization was dissolved, meetings were held a portion of each year by the Universalists. In 1846 the ancient meeting-house having become greatly out of repair, was taken down, the last service being held in it on the 7th of September of that year. Its frame was found to be in good condition, and the timbers were sold and worked into a building on the road from Gloucester to Essex, known as "Liberty Hall," which was occupied for religious meetings until the erection of the Universalist Chapel near by, in 1876.

**THE THIRD PARISH.**—"For fifty years after the incorporation of the town," says Mr. Babson, the territory on the northerly part of the Cape "does not seem to have attracted more than two or three families." The first permanent settlement at Annisquam was probably made in 1656. Not until 1726 did the people there deem themselves sufficiently numerous to seek a parish organization and a minister of their

own. In November of that year about forty of them petitioned the town for liberty to set up a meeting-house in a convenient place upon some of the unappropriated land. Their petition was debated, but not granted till January, 1728, when the town voted, "That the inhabitants of Annisquam, and those that live on the northerly side of the Cape, so far southerly as the southerly side of Pigeon Hill pasture, and from thence westerly on a line to the bridge that is over the brook on the southwesterly side of John Tucker, jun.'s house, and thence by said brook as it leadeth into the cove called Goose Cove, and thence by said Cove to Annisquam River, should be set off as a precinct to themselves, to maintain a gospel minister among them." The General Court confirmed the doings of the town, and the parish was incorporated the 11th of June, 1728. They located their meeting-house at the head of Lobster Cove. In a little more than a month from the date of their incorporation the parish voted to settle the Rev. Benjamin Bradstreet as their minister, and he was ordained on the 18th of September. A church was soon organized, the covenant being signed by the following male members:

Benjamin Bradstreet	Samuel Lane.	James Lane
Edward Haraden, Sr.	Joseph Thourston.	Jethro Wheeler.
Anthony Bennett.	John Lane.	Daniel Collins
Benjamin Davis	Samuel Gott.	

Ten years after the settlement of Mr. Bradstreet, whose salary was to be £125 the first year, £130 the second, and £135 yearly thereafter, the parish found it difficult to meet their obligations, and petitioned the First Parish to set off to them additional territory, so as to include the settlement at Sandy Bay, agreeing to make and maintain a convenient way through the woods to Mr. John Pool's, at that place, if the people at Sandy Bay would thus unite with them. The petition was probably not granted. Mr. Bradstreet's ministry continued nearly thirty-four years, terminating with his death the 31st of May, 1762.

His successor was not settled until 1766, but the pulpit was occasionally supplied by Rev. Mr. Cleaveland, of the Fifth Parish, and by others. Late in 1765 Rev. John Wyeth was called. He accepted and was ordained the 5th of February, 1766. The call was not unanimous, and the opposition soon developed intense and active hostility, which was frequently manifest in violent and disgraceful acts, even to the firing of musket-balls into his house. He was dismissed the 17th of May, 1768, and on his arrival at Cambridge commenced an action against the parish for his pay, which they settled on the best terms they could make. He left the ministry and went into the practice of law.

The next minister was Rev. Obadiah Parsons, the terms of whose settlement were a yearly salary of £86, 13s. 4d.; but in case of his inability to preach, one-half that sum was to be retained by the parish. He also had the free use of the parsonage. Mr. Parsons was ordained the 11th of November, 1772.





Charges affecting his character were brought before a council in 1779; and although the council voted that the charges were not sustained, they also recommended that, considering the great alienation of affection on the part of the people, and the small prospect which remained of the pastor's further usefulness among them, that the pastoral relation be dissolved. This unhappy termination of affairs, and the impoverished and distracted condition of the people during the then imminent war for independence, and for a long time after its close, discouraged for many years an attempt to settle another minister, although the pulpit was often supplied.

In 1802 the parish resolved to secure the services of a pastor at the earliest moment. In 1804, Rev. Ezra Leonard, who had for some months supplied the pulpit, accepted an invitation to become their minister. He was ordained on the 5th of December of that year, and continued in the pastorate until his death, in April, 1832. In the summer of 1811, Mr. Leonard announced to his people that, having become a Universalist in belief, he could no longer preach the doctrines of the Calvinistic creed. The only action taken by the parish on this avowal was a vote that he should continue in his place till the next March meeting. The majority of his people were in accord with him in his new sentiments, only a few of the members of the church adhering to the old belief. These latter quietly withdrew, and the affairs of the parish moved on in great harmony. Mr. Leonard was a man of great usefulness in the parish, and was greatly respected wherever he was known. He represented the town, one year, at the General Court, and while in Boston attended a course of medical lectures, which, with his previous study of medicine, qualified him for the practice of the healing art. Gratuitously dispensing his services as a physician, he bound his people still more closely to him in the ties of strongest affection. During his ministry the meeting-house, erected in 1728, was removed, and a new one immediately built was dedicated the 5th of January, 1831.

The following have been the ministers of this parish since Mr. Leonard's death: Abraham Norwood, settled in 1832; Ellbridge Trull, 1833; John Harriman, 1834; George C. Leach, 1837; M. B. Newell, 1842; J. A. Bartlett, 1845; B. H. Clark, 1847; E. W. Coffin, 1848; N. Gunnison, 1854; E. Partridge, 1857; Lewis L. Record, 1859; J. H. Tuller, 1863; J. H. Willis, 1865; F. A. Benton, 1868; William Hooper, 1871; Henry C. Leonard, 1875 to 1879. Since 1880 the parish has been supplied by neighboring pastors, by ministers sent by the State Convention and by students from Tuft's Divinity School. Sunday-school established about 1830.

**THE FOURTH PARISH.**—The erection of the meeting-house at the Harbor, and its occupation by a portion of the First Parish, in 1738, caused great dissatisfaction of that portion of the parish whose resi-

dences were north of the old place of worship on the Green. They accordingly called a parish meeting and endeavored to be set off as a separate precinct; but their proposition was defeated by one hundred and seven votes against seventy-seven in its favor. The minority then applied to the General Court for relief. Eighty-five members of the parish united in a petition, in which they said:

"Whereas, eight inhabitants of said parish have lately built a new meeting-house, in the Harbor, about a mile southward of the old one, without any leave or vote of said parish, although the parish, by vote, laid out a convenient place to set one on when wanted (that place is between the old meeting-house and the new one); and since the proprietors of the new meeting-house have made an offer of it to the parish, on these terms (reserving all the pews and considerable part of the room in the gallery to procure the cost of building it), and the parish, by vote, accepted said house for the public worship of God; by reason of which, the northerly part of the parish, who are your humble petitioners, labor under great discouragements and inconveniences in attending public worship, by reason that many of them live two or three miles from the new meeting-house (many of them are sea-faring men and have no conveniences for going to meeting but on foot; which is very uncomfortable for elderly people, women and children), near about ninety families must go by the old meeting-house to go to the new one. Most of your petitioners could go home at noon from the old meeting-house; but if obliged to go to the new one, cannot; which renders your petitioners' case to be very difficult. Also the bigger part of the body of the new meeting-house is built into pews, to the number of eighty or ninety; and the major part of your petitioners are unable to purchase them. These, with many other reasons, moved us to desire the church to consent that we might have preaching in the old meeting-house, at our own cost, the winter following; but could have no favor shown us there. Then we applied to the parish to set off all who live nearer the old meeting-house than the new, in order to call and settle an orthodox minister; but were still denied. The second and third parish have taken this opportunity to enlarge their own district, the southerly part of the first parish joining with them, in order to hinder us from a settlement. Therefore, we humbly pray the court would take our difficult circumstances under their wise consideration, and set off to the old meeting-house all those parishioners that are nearer that than to the new meeting-house, with their estates, into a distinct precinct."

In concluding, they requested, that if the court should not grant their petition, they would send a committee to view the parish, and consider the case at the cost of the petitioners. The parish chose a committee to draw up a remonstrance to the petition, and appointed one of their number to appear for the



parish before the Governor and court in defense of their remonstrance. No definite action was taken till the session in August, 1741, when the court ordered, "That if the non-petitioners in the parish do not, within twelve month from the end of that session, remove the new meeting-house to the place agreed upon by the precinct, or the precinct erect there another house convenient for public worship; that, in such case, the petitioners be erected into a separate precinct, agreeably to their petition, unless the inhabitants of the first precinct shall, within the term aforesaid, agree to have the public worship of God carried on in both houses at the same time, and so settle another learned and orthodox minister there to assist the Rev. Mr. White in the ministry; the two ministers to preach in the old and new meeting-houses by turns, or otherwise as they shall agree."

In September, 1742, the petitioners memorialized the General Court, showing that the legislative order of the previous year had not been complied with: that no agreement between the two parties had been made, and praying to be set off into a separate precinct. At a parish meeting held soon after, a separation was agreed to by a vote of fifty yeas to thirty-five nays. On the 15th of December the General Court ordered: "That the first precinct in Gloucester be divided into two precincts, as follows: the dividing line to begin at the northeasterly end of Squam precinct line, by Sandy Bay, and to run as the said line does to Squam River to Goose Cove, and land which has Capt. Allen's warehouse on the northeasterly side, and land late Mr. Nathaniel Sawyer's on the southerly side; and so to run on the northerly side of said Sawyer's land to the highway, and in the said highway to Mr. Nymphas Stacy's corner, and then northerly on said way to Mr. James Wallis's house and land, including the same to the northward, and in the highway that leads to Sandy Bay to the Parting Path so called, and in that way to another Parting Path, near Witham's house, and thence on the beach to the seashore, and by same, round the Cape, Pigeon Cove, and Sandy Bay, into Squam line aforesaid: all the land estates, houses, and inhabitants included in the northerly and westerly side of said lines, way, and sea, or so many of the inhabitants that have not petitioned, that are thus included, as shall manifest their willingness herefor by a subscription and present it to this court at the next session, to be incorporated into one distinct precinct; and that the southerly part, whereof the Rev. Mr. John White is the present pastor, be accounted the first precinct in said town of Gloucester." The occupants of the old meeting-house became the Fourth Parish.

A church was organized in October, 1743, the covenant being signed by seventeen men, and in March and April following it was increased by receiving seventy-six women by dismission from the First Church. Rev. John Rogers, of Kittery, Maine, was

the choice of the church for its pastor, in which the parish concurred by a vote of thirty-nine to eleven, agreeing to give £250, old tenor, per annum salary, and £400 in the same currency for settlement, the latter to be paid in four annual installments. He was ordained on the 1st of February, 1744. His ministry continued till his death, in October, 1782. Long before his death the parish was weakened and impoverished by the war for independence. Business in the fisheries, in which nearly all the men in the parish were engaged, was utterly ruined, and many engaged in privatering or enlisted in the army. But few of the number survived the war, and their families were reduced to utter poverty. The parish never recovered from the blow, and Mr. Rogers had no successor. The old meeting-house gave place to a new one in 1752, which remained standing still 1840, when it was taken down, only occasional services having been held in it for many years.

THE FIFTH PARISH.—As early as 1695 a grant of land was made to John Babson, at Straitsmouth, "to set up fishing upon." "The indentation of the coast between Andrews' Point and Straitsmouth Point began to be called Sandy Bay" about that time. The growth of this part of the town was slow for many years. Prior to 1740 they had occasional preaching in their own village, and had been refused the privilege of a remission of a portion of their tax imposed by the First Parish, on condition of their supporting religious worship among themselves four months in the year. But in the year mentioned the General Court compelled the First Parish to grant the privilege. In 1754, when the whole number of tax-payers at Sandy Bay was thirty-seven, the General Court incorporated them as the Fifth Parish. "The westerly line of the new precinct extended from Cape Hedge to the highway near Beaver Dam, and thence in a northerly direction to the Squam-Parish line." A meeting-house was soon erected near the head of Long Cove; and the church was organized on the 13th of February, 1755, consisting of the following-named members, who had been dismissed from the First Church for this purpose:

Edmond Grover,  
Schemmah Grover  
Jonathan Pool,  
John Row  
Samuel Clark, Jr.

Jabez Baker,  
Henry Witham,  
Samuel Davis,  
James Parsons, Jr.  
Elihu Lurvey.

They made choice of Rev. Ebenezer Cleaveland as their minister, at a salary of sixty pounds per annum. He was ordained in December, 1755. Mr. Babson records concerning this people, that, "In forming themselves into a parish, the people of Sandy Bay assumed a pecuniary burthen of no inconsiderable amount; and it is a fact in their history, which their descendants may remember with pleasure as an evidence of their religious character, that the salary paid to their minister in 1755 was more than four times the amount of their town tax the same year





and more than twice that of their town and province tax the year preceding."

During a portion of the Revolutionary War Mr. Cleaveland served as chaplain in the American army. On his return to his parish, before the close of the war, he found his people in a distressed condition. Some of his supporters had fallen in battle; "some had died in prison-ships; many had perished at sea; and nearly all the rest fit for service were absent, fighting for their country's rights. They were deeply in debt to him for past labors; and the best they could do for his future support was to give him ninety quintals of hake-fish per annum." He became for a while engaged as superintendent of Dartmouth College lands at Llandaff, N. H.; but returned to Sandy Bay about 1785 and preached to his former flock, when not otherwise engaged, for such contributions as they were able to make. Before long he again left the Cape and preached in Amesbury, but returned to his old home at Sandy Bay in 1797, and continued his residence there till his death, on the 4th of July, 1805.

In 1804 the parish erected a new meeting-house; and in the fall of 1805 ordained as their pastor Rev. Jacob Jewett, of Hollis, N. H. His ministry extended to 1836, when he was compelled by ill health to resign. The parish enjoyed a high degree of religious prosperity during his ministry, the church membership increasing from ten to two hundred and fifty. His successor was the Rev. Wakefield Gale, of Eastport, Maine, who was installed in May, 1836. He was pastor when, in 1840, the parish, with a portion of the Third Parish, became incorporated as the town of Rockport, and for many years after that change was effected.

**UNIVERSALISTS.**—The first break from the standing order, as it was called,—the Orthodox Congregationalists, who were the original founders of the parishes,—was begun in 1774, by the preaching of Rev. John Murray, Universalist. A book advocating Universalism, written by Rev. James Rely, of London, England, had been brought to Gloucester, in 1769 or 1770, by an English sailor, probably employed on a vessel belonging to Winthrop Sargent, then and long after a ship-owner, merchant and leading man of Gloucester. It was read by Mr. Sargent and his family, and then by several others, by some of whom its doctrines, at first exciting wonder, were received at last as the true exposition of the teachings of the gospel. These believers only needed the impulse of the more public proclamation of their faith to bring them forward as a distinct body of Christians. The occasion for this presented itself in September, 1774, when, on the second visit of Mr. Murray to Boston, he was attacked in the papers by Rev. Mr. Croswell, of that city, and accused of being "a preacher of Rely's doctrine." The readers of Rely's book in Gloucester, seeing this, at once sent Mr. Sargent to Boston to solicit Mr. Murray's presence in

Gloucester. He came on the 3d of November, and remained nine days. At once he was waited upon by the deacons and elders of the First Parish, who conducted him to the house of their minister, Rev. Mr. Chandler, who was then ill, by whose permission he occupied the pulpit that evening, and on several subsequent occasions. Meetings were also held daily in the parlor of Mr. Sargent's residence on Main and Duncan Streets. On the 15th of December, Mr. Murray was again in Gloucester, and finding his labors greatly blessed, concluded to make the town his permanent home, although intending to itinerate more or less through a large portion of the country. The meeting-house of the First Parish was again open to him, but only for a brief period, as sometime during the following month the doors were closed against him. Meanwhile adherents to his views increased, and a congregation was collected, which met frequently during the week in various residences, and held public service on Sunday at Mr. Sargent's. The following May, Mr. Murray, yielding to the solicitations of Colonels Greene, Varnum and Hitchcock, to take the chaplaincy of the Rhode Island Brigade, then in camp at Jamaica Plain, entered the army. After a few months' service he was stricken with severe sickness, and was returned to Gloucester. On his recovery, he was so shocked by the distress and poverty of the inhabitants on account of the destruction of their fishing business, that he returned to camp, and procured liberal donations from his acquaintances there: "General Washington led the subscription with £10, each of the Major-Generals £5, each of the brigadiers £3, besides generous donations from many other respectable characters, in and out of the army." This he distributed to parties recommended by the selectmen of the town, thereby relieving, as he stated in a broadside subsequently published in reply to a pamphlet issued against him by the First Parish, upwards of a thousand individuals, who, in consequence of this very providential and seasonable support, were enabled to get through the worst winter they ever experienced during the war. The town, in April, 1776, "Voted unanimously their sincere thanks to the donors and to Mr. Murray."

On the coming of Mr. Forbes to minister to the First Parish, in the summer of 1776, the members of the church who had become Universalists quietly absented themselves from its public religious services. The bigotry of the people found vent in attempting to perpetrate mob violence on Mr. Murray by driving him from town. Being dissuaded from this when they had already assembled in front of the house of Mr. Sargent, they loudly warned him to go, and threatened violence if he should refuse. The following February he was summoned before the Committee of Safety, all the members of which, then present, were his openly-avowed enemies, and was served by them with a notice that he must "depart in five days from the first of March." Having paid no heed to





the notice, the matter was brought before a town-meeting on the 10th of March, and on a motion "to approve the conduct of the late Committee," "54 voted in the affirmative, and 8 in the negative." But he took no notice of this, nor does there seem to have been any further attempt to compel him to go away.

In September, 1778, the First Church publicly suspended from membership, "until their return from their error in sentiment and practice:"

Epes Sargent.	Anne Babson.	Rebecca Parsons.
Winthrop Sargent.	Lydia Prentice.	Hannah Tucker.
Eleazer Parsons.	Jemima Parsons.	Judith Stevens.
David Pearce.	Catherine Sargent.	Nancy Sanders.
Rebecca Smith.	Judith Sargent.	Jemima Cook.

These, with others,—sixty-one in all, of whom thirty-one were men and thirty women,—bound themselves together on the 1st of January, 1779, by "Articles of Association," as an "Independent Church of Christ," covenanting and agreeing to walk together in Christian love, and "resolved by God's grace, whether blessed with the public preaching of the word or not, to meet together to supplicate the divine favour, to praise our redeeming God, to hear his most holy word, and freely to communicate whatever God shall please to manifest to us for our mutual edification." They also agreed to set apart and receive as their minister, which they considered as being the same as ordaining him, their "friend and Christian brother, John Murray, from a full conviction that the same God that sent the first preachers of Jesus Christ, sent him; and that the same gospel they preached, we have from time to time received from him." Thus was created the First Universalist Church in America.

In 1780 they erected a house of worship at the corner of Main and Water Streets, which they dedicated on Christmas day. At the close of the war Mr. Murray felt compelled to frequently absent himself from Gloucester in order to answer calls all over the country for his pulpit services. The Gloucester Church continued their meetings, as they had covenanted to do, and occasionally had help from abroad. Among others who preached to them from time to time, were Revs. Moses and Elhanan Winchester, the latter a convert from the Baptists, a man of learning and of untiring zeal; John Tyler, a Rellian in theology, but continued as rector of the Episcopal Church at Norwich, Conn.; Matthew Wright, a former missionary among the Moravians; Adams Streeter, of Oxford, Mass.; Noah Parker, of Portsmouth, N. H.; and Shippie Townsend, a block-maker, of Boston, a writer of several pamphlets in defense of Universalism, and a very acceptable lay preacher.

The First Parish assessed the Universalists for the support of that organization. The Universalists claimed exemption from liability on the ground that the Bill of Rights prefixed to the State Constitution, then recently adopted, provides that "All religious societies shall, at all times, have the exclusive right

of electing their public teachers, and of contracting with them for their support and maintenance. And all moneys paid by the subject for the support of public worship shall, if he require it, be uniformly applied to the support of the public teacher or teachers of his own religious sect or denomination, provided there be any on whose instruction he attends." To this answer was made that this provision could not apply, because the congregation of Mr. Murray was not a religious society, or if it were, it had not been incorporated; nor was Mr. Murray a teacher of religion, or if so, he was not an ordained minister.

In 1782 the parish enforced their demand by seizing and selling at auction the goods of three members of the Independent Church. From Epes Sargent they took articles of silver plate, from another (perhaps Winthrop Sargent) they took English goods, and from another (probably David Pierce) the anchor of a vessel on the point of sailing. William Pierce, a brother of David, prominent in the mob against Mr. Murray, before referred to, had become a Universalist, and, on his resistance of the tax, was lodged by the parish committee in Salem jail. Failing to recover their goods by replevin, the Independent Church instituted a suit against the parish. But it was withdrawn, as it was found that in order to sustain an action, it must be brought in the name of the religious teacher from whom the money had been diverted. As Mr. Murray had passed through the country without allowing or accepting contributions for his support, he was averse to becoming such a party in the suit; but on representation being made to him that the issue affected not himself alone, but every religious denomination in the Commonwealth that was not of the standing order, and that persistence in his opposition was a sacrifice of the personal interests of his friends, and would be a cowardly giving up of a right which the Constitution guaranteed to all, he consented, and the suit was brought in due form. The case came to trial in 1783, and was continued, on appeal and review, to 1786, when it was decided in Mr. Murray's favor. Under this verdict all religious societies of whatever sect—not of the standing order—found protection, till 1792, when it was set aside by a sustained ruling of the courts to the effect that only incorporated religious societies were entitled to the privilege set forth in the Bill of Rights. While the suit of Mr. Murray was in court, other Universalist organizations, which had sprung up in various parts of the commonwealth, held an association at Oxford for mutual consultation on their rights and their dangers; and, desiring some uniform organization for the different societies and churches, the Gloucester Universalists drafted what they called "A Charter of Compact," in which they provided for the necessary officers of a religious society, and for carrying on its affairs by voluntary subscriptions. This was approved by the Association, and in September, 1785, it superseded the "Articles of Association,"



which contained no provisions for these particulars. It was signed by all the male members of the society, then numbering eighty-five.

The validity of Mr. Murray's ordination being in question, and suits begun against him, and afterwards decided to his damage,—from which, however, the General Court gave him relief,—the society, that they might not be subjected to the annoyance of further litigation, arranged for and perfected Mr. Murray's re-ordination on Christmas day, 1788. Mr. Murray having married, the society now voted to pay him a salary of one hundred pounds per annum. As he had now arranged to be in Boston once in three weeks, a deduction was probably made for the time spent there, and the first tax assessed was for £35 13s. 10d., for six months, beginning the 1st of January, 1789. This amount was assessed on one hundred and three persons. In 1792, on the reversal of the court decision before mentioned, the society availed itself of an act of incorporation, granted the 28th of June. In October, 1793, Mr. Murray dissolved his connection with the society and removed to Boston.

His successor was not settled till 1804, when Rev. Thomas Jones was invited, and entered upon a long and eventful pastorate. During the interval between Mr. Murray's removal and Mr. Jones' call, meetings were continued with considerable regularity, Revs. Thomas Barnes, Hosea Ballou, Michael Coffin, George Richards, Zephaniah Lathé, John Foster, Ebenezer Paine, Edward Turner, Joshua Flagg and others supplying the pulpit. Mr. Jones was installed on the 26th of September, 1804, and his salary was fixed at six hundred dollars per annum. In February, 1805, some members of the society agreed to open a subscription for the erection of a new meeting-house. Mr. William Pearce having purchased a large lot of land, fronting sixty-three feet on Middle Street and running back to High Street, with a frontage there of one hundred and seventy feet, the subscribers to the fund for the new meeting-house voted to take it from him on the same terms, to erect the meeting-house near the entrance back or north of the brook, and lay a handsome graveled walk from Middle Street to the front of the meeting-house; and to reserve a large lot near the northern end of the lot for a burial-ground. So much of the southern end as extends from Pine Street to Middle Street, together with the meeting-house, when completed, except the pews, to be given to the society. Three-fourths of the burial-ground was laid out in lots corresponding to the number of the pews in the meeting-house, and one lot assigned to the owner of each pew; the remaining fourth was given to the society. There were fifty-two subscribers, and the shares were one hundred at one hundred dollars each. The house was erected in 1805-6, and was dedicated October 9, 1806. It still stands, beautiful for situation and in excellent preservation. The bell, cast at the Paul Revere Foundry, and the clock for the interior of the house,

both placed where they now are before the day of dedication, still do faithful service.

On the first Sabbath service held in the new meeting-house an infant daughter of William Pearce, Jr., was dedicated to the love and service of God—a ceremony instituted some years before by Rev. John Murray, and peculiar to the Universalist Church. The same day steps were taken for organizing the body of communicants into a church distinct from the business organization created by the act of incorporation. The measure was perfected on the 23d of the following November, when nine men and twenty-four women were received and recognized as a church. The first deacons were Isaac and Payne Elwell.

In 1837, the health of the venerable pastor being feeble, Rev. Daniel D. Smith was settled as colleague, and remained till April, 1841. Arrangements were made the following month with Mr. Jones, by which his connection as pastor was dissolved, the society making provision for his maintenance during the remainder of his life, and for his wife if she should survive him. He died in August, 1846.

Rev. Frederick F. Thayer was pastor from March, 1843, to December, 1844; Rev. Henry B. Soule from June, 1845, to April, 1846; Rev. Amory D. Mayo from June, 1846, to October, 1854; Rev. W. R. G. Mellen from April, 1855, to October, 1861; Rev. George W. Skinner from June, 1862, to February, 1865; Rev. Elmer H. Capen from March, 1865, to October, 1869; Rev. Richard Eddy from May, 1870, to September, 1877; Rev. Costello Weston from April, 1879, to May, 1883, and Rev. William H. Rider, the present pastor, since October, 1883. Sunday-school organized in June, 1820.

A Second Universalist Society, as we have already seen, grew out of the changed opinions of Rev. Ezra Leonard and his people in the Third Parish in 1811; and a Third was the result of changes in the Second Parish in 1830. The Universalist ministers there under the old parish organization were Revs. William A. Stickney, Ezra Leonard, Robert L. Killam, Joseph P. Atkinson, Henry Belding, Charles Cohen, George G. Strickland, James M. Usher, Thomas Jones, William Hooper, Henry C. Leonard, John M. Spear. In 1867 a reorganization was effected, and the name Third Universalist Society was taken. A church edifice was erected in 1876, the pulpit being supplied by different preachers till the settlement of Rev. E. F. Pember in Essex, in 1874, when he became and continued during his stay in Essex the regular pastor. He was succeeded in 1877 by supplies from different preachers till July, 1883, when Rev. George J. Sanger, the present minister, also pastor at Essex, took charge. A church of seventeen members was organized in April, 1876; Alexander D. Bray and Jasper Richardson, deacons. Sunday-school organized about 1867.

A Fourth Universalist Society was organized at Sandy Bay, in February, 1821, taking the name of





the "Universal Benevolent Society." Of the twenty-three original members, several had been for many years connected with the society at the Harbor. On the settlement of Mr. Jones at the Harbor, in 1804, one-fifth of the members of his society were residents of Sandy Bay. The same year they contributed two-fifths of the amount then raised for building a new meeting-house in the Fifth Parish, in consideration of which they received the promise of the parish that they should have the use of the meeting-house twenty-one Sundays in each year. An arrangement was made not long after for Mr. Jones to preach for them every fifth Sunday; and as it was difficult for them to obtain supplies for the remaining number of Sundays to which they were entitled, they temporarily relinquished their right to those days to the Congregationalists. The arrangement with Mr. Jones continued two years, when the Congregationalists voted to themselves the exclusive use of the meeting-house. Meetings were then held by the Universalists in a school-house, and a suit in equity for the use of the meeting-house was commenced. After a protracted litigation, extending through several years, the court, virtually acknowledging the justice of the Universalists' claim, dismissed the action for want of jurisdiction, and referred them to the Legislature for redress. Preferring to build a new house rather than to have further contention about the old, the corner-stone was laid on the 21th of June, 1829, and the frame of the building, gotten out at Cambridge, and floated to Sandy Bay, was, by the volunteer services of citizens, taken from the water and raised on its foundation the ensuing 4th of July. The ministers of the society until 1840, when the territory ceased to belong to Gloucester, were Revs. Fayette Mace, Lucius R. Paige, B. B. Murray, A. C. L. Arnold, Charles Spear and Gibson Smith.

A Fifth Universalist Society was organized at the Harbor in 1843. It was composed chiefly of former members of the parent society, who withdrew from that organization about the time that Rev. Daniel D. Smith ceased to be its pastor. They took to themselves the name of the "Independent Universalist Society," and held their first meetings in Murray Institute Hall, a building standing on land belonging to the old society. Mr. Smith became their pastor in 1843, and remained with them till the summer of 1848. In September, 1845, they dedicated a meeting-house, which they had erected on Elm Street, at a cost of about three thousand dollars. A church of forty members was organized, the deacons being Richard Friend, Jr., and Joseph Friend. Rev. David H. Plumb was their minister from 1849 to 1852; and Rev. George J. Sanger from 1853 to 1856. The dissolution of the society followed soon after Mr. Sanger ceased his labors, and in 1858 the property was sold to the Methodists.

A Sixth Universalist Society was organized at

Lanesville in March, 1876. The members were previously connected with the Third Parish organization, at Annisquam; but had held meetings in Village Hall, and also formed a Sunday-school several years prior to their organization as a society, probably as early as 1860. On organizing they took the name of "The Society of the Lanesville Universalist Parish." A meeting-house was built in 1878, and dedicated the 22d of January, 1879. Rev. B. G. Russell was pastor for one year, beginning in June, 1879. Until April, 1884, the pulpit was supplied by students from Tufts Divinity School. Rev. George Procter then became pastor, and remained till September, 1885. At present the pulpit is supplied by Tufts divinity students. Sunday-school established in 1860.

A Seventh Universalist Society was organized at East Gloucester, the first ward of the city, under the name of the East Gloucester Universalist Parish, the 22d of March, 1884, and a church was organized on the 29th of March, 1886. A house of worship was erected in 1885-86. Rev. Byron G. Russell, pastor from February to June, 1886; Rev. N. R. Wright since November, 1886. Sunday-school organized on the 20th of April, 1884.

**BAPTISTS.**—The First Baptist Church was organized at Sandy Bay, on the 30th of March, 1808, and was constituted by the following-named men and women:

Benjamin Hale.	William Smith.
John Smith.	Nehemiah Grover.
Ebenezer Pool.	Nathan F. Magoun.
Seth Woodbury.	Solomon Pool.
Mrs. Martha Hale.	Mr. B. G. Witham.
Mrs. Martha Smith.	Mrs. Elizabeth Dexter.
Mrs. Sally Pool.	Mrs. Lydia Harvey.
Mrs. Eleanor Merrill.	Mrs. Abigail Miller.
Miss Mary Woodbury.	Mrs. Lucy Davis.

The meetings for religious worship were at first held in the house of Captain Benjamin Hale, who, in 1809, was licensed to preach. Rev. Elisha S. Williams, of Beverly, also often officiated as preacher from 1809 to 1812. By the year last named the church had increased to thirty-two members. The years of the war and those immediately following witnessed no additions, and but few meetings for public worship, though the members of the church convened on Sunday afternoon at the residence of Ebenezer Pool. In December, 1820, they settled their first minister, Rev. James A. Boswell, and commenced public services in a hall. In 1822 they built a house of worship. Mr. Boswell's pastorate ceased in 1823, but owing to the poverty of the church, his successor, Rev. Reuben Curtis, was not settled till 1827. His successors, up to and including the time when the territory ceased to belong to Gloucester, were,—1831, Bartlet Pease; 1834, Otis Wing; 1837, Gibbon Williams; 1838, Benjamin Knight; 1840, Otis Wing.

A Second Baptist Church was formed December 29, 1830, at the Harbor. It is now called the First Baptist Church. The original members were:



Timothy Favor.	Elizabeth Roberts.	Sally Etwell.
Benjamin Ellery.	Sally Rowe.	Esther Fears.
Joseph Fears.	Dorcas Smith.	Nancy Thomas.
John Woodbury.	Saline Baily.	Samuel Brown.
Nancy Woodbury.	Hannah Dresser.	Hannah Adams.
Esther Lighton.	Judith Ellery.	Betsy Fears.
Margaret Favor.	Lacy Steele.	

Several of the above named had been in the habit of holding social religious meetings occasionally in each other's homes during several years before their constituting a church, and, aided by pastors of the Salem Baptist Association, had frequently had Sunday services in Union Hall. Early in 1830 they took steps towards the erection of a house of worship on Pleasant Street. It was dedicated on the 21st of September, the same year. This gave place to another, erected on the corner of Pleasant and Middle Streets, and dedicated in March, 1851. In 1869, when an extensive remodeling of this edifice, involving an outlay of \$18,000, was in progress, it was utterly destroyed by fire. A temporary building was at once put up on Mason Street, where worship was held till May, 1871, when a new and commodious church edifice, erected on the site of the one destroyed by fire, was dedicated and occupied. The pastors of the church have been: Rev. Samuel Adam, March 24, 1831, to 1834; Rev. William Lamson, June, 1837, to October, 1849; Rev. J. A. B. Stone, November, 1839, to October, 1841; Rev. William Lamson, November, 1841, to August, 1848; Rev. Joseph R. Manton, February, 1849, to September, 1850; Rev. Miles Sanford, March, 1851, to July, 1853; Rev. Samuel Everett Pierce, September, 1853, to June, 1860; Rev. L. M. Woodruff, January, 1862, to March, 1864; Rev. George B. Gow, December, 1864, to March, 1867; Rev. Forest F. Emerson, April, 1868, to September, 1873; Rev. J. M. English, July, 1875, to March, 1882; Rev. C. D. Morris, D.D., pastor since March, 1882. Sunday school organized in 1827.

A branch church was established at East Gloucester in January, 1861, and became duly organized as the "East Gloucester Baptist Church" on the 13th of July, 1863. It was originally composed of fifty-four persons, dismissed from the parent church for the purpose of creating this organization. The society was organized in March, 1865, and incorporated in April, 1878.

A chapel was erected in 1858, before the creation of any organization. It was greatly enlarged ten years later, and dedicated February 3, 1869. The first pastor of the church was Rev. Andrew Dunn, settled in September, 1867; his successors, with the dates of their settlement, have been: Revs. Joseph H. Gannett, August, 1867; A. M. Higgins, June, 1874; George B. McCullough, February, 1878; L. A. Hall, September, 1881; George Dana Sanders, June, 1885. Sunday school organized in 1858.

Meetings of the Baptists (unorganized) were held at Annisquam early in the present century, conducted by Rev. Epes Davis, who was ordained as a Free-Will

Baptist preacher not far from 1810, and for a long time held public religious services in his own house. About the year 1825 he joined the Calvinistic Baptist Church, and continued a preacher in the same till 1840. In 1830 he built a meeting-house at Annisquam Point, which was dedicated in June, 1831. It passed out of his hands in 1838, and has since been used for secular purposes. It is now known as "Mechanics' Hall."

**METHODISTS.**—The first Methodist Episcopal Society was organized in 1826. In 1805 John Edney, an English Wesleyan, moved into Gloucester and became a resident in the Fourth Parish, and held meetings in his own house. Probably at his solicitation, the first Methodist sermon in the town was preached there in 1806, by Rev. George Pickering, presiding elder of the Boston District. Mr. Pickering made several visits and may have remained here some little time, as, on account of the large crowds attracted to Mr. Edney's house, some of the citizens professed alarm for the peace and good order of the neighborhood, and made formal application to the selectmen to interfere. They attempted to do so, by calling on Mr. Pickering, and requesting him to leave town. He calmly assured them that he knew what he was about, and should remain and preach as long as there was a prospect of his doing good. He was not further molested. Mr. Babson says of this movement: "A few converts were the fruits of these early labors; but the field appears to have been almost entirely abandoned from this time till 1821, when, and during the four following years, Mr. Pickering, as a missionary of the New England Conference, frequently visited the town, and preached either in a private house or in the old meeting-house, 'up in town.' On these visits 'class-meetings' for religious inquiry and conversation were held; and then were laid the foundations of a permanent ministry." The society organized in 1826 was composed of about twenty persons; and the following-named persons were the first to be formed into a class:

Thomas Hutton.	Judith Tucker.	Rachel Rogers.
Dorcas Marston.	Clara A. Adams.	Lacy Lowe.
Isabel Hodgkins.	Betsy Parker.	

Rev. Aaron Waitt was the first minister appointed to the field, which included the whole Cape. His Sunday services were usually held in the old meeting-house in the Fourth Parish, till the fall of 1828, when he began to preach in a new meeting-house erected by the Methodists, on Prospect Street, at the Harbor. This house continued to be occupied by the society till 1858, when they purchased the meeting-house on Elm Street, erected by the "Independent Universalist Society." This was used by them till 1883, when, on the 31st of October, they dedicated and occupied a new house of worship on Prospect Street. Mr. Waitt's successors were Revs. William R. Stone, Aaron Summers, Aaron Josselyn, John Bailey, Leonard B. Griffin, E. M. Beebe, Stephen Hiler, H. P.





Hall, Joel Steele, Mr. Burrows, H. M. Bridge, W. C. Clark, John Collum, J. Wilson, Linus Fish, H. R. Parmenter, N. A. Soule, Converse L. McCurdy, J. J. P. Collyer, W. C. High, J. C. Smith, A. F. Herrick, N. T. Whitaker, Albert Gould, Edward A. Titus, George F. Eaton, S. B. Sweetzer, J. W. Higgins. Mr. Higgins is the present pastor. Messrs. Burrows, Clark and Collum were local preachers, who had lay occupations. Sunday-school organized in 1826.

A Second Methodist Society and Church were organized in 1838, at Riverdale. Meetings in that neighborhood had not been interrupted by the erection of the house of worship at the Harbor, in 1828, but Mr. Waitt's labors, as were those of his successors until 1838, were divided between the Harbor and Town Parish, with occasional preaching at Sandy Bay. In the fall of 1837, Mr. Samuel Curtis, of Riverdale, having donated a lot of land for church purposes, steps were taken for erecting a house of worship thereon. The edifice was completed the next year, and dedicated on the 17th of November, 1838. The bell still in use on this meeting-house was purchased of the Congregationalist Church in Rockport, and is the same as gave the alarm to the citizens in September, 1814, on the occasion—as narrated in the chapter on Military Affairs—when the British frigate "Nymph" opened fire on the town.

The ministers at Riverdale since the Methodists there ceased to be under the pastoral care of the minister at the Harbor, have been, with the dates of their appointment: Revs. Leonard B. Griffin, 1838; Benjamin F. Lambord, 1840; Ziba B. C. Dunham, 1841; Zachariah A. Mudge, 1842; Thomas C. Pearce, 1843; C. R. Foster, 1844; Daniel Richards, 1845; John Poulson, 1847; John G. Cary, 1848; Jarvis Wilson, 1850; Augustus F. Bailey, 1851; William F. La Count, 1853; Z. B. C. Dunham, 1855; Horace F. Morse, 1856; Samuel A. Cushing, 1858; N. S. Spaulding, 1859; John Middleton, 1861; S. Chapin, 1863; W. F. La Count, 1865; A. J. Hall, 1868; W. J. Hambleton, 1871; A. M. Osgood, 1872; John Capen, 1873; W. P. Blackmer, 1874; W. Wilkie, 1876; N. H. Martin, 1878; L. A. Mesler, 1881; C. M. Hall, 1884; T. C. Martin, 1887. Sunday-school organized 1838.

A Third Methodist Church was organized by forming a class at Sandy Bay, in 1831, by Rev. Aaron Lummus, then settled at the Harbor. The members of the class were:

Levi Cleaves.	Hattie Tarr.	Rhoda Cleaves.
Niky Cleaves.	Charles Wormwood.	Betsy Tarr.
Ann Cleaves.	Zacharias Roberts.	John Cleaves.
Sarah Tarr.	Louis Cook.	

This class was connected with the Harbor Church until 1838, when it was set off as a circuit with Town Parish, under the charge of Rev. Leonard B. Griffin. A meeting-house was erected and dedicated that year. In 1839 the society was made a separate charge, and Rev. Israel Washburn was appointed

pastor. Rev. Thomas G. Brown was pastor when the territory became a part of the town of Rockport.

A Fourth Methodist Church began in the organization of the following-named persons as a class, in May, 1871, at Bay View:

Kilby P. Sargent.	George W. Hodgdon.	Sarah Griffin.
George Lane.	Eliza J. Hodgdon.	Charles W. Howland
Thomas Lane.	Lincoln Littlefield.	William Kelly.
Nancy Griffin.	Eliza J. Littlefield.	Richard Pillage.
Sarah Roberts.	Clara Ramsdell.	N. Hart.
Daniel Roberts.	Moses Ramsdell.	M. M. Hatch.
William P. Hayden.	Warren Griffin.	

A church edifice was erected on a lot donated by Mr. Kilby P. Sargent, and was dedicated on the 14th of March, 1871. Rev. Abner Sanderson was the first pastor. His successors were Revs. Allen J. Hall, William B. Toulmin, George E. Sanderson, John Peterson, William Silverthorn, William F. Lawford, and the present incumbent, Rev. George W. Coon. Sunday-school organized 1871.

A Fifth Methodist Church was organized on the 23d of September, 1885, at East Gloucester, with twenty-two members. A church building was begun in June of that year, and finished in January, 1887. It has no resident pastor, but is regularly supplied with preaching. Sunday-school organized 1885.

Work among the Swedes was begun by the Methodists in Gloucester, by forming a class in November, 1874. In 1884 Rev. Albert Hallen was appointed by the Conference to labor among the Swedes on the Cape.

CONGREGATIONALISTS.—An Orthodox Congregationalist Society was organized at Lanesville on the 6th of March, 1828. They at once erected a chapel, which was dedicated in October the same year. It was greatly enlarged in 1853, and gave place some thirteen years later to the present commodious house of worship, dedicated the 31st of January, 1866. In August, 1830, the following-named persons were duly formed into "The North Orthodox Congregational Church:"

Jonathan Harraden.	Hannah Young.	Susan Dunsimon.
William Christie.	Mary Andrews.	Deborah P. Young.
Matthew S. Giles.	Nancy Young.	Nancy B. Young.
Ethier Lane.		

Their first pastor, installed in March, 1831, was Rev. Moses Sawyer. His successors have been: 1840, Rev. David Tilton; 1850, Rev. Edwin Seabury; 1854, Rev. N. Richardson; 1857, Rev. Francis N. Peloubet; 1860, Rev. Ebenezer Burgess; 1863, Rev. Thomas Morong; 1868, Rev. Will C. Wood; 1871, Rev. William H. Teel; 1875, Rev. Samuel C. Andrews; 1882, Rev. Josiah G. Willis; Rev. Frank H. Reed, the present pastor, August 16, 1885. Sunday-school organized 1830.

In November, 1829, Andrew Parker, Nathaniel Babson, Judith Parsons, Elizabeth J. Stevens, Sarah Harraden, Anna Harraden, Pamela Stacy, the seven members of the First Parish Church who had withdrawn from that organization during the pastorate of





Rev. Mr. Hildreth, were organized into "The Evangelical Congregational Church" by an ecclesiastical council called for that purpose. Some of them, and probably others not members of the church, formed a society on the 13th of March, 1830, and took the name "The Evangelical Society." In 1831 they erected a house of worship on the corner of Middle and Church Streets, which was dedicated on the 8th of September of that year. It was sold and removed in 1854, and a more commodious structure was built on the same spot, and dedicated the 22d of March, 1855. The first pastor was Rev. Charles S. Porter, ordained the 1st of August, 1832. His successors, with dates of their settlement over the church, have been: 1835, Rev. Christopher M. Nickels; 1848, Rev. James Aiken; 1853, Rev. J. L. Hatch; 1858, Rev. Lysander Dickerman; 1860, Rev. I. C. Thacher; 1871, Rev. Seth W. Segur; 1874, Rev. F. B. Makepeace; 1879, Rev. Frank G. Clark, who resigned in April, 1887. His successor has not yet been chosen. Sunday-school organized 1829.

The "Trinitarian Congregational Society" at West Gloucester was duly organized, as was also the church connected therewith, in 1833. A house of worship was erected on the main road from Gloucester to Essex in 1834. The pastors have been: Rev. C. B. Smith, to May, 1861; Rev. Samuel Cole, August, 1862, to 1867; Rev. Charles D. Pigeon, June, 1868, to October, 1872; Rev. Luther Farnham, November, 1872, to November, 1873; Rev. Nathaniel Richardson, May, 1874, to November, 1879; Rev. Alexander C. Childs, May, 1880, to May, 1885; Rev. Charles F. Goldsmith, June, 1885, to June, 1887. The pulpit is now supplied by Rev. James C. Alvord, of Andover Theological School. Sunday-school probably organized in 1832.

In January, 1887, a Congregational Society, and a church entitled the "Union Congregational Church," of twenty members, was organized in the new Union Chapel, at Magnolia. Regular services are held in the old Union Chapel, erected some years ago, and Rev. Mr. Goldsmith, of West Gloucester, has been the regular supply for the pulpit. A Union Sunday-school has been held in the chapel several years.

ROMAN CATHOLIC.—*St. Ann's Church.*—In the accompanying illustration we have an excellent picture of the church property of the Catholic parish of St. Ann, Gloucester, Mass. It is perfect except in the relative position of the buildings, which form almost a square, and are therefore even more desirably located. The church and convent are located on Park Street. The parochial house and school stand picturesquely at the head of Dale Avenue, only a few rods distant from the City Hall. A more desirable location could not be found in the whole city for the house. Nor could the citizens find a more beautiful building for the vicinity of their handsome City Hall.

This is plainly a group of church property in which the richest parish in the land might take a virtuous pride. And it merits our admiration all the more, that it is the pious offering to God and religion of our Cape Ann fishermen. It is truly a great work for a parish neither rich nor over-numerous. And it appears all the greater as you read, at the foot of the picture, the date of erection of the several buildings. Only twelve years ago this congregation had to worship in the poorest church in town, with little prospects of anything better in the near future. But a glance at this picture soon reveals the possibilities of the united efforts of a zealous priest and people.

The corner-stone of this magnificent granite church was laid only in 1876. This parochial house, equally handsome and substantial, was built in 1880; and the school and convent were completed in 1886. It is a most extraordinary record of only ten years.

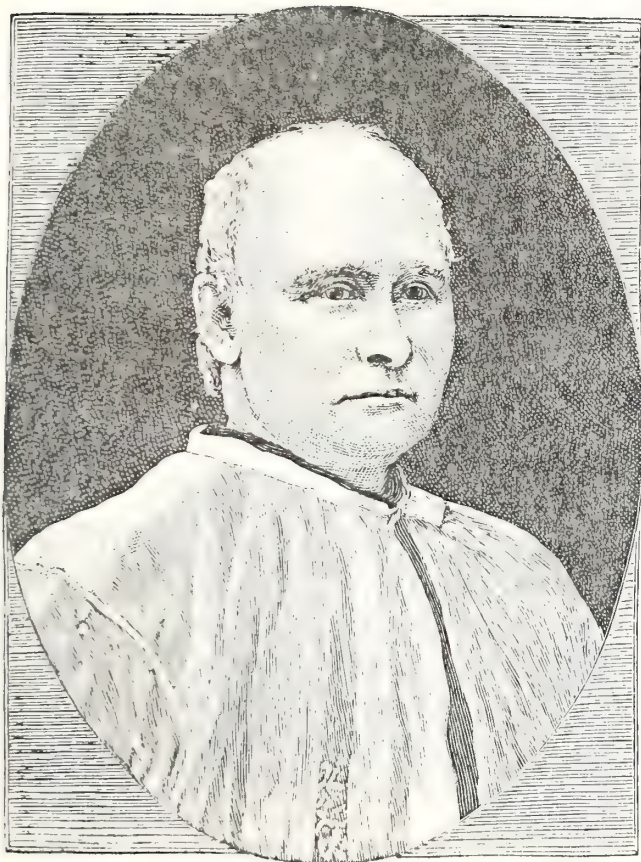
The Cape Ann fishermen have here a grand centennial monument, as may be seen from the figures 1876, found inscribed on the corner-stone of this magnificent granite church. And well may they be proud of this, their fisherman church, so appropriately dedicated to St. Ann, the mother of Mary, the mother of God. It is here at this holy shrine that so many of these brave men piously prepare themselves for the perilous trip. And from its golden cross, brightly glittering in the sun, some three hundred feet above the level of the sea, they reverently receive a parting benediction, and, on their return, this self-same emblem of salvation first meets their anxious gaze for home, and once more invites them within its sacred precincts for prayer and thanksgiving for their safe deliverance from so many dangers.

The following brief description can hardly fail to be of interest and advantage to the many summer visitors, who are becoming more and more numerous every year, as this healthful resort is becoming better known:

This church is built from the choicest material out of the depths of the Rockport Granite Company's quarries. The style is pure Gothic, and it is sufficiently ornamental to be recognized as the grand and chief ornament of the city by all its citizens, regardless of creed or denomination.

It has six spacious entrances—three through a commodious vestibule and three to the basement. This basement might of itself pass for quite a church, having solid hard-wood pews with over a thousand sittings, with its high and neatly frescoed ceiling and elegantly carved altar, on either side of which stands a commodious vestry-room. The three front entrances to the church are large, pointed openings, with heads of tracery, that in the centre having moulded copings. Over this central entrance is a very handsome rose window, sixteen feet in diameter, with label mouldings of granite. The side windows, eight on each side, giving one in each bay, are five and one-half by fifteen feet, pointed and with heads of





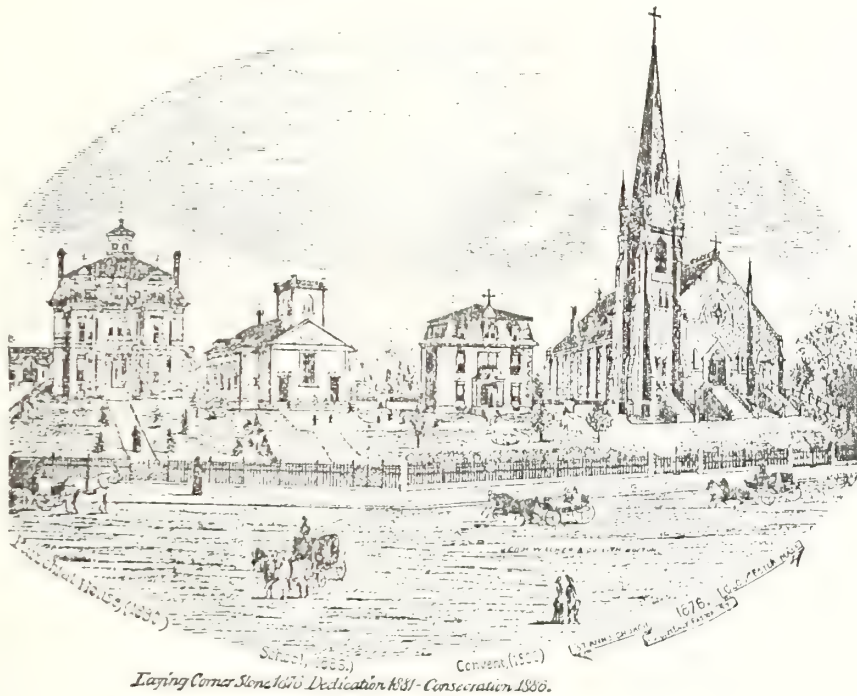
*J. J. Healy*





tracery. The roof is lighted in the dormers, one in each bay; it is slated with the best Eastern slate, with bands of unfading Vermont green. The interior arrangements consist of nave, aisles and chancel, the latter with a vestry on either side, connected by a passage in the rear of the main altar. The aisles are three in number, leading from the several entrances, the main aisle being six feet and the others four feet in width. The roof is open-timbered, with the timbers cased and moulded, and pointed in form. The organ gallery over the vestibule, extending slightly into the auditorium, is the only gallery in the church. The chancel, at the rear of the auditorium, is oc-

richly decorated. The windows are of cathedral glass, and very rich and elegant in design and color, and the walls are richly decorated. In the frescoing, as in everything else in the building, the pure geometrical Gothic style has been scrupulously adhered to in every detail, and, amid countless varieties of beautiful shades and shadows, the most perfect unity of design and color has been most admirably preserved. On the sides of the front entrance beneath the organ gallery are two beautiful groups of paintings in life-size by Schumacher, one representing the divine commission of the twelve apostles to preach the Gospel; the other, the same group, at the



tagonal in form, with an arch forty feet wide and sixty feet high, pointed and with heavy stucco mouldings. It contains four windows, four feet by fourteen each, with figures in richly-stained glass. These figures represent the four evangelists, with their respective emblems—the ox, lion, eagle and angel.

The altars, three in number, made from the architect's design, and in style and proportion in perfect keeping with the other work, are all in marble, set in mosaic style of exquisite variety, and represent nearly all the nations of Europe. The main altar, some thirty feet high, is one of the handsomest in this country. The nave arches, sixteen in number (eight on each side), are pointed in form, with heavy moulding, and springing from richly-carved caps and graceful columns twenty-four inches in diameter. The wainscoting, altar rail, gallery front, etc., are finished in brown ash, and all the work in the roof is of pine,

ascension of the blessed Saviour. Over the side altars are two real works of art of great merit, brought from Florence by the pastor in 1878—one a beautiful gem of the Raphael school of art, representing the "Virgin with the Divine Infant Visited by St. Elizabeth and St. John the Baptist;" the other is of the Flemish school of art, representing the "Adoration of the Magi at the Stable of Bethlehem."

A description of the countless sacred emblems which everywhere greet the eye, and representing scenes in the life of the Saviour, would require too much space. The student of biblical and ecclesiastical lore may here find a rich field for interesting study, not for hours, but for whole days, in their pictorial illustration. Crowning this sacred edifice is a steeple towering in graceful proportions one hundred and eighty-five feet in height. And in the handsome belfry of fine-cut granite hangs the largest and mel-



lowest church-bell in the entire State of Massachusetts.

This church alone cost one hundred thousand dollars, and the entire group has involved an expenditure of one hundred and forty thousand dollars. Hence these words of Bishop O'Reilly in his preface to his sermon,—“This is a surprise to all the priests not only of this diocese, but of all New England. Praise is in the mouths of all. Let it not be said that the people have not been extremely generous, many of them poor and making their living by toiling on the sea. Their hearts are in the right place; they have the faith, and is it not cheerful when they are nearing land to see the first object that of their church, the cross on the highest tower glittering in the sunshine?”

Forty years ago saw no Catholic congregation in this place. Among the priests present at this consecration was the Rev. D. O'Callaghan, the respected pastor of St. Augustine's, South Boston, who, as altar-boy from Salem, served the first Mass in Gloucester. The Rev. Thomas Shahan, then the pious pastor of Salem, purchased for them a Baptist Church, which was dedicated by Rev. John O'Brien, of Lowell, September 30, 1855, the sermon being preached by Rev. N. S. O'Brien. A few months thereafter Rev. Dr. Acquarone became the first pastor, and remained in charge until, at the age of eighty, he retired in 1871 to his native Italy.

The REV. J. J. HEALY, to whose indefatigable zeal and energy this parish owes its present prosperous condition, was born near Bantry, County Cork, Ireland, January 30, 1835. He was ordained a priest in St. Mary's Seminary, Baltimore, Md., June 30, 1868. After three years in St. James parish, Salem, Mass., he took charge of his Gloucester parish, September 5, 1871. The Catholic Church property in Gloucester was then limited to the old wooden building, formerly a Baptist Church, scarcely sufficient accommodation for the Sunday-school which the new pastor soon rallied around him. There being no parochial house, the first six weeks were spent in a hotel. During these few weeks the Sunday-school was organized, certain religious societies established, and a respectable parochial house was purchased and soon suitably furnished. All this rush rather excited the quiet people, who never expected to see all this accomplished during their natural lives. They even assembled in church to protest against such innovations and the rashness of the priest in thus purchasing a house without their counsel and consent. On this occasion a more or less stormy discussion took place between priest and people, wherein the former evidently came off victorious, for he not only persisted in his house transaction, but soon set about purchasing house-lots around the old church, with the evident determination of some time in the future building a more suitable church. The people were innocent enough in their remonstrance, as the sequel plainly shows. For upon ocular demon-

stration of the extraordinary zeal and business capacity of their pastor they soon rallied to his generous support. Lot after lot was purchased in quick succession, and the old buildings were economically displaced and disposed of. It was, of course, an expensive way of getting land, but all the surroundings being built on, and this spot being controlled and otherwise desirable, he was left no choice in this matter. Some thought a somewhat larger and better church ought to be begun before a great while, but not a few declared the old church good enough for this poor congregation. But before they had time to arrive at any unanimous conclusion the excavations were progressing, and in dimensions somewhat alarming. A new church was evidently inevitable, and the people, with the best grace possible, anxiously awaited future developments.

The new foundations seemed rather heavy for a wooden structure, and a brick one would, of course, be too expensive; and it was not until the walls arose far above the surface with handsome, substantial granite that the good people believed that they were about to have a veritable granite church. Both Catholics and Protestants stared and wondered, reluctant to express their innermost thoughts. But the administration was such a great success from the beginning, and so far beyond their highest expectations, that they determined more and more to give it a fair and full trial.

Collections and fairs followed in quick succession, and so marvelously successful were the results that the people became more and more confirmed in faith and works. The year 1876 saw the laying of the corner-stone and the completion of this handsome granite edifice,—this grand centennial monument of both priest and people; and with the use of their first staving was finished not only its handsome frescoing, but its three magnificently rich marble altars. Soon after followed the erection of its grand organ, regarded the best in Essex County; the granite belfry and tower, and finally the placing and blessing of the largest and mellowest of church-bells in New England. In 1880 a magnificent parochial house of faced brick, with brown stone trimmings and finest granite underpinning, equally grand in all its other parts, found them in possession of the finest priests' house in the archdiocese.

The last parochial work was the very pretty convent and the school, with six large school-rooms, the best that can be found in the city. All continued to praise and admire this great work. But although very satisfactory returns were annually read of all moneys received, the absence of any public report of the indebtedness left the timid somewhat fearful. And it was not till they had seen their grand church solemnly consecrated, and with all the richness and grandeur which it actually contains, out of debt, that all with one accord united in devout praise and thanksgiving for the great things the Lord had done for them in so brief a period.

This church was consecrated July 25, 1886, by Most





Rev. John J. Williams, Archbishop of Boston, assisted by fifty of the clergy from this and neighboring dioceses, with Rev. J. P. Bodfish, rector of the Cathedral, as grand master of ceremonies, and Rev. Charles W. Regan, of St. Ann's Church, this city, assistant master. The consecration services began at 7 A.M. and lasted until 9.30 A.M.

A special train arrived from Boston at 9.45 A.M., bringing about fifty priests and a select choir of forty of Boston's vocalists, who sang the High Mass of consecration. The sermon was by the Right Rev. P. T. O'Reilly, Bishop of Springfield. The officers of the Mass were as follows: Rev. Hugh Roe O'Donnell, of East Boston, celebrant; Rev. W. P. McQuaid, of Boston, deacon; Rev. M. F. Flatly, of Malden, sub-deacon, in presence of the most reverend archbishop, with Very Rev. William Byrne, V.G., Very Rev. John Hogan, S.S., D.D., superior of the ecclesiastical seminary of Brighton, assistant priests; also Right Rev. Bishop O'Reilly, of Springfield, with his vicar-general, Very Rev. P. Healy, of Chicopee, and Rev. Thomas Griffin, of Worcester, chancellor of the diocese; also Father Neagle, chancellor of the archdiocese; and P. P. Chapon, S.S., D.D., professor of dogma, Brighton; Professor Rev. Louis Walsh; Professor Rev. J. Begley, of Brighton Seminary; Revs. John J. Gray, of Salem; J. Harrington, of Lynn; John Tierney, of Rockland; Christopher McGrath, of Somerville; J. J. Harkins, P. Phelan, of Holyoke; James Quan, of Webster; P. Quaille, of Turner's Falls; M. Moran, of Boston; and Rev. John McMahon, of Charlestown, who accompanied his brother, the Bishop of Hartford.

The following musical programme was most happily rendered by forty select vocalists from the best Boston choirs, under the able direction of Mr. John J. McCluskey; and the new organ, the finest in Essex County, was at its best under the inspiring touch of Mr. J. Frank Donahoe, the worthy organist of the Boston Cathedral.

Berthoven's grand Mass in C, sung by Miss Ellen A. McLaughlin, leading soprano of Boston Cathedral; Mrs. Celia Mooney, leading alto at Boston Cathedral; Miss Tessie M. Flynn, leading alto at St. James' Church, Boston; Mr. John J. McCluskey, leading basso at the Boston Cathedral; with a chorus of forty voices, and Mr. J. Frank Donahoe, organist of the Cathedral. Mr. Donahoe performed a grand march composed by himself and the "Offertoire" of Baptiste. Miss McLaughlin sang at the offertory, and Mr. Farley sung "Veni Creator," composed by Cirillo, and the grand choral "Te Deum." At one o'clock the bishops and priests dined at the parochial residence, and the choir, with other invited guests, some fifty of the laity, dined at the Pavilion Hotel. At two o'clock they were treated to a drive through the city and its surroundings. At 3.30 P.M. there was an eloquent lecture on "Education," by Rev. Thomas J. Conaty, of Worcester, with a sacred concert, as follows:

1. Organ Solo—"Priests' March from Athalia".....Mendelssohn  
Mr. J. Frank Donahoe.
2. Soprano Solo—"Salve Regina".....Datta  
Miss Ellen A. McLaughlin.
3. Pilgrims' chorus of forty voices.
4. Contralto Solo—"Fac ut portem," from "Stabat Mater".....Rossini  
Mrs. D. A. Ring, leading; contralto of St. Augustine's Church,  
South Boston.
5. Tenor Solo—"Vigilus Annuntii," from "Stabat Mater".....Rossini  
Mr. John Farley.
6. "Hallelujah Chorus"—Grati Chorus.....Handel
7. Lecture by Rev. T. J. Conaty, of Worcester.
8. Bass Solo—"God Everywhere".....Lachner  
Mr. John J. McCluskey, basso of Boston Cathedral
9. "The Heavens are telling the Glory of God."  
Miss McLaughlin, Mr. Farley, Mr. McCluskey and chorus

And at 7.30 P.M. the grand church was again crowded for pontifical vespers by Right Rev. Lawrence McMahon, Bishop of Hartford; Rev. Louis Walsh, professor at the St. John Ecclesiastical Seminary, being master of ceremonies.

The vespers and benediction were sung by St. Ann's choir, under the able direction of Miss Carrie Simpson, their own organist. And thus appropriately terminated the programme of this great day for Gloucester.

*Church of the Sacred Heart.*—Mass was first celebrated in Lanesville in 1850. Services were held several years in Village Hall. A church was erected between Lanesville and Bay View in 1876. Rev. Thomas Barry, officiating also at Rockport, had charge of the church several years. The present priest in charge is Rev. Daniel S. Healy, also in charge of the congregation at Rockport. Sunday-school organized in 1855.

**EPISCOPALIAN.**—The parish of St. John's Episcopal Church was formed in the summer of 1863, and reorganized the 16th of October, 1871. Services conducted by the late Rev. Dr. Edson, of Lowell, were held in Gloucester in the summer of 1862, and other visiting and neighboring clergy soon followed. These services were held in Magnolia Hall, a building occupying the site of the present church edifice, the latter being erected in 1864, and consecrated by the Right Rev. Benjamin H. Paddock, D.D., Bishop of the Diocese of Massachusetts, on the 14th of September, 1874. The first rector of the church was Rev. Joshua R. Pierce, who was chosen on the 29th of March, 1864, and resigned on the 1st of December, 1865. His successors have been Rev. J. Frank Winkley, fifteen months from the 21st of November, 1866; Rev. James Reid, from April, 1872, to November, 1876; Rev. W. R. Hooper, from 1877 to April, 1882; Rev. Charles A. Hayden, the present rector, took charge on the 1st of December, 1882. Sunday-school organized in 1862.

**SWEDENBORGHIAN.**—The First Society of the New Church was organized in May, 1871. Services were at first held at the residence of their pastor, Rev. Robert P. Rogers; and subsequently in the hall of the Scientific and Literary Association. They are now temporarily suspended.





UNDENOMINATIONAL.—A religious organization, chiefly designed to meet the religious needs of summer visitors at Magnolia, was established in 1885, and a house of worship, called "The Magnolia Church," was erected the same year. The cost, including land, was seven thousand five hundred dollars.

## CHAPTER CVII.

### GLOUCESTER—(Continued).

*Schools—Lyceum—Savory Free Library—Scientific Society—Non sparsers.*

DURING the first sixty years of the settlement of the Cape, whatever schools there were, or whatever instruction was given in the rudiments of learning, aside from home training, resulted from private enterprises, which were probably not very numerous. Ezekiel Collins, born in 1644, taught writing, and perhaps some other branches of learning, in private families. Other citizens probably rendered similar service. The first action taken by the town was in 1696, when the selectmen were ordered to "provide a schoolmaster in convenient time." At another town-meeting, in 1698, in action on an article in the warrant "about a schoolmaster, whether they would choose one or no, the vote carried it to choose one," and Thomas Riggs, Sr., was chosen to that office, "to have one shilling and sixpence a day during the town's pleasure, and the said Riggs's liking to carry it on." This arrangement must have been of brief duration, for in 1701, at a Quarterly-Session Court in Salem, the town was presented for neglect in establishing and maintaining schools. A school was opened in the beginning of 1703, and continued, probably with wide gaps between the terms, till 1706. In 1707 the town's delinquency in this matter was again a subject of complaint at court. Proceedings were stayed, however, by the town's arranging for a school to be opened. In 1809 Mr. Joshua Moody was engaged to teach one quarter for eight pounds; and, in addition to the common branches, he was "to teach latine, if scholars appear." Since 1812 schools have been among the permanent institutions of Gloucester.

The first school-house was built in 1708, and was located "on the easterly side of the meeting-house." Its dimensions, as ordered by the town, were, "length, 24 feet; width, 16 feet; height of stud, 6 feet." The cost of the completed building was £24 15s. Prior to this time the sessions of the school had been held in the meeting-house. For about thirty years the public grammar school was kept in this school-house, not without complaint, however, that, on account of its distance from their homes, a considerable portion of the children were deprived of its advantages. To remedy this, in part, land was granted the people of

Sandy Bay, in 1725, on which to erect a school-house, "to keep a good school in for the Godly instruction of children, and teaching of them to read and write good English;" and in 1826 a similar grant was made to the inhabitants of the Head of the Harbor. It was rapidly becoming manifest, however, that the neighborhood in which the grammar school building was located was fast losing its importance. Population was increasing much more rapidly in other portions of the town. The first serious remonstrance against the existing state of things came from the inhabitants of Annisquam, who commenced an action against the town for not giving them their proportion of the school privileges. The result of their remonstrance was an arrangement which for many years satisfied all parts of the town. Mr. Babson thus states the scheme: "In a town-meeting, October, 1735, a plan was adopted by which the territory was divided into districts, conforming to the parish lines, afterwards established, with the exception that three school districts were formed from the section now known as the First Parish. The number of districts was seven; and the school was apportioned to each according as its proportion of the town rate was to the whole tax. Each district was to provide a convenient school-house; and, in case of neglect to do so, was to lose its turn for three years—the time employed in the circuit. To conform to the old Colony law, the school was, of course, wherever kept, to be free for all the inhabitants of the town. This arrangement continued many years, and gave the people no further trouble than to vote triennially that the school 'circulate' as heretofore.

"Two of the triennial apportionments are preserved, and are interesting as showing the relative wealth of the districts at their respective dates:—

"Dec. 3, 1751. The Town School was proportioned For three years.

	Months.
The Harbour Ward's proportion .....	9
Eastern Point and ye head of ye harbour .....	4½
The western side of ye cut .....	3
The Cape .....	1½
The Westerly Ward .....	1½
The Town, or 1 <sup>st</sup> Parish .....	3½
Squam Ward .....	5½

Total .....

"Dec. 29, 1857. The Selectmen proportioned the School to the several parishes according to the town rate in 1751, for two masters each three years, equal to one master 6 years.

	Months.	Days.
The Harbor Parish .....	34	
The Cape .....	3	19
The Town Parish .....	10	16
Squam Parish .....	11	4
The West Parish .....	13	27
Total .....	72	6½

The apportionment for 1757 was the last made in the attempt to include the whole town in the "circulating" system. In 1758 the grammar school was permanently located at the Harbor, and a circulating school was maintained in the other parishes. Under





"ROCK LAWN"—BAY VIEW.  
RESIDENCE OF JONAS H. FRENCH,  
GLOUCESTER, MASS.





this arrangement, which continued until the breaking out of the War for Independence, each parish, except the Fifth, had several months' public instruction every year. The latter could only have a three months' school in two years. A school-house, built by private subscription about this time, and located on the corner of Middle and Washington Streets, is supposed to have been used by the grammar school. During the war the schools were broken up, but on the return of peace the selectmen were instructed to hire a suitable teacher and re-open the grammar school. The schools in the several parishes were also soon re-established on the system in use at the time of their interruption. Discrimination in favor of the boys seems to have been made in school instruction, for in 1790 Rev. Eli Forbes presented to the town, in behalf of the school committee, a report concerning the condition of the schools, in which several reforms were urged, and among them the erection of a building for the grammar school, and provision for the education of girls, whom he characterized as "a tender and interesting branch of the community that have been neglected in the public schools of this town."

In 1793 the town voted to raise £300 for the erection of a school-house. It was located on Granite Street; was a square building two stories high and was furnished with a belfry and bell. It answered for a time the double purpose of town offices and school, and was often used for elections and other town-meetings. On the 5th of March, 1795, the citizens assembled at the meeting-house, where they formed in procession, marched to the school-house, where a prayer of dedication was offered by Rev. Mr. Forbes, after which they returned to the meeting-house and listened to a sermon from him, based on the words: "Instead of thy fathers shall be thy children, whom thou mayest make princes in all the earth," Ps. xlv. 16. After standing on Granite Street about sixty years this school-house was moved to Beacon Street, and remodeled for the accommodation of a primary school, to which use it is still put.

In 1801 the town availed itself of the privilege granted by a general statute and divided its territory into school districts. The number at first established was eleven, among which, after deducting the salary of the grammar school teacher, it divided its school money according to the number of polls in each district. The whole amount raised for school purposes in 1805 was two thousand dollars. In 1826, such was the increasing complaint of other portions of the town in regard to inconvenience occasioned by the permanent location of the grammar school at the Harbor, it was again made a circulating school. But before long that school was practically abolished by the town's voting that the money appropriated for its support should be divided among the several districts. In 1839 it was again re-opened, but again discontinued in 1845, to be temporarily revived in 1849, but to be superseded, at the close of that year, by a better plan.

The teachers of the town grammar school, from its establishment to its being superseded, were:

Thomas Riggs .....	1769	Thomas Pierce .....	1799
John Newman .....	1763	Samuel Pierce .....	1761
John Ring .....	1765	Thomas Martlett .....	1762
Joshua Gardner .....	1767	James Peatrice .....	1764
Joshua Moody .....	1769	Philemon Stacy .....	1767 to 1771
Samuel Tompson .....	1771	Thomas Sanders .....	1781
Joseph Parsons .....	1775	Obadiah Parsons .....	1791
Edward Tompson .....	1781	John Ewins .....	1802
William Osgood .....	1782	Ezra Leonard .....	1801
Edmund March .....	1783	Eli Forbes .....	1801
Isaac Abbott .....	1784	Nathan Parks .....	1805
Daniel Witham .....	1786	Joseph B. Fell .....	1812
Joseph Manning .....	1787	John Manning, Jr. ....	1812
Charles Glover .....	1787	John Whipple .....	1812
Daniel Witham .....	1788	Nathan D. Appleton .....	1814
Nathaniel Walter .....	1790	Isaac W. Muliken .....	1816
Walter Hastings .....	1792	Paul Ferson .....	1817
Mather Withington .....	1793	Ezra Leonard .....	1818
Parker Morse .....	1793	Daniel W. Rogers .....	1820
Aaron Smith .....	1795	Thomas Jones .....	1820
Bengamin White .....	1799	Daniel W. Rogers .....	1821
Samuel White .....	1742	Thomas Cochran .....	1821
Nehemiah Porter .....	1716	James Boswell .....	1822
Thomas Jacques .....	1747	Ezra Leonard .....	1822
Jonathan Pierpont .....	1748	Daniel W. Rogers .....	1823
Samuel White .....	1749	Charles Smith (3d) .....	1823
Thomas Rand .....	1752	Jonson Nash .....	1824
Thomas Jacques .....	1753	William Whipple .....	1826
Samuel Whittemore .....	1753	Richard Gardner .....	1839
Jacob Bailey .....	1758	Thomas Baker .....	1819

The conveniences of the district system adopted in 1801 were accompanied by disadvantages growing from the temptation to multiply small districts in sparsely-settled portions of the town. The number of these districts had increased from eleven, in 1801, to twenty-three, in 1840.

The incorporation of Sandy Bay, in 1810, into a separate town diminished the number of districts to sixteen; but new divisions were soon made, and several were in contemplation in 1849, when the School Committee earnestly called the attention of the citizens assembled in town-meeting to the inequality of school advantages and other evils incident to the system then in use. They then brought forward a plan for the reorganization of the school affairs of the town, which, although it involved increased taxation, so commended itself to the people that, after a full discussion, it was adopted "with scarcely a dissenting voice," says Mr. Babson, "at one of the most numerously attended town-meetings ever held." A High School was established, grammar and primary schools were located in different parts of the town, and a judiciously graded system, conferring equal opportunities for rudimentary instruction to the children of all portions of the town, took the place of the unequal and often inefficient system previously in use. At the time of the abolition of the district system there were sixteen hundred and seventy-two children of school age in the town, and the amount appropriated for the annual expenses of the school was \$5562.25.

At the present time, 1887, there are twenty-two school buildings in the city; one hundred and two



teachers; four thousand three hundred and twenty-six scholars; and the amount appropriated in 1886, for school purposes, exclusive of repairs of buildings, etc., was fifty-two thousand dollars. The superintendents of schools, with the year of their commencing service, have been:

Thomas Baker.....1850	George Garland.....1871
John J. Babson.....1855	Henace M. Willard.....1872
Henry Cummings.....1857	John W. Arland.....1874
George B. Brooks.....1861	Louis H. Marvel.....1878
John J. Babson.....1862	Marquis L. Hawley.....1884

A private school was established at the Harbor, as early as 1790, in a building erected for the purpose, and called the "Proprietor's School-House." Just how long it continued we have not been able to ascertain, but the building is still standing, on School Street, and is occupied as a dwelling.

Under the ministry of Rev. Daniel D. Smith, a building called the "Murray Institute" was erected on the grounds of the Independent Christian Church, Universalist. It was dedicated in October, 1839, when the "Liberal Institute," a private enterprise of an academic grade, was moved to Gloucester, and opened its school in this building, taking the name of the building, in November, 1840. The trustees were William Babson, J. S. Johnston, Frederick Norwood, John J. Babson, Rev. Daniel D. Smith. Mr. H. M. Nicholas was principal the first two terms. The three subsequent terms were kept by Mr. Thomas Baker, after which the enterprise was abandoned.

The Gloucester Lyceum was formed on the 2d of February, 1839, for the purpose of interesting and instructing the citizens by means of lectures on useful and entertaining subjects, the object being "the improvement of its members in useful knowledge, and the advancement of popular education." Subsequently debates were encouraged, and almost at the first a few books were donated as the nucleus of a library. In February, 1854, after a few ineffectual efforts had been made to interest the citizens in establishing a library, a new movement in that direction was inaugurated and about two thousand dollars were obtained; and in the following August a library, with about one thousand four hundred volumes, was opened for use. In ten years the number of volumes had increased to three thousand, when a destructive fire in the town swept away all but about three hundred volumes. In 1872 the organization incorporated under the name of the Gloucester Lyceum and Sawyer Free Library, "for the establishment and maintenance of a library forever free to the inhabitants of the town,—for the delivery of lectures,—for the collection and preservation of objects of natural history and works of art,—and for the promotion of intellectual culture in general." The incitement to this act of incorporation was a gift, in April, 1871, from Samuel E. Sawyer, Esq., of ten thousand dollars, with interest accruing from the beginning of the year. In view of this

gift, and of constant benefactions received from Mr. Sawyer, his reluctant consent was obtained to giving his name to the library. In 1884 Mr. Sawyer purchased, at a cost of twenty thousand dollars, a fine property and spacious house on the corner of Middle Street and Dale Avenue, for a permanent home for the library. In July of that year the building was dedicated with appropriate services and ceremonies. With the deed of the property Mr. Sawyer also presented to the trustees an endowment note for twenty thousand dollars. The trustees are Hon. Allan Rogers, Hiram Rich, Joseph O. Procter, Joseph L. Stevens, Edward H. Haskell, Benjamin H. Corliss and Hon. Charles P. Thompson. The library now contains between seven thousand and eight thousand volumes.

"The Cape Ann Scientific and Literary Association" was organized in 1875. Its purpose is to cultivate a knowledge of science in general, and particularly to develop the natural history of Cape Ann. It has already collected an interesting and valuable museum.

The first newspaper issued in Gloucester was the *Gloucester Telegraph*, on the 1st of January, 1827. It was issued weekly until 1834, then semi-weekly until 1873, when it again changed to weekly, and so continued until it ceased to be published, in October, 1876.

The *Gloucester Democrat* was a semi-weekly, first issued the 18th of August, 1834, and merged in the *Salem Advertiser* in February, 1838. Its leading political articles were from the pen of Hon. Robert Rantoul, Jr.

The *Cape Ann Light* was begun as a weekly edition of the *Gloucester Telegraph* January, 1843, and discontinued in August, 1875.

The *Gloucester News*, also a semi-weekly, was first published the 11th of October, 1848; and in December, 1851, was merged in the *Gloucester Telegraph*.

The *Cape Ann Advertiser* was first a monthly, as the *Gloucester Advertiser* from January, 1856, to July, 1857, then semi-monthly to the 5th of December the same year, when it took its present name, and was issued fortnightly until November, 1858, since which time it has been published weekly.

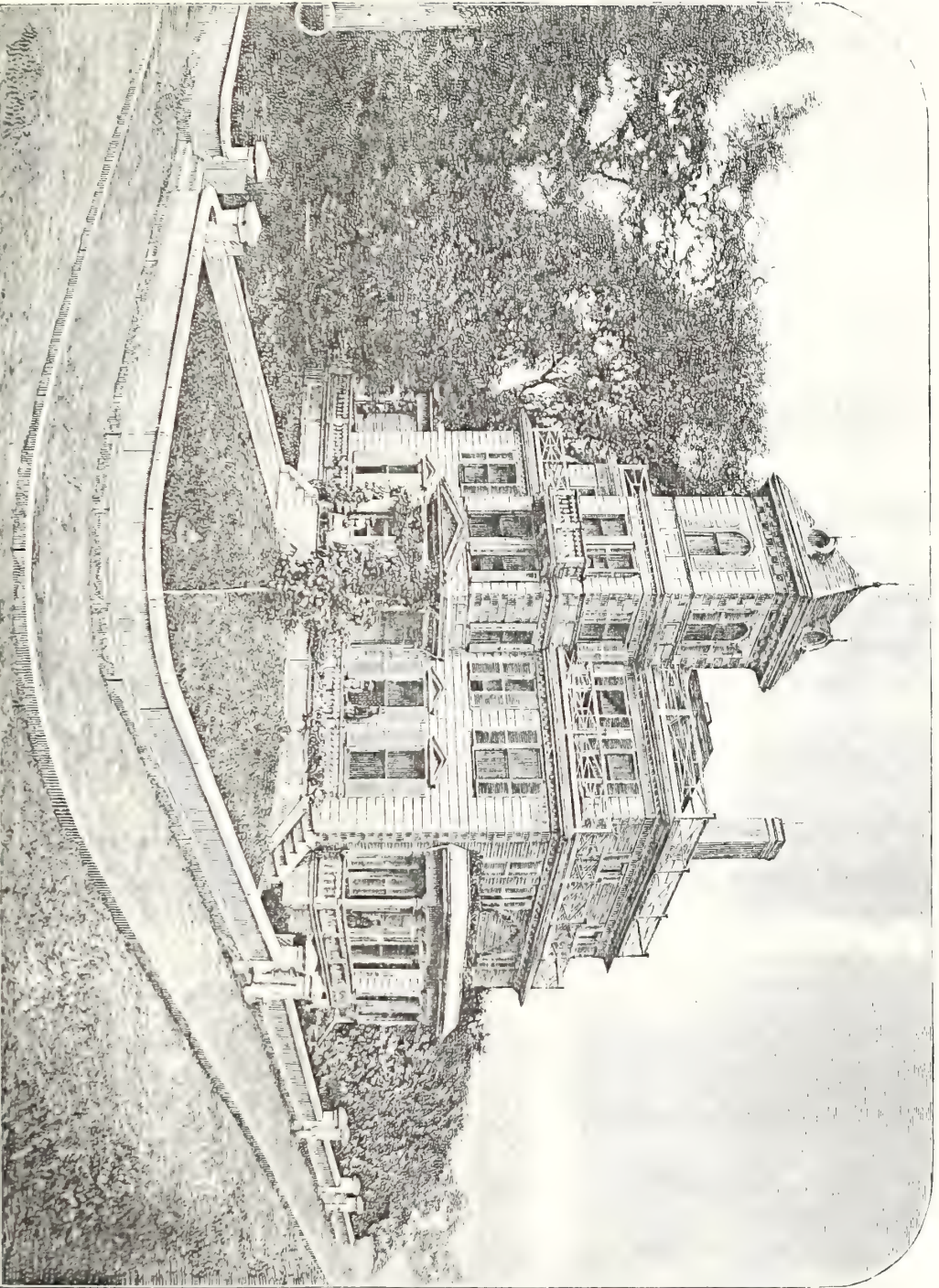
The *Gloucester Bulletin* was a weekly paper from November, 1877, to the 30th of April, 1887.

The *Gloucester News*, daily, issued its first number the 28th of June, 1884, and its last on the 4th of February, 1886.

The *Cape Ann Breeze*, daily, was first published on the 29th of August, 1884.







THE SAWYER FREE LIBRARY.  
GLOUCESTER, MASS.





## CHAPTER CVIII.

## GLOUCESTER—(Continued).

*The Fisheries.*<sup>1</sup>

For two hundred and fifty years the fisheries have been the principal business of Gloucester. Long before the settlement of Plymouth the vessels of France and England had fished on the Grand Banks, and along the coasts of Massachusetts. The French were undoubtedly the pioneers in the cod-fisheries of the Western Atlantic, and in the early part of the sixteenth century the Basques, Normans, Spaniards and Portuguese had fifty ships on the Grand Banks. In 1577 the French had one hundred and fifty vessels employed in the American fisheries. The settlement of Gloucester, as already noted, was attempted at what is called Stage Fort—the name “Stage” denoting that the locality was used for landing fish from the vessels of the Dorchester Company, of England. The cod-fishery constituted at that time, and for many subsequent years, the only branch of the business pursued; and while many other kinds of fish have been discovered, and their pursuit and capture has necessitated the use of a variety of methods, making each peculiar fishery a distinct business, still the cod-fishery remains the one great source of the supply of fish food.

The fisheries of Gloucester principally pursued upon the Ocean Banks, and employing vessels from twenty to one hundred and fifty tons burthen, are the fresh and salt cod, fresh and salt halibut, hake, haddock, and cusk. The mackerel are now largely a deep-water fish, as are the menhaden. The herring fishery employs vessels, although it is principally a coast fishery. Most of these fish are taken on the banks lying between the great ocean-river (the Gulf Stream, which flows north from the Gulf of Mexico) and the shores of North America. The shore fisheries employ smaller vessels and boats, and also include the trap and net fisheries, and extend from the shores some twenty miles. The most important and prolific fishing-ground for Gloucester vessels is St. George's Bank, lying one hundred and twenty miles southeast from the Cape, forming one of the inner banks of the Gulf Stream, in that long succession of fishing banks extending from Hatteras to Newfoundland. The fish taken upon this bank are of a superior quality, and bring a much larger price in the market than fish from other localities. The nearest land is Cape Cod, 95 miles. Brown's Bank, 45 miles from Cape Sable; La Have Bank, 60 miles from Nova Scotia; Western Banks, 80 miles from Nova Scotia; St. Peter's Bank, 75 miles from Newfoundland; Green Bank, 70 miles from Newfoundland; Grand Bank, 90 miles from Newfound-

land; Flemish Cape, 300 miles from Newfoundland—are all resorted to by vessels from Gloucester for cod-fish and halibut. Banks Braddlee and Orphan, thirty miles from land, in the Gulf of St. Lawrence, and also the coasts of Greenland and Iceland, are sometimes visited by a few vessels. None of these fisheries are under the jurisdiction of any nation; their area, according to the computation of the United States Fish Commission, is 73,123 geographical square miles. During the year 1886 there were employed in the cod and halibut fisheries on these banks and off the New England coast 283 vessels from Gloucester, averaging 60 tons each; total tonnage, 15,659.55. Aggregate crew, 4117 men. They took and landed at Gloucester 51,018,484 pounds of codfish, 11,886,135 pounds of halibut, 3,983,978 pounds of other ground fish, 29,000 barrels of fish oil.

The methods of taking these fish have varied with the progress of the business. In former years the hand-line with hooks was the only method used. On St. George's Bank, owing to the strong tide, the hand-line with lead sinkers weighing from seven to fourteen pounds is used, but on the other banks the French trawl system is the usual practice. A trawl is a strong line from five hundred to one thousand feet in length, and about three-eighths of an inch in diameter, on which, at intervals of five to seven feet, hooks with short gangings are attached, and it is extended on the bottom of the sea, and secured at either end by a small anchor, whose position is indicated by a buoy line and a floating buoy at the surface. The hooks are all baited, each trawl containing from one hundred to five hundred hooks. The trawls are set by the use of dories, each vessel carrying from six to eight dories, and each dory one trawl. The trawls are under-run a dozen times a day, the fish taken off, hooks rebaited and the trawl reset. Another system used in the in-shore fishery for codfish, is the Norwegian net, which is of strong twine with large meshes; these nets when set form a perpendicular net wall, the lower part of the net being secured with weights to the bottom, the upper section being sustained by hollow glass balls. The nets are consecutively set in a long line, and more fish are taken by them in the spawning season, when the fish appear more reckless than at other times.

The extent of the ocean mackerel-fishing grounds is over seventy thousand square miles. The mackerel fishing-grounds of the Gulf of St. Lawrence, from which the American vessels are excluded, comprises about seven hundred and seventy-five square miles, or about one per cent. of the entire mackerel fishery area.

The mackerel, being a migratory fish, is more uncertain than the cod. The catch of mackerel varies exceedingly in different years.

In 1809 the Massachusetts mackerel fleet took 8225 barrels. The catch varied in subsequent years, being 46,348 barrels in 1818, 100,111 barrels in 1819,

<sup>1</sup> By Capt. Fitz J. Babson.



and in 1830 and 1831, 398,463 and 383,548 barrels respectively. This was the largest catch under the hand-line process. In 1839 the catch dwindled to 74,268 barrels, and from that time until 1844 varying from 50,000 to 86,000 barrels yearly. In 1851 the catch rose to 329,000 barrels, falling, in 1859, to 99,000 barrels; reaching 306,000 barrels in 1863. All these immense variations occurred under the hand-line system, before traps, seines or common nets were used to any great extent to take mackerel, showing that the fish by their own volition seek or shun our waters. In 1865 the purse seine was introduced, and has now become the method of taking mackerel by the American fleet. The catch has varied from 256,000 barrels, in 1865, to 105,000 in 1877, rising to 304,000 barrels in 1884, falling to 92,000 barrels in 1886, proving beyond question that the new methods of seines and traps have not taken as many mackerel or caused greater fluctuations in the catch than the old hand-line methods. All the various kinds of fish that frequent the coast from Cape Sable to Hatteras have shown the same peculiarities as the mackerel. The sea bass, scup, squeteague and menhaden are plenty for years, then disappear for a time; this also long before seines or traps were in operation. To-day Narragansett Bay is alive with fish never seen there before, a species of the herring family resembling sardines. A large number of codfish are around the shores of Massachusetts; and Ipswich Bay for this season is more valuable to the fishermen than the Grand Banks. We, as yet, hardly appreciate the immensity of the great life of the ocean; that its means of propagation and increase are unlimited; that the natural destruction of fish life by their own species and by predatory fowl are so great that man's effort in this direction is but a drop in a bucket in comparison. The defined and accepted fact is that the amount of fish taken for human consumption has no appreciable effect on the life of the ocean, and that all laws that attempt to legislate fish into or out of localities in the ocean are puerile and futile; that fish of different species appear and disappear for seasons on different coasts and localities by causes beyond our dictation and explanation. So that, in dealing with the ocean fisheries, the laws of man collapse and disappear at the moment of contact with the first wave that breaks along the shore.

The first attempt to take mackerel was by extending poles from the sides of the vessel, to which a number of lines with hooks were attached, and by sailing through the schools the mackerel would bite at the bait and thus be caught. This was called drailing. After mackerel became an important element in the general fisheries, bait was chopped fine and thrown overboard, and the fish were thus attracted to the surface and caught with hand-lines. After the invention of the bait-mill, by which a large quantity of bait could be ground fine in a short time, menhaden, being an oily fish, were almost wholly used for mack-

erel bait, as its oily nature caused it to float near the surface.

The Gloucester fishermen resorting to the Gulf of St. Lawrence for mackerel, by means of this feeding process with this oily bait, that could not be procured by the provincial fishermen (as the menhaden do not go as far north as the provincial waters), attracted the mackerel to their fleet, so that a great many were taken. But since the abandonment of the hand-line and bait-feeding process, the Gulf of St. Lawrence inshore mackerel fishery has been worthless to American fishermen.

The total number of vessels engaged in the mackerel fishery from Gloucester during the year 1886 was 126; tonnage, 9622.45; aggregate crews, 1953 men. The amount of mackerel taken was 52,340 pounds, not including the amount sold fresh. There were 50,500,500 pounds of salt used on fish products, also 55,575,000 pounds of ice. The entire amount of food fish landed at Gloucester was 91,951,879 pounds.

The history of the fisheries of Gloucester would be incomplete without an exposition of the various treaties with Great Britain and their effect on our relations with Canada up to the present time. This is contained in the following address before the American Fishery Union, by Captain Fitz J. Babson:

"The treaty of 1783, by which the independence of the United States was established, is interesting, as affording proof of the great interest taken in the fisheries by the American Commissioners, John Adams, Benjamin Franklin, John Jay and Henry Laurens. It was doubtless the intention of that treaty to secure to the American nation their territorial rights, both upon land and sea, and the definition of our landed boundaries were not more explicit than were the rights secured by that treaty for our fisheries both upon the ocean and in the waters adjacent to the Provinces. The concession by Great Britain was genuine, and while with her ordinary assumption she gave us the right to fish on the Grand Bank and other banks of Newfoundland, and in the Gulf of St. Lawrence, over which she had no jurisdiction whatever, she also acknowledged an equal participation in the shore fisheries of her American possessions, and gave this right to the United States in perpetuity, reserving only the use of the shores to her own fishermen. This right of grant was not a partial liberty, but was a defined national settlement, based upon the same power and principles as that conveying our United territory. This treaty distinctly shows the animus of British diplomacy; first to assume unlimited power, and then by its abandonment claim concession. The Headland line theory is based upon the same premises, and is valuable only as a pretence with which to purchase some substantial benefit, claiming as she does jurisdiction of the Bay of Fundy and the Gulf of St. Lawrence, and the navigation of the Straits of Canso. And this theory is still held by Great Britain, although in abeyance at the present time.

"The war of 1812, which was settled by the treaty of Ghent in 1814, was seized upon by Great Britain as a pretext for the annulling of the fishery provisions of 1783, and although this view was resisted by the United States, still a commission was appointed to settle the differences which had arisen between the two nations, represented on the part of the United States by Albert Gallatin and Richard Rush. This commission reported the treaty of 1815, which has been the cause of nearly all the trouble between Canada and our fishermen. By the terms of this treaty a complete surrender was made of all the shore fisheries except on the southern and western parts of Newfoundland, around the Magdalen Islands and northward along the Labrador coast through the Straits of Bellefleur indefinitely. This of itself would seem to have been the extreme limit of concession on the part of our commissioners, but lost to all considerations of common sense or shrewdness, they allowed the insertion of a clause which forbade American fishing vessels entering Canadian ports for any purpose except for shelter or to procure wood or water, and repairing damages.





"It would be unfair not to state that at that time the mackerel fishery was hardly in existence, and the commissioners had no knowledge of the immense fleets of American fishermen, which under the hand line system and the use of immense quantities of bait, would develop the mackerel fisheries of the Gulf of St. Lawrence as much or more to the profit of the Provincials as to themselves. But the result of their folly still remains, unaltered as it is either to the present development of our fisheries or to the principles of amity and fair dealing. This clause of the treaty forms the basis of all the harsh and coercive legislation that Canada will use against us. If it were not for that clause in the treaty, Canada would not dare to so outrage the comity of nations, but under its provisions she presumes to seize our vessels for buying bait, or for uld fishing within her jurisdiction, and vessels have been condemned upon evidence that no other nation except the United States would ever have submitted to. The United States should waive all so-called privileges under this treaty, which are wholly and totally worthless, and demand for American vessels in Canadian ports all the rights that Canadian vessels have in American ports.

"By the treaty of Washington we obtained no commercial rights; all the concession given by that treaty was simply to fish in-shore, so that if Canada, taking the wood, water and shelter clause as a basis, sees fit, she can by legislation, exclude our vessels from every commercial right of buying bait, supplies, or ice. This fact should be understood, although such legislation may belong to a semi-barbarous age, and its exercise would be to the detriment of and almost the destruction of her own people, for many of her fishing communities derive a large part of their subsistence from selling bait to the Americans.

"While under the treaty of Washington our vessels with their immense seines could have taken all the bait and left the people to starve, they have not done it, but have continued to buy their bait of the local fishermen as though no treaty existed. So that actual reciprocity of free fishing, if carried into effect, would take their entire living from many of the Dominion shore fishermen. Therefore it is utterly impracticable. The treaty of 1818 enforced against us will starve them; and practical reciprocity will starve them.

"The reciprocity treaty of 1854, was the result largely of the coercive policy of Canada under this treaty. And as at that time the only method of taking mackerel was by hook and line, and the profuse use of bait, it was thought advisable to secure the inshore fisheries of the Gulf of St. Lawrence, and at the same time to relieve of the hostile animosity of Canadian cutters and British men-of-war. No one will deny that at that time there were some benefits derived from the exercise of this privilege. It had the effect to stimulate the mackerel fisheries of Canada, and by the use of immense quantities of menhaden by American vessels for bait, the mackerel were kept together instead of scattering for food and were thus made available both to the American vessels and Canadian shore boats. It was to this feeding process of the Americans that the Gulf mackerel fisheries owe the prominence that has been given them, and the results of our methods were the chief dependence of Canada in enlarging upon the value of these fisheries before the Halifax Commission. There is neither hook and line or menhaden used in the mackerel fishery now to any extent. Mackerelshun the hook, and what few menhaden are taken are used principally for cod or codfish bait, and we do not if we would renew the old methods.

"The revocation of the reciprocity treaty in 1898, again brought before us the treaty of 1818, and the manner of dealing with the question became a matter of much political interest in Canada. It was evident that whatever party party would secure reciprocity with the United States, would be endorsed by the people. The system of licenses which, by increasing stringency defeated itself, being fifty cents per ton in 1866, one dollar per ton in 1867, two dollars per ton in 1868 and 1869 for the privilege of fishing inside the three-mile limit, was more than the privilege was worth, and American vessels refused to pay it. Upon its termination it was announced by the public men of Canada that not only all that could be claimed under their construction of the treaty of 1818 would be enforced, but that a Provincial cutter system should be inaugurated, commanded by men who were in sympathy with the coercive principles of the government, and who could be depended upon to cause the American fishermen all the trouble and annoyance possible, for the ostensible purpose of forcing the United States again to renew the reciprocity treaty. This has been done to the letter.

"The leniency of the officers of the regular British naval service toward the fishermen was not satisfactory; in fact the wood, water and shelter clause was not to be considered in the spirit in which it was made, (simply restrictive,) it was to be made aggressive; and construing the language of the Imperial Act 50 of Geo. III. in which a vessel preparing to fish in British waters is deemed criminal, they seized vessels

that were buying bait to use on the Grand Banks, restricted them from buying ice or supplies, claiming that such acts were preparing to fish. I cite these things simply to show how Canada exaggerates what was intended to be a simple restrictive regulation into a criminal law, and also to show the supine indifference of the United States in submitting to such wholesale piracy.

"True, President Grant issued a proclamation after Congress had passed unanimously the memorial resolutions sent from this city asking for a declaration of non-intercourse if these acts were continued, and doubtless some retaliatory measures would have been adopted had not the proposals for the Washington treaty involving the fishery question at this time appeared. The result of that treaty gave to the fishermen of the United States simply the right to take fish of every kind in the waters of Canada, viz., inside of three miles. We acquired no commercial rights whatever. The wood, water and shelter clause of the treaty of 1818 still remains, and is in force to day, and was modified simply by the permission contained in the Treaty of Washington, to take fish inside of three miles. If there was virtue in Canada's enforcing that clause from 1806 to 1873 it should also have been done when the Treaty of Washington was in force. If it was as has been claimed an injury to her people to buy supplies, bait and ice of them before, it was so under the Treaty of Washington, as that treaty had no provision for these purposes.

"The treaty of Washington was fondly expected to be the panacea for all the difficulties that afflicted the two nations. The primal feature was the settlement of the Alabama claims, and to succeed in that was the ambition of our commissioners. The fisheries again played the part of make weight; and Great Britain accepted and paid the Geneva award, holding the almost assured fishery award of the Halifax Commission as an offset. Fifteen millions were paid under the award of Geneva; and fourteen millions five hundred thousand dollars were claimed for allowing our fishermen the privilege to take fish from the ocean within three miles of their shores. Suffice it to say that we take neither halibut nor codfish, speaking in a generic sense, and which comprise three-fourths of the Atlantic fisheries, in British waters. We buy our herring, capelin and squid entirely from the local fishermen, paying them in cash or its equivalent, and the only fishery of theirs that is available is the mackerel fishery, and what few of these we take shown by sworn statements of the captains of the vessels, has cost us nearly two dollars for every dollar received.

"We are now in possession of facts and figures, statistics, decisions and reports, such as never before were within reach of the Government. There can be no excuse for further failure. The Census Report of Prof. Goode devoted to the fisheries is exhaustive in detail. The proceedings of the Halifax Commission with its three volumes of testimony; the arguments, reports and decision of the Fortune Bay case, and the innumerable reports of outrage on our fishermen, sustained by sworn testimony on file in the State Department, with a detailed affidavit of the trip and catch of every American vessel that has fished for mackerel in the Gulf of St. Lawrence for the past four years. This with the available personal testimony of persons both scientific and practical, gives us an advantage never possessed before. It is true that amid the great industries of the Country our interest in dollars and cents may appear small. The indomitable pluck and energy of the men who own and men these vessels can do much to count for the existence of the fisheries. It is not the pecuniary results that are so very encouraging, for it has been shown over and over again that the net earnings of the average fishermen are not over \$300 per year at best; and among the fishing owners of the Country it will be hard to find many who have made a hundred thousand dollars in the production of fish alone. It has been said that the consumers have an interest to be consulted. True, but no portion of this Country would desire men to expose themselves as our fishermen do at much less than \$300 per year, so if objection is to come, let it be based upon the handling and transportation, not on the poor pittance of the fishermen, and it has been demonstrated that it is upon the cost of production only that the reduction by means of foreign competition comes.

"The owners and fishermen suffer loss and not the distributors. And if by reason of this loss we are unable to pursue the business, then it must go to the Provincials, and without competition here it becomes a monopoly in their hands; and who ever heard of a monopoly making anything cheaper. The Canadians under the stimulus of our open markets have now increased their fleet to nearly, if not quite, 500 vessels. Would it have been an injury to have those vessels built here to have drawn men here from the Provincials and the north of Europe to man them? for these men able and willing to work become citizens producers and consumers as well? Would not their skilled competition,



added to the advantage of their citizenship, have been as valuable to the consumer in keeping the cost of fish at a fair price as though they stayed at home and sent the product of their labor here? The next war, if we have one, will be fought on the ocean. Who has the most interest in maintaining the fisheries that produce the finest sea-men known, the few men who own the vessels, or the 50,000,000 of people we must look to them for their defense? Canada has over 75,000 men in her fisheries, every one of them an English sailor and liable, if needed, to do duty in her navy. Where will the United States look for her men to man the magnificent navy we are to have in the near future?

"The great West has developed her immense resources, opened up her grand territory, largely by subsidies assisting railroads, coming from the votes and pockets of the whole people. The South, under the broadening influence of an education for her people, sustained by the national wealth, shall yet see a prosperity unequalled by any section, when upon every stream that now idly drifts to the sea shall be heard the whir of the loom and spindle; her cotton, cultivated by the negro planters, shall be turned into cloth by the hands of the skilled operatives that she will call there to operate her mills, and with the prosperity of her farmers her wealth will be equal to her opportunities. In this prosperity we are all benefited. And it is from these sections that it is proposed to organize the opposition that shall crush out the New England fisheries. Can there be any American citizen knowing the facts, and rejoicing in the glory and prosperity of his Country, who is ready, at the first voice of foreign influence, to strike down the fisheries because he might possibly buy a mackerel or codfish a cent cheaper, thereby reducing the wages of the operative fishermen to starvation prices and destroying the only element of defense we have upon the ocean? I said knowing the facts, and it is our duty to see that they do know them. We have never yet failed of a unanimous response to our appeal when it has been properly understood at Washington. There are many matters affecting our marine jurisprudence that need correction and amendment. Our fisheries have an element of strength in being a food product. In the consumption of manufactured articles a person can largely diminish their personal use, but food he must have. In chemical analysis, fish have not received the rank to which they are entitled among staples, and relatively the prices are not graded as they should be.

"To-day fish and mackerel are the cheapest food in the market according to their value as sustenance. Therefore, if the coming tables from the highest scientific authority, that will do justice to our product. Many of our people need education in the use of fish, for while the fish of the great lakes and the southern coasts and rivers are largely used, there are none can take the place of our cured cod and mackerel when properly prepared. The change that has been so rapidly taking place in the nature and disposal of fish-women, we now place on the market a large part of our product in a fresh condition, and which necessitates the use of large quantities of ice, brings into prominence a question that has heretofore not received the attention which it now demands. The competition of the Dominion is not going to be bounded by the sale of haddock, dried and pickled or green fish, but they will compete with our vessels with their fresh fish, halibut and herring. The tariff places fish fresh for consumption on the free list. Now, this qualification must be defined, and it may require legislation to do it. The present aspect of the tariff provisions could imply that fish fresh are consumption as fish fresh caught, and now preserved by artificial means. The meaning of the term is not fresh in contradistinction to salt, nor does it mean fresh preserved fish, such as are kept sweet by freezing, but simply the fresh caught fish that would reach the market in that condition and enter into the immediate consumption of the people without the aid of any artificial means whatever.

"On the prompt settlement of this question the so-called fresh trips of our vessels depend for protection. The demands of the department on British caught Lake fish, to which the provisions of the present treaty do not apply, make it imperative that British fresh caught fish are free of duty as long as they are in that condition. But after their purchase on the American side if they are not disposed of and actually consumed as fresh fish but are salted or smoked, the preservation of them by these means makes them dutiable as not answering the demands of the tariff clause making fish fresh for immediate consumption free. These decisions apply to the Atlantic fisheries.

"There has been at the different parts of the United States, and also at the Department, quite a variation of opinion as to what constitutes the product of the American fisheries. The importance of an intelligent decision of this question becomes apparent when we realize that it is the distinction by which the tariff designates free fish, viz., all fish that are the product of the American fisheries. Our Winter herring

fishery as pursued by our fishing vessels, is a fishery that they are obliged to pursue according to the methods peculiar to that fishery. That is, to avail themselves of the services of the shoremen with their boats and nets; otherwise they could not pursue the business. It has been demonstrated, over and over again, that this class of bait fisheries cannot be controlled by legislation, Treaties, Resolutions, Boards of Trade or Chambers of Commerce. They must be used, if used at all, in accordance with natural rights and natural laws. This class of fisheries is the principal support of a large portion of the shore population where these fish are taken. They cannot, they ought not, they will not allow participation in these fisheries. Any talk of reciprocity that will give these fisheries to us is nonsense. Now these people are willing that our vessels should come and employ them to take these fish for us. They are desirous to welcome our people on these terms. It is the only method by which this fishery can be pursued. There has been a continued, persistent effort on the part of some of the Department officials to classify the entire herring fishery as a commercial transaction, liable to all the restrictions and expenses attending a foreign voyage. In fact one decision imperatively demanded that every vessel leaving an American port to go for herring, should sail under a register, forgetting that the treaty gave to American vessels the same rights in British waters, so far as the taking of fish is concerned, as they had in our own, and that the methods employed could not be called in question by either government, in Mr. Everett's position on the Fortune Bay question, that treaty rights were superior to local laws on either side.

"Now, treaty or no treaty, we have to abide by natural laws in the herring fishery, and the question has got to be settled, how far herring, procured by the only method possible, shall be recognized as the product of the American fisheries if taken in this manner and brought to our markets by American vessels. The Hon. Secretary of the Treasury, Mr. McCullough, during his former administration, sent to Messrs. Hall & Myrick, American Merchants at Charlottetown, Prince Edward Island, a letter explanatory of this clause of the tariff, in which fish caught on an American vessel under the American flag constituted a product of the American fisheries under the law. There is necessity to have our own legislation and the action of our own government right, in order that the American fisheries can have their fullest development.

"If there were not such serious consequences involved, it would be amusing to see our Canadian neighbors, who twelve years ago were frantic over the immense value of their inshore fisheries, now so terribly anxious lest some form of compromise should fail to give them our markets and confessing that all the money they ever made was during reciprocity. The present statement has the merit of truth, and the fact that so long as the American fisheries exist and have our own markets they are a bar to the great prosperity of our rivals, is one of the strongest arguments in our favor. But the facts and figures prove the utter worthlessness of the statement made twelve years ago, and we do not hear any Canadian claim of fourteen and one-half millions any more. No, they would sacrifice the rental of five and one-half millions for another twelve years of free markets for their fish; in fact, the truth exists, and did exist twelve years ago that reciprocity was the greatest of boons to them, and now they acknowledge it. Why do they care for free markets if the consumer pays the duty? One of their vessels brings in 200 barrels of mackerel into Gloucester next July, mackerel are selling at \$10, the captain sells his mackerel, gets \$2000 for them and taking \$1000 goes to the Custom House and pays his duties. Did the merchant who bought his mackerel pay him any more because the duties were \$2 per barrel? Not at all. Did the merchant ask the retailer any more for these mackerel because the captain had to pay \$2 per barrel duties? Not at all. Did the retailer ask the consumer any more for the same reason? Not at all. Now suppose there was no American mackerel fleet, which by their natural competition and success were indicating the original price of the mackerel and the British vessels had the making of the price, who would pay the duty? Assuredly by having control of the market, by the effect of no competition, he could dictate his own price and add the duties to the price of the mackerel, and in that way the consumer would pay it. But the American fleet maintained, increased mackerel would be sold as they always have been when largely produced, at low prices.

"The Massachusetts and Maine fleets have taken altogether about 499,391 bbls. of mackerel the season of 1884; of these but 21,293 were taken in the Gulf of St. Lawrence. Canada takes from 100,000 to 150,000 barrels yearly, the large preponderance of the American catch regulates the price for the bulk of the fish which forms the actual staple food, although the American market will pay most any price for from 10,000 to 20,000 barrels of extra mess mackerel which like fine grades of





halibut must be classed under the head of luxuries. It is to the mass of the fish which goes to the laboring consumers of the country, and is sold by the small retailers that the rules of supply and demand apply, and as four-fifths of all the mackerel are taken by the American fleet off our own shores the larger the American fleet the more mackerel are taken, and they are afforded at a low price to the consumer.

"The exaggerated valuation of all the fisheries will be better understood when it is shown as it already has been, that fish in the water are really valueless. That is, it costs all they are worth to pursue, take and deliver them at the wharves. This is a plain fact, and the books of any fishing concern will show, that allowing a fair valuation for the charter of the vessel, wages of the crew, subsistence and other outlays, the average expenses are equal to the average trips taken. Take our own mackerel fleet in the fall of St. Lawrence the year 1884, sixty of the finest and best equipped vessels commanded by the most experienced and persevering captains that sail out of Gloucester. They gave this fishery a thorough and fair trial, and this is the result. Whole number of mackerel taken, 13,200 lbs.; number of barrels taken outside three miles, 12,104; number lbs. taken inside, 1,096; value of outside catch, \$68,662; value of inside catch, \$18,190; value of the whole, \$86,852. This is the consolidation of the trips as they were reported and sworn to by the captains of the vessels after they arrived home. It comprehends the value of the fish minus the expense of barrels, salt, packing and inspection. There were 297 American vessels fishing for mackerel off our own shores and there were 92 of our American vessels went into the Gulf of St. Lawrence for mackerel. The average catch of the shore fleet was 1870 lbs. to each vessel. The average catch of the bay fleet was 241 barrels to each vessel.

"Now what did it cost to produce those fish? Take first the charter of the vessels for the time they were absent and the expense of outfits, victualing, &c., \$127,747, then add the wages of the men at the rate they would be paid for their time as sailors, —\$3,852, and we have \$281,600 actually expended to produce \$86,852 worth of mackerel in the whole Gulf of St. Lawrence, and but \$18,190 of it in the mouths of that magnificent estuary, for which \$14,000 was claimed and \$2,000 paid. And in addition to this we find that the United States receives in duties \$24,000 yearly to Canada on fish products, making a total in the twelve years of the treaty of \$7,188,000, which with the free and one-half millions, make a total of \$12,988,000, or nearly the amount first claimed, viz. thirteen and one-half millions. And all this is for the privilege of taking a few mackerel, every one of which costs us in labor and expense more than it is actually worth. From July 1873 to January 1885, the whole of the fishing season of the twelve years of the treaty, our vessels took in the Gulf of St. Lawrence, 284,435 barrels of mackerel worth \$6,180,000 lbs. were taken inside of the three-mile limit. The value of the whole was \$2,100,892; the value of the inside catch \$470,320. There were eight hundred vessels at a cost on the average for charter, outfits and stores and wages \$2,801,122. There were 194,955 lbs. caught outside of the three-mile limit, worth \$1,400,472, making a difference in amount of expense against the whole product of the Gulf of St. Lawrence mackerel fishery of nearly \$800,000, and against the inshore fishery of nearly \$2,000,000 more expenses than value of mackerel taken. Now how do we account for this? The fact is that the fish taken, mackerel by hook and line, left the mackerel free to follow where he would, to feed on what he liked, to come to make his way along our shores or to come in from the Gulf Stream, and in this passage, like migratory birds, he went in flocks, or schools. Nothing but his own appetite betrayed him, and this is not peculiar to mackerel. Then they filled our creeks and harbors, and the Gulf of St. Lawrence seemed to be their northern resort. With the mackerel came the menhaden. Now where are the menhaden? The waters that knew them will know them no more, and the mackerel, not even consulted as to whether he will be caught, is intercepted at every mile of his progress, the schools broken, the line of march destroyed, and he, like the menhaden, cannot count the shore as formerly. So while sailing, according to the highest scientific authority we have, may not perceptibly affect the great life of the ocean, still it does affect localities and courses of migratory fish, and it undoubtedly affected the shore fisheries of the Gulf of St. Lawrence and our own immediate shores, so that the three-mile limit is not what it was formerly, and its value is one of the myths of the past.

"The traps are a purely local property and should be operated only by local fishermen in the waters of any country. These with the net and boat fisheries should never be an object of barter or trade or reciprocity by any country, for by the very nature of their operation they will not admit of foreign participants. If we want these shore bait fish we must pay, the fishermen are glad to sell them. The vessel fishery is

an ocean fishery, and the mackerel and the fish have to be sailed for and taken where the fisherman himself is the arbiter of his rights.

"Now what is the summary of all this?

"1st.—The abrogation of all treaty clauses relative to the fisheries, including the treaty of 1818.

"2d.—The maintenance of the tariff as it now exists forbidding the clause 'fish fresh for human consumption, to be fish not preserved by any artificial means whatever.'

"3d.—Such legislation on the part of congress as shall define the products of the American fish to be entitled to free entry to be all fish of every kind taken by vessels of the United States licensed for the fisheries in any waters, or by the crews of vessels or by any persons, means or methods employed by the masters of said vessels and which are delivered fresh on board such vessels and cured or preserved thereon and brought to the United States by such vessels, shall be deemed the product of the American fisheries and entitled to free entry. It being understood that the above liberty shall not apply to the employment of vessels under foreign registry or to their crews, boats, seines, nets or other apparatuses belonging to such foreign vessels.

"The object of this legislation is to give to our herring vessels and bankers the right to employ the shore fishermen in the taking of herring or other bait fish which cannot be obtained in any other manner, and putting this and perhaps other kinds of fisheries into the hands of our fishermen for curing, transportation and distribution, giving to the shore boat fishermen what is their natural right, the taking of these fish, and our own fishermen the right to cure them and bring them to market.

"This has been the practice for the past 25 years, and legislation defining the rights of American fishermen in this business will save them from a vast amount of revenue quibbling and expense, which has invariably been the case in New York and other ports. Our government is bound in honor after building up Canadian fisheries for the past twelve years to give some heed to the claims of her fishermen. Give to the fishermen of the United States a permanent policy of protection in the same number of years that Canada has had our own markets, and we will quadruple our fleet and quadruple our number of seamen as she has done.

"Anything less than this and our country is a marine beggar without vessels or sailors, resources or naval strength. Therefore in no political sense, in no sectional sense, I submit that the American fisheries are the wards as well as the defense of the nation and every treaty or act of legislation calculated to diminish their growth and strength is the act of suicide and national lunacy."

Present scientific methods utilize every portion of the fish and fish waste. Glue factories and the manufacture of fertilizers are important industries. The multiplication of fish-traps along the shore for taking bait and food fish is an imperative need of the ocean fisheries. The system of co-operation of capital and labor that has been in practice in Gloucester for centuries, by which the owner furnishes the vessel, boats, seines, outfits and provisions, and the crew furnish their labor and share equally in the products of the voyage, is a good lesson to the labor reformers of the day. Altogether the fisheries of Gloucester demand active enterprise and courage and a physical exposure and risk unknown to any other business. They produce the finest vessels of their class, and the best-trained seamen in the world, who would be invaluable to the country in case of foreign war. Every maritime nation, not excepting Canada, encourages and sustains their fisheries except the United States.

The census of 1880 shows the amount and value of the United States fisheries to be as follows:

Number of men employed.....	131,426
Number of vessels.....	6,605
Number of boats.....	41,804
Value of vessels.....	\$9,357,282
Value of boats.....	2,465,393
Value of nets, apparatus and outfits.....	8,145,261





Value of other capital and shore property .....	17,987,413
Value of fishery products .....	41,546,153

During the year 1886 the total number of vessels engaged in the fisheries of all kinds, from Gloucester, was four hundred and nine; aggregate tonnage, twenty-six thousand two hundred and eighty-two; number of men in vessels, six thousand and seventy. The subsidiary industries dependent upon the production of fish support more than one million people.

The official fishery report of Canada shows:

Number of men employed .....	59,493
Number of vessels .....	1,119
Number of boats .....	28,492
Value of vessels .....	\$2,021,633
Value of boats .....	\$52,254
Value of nets .....	1,219,261
Value of fishing plant .....	6,657,260
Value of yield of fisheries .....	17,761,975

During thirteen seasons, from July 1, 1873, to December 31, 1885, when the entire shore fisheries of Canada were open and free to American fishermen, there were taken by the American fleet in the open ocean three million five hundred and seventy-nine thousand nine hundred and fifty-one barrels of mackerel, valued at eight dollars and a fraction per barrel; total, twenty-eight million one hundred and sixty-one thousand three hundred and ninety-seven dollars. There were taken inside of Canadian waters ninety-eight thousand four hundred and ninety-four barrels of mackerel by the American fleet, valued at eight hundred and eight thousand six hundred and thirty-five dollars, being less than three per cent. of the entire catch.

## CHAPTER CIX.

### GLOUCESTER—(Continued).

*Ship-building—The "Schooner"—Foreign and Domestic Trade—Customs—Homes—Post-office—The Granite Quarries—Boats*

As the first business of the town was fishing, so, for many years, all business was compelled to use the ocean for a highway. Ship-building began as early as 1643, when one Griffin, employed William Stevens and other ship-carpenters to construct a craft for him. Johnson, in his "Wonder-working Providence," written about this time, takes notice of the "good timber for shipping" to be found on Cape Ann, and speaks of several vessels that had been built, but not until 1661 have we any other than the above-mentioned particular instance of such work. No further instances can be specified until near the close of the century. Nor does it appear that any vessel larger than a sloop was owned in the town till the beginning of the eighteenth century. Mr. Babson observes that "there is no subject connected with the first century of the history of New England about which so little is known as of the small vessels employed in navigating its waters. . . . The conclusion

to which all inquiry on the subject will lead is, that little is known about the vessels used on the coast of New England before 1713, when Capt. Andrew Robinson, of Gloucester, gave a new name to our marine vocabulary, and a new rig to the commerce of the world. A current tradition of the town relates the origin of the 'schooner;' and abundant testimony of both a positive and negative kind confirms the story so strongly that it is unnecessary to take further notice here of the verbal account. Dr. Moses Prince, brother of the annalist, visiting in this town, Sept. 25, 1721, says: 'Went to see Capt. Robinson's lady, &c. This gentleman was the first contriver of schooners, and built the first of the sort about eight years since; and the use that is now made of them, being so much known, has convinced the world of their conveniency beyond other vessels, and shows how mankind is obliged to this gentleman for this knowledge.' Nearly seventy years afterwards another visitor gives some further particulars of this interesting fact. Cotton Tufts, Esq., connected with us by marriage, being in Gloucester Sept. 8, 1790, writes: 'I was informed (and committed the same to writing) that the kind of vessels called "schooners" derived their name from this circumstance, viz., Mr. Andrew Robinson, of that place, having constructed a vessel which he masted and rigged in the same manner as schooners are at this day, on her going off the stocks and passing into the water, a bystander cried out, "*Oh, how she scoons!*" Robinson instantly replied, "A scooner let her be!" From which time, vessels thus masted and rigged have gone by the name of "schooners;" before which, vessels of this description were not known in Europe nor America. This account was confirmed to me by a great number of persons in Gloucester.' The strongest negative evidence confirms these statements. No marine dictionary, no commercial record, no merchant's inventory, of a date prior to 1713, containing the word 'schooner' has yet been discovered; and it may, therefore, be received as an historical fact that the first vessel of this class had her origin in Gloucester, as stated by the respectable authorities above cited."

The first maritime business of the town, aside from the fisheries, was probably the transportation of cordwood to Boston and other places on the coast. In 1706 no less than thirty sloops were employed in carrying wood from one section of the town alone; and the whole number engaged in this business was probably not less than fifty. But, of course, this could not continue many years. Foreign commerce was of no great extent prior to the Revolutionary War, but after the establishing of peace it rose to considerable importance. Nearly fifty ships, brigs, schooners and sloops were employed in it in 1790, and for a number of years thereafter, Gloucester vessels visited most of the principal ports of Europe and the West Indies; and a few made voyages beyond the Cape of Good Hope. There was considerable trade with the West



Indies, Bilbao and Lisbon. The West India cargoes were fish and other provisions, and the home voyages brought sugar, molasses, rum and coffee. Little except fish was sent to Europe, the exchange for which was salt, fruit, wine and specie. About 1790, Gloucester vessels began to trade with Surinam, the capital of Dutch Guiana, and continued it profitably for many years, but it is now abandoned. The chief article of export was hake, though large quantities of beef, pork, lard, hams and flour were taken out. The return cargoes were made up of molasses, sugar, coffee and cocoa. A whaler was sent out just after the close of the war, but how fortunate or otherwise it proved, is unknown. In 1832 two companies were formed for renewing that business, and two ships were fitted out, but the result was not satisfactory, and the enterprise was abandoned. As early as 1732 domestic trade with the Southern Colonies was begun, and continued through that century. Mr. Babson says of this trade: "The voyages were made in the winter season, when there was no employment for vessels or men in fishing, and the business was conducted in a manner now little practiced in any part of the world. In most cases, perhaps in all, no wages were paid to master or crew; but, in lieu thereof, the privilege of bringing home a certain quantity of Southern produce was granted to each one, who was also allowed, probably, to take out fish on private adventure; as, in the few invoices preserved, this article does not appear among the shipments by the owners. In these invoices the principal articles are salt, rum, sugar and molasses. Then follows a long list of other things, including iron-ware, wooden-ware, hats, caps, patterns of cloth for breeches, handkerchiefs and stockings; making, in all, a cargo of about £200 value. On these voyages the rivers, creeks and inlets of Virginia, Maryland and North Carolina, were visited; there the cargo was bartered in small quantities for corn, beans, bacon, live hogs and other products of the country."

As early as 1683 Gloucester was made one of the lawful ports of the colony, and annexed to Salem District. In 1776 the General Court of the State passed an act, which provided that in the "several sea-ports of Boston, Salem, Marblehead, Gloucester, etc., within this State, there be an office kept, to be called and known by the name of the naval office, for the purpose of entering and clearing of all ships and other vessels trading to or from this State, to take bonds in adequate penalty for observing the regulations made or which shall be made by the General Congress or the General assembly of this State concerning trade, take manifests upon oath of all cargoes exported or imported, and keep fair accounts and entries thereof, give bills of health when desired, and sign certificates that the requisites for qualifying vessels to trade have been complied with, and the fees to be demanded and received in said office shall be those following and no greater, that is to say:

	£.	d.
For entering any ship and vessel from any part of the State .....	2	0
For clearing any ship and vessel to any part of the State .....	2	0
For entering any ship and vessel from any other of the United States .....	6	0
For clearing any ship and vessel to any other of the United States .....	6	0
For entering any ship and vessel from a foreign voyage .....	6	0
For clearing any ship and vessel for a foreign voyage ..	6	0
For a register .....	6	0
For indorsing a register .....	1	0
For recording indorsement .....	1	6
For any bond .....	2	0
For a certificate to cancel bond .....	1	0
For a bill of health .....	2	0
For a permit to unload .....	1	0
For a cockpit .....	0	3
For a let pass .....	0	8

Samuel Whittemore received the appointment of naval officer for Gloucester in November of that year, and was reappointed annually, except during a portion of the year 1782, when Solomon Gorham was in the office, until 1789, when a United States custom-house was established.

At the time of establishing a custom-house by the general government upwards of seven thousand tons of shipping were registered and enrolled in Gloucester—a part of it engaged in the fisheries, and the rest in the trade before described. From 1795 to 1810 there were eight ships and twenty-five brigs owned and fitted at this port. At the present time the business of Gloucester with foreign ports is confined almost wholly to those from which it imports the salt used in the fisheries,—about one hundred thousand hogsheads per annum; and the places in the British provinces from which it receives firewood, fish, potatoes and a few other articles.

The following-named have been collectors of customs:

Appointed.	Appointed.
Epes Sargent..... 1789	Elr F. Stacy..... 1844
William Tuck..... 1796	John L. Rogers..... 1849
John Gahart..... 1802	Frederick G. Low..... 1850
John Kittidge..... 1805	William H. Manting..... 1853
William Pease, Jr..... 1811	Gorham Babson..... 1815
William Beach..... 1813	John S. Webber..... 1861
George D. Hale..... 1819	William A. Pew..... 1865
George W. Pearce..... 1841	Eliz J. Babson..... 1869
John H. Stacy..... 1843	David S. Presson..... 1885

A post-office was not established in Gloucester till after the adoption of the Federal Constitution. Before that time the nearest post-office was at Beverly (then a part of Salem), to which place a messenger went twice a week to obtain letters. The messenger received and delivered his letters at the tavern kept by Philemon Haskell. The first postmaster at Gloucester was Henry Phelps, and the office was kept at his store, from which place it was changed at the convenience of his successor, and had no permanent location till the erection of a building by the government for the double purpose of a custom-house and post-office. At the time of establishing the office,





and until 1816, the following were the rates of postage: Single letter, under 40 miles, 8 cents; under 90 miles, 10 cents; under 150 miles, 12½ cents; under 300 miles, 17 cents; under 500 miles, 20 cents; over 500 miles, 25 cents.

Gloucester postmasters, with dates of their appointments, have been:

Henry Phelps (probably).....	1792	Gerrit Parsons.....	1873
Isaac Elwell.....	1809	John W. Wenson.....	1868
Wm. Stevens.....	1823	Wm. H. Haskell.....	1861
Leonard J. Presson.....	1841	Charles E. Grover.....	1867
Gerrit Parsons.....	1849	David W. Low.....	1873
T. S. Lancaster.....	1849	Chas. E. Cressy.....	1886
O. A. Merrill.....	1850		

The first regular land communication between Gloucester and Boston was that established by Jonathan Lowe, a tavern-keeper on Front Street, who, on the 25th of April, 1788, began running, twice a week, a two-horse open carriage between the two places. At that time there were, besides this from Gloucester, but four stages running into Boston,—one from Portsmouth, N. H., one from New York, one from Providence, R. I., and one from Salem. The first change from this arrangement made the trips tri-weekly; and in 1805 a daily line was established. Four-horse coaches soon followed, and some years after another daily stage was added, by means of which the round trip could be made the same day.

As the result of a meeting of the citizens in September, 1844, a survey of the route for a railroad which should connect Gloucester with the Eastern Railroad at Beverly was made, and the road was soon after built by the Eastern Railroad Company as a branch. Regular trips were begun on the 24 of November, 1847. It proved a great accommodation to the people, has contributed largely to the prosperity of Gloucester, and is a profitable portion of the company's line of road.

Steamboats have run, with more or less regularity during the summer months, between Gloucester and Boston since 1840. In 1870 the Boston and Gloucester Steamboat Company was organized, and commenced the running of trips through the year.

The rocks of the Cape are granite or syenite, varying in the colors peculiar to those formations on the New England coast. They are easily wrought into blocks of any required size, and have been quarried to serve the necessities and convenience of the inhabitants from a very early date, and more or less for public use and exportation since the first quarter of the present century. Early in the last century Joshua Norwood was employed by the people of Sandy Bay and the other coves outside of the Cape to get out flat blocks of this stone to be used for mooring their fishing-boats. These blocks, about six feet square and from ten to fifteen inches thick, had a hole about fifteen inches in diameter cut in their centre, into which an oak butt, some twenty or more feet in length, having a part of its roots attached, was inserted. Dropped at proper distances from the

shore they afforded a safe mooring, except during heavy easterly gales. About the same time Mr. Norwood cut out millstones, which he sold in small quantities. He may, therefore, be regarded as the pioneer stone-cutter of the Cape.

In 1824 an extensive business in quarrying was begun by a gentleman from Quincy, who leased a ledge at Sandy Bay. Others followed him, and the business is still carried on in that territory, now belonging to Rockport.

Quarries were afterwards opened at Annisquam and in those portions of the westerly part of the town bordering on Squam River. Foundation stones for buildings, wharves, bridges and other structures, and paving blocks for streets have been, from time to time, obtained in large quantities from these localities. Many of the paving blocks have been shipped to Cuba and to the principal cities of the Union.

The Cape Ann Granite Company, whose quarry is located at Bay View, was organized in 1869, with a capital of \$100,000. Jonas H. French, president; H. H. Bennett, treasurer; Charles W. Foster, superintendent. The quarry comprises about one hundred and fifty acres, and contains the various kinds of granite adapted to building purposes. The company employ in the various departments of its work seldom less than three hundred men, and at times as many as seven hundred. The chief business is the cutting of granite for building purposes. It furnished the cut granite for the Boston Post-office building and the Post-office and Sub-treasury building in Baltimore; also the interior polished granite work for the new city building in Philadelphia. It has the largest granite polishing works in the United States, and has furnished many prominent monuments, the principal one being the base of the General Scott equestrian statue in Washington, one stone of which is the largest ever quarried in this country, weighing, when quarried in the rough, one hundred and forty-nine tons. The company is among the largest producers of paving blocks, making from one million to four million blocks per annum.

It has, at present, contracts for material amounting to five hundred thousand dollars, the chief contract being in connection with the court-house now being built in Boston. Its business has been steadily increasing, and it disburses monthly a large amount of money to its workmen, many of whom have been with the company since its organization—furnishing, in these days of discontent and change, a pleasant and conclusive demonstration of the kindly relations existing between employers and employed. Since its establishment the company has built up the village of Bay View from a population of one or two hundred to fifteen hundred inhabitants. Ever public-spirited and generous, it has contributed largely to the establishment of the Bay View churches, both Methodist and Catholic, and is constant in aiding whatever is for the highest advantage of the community.



"The Lanesville Granite Company" was organized in May, 1873, with a capital of fifty thousand dollars. Eben Blatchford, president; John Butman, treasurer and agent. The quarries cover about twenty acres, all consisting of excellent granite. Two pits are worked, one very large and about seventy feet deep. Steam pumps keep them free from water, and the quarries are inexhaustible. About one hundred and fifty men are now employed, and about fifty thousand tons of stone are annually produced. This is manufactured into all kinds of stone products, but largely into paving blocks, about one million five hundred thousand blocks having been cut in a single year, in addition to a large amount of other work. The beautiful and unique wall surrounding the Manchester (Mass.) Library is being furnished from this quarry. The company has always enjoyed a good reputation for the excellent character of its products.

There are four banks in Gloucester, established in the following order of time: The Gloucester Bank, 1796; Cape Ann, 1855; First National, 1864; City National, 1875. In addition to these, is the Cape Ann Savings Bank, incorporated in 1846.

## CHAPTER CX.

### GLOUCESTER—(Continued).

#### MILITARY.

*Indian War—French War—War for Independence—Privateering—War of 1812—Civil War, 1861-65.*

As early as 1642 the General Court ordered that a loan of muskets be made to "Glocester;" and probably about this time a military company was formed, as in 1644, on request of the town, the court ordered that "George Norton, as their eldest sergeant," should exercise the company in the military drill. It is not of record, however, that any call for active military service was made till the Indian War, in 1675. A levy was made on all the towns in the fall of this year, when the following-named were drafted to serve for Gloucester:

Andrew Sargent.	Joseph Allen.	Thomas Kent.
Joseph Clark.	Jacob Davis.	Hugh Howe.
Joseph Somes.	Vincent Davis.	

—"all weh," said the officer, who made the return of their name, "due want warm cloathing, and must have new coates." Others served before the war closed, as the town records show that lands were granted for "services in the Indian War" to.

John Bray.	John Stanwood.	John Haskell.
John Day.	Philip Stanwood.	Isaac Prince.
John Fitch.	Nathaniel Bray.	Thomas Babson.
Edward Haraden.	Moses Dudy.	Benjamin Jones.
Samuel Stanwood.		

These twenty-one persons represented nearly one-third of all the male citizens of the town capable of

bearing arms during the war. In 1676, while the Indians were committing great depredations at Andover and other places near by, Gloucester was put in a state of defense, a committee of the General Court reporting that "Cape Ann has made two garrisons, besides several particular fortifications."

No other call for military service appears to have been made till the expedition against Louisburg, a strongly fortified town of the French, at Cape Breton, in 1745. It had been annoying to the fisheries and to commerce generally, and some time in 1744 the Governor of Cape Breton, knowing that the Kings of France and England had mutually declared war, surprised and took the English garrison, at Canso. The prisoners were taken to Louisburg, and on their being paroled some of them came to Boston, where they conveyed to the Governor such information concerning the condition of the fortress as made him determined on an expedition for its reduction. By a majority of one the General Court resolved on the expedition. Four thousand troops were soon collected at Boston, and, under the command of William Pepperell, were embarked on the 24th of March, 1745. The transports in Chapeau-Rouge Bay were in charge of Captain Thomas Sanders, of Gloucester, and Captain Charles Byles had a company of forty-five Gloucester men. After the departure of the expedition, Rev. John White, the patriotic minister of the First Parish, preached a sermon from the words: "O let not the oppressed return ashamed: let the poor and needy praise thy name." Psalm lxxiv. 21. In it he thus described the situation: "Some have not unflittingly called Cape Breton a hornet's nest. 'Tis not safe, in a time of war, to go near them. They will sting all that come near them. We have already, ever since the war commenced, been great sufferers by them. They harbor our enemies that come to lay waste our infant eastern settlements; they molest and break in upon our fisheries, and break them to pieces; they lie near the roadway of our European merchandise, and they can sally out and take our corn vessels: and therefore our oppressions from thence, so long as it remains in the hands of the enemy, are like to be intolerable. We must remove these, our enemies, or they will destroy us. There is a plain necessity of it; and woe to us if it be not reduced." The reduction was successfully accomplished, the city and fortress surrendering the 16th of June.

In 1755 the English colonies of North America formed a union for attack and defense in a then pending war between England and France, which, four years later, broke the French power on this continent. Gloucester had large interests at stake in the contest, as its Grand Bank fishery, now assuming considerable importance, had been greatly interfered with by the French. The success of the English was necessary, therefore, to securing their interests on the banks. One whole company was furnished from Gloucester, and several soldiers for other





companies, in the first year of the war. The company commanded by Captain Jonathan Fellows formed part of the expedition against Crown Point. Seventeen additional men enlisted in 1757; and in 1758 a Gloucester company of eighty men, commanded by Captain Andrew Giddings, took part in the second capture of Louisburg, and many remained in the army till the close of the successful campaign of 1759.

A few years of peace and prosperity followed, soon darkened, however, by the war-cloud which formed on the passage of the Stamp Act by the British Parliament in 1765. Although the act was repealed in less than a twelve-month, it was followed by an oppressive system of taxation, which caused many of the towns to follow the example of Boston and Gloucester in voting to discourage the use of all imported articles. The passage of the Port Bill, a few years later, by the operation of which, many of the citizens of Boston, thrown out of employment, were reduced to poverty and destitution, so touched the sympathies of the people of Gloucester, as to prompt them to contribute relief by the donation of a hundred and twenty sheep and £117 6s. 1d. in money, and to pledge themselves, by still stronger resolves than before, to stand by the country in its non-intercourse with England. Early in 1775, in accordance with the recommendation of the Provincial Congress, active military preparations were commenced; small arms were purchased, musket balls procured and cartridges made, all by direction of the town; and a company of minute-men was organized and placed under command of Nathaniel Warner. In the midst of these preparations news came of the struggle at Lexington and Concord, and knowing that the British had a large fleet in Boston harbor, and that the town was in no condition to resist an attack, safety was sought for the women and children by taking them to West Parish and to Ipswich. An express was then sent to Cambridge to obtain arms; and a Committee of Safety of thirty-one eminent citizens was chosen. The minute-men were disbanded and the enlistment of men for active service was vigorously pushed. The fisheries and all maritime pursuits were, of course, impossible, with the enemy so powerful on the water, and so recruiting was comparatively easy. It is not possible to ascertain the full number of enlistments from Gloucester, but it is certain that "there were four companies composed wholly of Gloucester men, with the exception of about six persons; and that another company, commanded by Captain Parker, of Ipswich, had about thirty of our men in it; besides these there was another company, commanded by Captain James Collins, which marched to Cambridge on the 15th of June. No roll of this company has come to light, but our town records furnish a list of twenty-three of its members to

whom guns were delivered." The statement of the selectmen for 1779 was to the effect that, during the first campaign of the war, Gloucester "had upwards of two hundred and twenty men in the field, besides numbers who joined the marine department as more suitable to their former occupation."

Two Gloucester companies were at the battle of Bunker Hill. Captain Nathaniel Warner's company was filled in four days, and marched to Cambridge late in May. On the morning of the 17th of June, when it was discovered that the British were preparing to attack the redoubt on Bunker Hill which had been thrown up during the night, Captain Warner had orders to proceed to the hill and assist in its defense. Making a rapid march, and exposed to fire as they crossed the Neck, they got separated from each other, although all reached the field in time to engage in the action. Captain Warner, with a portion of his company, took position at first at the redoubt, and Lieutenant Burnham, with another part of the command, was beyond that point, on the left flank of the enemy. Later in the day Captain Warner and his men were at the rail-fence. The company had two men, Daniel Callahan and Benjamin Smith, killed in the action, and Benjamin Webber and Alexander Parran were wounded. The following named composed the company:

Nathaniel Warner, captain.	Thomas Ayres.
John Burnham, lieutenant.	David Rowe.
Daniel Collins, ensign.	Benjamin Webber.
Jona. Woodman, sergeant.	Samuel Marshall.
William Kinsman, sergeant.	Josiah Ingensol.
Alex. Parran, sergeant.	Joshua Day.
Jarus Lincoln, sergeant.	Joshua Folen.
Richard Simson, corporal.	Zerubbabel Allen.
Nathan Glover, corporal.	Isaac Bray.
Jonathan Butler, corporal.	Larry Trejay.
Symphas Stacy, corporal.	Solomon Parsons.
John Warner, infer.	John Andress.
Jonathan Somes.	William Seguns.
Andrew Keley.	William Grimes.
Nathaniel Bennett.	Aaron Stevens.
Moses Ring.	Peter Seavery.
Daniel Callahan.	Jeremiah Burnham.
Benjamin Clark.	John Chaplen.
Andrew Bray.	William Grover.
Josiah Brown.	Thomas Mullett.
Levi Lane.	Joseph Somes.
Moses Bennett.	Ezekiel Woodward.
James Preastly.	Eliphalet Whart.
Josiah Burk.	Ebenezer Tarbox.
Benjamin Smith.	Jonathan Pike.
Vinson Elwell.	Ebenezer Goslen (Joslyn).
William Averill.	William Johnson.
Robert Callaghan.	Nathan Brown.
Joseph Howard.	Lemuel Collins.

The other Gloucester company, in the engagement at Bunker Hill, was commanded by Captain John Rowe. It left Gloucester on the 12th of June, *en route* to Cambridge by way of Wenham. Having halted for a short time on the 16th at Mystic River, they resumed their march. About dark they discovered a large body of men approaching them, and soon ascertained that they were a detachment from the army at Cambridge on the way to Charlestown. They





joined them, and on arriving at Breed's, or Bunker Hill, they went silently at work with picks and spades to throw up an intrenchment. When the work was finished, and while the enemy were landing, Captain Rowe and a part of his company was detailed to carry off the tools. While returning they were ordered to duty on the extreme left, near the Mystic. Thus this company was also divided, and was not again united till the action had closed. Both divisions were under fire and did good service. Francis Pool, Josiah Brooks and William Parsons were killed, and Daniel Doyl and William Foster were wounded. The company roster was,—

John Row, captain.	Jeffrey Parsons.
Mark Pool, lieutenant.	John Row, Jr.
Eben, Cleveland, ensign.	Joshua Row.
Dan. Barber Tarr, sergeant.	Peter Richardson.
William Haskins, sergeant.	William Row.
W. Davison, [Aquan] sergeant.	Daniel Somers.
William Foster, sergeant.	John Smith.
Jonathan Row, corporal.	Ephraim Suddren.
Thomas Finsan, corporal.	John Tarr.
John Gott, corporal.	John Tarr, Jr.
William Low, corporal.	Jabez Tarr.
Benj. Davis, drummer.	James Tarr.
Isaac Haskell, fifer.	William Woolbury.
Jacob Allen.	Loeuzer Witham.
Obadiah Atcius.	Spencer Thomas.
David Averil.	Jonathan Parsons.
Elihu R. Batman.	Peter Emmons.
Daniel Butler.	Thomas Luce.
David Chace.	Thomas Dresser.
Henry Clark.	Caleb Elwell.
Daniel Doyl.	James Flaps.
Francis Davis.	Loeuzer Gott.
Samuel Clark.	Joshua Gere.
Joseph Dresser.	Bennet Haskins.
Reuben Dresser.	William Jumpter.
Joseph Lane.	John Clark.
James Lurvey.	John Yodim.
Francis Lane.	John Parrot.
Samuel Low.	Joseph Low.
Henry Morgan.	Aaron Rogers.
Henry Parsons.	Francis Foot.
Hugh Parahurst.	Josiah Brooks.
Joseph Parsons.	William Parsons.

Mr. Babson says of the privates in the above list, that "all but six were fishermen and sailors. Thirty-five were natives of Gloucester. Seventeen were under twenty-one years of age, five only over thirty, and none over forty. The youngest was William Low, a lad of fourteen. John Row, Jr., a son of the captain, was sixteen."

Although the British took possession of Bunker Hill, it had cost them heavily; and the battle had also assured the patriots that they had no reason to be discouraged, but to unite still more closely in their struggle for their rights. They had in a few weeks so closely invested Boston as to shut in the large British army there, and to entirely cut them off from receiving supplies of fresh provisions for themselves, and of provender for their horses. They were therefore compelled to obtain these necessary articles by using the vessels of their navy to convey foraging parties to the islands and along the shores of the bay. Out on such an expedition the British sloop-of-war

"Falcon," commanded by Captain Linzee, which had taken part in the battle of Bunker Hill, stood into Squam harbor and anchored near the bar, on the morning of the 5th of August, determined on capturing the cattle and sheep at Coffin's farm, some of which were in sight near the beach. Fifty men were sent off from the sloop in a barge to capture and slaughter the animals. They were not to succeed, however, for the owner, Major Peter Coffin, who was carefully watching Linzee's movements had, after sending to Squam and to several localities in his own section of the town for assistance, stationed his workmen behind some sand-knolls, and there awaited the coming of the marauders. As soon as the barge struck the beach a volley was poured into her by the major's men, and it was soon manifest by the confusion on board that it was not without effect. There were, however, no fatal effects. Linzee, using a glass, had observed all this, and now also saw several men at each end of the beach rushing to the scene of action in response to the major's call. No time was to be lost if he would save his men from capture, and he immediately signaled their return to the ship.

As the barge neared the sloop, Linzee, having spied a deeply-loaded vessel lying in Squam harbor, and supposing that it was loaded with India goods, gave orders to the returning officer to go into the harbor and cut her out. She proved to be loaded with sand, then extensively used for domestic purposes, and carried in schooners to the neighboring ports for sale. This fresh disappointment did not probably mollify Linzee's feelings towards the Yankees. The two following days the "Falcon" cruised about the Cape, during which time the captain impressed several men from the boats and vessels which he met. On the morning of the 8th of August the inhabitants of Gloucester were alarmed by seeing the "Falcon" at the mouth of the outer harbor, attended by a schooner she had recently captured, and in hot pursuit of another, which is seeking a place of shelter in the inner harbor. The captain of the latter runs her into shoal water, and finally grounds her on the flats near Five Pound Island. Boats filled with armed men are sent off from the "Falcon" to get possession of the schooner and bring her alongside of the sloop. The citizens, with such arms and ammunition as they can obtain, and two old swivels, assemble on the wharf, and on the little hill on the opposite side of the cove, to defeat Linzee's designs. His men board the schooner at the cabin window, but as they do so fire is opened upon them by the people on the shore, killing three of the enemy, and so badly wounding the lieutenant in command that he is taken back to the sloop. Infuriated by this resistance, Linzee sends in the schooner he has captured, and a cutter, both well-manned and armed, with orders to the officer in charge to fire on the "damned rebels" wherever he can find them. At the same time he opens fire on the town, and throws in about three



hundred four-pound balls, and attempts to set the town in flames by sending some of his men to kindle a fire among the fish-flakes on the beach; but the incendiaries are met and captured by a body of citizens. The cannonading of the town did very little damage, no lives being lost; and the schooner, cutter and barges were, with their thirty-five men, captured by the citizens stationed on the shores of the inner harbor, who also rescued several Americans who had been impressed into Linzee's service. The next day the "Falcon" left the outer harbor without attempting further mischief.

The people of Gloucester feared that, as the British fleet at Boston was so large, a more successful assault might soon be made on them, and so lost no time in seeking to strengthen and increase their defenses. The Provincial Government at once conferred with General Washington, and by his order three hundred pounds of powder, three hundred nine-pound shot, and one hundred pounds of grape shot were delivered to Captain Joseph Foster, who had planned and executed the defense against Linzee, for the use of the town. A detachment of riflemen under Major Robert Magaw was also sent. The old fort was rebuilt and additional breastworks were thrown up at different places on the shores of the harbor. It was generally understood that Falmouth and Gloucester were doomed by the British to destruction, and when the former place was burned on the 16th of October, an attack on Gloucester was considered imminent. General Washington sent a letter on the 30th to the House of Representatives in relation to affording some additional necessities of defense to Cape Ann, and on the 4th of November he was authorized to send an officer to Concord, Worcester, Lancaster and Leicester, to view the cannon in those towns, and to send such as was fit for use to Gloucester. The town was also authorized to procure, on the credit of the colony, two barrels of powder. The General Court resolved, on the 2d of December, "Considering the importance of the harbor of Gloucester and the exposedness of the same to the enemy, to raise two companies of fifty men each, to continue in service there till April 1st, unless sooner discharged." Four companies of home soldiers were also organized, over whom Joseph Foster was appointed colonel by the General Court. Gloucester was thus put in a good state of defense; but early the following spring the British fleet left the coast, and there was no further danger of attack from that quarter.

Privateering began to engage the attention of the citizens of Gloucester in the latter part of the summer of 1775. At first, only the fishing boats were used. They took a few prizes, the most valuable of which was a brig from Canada, bound to Boston, with a deck-load of live stock for the troops, and coal and iron in her hold. Her cargo was landed at Wheeler's Point, Squam Harbor, and the oxen were sold at auction. There were, at about the same time, several armed

schooners employed in the public service, several of which were cruising in the bay for the purpose of intercepting any vessels that might be coming over its waters with supplies for the enemy. On the 28th of November one of these—the "Lee," commanded by Captain Manly—brought into Gloucester harbor the ship "Nancy," from London, having on board large quantities of small-arms and ammunition, besides cannon and a large brass mortar of a new construction. These were landed at Gloucester, and carted to the camp at Cambridge, where they were greatly needed. The mortar was the best that had ever been landed on this continent, and, in consideration of its high value, it was christened the "Congress."

When the first term of enlistment in the patriot army had expired, many of the Gloucester soldiers returned home, and most of them shipped on the privateers. The vessels engaged in this service, so far as they were known to Mr. Babson, whose search for information was indefatigable, were the "Warren," a fishing schooner formerly called the "Britannia;" the schooner "Langdon;" the sloop "Union;" the brig "Gen. Mercer;" the brig "Gloucester;" the schooner "Speedwell;" the ship "Gen. Starks;" the "Trial," a small boat; schooner "Wasp;" brig "Wilkes;" brig "Success;" brig "Friendship;" ship "Gloucester Packet;" schooner "Union;" sloop "Speedwell;" ship "Tiger;" brig "Ruby;" brig "Robin Hood;" ship "Tempest;" the "Civil Usage." The "Warren" was under command of Captain William Coas on her first cruise, and was fitted out in the summer of 1776. She had eight guns, and an imperfect set of small arms, the locks of some of the latter being tied on with rope-yarns. In one month she captured and sent into Gloucester three prizes. The first was the ship "Picary," of 400 tons. Her cargo was a valuable one, consisting of 325 hogsheads sugar, 161 bales cotton, 168 pipes, 29 hogsheads and 10 quarter-casks Madeira wine, and several hundred-weight of indigo. Her second prize was a brig of about 120 tons; she was in ballast, but had some elephants' teeth and gold-dust. The next prize was a 500-ton ship called the "Sarah and Elizabeth," from Jamaica bound to London. Her cargo brought a large sum to her captors. It consisted of 394 hogsheads sugar, 180 puncheons rum, 20 casks indigo, 70 live tortoise, 6 casks tortoise shells, 50 bags cotton, some cash and plate, and a quantity of mahogany. On her third cruise the "Warren" was commanded by Captain John Colson. She took but one prize, a topsail schooner, with a cargo of sugar, coffee and cotton. On her third and last cruise, under Captain Silas Howell, she was captured on the third day out.

The "Langdon" has left no record of her fortune and fate. The "Union" was commanded by Capt. Isaac Somes. She captured a ship bound to Lisbon with a cargo of fish, and a brig loaded with salt. The "Gen. Mercer" was the brig captured by the "Union." She cruised under command of Capt.





James Babson, and, in company with a Philadelphia privateer, captured, while off the coast of France, two or three brigs. The "Gloucester," a new vessel, was armed and equipped in a thorough manner, mounting eighteen guns, and having a crew, including officers, of one hundred and thirty men. She put to sea early in July, 1777, and soon fell in with and captured the brig "Two Friends," having a cargo of wine and salt. She also took, on the Banks of Newfoundland, the fishing brig "Spark," with a part of a fare of fish and some salt, which she sent in under care of Isaac Day. No further tidings of the "Gloucester" were ever received; she was lost, with all on board. The "Speedwell" was also fitted out in 1777, under Capt. Philemon Haskell. She captured the "George," "Dolphin" and "Phenix," fishing brigs, each with a part of a fare of fish and some salt. The last commodity came at a time when it was greatly needed, and brought a large sum. The "Dolphin" and "Phenix" were subsequently fitted out with cargoes for the West Indies, and were both taken by the British. The "George" made a successful voyage to Bilboa. The "Speedwell" was again fitted out in 1778, but nothing is known of her doings. The "Trial" was mounted with twelve guns, had a small crew and cruised along the shore. She was commanded by Capt. Thomas Sanders. Nothing is known of her exploits, except that on one cruise she took, off Canso, three coasters, two of which were got safely to Gloucester, and the other was retaken.

The "Gen. Starks" was a new ship, of four hundred tons, and mounted eighteen guns. She first went out in 1778, but met with indifferent success in her first and second cruises, taking only a schooner loaded with salt in the first, and a ship in ballast—the "Providence"—in the second. In April, 1779, she sailed on her third cruise, which was an eventful one. She had a crew of one hundred and thirty-five officers and men, and was commanded by Capt. William Coas. Her other officers were:

Thomas Haskell, first lieutenant.  
Isaiah Knight, second lieutenant.  
Dennis Coas, third lieutenant.  
James Parsons, sailing master.  
— Hodgkies, sailing-master's mate.  
Edward Bowden, boatswain.  
James Saxby, boatswain's mate.  
Philip Poresty, boatswain's mate.  
William Thomas, gunner.  
Samuel Davis, gunner's mate.  
M. Parker, captain of marines.  
Jesse Farley, steward.  
William Pears, steward's mate.

Jerry Row, drummer.  
Peter Dwyer, quarter-master.  
Joseph Parsons.  
John Glover.  
Samuel Hodgkins.  
N. Perkins, carpenter.  
Nathaniel Perkins, carpenter's mate.  
Joseph Smith, cook.  
John Hardy, cook's mate.  
Jack Short, drummer.  
David Knights, lifer.  
Joseph Smith, surgeon.  
Benjamin Simes, captain's clerk.

Her first prize was a brig from Limerick, with a cargo of beef, pork and butter. Reaching the Western Islands, she made a ship and brig to windward, which proved to be British vessels, mounting respectively twenty-eight and eighteen guns. A fight was commenced, but it proving too unequal, the "Starks" hauled off, and soon outran the enemy. Cruising to

the eastward, she fell in with and captured the British ship "Porcupine," of fourteen guns, which, without offering resistance, struck to the "Starks." After taking the guns and light sails, Captain Coas restored the ship to the British commander. Six of the guns taken were mounted on the "Starks" half-deck, and manned with marines. An English brig, from Bristol, with an assorted cargo, was next taken, and sent in. A sloop bound to Oporto was taken a few days later, and, after taking off her sails, rigging, cables and anchors, was sunk. After cruising off Cape Finisterre, and down the Bay of Biscay, the "Starks" put into Bilboa to refit for a cruise homeward. While there yellow fever broke out among the crew, several of whom died. As soon as the "Starks" was again ready for sea, Capt. Coas was offered one thousand dollars by the authorities of Bilboa if he would go out in the bay and take a war-like vessel, supposed to be an enemy's cruiser. After sailing a few days he saw a brig and a lugger, the latter keeping out of his way. On speaking the brig, which he ascertained to be a Dane, he was informed that the lugger was a Guernsey privateer. Capt. Coas at once set out to decoy the lugger, by hoisting an English ensign. The ruse was successful, and on her running down under the lee of the "Starks," and demanding her name, Capt. Coas gave the name of an English ship from Whitehaven. He then mustered the crew to their quarters, pulled down the English ensign, run up the American flag and ordered the lugger to strike to the "Gen. Starks." Instead of striking, she luffed, intending to escape on the wind; but the "Starks" luffed at the same time, and gave the enemy a broadside, on which she surrendered. The schooner mounted eight guns, and was manned by sixty men, eight of whom were wounded by the "Starks' broadside. Although a good deal crippled, the prize was got into Bilboa, where she was sold for one thousand six hundred dollars, and Capt. Coas received in addition the promised one thousand dollars for taking her. The "Starks" sailed for home soon after, and after being out a few days decoyed an English cutter; but her real character being discovered while the cutter's lieutenant and boat's crew were on board, the cutter, by outsailing the "Starks," escaped. Not many days after a vessel was sighted under a cloud of canvas, with which, after a sharp chase of four hours, the "Starks" came up. It proved to be an English packet from Jamaica, bound home.

Finding escape impossible, the packet prepared for action, and after a two hours' engagement, surrendered to the "Starks," but not until six of her men had been killed and nine wounded, and all three of the topmasts were shot away. The losses on the "Starks" were one boy killed and five men wounded. The prize was sent to Gloucester. The "Starks" next fell in with and captured a brig, with a cargo of fish, bound to Lisbon, from Newfoundland. She showed



fourteen guns, but ten of them proved to be wooden make-believes. She also was sent to Gloucester. Soon after this, two other fish-brigs were taken and sent in. More might have been captured, but were prudently suffered to escape, as the "Starks" crew had been greatly reduced to man the prizes, twenty of the remainder were on the sick-list, and there were nearly a hundred prisoners on board. Captain Coas therefore steered for home. At least four more cruises were made by the "Starks," three of them under Captain James Pearson. The first two were almost resultless. On the third she sailed directly to the mouth of the St. Lawrence, for the purpose of intercepting the Quebec fleet. After laying in the fog several days Captain Pearson discovered, when it lifted, three of the fleet quite near him,—the "Detroit," "Polly" and "Beaver." These he captured and sent to Gloucester. On the fourth cruise Captain Coas was again induced to take command. He was out but a week when his ship was captured by the ship "Chatham," and sent to Halifax. It is said that the British converted the "Starks" into the "Antelope Packet," and that she was wrecked at the Pellew Islands.

The "Wasp" was first commanded by Captain Isaac Somes, and on her first cruise took a brig from Ireland, loaded with provisions. Her next cruise was under Captain John Somes, when she shared with the privateer "Harlequin," of Salem, in capturing a Jamaica ship, with a cargo of rum. The "Wilkes" was built by David Pearce, for the West India trade, and after making one voyage was fitted out as a privateer, under command of Captain Job Knights. She was taken by the enemy and carried to Newfoundland; but was afterwards retaken by some citizens of Marblehead, and returned to Gloucester, where she was sold to her former owner, who sent her out under command of Captain John Beach. On this cruise she was captured off the West Indies. The "Success" was also built by David Pearce, who sent her to the West Indies as a letter of marque. She was taken on the passage home. The "Friendship" was commanded by Captain Isaac Elwell. On a voyage to the West Indies she captured a small brig of one hundred and thirty tons, with a cargo of rum. The "Gloucester Packet" was the Jamaica packet ship taken by the "Starks." She was purchased by David Pearce, who sent her under command of Captain John Beach to Cadiz, as a letter of marque. She captured the brig "Mary" with a cargo of flour. The "Union" had a crew of thirty men, and was commanded by Captain Daniel Parsons. She captured a brig from Ireland, with a cargo of beef, pork and clothing. The shallop "Speedwell" was owned by a company, who decked her over, leaving a large hatchway to serve as quarters for the men while in action. She had four swivels stepped in the combings of the hatch, and small arms. Captain Thomas Saunders commanded her, and she car-

ried a crew of twenty-five. She made a cruise off Canso for the purpose of intercepting some of the vessels trading between that place and Halifax. She was chased ashore in the Gut by British cruisers, and lost. The "Tiger" had for her commander Captain John Tucker. She carried sixteen guns. She took but one prize, which was retaken and carried into Halifax. The "Tiger" soon after shared the fate of her temporary prize. The "Ruby," Captain Solomon Babson, commander, captured a brig from Ireland, with a cargo of beef, pork and butter. The "Robin Hood" was a small brig, mounting nine guns, commanded by Captain Sargent Smith, who performed a remarkable feat in capturing a British packet carrying sixteen guns, and having a crew of sixty men. When the packet was fallen in with, Captain Smith had no expectation of taking her, but as the "Robin Hood" was a fast sailer, he thought he might venture near enough to give her a few shot in passing. Bringing all his guns to bear on one side, he gave the packet, as he came abreast of her, a heavy broadside. Such was the manifest effect that he was led to repeat it, when, to his surprise, the packet, without further resistance, surrendered. The "Tempest" was built by a company, and fitted out for the West Indies, as a letter of marque, under command of Captain Isaac Somes. She foundered a few weeks after leaving port, in a severe tempest, and all on board were lost. The "Civil Usage" carried a crew of sixty men, and was under command of Captain John Smith, who, by a rash attack on an English transport ship having eight hundred persons on board, was mortally wounded, though he managed to haul off his vessel, which put in at Martinico.

Mr. Babson, in reviewing his account of Gloucester privateering, which we have here abridged, says that he believes it "to contain some notice of nearly every enterprise of that kind undertaken in town. True, it is, for the most part, but a mere sketch of voyages; but even some account of these may be deemed worthy of preservation, when it is considered what interests, hopes, disappointments, sorrows and sufferings were connected with them. A true history of our Revolutionary privateering would be a record of individual experience; of widows' broken hearts; of orphans' bitter tears; of the agonies of men struggling with the ocean, in the face of death; of physical suffering in prison-ships; of wanderings in foreign lands, without friends, without money, and without health; and, worst of all, of the demoralizing influences of a practice which every enlightened conscience declares to be at war with the justice of God and the happiness of men."

As has been already noticed, enlistments in Gloucester for the army were difficult in 1776, owing to the preference on the part of the citizens for marine service. But in 1777, under the pressure and spur of a proposed attempt to expel the enemy from Newport, R. I., where he had gathered a large force, a company was raised and sent to that campaign, under Capt.





Mark Pool. It was in the engagement brought on by an assault of the British on the fortifications which the patriots had thrown up near that town. The latter were obliged to retreat from the island. The particulars in regard to enlistments during the next three years are unknown. But it is certain that few localities had suffered more during the first five years of the war, from loss of life occasioned by the struggle. At the close of the year 1779 the number of ratable polls had decreased from 1053 in 1775 to 696. At least 350 of the inhabitants had perished at sea, been killed in battle, died while prisoners in the hands of the enemy, or in some other way incident to war had lost their lives. The foreign trade of the town had been nearly annihilated, the shipping having been captured or destroyed. Privateering benefited only a few; and seven hundred and fifty people—more than one-sixth of the population—were dependent on charity for their subsistence. In 1780 the number of troops to be raised in the State for six months' service in the Continental army was 4000, of which the quota for Gloucester was 32. To raise a bounty for the encouragement of enlistment, the town voted, in June, to borrow \$60,000. Paper money had at this time depreciated to one-seventieth of its nominal value. On the 6th of July it was voted to borrow an additional \$60,000. Three men were procured by the payment of \$6000 each, and it was agreed to offer that sum for the remainder, with a proviso that, if the average bounty paid throughout the State exceeded that amount, the difference should be made up to each soldier. On the 17th of July authority was given for another loan of \$60,000, and an offer of £300 per month was made for each man who could be procured for three months' service. The work of filling the quota evidently dragged, for, on the 7th of August the town voted to raise an additional sum of \$51,060 to pay soldiers. In January, 1781, the town's quota for the army was 48 men. The State had authorized the towns to pay fifty dollars bounty to each man, and the town of Gloucester thereupon voted a tax of £1000 in silver money for a bounty fund. It was not until August that the quota was filled. Although all the demands of the State, made during the progress of the war, had not been fully met, yet so many had gone into the army that the town was in a comparatively defenseless condition. In anticipation of depredations in the harbor which the inhabitants would not be strong enough to prevent, the selectmen were instructed, at the March meeting in 1782, to petition the General Court that a guard be stationed in the town. Before the Legislature could have taken action an event occurred which showed that the anticipations were not groundless. On the night of the 31st of March the ship "Harriet," lying in the harbor, loaded for Curacao, but having only two men on board, was cut out by a party sent in from an English fourteen-gun brig. Her absence was first discovered by her owner, Capt. David Pearce, who, on rising from his

bed the next morning, missed her from her anchorage, and soon discovered that she was outside the harbor, running off, in a strong fair wind, in an easterly direction, and having in her company a small vessel that had been seen in the harbor, near Ten-Pound Island, the day before. Hurrying to the meeting-house, Capt. Pearce rang the bell with great violence, giving a general alarm. A plan for retaking the ship was speedily devised. The ship "Betsey," belonging also to Capt. Pearce, was lying at the head of his wharf, dismantled, for the purpose of being graved. The tide was at its lowest ebb, but it was determined to put the "Betsey" in condition for starting as soon as the tide would serve. Volunteers in great numbers made the necessary preparations; a fine crew was enlisted for the expedition; ballast, stores, ammunition, twenty guns, an ample supply of small arms, and all other necessities were speedily put on board; and as soon as the water served, the ship was assisted by tow-boats in getting out of the harbor. Capt. Joseph Foster was in command, and Capt. Pearce was, with his brother William, on board. Having observed the direction in which the "Harriet" was heading, and believing it was the enemy's intention to run to the British station on the eastern coast, the "Betsey" was put on an east-northeast course, and put in order for action. At daylight the next morning the captured ship, in company with the brig and smaller vessel, was in sight. She was soon overtaken, and given up without an effort on the part of the enemy to retain her. The "Harriet" was put under charge of Capt. William Pearce, and both vessels reached Gloucester the next afternoon.

In the fall of 1786, three years after the independence of the United States had been acknowledged by England, an insurrection, known as Shay's Rebellion, broke out in the western part of the Commonwealth, threatening to overthrow the State government. On the call for troops, a town-meeting held on the 15th of January, 1787, voted to raise a company, and appropriated money therefor. So prompt was the response of the people that a company was recruited the same day, placed under the command of a tried and distinguished soldier, Capt. John Rowe, William Kinsman being lieutenant, and William Tuck ensign. The company marched to the scene of disturbance, as a part of Col. Wade's regiment; but the rebels' speedy dispersion brought their service to an end in about six weeks.

During the difficulties between America and France, growing out of the war between France and England, the sailors and fishermen of Gloucester, who had suffered much by the encroachments of the French upon American commerce, enlisted in 1798, to the number of fifty-two, on board the sloop-of-war "Herald." Fortunately, they were not called to battle.

The troubles with Great Britain, culminating in the War of 1812, were injurious to Gloucester more by





the restriction of trade than by loss of life in land or naval engagements. The "Embargo" had interfered with maritime pursuits, and the "Enforcing Act" literally shut the town up from use of the sea. Political parties were about equally divided in the town, and much bitter feeling was engendered. Neutrality or disloyalty were impossible to any of the citizens, however, as soon as it became manifest that their old enemy was dangerously near. During the second year of the war, while the only defenses of the town were its militia and artillery company, and a small national guard stationed at the fort at the entrance to the inner harbor, alarm for the safety of the town was so well-grounded, that the armament of the fort and the force necessary for its defense were increased. The old State fort at the "Stage" was strengthened and two companies of militia—one commanded by Capt. Benjamin Haskell, of Gloucester, and one by Capt. Widger, of Ipswich—were put into barracks there. Another company was stationed at the national fort.

Depredations on the fishermen and coasters were commenced by the enemy in August, 1813, when the British ship "Nymph" made several captures. Sometime the same month the "Commodore Broke" stood into Sandy Bay, intending to take out some coasters then laying there at anchor. As the cruiser neared the shore she opened fire of solid shot and grape on the village. The villagers at once assembled on the Neck, and from the old wharf, on which they had a small cannon, opened fire on the enemy with such effect that they sent one ball completely through her, though above the water-line. She made all haste in retreating. In 1814 the enemy had several large ships on the coast, one of which destroyed, in Squam Harbor, a sloop loaded with lime, and carried off two small schooners loaded with fish. About the same time a cruiser chased a Portsmouth sloop, having a cargo of flour, into Gloucester Harbor, where she was run ashore near Eastern Point. An attempt to take possession of her there was defeated by the militia and artillery. The people at Sandy Bay having erected a small fort at their own expense on the point of "Bearskin Neck," and procured for it three carriage-guns, it was placed in charge of a detachment from one of the companies at the Harbor. On the 8th of September the British frigate "Nymph," having taken a fishing boat belonging to the place, compelled her skipper, Captain David Elwell, to pilot two barges through a dense fog, at midnight, to the Neck. One of the barges landed her men at what is known as the "Eastern Gutter," while the other made a landing at the old dock, on the western side of the Neck. The fort was surprised, the guns spiked and thrown out, and the fourteen men in charge were taken prisoners. This was effected by the portion of the enemy landed at the "Gutter." The others were seen to land at the dock by a sentinel, who gave the alarm, which roused the people,

who opened musketry fire on the barge, receiving in return cannon and grape shot, but suffering no injury therefrom. The bell in the meeting house steeple was now ringing a general alarm, to silence which the enemy opened fire on the belfry, but only, with the exception of hitting it post in the steeple, inflicting damage on themselves by starting a butt in the bow of their barge, which caused her to sink near the rocks back of the pier. The officer in charge and a few of his men ran across the Neck, seized a boat and made their escape; the rest—a dozen or more in number—were made prisoners. Meanwhile the section of the assailants that took the fort had made good their escape with their prisoners—all but four, who escaped by swimming—to the frigate. An exchange of prisoners was effected, and the English captain promised the people "unmolested use of their fishing-grounds during the rest of the fall; and he kept his word."

Privateering was not engaged in to any great extent by the Gloucester people during this war. The schooners "Swordfish," "Thrasher" and "Orlando" were the only vessels of considerable size devoted to this use. Of the "Swordfish" we have no information, except that she was captured on her second cruise. The "Thrasher" was of about one hundred and fifty tons burthen, carried fourteen guns and was manned by ninety men. She captured an English East Indiaman, of twenty guns, and manned by over one hundred men. Through the carelessness of her prize-master she was re-taken, and the "Thrasher" fell into the hands of the enemy not long after. The "Orlando" took no valuable prize. After her second cruise she was lengthened thirty feet and rigged into a ship, but it did not change her fortune. In addition to these, a few fishing boats were fitted out, the largest and most successful of which was the "Madison," of twenty-eight tons, manned by twenty-eight men. She took two valuable prizes in a short cruise—one a ship of four hundred tons, with a full cargo of timber and naval stores, and the other a brig of three hundred tons, with a valuable cargo.

Mr. Babson records the following bold achievement in the merchant service: "The brig 'Pickering,' of this town, of two hundred and fifty tons, Elias Davis, captain, was taken while on her passage from Gibraltar home, by the British frigate 'Belvidere.' After taking from the brig all her crew, except the captain and his son, who was first mate, the British captain placed her in charge of a prize-crew and ordered her to Halifax. The captain of the brig, loath to lose a fine new vessel, of which he himself was part owner, devised a plan of re-capture, and, with the aid of his son, again got command of her, and brought her safely to Gloucester."

On Monday, April 15, 1861, the mails brought full particulars to Gloucester of the bombardment and evacuation of Fort Sumter. That evening Company G, of the Eighth Regiment of Infantry, was recruited,



and left town on the morning of the 16th. This was soon followed by Company K, of the Twelfth Regiment of Volunteers; the town having, at a large and enthusiastic meeting on the 22d of April, voted the most liberal provision for aid to volunteers' families. Company C, of the Twenty-third Regiment, soon followed. Then, in November, 1861, Company D, of the Thirty-second Regiment; and next, Company K, of the Thirtieth Regiment. Finally, under the call of the President for nine months' men, Company G, of the Eighth Regiment, responded with alacrity, and left town September 12, 1862; and still again went into service in July, 1864. In December, 1864, a company for coast defense was enlisted, and was stationed at the fort in Marblehead till the close of the war.

Enlistments for the navy also commenced at an early period in the war, and a large number of men went into that branch of the service. An effort is now being made by the city clerk of Gloucester to collect their names, and make up their record of service; but the work is slow, and a long time must elapse before it can be perfected.

In the month of June, 1863, the Confederate war vessel "Taony" appeared on the track of the fishing fleet, and destroyed six Gloucester fishing schooners. She soon disappeared, however, being burned by her commander to prevent her capture.

In the following list we give the names of all, so far as known, to date, who were credited to Gloucester as entering the army and navy. It is approximately complete and correct as regards enlistments in the army; but very imperfect as a list of those who entered the navy. No doubt some in each branch of the service were credited to Gloucester who never resided there, but their number is probably more than equaled by the names of Gloucester recruits, which we have not been able to obtain, who were credited to other places.

## FIFTH REGIMENT (THREE MONTHS).

*Company H.*

Samuel Jones, must. in May 1, 1861.

## EIGHTH REGIMENT (THREE MONTHS).

*Mustered into service April 20, 1861, unless otherwise stated.*

Andrew Elwell, Lieut. Col.

*Company G.*

Addison Center, Capt.  
David W. Low, 1st Lieut.  
Edward A. Story, 2d Lieut.  
Henry Clark, 3d Lieut.  
Stephen Rich, 1st Sergt.  
Alfred F. Trumaine, 1st Sergt.  
Westover Greenleaf, Sergt.  
William A. Marshall, Sergt.  
Samuel Fears, Sergt.  
Abraham Williams, Jr., Corp.  
George Fears, Corp.  
George Clark, Gdly. Corp.  
Adolph F. Lindberg, Corp.  
George E. Allen.  
William Bushby.

Geo. C. Carlton.<sup>1</sup>  
William F. Carlton.<sup>1</sup>  
John S. Carter.<sup>1</sup>  
Samuel S. Clark.  
Edward Cookson.<sup>1</sup>  
Joseph A. Daniels.  
Jonathan Douglass.  
Salomon Friend.  
Michael A. Galvin.  
Geo. D. Gardner.  
John E. Gilman.  
William A. Gove.  
Charles Gray.  
Charles A. Hall.<sup>1</sup>  
Nathaniel Haskell.<sup>1</sup>  
John Hinch.<sup>1</sup>  
Augustus M. Howe, Jr.<sup>1</sup>  
Maverick M. Jamison.<sup>1</sup>

John W. Johnson.<sup>1</sup>  
Elias D. Knights.  
Edward Knights.  
James W. Lovejoy.<sup>1</sup>  
John W. Martin.  
Thomas Matchett.  
Arthur C. Millett.  
William A. McKinney.  
Benj. F. Morey.  
Peter Murphy.<sup>1</sup>  
Alonzo A. Nye.  
John P. Ober.<sup>1</sup>  
John J. Parker.<sup>1</sup>  
Paulino Paroni.<sup>1</sup>  
Octavius Phipps.<sup>1</sup>  
George F. Robie.

Edward Rowe.<sup>1</sup>  
George Shackelford.  
Adrian Steele.  
Robert Stevens.  
Charles L. Stevens.<sup>1</sup>  
Frederick Stokes.<sup>1</sup>  
Calvin W. Swift.  
Samuel Tarr.  
Herman Utpatel.  
William Vincent.  
Henry Walker.<sup>1</sup>  
Henry Williams.<sup>1</sup>  
John Williams.  
John W. Witham.<sup>1</sup>  
Joseph W. Woodbury.  
Jabez F. Wnson.

## SIXTH REGIMENT (ONE HUNDRED DAYS).

*Mustered into service July 15, 1864.**Company I.*

Charles A. Staten, Corp.  
William D. Larkin.

*Company K.*Nathaniel B. Parsons.<sup>2</sup>

## EIGHTH REGIMENT (ONE HUNDRED DAYS).

*Mustered into service July 18, 1864, unless otherwise stated.*Francis Locke, Jr., Com. Sgt.<sup>3</sup>*Company C.*

Howard Elwell.<sup>4</sup>  
William Follansbee.<sup>4</sup>

*Company G.*

<sup>5</sup> David W. Low, Capt.  
<sup>6</sup> Edward L. Rowe, 1st Lieut.  
<sup>7</sup> George L. Fears, 2d Lieut.  
<sup>8</sup> Isaac N. Story, Sergt.  
Samuel W. Brown, (2) 1st Sgt.  
George A. Watson, Sergt.  
John P. Tarr, Sergt.  
Martin Dunn, Sergt.  
George W. Dodge, Sergt.  
Edward Deliver, Corp.  
Robert Douglass, Corp.  
John H. Merchant, Corp.  
William H. Jordan, Corp.  
Charles M. Blake, Corp.  
Edward F. Hinckley, Corp.  
Charles H. Wnson, Corp.  
Wm. N. Wnson, wagoner.  
Justus S. Stearns, musician.  
Howard L. Adams.  
James S. C. Allen.  
Nathaniel E. Allen.  
Hiram Averill.  
John H. Bagley.  
Edward Barber.  
Heber Baynton.  
Charles E. Bray.  
John Brazier.  
John M. Caldwell.  
Lyman Cows.  
Everett Davis.

Francis Davis.  
Eben Day.  
William Fears.  
Nicholas Fert.  
William B. Follansbee.  
William L. Fowler.  
Hervey Friend.  
Sidney Gardner.  
Frank W. Gort.  
John T. Harvey, Jr.  
Thomas Harvey, Jr.  
Daniel G. Hodgkins.  
Edward T. Hodgkins.  
Luther D. Hodgkins.  
Isaac L. Hubbard.  
John B. Knowlton.  
<sup>9</sup> Francis Locke, Jr.  
Leander McFarland.  
Joseph Parsons.  
Joseph M. Parsons.  
Rufus Parsons.  
Eben Perkins.  
Levi G. Perkins.  
<sup>10</sup> Benj. F. Riggs.  
George T. Rowe.  
George T. Sawyer.  
Henry Stanwood.  
Simon M. Stockman.  
William W. Story.  
Ignatius Sylvester.  
Sidney Sylvester.  
Henry C. Tucker.  
Edward V. Wells.  
E. Gilbert Winchester.  
William H. Witham.  
J. Warren Wnson.

## SEVENTH REGIMENT (SIX MONTHS).

*Mustered into service July 1, 1862.**Company B.*

Edward Butler. Edwin S. Robinson. Charles A. Staten.

## THIRD REGIMENT (NINE MONTHS).

*Company K.*

George F. Winter, 1st Sergt., mustered in Sept. 23, 1862.

<sup>1</sup> Mustered in June 19, 1861.<sup>2</sup> Must. in July 26, 1864.<sup>3</sup> Major, July 26, 1864.<sup>4</sup> First Lieut., July 27, 1864.<sup>5</sup> 2d Lieut., July 27, 1864.<sup>6</sup> Died at Annapolis, Md., Sept. 23, 1864.<sup>7</sup> Must. in July 14, 1864.<sup>8</sup> Must. in July 20, 1864.<sup>9</sup> Captain, July 27, 1864.<sup>10</sup> Must. in July 22, 1864.<sup>11</sup> Commissary Sergt., July 31, 1864.<sup>12</sup> Mustered in June 19, 1861.





## FOURTH REGIMENT (NINE MONTHS).

Rev. Samuel E. Pierce, Chaplain, mustered in Dec. 16, 1862.

## EIGHTH REGIMENT (NINE MONTHS).

*Mustered into service September 15, 1861, unless otherwise stated.*

## Company E.

John W. McKay.<sup>1</sup>

## Company G.

David W. Low, Capt.  
Edward L. Rowe, 1st Lieut.  
Samuel Fears, 2d Lieut.  
George L. Fears, 1st Sergt.  
Isaac N. Story, Sergt.  
Alonso A. Nye, Sergt.  
Samuel Tarr, Sergt.  
Charles S. Forbes, Sergt.  
Frank G. Gouffrey, Corp.  
Samuel W. Brown, Jr., Corp.  
Jeremiah Foster, Jr., Corp.  
George A. Watson, Corp.  
Robert Collins, Corp.  
John J. Everdeen, Corp.  
William S. Sadler, Corp.  
John P. Tarr, Corp.  
Martin Dunn, Corp.  
Octavius Platts, musician.  
Howard Adams.  
James S. C. Allen.  
Gorman B. Ames.  
Frank Babson.  
Osman Babson.  
John H. Bagley.  
Edward Barber.  
Walter Berry.<sup>2</sup>  
Charles M. Blake.  
Andrew B. Bickford.  
Albion B. Bray.  
Eben H. Brazier.  
John Cates.  
Addison Center.  
<sup>3</sup> Albert Center.  
Benj. Crasty.  
Francis Davis.  
John J. Davis.  
George W. Dodge.  
Edward Dolliver.  
Robert Douglass.  
Peter Hannagan.  
Albert Friend.  
Alfred Friend.  
Sidney Friend.  
Henry D. Gaffney.  
George Goodrich, 3d Lieut.  
Sidney Gouffrey.

William J. Harris.  
Howard Haskell.  
Edmund P. Hinkley.  
Fitz Hodgkins.  
George B. Howard.  
James Hutchinson.  
William H. Jeffs.  
Charles B. Jones.  
William H. Jordan.  
Elbridge Kenney.  
James H. Lambert.  
Edwin L. Lane.  
Francis Locke, Jr.  
Gorham P. Low, Jr.  
William Lunt.  
George J. Marshall.  
John H. Marchant.  
John McCloud.  
James A. Nickerson.  
Peter Nichols.  
Wallace Noyes.  
David Pearce.  
Fitz W. Perkins.  
Charles H. Pittman.  
Thomas Raffe.  
Allen B. Robinson.  
Robert Robinson.  
Charles Rogers.  
Henry S. Sadler.  
George Sathorn.  
George D. Sargent.  
Milton Sargent.  
Edward E. Saville.  
George W. Sawyer.  
Samuel Sayward, Jr.  
Joseph C. Shepard.  
John Shattuckworth.  
David L. Smith.  
George H. Smith.  
George W. Somes (2d).  
Franklin Steele.  
Joshua Stuart.  
Charles S. Sylvester.  
James W. Thompson.  
Azor A. Tusk.  
Alexander G. Tupper.  
Charles H. Womson.  
William L. Womson.  
William N. Womson.  
James A. Ziegler.

## FORTY-FIFTH REGIMENT (NINE MONTHS).

*Mustered into service October 7, 1862.*

John L. Collyer, Company I.      Jacob Wilson, Company K.

## FORTY-EIGHTH REGIMENT (NINE MONTHS).

*Mustered into service Dec. 12, 1864, unless otherwise stated.*

## Company D.

John Hinkley, must. in Dec. 18, 1862.

## Company F.

William Johnson.      William Story.      John Sylvia.<sup>4</sup>

## FIFTIETH REGIMENT (NINE MONTHS).

## Company A.

Richard Bryant, mustered in Sept. 15, 1862.

## SECOND UNATTACHED COMPANY INFANTRY (ONE YEAR).

*Mustered into service November 16, 1861, unless otherwise stated.*

Leonard G. Dennis, Capt.<sup>4</sup>  
Hugh J. Munsey, 1st Lieut.  
Eleazer Giles, 2d Lieut.<sup>5</sup>  
Thomas D. Brown, Sergt.  
Fred. A. Wallis, Sergt.  
Henry A. Hale, Sergt.  
Ephraim Whiting, Sergt.  
George H. Kimball, Corp.  
Benj. F. Williams, Corp.  
Jesse A. Blake, Corp.  
George W. Lovett, Corp.  
Francis S. Herrick, Corp.  
John G. Munsey, Corp.  
John S. Schackley, Corp.  
Benj. B. Hill, Jr., Corp.  
Asa Andrews.  
James M. Andrews.  
Israel D. Barnes.  
Adolphus Bates.  
George Bowden.  
Robert Campbell.  
Charles Carneo.  
Charles Churchill.  
Franklin Clayton.  
Joseph Clayton.  
<sup>6</sup> Wm. Clark.  
Benj. H. Conant.  
Riley F. Cudworth.  
Albert E. Day.  
Benj. H. Day.  
Charles H. Day.  
George F. Dennis.  
Calvin B. Dodge.  
Theodore Dutra.  
James B. Edwards.  
Nathaniel F. Edwards.  
George A. Fairfield.  
<sup>7</sup> Benj. F. Foster.  
Joseph D. Glover.  
George D. Goodhue.  
Philip A. Hammond.  
John Hammers.  
Thomas W. Hamble.  
George A. Herrick.

Edward E. Herrick.  
William H. Heron.  
Henry Hobbs.  
John W. Hobbs.  
Edmond Hoogersell.  
Nathaniel T. Horne.  
Robert Johnson (2d).  
Jacob Kinsman.  
Azariah M. Larcom.  
Samuel O. Lee.  
Amos Lefavour.  
George E. Lufkin.  
Gideon B. Moore.  
Edward Murphy.  
Peter F. Ober.  
William Odell.  
Thaddeus Osgood.  
Edward W. Peabody.  
Walter A. Pepper.  
William H. Phippen.  
Henry B. Pousland.  
Samuel Preston.  
John H. Rinks.  
John B. Roundy.  
George Rowe.  
David E. Smith.  
George H. Smith.  
Warren A. Smith.  
Elijah Spumey.  
George F. Standley.  
Nathan Stanley.  
James C. Telford.  
John B. Thissell.  
George C. Tuck.  
Joseph A. Wallis.  
Nathan H. Webb.  
Thomas F. Whiting.  
John H. Wiggins.  
Alvin Williams.  
Charles A. Witham.  
Jeremiah F. Woodbury.  
Thomas B. Woodbury.  
Robert H. Wood.

## TWENTY-FIFTH UNATTACHED COMPANY INFANTRY (ONE YEAR).

*Mustered into service December 9, 1864, unless otherwise stated.*

Fitz J. Babson, Capt.<sup>8</sup>  
Martin Dunn, 2d Lieut.<sup>9</sup>  
John S. Upton, Resp. Steward.  
George W. Parker, Sergt.  
Henry F. Womson, Sergt.  
Levi Robinson, Sergt.  
Edmund Cook, Sergt.  
Samuel Courtney, Corp.  
Daniel Pulcifer, Corp.  
Maurice B. M. Younger, Corp.  
Loverett S. Beals, Corp.  
Levi G. Perkins, Corp.  
Howard Elwell, Mus.  
George H. Adams.  
Amos Andrews.  
Peter Barker.  
Eugene A. Blake.  
Heber Boynton.  
Henry P. Bray, Jr.  
Thomas C. Bray.

Peter Brien.<sup>9</sup>  
Edward Butler.  
Edwin E. Conder.  
James B. Firth.  
William L. Fowler.  
Enoch H. French.  
Thomas Hahasy.  
Francis Lufkin.  
Daniel Lynch.  
James R. Marchant, Jr.  
Charles H. Nute.  
Richard S. Perkins.  
George M. Pew.  
George F. Rowe.  
Samuel Smith.  
Josiah W. Stephens.  
William W. Story.  
Gustavus B. Younger.  
William H. Younger.

<sup>1</sup> Mustered in Nov. 19, 1862.

<sup>2</sup> Must. in Oct. 29, 1862.

<sup>3</sup> Died at Newbern, N. C., Feb. 26, 1863.

<sup>4</sup> Mustered in Nov. 6, 1862.

<sup>5</sup> Mustered in December 16, 1864.

<sup>6</sup> Died at Gloucester Feb. 6, 1865.

<sup>7</sup> Mustered in December 14, 1864.

<sup>8</sup> Mustered in December 6, 1864.

<sup>9</sup> Died at Beverly Dec 1, 1864.

<sup>9</sup> Mustered in December 13, 1864.



## SIXTY-FIRST REGIMENT INFANTRY (ONE YEAR).

*Company D.*

John Birmingham, must. in August 25, 1864. | John Cronan, must. in August 25, 1864.

## FIRST BATTERY, LIGHT ARTILLERY (THREE YEARS).

Matthew Samman, must. in Jan. 2, 1864; transferred to Seventh Battery.

## SECOND BATTERY, LIGHT ARTILLERY (THREE YEARS).

*Mustered into service December 7, 1863, unless otherwise stated.*

John P. Hodgkins, Sergt. | Charles S. Sylvester, Corp.  
Frederick T. Hodgkins, Corp. | Henry B. Allen.  
Mons. Hodgkins, Jr., Corp. | Samuel C. Day.<sup>1</sup>

## FOURTH BATTERY, LIGHT ARTILLERY (THREE YEARS).

<sup>2</sup> John J. Barry, must. in September 2, 1864. | James Hammond, must. in November 12, 1864.

## FIFTH BATTERY, LIGHT ARTILLERY (THREE YEARS).

William O'Brien, must. in September 2, 1864. | Owen Wentworth, must. in September 2, 1864.

## SIXTH BATTERY, LIGHT ARTILLERY (THREE YEARS).

<sup>3</sup> William H. Chandler, must. in January 17, 1863. | James Devine, must. in August 24, 1864.  
J. Carter must. in Nov. 20, 1861.

## TWELFTH BATTERY, LIGHT ARTILLERY (3 YEARS).

Charles Davis must. in December 23, 1862. | Henry F. Snow, must. in December 10, 1862.  
James Robinson, must. in December 10, 1862. | John Tarbox, must. in August 16, 1864.

## SIXTEENTH BATTERY, LIGHT ARTILLERY (3 YEARS).

Simon A. Burdham, Sergt., mustered in March 11, 1864.

## FIRST REGIMENT HEAVY ARTILLERY (THREE YEARS).

*Company F.*

John E. Saunders, must. in July 20, 1862. | James Hicks, must. in February 20, 1862.  
<sup>4</sup> Alfred P. Smith, must. in July 20, 1862. | Henry Hoastius, must. in February 20, 1862.  
William Johnson, must. in March 24, 1862.  
Irvin, Lang, must. in February 20, 1862.

*Company I.*

Ignatius W. Gaffney, Corp., must. in February 20, 1862. | <sup>5</sup> Patrick J. Parker, must. in March 10, 1862.  
<sup>6</sup> George Abbott, must. in March 18, 1862. | Edward Reel, must. in March 14, 1862.  
Albert W. Bray, must. in March 10, 1862. | Joseph R. Stevens, must. in March 10, 1862.  
John P. Burdham, must. in March 6, 1862. | George Farr, must. in February 20, 1862.  
<sup>7</sup> Samuel G. Burnham, must. in March 6, 1862. | *Company M.*  
Warren F. Capea, must. in March 6, 1862. | Oliver Davis, Corp., must. in March 17, 1862.  
<sup>8</sup> Lester B. Clark, must. in February 20, 1862. | <sup>9</sup> Andrew Parker, must. in May 19, 1863.  
<sup>9</sup> John B. Dodge, must. in March 6, 1862. | *Unassigned Recruit.*  
Joseph L. Furbush, must. in March 14, 1864. | Melton Herick, must. in July 30, 1862.

<sup>1</sup> Mustered in December 8, 1863.

<sup>2</sup> Transferred to Thirtieth Battery.

<sup>3</sup> Died at Camp Carney, La., November 9, 1863.

<sup>4</sup> Reenlisted January 1, 1864; died at Finley Hospital July 22, 1864.

<sup>5</sup> Transferred to Navy April 25, 1864.

<sup>6</sup> Died of wounds at Richmond, Va., September 13, 1864.

<sup>7</sup> Reenlisted.

<sup>8</sup> Reenlisted March 10, 1864.

<sup>9</sup> Killed at Spottsylvania, Va., May 19, 1864.

<sup>10</sup> Died at Fort Strong, Va., April 8, 1861.

## SECOND REGIMENT HEAVY ARTILLERY (THREE YEARS).

Octavius A. Merrill, 2d Lieut., must. in Sept. 11, 1864.

William G. Haskell, Sergt. Major, must. in Jan. 2, 1864; 2d Lieutenant Sept. 3, 1864.

George D. Sargent Q.-M. Sergt., must. in July 28, 1863. 2d Lieut., Aug. 5, 1865.

*Company A.*

Benjamin Crosby, must. in July 28, 1863. Died at Newbern, N. C., Dec. 5, 1864.

John J. Davis, must. in July 28, 1863. 2d Lieut. 56 Inf., Jan. 9, 1864.

*Company B.*

William Day, must. in July 29, 1863.

*Company C.*

Fitzwilliam Perkins, must. in Aug. 4, 1863.

Benjamin B. Thompson, must. in Aug. 1, 1863.

*Company E.*

Robert Collins, Sergt., must. in Oct. 8, 1863. 2d Lieut., Jan. 10, 1865.

James M. Jells, Corp., must. in Oct. 8, 1863. In the navy May, 1864.

*Company H.*

Thomas Spellman, must. in Aug. 10, 1864. Died at Newbern, N. C., Sept. 27, 1864.

*Company I.*

Luther Han, must. in Jan. 2, 1864. Died at Andersonville, Ga., Nov. 2, 1864.

Elbridge Harriden, must. in January 2, 1864. Died at Portsmouth, Va., March 20, 1864.

William Hall, must. in Jan. 2, 1864. Died at Andersonville, Ga., August 22, 1864.

Frank H. Stevens, must. in Dec. 11, 1863. Died at Andersonville, Ga., Aug. 27, 1864.

*Company K.*

Sidney Parsons, must. in Dec. 22, 1863.

## THIRD REGIMENT HEAVY ARTILLERY (THREE YEARS).

*Company E.*

<sup>11</sup> William H. Dolliver, 2d Lieut., must. in Feb. 24, 1864.

<sup>12</sup> Charles H. Few, 2d Lieut., must. in March 12, 1864.

Simon A. Burdham, 2d Lieut., must. in Nov. 9, 1863.

Abraham O. Lane, must. in Aug. 27, 1863.

<sup>13</sup> William A. Ryder, must. in Aug. 27, 1863.

*Company A.*

<sup>14</sup> Alexander A. Stubbs, Corp., must. in Jan. 10, 1863.

<sup>15</sup> Fritz E. Griffin, Artificer, must. in Jan. 10, 1863.

<sup>16</sup> John L. Duley, must. in Jan. 10, 1863.

<sup>17</sup> Albion Knowlton, must. in Jan. 10, 1863.

<sup>18</sup> John Marchant, must. in Jan. 10, 1863.

<sup>19</sup> Nathaniel Sprague must. in May 5, 1863.

William G. Sprague, must. in Jan. 10, 1863.

<sup>20</sup> John W. Woodbury, must. in Jan. 10, 1863.

*Company C.*

Henry C. Smith, must. in Oct. 19, 1863.

*Company D.*

Joshua Loring, must. in Aug. 14, 1863.

*Company G.*

Jabez Marchant, Jr., Corp., must. in Oct. 28, 1863.

<sup>21</sup> Neal Wing, Corp must. in Nov. 9, 1863.

Harrison T. Clark, must. in Oct. 20, 1863.

Samuel C. Douglas, Jr., must. in Oct. 20, 1863.

Samuel K. Friend, Jr., must. in Oct. 20, 1863.

Abraham Haskell, must. in Oct. 20, 1863.

John H. Jones, must. in Oct. 20, 1863.

Henry Lufkin, must. in Oct. 20, 1863.

Thomas McGown, must. in Oct. 20, 1863.

George Morgan, must. in Oct. 20, 1863.

Thomas L. Parsons, must. in Oct. 20, 1863.

<sup>11</sup> 1st Lieut., Jan. 17, 1865.

<sup>12</sup> 1st Lieut., April 21, 1865.

<sup>13</sup> Trans. to Navy Sept. 15, 1864.

<sup>14</sup> Trans. to Navy Sept. 19, 1864.

<sup>15</sup> Trans. to Navy Sept. 19, 1864.

<sup>16</sup> Transferred to Navy Aug. 15, 1864.

<sup>17</sup> Trans. to Navy Aug. 16, 1864.

<sup>18</sup> Trans. to Navy Aug. 15, 1864.

<sup>19</sup> Trans. to Navy Aug. 15, 1864.

<sup>20</sup> Died Sept 28, 1864

<sup>21</sup> Prin. Musician, June 20, 1865.





Whitney Parsons, must. in Oct. 28, 1863.

Charles Rowe, must. in Oct. 23, 1863.

Melville Stevens must. in Oct. 23, 1863.

#### FOURTH REGIMENT HEAVY ARTILLERY (ONE YEAR).

Levi S. Grace, Company M, must. in Aug. 25, 1864.

#### FIRST BATTALION HEAVY ARTILLERY (THREE YEARS).

Elias W. Hayes, 1st Lieut., must. in Nov. 3, 1862.

Benjamin Tarr, Company C, must. in April 22, 1863.

#### FIRST REGIMENT OF CAVALRY (THREE YEARS).

##### Company A.

George H. Caldwell, must. in Nov. 28, 1863.

#### SECOND REGIMENT OF CAVALRY (THREE YEARS).

##### Company D.

Allen McDonald, Sergt., must. in Dec. 22, 1862.

Freeman Hall, Corp., must. in Jan. 13, 1863.

Albert Laue, Corp., must. in Jan. 13, 1863.

<sup>2</sup> William Adams, must. in Dec. 22, 1862.

##### Company H.

Joseph Spooner, Sergt., must. in Dec. 1, 1863.

Alexander G. Tupper, must. in Dec. 19, 1863.

##### Company I.

William Chibbory, must. in Feb. 27, 1864.

#### THIRD REGIMENT OF CAVALRY (THREE YEARS).

<sup>2</sup> Daniel S. Allen, Asst. Surg., must. in Sept. 17, 1862.

##### Company F.

<sup>4</sup> Charles E. Grover, must. in Oct. 27, 1862.

Abel Harrington, must. in Oct. 27, 1862.

##### Company L.

<sup>2</sup> Nathan J. Hamilton, Corp., must. in Nov. 2, 1861.

J. S. Barrett must. in Dec. 2, 1864.

##### Company M.

Andrew J. Cleaves, Sergt., must. in Nov. 28, 1861.

#### FOURTH REGIMENT OF CAVALRY (THREE YEARS).

##### Company C.

William W. Shelton, Corp., must. in Jan. 6, 1861.

##### Company K.

William H. Mooley, Corp., must. in March 1, 1861.

Sylvanus B. Stevens, must. in Oct. 20, 1863.

William H. H. Thomas, must. in Oct. 29, 1863.

##### Company H.

Hezekiah Whitney, must. in Nov. 20, 1863.

##### Company L.

L. Cowles, must. in Dec. 4, 1861.

M. Cowles, must. in Dec. 4, 1861.

##### Company K.

George F. Elwell, must. in Dec. 24, 1863.

William Douglas, must. in Jan. 29, 1863.

Edward Rowe, must. in Dec. 23, 1861.

##### Company M.

William A. Sayward, must. in Dec. 24, 1863.

##### Unassigned Recruits.

Rent Celestine, must. in Feb. 27, 1861.

Thomas Gallagher, must. in Feb. 5, 1864.

<sup>6</sup> James L. Clancy, Sergt., must. in Nov. 18, 1861.

Harrison Fisher, must. in Nov. 25, 1861.

Eben Guptill, must. in Nov. 26, 1861.

<sup>7</sup> Daniel McAuley, must. in Nov. 29, 1861.

Joel McAlab, must. in Nov. 29, 1861.

Mansfield A. Mouline, must. in Nov. 11, 1861.

##### Real's Company.

Charles Tibbatts, must. in Oct. 22, 1861.

Samuel Mouser, must. in March 1, 1861.

##### Company L.

Lyman Cowles, must. in Dec. 4, 1861.

Merrick Cowles, must. in Dec. 4, 1861.

#### SECOND REGIMENT INFANTRY (THREE YEARS).

##### Band.

John Clark, must. in May 25, 1861.

George Elwell, Jr., must. in May 25, 1861.

Jacob S. Lord, must. in May 25, 1861.

Joseph S. Mess, must. in May 25, 1861.

David P. Pearce, must. in May 25, 1861.

Reuben Perry, must. in May 25, 1861.

D. Somes Watson, must. in May 25, 1861.

Neal Wing, must. in May 25, 1861.

##### Company C.

<sup>2</sup> John M. Rowe, Corp., must. in Dec. 31, 1863.

##### Company E.

Thomas H. Clark, must. in May 25, 1861.

<sup>2</sup> Thomas Long, must. in May 25, 1861.

William H. Staten, must. in Dec. 31, 1863.

##### Unassigned.

James O'Neil, must. in Nov. 3, 1864.

#### NINTH REGIMENT INFANTRY (THREE YEARS).

##### Company E.

<sup>10</sup> Thomas Connets, must. in Aug. 20, 1863.

##### Company G.

Oscar O'La, must. in Aug. 9, 1862.

Maurice Riley, must. in Aug. 9, 1862.

##### Unassigned.

John Holland, must. in Aug. 9, 1862.

#### ELEVENTH REGIMENT INFANTRY (THREE YEARS).

George McDonald, Sergt., Co. B, must. in June 3, 1861. Missing in action May 5, 1861.

Jacob Roth, Co. C, must. in Aug. 12, 1863.

James P. Nichols, Co. E, must. in July 10, 1863.

John Connor, Co. F, must. in Aug. 12, 1863. Transferred April 2, 1864, to Navy.

Thomas Fallon, Corp., Co. I, must. in Aug. 13, 1863.

#### TWELFTH REGIMENT INFANTRY (THREE YEARS).

*Mustered into service June 29, 1861, unless otherwise stated.*

David Allen, Jr., Capt., wounded at Antietam and Fredericksburg; Lieut. Col. Oct. 8, 1862; Division Inspector First Corps July 13, 1864; killed May 3, 1864.

Benj. F. Cook, 2d Lieut.; must. in April 19, 1861. 1st Lieut. June 26, 1861; Capt. Co. E May 2, 1862; Major July 23, 1863; Lieut.-Col. May 6, 1864.

Edwin Hazel, 1st Sergt.; 2d Lieut. May 3, 1862; 1st Lieut. Sept. 18, 1862; Capt. Sept. 1, 1863; wounded at Antietam, Fredericksburg and Gettysburg.

Edward T. Pearce, 1st Lieut.

Gilman Saunders, 2d Lieut. 1st Lieut. May 2, 1862.

William B. Center, Co. G, mustered in July 5, 1861. Died at Helena, Ark., Aug. 7, 1862.

Edward G. Womson, Co. F, mustered in July 10, 1863.

##### Company K.

Charles W. Fader, 1st Sergt.

Edward K. Coas, Sergt.

Hezekiah Colby, Sergt. Killed at Bull Run, Va., Aug. 30, 1862.

Wm. B. Haskell, Sergt. Died at Washington, D. C., Sept. 16, 1863.

John Kenny, Sargent L. Saville, George Wilson, Sergeants.

Jas. T. Crouse, Corp. Died at New York, Dec. 15, 1862.

George F. Friend, Corp.

James N. Morey, Corp. Killed at Antietam, Md., Sept. 17, 1862.

Thos. R. Hicks, Wagoner.

Adolphus Aymar.

George T. Bailey.

Joseph Carter.

Frank J. Carr.

John Day.<sup>11</sup>

John B. Dennis.

Timothy Hodgkins.

George R. Hooper.

<sup>12</sup> Amos M. Fugetroll.

John L. Keating.

Edward H. Lane.

William D. Lander.

George W. Lewis.

John L. Logan.

<sup>1</sup> Transferred to 4th Cav.

<sup>2</sup> Died at Washington, D. C., Aug. 15, 1863.

<sup>3</sup> Feb. 29, 1865, Surg. 17th Regt.

<sup>4</sup> Sergt.-Major March 1, 1863; 2d Lieut. April 13, 1863; 1st Lieut. Sept. 2, 1864; Capt. Oct. 5, 1865.

<sup>5</sup> Died Aug. 7, 1862.

<sup>6</sup> Re-enlisted and Com. Sergt. Feb. 19, 1864.

<sup>7</sup> Killed at Bayou Jack, La., May, 1863.

<sup>8</sup> Died at Chattanooga, Tenn., June 5, 1864.

<sup>9</sup> Transferred to gunboat service Feb. 18, 1862.

<sup>10</sup> Died Oct. 27, 1864.

<sup>11</sup> Mustered in July 10, 1863.

<sup>12</sup> Killed at Antietam Sept. 18, 1862.





Frederick A. B. Lowe.  
 1 Fitz O. Lufkin.  
 Samuel W. Mess, Jr.  
 Sherborn F. Morey, Jr.  
 2 Edward Murphy.  
 Benjamin Parker.  
 George W. Parker.

Thomas Raymond.  
 3 Levi Robinson.  
 4 Henry Staten.  
 William S. Todd.  
 John Trask.  
 Barnabas Young.  
 6 Oliver Younger.

## FIFTEENTH REGIMENT INFANTRY (THREE YEARS).

*Company E.*

J. J. Hardman, must. in Aug. 4, '63.

*Company H.*

J. W. Peabody, must. in Aug. 4, '63.

*Company I.*

Robert B. Swain, must. in Aug. 4, 1863.

## SIXTEENTH REGIMENT INFANTRY (THREE YEARS).

*Company B.*

James Nicholas, must. in July 10, 1863.

*Company K.*

Archibald McInness, must. in Aug. 11, 1863.

## SEVENTEENTH REGIMENT INFANTRY (THREE YEARS).

Daniel S. Allen, Surg., must. in Feb. 20, 1863.  
 6 Joseph A. Moore, 2d Lieut., must. in May 17, 1863.

*Company A.*

Charles Long, must. in July 21, 1861.

*Company B.*

George C. Allen, must. in Dec. 2, 1863.

*Company C.*

Warren A. Burpee, must. in Dec. 29, 1863.

*Company D.*

David B. Lowe, must. in Feb. 10, 1862.

John A. Smeadburg, must. in Aug. 14, 1861.

*Company G.*

Laurens K. Rowe, 1st Sergt., must. in July 22, 1861.

Wm. M. Parrott, Sergt., must. in July 22, 1861.

Joshua Younger, Sergt., must. in Aug. 29, 1861.

Henry A. Cook, must. in July 22, 1861.

Joseph N. Kimball, Corp., must. in July 22, 1861.

Carvin Marshall, Corp., must. in July 31, 1862.

Ezra L. Woodbury, Corp., must. in July 22, 1861.

Samuel B. Bray, must. in July 30, 1862.

Samuel Courtney, must. in July 31, 1862.

John Crockett, must. in Aug. 9, 1862.

John Doggett, must. in Aug. 29, 1861.

Enoch Emory, must. in July 30, 1862.

7 Charles H. Gove, must. in July 22, 1861.

John H. Ingersoll, must. in July 22, 1861.

David P. Lowe, must. in July 22, 1861.

William Marston, must. in July 31, 1862.

Jesse McLeod, must. in Jan. 5, 1864.

Oliver Parsons, must. in August, 8, 1862.

\* George Prior, must. in July 22, 1861.

Daniel Pulsifer, must. in July 28, 1861.

*Unassigned.*

Charles Littlefield, must. in Aug. 12, 1862.

## EIGHTEENTH REGIMENT INFANTRY (THREE YEARS).

*Company H.*

Daniel S. Griffin, must. in July 10, 1863; died at Richmond, Va., Dec. 28, 1863.

## NINETEENTH REGIMENT INFANTRY (THREE YEARS).

*Company E.*

J. Franklin Dyer, Surg., must. in Aug. 22, 1861.

*Company C.*

Elias D. Knight, Jr., must. in Aug. 28, 1861.

*Company F.*

John L. Allen, Wagoner, must. in Aug. 28, 1861.

Joseph J. Seavy, Wagoner, must. in Dec. 22, 1863.

Joshua Bridges, must. in Aug. 28, 1861.

George N. Burgess, must. in Aug. 28, 1861.

Francis Heild, must. in Aug. 28, 1861.

John N. Robinson, must. in Aug. 28, 1861.

Joseph I. Seavy, must. in Aug. 28, 1861.

*Company H.*

Stephen J. Younger, Corp., must. in Dec. 10, 1861.

William P. Dennis, must. in Dec. 10, 1861.

William P. Ellery, must. in Dec. 10, 1861.

William C. Goodnow, must. in Dec. 10, 1861.

Benjamin Haskell, must. in Dec. 10, 1861.

James Powell, must. in Dec. 10, 1861.

*Unassigned.*

George Ruggles, must. in Aug. 6, 1861.

## TWENTIETH REGIMENT INFANTRY (THREE YEARS).

*Company A.*

William Rider, must. in Dec. 21, 1863.

9 Abram Robinson, must. in Aug. 7, 1862.

*Company B.*

Wenden Rock, must. in July 12, 1864.

*Company C.*

10 Thomas Harris, must. in Aug. 5, 1863.

*Company E.*

Robert B. Swain, must. in Aug. 4, 1864.

*Company F.*

Heinrich Heine, must. in Aug. 8, 1863.

11 James Murphy, must. in Aug. 7, 1863.

John Walker, must. in Aug. 1863.

*Company G.*

12 Charles E. Jones, Corp., must. in Aug. 7, 1863.

Daniel McInnis, must. in Aug. 4, 1863.

13 John W. Peabody, must. in Aug. 4, 1863.

*Company H.*

Thomas O'Brien, must. in Aug. 8, 1863.

*Unassigned.*

William W. Thomas, must. in Aug. 7, 1863.

## TWENTY-SECOND REGIMENT INFANTRY (3 YEARS).

*Company H.*

Thomas Dandass, must. in Sept. 1, 1863; transferred to Navy April 26, 1864.

## TWENTY-THIRD REGIMENT INFANTRY (THREE YEARS).

*Company A.*

14 Andrew Elwell, Maj., must. in Oct. 24, 1861.

Lewis L. Record, Chap., must. in May 13, 1864.

Addison Center, Capt., must. in Oct. 8, 1861.

16 Fitz J. Babson, 2d Lieut., must. in Oct. 8, 1861.

10 Edward A. Storey, 1st Lieut., must. in Oct. 5, 1861.

17 Benj. F. Morey, Corp., must. in Sept. 28, 1861.

18 John J. Parker, Sergt., must. in March 24, 1864.

12 Westover Greenleaf, 1st Sergt., must. in Dec. 3, 1863.

20 George A. Proctor, 1st Sergt., must. in Oct. 27, 1861.

21 Henry G. Coas, must. in Oct. 28, 1861.

22 Joseph I. Tupper, must. in Oct. 28, 1861.

James G. Dennis, must. in Sept. 28, 1861.

William A. Gove, must. in Sept. 28, 1861.

23 Charles H. Gray, must. in Sept. 28, 1861.

Thomas Chansey, must. in Sept. 28, 1861.

*Company C.*

Samuel H. Everett, Sergt., must. in Sept. 28, 1861.

24 Benj. H. Gribbin, Sergt., must. in Oct. 24, 1861.

Arthur C. Mallett, Sergt., must. in Sept. 28, 1861.

George Pulcifer, Sergt., must. in Sept. 28, 1861.

Jabez F. Wanson, Sergt., must. in Sept. 28, 1861.

Charles Blatchford, Corp., must. in Sept. 28, 1861.

9 Died at Falmouth, Va., Jan. 18, 1863. 10 Trans. to Navy April 25, '61.

11 Transferred to Navy April 23, 1864. 12 Killed May, 1861.

13 Died at Andersonville June 21, 1864.

14 Lieut.-Col., March 15, 1862; Col., Nov. 26, 1862.

15 1st Lieut., Aug. 20, 1862; Capt., May 5, 1863. 16 Capt., Dec. 9, '62.

17 1st Sergt., Dec. 3, 1863; 1st Lt., Aug. 29, 1864; Capt., Oct. 14, 1864.

18 1st Lieut., Oct. 14, 1864.

19 2d Lieut., Aug. 20, 1862; died at Newbern, N. C., Aug. 11, 1863.

20 2d Lieut., Dec. 9, 1862.

21 Sergt., Dec. 3, 1863; 2d Lieut., June 2, 1865.

22 Sergt., Dec. 3, 1863; 2d Lieut., June 2, 1865.

23 Killed at Newbern, N. C., March 14, 1862.

24 Died at Charleston, S. C., Sept. 29, 1864.

1 Died at Gloucester Feb. 8, 1864.

2 Died at Washington, D. C., Jan. 3, 1863.

3 Mustered in July 23, 1862.

4 Killed at Antietam, Md., Sept. 17, 1862.

5 Died at Muddy Branch, Md., Oct. 6, 1861.

6 1st Lieut., Aug. 15, 1864; Captain, Sept. 1, 1864.

7 Died at Newbern, N. C., Sept. 23, 1864.

8 Died at Newbern, N. C., Sept. 28, 1862.



Frank Butler, Corp., must. in Sept. 28, 1861.  
 George H. Crockett, Corp., must. in Sept. 28, 1861.  
 William H. Marston, Corp., must. in Sept. 28, 1861.  
 Charles H. Pew, Corp., must. in Sept. 28, 1861.  
 J. Frank Porter, Corp., must. in Sept. 28, 1861.  
 Sargent S. Reid, Corp., must. in Dec. 3, 1863.  
 John R. Thorn, Corp., must. in Dec. 7, 1863.  
 John S. Witham, Corp., must. in Sept. 28, 1861.  
 Edward Allen, must. in Sept. 28, 1861.  
 George F. Allen, must. in Sept. 28, 1861.  
 Nicholas P. Babson, must. in Nov. 16, 1862.  
 Levi Brackett, Jr., must. in July 22, 1862.  
 Hiram S. Buffington, must. in Sept. 28, 1861.  
 William Bushy, must. in Sept. 28, 1861.  
 Thomas S. Butler, must. in Oct. 28, 1861.  
 Edward B. Center, must. in July 22, 1862.  
 William H. Cross, must. in July 22, 1862.  
 John H. Davis, must. in Sept. 28, 1861.  
 Abraham Day, Jr., must. in July 22, 1862.  
 Charles Day, must. in Oct. 28, 1861.  
 George E. Day, must. in July 22, 1862.  
 Henry A. Delano, must. in Dec. 30, 1863.  
 Henry De Vries, must. in Aug. 1, 1862.  
 John K. Dustin, Jr., must. in Sept. 28, 1861.  
 Daniel M. Favor, must. in Oct. 20, 1861.  
 Harrison Gaffney, must. in Oct. 24, 1861.  
 Michael A. Galvin, must. in Sept. 28, 1861.  
 George D. Goodrich, must. in Sept. 28, 1861.  
 Robert Grace, must. in Sept. 28, 1861.  
 James S. Gray, must. in Nov. 25, 1863.  
 Thaddeus Griffin, must. in June 16, 1862.

Tristram Griffin, Jr., must. in Sept. 28, 1861.  
 Asaph S. Haskell, must. in Oct. 1, 1861.  
 Edward H. Haskell, must. in Sept. 28, 1861.  
 Nathaniel Haskell, must. in Sept. 28, 1861.  
 Walter Holden, must. in Oct. 26, 1861.  
 Joshua Ingersoll, must. in Aug. 1, 1862.  
 Charles Knight, must. in July 21, 1862.  
 George W. Knight, must. in Sept. 28, 1861.  
 George A. Lane, must. in July 22, 1862.  
 Alphonzo M. Laroque, must. in July 21, 1862.  
 Sidney Marston, must. in Nov. 6, 1861.  
 Thomas Matchett, must. in Sept. 28, 1861.  
 William J. McAndrews, must. in Oct. 20, 1861.  
 John McCartney, must. in Oct. 28, 1861.  
 William Morey, must. in Sept. 28, 1861.  
 John F. Norwood, must. in July 22, 1862.  
 Timothy W. Nye, must. in July 18, 1862.  
 Timothy H. Osier, must. in Nov. 17, 1862.  
 John Palmer, must. in Nov. 2, 1861.  
 John J. Parker, must. in Oct. 29, 1861.  
 John J. Proctor, must. in Aug. 2, 1862.  
 James Reed, must. in Nov. 12, 1862.  
 Sargent S. Reid, must. in Nov. 9, 1861.  
 Moses Riggs, must. in July 22, 1862.  
 Leonard S. Rogers, must. in Sept. 28, 1861.  
 Edward Rowe, must. in Sept. 28, 1861.  
 Isaac E. Saunders, must. in Sept. 28, 1861.  
 Samuel Sexton, must. in Sept. 28, 1861.  
 William F. Stuckney, must. in Feb. 12, 1864.  
 Joseph W. Story, must. in Aug. 5, 1862.  
 Calvin W. Swift, must. in Sept. 28, 1861.

Joseph F. Symonds, must. in Sept. 28, 1861.  
 John R. Thorn, must. in Dec. 4, 1861.  
 John C. Tolman, must. in Oct. 20, 1861.  
 Herman Utsadel, must. in Sept. 28, 1861.  
 Matthew Vasconcellos, must. in Sept. 28, 1861.  
 William H. Wilson, must. in Oct. 29, 1861.  
 Albert Winter, must. in Oct. 10, 1861.  
 E. Gilbert Winchester, must. in Oct. 9, 1861.  
 Edward G. Wonsen, must. in Oct. 14, 1861.  
 Henry F. Wonsen, must. in Oct. 8, 1861.  
 Joseph P. Wonsen, must. in Aug. 2, 1862.

#### Company E.

Simson A. Barnham, must. in Aug. 2, 1862.

#### Company H.

Frank Pierce, Corp., must. in Dec. 4, 1861.  
 John A. Dame, must. in Dec. 4, 1861.  
 John J. Davis, must. in Nov. 29, 1861.  
 Warren Harrington, must. in Oct. 23, 1861.

#### Company I.

John Cunningham, Musician, must. in July 28, 1862.

### TWENTY-FOURTH REGIMENT INFANTRY (THREE YEARS).

Rev. W. R. G. Mellen, Chap., must. in Oct. 2, 1861.  
 William Y. Hutchins, 1st Lieut., must. in Sept. 2, 1861.  
 James Thompson, 1st Lieut., must. in Nov. 27, 1862.  
 William Thorne, must. in Dec. 4, 1861.  
 Company C.  
 John C. Read, Sergt., must. in Oct. 12, 1861.  
 James O. Gould, Corp., must. in Oct. 7, 1861.  
 Daniel Boynton, Sergt., must. in Jan. 4, 1861.  
 Josiah C. Bray, Sergt., must. in Jan. 10, 1861.  
 John C. Read, Sergt., must. in Oct. 12, 1861.  
 John D. Carr, must. in Oct. 4, 1861.

Elijah D. Blanchard, must. in Aug. 1, 1862.  
 Levi Clark, must. in July 30, 1862.  
 Edward D. Cohoda, must. in Feb. 12, 1864.  
 John Cunningham, must. in July 28, 1862.  
 William Darcy, must. in July 28, 1862.  
 William Elliott, must. in July 28, 1862.  
 Frederick Fisher, must. in Aug. 7, 1862.  
 Addison Griffin, must. in Aug. 4, 1862.  
 James Hickiff, must. in Dec. 8, 1862.  
 Edwin W. Hodgkins, must. in Aug. 4, 1862.  
 George B. McKenzie, must. in Nov. 21, 1862.  
 Israel Norwood, must. in July 31, 1862.  
 James R. Saville, must. in July 31, 1862.  
 Joseph Shackelford, must. in July 28, 1862.

#### Company K.

Edmund Cook, Corp., must. in Aug. 6, 1862.  
 Henry L. Haskell, must. in Dec. 6, 1861.  
 Charles Tarr, must. in Aug. 6, 1862.

#### Unassigned.

Frank H. Merrill, must. in Dec. 13, 1862.

Reuben Cotter, must. in Aug. 5, 1862.  
 Archibald Greenough, must. in July 17, 1862.  
 Michael F. Hart, must. in Jan. 4, 1861.  
 Edward J. McEmmons, must. in Oct. 23, 1861.  
 Cyrus McKown, must. in Jan. 4, 1861.  
 Albert Sargent, must. in July 18, 1862.  
 Rinaldo R. Sargent, must. in Oct. 23, 1861.  
 Daniel A. Thayer, must. in Oct. 28, 1862.  
 Thomas Z. Tibbetts, must. in Jan. 4, 1861.  
 John Truitt, must. in Oct. 14, 1861.  
 Timothy Young, must. in Aug. 5, 1862.

1 Died at Newbern, N. C., April 26, 1862.  
 2 Died at Newbern, N. C., Oct. 1, 1863.  
 3 Died at Andersonville, Ga., June 11, 1864.  
 4 Died of accidental wounds, Jan. 6, 1862.  
 5 Died at Newbern, N. C., Nov. 6, 1864.  
 6 Died at Richmond, Va., May 31, 1864.  
 7 Died of wounds at Alexandria, Va., June 26, 1864.  
 8 Died July 3, 1863.  
 9 Died at Charleston, S. C., Sept. 22, 1864.  
 10 Died at Beaufort, N. C., Sept. 28, 1864.  
 11 Died at Newbern, N. C., April 16, 1862.  
 12 Died at Newbern, N. C., Dec. 23, 1864.  
 13 Died at Newbern, N. C., April 16, 1862.  
 14 Killed at Newbern, N. C., March 14, 1862.  
 15 Died at Newbern, N. C., Sept. 9, 1863.  
 16 Killed at Whitehall, N. C., Dec. 17, 1862.

17 Died at Baltimore, Md., Sept. 18, 1864.  
 18 Died of wounds at Newbern, N. C., April 12, 1862.  
 19 Died at Newbern, N. C., Sept. 13, 1864.  
 20 Killed at Whitehall, N. C., Dec. 16, 1862.  
 21 Killed at Drury's Bluff, Va., May 16, 1861.  
 22 Killed at Whitehall, N. C., Dec. 16, 1862.  
 23 Died at Andersonville, Ga., Aug. 21, 1864.  
 24 Killed at Petersburg, Va., July 30, 1864.  
 25 Asst. Q.-M. U. S. Vols., Nov. 26, 1862.  
 26 2d Lieut., March 7, 1861; died of wounds Aug. 29, 1864.  
 27 Died at Hampton, Va., Aug. 16, 1864.  
 28 Died at Hilton Head, S. C., Jan. 4, 1861.  
 29 Died at Hampton, Va., May 16, 1864.





*Company D.*

William H. H. Davis, must. in Nov. 1, 1861.  
 John H. Holmes, must. in Jan. 2, 1862.  
 John Lane, must. in Nov. 4, 1861.  
 Daniel H. Lurvey, must. in Oct. 26, 1861.  
 Frank Poole, must. in Oct. 26, 1861.  
 Ocas N. Rowe, must. in Nov. 23, 1861.  
 John H. Scott, must. in Nov. 21, 1861.  
 Samuel Weeks, must. in Nov. 22, 1861.

## TWENTY-EIGHTH REGIMENT INFANTRY (3 YEARS).

*Company C.*

William J. Cravans, must. in Aug. 11, 1863.

*Company D.*

John Gallagher, must. in Aug. 11, 1863.  
 Edward Harvey, must. in Aug. 10, 1863.  
 Charles Hoar, must. in Aug. 10, 1863.

*Company E.*

Charles Pederson, must. in Aug. 10, 1863.

## TWENTY-NINTH REGIMENT INFANTRY (3 YEARS).

*Company B.*

Emory Hodgkins, must. in May 11, 1861.

## THIRTIETH REGIMENT INFANTRY (THREE YEARS).

Jeremiah R. Cook, Capt., must. in Feb. 20, 1862.  
 Alfred F. Tremaine, 2d Lieut., must. in Feb. 29, 1862.

*Company A.*

James Wilson, must. in Dec. 20, 1861.

*Company K.*

Theodore Broderick, Sergt., must. in Jan. 2, 1862.  
 Samuel T. Friend, Sergt., must. in Dec. 28, 1861.  
 George Frost, Sergt., must. in Jan. 1, 1862.  
 William H. Cook, Corp., must. in Dec. 21, 1861.  
 John Jeffery, Corp., must. in Jan. 10, 1862.  
 Robert Jeffery, Corp., must. in Jan. 10, 1862.  
 Augustus M. Stacy, Corp., must. in Dec. 19, 1861.

Andrew J. Winn, must. in Dec. 5, 1861.

*Company F.*

George R. Gilbert, must. in July 28, 1862.  
 J. Frederick Gilbert, must. in Nov. 15, 1861.

*Company G.*

John T. Rowe, must. in Nov. 14, 1861.

*Company H.*

Andrew M. Lucas, must. in July 18, 1862.  
 Charles W. Lucas, must. in Oct. 23, 1861.  
 Henry Munsey, must. in July 18, 1862.

James Vernon, must. in Aug. 10, 1863.

*Company F.*

Charles Morton, must. in Aug. 11, 1863.

*Company H.*

Joseph Stevens, must. in Aug. 10, 1863.

*Unassigned.*

Frederick Wilson, must. in Aug. 11, 1863.

George A. Brewton, must. in Dec. 16, 1861.

Thomas J. Burgess, must. in Jan. 8, 1862.

John Cain, must. in Feb. 1, 1862.

Francis Card, must. in Dec. 18, 1861.

John Carter, must. in Jan. 8, 1862.

Horace S. Casley, must. in Dec. 23, 1861.

Lola Coley, must. in Jan. 2, 1862.

John R. Copeland, must. in Jan. 14, 1862.

John Crosley, must. in Dec. 18, 1861.

Charles Crusa, must. in Jan. 2, 1862.

Benjamin L. Curtis, must. in Jan. 14, 1862.

William Day, must. in Jan. 13, 1862.

Solomon F. Downs, must. in Jan. 4, 1862.

Juvenal De Ornelloes, must. in Dec. 16, 1861.

John Fredlie, must. in Jan. 2, 1862.

Solomon A. Friend, must. in Dec. 16, 1861.

Martin Gill, must. in Jan. 2, 1862.

Alphonso M. Herrick, must. in Jan. 6, 1862.

Joseph E. Hodgkins, must. in Dec. 31, 1861.

George W. Hutchings, must. in Jan. 4, 1862.

Robert Jeffery, must. in Jan. 2, 1862.

James Kenney, must. in Jan. 3, 1862.

Duncan King, must. in Jan. 13, 1862.

David Lufkin, must. in Jan. 14, 1862.

William Lufkin, must. in Dec. 29, 1861.

Francis A. Marshall, must. in Dec. 19, 1861.

William McCarty, must. in Jan. 13, 1862.

William McCormick, must. in Jan. 14, 1862.

Sylvester McIntire, must. in Jan. 7, 1862.

Ocas S. McKenney, must. in Jan. 15, 1862.

Daniel McLeane, must. in Jan. 14, 1862.

Edwin Merchant, must. in Jan. 10, 1862.

James Morrissey, must. in Feb. 1, 1862.

Martin Nelson, must. in Jan. 9, 1862.

John L. W. Oakes, must. in Dec. 24, 1861.

George A. Oxtan, must. in Jan. 1, 1862.

Albert E. Parsons, must. in Jan. 9, 1862.

William H. Parsons, must. in Jan. 7, 1862.

Winthrop L. Parsons, must. in Jan. 11, 1862.

Henry C. Reed, must. in Jan. 20, 1862.

Thomas Rogers, must. in Jan. 4, 1862.

William H. Rogers, must. in Jan. 17, 1862.

Solomon Rowe, must. in Jan. 10, 1862.

Franklin Stanton, must. in Jan. 14, 1862.

John J. Tarr, must. in Dec. 16, 1861.

John Tucker, Jr., must. in Dec. 31, 1861.

William H. Wallace, must. in Dec. 19, 1861.

Joseph Weitzel, must. in Jan. 2, 1862.

Martin Whalen, must. in Jan. 17, 1862.

Charles H. Wheeler, must. in Jan. 8, 1862.

John Williams, must. in Jan. 16, 1862.

John B. Wise, must. in Jan. 8, 1862.

<sup>15</sup> Died at Carrollton, La., Nov. 3, 1862.

<sup>16</sup> Died at New Orleans, La., Sept. 27, 1862.

<sup>17</sup> Died in Mississippi, July 24, 1862.

<sup>18</sup> Died on transport, May 11, 1861.

<sup>19</sup> Died at New Orleans, Sept. 14, 1862.

<sup>20</sup> Died at Baton Rouge, La., July 28, 1862.

<sup>21</sup> Died opp. Vicksburg, Miss., July 19, 1862.

<sup>22</sup> Died opp. Vicksburg, Miss., July 24, 1862.

<sup>23</sup> Died at Carrollton, La., Nov. 4, 1862.

<sup>24</sup> Died at New Orleans, La., Aug. 12, 1862.

<sup>25</sup> Died opp. Vicksburg, Miss., July 29, 1862.

<sup>26</sup> Died at New Orleans, La., Feb. 28, 1863.

<sup>27</sup> Died of wounds, at Winchester, Va., Oct. 29, 1864.

<sup>28</sup> Died at Baton Rouge, La., Aug. 2, 1862.

<sup>29</sup> Died opp. Vicksburg, Miss., June 27, 1862.

<sup>30</sup> Killed at Cedar Creek, Va., Oct. 19, 1864.

<sup>31</sup> Died at New Orleans, La., Oct. 12, 1862.

<sup>32</sup> Died at New Orleans, La., Oct. 29, 1862.

<sup>33</sup> Died at Baton Rouge, La., June 28, 1862.

<sup>34</sup> Died at Carrollton, La., Oct. 30, 1862.

<sup>35</sup> Died at Carrollton, La., Oct. 22, 1862.

<sup>36</sup> Died at New Orleans, La., July 5, 1862.

<sup>37</sup> Died at New Orleans, La., Aug. 17, 1862.

<sup>1</sup> Died at Newbern, N. C., Jan. 17, 1862.

<sup>2</sup> Died at Newbern, N. C., May 2, 1862.

<sup>3</sup> Sergeant, Jan. 4, 1864.

<sup>4</sup> Died at Hilton Head, S. C., May 28, 1864.

<sup>5</sup> Died at Alexandria, Va., April 11, 1864.

<sup>6</sup> Died at Andersonville, Ga., Sept. 16, 1864.

<sup>7</sup> Killed at Lost Grass, Va., March 27, 1865.

<sup>8</sup> Capt., Nov. 23, 1862.

<sup>9</sup> Died opp. Vicksburg, Miss., July 17, 1862.

<sup>10</sup> Died at Baton Rouge, La., Aug. 19, 1862.

<sup>11</sup> Died at New Orleans, La., Dec. 16, 1862.

<sup>12</sup> Died at New Orleans, La., Sept. 27, 1862.

<sup>13</sup> Died at Carrollton, La., Sept. 10, 1862.

<sup>14</sup> Killed at Winchester, Va., Sept. 23, 1864.



## THIRTY-SECOND REGIMENT INFANTRY (THREE YEARS).

- <sup>1</sup> James A. Cunningham, 1st Lieut., must. in Nov. 18, 1861.
- <sup>2</sup> Stephen Rich, 2d Lieut., must. in Nov. 18, 1861.
- <sup>3</sup> John H. Whidden, 2d Lieut., must. in July 25, 1862.
- <sup>4</sup> John Hinch, 1st Sergt., must. in Nov. 15, 1861.
- <sup>5</sup> Thomas Coas, Sergt., must. in Nov. 15, 1861.
- <sup>6</sup> Edward Knights, Sergt., must. in Nov. 15, 1861.
- <sup>7</sup> William H. Peliver, 1st Sergt., must. in Jan. 5, 1864.

*Company C.*

- <sup>8</sup> Edward D. Varney, Corp., must. in Nov. 2, 1861.
- Samuel D. Hainscome, must. in Nov. 6, 1861.
- Zebulon G. Murray, must. in Nov. 2, 1861.
- <sup>9</sup> Hiram Varney, must. in Nov. 2, 1861.

*Company D.*

- <sup>10</sup> John J. Murphy, 1st Sergt., must. in Nov. 13, 1861.
- <sup>11</sup> George W. Burpee, Sergt., must. in Nov. 13, 1861.
- <sup>12</sup> John S. Russell, Sergt., must. in Jan. 5, 1864.
- Joseph H. Sewall, Sergt., must. in March 19, 1864.
- <sup>13</sup> Ignatius Butler, Jr., Corp., must. in Nov. 15, 1861.
- James Clark, Corp., must. in Nov. 5, 1864.
- Samuel L. Clark, Corp., must. in Nov. 26, 1861.
- Charles S. Davis, Corp., must. in Jan. 5, 1864.
- Jonathan Douglass, Corp., must. in Nov. 18, 1861.
- Edward Mathiam, Corp., must. in Nov. 15, 1861.
- Charles H. Parsons, Corp., must. in Jan. 5, 1864.
- <sup>14</sup> Henry Pew, Jr., Corp., must. in Nov. 14, 1861.
- Thomas Paul, Corp., must. in Nov. 14, 1861.
- William L. Millet, Mus., must. in Nov. 29, 1861.
- <sup>15</sup> Edward H. Allen, must. in Nov. 22, 1861.
- George G. Allen, must. in Nov. 22, 1861.
- Stafford Ashley, must. in Nov. 20, 1861.

- Samuel Bean, must. in Nov. 15, 1861.
- Thomas Blatchford, must. in Nov. 18, 1861.
- Edward E. Bowman, must. in Nov. 14, 1861.
- David Butler, must. in Nov. 16, 1861.
- Stephen J. Call, must. in Nov. 21, 1861.
- Luther Cameron, must. in Nov. 15, 1861.
- George H. Capen, must. in Dec. 10, 1861.
- <sup>16</sup> Edmund Carter, must. in Nov. 14, 1861.
- John W. Clark, must. in Nov. 14, 1861.
- James Clark, must. in Nov. 15, 1861.
- Levi Clark, must. in Nov. 20, 1861.
- Frederick Grosman, must. in Nov. 14, 1861.
- James H. Cosgrove, must. in Nov. 25, 1861.
- Jacob A. Day, must. in Jan. 5, 1861.
- Charles S. Davis, must. in Nov. 15, 1861.
- James H. Dexter, must. in Nov. 20, 1861.
- Charles A. Fosberry, must. in Nov. 15, 1861.
- Edward L. Gahney, must. in Dec. 1, 1861.
- Alexander Grant, must. in Dec. 13, 1861.
- James A. Griffin, must. in Nov. 26, 1861.
- Addison Harraden, must. in Nov. 13, 1861.
- John Haskell, Jr., must. in Nov. 14, 1861.
- William C. Hawkes, must. in Dec. 13, 1861.
- <sup>17</sup> Charles Lang, must. in Nov. 26, 1861.
- Charles F. Lane, must. in Nov. 14, 1861.
- George W. Lane, must. in Nov. 14, 1861.
- Albert Lander, must. in Jan. 5, 1864.
- Robert A. McKennon, must. in Nov. 21, 1861.
- Octavius A. Merrill, must. in Nov. 26, 1861.
- John Murphy, must. in Nov. 24, 1861.

- <sup>18</sup> George Nichols, must. in Nov. 19, 1861.
- Samuel Parsons, must. in Nov. 15, 1861.
- Albert Peirce, must. in Jan. 5, 1861.
- John Pettee, must. in Nov. 29, 1861.
- <sup>19</sup> Richard Powers, must. in Nov. 15, 1861.
- Stephen S. Rich, must. in Dec. 11, 1861.
- Robert Rowe, must. in Dec. 4, 1861.
- <sup>20</sup> Samuel Saunders, must. in Nov. 19, 1861.
- Isaac Stanwood, must. in Nov. 25, 1861.
- Adrien Steels, must. in Nov. 21, 1861.
- Charles P. Terry, must. in Nov. 15, 1861.
- John Thiburg, must. in Nov. 20, 1861.
- William Thurston, Jr., must. in Nov. 14, 1861.
- John S. Troy, must. in Nov. 25, 1861.
- Samuel Tupper, must. in Nov. 20, 1861.
- <sup>21</sup> William Vinecombe, must. in Nov. 19, 1861.
- Lyman Waggon, must. in Nov. 27, 1861.
- Charles Widger, Corp., must. in Nov. 27, 1861.

*Company E.*

- James A. Jackson, must. in July 10, 1863.
- <sup>22</sup> Ganahat Begut, must. in Feb. 27, 1864.
- Randall E. Leon, must. in Feb. 27, 1864.
- <sup>23</sup> Louis Saget, must. in Feb. 27, 1864.

*Company F.*

- <sup>24</sup> George H. Norwood, must. in Aug. 11, 1862.

## THIRTY-THIRD REGIMENT INFANTRY (3 YEARS).

*Company C.*

Fitz H. Winter, must. in Aug. 6, 1862.

## THIRTY-FIFTH REGIMENT INFANTRY (3 YEARS).

- Alfred Ireland, 2d Lieut., must. in Sept. 8, 1861.

*Company D.*

- Frederick T. Lane, Sergt., must. in Aug. 16, 1862.

*Company E.*

- Charles Davidson, Sergt., must. in Aug. 19, 1862.
- James H. Bingham, Corp., must. in Aug. 19, 1862.
- Henry S. Sylvester, Corp., must. in Aug. 19, 1862.

*Company G.*

- Frederick Hutchins, Sergt., must. in Jan. 5, 1864.

*Company H.*

- <sup>25</sup> Horace M. Eaton, Corp., must. in Aug. 11, 1862.
- <sup>26</sup> Thomas H. Elwell, Corp., must. in Aug. 11, 1862.
- <sup>27</sup> William Messinger, Corp., must. in Aug. 11, 1862.
- Henry A. Palmer, Corp., must. in Aug. 11, 1862.
- <sup>28</sup> William F. Stannard, Corp., must. in Aug. 11, 1862.

- George Blatchford, must. in Aug. 11, 1862.

- James H. Blatchford, must. in Aug. 11, 1862.

- William E. Dunn, must. in Aug. 11, 1862.

- William J. Fowler, must. in Aug. 11, 1862.

- James Gilbert, must. in Aug. 11, 1862.

- Charles G. Hathorn, must. in Aug. 11, 1862.

- Samuel P. Hodgkins, must. in Aug. 11, 1862.

- John J. Kendall, must. in Aug. 11, 1862.

- James N. McIntosh, must. in Aug. 11, 1862.

- William Messinger, must. in Aug. 11, 1862.

- Samuel L. Nash, must. in Aug. 11, 1862.

- Nelson M. Payne, must. in Aug. 11, 1862.

- William Powers, must. in Aug. 11, 1862.

- Lafayette Rowe, must. in Aug. 19, 1862.

<sup>1</sup> Capt. March 6, 1862; Maj. June 29, 1864; Lt. Col. June 30, 1864; Bvt. Brig. Gen. June 29, 1865.

<sup>2</sup> 1st Lieut. May 29, 1862; Capt. Aug. 31, 1862.

<sup>3</sup> 1st Lieut. Aug. 13, 1862.

<sup>4</sup> 2d Lieut. Dec. 11, 1862; 1st Lieut. Aug. 13, 1863.

<sup>5</sup> 1st Sergt. Jan. 5, '64; 2d Lieut. July 29, '64; 1st Lieut. April 1, '65.

<sup>6</sup> 1st Sergt. Jan. 5, '64; 2d Lieut. June 7, '65. <sup>7</sup> 2d Lieut. July 4, '65.

<sup>8</sup> Sergt. Jan. 5, 1864. <sup>9</sup> Died at Washington, D. C., July 16, 1862.

Killed at Bethesda Church, Va., June 3, 1864.

<sup>11</sup> Died Nov. 1, 1862. <sup>12</sup> Killed at Laurel Hill, Va., May 12, 1861.

<sup>13</sup> Died Sept. 1, 1862. <sup>14</sup> Died at Potomac Creek, Va., Nov. 28, 1862.

<sup>15</sup> Killed in battle of Wilderness, Va., May 5, 1864.

<sup>16</sup> Died Oct. 12, 1862. <sup>17</sup> Died Jan. 17, 1863.

<sup>18</sup> Died at Point Lookout, Md., June 25, 1863. <sup>20</sup> Died Aug. 28, 1862.

<sup>19</sup> Killed at Weldon R. R., Va., Aug. 21, 1864. <sup>21</sup> Died March 6, 1862.

<sup>22</sup> Killed at Bethesda Church, Va., June 3, 1864.

<sup>23</sup> Died of wounds, May 12, 1864.

<sup>24</sup> Corp. Jan. 5, 1864.

<sup>26</sup> Corp. Feb. 27, 1864.

<sup>25</sup> Corp. Jan. 5, 1864.

<sup>27</sup> Corp. Jan. 5, 1864.

<sup>28</sup> Died of wounds, at Spottsylvania, Va., May 18, 1864.

<sup>29</sup> Lost right arm at Fredericksburg, Va., Dec. 13, 1862.





## THIRTY-NINTH REGIMENT INFANTRY (3 YEARS).

*Company F.*

John Day, must. in July 22, 1863. Died of wounds, Oct. 28, 1864.

## FIFTY-FOURTH REGIMENT INFANTRY (3 YEARS).

*Unassigned.*

Charles Mason, must. in Nov. 21, 1864.

## FIFTY-SIXTH REGIMENT INFANTRY (THREE YEARS).

John J. Davis, 2d Lieut., must. in Nov. 21, 1863.

<sup>1</sup> George A. Wass, 1st Sergt., must. in Dec. 26, 1863.*Company B.*

Francis Beall, Corp., must. in Dec. 26, 1863.

George B. Jones, Corp., must. in Dec. 26, 1863.

<sup>2</sup> John Y. Taylor, Corp., must. in Dec. 26, 1863.<sup>3</sup> Walter Butler, must. in Dec. 26, 1863.

James Clark, must. in Dec. 26, 1863.

<sup>4</sup> Albert C. Cook, must. in Dec. 26, 1863.

William Goodwin, must. in Dec. 26, 1863.

William H. Jeffs, must. in Dec. 26, 1863.

James Jourdan, must. in Dec. 26, 1863.

Frederick P. Knowles, must. in Dec. 26, 1863.

David Lane, must. in Dec. 26, 1863.

Thomas W. Long, must. in Dec. 26, 1863.

Joseph Lurvey, must. in Dec. 26, 1863.

<sup>5</sup> John Manduits, must. in Dec. 26, 1863.

Roderick McDonald, must. in Dec. 26, 1863.

Angus McGilvrey, must. in Dec. 26, 1863.

<sup>6</sup> Frederick Morton, must. in Dec. 26, 1863.

George T. Rowe, must. in Dec. 26, 1863.

Thomas Schanessy, must. in Dec. 26, 1863.

<sup>7</sup> Frederick L. Younger, must. in Dec. 26, 1863.*Company E.*

Peter Hannigan, must. in Jan. 12, 1864.

*Company H.*

Edwin A. Dickson, must. in Jan. 27, 1864.

## 57TH REGT. INFANTRY (3 YEARS).

*Company D.*<sup>8</sup> Cornelius Brock, must. in Feb. 9, 1864.<sup>9</sup> Matthew P. Cester, must. in Feb. 9, 1864.<sup>8</sup> Charles Marshall, Jr., must. in Feb. 9, 1864.*Company G.*<sup>8</sup> Louis Sene, must. in March 4, 1864.

## 59TH REGT. INFANTRY (3 YEARS).

*Company D.*

Herbert D. Ingersoll, Sergt., must. in Feb. 9, 1864.

Albert Ingersoll, must. in Feb. 9, 1864.

<sup>10</sup> Peter Lucas, must. in March 12, 1864.<sup>11</sup> William T. Horton, must. in April 2, 1864.

## 1ST COMPANY SHARPSHOOTERS (THREE YEARS).

Edward C. Cook, must. in Sept. 2, 1864.

George Whittemore, must. in Sept. 2, 1864.

## VETERAN RESERVE CORPS.

James P. Smith, must. in August 1, 1864.

## 3D MAINE INFANTRY.

Charles Craig.

## 5TH MAINE INFANTRY.

Sydney Hutchins; lost a leg at Spottsylvania Court House.

## 18TH MISSOURI INFANTRY.

John J. Tubin; died at Port Chewalla, Tenn.

<sup>1</sup> 2d Lieut. July 1, 1865.<sup>2</sup> Died July 8, 1864.<sup>3</sup> Died Aug. 21, 1864.<sup>4</sup> Killed in the Wilderness, Va., May 6, 1864.<sup>5</sup> Died Nov. 19, 1864.<sup>6</sup> Killed in the Wilderness, Va., May 6, 1864.<sup>7</sup> Killed at North Anna River, May 12, 1864.<sup>8</sup> Transferred from 59th Regiment.<sup>9</sup> See 57th Regiment.<sup>10</sup> Died at City Point, Va., Dec. 2, 1864.<sup>11</sup> Transferred to 57th Regt.<sup>12</sup> Killed at Antietam, Md., Sept. 17, 1862.

## NAVY.

George W. Adams, Jr.

George Abbott.

John L. Abbott.

James P. Adams.

Robert Aird.

George Alston.

Andrew Anderson.

Andrew Anderson, Jr.

Charles Anderson.

William Anderson.

John Ayers.

William Allen.

John L. Allen.

John Babcock.

Edwin Babson.

Philip A. Babson.

Timothy Bacon.

Richard Baker.

Sylvanus Balley.

James Barrett.

John Bay.

James N. Bartlett.

Harvey Bartlett.

William H. Bates.

William Bell.

James Bell.

Andrew Benson.

John Bickford.

George Biglow.

John Black.

Benjamin F. Blatchford.

James Blatchford.

Joseph Blatchford.

James Bowden.

James Bowman.

Thomas F. Bowden.

Charles Brandt.

Alexander Bremer.

Andrew Brown.

Henry H. Brown.

Alexander Buchan.

Martin A. Burke.

Robert Burns.

Michael Burns.

John Cain.

James Campbell.

Robert Carle.

Charles Carley.

Hiram Carter.

John Carter.

Nathaniel Carter.

James Carson.

Francis Casey.

Peter Caten.

Edward B. Center.

Sturgis Center.

William B. Center.

Jonathan Chapman.

James E. Chaney.

George Clark.

James Cobin.

William Coltee.

Thomas Colbert.

Samuel V. Colby.

Francis Colday.

Peter Collins.

Robert Collins.

James Cowley.

John Connor.

James Connors.

Richard Cornick.

John Cowin.

Charles F. Crowell.

Rufus Cunningham.

John Daniels.

Llewellyn Daniels.

Andrew Darby.

Albert A. Davis.

Charles H. Davis.

John Davis, Jr.

Joseph Davis.

Francis B. Davis.

George H. S. Davis.

Thomas Davis.

William Davis.

Nathaniel T. Davis.

George H. Davidson.

Phiny Davison.

Abraham Day, Jr.

David S. Day.

Leonard G. Day.

Leonard A. Day.

John W. Delaney.

Frank H. Dennis.

Phiny Denison.

William Denny.

John J. Davis.

Patrick Devine.

Thomas Dolan.

George C. Dolliver.

S. F. Dolliver.

Jeremiah Donavan.

Olive Donavan.

William Donnahue.

John Donnelly.

Michael Donnelly.

James Dollen.

James C. Douglass.

James Downing.

James Doyle.

John Doyle.

Patrick Doyle.

Timothy Driscoll.

William Dugan.

Patrick Dugan.

John L. Duley.

Angus Duncanson.

James Duncan.

Thomas Dundas.

Henry J. Dunn.

Albert Dwyer.

George E. Durant.

E. Eaton.

George Elder.

William Eldridge.

Augustus P. Ellis.

Ephraim W. Ellwell.

William Ellwell.

Zeno P. Ellwell.

George H. Emerson.

L. G. Emerson.

George R. Emery.

John English.

John Everson.

Alex. Falconer.

Robert Fahner.

John Feeney.

David Fendall.

Thomas Fernald.

Clement Ferrill.

William Ferrill.

Henry Field.

Charles F. Field.

James Field.

Daniel Fielding.

James B. Firth.

Anthony W. Fisk.

Richard H. Fisher.

Martin Fiske.

Edward Fitzgerald.





Patrick Fitzpatrick.  
John Fittin.  
Edward Flag.  
Calvin Florence.  
Timothy Flynn.  
Bartholomew Foley.  
Michael Foley.  
Benjamin Folsom.  
John Ford.  
Henry Forrest.  
Dennis Forristal.  
Henry Foster.  
Stephen Fowler.  
John Frances.  
Barton Freeman.  
John Freighton.  
Isaac Friend.  
Matthew Garfield.  
Patrick Garfield.  
Daniel Galvin.  
Thomas Garban.  
Thomas B. Gamon.  
John Gardes.  
James Garland.  
Freeborn Garrison.  
Thomas B. Garrison.  
Wilson Garfield.  
William Gaul.  
William J. Getry.  
William Gilbert.  
James Gilbert.  
Edward Gilman.  
Daniel Gilson.  
James Glasgow.  
John Glynn.  
Albert G. Gwin.  
James G. Gwin.  
Daniel Golden.  
Patrick Gorman.  
John Graham.  
Stephen Grant.  
Joseph Green.  
W. G. Green.  
Ebenzer Greenleaf.  
Frederick P. Greer.  
Lutz E. Grubbs.  
John Grubbs.  
Lawrence Griffin.  
George E. Griggs.  
James Harrington.  
John P. C. Hanson.  
James Harrington.  
John Harrington.  
John F. Harris.  
Thomas Harris.  
Edward B. Hasey.  
James P. Hasketh.  
Thomas Hasketh.  
Hugh H. Henry.  
Patrick Henry.  
Michael Henderson.  
Patrick Hennessey.  
Philip P. Henshaw.  
Joseph Herrick.  
Richard Herring.  
Lewis Hey.  
A. B. Hoyt.  
John P. Hoyt.  
James Howard.  
J. S. Hubby.  
Philip A. Hurskman.  
James Hussy.  
Charles Ingersoll.  
James M. Jaffe.  
William Jenkins.  
Andrew Jones.

Daniel Jones.  
Samuel Jones.  
Thomas Jones.  
Charles Johnson.  
Francis H. Johnson.  
John Johnson.  
Matthias Johnson.  
Olaf Johnson.  
Thomas Johnston.  
Fred. Jordan.  
Barnard Kennedy.  
Thomas Kennedy.  
Barrett Kennell.  
J. W. H. Kerner.  
Charles Kimball.  
Joseph Kimball.  
Charles King.  
James Kingsley.  
Albion Knowlton.  
Michael Landaser.  
James Landry.  
Albert Lane.  
Orland B. Lane.  
Rodney Lane.  
Alfred Lawson.  
Charles Loughton.  
Peter Lewis.  
Thomas Lewis.  
Samuel Lundberg.  
Charles Littlefield.  
George Lockwood.  
Thomas Long.  
William W. Low.  
William Lowery.  
Peter Lowry.  
James Lynch.  
John Lynch.  
Daniel E. Lyons.  
Mark Manuel.  
William McKay.  
Thomas Mahoney.  
Samlford Makepeace.  
Alonso Marchant.  
James K. Marchant.  
John Marchant.  
Thomas Marley.  
John C. Mars.  
Joseph Marshall.  
Levi Marshall.  
Robert Marshall.  
Vernon P. Marshall.  
Francis Martin.  
John Martin.  
Richard T. Martin.  
Thomas Martin.  
Thomas Mason.  
Alphonse Matthews.  
Samuel K. Matthews.  
John Menary.  
Edward E. Miller.  
Thomas Miller.  
James Mitchell.  
Richard Morrison.  
Peter Morrison.  
James Morrison.  
John Mullen.  
George P. Munsey.  
Andrew Murphy.  
James Murphy.  
John Murray.  
G. M. L. McCarthy.  
John McCarthy.  
Allen McDonald.  
Daniel McDonald.  
Edwin McDonald.  
George McDonald.

Stephen McDonald.  
Thomas McDonald.  
Bryan McDonough.  
Michael McDonough.  
Allen McFall.  
William McGill.  
James McGowan.  
Donald McIntosh.  
Charles McIntosh.  
Donald McIsaac.  
John M. Kuy.  
James McKenzie.  
Robert C. McKenzie.  
William McKendry.  
George McKane.  
William McMullen.  
James McNeil.  
Donald McPherson.  
James McPherson.  
Edward Nelson.  
John A. Nelson.  
Alfred Nickerson.  
Morris Nolan.  
Francis A. Norton.  
Peter Norton.  
Franklin K. G. Nuy.  
Wallis C. Odiorne.  
Frederick Ordway.  
Charles Ornd.  
Edward S. Osborn.  
John Paige.  
Charles Papo.  
Charles H. Parker.  
John Pearce.  
Joseph Peres.  
Joseph N. Perry.  
Lucis G. Petterson.  
William H. Pinkham.  
Charles Pitman.  
Charles H. Pitman.  
William H. Place.  
Homer H. Pomeroy.  
James Pomeroy.  
Edward Poor.  
Richard Powers.  
William Powers.  
Benjamin F. Randall.  
James Randall.  
Thomas Randall.  
Daniel Ready.  
William Redlin.  
John Reed.  
John Reeves.  
George Reidy.  
William E. Remington.  
George Riley.  
William S. Rittel.  
William S. Robbins.  
Dennis Roberts.  
Abram Robinson.  
James Robinson.  
Joseph Robinson.  
John Roller.  
Owen Roundy.  
Manuel Russell.  
Thomas H. Russell.  
Charles H. Ryan.  
Martin Ryan.  
Henry S. Saddler.  
James S. Saddler.  
Anos Sampson.  
George C. Sauborn.  
Philip Sargent.  
Simon Sargent.  
Henry Sanders.  
James G. Sawin.

John Saxton.  
Edward N. Seamel.  
John Seaman.  
Edman Schofield.  
James Scott.  
William Scott.  
John H. Sewall.  
Andrew Shannon.  
James Shannon.  
Michael Shaft.  
James Shepherd.  
John Shepherd.  
John Sheridan.  
W. H. Sherman.  
Andrew Shore.  
John F. Simmet.  
John D. Silver.  
Mannet M. Silver.  
Thomas Sims.  
George A. Smith.  
George T. Smith.  
James Smith.  
Levi Smith.  
Thomas Smith.  
Ralph E. Snow.  
Charles F. Somes.  
George Sorenson.  
Calvin Soule.  
George H. Southwick.  
Granville S. Spofford.  
Arnold Sprague.  
Nathaniel Sprague.  
Isaac Stanwood.  
Jas. F. Stevens.  
Minot Stevens.  
Nathaniel S. Stevens.  
Chas. Stewart.  
Alexander Stinson.  
Chas. W. Stockman.  
Bawley Stone.  
Samuel Stone.  
Wm. Strickland.  
Edward M. Strong.  
Alexander A. Stubbs.  
Henry Stumbles.  
Daniel E. Sullivan.  
Dennis Sullivan.  
Edward Sullivan.  
Michael Swan.  
John Swift.  
Walter Sylvester.  
Albert Tarr.  
Robert Tarr.  
Benjamin W. Taylor.  
Henry Taylor.  
John N. Taylor.  
Wm. H. Teeling.  
Edwin Thayer.  
Jas. Thomas, Jr.  
John Thomas.  
Samuel S. Thomas.  
Wm. W. Thomas.  
Wm. Thomas.  
Howard Thompson.  
Jas. Thompson.  
John D. Thompson.  
John Toole.  
Peter Tontel.  
Daniel W. Townsend.  
Frank W. Townsend.  
Elkanah Tresher.  
Wm. Trask.  
Jas. H. Trevoxy.  
Newman A. Tuckerman.  
Jas. W. Turner.  
Wm. Turner.





*James H. French*

---





Wm. N. Turner.  
George Twiss.  
Andrew Tyrell.  
Alexander Urquhart.  
Wm. Urquhart.  
Peter Vaughn.  
Frederick T. Volebins.  
Francis Ward.  
Matthew Warren.  
Jas. P. Welsh.  
Samuel Wharf.  
Wm. H. Wilkes.

Henry Williams.  
Chas. Wilson.  
George Wilson.  
Robert F. Wilson.  
Thomas Wilson.  
Wm. Wilson.  
Jacob Winchester.  
John N. Wood.  
John W. Woodbury.  
Wm. Yates.  
Elbridge Young.  
Jas. A. Zeigler.

The footings of the foregoing lists of names show that there was credited to Gloucester during the war :

Men enlisted for Three Months.....	67
For One Hundred Days.....	72
For Six Months.....	3
For Nine Months.....	106
For One Year.....	129
For Three Years.....	649
Total in the Army.....	1026
In the Navy.....	458
Total in both Army and Navy.....	1484

## BIOGRAPHICAL.

### COLONEL JONAS H. FRENCH.

Although not a native of Essex, Colonel Jonas H. French is one of the leading citizens of the county, and by his energy and public spirit has contributed in no small degree to her welfare and material prosperity. He is of Yankee stock, however, which came from the neighboring county of Middlesex, his father, William French, having been a native of Dunstable, while his mother, whose maiden-name was Sarah Baldwin, was from Billerica.

Colonel French was born in Boston, and was educated in the public schools of the city, graduating from the English High School in 1845. His zeal and fidelity as a student are attested by the fact of his having been a recipient, while a student at the old Mayhew school, of one of the Franklin medals, which, under the will of Benjamin Franklin, are annually given as honorary rewards to the most deserving pupils in the Boston public schools. Having an inclination for mercantile pursuits, he began life on his own account as an apprentice in a grocery-store, subsequently becoming associated with his brother in the distillery business, in which he was continuously engaged until the breaking out of the Rebellion.

Very early in life he evinced a remarkable aptness and taste for military affairs, and he was scarcely of age when he enrolled himself as a member of the City Guards, the "crack" Boston company of those days. He proved a capital recruit, and his soldierly qualities were soon recognized by his election as captain of his company, a position which he held for three years. He subsequently served a year on the

staff of Governor Gardner, having been selected from among numerous competitors for his fine soldierly bearing and his excellent military acquirements. At the breaking out of the war, in 1861, he was the commander of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company of Boston, making him to-day one of the oldest living commanders of that time-honored corps.

The call to arms for the defense of the Union found in Colonel French a ready respondent, and in November, 1861, at Camp Chase, in Lowell, he raised the regiment known as "The Eastern Bay State," but which was afterwards designated as the Thirtieth Massachusetts Regiment. In the January following, he sailed in command of that regiment from Boston for Ship Island, attached to General Benjamin F. Butler's expedition against New Orleans. Arriving at his destination, he was appointed senior aide-de-camp and inspector-general on the staff of General Butler. He was with the latter in the memorable action against Forts Jackson and St. Philip, and upon the capture of New Orleans he was appointed provost-marshal of Louisiana. His training as a soldier and his skill as a disciplinarian served him at this important and responsible post. He entirely reorganized the police of New Orleans and, so far as civil matters were concerned, he was the chief executive officer of General Butler all through the period of the latter's command of the Union forces in that city, which witnessed some of the most notable events of our Civil War. After General Butler was relieved of his command, Colonel French served for some time under General N. P. Banks, after which he resigned and returned home to engage in business.

The rock-bound coast of Cape Ann has furnished a fruitful theme for the historian, the poet and the painter, each of whom has found no lack of material for his handiwork in this rugged locality. Romance, scenery and poetry are not its only products, however. The late Edwin P. Whipple, the distinguished essayist, writing of the place, remarked that the principal productions of certain portions of Cape Ann seem to be rocks and roses, and it was the inexhaustible quarries of the former commodity that engaged the attention of Colonel French, who, in 1869, organized the Cape Ann Granite Company, one of the largest and most prosperous granite companies in the country. He has been its president from the date of its organization. The quarries are located in Gloucester, and they have furnished the granite for several of the public buildings and other structures of the country, among them the Boston post-office and sub-treasury building, the Baltimore post-office building, the bases of the Scott Monument in Washington, and the spandrel walls of the great Brooklyn Bridge. They have also provided a large amount of the polished granite for the city buildings of Philadelphia. The company is also one of the largest contractors in the country for granite paving-blocks, and it has given constant employment for the past fifteen



years to from three hundred to seven hundred men. The village of Bay View, Gloucester, has been largely built up under the auspices of this company. It is here that Colonel French has his summer home, his winter residence being in Boston. This delightful summer house, which has been appropriately christened "Rocklawn," is one of the most attractive on the North Shore, famed for its beautiful country residences. It stands conspicuous among

"The outthrust headlands and breaching bays  
of our northeastern coast,"

so sweetly sung of by our Essex poet, Whittier. The house and stable are of granite and are models of architectural grace and skill. The house is at a sufficient elevation from the shore to command a fine view of the bay and the many places of interest which skirt its shores, and the prospect from the broad piazzas which surround the house is not surpassed in that picturesque vicinity. The broad, sloping lawns and drives which stretch down to the sea on one side and to the granite hills on the other are kept in the best order that constant care can give them, and the grounds are always open to visitors, who find enjoyment in searching out the interesting scenery of the Cape. Extensive gardens and green-houses are maintained on the place, and everything about "Rocklawn" is in tasteful keeping with the elegant hospitality that is dispensed by its owner.

In politics Colonel French has always been a staunch Democrat, and his fidelity to the principles of that organization has made him one of the trusted leaders of the party in the State. Although deeply engrossed in the cares which the conduct of large business interests involves, he has always been ready to serve his party effectively in its councils and on the hustings. He served as a delegate to the Democratic National Convention at Cincinnati, in 1880, and was chosen, by an almost unanimous vote, as a delegate-at-large to the National Convention of 1888. He has been for several years a member of the Democratic State Central Committee of Massachusetts, and for three years was its chairman. He was twice elected from the Gloucester District to the State Senate, serving in the sessions of 1879 and 1880, and occupying the position of chairman of several important committees. In 1886 he ran for Congress in the Seventh District, but was defeated.

Colonel French has been prominent for many years in railroad matters also. For three years he was president of the Louisville, Evansville and St. Louis Railroad, and for a period of ten years he has been a director in the New York and New England Railroad. He was also for a time a director in the Eastern Railroad. He is a director in the West End Land Company, an important enterprise that has lately been entered upon by some public-spirited capitalists to improve the horse-car service of Boston and vicinity, and to develop the territory lying to the westward of that

city and in Brookline. Since 1876 he has been a director of the Maverick National Bank of Boston, and has taken an active interest in the management of its affairs.

In his early career Colonel French was greatly interested in Free-Masonry and was initiated in the Columbia Lodge of Boston. He was one of the original charter members of Revere Lodge, and was also one of the founders of the St. Bernard Encampment.

Surrounded by all those material comforts which a career marked by industry and shrewd business capacity entitle their possessor to enjoy, having a keen appreciation of the refinements of life, in both a social and intellectual sense, and possessed withal of buoyant and progressive instincts which have impressed themselves on all his surroundings, Colonel French is fairly entitled to be enrolled in the long list of those good citizens of old Essex whose record is the nobler and better for their having contributed to it.

#### GEORGE O. HOVEY.

George Otis Hovey was born at Brookfield, Massachusetts, on February 22, 1809. At the death of his father he became, in early childhood, a member of the household of his uncle, Mr. Jabez C. Howe, of Stirling, Massachusetts. When Mr. Howe removed to Boston, Mr. Hovey, still a boy, went with him and remained with him until his own marriage. Mr. Hovey was married, in 1835, to Mary A., daughter of Joseph Cotton, of Boston. Previous to his marriage Mr. Hovey had made several visits to Europe in the interests of the firm of I. C. Howe & Company, of which he became a member on reaching his twenty-first year, and after his marriage he also spent two or three years in Paris.

Mr. Hovey was one of the pioneers of the North Shore summer residents, having first spent a summer at Fresh Water Cove, Gloucester, in 1843, and spending all his subsequent summers there. In 1846 he built his summer house there, in which he died July 18, 1877.

#### EPES W. MERCHANT.

Epes W. Merchant was born in Gloucester, May 22, 1804. He was the eldest of ten children born to Epes Merchant and Sally R. (Thomas) Merchant. Epes W., like most of the Cape Ann boys of that period, was practically engaged in the fisheries until his majority, when he became a partner in his father's business under the firm-name of Epes Merchant & Son. For many years he was one of the principal fish-buyers, and his business reputation and mercantile integrity were of the highest order. His knowledge and judgment was often appealed to by the younger masters, and his kind encouragement and sound advice were often the foundation of successful business



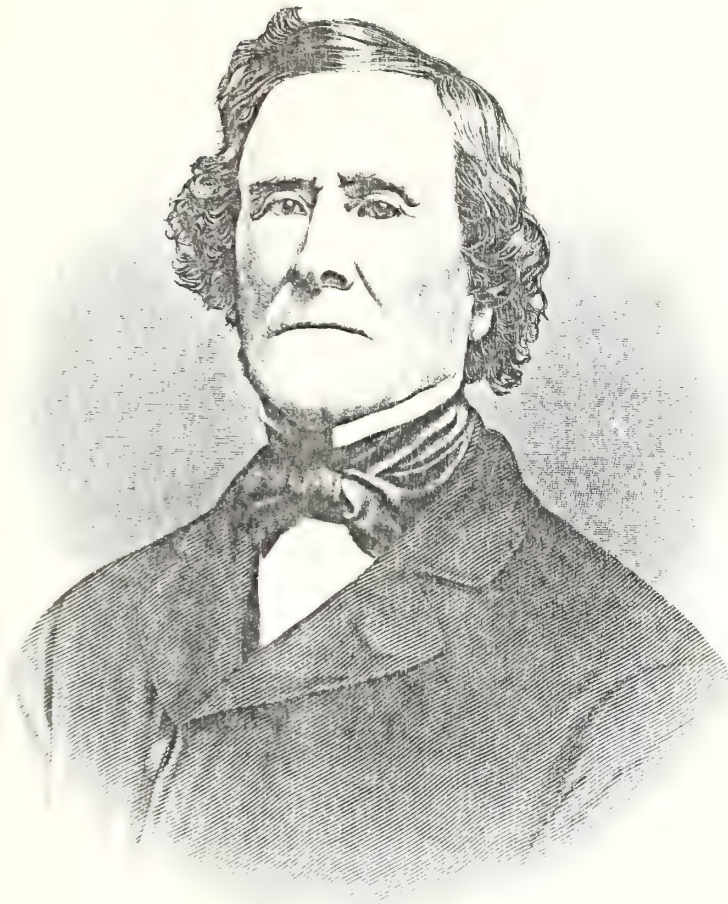




George O'Hovry







*E. W. Merchant*





*Addison Gilbert*







*Joseph Rame*



for many. Mr. Merchant was elected a director of the old Gloucester Bank, now the Gloucester National, in 1848, and became its president in 1871, which office he held until he died. He was also a trustee of the Cape Ann Savings Bank, director of the Gloucester Fishermen's and Widows' and Orphans' Association, and president of the Oak Grove Cemetery Association. Mr. Merchant was a thorough American, believing politically in the principles of protection to American industry, and development as embodied in the Whig and Republican parties. He was liberal in his religious views, being a constant attendant at the Independent Christian Church (Universalist). His life was consistent, patriotic, full of kind deeds and loyalty to his best convictions. Mr. Merchant was married, December 21, 1825, to Miss Sally Ellery Ryerson, who survives him.

#### ADDISON GILBERT.<sup>1</sup>

Addison Gilbert, merchant and banker of Gloucester, Mass., was born in Gloucester in 1808. He is a descendant of the Gilbert family of Devonshire, England, of which Sir Humphrey Gilbert, the distinguished navigator, was an honored member. The first record of the family in America dates from 1648. The great-grandfather of Mr. Gilbert came to Gloucester in 1704. The father of Mr. Gilbert, Mr. Samuel Gilbert, was a successful merchant, accumulating a handsome property. Mr. Gilbert was educated in the public schools of Gloucester and the Dummer Academy at Byfield. He early evinced a taste for mercantile life, and his success is due to his thorough business habits and steadfast integrity. In early life he took a great interest in public affairs, and being a ready and forcible speaker he represented his native town repeatedly in the Legislature, also serving as selectman, school committee, auditor and moderator of the town-meetings. In every branch of the public service he brought into action the personal business traits that characterized his daily life. Mr. Gilbert's political affiliations were in early life with the Jacksonian Democracy, but as the disunion sentiment assumed control of the party, with Mr. Rantoul and others he early saw the designs of the slave power and gave to the Republican party, then forming, the same earnest support that he had formerly given to the Democracy, and when the government appealed to the loyal citizens of the country for means to prosecute the war in defense of the Union, Mr. Gilbert, though past the age for service in the field, did all that he could, and poured into the treasury of the nation all the resources at his command. Mr. Gilbert was never married, and will leave no direct issue to inherit his honorable name and honestly acquired wealth. His life has been one of earnest, conscientious effort and untiring industry; liberal in his religious views, strong in his personal friendships, he bears his eighty years

with honor and enjoys the respect and veneration of his fellow-citizens.

#### CAPTAIN JOSEPH ROWE.

Captain Joseph Rowe was born in Gloucester, Mass., December 11, 1825. His ancestors were among the first settlers of Cape Ann, and in the wars and strifes of the early days did conspicuous service for the colony and for the country. Of Captain Rowe it can be truthfully said that he represented in his life and character the noble and manly attributes that have ever been ascribed to the typical American sailor.

Following the example of his ancestors, his youth and early manhood was devoted to wrestling from old ocean the reward which crowned his later days and made his name the synonym of daring enterprise, fearless and undoubted courage, quick and intuitive decision and unsullied integrity and honor. A fisherman, whose education was from the common school of his boyhood, and that larger and grander school—the ocean. With a mental grasp that seemed inspiration, with a contempt for sham and shoddy that made their votaries shrink and shiver in his presence, he lived his manly life true to his best ideals, and died, mourned and respected by all who knew him. His memory will ever be an inspiration to the toiler of the sea, and his good name, more than wealth, will be the proud legacy of his children and his children's children.

Captain Rowe was married to Miss Martha Norwood, of Gloucester, who died October 4, 1881. His own death occurred June 15, 1887.

#### CAPT. FITZ J. BABSON.

Captain Fitz J. Babson was born in Gloucester, Massachusetts, February 14, 1828. He is a direct descendant from James Babson, who, with his mother, Isabel Babson, settled in Gloucester in 1637. Capt. Babson received his education in the public schools of his native town, passing an academic course at the Murray Institute. In early life he learned the carpenter's trade and was employed as a builder and contractor until 1861, when he enlisted in the Union army, serving in the Twelfth and Twenty-third Regiments Massachusetts Infantry, and was mustered out October 13, 1864. He immediately raised another company for one year's service and was finally mustered out July, 1865, having served for four years as a soldier and participating in the battles of Roanoke Island, Newbern and other skirmishes in North Carolina; also the initiatory fighting at Port Walthall, Arrowfield Church, and battles of Drury Bluff, Cold Harbor, and the siege of Petersburg. On his return from the war he was appointed boarding officer and inspector of customs at Gloucester, and immediately after the inauguration of General Grant was appointed by him Collector of Customs for the district of

<sup>1</sup>By Capt. Fitz J. Babson.





Gloucester. This position he held for seventeen years, being reappointed by Presidents Grant, Hayes and Arthur. Captain Babson represented his native town two years—1858, 1860—in the Legislature of Massachusetts, and has at two conventions been the unanimous choice of the fishing interests as a candidate for Congress. He has been the uncompromising defender of these interests against Canadian aggression, and under the direction of the Honorable Secretary of State, Mr. Evarts, obtained and compiled most of the documentary evidence and also the oral testimony on the American side before the Halifax Commission. In the frigate "Kearsarge" he made a thorough investigation of the shores of Canada and Newfoundland, submitting an exhaustive report of the local fisheries and the points of contact within and without treaty stipulations. In the case of the outrages on American fishermen at Fortune Bay, Newfoundland, he collected all of the facts and presented the case to the government, which resulted in a payment of seventy-five thousand dollars damages by Great Britain, and an acknowledgment of the truth of the American position. He has been a voluminous writer on the practical operations of the Atlantic fisheries, and a large portion of the current fishery newspaper literature for twenty years is from his pen.

In the winter of 1885 and 1886, at Washington, associated with Honorable Charles L. Woodbury, he successfully opposed the appointment of a commission to negotiate a reciprocity treaty, and at present writing is the president of the National Fishery Association, which includes the interests of the Atlantic, Pacific, and Lake and Gulf fisheries. Captain Babson was made a Mason at the age of twenty-one in Tyrian Lodge of Gloucester, and has ever been active in Masonic work. He was four years Worthy Master of Tyrian Lodge, and also four years Worthy Master of Acacia Lodge, which was formed and instituted through his efforts. He is also a member of William Ferson Royal Arch Chapter. In 1868, with twelve other comrades, he petitioned for a post of the G. A. R., and was its first Commander. In a large sense his life has been that of a public-spirited citizen, whether acting for years as moderator of the town meetings or superintending the erection of both City Halls or striving with his comrades to erect a monument that marks the loyal devotion of the soldiers and sailors of Gloucester,—in all and through all a pride in the citizenship of his native town, State and country, and an earnest defender of American rights everywhere by speech, pen or sword.

Attending the Independent Christian Church from infancy, his religious convictions were never limited by sectarian lines. In politics a Republican from the first formation of the party.

## CHAPTER CXL.

### ROCKPORT.

BY JOHN W. MARSHALL.

*General Description.—Incorporation.—Boater Accommodations.—Fishing Boats.—Early Settlers and other Facts.*

**GENERAL DESCRIPTION.**—Sandy Bay, the Fifth Parish of the town of Gloucester, and Pigeon Cove, a part of the Third Parish, were set off from Gloucester and incorporated at the town of Rockport February 27, 1840.

The act of incorporation was passed to be enacted, and was signed by the speaker of the House of Representatives, Robert C. Winthrop, and by the president of the Senate, Daniel P. King, and approved by the Governor, Marcus Morton, all on the same day.

Rockport is situated on the most easterly part of Cape Ann, and is bounded northwesterly by Ipswich Bay, on the east by the Atlantic Ocean, on the south by Massachusetts Bay, on the west by the city of Gloucester.

It has a water front of about six miles; the greater part of the coast line is rugged and rock-bound, though there are several good sand beaches, viz.: Long Beach, at its southern extremity, full a mile in extent, hard, white sand, over which are pleasant drives; it also affords good bathing facilities. Next easterly of Long Beach is Pebble-Stone, separated from Long by a rocky bluff, "Cape Hedge; this, above half-tide, is composed of an immense reef of pebble-stone; at and below half-tide smooth, hard sand. In front of the town is School-house Beach, of smooth, hard sand. Next westerly, separated by a bold and rocky bluff, Hale's Point, is Back Beach, of pebble-stone and sand. Then northerly is Short Beach. All of these afford excellent facilities for bathing. Long, School-house and Back Beaches are public property. Citizens and visitors have free use. The shore of Phillips' Avenue, Pigeon Cove, is comparatively a smooth ledge declining towards the sea, and affords tolerable facilities for bathing.

The surface of the town is broken and uneven; composed of hill and dale, there are bold and precipitous ledges of rock and acres of boulders of all sizes, from many tons' weight to those no larger than a water-pail; the underlaying strata is granite. The highest hill is Pool's, westward of and near the railroad station. It rises about two hundred and thirty feet above the level of the sea; its summit is a large extent of table-land. Pigeon Hill, the next highest land, is two hundred and ten feet above the sea-level; it rises gradually, its surface is smooth and is composed of well-cultivated fields. This is the first land that greets the eye of the sailor as he nears the coast.





From these hills we get a very extended view of land and ocean, the hills and mountains of Maine and New Hampshire; the eye also reaches a long distance over the broad Atlantic. There are the mountains (so-called) located on the westerly side of Granite Street, a bold and precipitous ridge of rough and irregular stone, rising some fifty or more feet almost perpendicular; the apex a level plateau; then the highland of overlook and the split-rock and many other points of thrilling interest to the permanent settler and to the sojourner. There are, perhaps, few towns that have such a variety of scenery and so much to interest the tourist as this town, with its large ocean front and its great variety of hill and dale, fruitful fields and acres of wood.

The Cape, or Fresh Pond, a beautiful sheet of about seventy acres of pure water, on two sides inclosed by hills covered with boulders and trees. This pond is within three-fourths of a mile of the village. Its only outlet crosses the highway near the Beaver Dam farm-house, and flows through swamp, marsh and meadow, and finally mingles its waters with Mill and Annisquam Rivers to the sea. This pond is supplied with fish to some extent,—alewives, pickerel and perch,—but not in such abundance as to invite the Isaac Waltons of to-day; though, in years gone by, two hundred barrels of alewives have been taken in a day.

The roads are in good condition and afford very pleasant drives, the main road lies the greater part of its distance six miles within a few rods of the ocean, of which the most of the way you have an unobstructed view.

Then at Pigeon Cove the avenues laid out and built by the late Eben B. Phillips through a large tract of land he purchased some years since, and upon which are built a large number of attractive summer residences. And these avenues constructed at a later day over and about Sunset-hill, by Babson and Gaffield, for those who love an ocean view none can be more fascinating. Pigeon Cove has long been popular as a summer resort. The south part of the town is increasing in favor. The hotel privileges are the "Pigeon Cove House," "Ocean View," "Linwood," and "Glen Acre," at either of which travelers may be assured they will be well cared for. At the south Village is the Sandy Bay house and the Abbot, open during the year, the Sea Croft open during the summer. Also private boarding houses in good number.

There are three Islands lying off the town, one of which Straitsmouth is separated from the main by a narrow channel called the Gap, through which vessels of light draught may pass at high or near high-tide. It contains about fifty acres. Though its surface is rocky it affords good pasture and a garden for the keeper. This Island was granted by the General Court to Capt. James Davis, in consideration "that he had been to much expense and charge in the late war with the French and Indians, and had spent much time

in the service." After changing ownership several times it was purchased by the United States Government and a light-house and dwelling-house was erected there in the year 1835. Benj. W. Andrews was the first keeper. He died on the Island while in the service. And in the year 1841, Capt. John Davis was appointed to fill his place. The present light-house was built in 1851, and was lighted towards the close of that year.

Thachers Island, the largest of the three, contains about eighty acres and is of good soil, affording rich pasturage. It is about two miles from the main; it was purchased by the Colonial Government in 1771, of Joseph Allen, at a cost of £500, and that year two light houses and a dwelling-house were erected and were lighted for the first time December 21, 1771. Kirkwood was keeper. At the commencement of the Revolutionary War he was forcibly removed from the Island by Capt. Rogers' company of minute men as a person whose views were not in accordance with the patriotic sentiments generally held by the people of the town. After awhile the lights were relighted and their friendly beams guided the eye of the anxious mariner and aided in directing his way over the pathless sea, until the year 1861, when they were demolished and the present light-houses higher and more noble in appearance were erected and furnished with lighting apparatus of the first order, and were lighted on the first day of October of that year. These lights located at the entrance of Massachusetts Bay are of very great importance. This station is also supplied with a fog whistle.

This Island is memorable on account of the shipwreck of Anthony Thacher and his cousin, Rev. John Avery, who with their families were on their way from Ipswich to Marblehead, where Mr. Avery had a call to preach the gospel. They were wrecked on the 14th day of August, 1635, on a ledge, "Crackwoods," off the south side of the western head; besides these two families of seventeen persons there were two other persons and four seamen, twenty-three in all, of which but two, Mr. Thacher and his wife were saved, and but one body was recovered, that of a daughter of Mr. Avery. She was buried on the Island. They remained on the Island two days, then were taken off and were landed at Marblehead. He settled in Yarmouth and died there in 1668, aged about eighty years; leaving one son, by whose descendants his name is perpetuated in various places. On his departure from the scene of his shipwreck he gave his own name to the island upon which he was cast calling it "Thacher's Woe;" and the rock on which the vessel was wrecked he called "Avery his Fall."

Milk Island, the smallest of the group, lies a short distance southwesterly from Thachers; it rises but a little above the level of the sea. Tradition says that in the early settlement of the town it was used for the pasturing of cows, hence the name "Milk." For several years between 1840 and 1860, Asa Todd pastured sheep upon it. Probably his were the last sheep kept



in town. During late years it has been occupied for a fishing station, and is now owned by John B. Parsons and Charles Hodgkins. It is about three-fourths of a mile from the main.

Before there was any permanent settlement at Sandy Bay, men from Chebacco and Ipswich, came here at different times during several years and engaged in fishing. They erected their log cabins at or near Gap Head. One Babson had a grant of land at or near that locality. He probably was the Babson that was attacked by a bear, and had no weapon of defense except a knife. He was successful and killed the bear and spread his skin upon a rock on "Bear-skin neck," hence the name. Babson did not tarry long in this village.

**INCORPORATION.**—Several times during the years before Sandy Bay was set off from Gloucester, the question of separation was agitated, but for want of unanimity on the part of the voters of Sandy Bay, or for other reasons of minor importance, no special efforts were put forth to bring about a separation. But in the opening of the year 1839, the question was again agitated, and with greater unanimity. A public meeting was called and a committee of two from each school district, was chosen to canvas each district, and get each voter's yea, or nay, on the question. This was done and the committee reported at the adjourned meeting, three hundred and nineteen yeas, fifty-four nays. (Sixty-two of these three hundred and seventy-three persons are now, June 1887, living). At this meeting a committee of five were chosen on the part of Sandy Bay, to confer with a committee to be chosen by the parent town, viz. George D. Hale, James Haskell, John W. Marshall, Nehemiah Knowlton, Reuben Dade.

At the adjournment of the annual March meeting (of Gloucester), held on the 8th day of April, 1839, the eleventh article of the warrant, which was to know if the town will set off Sandy Bay and Pigeon Cove, or Sandy Bay only as a town by such line or lines, and upon such terms as may be mutually agreed upon by the inhabitants, and take measures to effect the same, agreeable to the petition of William P. Burns and others, came up for consideration, and the prayer of the petitioners was granted by vote, and a committee was chosen to carry the same into effect, who were as follows: Richard G. Stanwood, William Babson, Alphonso Mason, John W. Lowe, Aaron Fitz, George D. Hale, James Haskell, John W. Marshall, Reuben Dade and Nehemiah Knowlton. Thus the work of separation was initiated and was so carried into effect that the new town, (Rockport), which includes Sandy Bay and Pigeon Cove, was incorporated on the 27th day of February, 1840. The act of incorporation passed the House of Representatives and the Senate, and was approved by the Governor, Marcus Morton, on the same day.

The warrant for the first town meeting was issued by James Goss, Esq., to James Haskell, by which the

legal voters of the new town were required to meet in the vestry of the Congregational Society, on the 31st day of March, in the year 1840, to choose the necessary town officers for the current year. The meeting was called to order by James Haskell, Esq. Capt. John Davis was chosen moderator, and Colonel William Pool, town clerk. He was re-elected year by year until failing health compelled him to decline. His son, Calvin W., was then elected and continues to hold the office by re-election until the present time. David Babson Jr., Thomas O. Marshall, and James Haskell were chosen Selectmen, Assessors and Overseers of the poor. Capt. John Gott was chosen town Treasurer. The amount of the first tax assessed was \$3,566.96 of which \$2,762.03 was committed to collector John B. Parsons, and \$803.92 to collector Michael Walen. At the end of the year there was uncollected, John B. Parsons, \$81.37, Michael Walen, \$98.84. At the incorporation of Rockport its population by the United States census was 2650, and there were about 300 dwelling-houses.

Population by the United States census in 1880, was 3912; in 1885, 3888; number of dwelling-houses in 1885, 755. The valuation in 1840, was \$460,814; 698 polls; each poll was assessed \$1.00; each \$1000, was assessed \$7.17. The valuation in 1886 was \$2,022,102; 1120 polls; each poll was assessed \$2.00; each \$1000 was assessed \$15.30.

**HARBOR ACCOMMODATIONS.**—Rockport has no natural harbor. Sandy Bay, the principal indentation, is about two and a half miles deep; and across its entrance from Straitmouth Island point to Andrews point is about the same distance. It has good holding ground, and affords good protection from all winds except easterly, but these are the heaviest storm winds; therefore we say it is not a safe harbor. There was from the earliest settlement of the village a necessity for some protection from these storm winds. The small boats—four to eight tons—by which the early business of fishing was prosecuted, were moored in the inner coves, Long and Pigeon, but were not safe from easterly winds.

In 1743 Benj. Tarr, Eben<sup>r</sup>. and John Pool had a grant of land and flats and built a timber wharf at the whirlpool, so called. Timber was cheap, as the entire cape was nearly all a dense forest. Eben<sup>r</sup>. Pool had a grant of a lot of land and flats on which he built a timber wharf southwest of the other wharf. These wharves enclosed quite a basin, making a comparatively safe retreat for the small vessels of that day. These wharves became dilapidated, and about 1811 were taken up or removed, and the present white wharf was commenced, and is built of solid stone. It is erected some seventy feet easterly of the old timber wharf location. At that time it did not extend to more than one half of its present length. In 1815 the southwestern wharf, now occupied by Hooper & Co. for lumber, was built. These two wharves enclosed quite a safe dock, or basin.





The middle wharf was built in 1826. It was occupied several years by Joseph E. Norwood, John and William W. Parsons for packing mackerel. Norwood removed to Quincy, Ill., in 1834; the Parsons continued the business several years after. Many barrels of mackerel have been landed and packed on this wharf. At the time Norwood & Co. were occupying this middle wharf Wm. H. Bradley and James Short were doing quite a business in the same line on the white wharf. Before this Neh. Knowlton was engaged in the same business, (he was the first inspector of fish at Sandy Bay) of inspecting and packing mackerel. At the time of which we now speak there was quite a fleet of vessels owned in Sandy Bay; they were from ten to fifty tons measurement. These wharves were built by an incorporation—"Sandy Bay Pier Company." A heavy gale of northeast wind in 1831 damaged the white wharf to that extent that it cost \$1500 for repairs.

The inhabitants of Pigeon Cove felt the need of better accommodation for business and protection for their fishing boats. Capt. Daniel Wheeler had, about the year 1825, built a wharf on the southwest side of the cove.

In the year 1832 an incorporated company, "Pigeon Cove Harbor Company," commenced to build a breakwater by which to protect the vessels in the cove. By a heavy gale in 1839 a portion of it was torn down by the action of the sea. It cost about \$4000 for repairs. After this the structure was continued to the ledge, and has continued quite permanent. The basin thus enclosed affords good shelter for a limited number of vessels; it also contains a good quantity of wharf room by which the business of the place is tolerably well accommodated. More room could be utilized.

Early in the present century the Norwoods built a wharf on the southern shore of Long Cove to accommodate their fishing boats, of which they owned several. They also owned several fish houses and quite a track of flake room. The first thirty-five years of the present century the fishing industry was prosecuted with considerable energy in that locality and by that family.

About the same time or a little later Azor Knowlton, at the northern extremity of Back Beach, built a wharf to accommodate his fishing boat. In later years the stone business was inaugurated, and that wharf was enlarged and another wharf was built near by, forming a basin by which vessels engaged in transporting stone were well accommodated. A breakwater was also erected for the protection of the wharves and vessels. William Torrey shipped a large amount of stone from these wharves; so at a later day did Preston, Fernal & Co., and Wm. H. Knowlton.

As the business of the village increased and vessels of greater tonnage both for fishing and freighting were called for, the need of a larger and safer harbor was more urgent.

In 1829 the general government caused a survey of Sandy Bay to be made, having in view the construction of a breakwater at this place. A few years after this an appropriation of fifty thousand dollars was made by Congress and a breakwater was commenced on the easterly side of Long Cove. This work went on until seventy thousand dollars were expended. Some few years after Congress appropriated twenty thousand dollars to supply the deficiency. This work was not completed and was left in an unfinished state. The action of the sea leveled it somewhat, yet it makes quite a safe harbor in connection with the wharves that have since been erected by the Sandy Bay Pier Company at the head of the Cove, for our local business, but is of small importance to general commerce. Since the building of this breakwater the question has been agitated from time to time of a breakwater and harbor of refuge that shall be of sufficient capacity to accommodate the shipping interest of the North Atlantic coast. As one of the results of this agitation a public meeting was held in Haskins' Hall on the 29th day of March, 1882, and organized by the choice of chairman and secretary, and a committee were chosen to draft a petition to Congress asking for a survey of Sandy Bay, having in view the constructing of a breakwater and a harbor of refuge. A petition was drafted and copies thereof were circulated in the cities and towns along the Atlantic coast from Eastport to Baltimore. They were signed by a large number of ship owners, ship masters and others interested in commerce. As a result a survey was ordered and was made in 1883, under the direction of Major C. W. Raymond, of the corps of U. S. engineers. In his report made to the Secretary of War November 28, 1883, he recommended the building of a breakwater that will enclose one thousand three hundred and seventy-seven acres of water twenty-four feet deep at mean low tide. He estimated the cost four million dollars. Congress has appropriated two hundred thousand dollars to commence this work. The first load of stone was dumped from the sloop "Screamer," Capt. Albert Pittee, on the 12th day of November, 1885. The work is still in progress. General Thom, formerly United States Engineer, had previously called the attention of the government to this good work.

As one of the results of the stone business so extensively prosecuted here, two other small harbors have been constructed in Sandy Bay, and the largest is now the property of the Rockport Granite Company. It was commenced some sixty years since by Z. Green and continued by J. Wetherbee Eames, Stimson & Company and others until there are deposited in their breakwater more than one million tons of stone. They have also extensive wharf accommodation and dock room for quite a number of vessels.

The Pigeon Hill Granite Company, organized in 1870, immediately commenced the building of a breakwater and wharf, and at the present time they



have assumed such proportions as to accommodate their vessels with wharf and dock room, and also they have a good space occupied by paving cutters, well sheltered by sheds.

**FIRST SETTLERS.**—Richard Tarr was the first permanent settler of Sandy Bay. He came here about the year 1690, and built his log-cabin on the south side of Davison's Run (the brook that feeds what was Manning's Mill Pond, then empties into the sea), near the dwelling-house owned and occupied by Deacon Reuben Brooks many years; later by Wm. Knights, now deceased. It is said that he was born in the west of England about 1660. He spent several years in Saco previous to coming to Sandy Bay and two of his children were born there.

In April, 1697, he had a grant of about three or four acres of land where his house stood; and in 1701 another grant of ten acres adjoining on condition that he would support old Father Churchill during his life. Probably Tarr was induced to locate here in order to assist the loading of coasters with wood that was being shipped to Boston. He died about 1732, leaving an estate of three hundred and ninety-nine pounds and the following children: William, John, Elizabeth, born in 1691; Honour, 1693; Richard, 1695; Joseph, 1698; Benjamin, 1700; Caleb, 1703; Samuel, 1706; and Sarah, 1716.

He was buried upon a part of the land donated by him to the village for a burying-ground, which, with two or three lots since purchased by subscription, is the old cemetery of to-day. There was no monument to mark his resting-place until 1854, when the town erected a marble slab at a cost of fifty dollars. There are a large number of his descendants now living in this town, some fifty-six of the name appearing upon the tax-list for 1886.

John Pool, the next after Richard Tarr, was born in Taunton, England, about 1670, according to family tradition. He was a carpenter by trade, and resided in Beverly several years; he worked at his trade there with Richard Woodbury. After his death he married his widow.

He bought of John Emerson, Jr., in April, 1700, a certain farm at the Cape (Sandy Bay) for £160. (This land was on the westerly side Davison's Run.) Pool found but one family here (Richard Tarr), who had preceded him a few years. He, it is said, was a man of great industry and enterprise. He furnished the builders of Long Wharf, in Boston harbor, in 1710, with a large quantity of timber, which was transported thither on a sloop built by himself. He became possessed of a large landed property, sufficient to accommodate each of his sons with a farm. He sent his eldest son to school at Beverly, not only that he might be educated, but that he might be able to teach the younger children. He died May 19, 1727, aged about fifty-seven years, and left an estate of £2832. His first wife died November 13, 1716, aged about fifty-five years. His second wife was

Deborah Dodge, of Ipswich, who died February 1, 1718, aged about thirty-three years. His next wife was Elizabeth Holmes, of Salem, who survived her marriage less than two years. His fourth and last wife was Abigail Ballard, of Lynn, making the fourth wife he had within five years. His children were Jonathan, born in 1694; Miriam, 1695; Robert, 1697; Ebenezer, 1699; Joshua, 1700; (these were all by his first wife in Beverly); Caleb, 1701; John, 1703. By his last wife he had Return, 1722, and Abigail in 1725. The uncommon baptismal name Return is said to have been in commemoration of the joy with which he heard the relenting voice of Abigail Ballard bid him return, after she had once rejected him. (Turn's Orchard, the name of a field in town, was probably once owned by Return Pool.)

There are forty-four that bear the name of Pool upon the tax-list of 1886.

Pool and three of his wives were buried in his own land, now owned by Ephraim Nickerson. October 22, 1878, their remains were removed to the old cemetery. It was a matter of some interest to the small party assembled to witness this exhumation and reinterment. All that could be found was carefully gathered up and enclosed in a neat box, and deposited in what we trust is its last resting-place. The inscription on the old slate head-stone is:

"Here Lyes ye Body  
of Mr. John Pool,  
Aged about 57 Years.  
Died May ye 19th, 1727."

**EARLY SETTLERS AND OTHER FACTS OF INTEREST.**—Up to 1688 no general division or grant of any part of this territory of Gloucester had been made, but on the 27th of February of that year the town voted, that every householder and young man, upwards of twenty-one years of age, that was born in town, and that was then living in town and bearing charges to town and county should have six acres of land. Among the conditions annexed were that the inhabitants should be permitted to cut wood upon these lots for their own use; and the people have a free passage through them for certain purposes to the water side.

In accordance with this vote eighty-two lots, all numbered, beginning at Flat-Stone Cove, and terminating at Back Beach, Sandy Bay, were laid out to persons living on the easterly side of the cut.

Samuel Gott, weaver, came to Pigeon Cove from Wenham as early as October 23, 1702. He bought of William Cogswell, of Chebacco, for sixty pounds lawful money, eight six-acre lots, lying upon or near Halibut Point, and fixed his abode in that then remote section of the town. It appears that he was the first to settle at Pigeon Cove. His wife was Margaret, daughter of William Andrews of Ipswich. She died October 30, 1722, aged forty-six. He next married in 1723, Bethany Cogswell, of Ipswich, who died April 23, 1755, aged sixty-seven. Mr. Gott died November 3, 1758, about seventy-one years of age.





He had a large family of children. Some of his descendants have filled stations of the highest respectability and usefulness. Among them may be numbered Capt. John Gott, who was representative to the General Court two terms; and Lemuel, his son, a physician in his native town several years, and occupied other important positions and is now a practicing physician in Berlin, Mass.

Probably his house was the one now owned and occupied by Charles McLellan.

It seems that Samuel Gott had for a neighbor in 1707 William Andrews, a brother to his first wife; he located upon and owned Andrews' Point, hence the name.

About this time Joshua Norwood, another relative, bought a large tract of land in that vicinity, and in 1712 Jonathan Wheeler bought of Joshua Norwood about one hundred acres near Pigeon Cove for £150.

Joshua Norwood lived in a house that some of the later years was owned and occupied by Joseph Babson. Tradition says this house was built by two men of Salem for the purpose of concealing their mother, who was accused of witchcraft. This house is now in a good state of preservation.

About 1740 Joshua Norwood bought of the Chebacco fishermen their land at Straitsmouth and settled there with his son Joshua.

Several years elapsed before any new settlers were attracted to Sandy Bay. In 1704 Peter Emons was at or near the southern extremity, and within five or six years Peter Bennett was also at that locality. It seems that neither of them became permanent residents; the old cellars that were visible a few years since show where their houses once stood.

In the year 1708 the Commoners laid out in about six acre lots all the land from Long Cove to Cape Hedge one hundred and twenty-two in all. Lot No. 1 was at Allen's Head, at Long Cove; No. 122 extended to Cape Hedge. Bennett bought a number of these lots, and made his home here probably for the purpose of cutting and shipping his wood to market; likely Emons was engaged in the same business. In 1715 John Davis and his wife came from Ipswich. In 1719 Jabez Baker and wife came from Beverly; then came John Wonson; he married a daughter of Richard Tarr in 1720. Next came Edmund Grover from Beverly, and settled near Loblolly Cove. Then Samuel Clark, who in 1726 had a grant of one-half acre of land; then we hear of Joshua Kendall and Henry Witham and Thomas Draper, who married Sarah, daughter of Richard Tarr in January 6, 1733; next we hear of John Row, whose son and grandson were at the battle of Bunker Hill; Elias Cook, who came from Marblehead, and in 1734 had a grant of sixteen rods of land.

In 1738, in a petition of Jabez Baker, Benjamin Tarr, John Davis and others of the easterly part of the first parish of Gloucester ("Sandy Bay") to the General Court, for an allowance out of the Parish

treasury to support a minister during the winter months. They say: "By reason of the great mortality, we have had thirty-one of our pleasant children taken from us by death. We have reason to bless God for sparing so many. There is still living one hundred and forty persons." Mention is made of twenty-seven families as being all the village; two families, Caleb Pool and Jonathan, lost three children each; the disease was the malignant throat distemper; at this time it prevailed extensively in New England. Probably there were but three or four families in Pigeon Cove at this time.

Thomas Goss came to Sandy Bay in 1751, and married Mary Tarr. This Goss had a wonderful dog in later years. Goss, with another man and his dog, in the year 1774, went out of Sandy Bay for a day's gunning and fishing; a fresh breeze sprung up from the northwest, the boat's sails were torn and she was otherwise disabled, and was being drifted at the mercy of the wind and sea. A vessel came to their rescue and took the two men and dog on board, and landed them at some port on the Cheapeake Bay. Soon after their arrival the dog was missing. The men took passage on a vessel for Boston, where in due time they arrived, and from thence walked home. The dog, emaciated and worn, arrived two days before.

Some time after this, Goss, with his dog, was out fishing; while hauling a fish he broke off and came to the surface; the dog jumped overboard to get the fish, a shark attacked the dog—this was the last of that faithful animal.

John Blatchford was born in the southern part of England about the year 1702. In 1716, when the river Thames was frozen over beeves were roasted and eaten upon the ice. He was present with hundreds of men and boys. "After the gentlemen had finished their feast," as he himself used to say, "the boys were all bountifully supplied." At that time he was fourteen years old. Soon after this he came to Portsmouth, N. H., where he resided several years, and then went to Salem, Mass. He came to Sandy Bay about 1754. January 7, 1755, he married Rachel, daughter of Samuel and Elizabeth Clark. For many years preceding his death he was very infirm. They went to live with their daughter Rachel. Mrs. Blatchford died in 1800. Mr. Blatchford lived until 1809, when he died at the age of one hundred and seven years.

He had six sons and two daughters. Two sons died young. His eldest son, John, had a very hard experience in battle and in prison-ships in the Revolutionary War. His youngest son, Henry, died in Rockport in 1853, aged eighty-four years. A grandson, William, served on board the United States frigate "Congress" when eleven years old, and received a land warrant for that service when he was past seventy. He died January 20, 1864, aged seventy-six years. Another grandson, John, was Representative to the General





Court in 1834-35. There are quite a number of the descendants of the elder Blatchford still living here, among which is Eben, the leading apothecary for many years, and his son Eben, who succeeded him in the business.

Besides those already named as the first and among the first settlers of Sandy, there were others whose names are familiar at this day: James Parsons, 1744; Joseph Thurston, the first of the name in the village, resided several years at Pigeon Hill. His son Joseph settled here in 1754. Thomas Oakes was living here in 1748. The Harrises first located at Pigeon Hill previous to 1754.

	£	s.	d.	
"The province tax that year was.....	14	2	6	£47.00
Town tax.....	12	3	6	40.8
Total tax.....				87.87

In the year 1754 the whole number of tax-payers in Sandy Bay was thirty-seven, of whom, probably, more than one-half obtained their living by fishing and the others by cultivating the soil. Their fishing-boats were of but few tons, as at this time there were but two of sufficient value to be taxed. The village of Sandy Bay contained about one twenty-fourth of the whole taxable valuation of the town. The distance of these people from the town-school have forced them to rely chiefly upon their own exertions for the education of their children, and their remoteness from the meeting-house deprived a large portion of them of the advantage and enjoyment of public religious worship. A school-house was erected by them soon after 1725, when the commissioners granted them one acre of land near the centre of the village, on which to erect a house "to keep a good school in for the godly instruction of children, and teaching of them to read and write good English."

They also had preaching sometimes in the winter, and in 1740 obtained from the First Parish remission of one-third of their parish rates, on condition of supporting religious worship in their own village four months of the year. The First Parish was obliged by an act of the General Court to do this. Rev. Moses Parsons was their minister one winter; the names of the other ministers are not known.

The act of incorporation of the Fifth Parish, "Sandy Bay," received the approval of the Governor January 1, 1754.

The westerly line of the new parish extended from Cape Hedge to the highway near Beaver Dam, and thence in a northerly direction to the Squam Parish line.

The meeting-house was erected by the parish about the time of its incorporation. It stood near the head of Long Cove, and about forty feet in front of the present Baptist Meeting-house. It was about thirty-six feet square, two stories high; it had neither belfry nor steeple. On the south side was a porch, in which was the entrance to the audience-room, and a stairway leading to the gallery. The floor was furnished

with eighteen pews; each side the middle aisle, near the pulpit, were three long seats; the other space was occupied with seats; there was a gallery upon three sides of the room. It was taken down in May, 1805, just before the decease of the venerable pastor, who had so many years officiated as the pastor of the church and people.

The new church was organized February 13, 1755. The ministers of the First, Third and Fourth Churches, with delegates, were present to assist in the organization of this sister church. The following are the names of the members who were dismissed from the First Church to form the new: Edmund Grover, Jabez Baker, Nehemiah Grover, Henry Witham, Jonathan Pool, Samuel Davis, John Row, James Parsons, Jr., Samuel Clark, Jr., and Eleazer Lurvey. They selected for their minister Rev. Ebenezer Cleaveland, who was ordained in December, 1755, with a salary of sixty pounds per annum. In January following Edmund Grover and Jabez Baker were chosen ruling elders, and Henry Witham and Samuel Davis were chosen deacons. In forming themselves into a parish, the people of Sandy Bay assumed a pecuniary burthen of no small amount; and it is a fact in their history, which their descendants may remember with pleasure as an evidence of their religious character, that the salary paid their minister in 1755 was more than twice that of their town and province tax the year preceding. Mr. Cleaveland was a son of Josiah Cleaveland, of Canterbury, Conn., and was born in that town January 5, 1725.

About the year 1740 John Row, born in 1714, opened a tavern, and continued in that business quite a number of years; the tradition says held a commission as lieutenant and served in the Canada War of 1757. He was patriotic, as were his sons. John, the eldest, born in 1737, was a captain at the battle of Bunker Hill; his son John was his clerk. Another son, William, was also in the battle. Eben, the third son of Lieutenant John Row, lost one hand on board the "Yankee Hero," while attempting to capture the English frigate "Milford." For this casualty he received a pension for life. He died in Georgetown, Me., aged ninety-four or ninety-five years. Isaac, born 1762, another son of Lieutenant John Row by his second wife, Abigail, received a half-pay pension for services rendered privateering during the latter part of the Revolutionary War. He died January 2, 1852, aged ninety years.

His son Isaac engaged in privateering during the war of 1812-14. He died in Portland, Me., in 1857. Eben, another son of Lieutenant Row, served for a time in the Revolutionary War.

During the year 1754 the Widow Mary Gamage—born in Sandy Bay in 1717; her maiden-name was Norwood—returned from the State of Maine with her children, after an absence of several years. She engaged service as sexton of the church, and did service in the medical profession among her own sex



until 1797, when she removed to Bristol, Me, where she died in 1822, aged one hundred and five years. She was the widow of Nathaniel Gamage and the daughter of Joshua Norwood, born in 1783.

## CHAPTER CXII.

### ROCKPORT—(Continued)

#### ECCLESIASTICAL HISTORY.

*Rev. E. Cleveland—Rev. David Jewett—Rev. Wadsworth Gale—Rev. Wm. H. Leonard—Rev. James W. Cooper—Rev. Charles C. McIntyre—Rev. R. B. Howard—Rev. A. P. Newcross—Second Congregational Church—Pigeon Cove Chapel—Methodist Church—Universalist Church and Society—Second Universalist Society—Baptist Church and Society—Catholic Church—Protestant Episcopal Church.*

IN the year 1753 the citizens of Sandy Bay commenced to build a meeting-house near where the Mount Pleasant House now stands. The timber was hauled to the spot and was framed and ready to raise when, on account of dissatisfaction on the part of a considerable number of persons, the frame was removed in the night time (tradition says by women) to the southern part of what is now Baptist Square, and there it was erected. It was thirty-six feet square, two stories high; it had no tower or belfry. It fronted the south; on the front was a porch, though which was the entrance to the audience room and the galleries, which were upon three sides; the front gallery was occupied by the singers. Over the pulpit was a sounding-board; the pulpit was also furnished with an hour glass, by which the minister timed the service. The lower floor was furnished with eighteen pews, and each side of the middle aisle were three long seats for the aged men and women; there was a seat for the colored people (slaves), of whom there were several before the Revolutionary War; there was also a seat under or near the front of the pulpit for the deacons; here they deaconed all the hymns, one line at a time, for the singers. Captain Young and Thomas Dresser led the singing; they had no music-book or tuning-fork; they were guided wholly by the ear. The horse block stood near the eastern corner of the meeting-house, by which they were accommodated in mounting their horses,—man and wife rode the same horse; there was, at that time, hardly a carriage in the village. Previous to the building of the meeting-house, in fact, until January, 1754, when Sandy Bay was incorporated as the Fifth Parish of Gloucester, they were obliged to pay their tax to support preaching in the First Parish of Gloucester, of which it was a part; but for several years previous to 1754 the First Parish relinquished one-third part of the yearly tax of Sandy Bay, on condition that they support preaching by themselves four months of each year, which, for

several years, they did. Rev. Moses Parsons officiated one winter; there is the name of no other clergyman handed down except that Mr. Ebenezer Cleveland came to Sandy Bay in 1752, and preached in the log school-house, which set in the yard front of the present Congregational meeting house, a part of the time.

EBENEZER CLEVELAND was the first permanent minister; he was from Canterbury, Conn. (tradition says he preached a short time in Essex before he came here). A Congregationalist Church of ten members, dismissed from the First Church for this purpose, was organized February 13, 1755,—Edmund Grover, Jabez Baker, Nehemiah Grover, Henry Witham, Jonathan Pool, Samuel Davis, John Rowe, James Parsons, Jr., Samuel Clark, Jr., Eleazer Lurvey. Rev. Ebenezer Cleveland was ordained in December, 1755; his salary was sixty pounds per year, which was four times the amount of their town tax that year (exclusive of the frame for his dwelling-house). By vote of the parish the ministers that attend the ordination are to be entertained at the house of Samuel Davis; he to receive ten shillings (old tenor) for each man entertained; and Mr. Francis Pool was to procure a cushion for the pulpit previous to the ordination. We are left almost exclusively to conjecture as to the ministers that officiated on this all-important occasion. It is more than probable that Rev. John White, of the First Parish (then about eighty years of age), Samuel Chandler (then about forty), John Rogers, of the old town (then Fourth Parish), and Rev. Benjamin Bradstreet, of the Third Parish, were present. The exercises undoubtedly were of a very interesting character, the influences of which have extended to the present generation, and we trust will continue unto all coming time.

It seems that Rev. Mr. Cleveland was absent part of the years 1758, '59 and '60; this was the time of the French War, and he was, for a time, chaplain in the army, stationed near Lake Champlain.

And then, by consent of the church, he, in June, 1775, joined the Revolutionary army as chaplain, and the following winter was stationed at Dorchester Heights. He served also at Rhode Island and at other places.

On his return home he found his parish in a distressed condition; some had fallen in battle, others had died in prison-ships, many had perished at sea; nearly all the able-bodied men were absent in the army or on board of naval vessels or privateers. They were indebted to him for past labors, and the best they could do was to give him a salary of ninety quintals of hake-fish per annum.

He was therefore compelled to seek another field of labor, and accepted an offer to become superintendent of Dartmouth College lands at Llandoff, N. H.; also preaching in that and some of the neighboring towns until about 1785, when he returned to Sandy Bay, and preached to his former flock when





not otherwise engaged, for such contributions as they could raise for him.

After a few years he removed to Amesbury, Mass., and there preached until about 1797, when he came back to his old home and finished his days in the house which he built early in his ministry. (Said house has had a third story and an L added and other improvements. It is the Abbot House of to-day).

He preached at least once in the new meeting-house that was built in 1804 (and dedicated in October. Rev. Abiel Abbot preached the sermon), and baptized nineteen children. He died July 4, 1805, aged eighty years.

In all his private relations he was kind and loving, and his public duties were performed in such a manner as to give him the respect and affection of his people.

His virtues were subjected to severe trials, but he came from the ordeal with increased brightness. Unusual domestic troubles fell to his lot, but he kept his faith, and preserved a patient, serene and affectionate spirit to the end. He died with Christian resignation; trusting as he said, "in the same God who had protected him when the bullets were flying about his head on the field of battle," and resting "on the doctrines of free grace his hope of immortal glory."

He lies buried in the old Parish Burying-Ground; upon his grave-stone, besides the usual inscription are these lines,—

"Farewell, thou man of God! We saw thy grief;  
Not youth, nor heavy days produced relief;  
By painful crosses try'd, by sorrows prov'd,  
By good men honor'd, and by Jesus lov'd,  
Thy many years on earth, how I lament ran;  
A faithful pastor, and a pious man."

Mr. Cleaveland's wife was Abigail Stevens, of Canterbury, Conn. She died December 25, 1804, aged seventy-seven years. When expiring, she repeated the following lines:

"Mercy, good Lord! mercy I crave;  
This is the last I saw,  
For mercy, Lord, is all my suit,  
Lord, let thy mercy save."

They had twelve children, only three of which died in Sandy Bay. One great-granddaughter is now living here, Mrs. Wingood.

REV. DAVID JEWETT. — After being without a stated pastor more than twenty years, Rev. David Jewett, a young man of thirty years old, and a graduate of Dartmouth College, was called to the pastorate, and was ordained on the 30th day of October, 1805. At the time of his settlement the church had become almost extinct; there were but two male and eleven female members; they were well-advanced in years. For more than twenty-three years they had not met around the table of the Lord. The salary of the new minister was fixed at six hundred dollars each year.

The sermon at the ordination was preached by

Rev. Samuel Worcester, of Salem, Mass. Text was Jeremiah, third chapter, fifteenth verse, "And I will feed you pastors according to mine heart, which shall feed you with knowledge and understanding."

Notwithstanding the decline of the church and the long vacant pastorate, the year previous to the ordination of Mr. Jewett, there was built a large and commodious house of worship at a cost of nine thousand dollars. And this when the whole population of Sandy Bay, probably, did not exceed one thousand, and the whole taxable property as appears by the assessors' books did not exceed one hundred thousand. Some seven years previous a school-house was built by fifty-eight individuals at a cost of one thousand five hundred and sixty-six dollars; hence the name "proprietors' school-house;" therefore, notwithstanding the small number of church members and the low state of religion, consequent upon a so long vacant pastorate, there was within the people an inherent desire for the ministration of the word of God, and for the education of the children and youth.

Under the earnest and faithful labors of the new pastor the church soon regained its former position among the family of churches, and being blessed by revivals increased greatly in number and in spiritual strength. In the fall and winter of 1827 and '28 was the most powerful revival in the history of the church. One hundred and forty-one new members were the fruit of this one ingathering of souls. The whole number of members admitted during his ministry was three hundred and five. He found a church of thirteen members, and when he resigned, in 1836, he left one of two hundred and fifteen, strong and vigorous. From the earliest days of his settlement he adopted the custom of inviting the children to his house on Saturday afternoon for catechetical instruction. There are some few now living (1887), that were partakers of that privilege. The Sabbath-school was organized May 23, 1818. Deacon Jabez R. Gott was chosen superintendent, and served in that capacity thirty-two years, though not continuously. The others that have occupied that position are Joseph Bartlett, Deacon Thomas Giles, Dr. Lemuel Gott, James Haskell, Deacon Newell Giles, Reuben Brooks, John W. Marshall and Deacon Andrew F. Clark, the present incumbent.

Mr. Jewett married Rebecca Reed, of Marblehead. Four children were born to them: William R., who became an earnest and faithful preacher of the gospel; D. Brainard, who was a successful Boston merchant; Mary A., who married the Rev. Mr. Whitney, of Waltham; Elizabeth, now a resident of Boston.

His wife died at Waltham April 16, 1859, aged seventy-five.

Mr. Jewett, after leaving Rockport, made his home in Marblehead, and later at Waltham, preaching occasionally as opportunity offered. He died at Waltham, Mass., July 14, 1841, aged sixty-eight years. His remains now rest in the old Parish Burying-



Ground, in the town where his life-work was performed, and also those of his wife. The parish have erected a granite monument in token of their remembrance of his devotion to the welfare of the people to whom he so long ministered.

The monument alluded to is an elegant specimen of Rockport granite, fifteen feet in height, and is a fine specimen of workmanship. On one side is the name "Rev. David Jewett" in raised granite letters; on the other the following inscription inserted on a marble tablet:

"Born in Hollis, N. H., July 16, 1773.  
Graduated at Dartmouth College, 1801.  
Ordained Pastor of the Cong. Church,  
Oct. 30, 1805.  
Died at Waltham, July 14, 1841.

Distinguished for strict integrity, early simplicity, unity of purpose, untiring energy and self-sacrifice, in his devotion to the Church of Christ.

Living he enjoyed the respect and confidence of his people; dying, he left his memory embalmed in the warmest affection of their hearts.

This monument is gratefully erected by the church and society of which he was pastor more than thirty years."

REV. WAKEFIELD GALE, a graduate of Dartmouth, succeeded Rev. Mr. Jewett, and was installed on the 4th day of May, 1836. He was born in Pembroke, N. H., and had been pastor of a church at Eastport, Maine, ten years previous to his pastorate here. The installation sermon was by Rev. William M. Rogers, of Boston; his text, Mark 14th chap. 15th verse: "And he said unto them, Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature." The church was greatly blessed under his earnest and faithful labors of twenty-seven years, and it enjoyed several very interesting revivals of religion. In the year 1839 fifty-eight new members were added to the church. The fruit of another revival, in 1843, was an addition to the church membership of eighty-two persons.

During his entire pastorate three hundred and fifty-two were added to the church, nearly all on profession of their faith.

Mr. Gale was dismissed by council on the 10th day of February, 1864, after a very successful pastorate.

In 1859 the church edifice was thoroughly repaired, and improved by a new pulpit and pews, new windows and steeple, etc., at a cost of eight thousand dollars. The text of the last sermon in the house before the repairs was John 14th chap. 31st verse: "Arise, let us go hence;" and at the re-dedication, after the work was completed, was from 146th Psalm, 7th verse: "Return unto thy rest, O my soul, for the Lord hath dealt bountifully with thee."

No accident had taken place during all the months occupied in repairs and improvements.

His wife, Mary Louisa, died in Rockport, April 12, 1864, aged fifty-four years, an exemplary Christian and greatly beloved. Most of the time after he left town he made Easthampton, Mass., his home, and supplied the church at West Granville for a time. He was married twice after he left Rockport. He died at Easthampton, October 2, 1881, aged eighty-

five years, leaving a widow, two sons and one daughter, children of his first wife.

Himself, wife Mary Louisa, and five children are buried on his family lot in our Beech Grove Cemetery.

REV. WILLIAM H. DUNNING succeeded Rev. Mr. Gale, and was ordained on the 10th day of February, 1864. The sermon was preached by Rev. Nehemiah Adams, D.D., of Boston; the ordaining prayer by Rev. F. V. Tenney, of Manchester.

Mr. Dunning's pastorate was earnest and successful, though short and broken, on account of ill health. Its influence will be lasting.

After three years and a half, during which fifty new members were added to the church, he, on account of continued ill health, was compelled to resign his charge, and was dismissed by council on the 5th day of February, 1867.

He died on the 9th day of February, 1869, at Faribault, Minn., where he had gone in search of health.

REV. JAMES W. COOPER, the fifth pastor of this church, was ordained on the 10th day of September, 1868. The sermon was by Rev. J. M. Manning, of the old South Church, Boston; ordaining prayer by Rev. William M. Barbour, of Peabody. Rev. J. L. Jenkins, of Amherst, gave the charge to the pastor.

Mr. Cooper was a young man full of promise; his pastorate though short, was successful. The Sabbath-school increased in interest, and at its close numbered more than four hundred members. And the church May 1, 1870, had a membership of three hundred and nine.

He resigned his pastorate November 25, 1870. His letter was read by Rev. Will C. Wood, of Lanesville, and he was dismissed by council June 10, 1871. He is now and for several years past has been pastor of a large and influential church in New Britain, Conn.

He preached his farewell the last Sabbath of December, 1870.

REV. CHARLES C. MCINTIRE was the next called to the pastorate, and was installed by council December 28, 1871. Invocation by Rev. Charles Van Norden, of Beverly; reading of the Scriptures by Rev. Will C. Wood, of Wenham; sermon by Rev. George N. Anthony, of Peabody; installing prayer by Rev. George L. Gleason, of Manchester; charge to the pastor by Rev. C. R. Palmer, of Tabernacle Church, Salem; right hand of fellowship by Rev. S. W. Segar, of Gloucester; address to the people by Rev. S. C. Thacher, of Wareham; concluding prayer by Rev. W. H. Teel, of Lanesville.

Mr. McIntire's pastorate was rendered somewhat unpleasant by circumstances beyond his control. When he was called, the church edifice was undergoing very extensive repairs and improvements. The parish were holding their Sabbath services in the town hall. These repairs and improvements con-





sisted in sawing the meeting-house in two and adding to its length twenty feet, entirely stripping the inside of the pulpit, pews, all of the inside finish and the galleries, purchasing the pews, placing new windows,—in fact, thoroughly changing the interior and painting the exterior and removing the vesty and enlarging it; all this at a cost of about twenty-eight thousand dollars, including the purchasing of the pews. Then came a depression of the business of the town and financial failures; finally the debt, though reduced to about twenty thousand dollars, became a burden too heavy for the society to bear. The savings bank, holding a large mortgage upon the parish property, foreclosed and took possession. Thus the meeting-house was closed and the society were obliged to find some other house in which to meet for worship. They were accommodated by the Young Men's Christian Association opening to them the doors of their chapel and inviting them to enter, which invitation they gratefully accepted, and occupied the room, though too strait for them, several months. Mr. McIntire resigned the pastorate January, 1880, and was dismissed by council September 3, 1880.

REV. R. B. HOWARD, the seventh pastor of this church, was installed by council September 3, 1880. The order of service was as follows:

Invocation, by Rev. S. E. Andrews, of Lanesville.  
Reading of Scriptures, by Rev. John Capen, Methodist, of Rockport.  
Sermon, by Rev. F. B. Clark.  
Installing prayer, by Rev. George L. Gleason.  
Communion, by the pastor, by Rev. C. C. McIntire.  
Right hand of fellowship, by Rev. F. G. Clark, of Gloucester.  
Address to the people, by Rev. F. H. Boynton, of Essex.  
Concluding prayer, by Rev. L. S. Potter, East Gloucester.  
Benediction, by the pastor.

The same council dismissed Rev. C. C. McIntire. When Rev. R. B. Howard came to the church as a supply, they were holding service in the rooms of the Young Men's Christian Association. He soon became interested, and put forth efforts to repurchase the church property; these efforts found a response by members of the parish and friends out of town. The savings bank proposed to relinquish its claim upon the property on the payment of ten thousand dollars. Members of the society contributed with some degree of enthusiasm to this end, and friends out of town aided by their liberal contributions to a considerable extent; the money was raised and paid the bank; the parish again came in possession of the property, and have continued free from debt until the present time, 1887. Therefore, financially considered, Mr. Howard's pastorate was surely a success, and who will say that it was not also spiritually?

REV. A. F. NORCROSS was called to the pastorate of this church in the autumn of 1884. He took charge the first Sabbath in January, 1885, and was installed on the 13th day of February following, which was the one hundred and thirtieth anniversary of the organization of the church, he being

its eighth pastor. The order of installation was as follows: Invocation, by Rev. Arthur W. Tirrell, of Rockport; reading of Scripture, by Rev. Nathl. Richardson, resident; sermon, by Rev. W. J. Tucker, of Andover; installing prayer, by Rev. F. G. Clark, of Gloucester; right hand of fellowship, by Rev. Nehemiah Boynton, of Haverhill; charge to the pastor, by Rev. R. B. Howard, of Medford; address to the people, by Rev. Temple Cutler, of Essex; benediction, by the pastor. Mr. Norcross is a graduate of Dartmouth, and commences his labors under favorable auspices. The parish is free from debt, and church and parish united in his settlement, and at the present time, 1887, are enjoying a tolerable degree of prosperity. The regular services are quite well attended, the Sabbath-school is in a healthy condition, its sessions are quite well attended and it has a good library. Deacon Andrew F. Clark is superintendent; he is the ninth in succession to that office during the sixty-nine years of its history. The school has lately received from the heirs of our late respected townsman, John G. Dennis, a donation of five hundred dollars, thus following out the intention of their father, though he left no will.

SECOND CONGREGATIONAL CHURCH.—On the 15th day of March, 1855, a second Congregational Church of sixteen members was organized by an ecclesiastical council called for that purpose. Rev. A. B. Rich, of Danvers, was moderator, and Rev. Nathaniel Richardson, of Lanesville, was scribe. These sixteen persons were dismissed from the First Congregationalist Church in this town for the purpose of organizing a second church of the same order.

This was deemed necessary, as the attendance at the First Church was large, and had outgrown the seating capacity of their house of worship. At this time it was hardly possible to purchase or hire a pew (the pews were owned by individuals). This state of things may seem strange in this day; nevertheless, it is true.

The Rev. David Bremner, a young man and graduate of Andover, was called to the First Church the year previous, as associate pastor with Rev. Wakefield Gale, having then in view the organization of a second church, of which he would probably be the pastor.

Soon after its organization the church, by a unanimous vote, invited Mr. Bremner to become their pastor. The society also that had been legally formed in connection with the church concurred without a dissenting voice, and voted to pay him a salary of one thousand dollars per year.

Mr. Bremner accepted the call, and was ordained and installed on the 2d day of May, 1825. Rev. Daniel Fitz, of Ipswich, was moderator of the council, and Rev. A. H. Quint, of Jamaica Plain, was scribe. Eighteen churches were represented in the council. The order of exercises were: Introductory prayer, by Rev. A. H. Quint; reading of the Scriptures, by Rev. H. J. Patrick, of Bedford; sermon, by Rev. E. A. Park, D.D., of Andover; ordaining prayer, by





Rev. Wakefield Gale, of Rockport; charge to the pastor, by Rev. Lyman Whiting, of Reading; right hand of fellowship, by Rev. J. M. Manning, of Medford; address to the church and society, by Rev. J. E. Dwinell, of Salem; concluding prayer, by Rev. J. O. Murray, of Danvers; benediction, by the pastor.

Rev. Mr. Bremner resigned his pastorate October 13, 1863. The church, after holding several meetings and, by a committee chosen for that purpose, conferred with Mr. Bremner, reluctantly accepted his resignation. He was dismissed by an ecclesiastical council October 20, 1864—Rev. Wakefield Gale, moderator, and Rev. W. M. Barbour, scribe.

The council voted that the pastoral relation be dissolved. Then they say: "In coming to this result the council express their regret at losing one from among us with whom they have had so much pleasant intercourse, and who has been so faithful and useful, and so much beloved in this community, as well as by his own church and society, and they cheerfully commend him to the churches of our Lord Jesus Christ as an able, devoted and successful minister of the Gospel—sound in the faith, of a blameless life,—a diligent student and an affectionate pastor. We tender to him our undiminished affection and confidence, and wish him much happiness and success in the new field of labor to which Providence has called him."

The church of sixteen members during the ministry of Mr. Bremner grew to eighty.

After Rev. Mr. Bremner's resignation the pulpit was temporarily supplied until March 31, 1864, when, by a unanimous vote, the church and society invited Rev. L. H. Angier to become their pastor, and he accepted their invitation. His salary was fixed at \$1000 per year. He occupied that position until October, 1867, when he resigned his pastorate. He had not been installed by council.

On account of the War of the Rebellion and the decline of business and other circumstances, the church and society felt compelled to call an ecclesiastical council to advise with them, as it had become difficult to support preaching regularly. A council convened on the 21st day of October, 1868, and after due consideration advised the Second Church to dissolve their church organization and unite with the First Church. The Second Church voted not to dissolve, but would grant letters to any member who desired them. Under this vote numbers took letters to the First Church, some to the Methodist, and at a later day some to the church at Pigeon Cove. The First Church extended a cordial invitation to the members of the Second Church to unite with them.

The chapel of the Second Church, corner of Broadway and School Streets, was built by stockholders in the latter part of the year 1855, at a cost of about \$4000, including land. Previous to this the Second Society worshipped in the vestry of the First Church. After the dissolution of the society it was sold to the

Y. M. C. A., and by them at a later day to the I. O. O. F. They have raised it and placed another story under it, making it convenient for their use, and more attractive to the public eye.

On the 26th day of August, 1864, an ecclesiastical council was called to meet in Broadway Chapel for the purpose of ordaining Walter Harris Giles, a member of Second Congregational Church, as a missionary of the American Board of Foreign Missions. Rev. A. B. Rich, of Beverly, was moderator; Rev. Thomas Morong, of Lanesville, scribe. The sermon was by Rev. Edward E. Bliss, of Constantinople, Turkey; ordaining prayer by Rev. L. H. Angier, of the Second Church, Rockport; right hand of fellowship by Rev. William H. Dunning, of the First Church, Rockport; charge by Rev. J. C. Thacher, of the Evangelical Church, Gloucester; closing prayer, by Rev. John A. Vinton, of Boston; benediction, by Rev. W. H. Giles.

He died at Constantinople, Turkey, May 21, 1867, in the thirtieth year of his age. He was a son of Deacon Thomas and Mary Giles, of this town.

**PIGEON COVE CHAPEL.**—What is now the Pigeon Cove Chapel Church and Society (Congregationalist) originated from a Sunday-school that was organized in Woodbury's Hall (it was over the Union Store), May 31, 1857; there were about forty persons present, children and adults. Lyman B. Stockman (by whose efforts mainly the school was gathered) was chosen superintendent.

In the month of November the same year the school removed to what was a district school-house, before the public schools were reorganized. It was located near the residence of Beniah Colburn (now the residence of Alpheus Goodwin). The school continued at this place until 1869. When the chapel was built and dedicated it removed thither.

The most of the time while the school occupied the school-house a preaching service was held each Sabbath at five o'clock P.M., at which pastors of neighboring churches,—Congregationalist, Baptist and Methodist, of Rockport, and Congregationalist, of Lanesville—rendered valuable service. When such supplies failed a well-chosen sermon was read by the superintendent with good effect, or else the hour was occupied by a prayer and conference meeting.

While the school-house was occupied by the Sunday-school the town, who had purchased it of the school district, sold it to David L. Choate, for about three hundred dollars; and he soon sold it to Deacon J. R. Gott, Newell Giles and Elbridge Witham, for about the same amount. They allowed the school to occupy it seven years free of rent, then sold it to the school for one hundred and fifty dollars. After the chapel was built the school, by its trustees, sold the school-house and land to Beniah Colburn, for three hundred and forty-five dollars.

The chapel was built in 1868, at a cost, including land and furniture, of \$3696.92. It was dedicated in



January, 1869. Sermon by Rev. James W. Cooper, pastor of the First Congregationalist Church in Rockport. At this time there was a debt resting upon it of some one thousand two hundred dollars; by the efforts of the Ladies' Circle, by fairs and donations by friends of the institution, in 1871 the entire debt was canceled. In 1873 the addition of a tower was made, a bell was purchased and put in place and an iron fence was erected, at a cost of \$2475.08. By these improvements a debt of one thousand three hundred dollars was incurred; it was gradually reduced, until 1880, when it was about six hundred dollars. Special efforts were put forth, and friends came forward with their liberal contributions, and the entire debt was canceled. And none has since been incurred.

Sunday, August 24, 1873. For the first time the inhabitants of Pigeon Cove were called to worship by the ringing of the church bell.

March 20, 1874. A church of nineteen members was organized, under the name of the "First Church of Christ at Pigeon Cove."

September 22, 1874. This church was recognized by a council of churches, duly called, as a church of Christ in good and regular standing and fellowship with other Congregationalist Churches. Rev. E. S. Atwood, D.D., of the Crombie Street Church, Salem, was moderator of the council, and Rev. C. C. McIntire was scribe. Rev. Chandler Robbins, D.D., of Boston, preached the sermon. Rev. Daniel P. Noyes was acting pastor.

This year there was organized and incorporated an ecclesiastical society in connection with the church to manage its financial affairs.

The land was purchased and the chapel built in the name of the Sabbath school, the business being managed by three trustees chosen by the school. The trustees in 1883, by vote of the Sabbath-school, deeded the chapel, land and furniture to the church and society.

A few weeks after the organization of this school Mr. Stockman received an invitation to teach a school in Illinois. He left the Sunday-school in the charge of John W. Marshall, who continued to be its superintendent twenty-four years. Since his resignation Andrew F. Clark, Wm. W. Marshall and Samuel L. Lamson, who is the present incumbent, have at times occupied that position.

Mr. Stockman returned home in the summer of 1858, in poor health. He died at the home of his sister, Mrs. Albert Wheeler, November 27th of the same year, respected and beloved. This church and society have never been privileged with a settled pastor.

The ordinances of religion have quite regularly been administered. Rev. Daniel P. Noyes was its stated supply about three years. Rev. Elijah Kellogg about the same length of time. Rev. R. B. Howard about two years. Rev. S. B. Andrews about

three years. The other years the pulpit has been occupied by different clergymen Sabbath by Sabbath. The present supply (1887) is Rev. Wm. W. Parker. The services are generally well attended; the Sabbath-school is in a healthy condition and it has a good library.

There are at the present time three preaching services held in this chapel each Sabbath, in three different languages,—English the regular service; then the Finlanders hold their service, some thirty worshippers; then the Swedes, quite a congregation. Each of them have a minister of their own order.

**METHODIST EPISCOPAL CHURCH AND SOCIETY.**—The Methodist Episcopal Church of this town had its origin in a class formed by Rev. Aaron Linnatus, the preacher of the Gloucester Harbor Church in 1831. He found here Sister Mrs. Nicy Cleaves (now Parsons) and her husband, Captain Levi Cleaves, who was not then a professor of religion, but he soon became a subject of saving grace, and joined the society and has held every office in the gift of the church with honor to himself, and with an eye single to the glory of God. He died in the triumph of Christian faith June 16, 1865, aged fifty-eight years and nine months.

The first class was composed of the following members: Levi Cleaves, Nicy Cleaves, John Cleaves, Aaron Cleaves, Solomon Tarr, Hatty Tarr, Charles Wormwood, Zacheus Roberts, Lois Pool, Rhoda Cleaves and Betsey Tarr. All of them have passed over the river except Mrs. Nicy Cleaves (now Parsons) and Rhoda Cleaves (now Rowe). This class was connected with the Gloucester Harbor Church until the year 1838, when it was set off as a circuit with Town Parish, under the charge of Rev. L. B. Griffin. This year a church edifice was erected and dedicated by the pastor, and the next year was set apart as a separate charge with Rev. Israel Washburn pastor.

The successive leaders of the class were Charles Wormwood, Levi Cleaves, John Cleaves, Moses Cleaves, J. B. Stillman.

A revival of religion attended the labors of Mr. Washburn, and he reported for the year 1839 thirty-five members and sixteen probationers. He was succeeded in the charge by Revs. Thomas G. Brown, John P. Bradley and Daniel Richards.

The next pastor, Rev. Charles O. Towne, induced the society in 1843 to join the Wesleyan church, owing to dissatisfaction growing out of the anti-slavery discussion, but in the summer of 1858 the society returned to their first love.

The services of Rev. Elijah Mason were now secured, who labored successfully until 1863, who found him a good preacher, a faithful pastor and a sympathizing friend. He remained in town after leaving his charge, until called from the scenes of his earthly labors to the "rest that remaineth to the people of God."





The next in charge was Rev. Joseph Gerry, who remained one year, and was succeeded by Rev. A. B. Wheeler. He was followed by Rev. J. A. Ames, who was abundant in labors during the three years of his ministry, during which the church edifice was built on Broadway at a cost of \$16,000. It was dedicated April 14, 1869. Rev. J. A. M. Chapman preached the sermon. Fairer prospects now opened to the church and a goodly share of spiritual prosperity was realized. Rev. W. D. Bridge followed Mr. Ames, and he was succeeded by Rev. C. C. Merrill, whose labors encouraged and strengthened the church. He was followed by Rev. Samuel Roy. After seven months of faithful labor he was stricken down with typhoid fever, and passed to his reward. The remainder of the conference year was supplied by Rev. M. B. Cummings. He was returned to the charge at the next conference. On Sabbath morning, May 2, 1875, the church edifice was destroyed by fire, the cause of which is still unknown. This was a serious loss to the church. There was supposed to be \$10,000 insurance upon the building, but from untoward circumstances only one half of the above sum was realized, and when the indebtedness of the society was met there remained only about \$3000.

At a meeting of the society to consider the question of re-building their house of worship \$1000 was subscribed for that purpose.

The present house, built upon the site of the last, cost about \$9000, and the debt remaining upon it now (1880) is \$3500. Mr. Cummings was followed by Rev. W. A. Braman, who was succeeded by Rev. W. Silverthorne. The labors of these brethren were a great blessing to the church. Rev. John Capen was the next pastor. Rev. Alfred Noon succeeded him and served one year. After him was the present pastor, Rev. A. W. Tirrell, now (1887) closing his third year. He has labored earnestly and faithfully with good success. During his pastorate the church and congregation have increased; the church edifice upon the outside has been painted, and the society freed from debt, which last event was celebrated in a becoming manner on the 13th day of April, 1886, on which occasion several of the past pastors of the church were present; several clergymen of other denominations also joined in this interesting service, a prominent feature of which was the burning of the mortgage deed and note.

They have now (May, 1887), a neat and pleasant house of worship, and a flourishing Sabbath-school, of which Daniel Coath is superintendent. The school is furnished with a good library. There is also a fair attendance upon the services of the church, preaching, &c., &c., and are free from debt. Mr. Tirrell's pastorate of three years, expired April, 1887. Rev. John H. Mansfield succeeds him, and is now pastor.

FIRST UNIVERSALIST SOCIETY.—The Universalist Society in Sandy Bay was organized February 27, 1821, by the name of the Universalist Benevolent

Society of Gloucester. Aaron Pool, Solomon Pool, John Manning, Francis Pool, Moses Colbey and Daniel O. Marshall, who were members of the Independent Christian Society of Gloucester Harbor; William Norwood, Charles Norwood, Jr., David Babson, David Wheeler, William Norwood, Jr., and Eben Norwood, who were members of the Third Parish (Annisquam Society), with others, constituted its membership. Previous to this, services of the Universalist order were held in this village. Rev. Thomas Jones, of Gloucester Harbor, preached several Sabbaths in the meeting-house built by the parish in 1804, which, by an understanding with the Congregationalists, they were to occupy two-fifths of the time; but after some months of this way of occupying the house, the Universalists were denied the privilege, and were not allowed its use. This act resulted in a suit at law, which, after being before the court several years, was decided in favor of the Congregationalists (or the parish, as it was called), they to have the exclusive use and occupancy of the meeting-house.

After they were refused admission to the house as a society, they worshipped in a school-house that stood on the present site of the Sandy Bay house stable and hall. The clergymen that officiated the most frequently were Revs. J. H. Bugbee, J. Gilman, J. P. Atkinson, Hosea Ballou and Lafayette Mace. The meeting-house was built in 1829, at a cost of about three thousand dollars.

The corner-stone was laid with Masonic ceremonies June 24th. It was dedicated October 8th of the same year; dedicatory sermon by Rev. Thomas Jones, of Gloucester. Rev. Lafayette Mace preached a few months in the new house; he was succeeded by Rev. Lucius R. Page. The succession of ministers has been as follows: 1832, Rev. B. B. Mussey; 1835, Rev. A. C. L. Arnold; 1837, Rev. Charles Spear; 1839, Gibson Smith; 1841, Rev. John Allen; 1844, Rev. H. C. Leonard; 1846, Rev. E. W. Locke; 1849, Rev. S. C. Hewett; 1850, Rev. H. Van Campen; 1853, Rev. A. C. L. Arnold; 1856, Rev. Wm. Hooper; 1858, Rev. J. H. Farnsworth; 1861, Rev. Stillman Barden; 1867, Rev. George H. Vibbert; 1872, Rev. Allen P. Folsom. Rev. B. G. Russell was acting pastor July 1, 1875; was ordained on the evening of August 5. The Association of Boston Universalists met here on that day; it was an appropriate time for an ordination. The services were as follows: Invocation, by Rev. C. C. Clark, of Pigeon Cove; reading of the Scriptures, by Rev. T. W. Ilman, of Philadelphia; sermon, by Rev. J. M. Atwood, of North Cambridge, from Luke xi. 23; ordaining prayer, by Rev. E. H. Chapin, D.D., of New York; charge to the pastor, by Rev. D. Sawyer; fellowship of the churches, by Rev. Richard Eddy, D.D., of Gloucester; benediction, by the pastor. He continued in the pastorate several years, and was succeeded in 1880 by Rev. Edwin Davis, who was pastor some four years. Rev. Lorenzo Haynes was



pastor from November, 1884, to March 1, 1887, since which time they have had no settled pastor.

This society was incorporated April 6, 1839, by the name of the Second Universalist Society of Gloucester. February 8, 1845, its name was changed to the First Universalist Society of Rockport (by act of the General Court). In the year 1868 the meeting-house was renovated and improved by putting in a new pulpit, new pews and windows, thoroughly changing the interior. The house was enlarged by the addition of pastor's study and organ-loft; a new tower and spire was erected, changing to a considerable extent the exterior of the house. The cost of all the improvements and repairs was more than nine thousand dollars. This caused a large debt, which hung heavily upon the society. But it has been gradually decreasing, until now it is of quite small proportions, and is easily handled. They have an interesting Sabbath-school, of which James W. Bradley is superintendent, and has occupied that position some twenty years. They have a good library.

**SECOND UNIVERSALIST SOCIETY.**—In the year 1861, August, a Sunday-school of the Universalist denomination was organized in the engine-house hall of the Pigeon Cove Engine Company. There were twenty persons present; Austin W. Story was chosen superintendent, and has been re-elected to that position each year until the present time (1887). The number now connected with the school is seventy-five; they have a library of six hundred volumes. After occupying the engine-hall for a time, they removed to a building that was Edmunds' bowling-alley, then to Edmunds' Hall where they maintained preaching to a considerable extent. March 21, 1869, a religious society was organized in connection with the Sunday-school, by the name of the Pigeon Cove Universalist Association. February 28, 1878, an act of incorporation was obtained, and the name of the society was changed to the "Second Universalist Society of Rockport."

In the year 1873 they built a neat and commodious meeting house, at a cost of \$19,542 13. It was dedicated to the worship of God on the 12th day of June, 1873. Rev. Richard Eddy, D.D., of Gloucester, preached the sermon.

This society has had no pastor installed. The following are the names of those clergymen that have officiated from time to time: Rev. A. A. Folsom was the first to supply the pulpit; next was Rev. C. C. Clark, from 1874 to 1875; Rev. Robert C. Lansing, from 1876 to 1878; Rev. George H. Vibbert, from June, 1878, to July, 1879; Rev. B. G. Russell, from July, 1879, to May 30, 1880; Rev. Edwin Davis, from July, 1880, to April 22, 1884; Rev. Miss L. Haynes, from September 28, 1884, to March 22, 1885; Rev. Nathan R. Wright, July, August and September, 1885, since which date the pulpit has been supplied the most of the Sabbaths by transient clergymen.

Rev. E. H. Chapin, D.D., of New York, who made

Pigeon Cove his summer home many years, supplied the pulpit of this church gratuitously one Sabbath of each year, so long as his health allowed.

The funeral services of several of the most prominent citizens of the village have been held in this house. These services tend to increase the usefulness of a house of worship.

**BAPTIST CHURCH.**—The Baptist Church in Sandy Bay, Gloucester, was constituted in 1807, with some few members, some of whom belonged to Gloucester proper. The society began to form about 1805 or 1806. Rev. Elisha Scott Williams, of Beverly (Baptist), preached in the new Congregationalist meeting-house once before Mr. Jewett came to Sandy Bay.

The Baptist Society was incorporated in the year 1811, by the name of the First Baptist Society of Gloucester; no settled pastor until 1819 or 1820. The first person baptized by immersion in Sandy Bay was James Woodbury, March 10, 1805, by Rev. Elisha Scott Williams, of Beverly.

Captain Benjamin Hale, born in Sandy Bay in 1776, was the prime mover of the Baptist order in this village. He was converted on shipboard, about the year 1800, while on a voyage from Bristol, England, to Madeira. They encountered a heavy gale of wind; the brig was considerably damaged and was obliged to put back for repairs; a part of her cargo was contraband; the captain conscientiously refused to complete the voyage with such a cargo; the owners put the mate in charge; the brig was partially repaired, sailed and was never heard from. Captain Hale took passage for Alexandria, Va.; on the voyage the captain of the vessel became disabled and Captain Hale brought her safely into port. He was awake to his religious principles, and in 1811 was licensed to preach the Gospel. He was married in New York, in 1804, to Judith White, of Sligo, Ireland, with whom he became acquainted at her home. He was baptized in New York. After a few years on shore he again took to the sea, and in 1817, while on the passage home, he, in a gale of wind, went aloft, the crew refusing to go; he received an internal injury, which terminated in consumption; he died in 1818, aged forty-two years. Previous to the building of the meeting-house, even before the act of incorporation, they held meetings in private houses, often in the house of Eben'r Pool.

James A. Boswell was settled the first pastor of this church, in 1820. He preached in an unfinished hall; it was the second story of the house next east of the now Eureka Hall. He taught school during the week in the same room. The Sabbath-school was organized in 1821. Their meeting-house was built in 1822; it was occupied for preaching service without pews until 1828, when it was furnished with pews, and a number of them were sold on the 4th day of July, the same year. The cost of the house, with the land and pews, was two thousand two hundred and eighty-four dollars.





March 10, 1840, name changed to the First Baptist Church and Society of Rockport.

The following named have served as pastors:

Rev. James A. Boswell.....	1820	to	1823
Rev. Reuben Curtis.....	1827	"	1830
Rev. Bartlett Pease.....	1831	"	1833
Rev. Otis Wing.....	1833	"	1836
Rev. Gibben Williams.....	1837	"	1838
Rev. Benj. Knight.....	1839	"	1840
Rev. Otis Wing.....	1840	"	1842
Rev. Levi B. Hathaway.....	May, 1843, died Aug. 1, 1843		
Rev. B. N. Harris.....	1844	to	1846
Rev. Samuel C. Gilbert.....	1846	"	1848 <sup>1</sup>
Rev. Thomas Driver.....	March, 1849	"	1849
Rev. George Lyle.....	1850	to	1852
Rev. Thomas Driver.....	1852	"	1854
Rev. A. E. Battelle.....	1855	"	1856
Rev. J. M. Driver.....	1856	"	1859
Deacon Samuel Cleaver.....	1860	"	1861
Rev. Benj. T. Lane.....	1863	"	1867
Rev. Lewis Holmes.....	1867	"	1869

Rev. Otis L. Leonard was ordained September 22, 1869. Order of exercises were as follows:

<i>Invocation</i> .....	By Rev. W. D. Bridges, of the M. E. Church.
<i>Reading the Scriptures</i> .....	By Rev. J. C. Foster, of Beverly.
<i>Opening Prayer</i> .....	By Rev. Mr. Gannett, of East Gloucester.
<i>Sermon</i> .....	By Rev. Justin D. Fulton, of Boston.
<i>Closing Prayer</i> .....	By Rev. S. H. Pratt, of Salem.
<i>Right Hand of Fellowship</i> .....	By Rev. T. J. Emerson, of Gloucester.
<i>Charge to the Pastor</i> .....	By Rev. T. L. Vassar, of Lynn.
<i>Charge to the Church</i> .....	By Rev. Harvey Fitz, of Melburn.
<i>Closing Prayer</i> .....	By Rev. Wm. M. Lyle, a returned Missionary.
<i>Benediction</i> .....	By the Pastor.

The exercises were of a high order. He served until September, 1874; he then resigned and was dismissed.

Rev. A. J. Lyon.....	1876	to	1876
Rev. E. D. Bowers.....	1878	"	1881
Rev. George A. Cleaveland.....	1882	"	1884
Rev. N. B. Wilson.....	March, 1885,	Feb'y,	1885

During the years 1866-67, they enlarged their meeting-house lot by purchasing an additional piece of land. They raised the house several feet above the foundation, and moved it from fronting on High Street, to its present location, fronting on Mount Pleasant Street, and added to its length twenty feet. They completely renovated the interior and furnished it with a new pulpit and furniture, new pews; walls and ceiling at a later day were neatly frescoed, making a very neat and pleasant audience-room. A small vestry was constructed over the vestibule. A new tower and steeple was erected, and at a later day was furnished with a bell. The exterior of the house was put in good condition by carpenters and painters. The whole cost of these improvements was more than six thousand dollars, which was all paid at the time except thirteen hundred dollars, which sum did not long remain unpaid. The society has been free from debt until the present time.

The ordinances of religion are supported now and for several years last past by free-will offerings.

The church edifice was re-dedicated April 10, 1867; sermon by Rev. Benjamin J. Lane, who was pastor about three years, closing July, 1867.

They have now no settled pastor, but religious services are regularly held, preaching by supply pastors.

The Sabbath-school is in good condition; membership, one hundred; library, three hundred volumes.

Nathaniel Richardson, Jr., superintendent, now on his fifteenth year of service.

**CATHOLIC CHURCH.**—Up to the year 1830 our population was nearly all native born; even at a later date there were but few foreigners who made their home with us. In 1850 there were quite a number of foreigners, most of them Catholics; therefore the necessity of a service of that order. The first Mass celebrated in this town was in what is now Eureka Hall, in the year 1850; Rev. Father John McCabe, of Salem, officiated.

In 1856 the Catholic population had increased to such an extent that there was a necessity for their erecting a house of worship. Quite a number traveled to Gloucester Sabbath after Sabbath to attend the service of their order. Their chapel was built on Broadway, and opened for service in 1856. Rev. Thomas Shehan, of Salem, was earnest and active in erecting this house of worship, the cost of which, with the land, was about three thousand dollars.

Rev. Luigi Acquarone was the first ministering priest here; his parish encircled the cape. He was a gentleman highly respected. With the rapid increase of the foreign population, which was largely Catholics, the labor required was more than Father Acquarone could perform. Rev. Thomas Barry was appointed to the charge of the society here; he continued in service until his death, which occurred after a short illness in January, 1883. Rev. Daniel S. Healey immediately succeeded Mr. Barry, and is now the ministering priest in this town and at Lanesville.

Soon after he came in charge of the work here he set about enlarging and improving their house of worship, making it more convenient and attractive, both the exterior and interior presenting a more favorable appearance. The whole cost of the improvement was thirty-six hundred dollars, which has been paid.

The Sabbath-school numbers one hundred members, and is an interesting and useful institution. All their Sabbath services and also services on other set days are well attended.

**PROTESTANT EPISCOPAL CHURCH.**—The first effort to establish Episcopal Church service in this town was, as far as is known, in the year 1872. Services were held several months this year in the rooms of the Y. M. C. A., but were discontinued on the approach of winter. The services were conducted by Rev. D. Reid, rector of St. John's Church, Gloucester.

In the month of July, 1878, services were again

<sup>1</sup> Died Sept. 1, 1849.





commenced and continued until late in October, each Sunday, in Eureka Hall. The officiating clergyman was the Rev. William R. Hooper, rector of St. John's Church, Gloucester. On the afternoon of July 15th the Rt. Rev. Benjamin H. Paddock preached the sermon.

There were only occasional services of this order held in this town from October, 1878, to November, 1885, except a lay service has been held during the summer months since 1878 at the cottage of Mr. Eben C. Millett, on Phillips Avenue, Pigeon Cove. In November, 1885, a service was held in Haskins Hall, conducted by Rev. John S. Beers. The next Sunday service was held in Rechabite Hall, presided over by Emil Charles Pfeiffer; these services have now become a fixed institution.

A regular organization was effected on the 7th day of May, 1886, by the name of St. Mary's Mission; it comprised nineteen members, viz.:

Otis E. Smith.	Reginald R. Colley.	Frank H. Perkins.
Frank Wilson.	T. T. H. Harwood.	Luther C. Tibbets.
Charles Tresnon.	Fanny U. C. Sanborn.	James Moore, Jr.
Mrs. Rosa Ann Morse.	Delia F. Smith.	O. S. C. O'Brien, M. D.
Mrs. Abbie Tibbets.	Mary L. Tibbets.	Charles F. Mills.
Eliza T. Lane.	Fannie C. Tupper.	Cora A. Pickering.
John Moore.		

Otis E. Smith was elected warden. A Sunday-school is connected with the mission. Reginald R. Colley is superintendent.

## CHAPTER CXIII.

### ROCKPORT--(Continued).

*Revolutionary War--Lewistown--Great Snow Storm--Sickens--Fishing--Fire Department--War of 1812--Temperance and Moral Reform--Fires--Manufactures--Post office--Stone Quarrying--Rockport Bank--Rockport Savings and Grants Societies Bank--Customs--Incorporation of Sandy Bay--Festivities of July Celebration, 1854--Schooners--Rockport Railroad*

**REVOLUTIONARY WAR.**—The villages of Sandy Bay and Pigeon Cove gradually increased in population and resources. There were a few Grand Bankers; the in-shore fishing boats that were from eight to fifteen tons had increased to considerable numbers; there were a few rudely cultivated fields yielding a meagre harvest. Fishing was the leading interest. The people had, amid these scanty resources, gradually struggled up to a position of comparative importance.

They had their meeting-house and minister, their school-house and teacher, their selectmen some of the years, and minor officials,—all this betokening progress and improvement.

The rude blast of war is heard along the coast; it comes like a mildew upon the budding prospects of these villagers. Soon the channels of business begin to close; the larger vessels, the Grand Bank schooners, are docked. The active and hardy

men, the bone and sinew of the village, are turned from their peaceful pursuits to those of war. The minister, after serving the people twenty years as their pastor, except occasional intervals of absence when he was serving as chaplain in the French War, again yields to the circumstances of war, and enlists in the service of his country, as chaplain and surgeon's mate, first at Dorchester, then in Rhode Island and at other places, and so continued, except with occasional visits to his people, for about three years. At the expiration of his term of service he returned to his little flock, who had long mourned the absence of their spiritual guide and teacher. They were able, on account of the disastrous effects of the war, to pay him a salary of only ninety quintals of hake-fish yearly. He continued with them two years, and on account of the small amount of salary, and probably anticipating no increase on account of the continued poverty of the people, he was dismissed at his own request in 1779, and removed to Coos County, New Hampshire, where tradition says that he had a settlement of one thousand acres of land. His goods and furniture were packed in an ox-cart which he purchased of Captain Dodge of the Pigeon Hill farm. The journey to his new home consumed some seven or eight days.

In the month of April, 1775, some twenty boats were on the in-shore fishing-grounds, when they received news that the British were marching on Concord. They immediately weighed anchor and sailed for home, and before night almost every man was at Gloucester Harbor, armed and equipped with such guns and arms as came to hand, and were ready to march upon the enemy. Soon news was received that the battle had been fought, and the enemy were retreating towards Boston. The most active men readily enlisted in the service of their country; the old men and boys incapable of entering the service remained at home and engaged in fishing or cultivating the soil. They were obliged to dispose of their fish for barter or for greatly depreciated paper money, which was, sometimes during the war, sold for 2s. 6d. on the pound. In one instance, a soldier sent his wife his month's pay, and this she exchanged for one bushel of meal. About 1779 no grain could be purchased in this vicinity, and a young man was sent to Beverly to purchase a few bushels of barley.

Salt for several years of the war was very dear—therefore, sometimes fish were imperfectly cured. Mr. William Norwood conceived the idea of salting fish in hogsheds, and thus make a saving of salt. His plan was quite a success, and was soon adopted by all. This practice has continued to a very great extent to the present day. Previous to this, the practice was to salt fish in bulk, or, as sometimes termed, dry-salted.

This village was well represented at the battle of Bunker Hill; a company of sixty-six men, including officers, it is said, were enlisted by Daniel B. Tarr, its



orderly-sergeant. They met for drill at his house, which is now (1887) the home of George W. Legaller, whose wife is a granddaughter of Sergeant Tarr. He, patriot as he was, gave up the command to John Rowe.

This company left town Monday, June 12th, going through Wenham on their way to the camp. On the 16th they reached Mystic River, and on the afternoon of that day took up their line of march from that place. About dark they halted. In a short time, by the yet lingering twilight, they saw a large number of soldiers approaching, who were soon found to be a detachment from the army at Cambridge. As soon as they came up, Captain Rowe's company joined them, and the whole body moved towards Breed's Hill. On their arrival they silently set to work with picks and spades to throw up intrenchments. When the redoubt was finished, and while the enemy were landing, Captain Rowe, with a part of the company, was dispatched to carry off the tools. On their return, these men were ordered to the extreme left wing of the provincial troops, near Mystic River. It thus happened that the company was divided, and was not again united during the day. Ensign Cleveland and Sergeant Haskins remained in the redoubt with one part, while Captain Rowe and Lieutenant Pool, with the other, were on the left of the line—some assisting in building the rail-fence as a protection from the bullets of the enemy, and others at the end of the line on the bank of the river, building up a small breast-work with stones and dirt. They were thus engaged till the English advanced, about three o'clock p. m. Major McCleary gave them particular directions how to act; they were to load and fire with one knee upon the ground, and, after the first volley, not to wait for orders, but to load and fire as fast as possible, taking care not to throw away any shot by firing at too long a distance. The enemy, as is well known, were repulsed twice, but, at the third attack the ammunition at the redoubt gave out.

A retreat was ordered, and the troops at the rail-fence joined in it. They retreated that night to Ploughed Hill. Three of Captain Rowe's company were killed in the battle and two were wounded. Francis Pool and Josiah Brooks were killed at the rail-fence, while in the act of firing. William Parsons was killed at the redoubt. Daniel Doyle was hurt by a ball, which passed through the palisade, struck him in the breast, broke a button off his clothing, but did not enter his body. William Foster was wounded in the retreat, in the wrist. Sergeant Haskins had two cartridges left when he retreated from the post, but he fired them upon the enemy when he got to the rail-fence.

Seventeen of this company were under twenty-one years of age, five only over thirty, none over forty. The youngest was William Lowe, a lad of fourteen; John Rowe, Jr., a son of the captain, was sixteen.

### *Roll of Captain Rowe's Company.*

John Rowe, captain.	Joseph Lane.
Mark Pool, lieutenant.	James Latvey.
Ebner, Cleveland, ensign.	Francis Lane.
Daniel Barber Tarr, sergeant.	Samuel Low.
William Haskins, sergeant.	Henry Morgan.
Ebner, John, sergeant.	Henry Parsons.
William Foster, sergeant.	Hugh Parkhurst.
Jonathan Rowe, corporal.	Joseph Parsons.
Thomas Finson, corporal.	Jeffrey Parsons.
John Gott, corporal.	John Rowe, Jr.
William Low, corporal.	Joshua Rowe.
Benj. Davis, drummer.	Peter Richardson.
Isaac Haskell, fife.	William Rowe.
Jacob Allen.	Daniel Smith.
Obadiah Atkins.	John Smith.
David Averill.	Ephraim Shekden.
Eliazer Butman.	John Tarr.
Daniel Butler.	John Tarr, Jr.
Daniel Crago.	Jabez Tarr.
Henry Clark.	James Tarr.
David Doyle.	William Woodbury.
Donatus Davis.	Ebenezer Witham.
Samuel Clark.	Spencer Thomas.
Joseph Dresser.	Jonathan Parsons.
Richard Dresser.	Peter Emmons.
Thomas Dresser.	Thomas Edes.
Caleb Elwell.	John Youdin.
James Phips.	John Parrot.
Ebenezer Gott.	Joseph Low.
Joshua Gore.	Aaron Riggs.
Bennet Haskins.	Francis Pool.
William Juniper.	Josiah Brooks.
John Clark.	Wm. Parsons.

Soon after the battle of Bunker Hill an English brig was seen at anchor in the fog between Straitsmouth Island and Thachers. About fifteen men manned a boat in Long Cove, and were soon alongside of the brig. They had taken the precaution to keep most of the men below deck. They suddenly surprised the crew and boarded the brig and took her into Whirlpool dock. She had a deck-load of cattle, ammunition and provisions under deck. The cattle were driven to Gloucester harbor and sold at auction; the brig was taken to Squam River and was finally cut up. One of the crew, Thomas Knutsford, married at Pigeon Cove and settled just to the westward of Pigeon Hill. He married a daughter of Wm. Andrews, who lived upon and owned the land that received his name, "Andrews Point." A number of his descendants are now living here. This was said to be the first prize taken in this war.

In the month of May, 1776, twelve men of Sandy Bay saw a vessel in the offing which they supposed was an English cartel or supply ship with supplies for the British army. About the same hour the privateer "Yankee Hero" hove in sight off Andrews Point. These men took a boat owned by John Gott and Daniel B. Tarr to go with others off to the "Yankee Hero." They were very expeditious and were soon on board the privateer, and persuaded the captain to run down to the ship in the offing. When near her they fired a gun. To their great surprise the vessel proved to be the English frigate "Milford." She opened upon the privateer and soon compelled her to haul down her colors. Four of their men were killed, others





were wounded; one, Ebenr. Rowe, lost an arm. While the colors were being hauled down Mark Pool, who was lieutenant of Capt. Rowe's company at the battle of Bunker Hill, fired the last gun from the privateer. Part of its charge was a short crow-bar. This bar stuck fast in the ship's forward bulwarks. The ship's crew named it the "Yankee belaying-pin." The privateer with a prize crew was taken to Halifax, where Reuben Brooks and William Parkhurst and it may be that others of her crew died. Most of the Sandy Bay men were sent to Boston or New York and exchanged. Major John Rowe was sent to New York. He died at Boylston Springs, N. Y., in 1801. Some few of the men were absent seven years.

In the year 1779 the small-pox was quite prevalent all over town, and Sandy Bay had its full share. Pest-houses were established at first, but at length people were permitted to remain at their homes if sick. Inoculation was practiced very generally (vaccination had not been discovered).

The parish voted that no person be allowed to inoculate in their houses without a permit from the committee. Any person violating this order was to receive thirty-three lashes. We have no record of a whipping-post in this village, but there was one in the First Parish, where offenders were punished. Tradition says that of one hundred and ten persons inoculated in this village but two died.

Ship "Tempest" fitted out for the West Indies as a letter of marque, sailed from Gloucester some time during the war, was lost at sea with her entire crew, eight of whom belonged in Sandy Bay.

During the war this village lost by privateering, killed in battle and died in prison more than fifty men, the bone and muscle of the village. Some of the older men and children that remained at home were swept off by the small-pox; therefore, the population was greatly reduced. This people had passed through great and severe trials, but their patriotism never wavered, always ready to dare and do for their independence.

We gladly turn from these scenes of darkness and gloom to those more congenial and inspiring, which were beginning to dawn upon the people. The noise of war and clangor of arms subside, and peace, so long driven from the abodes of men, returns, and in his train follows industry, enterprise and thrift.

The soldier lays down his arms and assumes the plow. The sailor, so long the sport of fickle and adverse fortunes, hies home from bloody seas and engages in honorable commerce. The channels of trade gradually open and business again flows on its wonted course. The fishing interests of the village assume greater importance; the population increases. Independence, a free country, are inspiring words and quicken the energies of the people. At this time, 1783, there were about sixty-five dwelling-houses and five hundred people, four Grand Bank fishing schooners, some twenty boats from eight to fifteen tons, two more

Grand Bankers are about being added to the fleet by Daniel Thurston and his son.

About this time Benj. Hale and Daniel Young built the schooner "Lucy" and fitted her for Bank fishing. The parish, feeling the need of a minister of the gospel, engaged the services of Rev. Mr. Stewart. He labored here most of the time for two years, both as minister and school-teacher; his salary was one hundred pounds, old tenor, per year. In 1782 the Bill of Rights gave liberty to all people in the State. At this time there were slaves in this village. James Norwood, Isaac Pool and Joseph Baker and probably some others were slave-holders, but now all men were free; but those freedmen continued to live in the village, at least a portion of them. Up to this time there had not been much advance in agriculture; there were perhaps a dozen farmers with plenty of land, but they chose rather to draw their supplies from the ocean than from their broad acres. Even for what few cattle they kept they depended for food very much upon salt hay transported by boats from Ipswich. In 1786 the old wharf was repaired; this was a timber wharf, and was about twenty feet wide and some seventy feet in front of the present old or White wharf. It was not one-half the length nor near as high as the present wharf.

In 1789 the tax of Sandy Bay was \$580. Jabez Tarr was collector; one hundred and thirty-three persons were taxed. In 1788 the parish voted the Independent Society the use of the meeting house one-fourth of the time on condition of their bearing their proportion of the expense of repairs. This is the first mention of the Universalists in this village.

By 1794 the inhabitants had increased to seven hundred, and there were about seventy-five dwelling-houses. Business had been quite flourishing for several years until 1797, when it became depressed.

**DROUGHT, SNOW-STORM AND SICKNESS.**—In the year 1779 there was a great drought, which greatly added to the sufferings of this people, who were already, on account of the war, in very straitened circumstances. This drought cut off to a considerable extent their agricultural supplies. Then the winter of 1779 "was so very severe, snow fell for twenty-seven days in succession." Stephen Pool owned a sheep that was covered in a snow-bank during these days, and was rescued alive, though greatly emaciated. The weather, a portion of the time, was intensely cold.

In 1793 the village was visited with an epidemic, the malignant sore throat. Tradition says sixty-two children died within a few weeks.

Physicians were called from Gloucester proper, as there was no physician in this village until, some time this year, Dr. James Goss came from Billerica and settled. He not only practiced medicine, but taught school; thus making himself doubly useful. The parish was also without a minister. Deacon John Rowe, a man highly esteemed for his Christian character and his well-balanced mind, often officiated at



funerals, and also frequently presided at religious meetings, through the long period of religious and ministerial destitution. Many a dying one had he commended to God in prayer, and pleaded for their forgiveness through that Saviour that taketh away the sin of the world. The citizens of the town to-day should bless and praise God that such a man lived here in that dark day of the village, when the light of the Gospel was so nearly extinct.

In 1794, William Goss and Ebenr. Pool were fined for refusing to collect the parish tax.

In 1796, Ebenr. Pool was selectman from Sandy Bay. The valuation of the village that year, was \$50,000; Pigeon Cove, \$20,000.

**FISHING.**—From 1783, the close of the war, up to 1797 fishing business at Sandy Bay was profitable. The number of boats increased and were of greater tonnage—say ten to fifteen tons each. These years of prosperity enabled many persons to build houses and purchase small tracts of land. The boats of that day and for years after were standing-room boats, so-called, and also were pink stern. There was forward, and abaft the main hatchway, a room nearly across the width of the boat, the floor of which was about three feet below the deck, and the width was about three feet. It was in these rooms the men stood to fish. At times the third man stood in the main hatchway. There was a low waist, say six or eight inches wide, above the deck, and this encircled the entire boat. Some sixty or seventy of these boats were at one time moored in Long Cove. Their moorings were a seven to a nine-inch cable, which were made fast to two stumps; half-way between the stumps there was a heavy iron chain with a collar that fitted over the boats' stem. The stumps were oak trees divested of their limbs or branches, but a portion of the roots retained; this was put through a hole cut in a flat stone weighing from three to seven tons. Some of these stumps would accommodate one end of the mooring of several boats. Notwithstanding they were supplied with these heavy moorings, it was necessary, when a northeast gale was imminent, to leave their moorings and sail round to Gloucester Harbor. There would often be a large fleet of these boats in Harbor Cove, as that was the safest part of the harbor for such craft. However watchful these fishermen were, their boats would sometimes be caught at their moorings in a northeast gale, and would break from them and drift ashore. As the head of the cove was at that time a smooth sand beach, it was seldom that they were very badly wrecked. Often considerable damage was done by a boat breaking a part of her mooring and swinging afoul of another boat. Boats were also moored in Pigeon Cove in the same way. During the winter season many of these boats were hauled up on the beach at the head of Long Cove (that ground is now occupied by stores); they were from two to three tiers deep. Some winters a number of them would be

hauled across the street on what is now Baptist Square. For the hauling up and launching these boats there were skids, so-called; they were of oak, about eight by ten inches, and from twenty to twenty-five feet long. The boats were placed upon these skids broadside to, and were hauled by cattle,—say from six to eight yoke to each boat.

**FIRE DEPARTMENT.**—The first effort to protect the village from the ravages of fire was by the organization of a company of twenty members January 3, 1807. By the rules they adopted, each member was required to provide himself with two stout leather buckets and two bags of substantial material, and each of them of three bushels capacity, and to be provided with strings at the mouth, that they may be tightly drawn together; they were to have the surname of the owner in full and the initials of the Christian name upon each; they were to be kept hanging in a conspicuous place, the bags in the buckets (they were usually kept hanging in the front hall of the member's residence). Every member failing to conform to either of the above rules was subjected to a fine of twenty-five cents for the use of the company. Whoever should be absent at the time of fire, or neglect to give attendance unto him who is in most need, except he gives a sufficient reason, was subjected to a fine of one dollar and fifty cents. During its history forty-seven names were added to the list of members. It ceased to exist some thirty years since.

The first fire-engine in the village was purchased by subscription in the year 1827. It was manufactured by Eben Tappan, of Manchester. It cost three hundred and fifteen dollars, and its name was *Enterprise*. It required a company of thirty men.

In the year 1831 the town of Gloucester purchased an engine of the same make, pattern and cost, and located it at Sandy Bay. It required the same number of men as the *Enterprise*. These two engines were "tubs."

The next engine, the *Votery*, was a suction, and was purchased by Rockport in the year 1848, for one thousand dollars. It required a company of forty-five men. It did good service in its day, and was sold in 1885 for sixty-six dollars,—the town, having purchased a steamer, had no further use for the *Votery*.

The fourth engine, the *Pigeon Cove* (suction), was purchased in 1860, of William Jeffers, at a cost of eleven hundred and seventy-one dollars. This engine requires a company of forty-five men.

The next, the *Silver Grey*, was purchased of the city of Lynn in 1866, at a cost of \$898.72. It required a company of fifty men.

In the year 1876 the town purchased of Edward B. Leverick a hose-carriage, *C. H. Parsons*, at a cost of seven hundred and ten dollars, and





a hook-and-ladder-truck, *G. P. Whitman*, for seven hundred and twenty-five dollars.

Next and last was the purchase, in 1885, of the steamer *Sandy Bay*, a third-size *Silsby*, which cost, including the wagon, three thousand nine hundred and sixty dollars. By this last purchase the annual expense of the Fire Department is decreased, and it is claimed that it is more efficient.

The department now consists of one steamer, *Sandy Bay*, and fifteen men. Annual cost, three hundred and ninety-four dollars.

One hand-engine, *Pigeon Cove* (suction), forty-five members and steward. Cost per annum, five hundred and sixty-five dollars.

Hand-engine, *Silver Grey* (suction), in charge of two men. Annual cost of twenty dollars.

Hook-and-ladder-truck, *G. P. Whitman*, thirty members and steward. Annual cost of two hundred and sixty dollars.

Four engineers at seventy dollars per annum.

The department is well supplied with hose, and there is a tolerable supply of water by reservoirs and other sources. Our Fire Department is considered quite efficient for a town of this capacity.

WAR OF 1812-15.—The political troubles between the mother country and the United States culminated in war, which was declared by Congress against Great Britain in June, 1812. Though there was a decided difference of opinion among the people of this vicinity in relation to the need or the feasibility of this war, when it was entered upon, all were loyal to their country. Of course it was a source of great anxiety to the dwellers by the sea, whose principal means of support was drawn from the ocean, and whose fleet of fishing-boats were exposed to the ravages of the enemy.

The first visit the enemy made us was on the 3d day of August, 1813, when the privateer "*Commodore Broke*," of about sixty tons, stood into *Sandy Bay* for the purpose of cutting out some coasters from the State of Maine that lay at anchor. She fired several shots into the village, which was soon returned by our men on *Bearskin Neck*; from muskets and one cannon that had been brought from Boston a few days before. On her departure out of the bay, which soon took place, a cannon-ball struck her just below the transom, and came out under her deck near the stem; she was also fired upon as she passed *Pigeon Cove*. During this same month the Bristol ship "*Nymph*," cruising off this coast, committed depredations upon fishermen and coasters, and occasioned considerable alarm. She made several captures, but released them upon the payment of two hundred dollars for each vessel. Early in the opening of this war the citizens of *Sandy Bay* built a circular fort or rather a half-circle, on *Bearskin Neck*, at a cost of about six hundred dollars. This money was raised by subscription. The fort was built of split-stone. When the government was constructing the breakwater at the en-

trance of Long Cove, in 1836 to 1840, this fort was demolished, and the stone was used in that structure. The donors or their heirs received for it some compensation in part commensurate to the amount by each contributed.

This fort was supplied with a watch-house, and three cannon with carriages, in charge of a corporal and thirteen soldiers. On the 8th of September, 1814, the British frigate "*Nymph*" took a *Sandy Bay* fishing-boat on the fishing-grounds and compelled the skipper, Captain David Elwell, to act as pilot for two barges full of men which the captain of the frigate determined to send in to capture the fort. These barges left the frigate about midnight in a dense fog and quietly rowed towards the neck, passed the outer end and then proceeded into Long Cove, and landed her crew in the Eastern or Little Gutter (so-called). They then marched to the fort, took the sentinel by surprise, made prisoners of all the soldiers, fourteen in number, spiked the guns and put them over the embankment.

The other barge went into or near the old dock on the western side of the neck; her men were soon encountered by some of the citizens who had been aroused by an alarm given by a sentinel stationed near that part of the neck. It was now daybreak and the fog had cleared. The men on shore fired musket-balls at the barge, but in return received grape-shot and cannon-ball; no one was injured. The church bell rang out an alarm; the men in the barge prepared to silence the tell-tale; one cannon-ball lodged in a part of the belfry and there remained until the church tower was rebuilt in 1839. In order to complete their work the gun was loaded with a heavy charge too heavy for the barge; in firing it started a butt and she sank. The officer in command and his crew ran across the neck, and seizing a boat made their escape, except about a dozen who were made prisoners. In the mean time the men who took the fort had, with all or a part of their prisoners, got on board of their barge and were on their way back to the frigate.

This cannon, after being used on many occasions for salutes, etc., and having passed its usefulness, was taken in charge by the town; a carriage was provided, on which it is now mounted, and it occupies a place in the yard of the town hall. The barge was raised and repaired, and was donated to the owner of the boat that was stolen by the crew of the sunken barge; she was occupied for fishing many years.

An exchange of prisoners was proposed; but Colonel Appleton, not feeling authorized to do this, detached a platoon of soldiers, under Lieutenant Charles Tarr, to take charge until they could be sent to Salem.

On the following night a company of men in disguise rescued the prisoners from Lieutenant Tarr, and effected an exchange, by which the men that had been carried away in the barge and others pre-





viously taken, twenty in all, were released. It would seem that the design of this landing could be none other than a wanton destruction of property.

The English commander, at the conclusion of this affair, promised our fishermen that they should not be molested in the use of their fishing-ground the remainder of the season, and he kept his promise.

A few days after this the people of this village were again alarmed by a reported attempt of the English frigate "Leander" to effect a landing at Folly Cove. The militia under Captain Charles Tarr and the Sea Fencibles under Captain David Elwell (he a few days before had been elected captain, but had not received his commission) were brought into requisition. About the same hour word was received that a ship-of-war was about to effect a landing at or near Long Beach, upon which Captains Elwell and Tarr held a consultation. Tarr proposed to take his company to the south end and Elwell was to take his men to Folly Cove. This arrangement brought the Sea Fencibles the first company at Folly Cove. The alarm from the south end proved false, and Captain Tarr's company soon joined the Sea Fencibles. The whole military force of the town, under Colonel Appleton, was soon concentrated at this place. The frigate soon withdrew; probably the object of her visit to this place was to appropriate to their use some of the cattle that were grazing near the shore.

This frigate was probably the same and this the same time that Captain Nathaniel Parsons came out of Spum River on board his fishing-boat. Just after he passed over the bar he noticed an English frigate off Folly Point; her attention was attracted towards his boat to such an extent and he saw no way of escape but by running her ashore; the water was quite smooth.

The men of the village, with muskets in hand, assembled near the shore and blazed away at the frigate's boat that was nearing the shore. They were answered with cannon-ball and grape-shot. The barge soon returned to the ship, and next made an appearance flying a flag of truce. They of course were allowed to land, and handed a letter to some one, who took it to the house of Walter Woodbury. It read as follows: "I, sir, William Colwell, wishing to search that vessel, supposed to be a freighter, if denied, will burn every house within three miles of the shore." Soon Colonel Appleton and the whole military force of the Cape were on hand ready for duty. The frigate soon withdrew.

It was learned by some person who after this was a prisoner on board this frigate that several of their men were wounded. No one on shore was injured.

During this war numbers of our citizens engaged in privateering with considerable success, others in the naval and military service. Some were taken prisoners and spent a season at Dartmoor; others at Halifax. One of the number, who was a prisoner on board a ship on the Thames, is yet living in town.

However the difference of opinion as to the necessity and justice of this war, all hailed with acclamations of joy the news of peace, which was received here on the 21st day of February, 1815. The next evening there was a grand illumination and great rejoicing.

The fishing interest, the most prominent business of the village, which had been greatly depressed, soon revived; fish were caught in good quantity and sold at remunerative prices. Then came a time of general prosperity. This year (1815) Moses P. Clark, with two other men, on board a twenty-ton boat, caught and landed in eight months about nine hundred quintals of cod, pollock and scale-fish, which sold for more than twenty-five hundred dollars. These fish yielded thirty-three barrels of oil, which sold for nine hundred dollars. This same year or the next William Thurston, William Blatchford and one other man and a boy, in the boat "Independence," about thirty tons, caught and landed sixteen hundred quintals of fish. In early spring codfish sold for five dollars per quintal.

TEMPERANCE AND MORAL REFORM.—Early in the present century the public mind in this village was agitated to a considerable extent in relation to the excessive use and illegal sale of intoxicating liquors. This agitation resulted in the organization of a Moral Reform Society; its object was to prevent the illegal sale of and the excessive use of ardent spirits and to prevent other immoralities. It was instituted in 1814, and during the fifteen years of its history did a good work. It dissolved in 1829.

The constitution of said society was as follows:

"The utility of Moral Societies has been very extensively felt in the world. They have a very happy and powerful influence to arrest the progress of vice, which seriously alarms every enlightened, virtuous and benevolent mind. For whenever it prevails, its footsteps are marked with disorder, confusion and wretchedness. It often robs society of its brightest ornaments, expels happiness and prosperity from the social circle and reduces families to an abject and suffering state.

"Having seen for a considerable time, with deep regret and fearful anxiety, the great prevalence of sin amongst us, we feel it to be an indispensable duty which we owe to God, ourselves, our families and posterity, to exert our influence and endeavors to suppress its progress and rescue society from its pernicious and fatal effects.

"Sensible, however, that all human means and efforts will prove ineffectual without a divine blessing, we would humbly rely on God for his aid and assistance to crown our exertions with success.

"Under these impressions, we, the citizens of Gloucester (Sandy Bay), do agree to form ourselves into a society for the suppression of vice and the improvement of morals; and do adopt the following as a Constitution:

"Notwithstanding the general object of this society is to counteract all vice, in whatever form or manner it makes its appearance, yet, as some species of it are far more destructive to the peace, order, interest and morals of society than others, we consider it our duty to bear a particular and decided testimony against these, and that there might be no misunderstanding between the members of this society in respect to those vices, it is thought advisable that they should be particularly described, and,

"1st. As intemperance has become very alarming, common and destructive; as many individuals have been entirely ruined, families abused, distressed and made wretched by it; as it unmans the man, impairs the rational powers, obliterates the moral sense, destroys conjugal affection, parental tenderness and all virtuous feelings of social life, whatever tends to aid and increase this vice must be received as a dis-



troubling and serious evil, deeply to be deplored by every friend to virtue and humanity; and as no cause, perhaps, has ever contributed more to the continuance and increase of this vice than retailing shops, where ardent spirits have been sold, mixed and drank in open violation of the law; and as such shops have become very numerous at the present day, and nurseries of idleness and every species of wickedness, they call for a speedy and effectual remedy. We, therefore, do solemnly engage to abstain from an excessive use of ardent spirits ourselves, to prevent it in our families, social circles and other places; that we will not frequent and drink in retailing shops, nor suffer our children under our care to do it; and that we will unite in aiding and upholding persons appointed to suppress all such unauthorized places amongst us, in taking every legal step necessary, that this dreadful evil may be removed, and the rising generation saved from its ruinous effects.

"2d. As profane language degrades a rational being, offends a holy God, invalidates the sacred and solemn nature of an oath, and tends to the perversion of justice between man and man, we do solemnly promise to discountenance all profaneness and indecent conversation, both by our precept and example.

"3d. We engage not to gamble or pay at any games whatever for money or ardent spirits, neither join with those who do that we will restrain our children from it, and discountenance it in others; and that we will be particularly careful to guard our children against being in the streets evenings where they are liable to be corrupted.

"4th. That we will disapprove all slander and evil speaking against any one, and especially against the members of this society, that a good understanding might always subsist amongst the members, which the preserved and friendship perpetuated.

"5th. Whereas, long experience has proved that all exertions to suppress vice and improve the morals have been ineffectual without a due observance of the holy Sabbath; and as it was the opinion of the Legislature in this Commonwealth in the late able report on the importance of keeping the Sabbath, in these words, 'We renew, that an enlightened, uniform and pious observance of the Lord's day, in attending public and private instruction and worship ourselves, and in refraining from all actions and practices which may disturb the worship and instructions of others, is a duty solemnly binding on the conscience of every individual. We believe without the appointment and continuance of the Lord's day that public and private instruction would soon languish, if not entirely cease, and that all the virtues of social life would share the same fate; we, therefore, the members of this society, do solemnly engage strictly to observe the Lord's day in refraining from all unnecessary labor and recreations on that day ourselves, and use our endeavors to have the day strictly observed in our families and in society.

Then follow the rules by which they would be governed.

This constitution was signed by

Francis Norwood.  
James Goss.  
Solomon Pool.  
Abraham Pool.  
Solomon Chateau.  
Elihu Oakes.  
Caleb Norwood.  
David Jewett.  
Renton Brooks.  
Stephen Pool.  
William Chateau.  
Henry William, Jr.  
Thomas Giles.  
John Burne, Jr.

William Whipple.  
Aaron Pool.  
Matthew S. Giles.  
James R. Goss.  
William Pool.  
Renton Brooks, Jr.  
Graham Norwood.  
David Kimball.  
Josiah Page.  
Joseph Smith, Jr.  
Thomas Oakes.  
George Denison.  
Isaac Denison, Jr.

**Law and Order Committee.**—At the annual March meeting of the town of Gloucester, year 1814, a committee of six persons were chosen in the interest of law and order; this committee were to ascertain who were violating the license law of the Commonwealth then in existence. Five members of this committee were citizens of Sandy Bay; therefore we give place to their report made to the selectmen, June 25th of the same year.

"TO THE GENTLEMEN THE SELECTMEN OF GLOUCESTER:

"We, the subscribers, being appointed by this town at their last annual March meeting, to notice and inform of all those persons who sell ardent spirits contrary to the statute laws of this Commonwealth, having attended to the business of our appointment, find that the following licensed persons have not conformed to the laws for the year past. But have been and continue in the constant habit of selling liquors mixed and drank in their shops in open violation of the laws of this Commonwealth. (The report names sixteen persons thus engaged.)

"As no person can obtain a license but through the approbation of the selectmen, we think it most expedient in the first instance to give them this timely notice, with full confidence that they will not be wanting in their duty, and will withhold their future approbation.

"But, if any of the above-named persons who pay no regard to the wholesome laws of this Commonwealth should obtain an approbation, we are determined to make a presentment of all such persons to the General Sessions of the County.

(Signed)

"JAMES GOSS.  
"FRANCIS NORWOOD.  
"SOLOMON CHATEAU.  
"SOLOMON POOL.  
"TIMOTHY R. DAVIS.  
"JOHN MASON.

Committee.

"GLOUCESTER, June 25th, 1814."

These men were not Prohibitionists, but were law and order men, and were determined that the laws of the State should be obeyed.

Almost every grocer in those days applied for and obtained a license to retail liquors, but their license did not allow it to be drank on the premises.

Licensed taverners and victualers were only allowed to sell it to be drank upon the premises. The selectmen's approbation was about as follows: "We hereby certify that Mr. — is a man of good moral character, and the public good requires that he be licensed as a retailer of liquors."

It seems that the sixteen persons complained of as violaters of law were all citizens of Gloucester harbor. Sandy Bay was, it appears, law-abiding, but we are sure it did not continue so many years, for we'll remember when it was sold openly at some twenty-two places, and at most of them in violation of law. About 1830 a temperance society was instituted; but its pledge did not prohibit the use of cider and wine. It was soon found that the need was for a more stringent pledge, as some members would drink hard cider to excess.

Then a new pledge that included total abstinence from all intoxicating liquors was entered into. The Washingtonian movement did great good in Rockport. Many who were on the down grade turned right about and signed the pledge of total abstinence from all that is intoxicating; and a large number of dealers in liquors gave up the business during the ten years from 1840 to 1850. Temperance boomed. There have been at different seasons several temperance organizations. Besides the open societies there have been the Sons of Temperance, the Good Templars, both at the North and South Village, the order of Rechabites, &c., &c. The town in 1856 appropriated five hundred dollars for the enforcement of the liquor law, and have made appropriations for that purpose each year as needed, and a special police to execute the law have been appointed. There is no





place in Rockport where liquor is openly sold, nor has there been for several years. On the license question the vote has always been No by a large majority. There are now two temperance organizations, the Good Templars, Northern Light, at Pigeon Cove, and the Rechabite Good Templars at the South Village, both in a healthy condition and are doing a good work.

There is also a tent of Rechabites that have been organized more than forty years and have accomplished much for the cause of temperance.

**WOMEN'S RAID.**—An interesting event in the history of Rockport and of temperance reform occurred on the 8th day of July, 1856, when a well-organized band of some two hundred women, armed with hatchets, and led by a man bearing the American flag, marched through the principal streets of the town for the purpose of making a demonstration against the grog-shops of the place. They did not stop to consider their legal rights to abate these nuisances, for as mothers, wives and daughters they were exposed to and were suffering under the severe evils they inflict. They needed no stronger inducements than the law of self-protection. Animated by this purpose, they visited thirteen places where ardent spirits were unlawfully kept for sale; and, seizing casks, demijohns and other vessels containing the bane of their happiness, poured their contents into the street, breaking many of the vessels that they might more speedily discharge their contents.

They completed their work about three o'clock in the afternoon, then marched to Dock Square and exchanged congratulations and rejoiced over the good work performed, after which each went their several ways to their homes.

This proceeding was made the subject of legal investigation, the history of which and its results were as follows:

"An action of test was entered by James Brown against Stephen Perkins and wife for breaking and entering the plaintiff's shop in Rockport and carrying away and destroying a barrel of vinegar and other goods of the plaintiff.

"The answer denied that the defendants entered the shop, or destroyed or carried away any goods; and alleged that the building was for the sale of intoxicating liquors, and so was a public nuisance, and that a large number of persons assembled to abate the same, and destroyed and injured no article of merchandise, but only spirituous liquor, unlawfully kept for sale, and did no other act, and with no more force than was necessary to abate such nuisance."

At the trial before Chief Justice Shaw the plaintiff and others testified that he was a grocer and kept a shop in Rockport; that on the 8th day of July, 1856, the defendants and others broke open his shop and destroyed various articles therein; and that there was no spirituous liquors there at the time.

The defendants introduced evidence to show that

about three hundred women, some of whom were armed with hatchets, met, according to previous appointment, in a neighboring square and marched in a procession to the plaintiff's shop, and broke it open, and brought out and destroyed spirituous liquors which they found there; that on previous occasions persons had been seen coming out of the shop intoxicated; and that when the shop was broken open Perkins was on the opposite side of the street, and his wife was not there at all; and there was conflicting evidence as to the part taken by her in the subsequent destruction of the property.

One of the defendants' witnesses testified: "There were many men there, and almost all the women in Rockport—all who could walk, or move on crutches; all the men appeared to be approving, except the rum-sellers; I heard no objection. The selectmen, ministers, deacons, policemen were present; none of them forbade what was done, but all was peace and harmony. They appeared to be happy, and the shouts came up from the gentlemen.

"The justices of the peace were there; everything that could walk. We determined to carry it through and destroy all the liquor."

So much of the judge's instructions as concerned the points decided by the full court was reported by him as follows:

"The most material question is whether this proceeding was justifiable upon the grounds stated and relied upon. That justification is that by statute, all intoxicating liquors kept for sale, and the vessels and implements actually used in selling and keeping the same contrary to the provisions of that act (Statute 1855, C. 450), are declared to be common nuisances, and are to be regarded and treated as such; and that by another statute (1855, C. 467), all buildings, places or tenements used as houses of ill fame, resorted to for prostitution, lewdness or for illegal gaming, or used for the illegal keeping or sale of intoxicating liquors, are declared to be common nuisances, and are to be regarded and treated as such.

"Upon this three questions arise: First, Whether all persons, members of the community, have a lawful right to destroy intoxicating liquors thus kept, by way of abatement of a common nuisance? Second, whether for this they have a right to use force to break open the place where it is so kept if the nuisance cannot be reached and abated otherwise? Third, Is it justifiable for a large number of persons to combine and agree together to take and destroy such intoxicating liquor, by force, and to use force in breaking open such a shop in order to come at and get possession of the liquor to be destroyed?"

Upon the questions "I (Chief Justice Shaw) was of the opinion and instructed the jury as follows:

"1st. That intoxicating liquors kept for sale, with the vessels containing them, and articles used in the sale, being declared by law to be a common nuisance, it is lawful for any person to destroy them, by way of abatement of a common nuisance, and that it is the exercise of a lawful and common right.

"2d. That if kept in such a shop, not a dwelling-house, locked or otherwise closed, it is justifiable to use force, but no more force than is necessary to reach the liquor and vessels if it cannot be done at otherwise.

"3d. That if the combination or conspiracy of a large number of persons extends no further than to take and destroy intoxicating liquors and the vessels, and to use no unnecessary force, the fact that such a combination is entered into by a large number of persons to act together, in doing that and no more, would not take away the justification they would have, if done by a few of them.

"But the jury were cautioned that this was a dangerous power, to be construed under very strict conditions; comment was made upon the



danger of permitting people to take the law into their own hands, alluding to lynch law, vigilance committees, &c., leading to resistance, to riots, bloodshed and violence, and destruction to the peace of a civilized community; that as a general rule private persons must rely upon the law for their protection and the redress of their grievances. And if the law is in any respect imperative and ineffectual, it is the province of the Legislature to amend it."

The restrictions under which this power can be lawfully exercised, the jury were instructed to be as follows:

"1st. The power claimed by the defendants is a power conferred by law, and not by license or authority conferred by private persons, and must therefore be construed strictly. And if they exceed their authority they are trespassers, *ab initio*. This justification wholly fails, and the plaintiff is entitled to recover for all the loss sustained; so if they break open a shop where no intoxicating liquor is kept, or, if kept, is not kept for sale, they do it at their peril; and if none such is found, the justification fails, so if after entering they do unlawful acts, they are trespassers *ab initio*.

"2d. If any more force was used than was necessary, or any damage done to the building or to any articles in the building, beyond that of taking and destroying the intoxicating liquor kept for sale, and the vessels that contained it, then the parties so acting were trespassers *ab initio*, and the justification is not established.

"Under these views the evidence was briefly reviewed and submitted to the Jury. Upon the several questions of facts above stated, especially whether any unnecessary force was used in breaking open the shop, without first requesting the owner to unlock it; or whether any unlawful acts were done by the party after entering the shop, either to the building or articles in it, and whether a barrel of vinegar or any articles other than intoxicating liquor and the vessel, were taken away and damaged.

"The Jury returned a verdict for the defendants; and the plaintiff moved for a new trial, on the ground that the Jury were misdirected in matters of law; and this motion was reserved for the whole Court."

Able arguments were presented by the counsel for the plaintiff, Otis P. Lord and J. W. Perry.

Also by S. H. Phillips and R. S. Rantoul for the defendants. Then the court go on to say,—

"This is an action for breaking and entering the plaintiff's shop, and destroying various articles of property. The defendants, denying the facts and putting the plaintiff to proof, insist that if it is proved that they were chargeable with the breaking and entering, it was justifiable by law, on the ground that the shop was a place used for the sale of spirituous liquors, and so was declared to be a nuisance; and that they had a right to abate the nuisance, and for that purpose to break and enter the shop, as the proof shows it was done; that the shop contained spirituous liquors kept for sale; that so keeping them was a nuisance by statute; that they had a right to enter by force and destroy them; and that they entered for that purpose, to destroy such articles, and did no more damage than was necessary for that purpose.

"1st. The surface of opinion that spirituous liquors are not of themselves a common nuisance, but the act of keeping them for sale, by statute creates a nuisance; and the only mode in which they can be lawfully destroyed is the one directed by statute, for the seizure by warrant, bringing them before a magistrate and giving the owner of the property an opportunity to defend his right to it. Therefore it is not lawful for any person to destroy them by way of abatement of a common nuisance, and, *a fortiori*, not lawful to use force for that purpose.

"2d. It is not lawful by the common law for any and all persons to abate a common nuisance, though the doctrines may have been sometimes stated in terms so general as to give countenance to this supposition; this right and power is never entrusted to individuals in general without process of law, by way of vindicating the public right, but solely for the relief of a party whose right is obstructed by such nuisance.

"3d. If such were intended to be made the law by force of statute, it would be contrary to the provisions of the Constitution, which directs that no man's property can be taken from him without compensation; except by the judgment of his peers or the law of the land; and no person can be twice punished for the same offence. And it is clear, under the statutes, spirituous liquors are property, and are entitled to protection as such.

"This power of abatement of a public or common nuisance does not place the penal laws of the Commonwealth in private hands.

"4th. The true theory of abatement of a nuisance is that an individual citizen may abate a private nuisance injurious to him, when he could also bring an action; and also when a common nuisance obstructs his individual right, he may remove it to enable him to enjoy that right, and he cannot be called in question for so doing, as in the obstructions across a highway, and an unauthorized bridge over a navigable water-course, if he has occasion to use it, he may remove it by way of abatement. But this would not justify strangers, being inhabitants of other parts of the Commonwealth, having no such occasion to use it, to do the same. Some of the earlier cases, perhaps, in laying down the general proposition that private subjects may abate a common nuisance, did not expressly mark this distinction; but we think, upon the authority of modern cases, where the distinctions are more accurately made, and upon principle, this is the true rule of law.

"5th. As it is the use of a building, or the keeping of spirituous liquors in it, which in general constitutes the nuisance, the abatement consists in putting a stop to such use.

"6th. The keeping of a building for the sale of intoxicating liquors, if a nuisance at all, is exclusively a common nuisance; and the fact that the husbands, wives, children or servants of any person do frequent such a place and get intoxicating liquor there, does not make it a special nuisance or injure their private rights, so as to authorize and justify such persons in breaking into the shop or building where it is thus sold and destroying the liquor there found, and the vessels in which it may be kept; but it can only be presented as a public or a common nuisance in the mode prescribed by law. Upon these grounds, without reference to others which may be reported in detail hereafter, the court are of the opinion that the verdict for the defendants must be set aside, and a new trial had.

"Justices of the Supreme Court at the time of this report,—

"HON. LEMUEL SHAW, Chief.

"HON. CHARLES A. DEWEY.

"THERON MCGALE.

"HON. GEORGE T. BIGELOW.

"BENJAMIN F. THOMAS.

"PIETRI MERRICK.

"HON. STEPHEN H. PHILLIPS, Attorney-General."

In the month of December a new trial of this interesting case was had before the Superior Court. Hon. Julius Rockwell presided; it occupied the court three days. The defendants undertook to prove that they had committed no trespass. The jury, after being out eighteen hours, returned a verdict for the defendants, on the 10th day of December, 1859—Perry and Endicott for the plaintiff; Perkins, Derby and Rantoul for the defendants. John Stimson, Esq., who was extensively engaged in the stone business at Rockport many years, contributed some thousands of dollars to the support of the defense.

FIRE.—On the night of December 5, 1853, fire was discovered breaking out of a small barn owned by James Pool, and in rear of his dwelling-house. Its progress was rapid and soon extended to his dwelling-house and the dwelling of Solomon Pool and to his two or three barns and to the house of Samuel H. Brooks and his barn. Every building, with nearly all their contents, upon these three estates were burned, except a three-story tenement house owned by Brooks, which stood within twelve feet of the two-story house that was burned. Our fire apparatus were two "tub" engines. The alarm extended to Gloucester, and was quickly responded to by an engine with an efficient company, which rendered valuable service by keeping the fire within the limits named.





Previous to this there had been but one house destroyed by fire in this village; that was the dwelling of Deacon Solomon Pool and brothers, on South Street, in the year 1830.

During a thunder-storm in the year 1855, a barn owned by Asa Todd was struck by lightning and burned, with several tons of hay.

Andrew B. Bickford lost a barn by fire in the year 1857; it was located on Main Street.

In the month of August, 1859, a barn owned by Capt. Charles Tarr, on South Street, was struck by lightning and consumed, with some ten tons of hay; several persons were in the building at the time, but received no material injury.

October 12, 1865, about three o'clock in the morning, a barn owned by Alden Estes, on South Street, was struck by lightning and destroyed, together with fifteen tons of hay and a lot of grain and farming tools. Insurance, five hundred dollars; loss, one thousand dollars.

D. Smith Gott's barn, some three or four rods away, caught by the flying embers and was totally destroyed, with several tons of hay, and a large lot of vegetables and farming tools. Loss, one thousand dollars; no insurance.

On Sabbath morning, May 2, 1875, the Methodist Church was totally destroyed by fire; it was a heavy loss to the society, as they had but three thousand dollars insurance; one policy of fifteen hundred dollars expired a few days before and had not been renewed.

December 8th of the same year a large barn owned by Jabez Row, on School Street, was burned, together with one horse, cow and several tons of hay; partly insured.

In the year 1883 the dwelling-house of M. H. Young (summer residence), South Street, was totally destroyed by fire.

On Sunday morning, December 9, 1883, the Annisquam Mill took fire about seven o'clock, as they were about making some small repairs. The main building was totally destroyed, throwing out of employment about two hundred and forty persons, which was a great loss to the community. Steam fire-engines were called from Gloucester and Salem, and were soon on the ground; by their aid the fire was confined to the one building.

The foregoing are nearly all the fires that have taken place in this town.

**MANUFACTURES.**—Isinglass from hake sounds was first manufactured in 1822 by Wm. Hall, of Boston, in this town; his place of business was in a store-house far down on the westerly side of Bearskin Neck.

He paid from three to five cents per pound for the sounds in a raw state; before he commenced to buy them they were wasted with other fish offal.

He cleaned and dried them and put them through wooden rollers operated by hand-power, for which he paid from forty to fifty cents per day to each man.

He obtained a patent and continued the business a few years, when it went into the hands of Jabez Row, Wm. Norwood and others, which finally resulted in the organization of the Rockport Isinglass Company; this company had sole control of the business under their patent several years. They substituted iron rollers for wood and horse-power instead of hand. Finally they operated by steam. Notwithstanding their opportunities, this company closed business some years since financially embarrassed. There is now in this town two manufacturers of isinglass from hake sounds,—the Cape Ann that employs forty-five men about five months each year, and Haskins Brothers, who employ about forty men about the same length of time. They manufacture a good quality of goods and are quite successful.

**Cotton-Mill.**—In the year 1847 an act of incorporation was obtained and a mill was erected for the manufacture of cotton duck; it went into operation the next year and was quite successful for a few years, and paid good dividends. Besides cotton duck, many tons of yarn was manufactured and sold to manufacturers of fishing-lines in Essex. Mills for the manufacture of cotton duck were built in other towns, which caused an over-production, and business declined; the machinery was changed to some extent and other kinds of goods were manufactured. About eighteen years after it was first built the building was enlarged to double its capacity, its length being increased by that figure; four tenement houses and a large boarding house was built. Some years later the whole property of the company was sold for about \$140,000, which was about the amount of debt resting upon it; thus the old stockholders were entirely wiped out; the property had cost nearly \$500,000. The name of the corporation was changed to Annisquam Mill; the machinery was renewed and improved to considerable extent under the agency of W. G. Whitman, and again went into operation; after a few years' service Mr. Whitman resigned in order to take charge of the Amory Mill, then in process of building in Manchester, N. H. Wm. E. Winsor succeeded him; within a short time it became a regular dividend-paying institution. It was destroyed by fire on the morning of the 9th day of December, 1883. It was a substantial stone building with two towers and made quite an imposing appearance. It gave employment to two hundred and forty persons; its destruction is a very great loss to the town.

**Oil Cloth.**—What is now (1887) the Cape Ann Oil Cloth Co. originated with Albert W. Lane and Nathaniel S. York, in a small barn on Broadway. They soon removed to a large building on Gott Street; their business increased, they needed more room, and they removed to a building one hundred feet by forty, two stories, which the company now owns on Pleasant Street, and give constant employment to about thirty persons. They now manufacture under a patent dated January 16, 1883, rubber oil goods, coats,





hats, horse-covers, buggy-aprons, etc., etc., in connection with Standard Oil Clothing.

**POST-OFFICE.**—In the year 1825 a post-office was established at Sandy Bay, and a semi-weekly mail. The next year the village was favored with a tri-weekly, and in 1828 with a daily mail and stage-coach.

Winthrop Pool was the first postmaster. He continued in office until his death, in 1838; then Henry Clark was appointed; next was George Lane, then Francis Tarr, Jr., Addison Gott, William W. Marshall, William Wingood, then the present incumbent, Walter G. Peckham, appointed in 1886.

The mode of conveying the mail was first by a one-horse two-wheel chaise; it could take two passengers beside the driver to Gloucester Harbor, then take the stage-coach for Boston; the journey consumed the most of the day. At the time of the establishment of the post-office here there probably were not more than half a dozen papers, weekly or semi-weekly, taken in the village. Captain John Gott, Dr. John Manning, Nehemiah Knowlton, James Goss were of the number that received the news from abroad. Now, instead of the two-wheeled chaise and stage-coach, consuming a good part of the day to reach Boston, we have nine trains of well-appointed cars out and in each day, and the time so arranged that we may take breakfast at home, spend a large part of the day in Boston, and be home in season for tea; and instead of a mail twice a week, three mails each day, and the cost of travel by rail at less than one-half what it was by chaise and coach. And as to news, now we have the morning and evening papers daily by the score, weeklies and semi-weeklies almost without number, magazines in good supply.

John W. Low, Esq., I think, was the first mail-carrier. I remember taking passage with him at least once in the one-horse chaise; then Marshall Shepherd a short time; next was Cyrus Fellows, who served long enough in that capacity to secure one of our fair ladies for a wife; Edward H. Shaw, Addison Proctor, Levi Shaw served in that capacity until the railroad superseded the stage-coach.

At a later day a post-office with a daily mail was established at Pigeon Cove,—Austin W. Story, postmaster.

**STONE-QUARRYING.**—During the year 1823 Nehemiah Knowlton cut about five hundred tons of stone from cobbles on or near the site now occupied by Ballou & Mason. He advertised his stone for sale in a Boston newspaper. Major Bates, of Quincy, Mass., saw the advertisement and came to Sandy Bay, and the next year he engaged in the business of quarrying. William Torrey, also of Quincy, came with him, and was in his employ about one year.

However true it may be that the business was not successful, it is a fact that Major Bates abandoned it in about two years and went to Boston. Here he met Colonel Thayer, United States engineer, who, no-

ticing Major Bates' natural bent for working on stone, engaged him as an assistant in the construction of Fort Warren and other government works then being constructed in Boston Harbor.

Colonel Thayer being in want of stone for the government works, and seeing the pluck and energy of Torrey, induced him to engage in business on his own account. He accordingly commenced operations on part of the property now owned by the Rockport Granite Company; it became known as the Torrey Pit.

The next year he went to Folly Cove, as that was the most favorable place to get cap and flag-stones, of which Colonel Thayer was then in need. That same year he moved his family, consisting of his wife and two sons, Solomon F. and William J., to Sandy Bay.

The next year he abandoned Folly Cove and returned to Sandy Bay, and opened a quarry to the westward of the present stone bridge. This quarry yielded a large amount of valuable stone. Up to the year 1842 he furnished nearly all the granite for the government work on the islands in Boston Harbor and for the Charlestown and Portsmouth navy-yards. After this time a portion of the stone of which these important works were constructed was furnished by Messrs. Colburn & Eames, Benjamin Hale and others.

About the year 1841 he started the largest stone that had been quarried on the Cape up to that time. Two of his foremen, Joseph Stanley and Joshua Sanborn, were for many years identified with the quarrying interests of the Cape. When in the zenith of his business, Mr. Torrey owned an interest in six sloops, keeping them constantly employed, and also furnished freight for many other vessels from Quincy and the State of Maine. He was a good citizen and an energetic and successful business man.

Of his two sons, Solomon F. died some years since; William J., who was formerly engaged in the stone business to a considerable extent, is still with us; he owns and occupies the mansion built and occupied by his father several years.

Beniah Colburn came two years after Mr. Torrey and worked for him. He became one of the foremost quarrymen of his time. Soon after Colburn came Ezra Eames and Amos C. Sanborn. The last named, I think, tarried here but about one year, then returned to Boston, and engaged in the business of buying and selling stone, and was quite successful; many thousand tons of Rockport granite have been shipped to him. Eames made Rockport his home.

About this time, or a year or two later, came Zachariah Green and Jeremiah Wetherbee. They formed a corporation known as the Boston and Gloucester Granite Company. John Stinson, a son-in-law of Green, came also, and held stock in the company. They opened a quarry on what is now the property of the Rockport Granite Company, and commenced the wharf and breakwater, which has assumed such



large proportions, and is also now owned by that company. This company continued in business a number of years, and were quite successful. They built the stone house and barn, and did much towards opening up the resources of the town.

Colburn & Eames formed a partnership in 1827. They opened a quarry near where is now the residence of Thomas Full, at Pigeon Cove. At this place there was a hill of stone, rising some twenty feet above the level of the road. The stone was of good quality, and soon found a ready market at Boston, Portsmouth, Salem and other places, where much of it was dressed for building and cemetery purposes.

The stone for the chain bridge over the Merrimack just above Newburyport was sent from their quarry in 1828; they also furnished some stone to the government for fortifications, navy-yards, etc. It is said that after taking account of stock and settling up at the end of the first year they were fifteen dollars in debt. In subsequent years they were more successful. They worked the quarry down to the tide-water level and then abandoned it, as they could no longer draw off the water, which filled in from springs and rains, with a syphon. Steam-engines for pumping were not then thought of.

John Stimson, after a few years, left the Boston and Gloucester Granite Company and set up for himself and quarried at the Flat Ledge, afterward owned by William H. Knowlton. The first paving-blocks cut on Cape Ann were by John Stimson and from the Flat Ledge they were cut square and flat, and were used at Fort Warren, shipped there in the sloop "Fox."

The next move a new company was organized, viz., Ezra Eames, John Stimson and Beniah Colburn, under the firm-name of Eames, Stimson & Co., and commenced operations near where Stimson was already located. Mr. Colburn continued in the company but a short time, and then engaged in the business at other places. He at one time operated the quarry at Hodgkin's Cove (now known as Bay View). This quarry was originally opened by Richard W. Ricker and Kilby P. Sargent, and is now the quarry of the Cape Ann Granite Company. Mr. Colburn made the first blocks now known as New York blocks, and sent them to Boston, where they were laid in Exchange Street, near the Merchants' Bank building. These blocks were the first to be laid on the edge instead of on the flat.

In 1852-53 he sent underpinning to San Francisco; they were used in government buildings there. In 1857 he sent paving-blocks to New Orleans. He was a man of strict integrity and was quite successful in business.

Eames, Stimson & Co. operated on a part of the territory that is now owned by the Rockport Granite Company. Those more or less interested in this company at different times were Anson and Aaron Stimson, George R. Bradford, Joshua San-

born, J. Henry Stimson, Abraham Day and Jotham Taylor. This company did a large business and were quite successful, and continued in successful operation until 1864, when they sold all their company property to J. Henry Stimson and others, which resulted in the organization of the Rockport Granite Company. Stimson at one time owned nearly one-half of the capital stock. This company also purchased at different times the properties of William Hale Knowlton, William Torrey, and Preston and Fernald. They are still occupying this valuable property and are working it successfully. They are now laying rails for a track from their quarries to their wharves, which will make a great saving of expense in transporting the products of their quarries to the place of shipment. The cut leading out from their quarries to their wharves was commenced in 1868. The stone bridge was completed in 1872.

John Stimson was for many years the able and successful agent and manager of this company. Upon his resignation, a few years since, Charles S. Rogers was appointed, and still holds that responsible position.

Thomas Peach quarried stone at Halibut Point and shipped it from Hooppole Cove, where he built a wharf. Benjamin Hale and Joseph Babson opened a quarry on the Babson farm and shipped their stone from a cove near by, where they also built a wharf.

The breakwater at Pigeon Cove was first built in 1832, and was rebuilt in 1842 by Elijah Edmunds and John W. Wheeler. The stone of which the pier is built was furnished by Colburn & Eames.

Benjamin Hale once quarried at Pigeon Cove, near where Canney now operates. Among the earlier quarrymen were Samuel Parker and his brother William, Alpheus C. Pierce and George W. Johnson, all of whom worked quarries at the Cove.

Levi Sewall opened a quarry upon his land. A short time after it was opened a partnership was formed by John Preston, James Fernald and Levi Sewall, by the firm-name of Preston, Fernald & Co. This quarry produced an excellent quality of stone. They shipped their stone from Knowlton's wharf. They continued in business several years and were quite successful.

William Hale Knowlton opened up Flat Ledge and quarried there several years. He shipped his stone from Knowlton's wharf, which he now owns.

The Pigeon Hill Granite Company was formed in 1870 by George R. Bradford, Anson Stimson, Amos Rowe and Levi Sewall, and is next in size to its neighbor, the "Rockport." This company was the first in Rockport to build a railroad to carry stone from quarry to wharf. Some of the croakers prophesied that the cars would gain such headway in running down the steep incline, as to carry them out to salvages before they could be stopped. If this prophecy were true, the advantage gained in taking stone to the new breakwater can easily be imagined.





To Amos Rowe belongs the credit of cutting up the largest boulder on the Cape. It was situated near the top of Pigeon Hill, and weighed over two thousand tons. Out of it Mr. Rowe cut thousands of feet of edge-stones and a great amount of other marketable stock. It was of good quality and split as readily as any of the granite lying in the quarries.

In the beginning of the stone business nearly all the workmen on the quarries came from Maine, New Hampshire and Vermont,—young men, generally full of fun. The most of them at the first boarded at the Rowe farm-house, Pigeon Hill, and Captain Wheeler's tavern, at Pigeon Cove. They usually commenced coming the 1st of March, and by the 1st of April the gangs were full. No ten-hour system. An early breakfast, then commence work; an hour for dinner, then work until a late supper. Nearly all worked by the month, receiving their pay at the end of the season, excepting as they might call for a small amount of spending change.

In later years, when the employment of Irishmen was attempted, it met with vigorous opposition. The house which was being prepared for them to live in was twice blown up with powder; and many other efforts were made to keep out the unwelcome immigrants.

This prejudice has long since died out and all nationalities are allowed to work unmolested.

The first stone known to have been shipped from Cape Ann was quarried about the year 1800, near what is known as Lobster Cove. It was moved on skids to the shore, where it was loaded on a small fishing-boat and taken to Newburyport to be used as a mill-stone.

The first derrick in Sandy Bay was erected for William Torrey in 1836, and was placed near the break in the mountains a short distance to the westward of the late James Fernald's residence. It was first used for the loading of stone for the breakwater then being constructed by the United States government at the entrance of Long Cove, Rockport.

The first pair of shears were built for John Stimson, and were considered at the time a marvel of strength and convenience.

The first California pump used for pumping water out of the quarries was made by Lewis Lane on his return from California about 1854.

The first steam-engine used in the quarries for hoisting and pumping was in 1853-54 by Wetherbee & Page. Before this, the hoisting was by hand-power or cattle, and the water was pumped by hand or removed by syphon.

Granite was first split by means of flat wedges between shims placed in flat holes made by a flat chisel. The steel now used is made into plug wedges and driven between half-rounds into round holes made by round drills sharpened into a V-shaped point.

Deep holes for blasting were made entirely with long drills struck by sledge hammers, and not until

1883 was a steam-drill used on the Rockport quarries. This was introduced by the Rockport Granite Company.

The first stone used in the streets of Boston was for crosswalks and gutters; next came the large Belgian blocks, which were used for pavements. Then came the New York blocks already mentioned, and later the smaller Boston blocks were introduced.

Nearly every city in the United States has bought more or less granite from this section, and the variety of blocks made has been almost as great as the number of places buying them.

A block for New Orleans would make fifteen for New York, twenty for Philadelphia, thirty for Boston. Blocks have also been sent to Cuba and Valparaiso. In 1868, Mr. Charles Guidot made the first contract for paving New York streets with granite blocks, and paved the lower part of Broadway with what has since been known as the New York block. The granite of Cape Ann is comparatively inexhaustible, and has always been prized for its firm texture, high crushing test and freedom from pyrites and other impurities, making it most desirable for paving-blocks, building and monumental purposes.

The parties now engaged in quarrying are the Rockport Granite Co., Pigeon Hill Granite Co., Charles Guidot, Edwin Canney, Ballou & Mason, Herbert A. Story, E. L. Waite, Charles Dornon & Son and Bryant, Larvey & Co.

Between four and five hundred men find employment in the business in this town; twelve to fifteen vessels are constantly employed in carrying the production to home ports, while hundreds of large vessels bringing freight to Eastern ports take return cargoes of blocks to New York, Philadelphia, Albany and other seaboard cities, either for use at places of discharge or for rail transportation inland.

ROCKPORT BANK.—The Rockport Bank was incorporated in 1851; capital stock, \$100,000. At its organization Ezra Eames was chosen president, and he occupied that position until his death, August 18, 1874, aged seventy-two years.

Deacon Jabez R. Gott was elected cashier and served in that capacity until failing health compelled him to resign. He died March 15, 1876, aged eighty-two years. These two men were among our most prominent and respected citizens.

Captain Charles Tarr succeeded Mr. Eames and he still occupies that position.

Howard H. Paul succeeded Mr. Gott, and served a few years, then resigned, and Eli Gott was elected to that position; after a few years' service he resigned, and George W. Tufts was chosen and is the present incumbent.

When the other State banks adopted the National system, the Rockport fell into line and became known as the Rockport National Bank. Its capital stock was at one time increased to \$150,000, but after a few years it was reduced to its first figure, \$100,000.



There was quite an opposition before the Legislature to the chartering of this bank. It was claimed by the friends of the old Gloucester Bank that it could furnish all the bank accommodation that was needed for the entire Cape.

After the charter was granted it was with some difficulty that the stock was taken, but by great effort of the directors, of which I think there were as many as nine or ten, they succeeded, the full amount of stock was taken, and the bank went into operation. The stock soon went above par, and has ever since commanded a premium. This institution has been conducive to the business of the town.

**ROCKPORT SAVINGS BANK.**—The Rockport Savings Bank was incorporated June 23, 1853. Corporators named in the act were Ezra Eames, Jabez R. Gott, James Haskell and their associates. At its organization James Haskell was chosen president, and Newell Giles treasurer. The bank soon commenced receiving deposits and proved to be a successful institution until, in 1875, its deposits amounted to \$414,460.71. About this time a cloud came over the town in the shape of financial troubles and failures in business. Confidence became impaired, deposits were withdrawn, so that in 1876 they were reduced to \$376,780.51. This year Dr. Jas. Manning was chosen treasurer, Newell Giles having resigned. A change was also made in the board of trustees, and Joshua Tarr was elected president, succeeding Henry Dennis. He had succeeded James Haskell who resigned some years before on account of his leaving town; he went to Saccarappa, Maine, where he now is (1887).

Notwithstanding the change of officers, confidence was not restored, deposits continued to be withdrawn until, February 25, 1878, they were reduced to \$182,352. At this time Hon. Charles P. Thompson and Dr. Joseph Manning were appointed receivers. Within a few years the whole business of the bank was closed. The depositors received eighty-five and a fraction per cent. on their deposits. A short time, say about twenty days, after the receivers were appointed the Massachusetts Legislature passed the Stay Law, so called, which undoubtedly saved other saving institutions from sharing the fate of the Rockport.

Had this been passed before the receivers were appointed, without doubt the Rockport Savings Bank would now be in successful operation, and the depositors would receive one hundred cents on every dollar of their deposits as called for, and also interest.

For when we take into account the \$8000 the receivers had for their services, and the shrinkage in a few of the largest mortgages, saying nothing of the loss on the smaller ones, and the losses in other ways incidental to closing out of the business, we have an amount more than equal to the fifteen per cent. of the loss to the depositors.

The closing out of this savings bank was one of, if not the greatest of all the financial disasters that ever befell the town.

**GRANITE SAVINGS BANK.**—After the closing out of the Rockport Savings Bank, some of the citizens felt that an institution for savings was needed in town.

Accordingly, a petition to that effect was forwarded to the Legislature, and in the year 1884 the Granite Savings Bank was incorporated. William Winsor, J. Loring Woodfall, John W. Marshall, George Elwell, George M. McClain, Nathaniel Richardson, Jr., Francis Tarr, Frank Scripture, Wm. H. Colbey and George A. Lowe were named in the act of incorporation. The first meeting for the choice of officers was held December 16, 1884, at which meeting John G. Dennis, Esq., was elected president; J. Loring Woodfall was chosen secretary; two vice-presidents were chosen and eleven trustees.

There was some ill-feeling engendered about town by the closing up of the Rockport Savings Bank, which on the start operated to some extent against the new bank, but this feeling is being overcome. The new institution has a good board of officers, in whom the public cannot but have confidence; the institution is gradually growing in favor; as business shall revive, deposits will increase more rapidly. Without doubt it will prove a useful institution. Its first dividend, two per cent., was payable on the 1st day of April, 1887.

The president, John G. Dennis, Esq., died in June of the year succeeding his election. The vacancy was not filled until the next annual meeting, when Wm. Winsor was elected president, and Nathaniel Richardson, Jr., was re-elected treasurer. Mr. Dennis at the time of his decease was also a member of the State Legislature. The first deposit made in this bank was April 11, 1885.

**CENTENNIAL CELEBRATION.**—At the annual March meeting, in 1853, a committee was chosen to make suitable arrangements to celebrate the one hundredth anniversary of the incorporation of Sandy Bay as the Fifth Parish of Gloucester. The committee met and organized, and then, by a unanimous vote, invited Lemuel Gott, M.D., to prepare and deliver an address on that important occasion. After due consideration he cordially accepted the invitation of the committee.

The date of the act of incorporation of the parish of Sandy Bay was January 1, 1754.

The 1st day of January, 1854, fell on Sunday; therefore, Monday, the 2d day of January, was devoted to exercises of the centennial.

On account of a heavy snow-storm, travel was impeded, which prevented our friends from abroad from being present, except in limited numbers. Nevertheless, the Congregationalist Church, where the services were held, was filled with an earnest and attentive audience.

The exercises were as follows: Voluntary on the organ, by Samuel J. Giles; reading of Scripture and prayer, by Rev. Thomas Driver, Baptist; hymn was





read by Rev. A. C. L. Arnold, Universalist, as follows:<sup>1</sup>

Address by Lemuel Gott, M.D., which occupied more than an hour. Closed by benediction by Rev. Thos. Driver; voluntary by Samuel J. Giles.

At 7.30 P.M. the church was again filled. Services were: Voluntary by Samuel J. Giles; prayer by Rev. J. A. Gibson, Methodist; anthem by choir, organ accompaniment. Dr. Gott resumed his address which was listened to with marked attention to its close.

Benediction by Rev. A. C. L. Arnold; voluntary by Samuel J. Giles. These very interesting services were brought to a close. We regret to say that this very interesting and valuable address has not yet been published. We are pleased to say

<sup>1</sup> A part of the hymn was selected and a part composed by Ebenezer Pool, our antiquarian.

"God of the circling shores!  
To whom a thousand years  
Are as a day,

Led by thy guiding hand  
Our fathers found this land—  
They firmly took their stand  
Thy laws to obey.

"Over the rocky road,  
They bravely walked or rode  
In prayer to join;  
'Twas through a forest dim  
Some miles they went to hymn  
God's praises there to rhyme,  
Read line by line.

"Many a year had passed,  
The time it came at last,  
God's word brought near;  
A century has gone,  
Since a house near their home,  
Was built for all, not one,  
God's word to hear.

"Our fathers, sons and all,  
Heeded their country's call  
For liberty;  
By land and sea they went,  
Regardless of event,  
To meet the tyrant's rent;  
They would be free.

"Thou, as a shield of power  
In battle's awful hour,  
Durst round them stand;  
Their hopes were in thy power  
Strong in this trying hour;  
By thee their banners towered,  
God of our land.

"Some score of years have fled—  
Our fathers with the dead—  
Man's certain lot;  
But we, their offspring, meet,  
This day with joy to greet,  
To strengthen home, too sweet  
To be forgot.

"Lord, let thy smile of love  
Beam on us from above  
While now we raise,  
Our grateful song to thee—  
God of our land and sea,  
God of the bond and free,  
God of all praise."

that its publication has been provided for and will be effected within a few weeks, which event is anxiously looked for.

**FOURTH OF JULY CELEBRATION.**—In the year 1854 the citizens proposed to have a general celebration of the 4th of July. The town had never done this before. Early in the season a meeting was called and a general committee of arrangements was chosen. They appointed the sub-committee, and assigned to each their part of the work. They soon made their plans and put forth efforts to carry them into execution. As one of the results, about eight hundred dollars was collected to pay for music, hire of tents, fireworks, etc. The ladies readily entered into the plans, and signified their readiness to provide food for the occasion. Thus on the start there was assurance that the celebration would be a success. When Mr. Norwood was asked for the use of his pasture on which to pitch our tents, he replied "Yes, you can have the free use of the pasture for your 4th of July celebration, but your independence you have got to fight for." Which saying was verified seven years later. (He was a pronounced anti-slavery man.) Early on the morning of the 4th the town was awake, visitors came pouring in in great numbers, the town appeared at its best. Arches were erected over several of the streets and were finely decorated. Flags were strung across others. Bunting was displayed from some houses, mottoes were displayed from others, etc.

On the morning of the 4th every arrangement had been made. The two large tents had been pitched on Allen's Head Pasture. At 9 o'clock A.M. a procession was formed on Broadway in the following order:

Aids.	Chief Marshal.	Aids.
	Chelsea Brass Band.	
	Gloucester Artillery.	
	Committee of Arrangements.	
	Bay Tent of Rechabites.	
	Carriage containing elderly gentlemen.	
	I. O. O. F., in regalia, with their banner.	
	Goddess of Liberty, in a carriage, appropriately arrayed.	
	Justice and Peace appropriately dressed, in a well-trimmed carriage.	
	Lucifer Company No. 3, in uniform.	
	School No. 1, Grammar Department, in Bloomer costume.	
	Seasons appropriately represented.	
	Carriage beautifully dressed.	
	School No. 4, in appropriate costume.	
Stars—	Nine young ladies dressed in white; team driven by a colored boy	
	School No. 3, in uniform.	
	Morning, Noon and Night, in a carriage, appropriately represented.	
	Faith, Hope and Charity, well represented by three young ladies in a carriage appropriately trimmed.	
	School No. 2, in uniform.	
	School No. 5, in uniform.	
The States represented by	thirty-two ladies appropriately costumed, in a carriage tastily decorated.	
	School No. 1, in uniform.	
	Representation of Indian and Turk on horseback.	
Old Folks at Home—	Ten young ladies dressed in old style, in carriage with spinning-wheels, carding, etc.	
Carriage, Floral Bower,	six young ladies dressed in white, decorated with flowers.	
	Modesty, in a carriage, well represented.	
Glee Club—	Five young ladies and two gentlemen, in a carriage appropriately decorated.	





The procession moved from Broadway and marched through School, High, Main, Beach, King, Pleasant and South Streets to the tent. It was intended to march to Pigeon Cove, but the heat was too oppressive, ranging from 80 to 90° in the shade during the day. The streets were very dusty; there had been several days of hot and dry weather. Several members of the artillery company had sunstroke, and required medical aid. A little past one o'clock P.M. the procession reached the pavilion at Allen's Head, where a bountiful collation had been provided by the ladies; the tables were verily loaded with good things. After the divine blessing was invoked by Rev. A. C. L. Arnold, the chaplain of the day, the company were welcomed by the president to the viands before them. The collation ended, the president of the day, Hon. James Haskell, called to order, when the chaplain again addressed the throne of grace in words appropriate to the occasion; then Lemuel Gott, M.D., read the Declaration of Independence, after which the president introduced the orator of the day, C. M. Ellis, Esq., of Boston, in a few complimentary remarks. The subject of the oration was a review of the early history of New England, showing how the idea of constitutional liberty was prominent in the minds of our forefathers, and were bequeathed to their descendants; they welcomed fugitives from tyranny from every part of despotic Europe, whether that tyranny was political or ecclesiastical. Fugitives from slavery were their every-day visitors, and thereby the flame of liberty was fanned into surpassing brightness. He considered that this spirit of liberty was endangered in our time by causes obvious to all; but he believed in its ultimate triumph, and foresaw the day when, as a nation, we shall be free indeed. "That day has come; we are now a free and united nation. Give God the glory!" Mr. Ellis spoke one hour and a half, and had the close attention of the audience. Then an hour was spent in social intercourse and short speeches, in which many joined. David Kimball, Esq., of Boston, a former townsman, was introduced as toast master. Some of the many toasts offered were as follows:

*The President of the United States and his administration.* "May they fear God and keep his commandments."

*Washington.* "May we emulate his patriotism and remember his virtues."

*The orator of the day.* "May the spirit which he has this day inspired be long felt."

*The Hon. Charles W. Upham.* "Our Representative to Congress, the firm friend of freedom."

*The Press.* "May its mighty influence ever be wielded on the side of freedom."

*The Gloucester Artillery.* Responded to by William H. Dann.

*The Chelsea Brass-Band.* "May they live to blow long for the gratification of their patrons."

*The Ladies of Rockport.* "May they make better wives than their mothers."

Mr. Ellis responded to this, declaring that were it not for the influence of the mothers he should consider it a libel. But, inheriting their virtues and emulating their excellencies, it might be possible.

Many of the toasts were responded to very appropriately.

After the procession had partaken of the collation the entire company were invited; there was an abundance of food for all, and quite a quantity was left over and was distributed the next day to the needy. David Kimball, Esq., donated a large quantity of Chinese explosives to boys, which increased their joy. A salute was fired in the morning and at sun-set by cannon provided for the occasion.

During the evening there was a grand display of fireworks, and the band discoursed most excellent music. By unanimous consent the celebration of the 4th of July, 1854, was voted a success.

**SCHOOLS.**—Soon after John Pool located at Sandy Bay he sent his oldest son to Beverly to attend school, so that he might be qualified to teach the younger members of the family. It is more than probable that the children of Richard Tarr became his pupils, as those two families were the whole population of the village for a few years. The first that we know of a school-house in Sandy Bay is that in the year 1725 (there were from eight to twelve families in the village). The commoners set off to them about one acre of land in the centre of the village, upon which they were required to erect a school-house, "to keep a good school in for the godly instruction of children, and teaching them to read and write good English." The school-house was built the same year; it was of logs, and was located near where the Abbot house now stands. The parish, about the year 1853 or '54, granted to Rev. Ebenr. Cleveland a portion of this parish land for a building-lot, upon which he erected his dwelling-house, which he occupied many years, in which his wife died in 1804, and himself in 1805. It is now the Abbot house, but greatly changed. This caused the taking down of the school-house, and the removing of it to the northerly corner of the now Congregationalist meeting-house yard, and that location it occupied until it was taken down in 1797. The late Ebenr. Pool, our antiquarian, attended school several terms in the old log school-house. Dr. James Goss, who settled in his profession in Sandy Bay about 1792, taught school in this, the first school-house in Sandy Bay, several terms. The town has been privileged for several years, and is at the present time, in having a descendant of his a successful teacher in one of its public schools.

About the year 1760 John Pool (a son of the first John) built a school-house at his own expense on Groat Knoll. The name indicates the price paid (one groat). This building was occupied for school



purposes quite a number of years. Then it became the residence of James Parsons and family until the death of himself and wife. She was a descendant of the first Pool. It is now occupied by one of their descendants—Aunt Beulah.

In October, 1735, Gloucester First Parish was divided into three school districts, but then these three districts had but one school, which moved around from district to district. Each was to provide a room for the school, and in default thereof, would lose its term for three years, that being the time occupied in its circuit. Under this each district enjoyed several months' school privilege each year, except Sandy Bay, which, on account of the small amount of its tax rate, could have only three months' school in two years. This state of the public schools probably continued until the Revolutionary War.

In the year 1797 fifty-eight men united and built the proprietors' school-house at Sandy Bay at a cost of twenty-seven dollars per share,—one thousand five hundred and sixty-six dollars. When completed the proprietors by vote instructed their committee to employ as teacher a college-educated man. A Mr. Cummings was engaged, and taught several terms. His custom was to open the school with prayer; he proved to be an efficient teacher. The school kept in that house during all the years of its history was generally of a high order. Wm. Whipple, Esq., taught more than twenty years with good success. Rockport High School was inaugurated in this house, and from there, after a few years, it moved to its present location. Some years since this house was abandoned for school purposes, and was removed to make place for the vestry of the Congregationalist Society. It is now on School Street, a few rods southerly of its former location, and has been supplied with a more modern roof, and is otherwise improved and changed, and is now the residence of Leverett Smith.

In 1804 the town of Gloucester availed itself of a law of the Commonwealth, and divided its territory into eleven school districts, three of which was in Sandy Bay.

In 1808 the commoners made their last grant of land in Sandy Bay, which was a lot for a school-house in the Middle District; it was located near the site of the Sandy Bay House stable. The house was built soon after. It was about twenty-eight feet square, one story, with a hip roof; it was occupied for school purposes until 1850 or '51, when the district built the large school-house on Broadway. After this it was moved a short distance westerly on Beach Street, and occupied awhile for a dance-hall; afterward for a grocery-store; finally, about 1860, perished by fire.

The present Main Street school-house was built by the school district in 1824, since which time it has been changed somewhat, but not to any great extent. It is now doing good service as a primary school room. A district school-house of about the

same size was built about the same time on Hale's Point. It was located a short distance westerly of the residence of Addison Knowlton, and was sold to him after the district system was abolished. He razed it to the ground, and used the material to some extent in putting an additional story to his dwelling-house.

About the year 1818 or '20 Deacon Jabez R. Gott, who had pursued the business of teaching several years, occupying rooms in private houses for that purpose, built a school-house on Mount Pleasant Street at his own expense, and taught a private school therein several years with good success; finally sold it to the district, and afterward it was sold, and occupied as a dwelling, and is doing good service in that line to-day. A few years after Deacon Gott sold his school-house the district built about one-half of the present Mount Pleasant School-house.

The first school-house at Pigeon Cove was built about 1797 or '98, on the corner of Granite Street and Goose Lane. It was about twenty-five feet square, one story and a hip roof. It has been raised and otherwise enlarged and improved, and is now the residence of Mrs. John Murry. At a later day, say about 1830, Pigeon Cove was divided into two districts, and a school-house was built near the now residence of Alpheus Goodwin. It was sold and removed about the year 1870, and was changed into a dwelling-house, and is the property of the heirs of the late Alpheus Pierce. In the early days of Sandy Bay, in fact, up to about the year 1824, a portion of the public-schools were kept in private houses; and since that day private schools have been so kept. From 1797, when the log school-house was taken down, to 1808, there was no public school building in Sandy Bay. The next first one built was in the Middle District in 1808, and this was the first district school-house in Sandy Bay. The school privileges in this locality were very meagre in the early days of its settlement, as we have seen. At one time there were but three months of public school in two years, but probably this vicinity was as well provided for as other sparsely-settled places, where the people were possessed of such limited means. We have evidence of the interest of the fathers in the education of their children when, at the time the proprietors' school-house was built, at a cost of more than one thousand five hundred dollars, the whole tax valuation of Sandy Bay was hardly sixty thousand dollars. And then they would be satisfied with none other than a college-educated man for a teacher. Between the years 1820 and 1830 the town grammar school made an occasional three months' visit to Sandy Bay. This was brought about by the determined and united efforts of the citizens of Sandy Bay, aided by their friends in Gloucester proper, who at times wished for the Sandy Bay voters to aid them in some favorite project. By the same means the annual town-meet-





ing was adjourned to this village several times—a sort of log-rolling process.

When Rockport was incorporated there were six school districts within its limits,—four at the South and two at the North Village. The whole amount raised by taxation for tuition and fuel the first year of Rockport's history was eight hundred dollars.

There were at this time seven district school-houses, two of which were in District No. 1.

The report of the School Committee for 1840: says "Our school-houses in general are commodious, and reflect much honor upon the town. The schools have been, on the whole, as well managed, and have exhibited as much improvement as usual. The average attendance has been as great as in past years."

In the year 1850 District No. 1 built the present school-house on Broadway, now occupied by a primary and intermediate school; its cost was more than five thousand dollars.

In the year 1855 the town voted to abolish the district system and adopt the graded, and to purchase of the several school districts their school property. This was done at a cost of eight thousand six hundred and seventy-five dollars.

In their report for that year the committee say: "Although, for want of suitable accommodations, it was found impossible to adopt the system of graded schools in its entirety, the committee believe that the experiment has demonstrated that it possesses many advantages over the old district system; and they do not hesitate to say that the schools of 1855-56, taken all in all, have been fifty per cent. better than they were the preceding year, 1854-55." Therefore, it appears there were good results by this change of system.

This change soon opens up or presents a call for an advance. The committee, by their report of 1856-57, say, "We would suggest before closing this report, that the improvement made by the scholars since adopting the system of graduated schools has occasioned the call for one of a higher grade than we have hitherto had. This want should be met, not only for the benefit of the class of scholars that would be entitled to its privileges, but also of those that remain in the grammar schools."

In accordance with the suggestions made by the committee in previous years, and also in accordance with their own judgment, the School Committee, in the year 1857, established a High School in the proprietors' school-house, which they leased in behalf of the town, and furnished it at the town's expense. Miss M. A. Cogswell, of Essex, who had been successful as a teacher in other schools of the town, was engaged to teach this new school, at a salary of three hundred dollars for the school year of thirty-six weeks. Sixty scholars appeared for examination; forty-nine passed satisfactorily, and were admitted to the school—fifteen males, thirty-four females.

The whole amount expended for schools this year, 1857, including tuition, rents, repairs, fuel and care of school property, was \$3421.89. Previous to this, viz., in the year 1849, there was a High School organized in the vestry of the Congregationalist Society, two terms, Benjamin Giles, teacher. The school was continued the next year, but for the lack of system and by an injudicious vote of the town, it was discontinued the third year.

The first school-house built by the town, in its corporate capacity, was the one in Phillips Avenue, Pigeon Cove, in 1857—a two-story house, and cost \$2963.59. Beach Street School-house was built one story in 1860, at a cost of \$1439.71. The High School house was built one story in 1865, and cost \$4046.54; it was enlarged in 1869 by raising it and putting a story underneath, at a cost of \$2608.90.

Pigeon Hill School-house, two stories, was built in 1871, at a cost, including the lot, of \$4343.95.

The town has now seven school-houses, four of them two stories, and all of them in fair condition; there is one school occupying a hired room (this, probably, is a temporary arrangement), and a school occupying a room in the town hall—at the present time fourteen schools in all, with twenty teachers. There was a winter school for young men established in 1862, and was continued in successful operation until the close of December, 1886, when, by action of the committee, it was discontinued—it may be for good reasons—probably it will be re-opened next winter. This school upon the whole, has been a useful institution by furnishing to young men who must work during the other school terms an opportunity to prepare themselves for future usefulness. Many of them appreciated the privilege and improved their opportunity.

The whole amount expended for school purposes during the year ending March, 1887, including tuition, free text-books, repairs, care of school property, fuel, salary of committee and incidentals, was \$8,142.01.

During the years 1876, '77, '78, Rev. Henry C. Leonard was appointed superintendent of the public schools, he receiving the entire pay, and served in that capacity very acceptably during those years; the other members of the committee served gratuitously. He died March 12, 1880, respected and beloved.

The foregoing is an imperfect history of the schools of Sandy Bay, from its first settlement, and of Rockport, until the present time. It appears that the citizens have always had a commendable interest in the education of the children and youth, and have, according to their ability, generally made liberal appropriations for that purpose. Good results have been achieved, which have been realized to some good extent, but undoubtedly will appear more and better in the coming years.

For quite a number of years in the past, it is also



true of the present time, nearly all of the teachers of our public schools were born and educated in these schools. The education here gained has been supplemented, in many cases, by a season at Westfield or Salem (State Normal).

In the year 1840, the year Rockport was incorporated, its valuation was \$460,814; appropriation for schools, \$800. 1850: valuation, \$632,586; appropriation for schools, \$2500. 1860: valuation, \$1,313,688; appropriation for schools, \$2500. 1870: valuation, \$1,634,152; appropriation for schools, \$6000. 1880: valuation, \$1,973,719; appropriation for schools, \$5900. 1886: valuation, \$2,022,102; appropriation for schools, \$8350.

The above appropriations since 1860 include tuition, care of school property, fuel, repairs, salary of school committee, free text-books—every item of expense, excepting the building of houses.

Number of children between five and fifteen years in 1886, 715; population of the town in 1885 was 3888.

**ROCKPORT RAILROAD.**—When the Gloucester Branch of the Eastern Railroad was being constructed, and at divers times after it was opened for travel in 1847, the question was agitated by our most prominent citizens and business men of extending the road to Rockport. The Eastern, though earnestly solicited, could not be induced to so extend it.

Ezra Eames and other citizens of Rockport obtained from the Legislature a charter under the name of the "Rockport Railroad Company," to construct a railroad from the terminus of the Gloucester Branch to Rockport.

In the year 1885 the Eastern Railroad Company proposed to the Rockport Railroad Company if they would build the road and make all of the necessary connections by switches or otherwise with the track of the Gloucester Branch, keep the road-bed in good order, assume the risk of accidents that might occur upon said Rockport road (excepting those arising from the negligence of the Eastern Railroad); also furnish a suitable engine-house, turn-table and water at the terminus of the road, provide a ticket seller, switchmen, brakemen and all other operatives necessary, excepting the men on the train, agree that they will run all their passenger and freight trains over the Rockport Railroad, connecting with all regular trains over the Gloucester Branch, and will convey all the freight and passengers over the Rockport road for the term of five years from the time said Rockport road shall be in good running order without charge or remuneration.

In case the parties cannot agree upon what terms the road shall be run at the end of five years, both parties agree to leave the question to referees mutually chosen, whose decision shall be final. Notwithstanding this liberal offer made by the Eastern Railroad corporation, the shares in the Rockport road were subscribed for to a very small amount; therefore, a delay in building the road.

In the year 1860 the town petitioned the Legislature, asking for liberty to subscribe for and take fifty thousand dollars stock in the Rockport Railroad (which had previously been chartered), the prayer of the petitioners was granted.

On the 2d day of April, 1860, at a special town-meeting, it was voted (three hundred and twenty-six yeas, thirty-one nays) to accept the act of the Legislature, provided favorable arrangements can be made with the Eastern Railroad corporation.

It was also voted at the same meeting to authorize the town treasurer to hire fifty thousand dollars in sums as wanted to that amount, and issue town bonds therefor.

The Eastern Railroad renewed their agreement as made in 1855, and the construction of the road was put under contract for sixty-three thousand dollars, and work was commenced August 23, 1860,—Gilman & Co., contractors. The road was completed and opened for travel on the 4th day of November, 1861. At this time there was a debt resting upon it of about twenty-eight thousand dollars. It became necessary for the town, in 1862, to petition the Legislature for authority to subscribe for and take an additional sum of twenty-five thousand dollars of stock in the road. The town was so authorized, and at a special town-meeting on the 7th day of April, 1862, it was voted to subscribe for and take the said amount of stock; the town treasurer was authorized to hire said amount and issue town bonds therefor.

The whole cost of the road, with the buildings, was \$91,007.28; town held stock to the amount of \$75,000; individual stockholders, \$13,400; debt remaining, \$2697.28,—total, \$91,007.28. It is seen that the amount of stock taken did not meet the expense of construction, but this amount was paid from the earnings of the road, but it did not prevent it from paying good dividends. At the close of the five years' contract another was made, by which the Eastern road corporation agreed to run all their trains over the Rockport for five hundred dollars per month, our road being liable as in the previous contract. This arrangement was continued until February, 1868, when the Rockport road, with all its franchises, was sold to the Eastern at the cost of construction, viz., \$91,007.28. It seems the town received over and above the amounts expended for stock, interest, repairs and damages sustained \$3636.44.

The road was formally opened for travel on Monday, the 4th day of November, 1861. The weather was fine, the cars (it was a free ride) were crowded all day. At noon a collation was served in Johnson's Hall. A reporter says "the tables literally groaned under the weight of good things, and after a blessing was asked by Rev. W. Gale, the company fell to and satisfied the cravings of hunger. The dinner was served by mine host 'Randall,' of the Rockport Hotel, and was one of the best we ever sat down at; there was an abundance of everything and of the best quality."





After the inner man had been fully satisfied the meeting was called to order by Newell Giles, Esq., president of the Rockport Railroad, by a few well-timed remarks concerning the history of the road. He was followed by Mr. Williams, of Salem, a director of the Eastern road, who congratulated the citizens on the completion of this enterprise. Mr. Chase, a former superintendent of the Eastern road, spoke of the progress of railroads from their commencement to the present time. Mr. Howe, a former president of the road, spoke of the enterprise of the town. Hon. Moses Kimball, of Boston, but formerly of Rockport, spoke of the energy of the people of the town and of the improvements since the days of his residence here. Mr. Kimball closed with the words "Glory, Glory, Hallelujah, Rockport is marching on."

Benj. K. Hough, of Gloucester, followed Mr. Kimball; he contrasted the stage-coach with the railroad, the present with the past. In most eloquent language he alluded to the troublesome times which our country was passing through, and concluded by saying that he believed that the Union would be established on a firmer foundation than before the conflict of arms. Addresses were also made by Hon. F. W. Choate, of Beverly, Rev. C. C. Beaman, of Salem, John M. Oxtun, of Boston, B. H. Corliss, of Gloucester. At 4 P.M. the meeting closed; it was a day long to be remembered, a high day for Rockport.

The only accident upon the Rockport road while it was owned by the corporation was on the 4th day of July, 1867; on the afternoon of that day there was a heavy shower accompanied with a high wind. A new engine, "Great Falls," which had not been on the road but a few weeks, was wrecked near the curve at the foot of Groat Hill by running on some cattle owned by John Bray, some of which were killed.

## CHAPTER CXIV.

ROCKPORT—(Continued).

THE CIVIL WAR (1861-65).

THE last winter and spring months of the year 1861 were months of fearful anxiety and dread. Abraham Lincoln had been constitutionally elected President of these United States of America, but there were indications that several of the States comprising this Union would not submit to his administering the affairs of this nation. Soon our fears proved a reality. When the news was transmitted with lightning speed on that 13th day of April all through these United States, that Fort Sumter had been fired upon with Union guns in rebel hands, what awe and anxiety pervaded every loyal heart, as we feared the next object of attack would be the capital of the nation! How were the people of this usually quiet town aroused as, at the close of the afternoon service

on that otherwise pleasant April Sabbath, our ears were greeted with the sound of martial music and the tramp of footsteps led by one in whose bosom were awakened the slumbering fires of patriotism. Not only was the leader fired with patriotism, but the entire community were intensely in earnest. The feeling of patriotism and loyalty awakened by this demonstration manifested itself in outspoken utterances of determined resistance to flagrant outrage and armed invasion for the capture of the capital of the nation. This feeling was more intensified by confirmatory dispatches received within the next following days, announcing the organization and marshaling of the impetuous hosts of the South, whose regiments of foot and cavalry and batteries of artillery were fast centering in Virginia, provoking the sanguinary conflict that soon followed, which was to bathe her sacred soil and dye her historic streams with the crimson hue of richest blood.

It was apparent that united action should be taken by the town to provide for and care for the families of those who were ready and earnest to enlist in the service of the country and enroll their names with the names that were ready to do and to suffer that rebellion should be squelched. April 22d, an informal meeting of the citizens was held in Johnson's Hall. A committee of eleven were chosen, viz., George D. Hale, Samuel H. Brooks, Daniel Staniford, John Preston, Joshua Tarr, Reuben Brooks, Newell Giles, Stephen P. Randall, Winthrop Thurston, Levi Cleaves and Ezra Eames, to report at a future meeting some course of action for the town to pursue. At a town-meeting held on the 30th, the committee reported that the town appropriate \$3000 to be expended as follows, viz.: that each volunteer of Rockport, when he shall have passed an examination, shall be paid twenty dollars, the balance to be put into the hands of a committee of eight persons to be used at their discretion for the support of the families of the volunteers. Their report was adopted by an unanimous vote. The committee chosen to carry this report into effect were Dr. Benjamin Haskell, Winthrop Thurston, George D. Hale, Ezra Eames, John Manning, James W. Bradley, Austin W. Story, together with the selectmen. A recruiting office was opened in Johnson's Hall, and by the close of the month of May enough persons had subscribed their names as volunteers, and a company was organized. The committee were untiring in their efforts to have this company assigned to some one of the several regiments that were being organized, but were delayed in having their earnest appeals to the State authorities favorably answered, on account of the many applications for place in these regiments from all over the State. As no encouragement could be obtained for immediate place at any of the headquarters of troops, this company, about the 4th of June, went into camp at Cape Pond Pasture, where the time passed heavily in consequence of not being provided with arms that





they might acquaint themselves in the drill. Under the existing state of things, thirteen of the men, tired of this kind of life, and anxious to be in active service, left camp and went to Portland and enlisted in the Fifth Maine Regiment (others left to enroll themselves in other companies). One of the thirteen was prevailed upon to return and rejoin the company, which was afterward known as Company G, and was attached to the Seventeenth Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers. Among the number that enlisted in the Fifth Maine was Otis Wing Wallace; he was prompt, faithful, courageous and undaunted in battle. The hardships of the Peninsula Campaign produced weakness and prostration, which necessitated, though reluctantly on his part, his removal to Finly Hospital, Washington, D. C., where he lingered until the 25th of October, 1862, dying at the age of twenty-six years, nine months and four days. He was buried in the Soldiers' Cemetery of that city. This Maine Regiment arrived at Washington in season to participate in the first Bull Run battle, and was engaged in all the principal battles of the Army of the Potomac, including the desperate and bloody conflict at Gettysburg.

Company G, Seventeenth Regiment, by which name it was afterward known, continued at Camp Kimball, so named after the Hon. Moses Kimball, of Boston, formerly of Rockport, till about the 10th of July, when it left town for Camp Schouler, Lynnfield. Previous to their departure Mr. Kimball presented them with an elegant silk flag, bestowing the gift in person. The same flag is now in the custody of O. W. Wallace, Post No. 106, G. A. R.

The presentation services were in front of the First Congregationalist Church, and was accepted in behalf of the company by Captain Daniel B. Tarr, who was chosen captain at the time of the formation of the company. Soon after going into camp at Lynnfield a dissatisfaction sprung up from some unexplained cause, and Captain Tarr realizing the situation, resigned his position and George W. Kenney, of Danvers, was chosen to succeed him. The company was now soon recruited to the maximum standard. Thirty-six of its members were from Rockport. The regiment left Lynnfield for Baltimore on the 20th day of August, where it arrived and was stationed, doing good service several months. From this company the first one of our citizens fell a sacrifice on the altar of patriotism. Lieutenant George W. Tufts, from exposure while in the line of duty, was stricken with typhoid fever and died at Baltimore October 27th, about two months after reaching that city. His remains were sent home under escort of members of the company, and were buried from the Congregationalist Church the 2d day of November.

The funeral services were conducted by Revs. Messrs. Gale, Bremner, Barden and Mason; the latter read a poem composed by himself for the occasion. The Masonic order, of which the deceased was

a member, attended with full ranks to pay their last sad rites to the mortal remains of this their brother, the first to fall a victim in the line of duty in the service of his country.

The church edifice was filled with those who sympathized with the widow and fatherless children, and also to pay their tribute of respect to the patriotism of the deceased. The remains were escorted to their last resting-place by martial music so fitting to this occasion, and was followed by a large concourse of citizens. This regiment in the spring of 1862 left Baltimore and joined Major-General Foster's command at Newbern, N. C., where it remained and continued in that vicinity during the war, and rendered good service. The Adjutant-General of Massachusetts, in his report for 1865, closes with these words, "Thus terminates the splendid record of the Seventeenth Regiment."

#### 17TH REGT. (INFANTRY) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).

##### *Company G.*

*Mustered into service July 22, 1861, and mustered out August 3, 1864, unless otherwise stated. The figures following name in parentheses give the age.*

George W. Tufts (33), 1st lieutenant, must. in Aug. 21, 1861; died at Baltimore, Md., Oct. 27, 1862.  
 Alfred M. Channell (29), 2d lieutenant, must. in Aug. 21, 1861; res. Jan. 17, 1862.  
 John J. McKenney (18), disch. April 23, 1863, for disability.  
 John N. Barton (36), disch. June 12, 1863, for disability.  
 James Brown, Jr. (36), disch. March 18, 1863, for disability.  
 Robert Chisholm (23), disch. Jan. 3, 1863, for disability.  
 William Gooding (21), disch. May 28, 1863, for disability.  
 Andrew G. Rathbun (18), never left the State.  
 Joshua F. Hatch (22), disch. Jan. 3, 1863, for disability.  
 Oliver A. Norton (29), disch. April 23, 1863, for disability.  
 George S. Parker (19), disch. June 23, 1863, for disability.  
 George Prior (31), died at Newbern, N. C., Sept. 28, 1862.  
 Story D. Pool (31), sergeant.  
 George Elwell (31), disch. Jan. 1, 1864, to re-enlist.  
 William A. Stevens (11), sergeant.  
 Edward D. Bray (22).  
 Edward B. Clement (23), sergeant.  
 William H. Davis (26), corps, disch. Dec. 26, 1863, to re-enlist.  
 Felix Doyle (36).  
 James Finn (20), disch. Jan. 5, 1864, to re-enlist.  
 George Felt (26), never left the State.  
 Cyrus Pool (30).  
 William Robbins (23), disch. July, 1862, for disability.  
 John Reeves (22), disch. Dec. 30, 1863, to re-enlist.  
 Henry C. Robinson (35), commissioned ensign in the navy.  
 Hugh Strain (29), disch. Jan. 1, 1864, to re-enlist.  
 E. W. Skinner (22), never left the State.  
 James H. Stevens (21).  
 Jesse McLoud (19), disch. Jan. 4, 1864, to re-enlist.  
 Brainerd B. Scudder (21).  
 Thomas H. Taylor (22), disch. Dec. 3, 1863, to re-enlist.  
 William Gould (39), died at Andersonville Prison May 5, 1864.  
 Ezekiel H. Stacy (28).  
 Jerome Wheeler (21), died at Newbern, N. C., Nov. 19, 1862.  
 Charles H. Gove (19), disch. Dec. 25, 1863, to re-enlist.  
 James B. Daley (21), sergeant, disch. April 2, 1862, for disability.

#### 11TH REGT. (INFANTRY) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).

John C. Knowlton (22), Co. I, must. in July 10, 1861; disch. Sept. 1, 1862, for disability.

#### 12TH REGT. (INFANTRY) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).

Hugh McGuire (28), Co. K, must. in June 26, 1861; disch. Dec. 8, 1863, by order of War Dept.



## 1ST REGT. (HEAVY ART.) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).

*Company L.*

Charles M. Wilkinson (31), sergt., must. in Feb. 28, 1862; disch. Nov. 26, 1863, for disability.

*Company M.*

Francis Allen (18), must. in March 8, 1862; disch. March 30, 1864, to re-enlist.

Thomas Full (29), must. in March 5, 1862; must. out March 5, 1864, at exp. of service.

Augustus M. Chain (28), must. in March 17, 1862; disch. March 23, 1864, to re-enlist.

George S. Phillips (34), must. in March 7, 1862; disch. March 10, 1864, to re-enlist.

The following-named Rockport men served in Company D, Fifth Maine Regiment, that left Portland June 26, 1861:

William T. McQuestion, disch. for disability Feb. 20, 1862; died on the field July 25, 1862, while acting as soldier.

Otis W. Wallace, died at Washington Oct. 28, 1862.

Charles M. Coffin, died Nov. 24, 1862.

Arthur Hamlin, disch. the winter following muster.

Lorenzo D. Fox, disch. Oct. 26, 1862; died a few days after reaching home.

Stillman L. Mason, disch. for disability the winter after muster.

George L. Berry, killed in battle at Salamis Church, Va., May 5, 1864.

Stephen A. Perkins, served three years.

Henry W. Farrow, served three years.

Alban Slamon, served three years.

Thomas F. Parsons, served three years; lost right arm in battle of the Wilderness, May, 1864.

Henry Berry, was taken sick before the regiment left, hereafterwards joined the 2d Maine and served three years.

## 1ST MAINE BATTERY.

Daniel Turner, died at New Orleans Aug. 6, 1864.

## 19TH REGT. (INFANTRY) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).

Levi Shaw (26), 1st lieut., must. in Aug. 22, 1861; disch. Sept. 17, 1862, for disability.

Isaiah Leighton (29), musician, must. in Sept. 3, 1861; must. out Aug. 8th, by order of War Dept.

John P. Nayson (29), musician, must. in Sept. 3, 1861; must. out Aug. 8th, by order of War Dept.

George W. Dole (29), musician, must. in Sept. 3, 1861; must. out Aug. 8th, by order of War Dept.

Levi H. Hutton (28), Co. F, must. in Aug. 28, 1861; must. out Aug. 28th, at exp. of service.

James Varney (18), Co. H, must. in Nov. 1, 1861; never left the State.

Michael De Boun (20), Co. I, must. in Aug. 28, 1861; was taken prisoner Sept., 1864, and confined at Andersonville, escaped in April, 1865, disch. by order of War Dept. May 23, 1865.

Charles C. Sewall (18), Co. I, must. in Aug. 28, 1861; disch. June 27, 1862, wounded.

James Mudge (41), must. in Aug. 3, 1861; trans. to 29th Regt. June 14, 1864; must. out July 21, 1864, at exp. of service.

## 23D REGT. (INFANTRY) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).

Lancel T. Smith (37), Co. C, must. in Oct. 14, 1861; died at Newbern, N. C., Sept. 28, 1864.

## 24TH REGT. (INFANTRY) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).

George W. Young (24), Co. B, must. in Oct. 14, 1861; died at Newbern April 21, 1864.

## 26TH REGT. (INFANTRY) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).

John J. O'Connell (21), Co. C, must. in Aug. 5, 1861; died at Andersonville Nov. 27, 1864.

## 30TH REGT. (INFANTRY) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).

*Company K.*

*Disch. Jan. 4, 1864, to re-enlist, except where otherwise stated.*

James F. Sellers (20), sergt., must. in Dec. 16, 1861; died Nov. 19, 1862, at New Orleans, La.

James W. Abbot (21), must. in Jan. 14, 1862; died Aug. 18, 1862, at Baton Rouge, La.

Engene Prior (21), sergt., must. in Feb. 4, 1862; disch. Feb. 12, 1864, to re-enlist.

Charles P. Brocklebank (18), must. in Jan. 3, 1862; died Oct. 14, 1862, at Carrollton, La.

Jabez W. Kendall (19), must. in Jan. 11, 1862; died Jan. 16, 1864, at New Orleans, La.

Henry F. McKenney (18), corp., must. in Jan. 9, 1862; died Mar., 1863, at Baton Rouge, La.

Benjamin T. Smith (35), must. in Jan. 6, 1862; died Dec. 20, 1862, at New Orleans, La.

George H. Ross (21), corp., must. in Dec. 17, 1861; drowned April 2, 1862, in Mississippi River, La.

Frank Wheeler (18), must. in Jan. 4, 1862; disch. Feb. 12, 1864, to re-enlist.

Levi F. Bailey (27), must. in Jan. 4, 1862; disch. Feb. 12, 1864, to re-enlist.

Budley G. Adams (10), sergt., must. in Dec. 23, 1861; disch. March 10, 1864, for disability.

Patrick Allen (11), must. in Dec. 18, 1861; disch. Oct. 16, 1862, for disability.

Michael Gallagher (41), must. in Feb. 6, 1862; disch. June 5, 1863, for disability.

William E. Saunders (25), must. in Jan. 1, 1862; disch. Dec. 8, 1862, for disability.

G. S. Coburn (24), must. in Jan. 8, 1862; disch. Oct. 16, 1862, for disability.

William Broomfield (22), must. in Jan. 3, 1862; must. out Jan. 20, 1865, exp. of service.

Philip Devoe (20), must. in Jan. 3, 1862.

William P. Clark (31), must. in Jan. 7, 1862.

Joseph Hodgkins (18), must. in Jan. 16, 1862.

Archibald McPhee (21), must. in Jan. 20, 1862.

John B. Norwood (29), must. in Jan. 13, 1862; disch. Feb. 12, 1864, to re-enlist.

Lynnan R. Tarr (23), must. in Dec. 16, 1861; must. out Jan. 20, 1865, at exp. of service.

Addison Wheeler (29), must. in Jan. 16, 1862; disch. Feb. 12, 1864, to re-enlist.

James Kenny (18), must. in Jan. 3, 1862.

Juvenal De Ornelhus (25), must. in Dec. 16, 1861; disch. Oct. 16, 1862, for disability.

## 32D REGT. (INFANTRY) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).

*Company D.*

*Disch. Jan. 4, 1864, to re-enlist, except where otherwise stated.*

Andrew Lane, Jr. (21), corp., must. in Nov. 27, 1861; must. out Dec. 1, 1864, exp. of service.

Sylvanus Babson (21), corp., must. in Nov. 22, 1861; was wounded May 30, 1864.

William A. Beals (19), must. in Nov. 20, 1861; disch. Dec. 1, 1862, for disability.

Lowell M. Chain (29), must. in Nov. 28, 1861; disch. June 7, 1862, for disability.

Benjamin M. Goley (28), must. in Nov. 26, 1861; disch. Feb. 14, 1862, for disability.

Daniel M. Stillman (35), must. in Nov. 29, 1861; disch. June 8, 1864, for disability.

Charles H. Burke (21), must. in Nov. 22, 1861.

Charles D. Collins (29), must. in Nov. 27, 1861; must. out Dec. 28, 1864, exp. of service.

Andrew L. Tarr (28), must. in Nov. 22, 1861; must. out Dec. 28, 1864, exp. of service.

Joseph H. Wingood, corp., must. in Nov. 27, 1861; disch. Jan. 5, 1864, to re-enlist.

Winthrop Pickering (21), must. in Nov. 22, 1861.

Eben Pickering (22), musician, must. in Nov. 27, 1861.

Walter Johnson (32), must. in Nov. 26, 1861; disch. Feb. 26, 1864, to re-enlist.

Jos. H. Sewall (21), must. in Nov. 24, 1861; disch. Mar. 9, 1864, to re-enlist.

Jacob A. Day (24), must. in Nov. 25, 1861.

George W. Gove (28), must. in Nov. 24, 1861; disch. Jan. 5, 1862, for disability.





## 35TH REGT. (INFANTRY) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).

*Company F.*

*Mustered in August 19, 1862, and mustered out June 9, 1863, except where otherwise stated.*

Alonzo Low (41), died Sept. 18, 1863, Camp Dennison, Ohio.  
George Bragdon (30), must. in Aug. 19, 1862; disch. Nov. 12, 1862, for disability.  
George H. Burnham (18), disch. April 17, 1863, for disability.  
Newell Webster (20), disch. Aug. 6, 1863, for disability.  
George Holbrook (18), disch. Nov. 4, 1863, for disability.  
Sydney Holbrook (22).  
James M. Claren (60), disch. Mar. 8, 1864, for disability.  
Charles W. Beal (24), disch. Nov. 1, 1863, for disability.  
George S. Low (20), disch. May 2, 1863; both feet amputated.  
Isaac B. Bray (22), disch. Nov. 12, 1862, for disability; wounded at battle of Antietam.  
David Brooks, Jr. (22), disch. Nov. 12, 1862, for disability; wounded at battle of Antietam.  
Calvin W. Pool, sergt. (28), disch. Feb. 12, 1864, for disability.  
Enoch A. Andersen (21), disch. Jan. 31, 1863, for disability.  
Daniel A. Whalen, corp. (23), disch. April 9, 1863, for disability.  
Josiah E. Savoy (27), disch. Nov. 16, 1862, for disability.  
Aaron H. Gluing, Jr. (24), went into the navy July 14, 1863; was killed at Fort Fisher.  
George Lisk (21), trans. May 21, 1864, to V. R. C.; was wounded at battle of Fredericksburg.  
Addison W. Tarr (20), trans. March 21, 1864, to V. R. C.; wounded at Fredericksburg.  
George Clark, sd. (28), disabled wounds May 18, 1864, at Spottsylvania, Va.  
James H. Bingham, corp. (30).  
Samuel Norwood (22).  
Newell Davis, corp. (20).  
Charles Davison, sergt. (20).  
Solomon D. Grimes, 1st sergt. (27), com. 2d Lieut. Nov. 29, 1864.  
John Wilks (23).  
Frederick Hooper (20).  
Henry S. Sylvester, corp. (21).  
John F. Esterline, disch. Mar. 12, 1864; lost right arm.

When the call for twenty-nine men was received, in July, 1862, a sort of apathy hung over the people. Some even said, "We cannot raise the men." A week or ten days after the requisition came, two or three of our citizens consulted in relation to it. As the results of this consultation, early one evening martial music was heard on our streets. The people gathered in goodly numbers. A halt was finally made at Dock Square. A meeting was organized by the choice of William Haskins, Esq., for chairman. Rev. David Bremner, of the Second Congregationalist Church, made an eloquent and patriotic speech. The audience was stirred. About ten o'clock the meeting adjourned to the next evening. At the time appointed the people came in great numbers. Music and speaking was now in order; the audience was awake to the situation, and the muster-roll was being filled, and within a few days the number called for was obtained. A meeting was held in the chapel on Broadway for religious purposes the evening before the recruits were to leave for Camp Stanton. As they were filing into the chapel a young man approached one of the recruits and said, "I will give you fifty dollars for your chance." Of course his offer was not accepted. Mark the change that took place within a few days by the efforts of a few men and the right kind of music. Surely Rockport was not dead; neither were the people fast asleep.

## 50TH REGT. (INFANTRY) MASS. VOLS. (9 MONTHS).

*Company B.*

*Mustered in Sept. 15, 1862, and mustered out Aug. 24, 1863, unless otherwise stated.*

Benj. F. Blatchford, 1st sergt. (27)	John Holbrook (20). <sup>6</sup>
James Stacy, sergt. (41)	Thos. Haskins (36). <sup>7</sup>
Marcius A. Hanna, sergt. (22)	John S. Knights (19).
David L. Tuttle, corp. (34).	Benj. F. Leighton (43).
Geo. W. Dade, corp. (29)	Wm. H. Lowe (22).
Edward C. Lane, corp. (21), must. in Oct. 9, 1862.	John M. Jannett (38).
James F. Tucker, corp. (30). <sup>1</sup>	Samuel M. Jannett, Jr. (28).
John Beals (18).	Charles B. Morse (19).
Jos. Beals (11). <sup>2</sup>	Geo. E. Morse (23).
Wm. A. Beals (21), must. in Oct. 29, 1862.	Living P. Patch (29). <sup>8</sup>
David P. Boynton, Jr. (30). <sup>3</sup>	John H. Peach (44).
Jas. Breen, Jr. (19)	Chas. Pettingill (24).
Peter Breen, Jr. (33)	Sath. W. Pettingill (29). <sup>9</sup>
Ephraim Brown (25)	Geo. H. Pierce (22).
Solomon Choate (22)	Calob N. Pool (30).
Hosea B. Clark (22). <sup>4</sup>	John A. Pool (18). <sup>10</sup>
David M. Day (12)	Rufus Pool (18)
Jos. G. Devon (39).	Benj. F. Sleeper (29)
Alvin F. Elwell (38)	Solomon Tarr (20)
Thaddeus Giles (30)	Wm. Tucker, Jr. (18). <sup>11</sup>
Wm. Goday (39). <sup>5</sup>	Wm. Tucker (42).
Jos. A. Griffin (18).	John M. Tuttle (32)
Wm. H. Grimes (20)	Andrew P. Wetherbee (18).
Richard W. Hill (21).	Geo. E. Wheeler (22)
	John Witham (35).

## 40TH REGT. (INFANTRY) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).

Alvah Abbot (40), Co. B, must. in Aug. 22, 1862; trans. July 2, 1863, to V. R. C.

## 1ST REGT. INFANTRY (AFTERWARDS 3D REGT.

## CAVALRY).

Robert Hill (22), Co. B, must. in Oct. 27, 1862.

It appears that soon after the nine months' men had gone, our quota was found to be different. The following three years' recruits were enlisted and attached to

## 3D REGT. (HEAVY ART.) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).

*Company A.*

*Mustered in January 19, 1863, unless otherwise stated.*

Geo. Bragdon, sergt. (31), pro. to 1st lieut. Oct. 1, 1863; must. out Sept. 18, 1865, exp. of service.  
Zeno A. Appleton, 2d lieut. (38), must. in Dec. 31, 1862; pro. to 1st lieut. Sept. 8, 1864; resigned Jan. 7, 1864.  
Wm. H. Lane, corp. (21), must. out Sept. 18, 1863, exp. of service.  
John Conly (41), disch. Jan. 6, 1864, for disability.  
Henry B. Paggett, sergt. (31), trans. Sept. 13, 1864, to the navy.  
Addison Huskell (18), trans. May 7, 1864, to the navy.  
Michael Knowlton (13), disch. Jan. 4, 1864, for disability.  
Peter Manning (18), trans. May 7, 1864, to the navy.  
Geo. Pool (27), trans. May 7, 1864, to the navy.  
Henry M. Pool (20), trans. May 7, 1864, to the navy.  
Geo. W. Thurston (26), trans. May 7, 1864, to the navy.  
Samuel Thurston (18), must. in March 10, 1863; trans. July 25, 1864, to the navy.  
Jos. W. West (36), must. out Sept. 18, 1865, exp. of service.

<sup>1</sup> Died May 19, 1863, at Baton Rouge, La.

<sup>2</sup> Disch. April 27, 1863, for disability.

<sup>3</sup> Died Nov. 3, 1863, at home.

<sup>4</sup> Died April 16, 1863, at New Orleans, La.

<sup>5</sup> Died at home Aug. 29, 1863.

<sup>6</sup> Accidentally shot and died of his wounds Mar. 19, 1863, in Louisiana.

<sup>7</sup> Died March 25, 1863, in Louisiana.

<sup>8</sup> Died June 3, 1863, at Baton Rouge, La.

<sup>9</sup> Died May 11, 1863, Baton Rouge, La.

<sup>10</sup> Died May 2, 1863, at Baton Rouge, La.

<sup>11</sup> Died Feb. 25, 1863, Quarantine Station, La.



At this point volunteering came to a standstill, waiting for the draft, which was expected and was soon ordered. It called for sixty-three men from this town. Ninety-four names were drawn; of this number, thirty-four passed the examination and paid the commutation fee or furnished substitutes at an aggregate cost of \$10,610; seven, without waiting for an examination, enlisted, October 20, 1863, in

3D REGT. (HEAVY ART.) (3 YEARS).

*Company G.*

*Mustered in October 20, 1863.*

Wm. F. Jefferson (18), must. out Sept. 18, 1865, exp. of service.  
Russel J. Wayton, Jr. (41), died July 21, 1864, at Fort Davis, D. C.  
Moses H. Grimes (21), must. out Sept. 18, 1865, exp. of service.  
Theodore P. Keene (28), died Aug. 1, 1864, Fort Davis, D. C.  
Chas. Paul, Jr. (47), must. out Sept. 18, 1865, exp. of service.  
Jos. D. Paul (25), must. out Sept. 18, 1865, exp. of service.  
Benj. F. West (27), must. out Sept. 18, 1865, exp. of service.  
Geo. Wheeler (22), must. out Sept. 18, 1865, exp. of service.  
Thos. A. Knowlton, enlisted in the navy.

Drafting having proven a failure, a call was issued in October, 1863, by the President, for three hundred thousand volunteers, of which our quota was seventy-nine.

Immediately after the official notice a subscription was made to aid recruiting. Five hundred and fifty-two dollars were subscribed, of which five hundred and thirty-five dollars was collected and devoted to that purpose.

An order having been issued by the War Department authorizing the re-enlistment of soldiers in the field who had seen two years' service, one of the Board of Selectmen (Henry Dentris, Esq.) was sent to Newbern, N. C., to confer with our men in the Seventeenth Regiment, and offers were also made to other regiments in the field in which were men from Rockport. Lieutenant Benjamin F. Blatchford had opened a recruiting office, and aided the efforts of the recruiting committee in obtaining volunteers. They felt that some testimonial should be tendered him for his services. They accordingly presented him with a sword, sash and belt. This act was by him highly appreciated.

In the month of February, 1864, an additional call was made for two hundred thousand men, which brought our quota up to one hundred and fourteen. The result of answering these calls was as follows:

2D REGT. (HEAVY ART.) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).

*Company H.*

John J. Fay (18), must. in Dec. 22, 1863, must. out Sept. 3, 1865, exp. of service.  
John Knights (20), must. in Dec. 22, 1863, must. out Sept. 3, 1865, exp. of service.

*Company K.*

*Mustered in December 22, 1863, and mustered out September 3, 1865, unless otherwise stated.*

Benj. F. Blatchford, 1st lieut.	John J. McKenney, sergt. (21).
2nd "	Seward Harwood, corp. (31).
Marion A. Hanna, 1st sergt. (21).	Jas. Brown, Jr. (38).
James Brown, Jr., sergt. (20).	Solomon Knights, Jr. (18).

<sup>1</sup> Mustered in Oct. 7, 1863, as 2d lieut.; pro. to 1st lieut. June 21, 1865.

<sup>2</sup> Pro. to 2d lieut. April 21, 1865.

Daniel Mengold (38).	Rufus Pool (18)
Freeman Mitchell (18).	William E. Saunders (25).
Albert Norwood (20).	Charles C. Sewall (19)
Alfred Norwood (21).	John Sweeney (21)
Eben P. Pool (19).	Leonard Waten, Jr. (19)

56TH REGT. (INFANTRY) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).

*Company B.*

John N. Barton, corp. (30), must. in Dec. 26, 1863, dish. May 29, 1865, for disability.  
John Collins (35), must. in Feb. 7, 1865, dish. June 20, 1865, by order of War Dept.

VETERANS RE-ENLISTED.

32D REGT. MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).

*Company D.*

*Mustered in Jan. 3, 1865, unless otherwise stated.*

Winthrop Pickering, must. out June 29, 1865, exp. of service.  
Eben Pickering, mus., must. out June 29, 1865, exp. of service.  
Jos. H. Wingood, corp., wounded in battle of Wilderness May 12, 1864, must. out April 27, 1865.  
Sylvanus B. Babson, sergt., killed May 18, 1864, at battle of Laurel Hill, Va.  
Walter Johnson, must. in Feb. 27, 1864; killed May 30, 1864, at battle of Shady Grove, Va.  
Jos. H. Sewall, sergt., must. in Mar. 10, 1864, must. out June 20, 1865, exp. of service.  
Horace M. Eaton, Co. H, must. out June 29, 1865, exp. of service.

30TH REGT. INFANTRY (3 YEARS).

*Company K.*

*Mustered in Jan. 2, 1864, unless otherwise stated.*

Jos. Hodgkins, mus., must. out Jan. 20, 1865, exp. of service.  
Wm. P. Clark (3d), dish. June 3, 1864.  
Philip Devos, must. out Jan. 20, 1865, exp. of service.  
Jas. Kenney, must. out Jan. 20, 1865, exp. of service.  
Eugene Prior, 1st sergt., must. in Feb. 13, 1864, pro. to 2d lieut. Jan. 25, 1865; must. out July 5, 1865, exp. of service.  
Archibald McPhee, must. out Feb. 7, 1865, exp. of service.  
Frank Wheeler, died of wounds Sept. 29, 1864, at Winchester, Va.  
Adison Wheeler, sergt., must. in Feb. 13, 1864; must. out July 5, 1865, exp. of service.  
George Frost, sergt., must. out Jan. 20, 1865, exp. of service.

17TH REGT. (INFANTRY) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).

*Company G.*

George Elwell, sergt. (31), must. in Jan. 2, 1864; must. out July 11, 1865, exp. of service.  
Wm. H. Davis, sergt. (20), must. in Dec. 27, 1863, must. out July 11, 1865, exp. of service.  
John Reeves (22), must. in Dec. 31, 1863; must. out June 10, 1865, exp. of service.  
Hugh Strain (22), must. in Jan. 2, 1864; must. out July 22, 1865, exp. of service.  
Chas. H. Gove (21), must. in Dec. 29, 1863; died Sept. 29, 1864, at Newbern, N. C.

22D REGT. (INFANTRY) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).

Josiah Walker (21), Co. M, must. in Dec. 23, 1863; dish. July 12, 1865, by order of War Dept.

1ST REGT. (HEAVY ART.) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).

Samuel F. Lefflon (25), Co. I, must. in Dec. 7, 1863; killed June 16, 1864, at Petersburg, Va.  
Augustus McClain (30), Co. M, must. in March 24, 1864; trans. April 1, 1864, to navy.  
George S. Phillips, corp. (34), Co. M, must. in March 10, 1864; trans. Apr. 24, 1864, to navy.

<sup>4</sup> Died May 16, 1865, at Fortress Monroe.





## 59TH REGT. (INFANTRY) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).

*Company G.*

Nathl. Richardson, Jr. (23), must. in Mar. 4, 1864; disch. Jan. 14, 1865, for disability.

Joseph H. Hilliard (19), must. in March 4, 1864; trans. June 10, 1865, to 57th Infantry.

Chas. Dellmond (21), must. in Feb. 9, 1864.

—making fifty-eight, including the three that enlisted in Company G, Third Regiment Heavy Artillery—one-half of the number called for.

To make up the deficiency, a credit was given us of those who had paid commutation or furnished substitutes, viz., thirty-four; also the seven who enlisted without examination. A claim of thirteen men in the navy, after much persistence, was allowed. We had now satisfied the call within three for which the draft in May, 1864, was made.

A contribution was made by men liable to draft, and the commutation money—nine hundred dollars—was paid, which completed the call for one hundred and fourteen men.

Hardly had we got over this, hoping to enjoy a slight respite from the anxiety consequent upon such demands, when, in July, 1864, another call for three hundred thousand men was made,—the darkest period in the history of recruiting during the war. Our quota under this call was seventy-one. How to obtain them was a serious question, financially and mentally. The edict had gone forth that they must be furnished before the 5th of the following September.

Recruits could be obtained, but at prices that were appalling to slim purses and towns of limited means.

But an effort must be made. We entered the field with competitors from other towns (and they were many), every one anxious and earnest to relieve the fears of his constituents.

To enable the recruiting committee to prosecute their work, a fund of five thousand nine hundred and ten dollars was raised, by the payment of twenty dollars each by those liable to draft (some contributed who were not liable). This sum was in addition to what the town, as a municipality, would pay.

The sum raised was insufficient. A tax was assessed on those who were willing to pay, and the sum of three thousand eight hundred and forty dollars was realized. With these sums the following men were enlisted:

## 5TH REGT. (CAVALRY) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).

George Davis (34), Co. L, must. in Aug. 5, 1864; must. out June 28, 1865, exp. of service.

John Wilson (29), Co. B, must. in Aug. 27, 1864.

## 1ST REGT. (HEAVY ART.) MASS. VOLS. (1 YEAR).

Michael Clifford (19), Co. B, must. in Aug. 19, 1864; must. out May 29, 1865, exp. of service.

## VETERAN RESERVE CORPS (3 YEARS).

Amos E. Flowers (39), must. in Aug. 18, 1864; must. out Nov. 16, 1865, by order of War Dept.

Robert Chisholm (28), must. in Aug. 29, 1864; must. out Nov. 14, 1865, by order of War Dept.

## 2D REGT. (HEAVY ART.) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).

Barth Crowley (21), Co. D, must. in Aug. 23, 1864; must. out June 29, 1865, exp. of service.

## 2D REGT. (CAVALRY) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).

William King (19), Co. I, must. in Aug. 31, 1864; must. out May 8, 1865, exp. of service.

## UNATTACHED HEAVY ARTILLERY (1 YEAR).

*29th Company.*

Wm. M. Twombly (19), corp., must. in Aug. 30, 1864; must. out June 16, 1865, exp. of service.

Levi Appleby (31), must. in Aug. 31, 1864; must. out June 16, 1865, exp. of service.

## 4TH REGT. (HEAVY ART.) MASS. VOLS. (1 YEAR).

*Company G.*

*Mustered out June 17, 1865, unless otherwise stated.*

Matthew McGrath (21), must. in Aug. 19, 1864.

William McGrath (21), must. in Aug. 19, 1864.

Jeremiah Murphy (29), must. in Aug. 23, 1864.

John Cosgrove (21), must. in Aug. 19, 1864.

Leon Deshon (27), must. in Aug. 23, 1864.

John W. Kirby (19), must. in Aug. 22, 1864.

*Company I.*

Nelson A. Mowton (20), sergt., must. in Aug. 20, 1864; disch. Jan. 5, 1865, app. to U. S. C. T.

William H. Roberts (22), must. in Aug. 20, 1864.

John Ward (21), must. in Aug. 20, 1864.

*Company M.*

Joseph A. Griffin (18), must. in Aug. 18, 1864.

Richard W. Hill (23), must. in Aug. 23, 1864.

Charles Knowlton, Jr. (57), must. in Aug. 23, 1864.

Melville H. Knowlton (21), must. in Aug. 23, 1864.

*Three years by substitute.*

John G. Dennis.

Allen G. Lane.

Edwin Leighton.

## 2D BATT. LIGHT ART., MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).

*Mustered out June 11, 1865.*

John Dalton (21), must. in Aug. 27, 1864.

Michael Moran (21), must. in Aug. 30, 1864.

John J. McMahon (21), must. in Aug. 29, 1864.

## 3D REGT. (HEAVY ART.) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).

*Company M.*

*Must. in Aug. 26, 1864; mustered out June 17, 1865.*

Charles Curtin (21).

Frank Eaton (21).

## 61ST REGT. (INFANTRY) MASS. VOLS. (1 YEAR).

*Company B.*

*Mustered out June 4, 1865, unless otherwise stated.*

Barth McDonald (41), must. in Aug. 27, 1864.

John McClellan (18), must. in Aug. 29, 1864.

George L. Moller (17), must. in Aug. 29, 1864.

Timothy O'Brien (26), must. in Aug. 29, 1864.

Stephen Rowe (30), must. in Aug. 30, 1864.

Thomas Tuesent (22), must. in Aug. 30, 1864.

John O'Connell (30), must. in Sept. 2, 1864.

Dennis Buckley (19), must. in Sept. 1, 1864; disch. March 15, 1865, for disability.

Peter Donahoe (22), must. in Sept. 2, 1864.

Our means at this time having become exhausted, forty-one men having been enlisted, the committee were about thirteen thousand dollars in debt; with the expectation that the State would furnish twenty-five per cent. of the call, and that, with the allowance to be made us for naval recruits, the demand would





be satisfied, the committee awaited further developments.

The final summing up of the affair in September resulted in our having a surplus of twenty-one men; the State up to this time had furnished but two, and one representative recruit. The reason of this surplus was the division of the naval recruits and the claim we made for men enlisted in the navy.

During the summer of this year (1864) one hundred days' men were called for. We furnished eight, viz., Ivory Lane, Beaman Smith, George Rowe, John F. Brooks, Benjamin G. Brooks, Albert W. Hale, D. W. Tuttle and John Beals; they all enlisted in Company G, Eighth Regiment Massachusetts Volunteers, and were mustered into service July 18, 1864, and were discharged at expiration of service, November 10th the same year.

In December of this year (1864), an opportunity offering to get some of the men in our quota who were enlisting in the Twenty-fifth Unattached Company of Infantry for one year, for the town bounty (one hundred and twenty-five dollars), we embraced the opportunity and succeeded in obtaining twenty-three, viz.:

Andrew Anderson.	Eben N. Burnham
Charles Beaman.	John E. Cogans.
Charles Day.	Joseph Edwell.
George H. Friend.	Henry Lufkin.
Thomas Owen.	Charles Tibbels.
James H. Wilkins.	Alonso P. Carlton.
Howard Edwell.	John C. McLeod.
Edward S. Ross.	David Oster.
Wm. S. Snow.	John McKennin.
Joseph W. Perkins.	Isaac Averill, Jr.
Reed F. Perkins.	Thomas R. Wallace.
Eben Day.	

—or seven and two-thirds three years' men. They were mustered into service December, 1864, and January, 1865, and were all discharged at expiration of service, June 29, 1865.

As the government had decided to give towns credit on the basis of a three years' man for three one year's men, we were still deficient, as decided by the provost-marshal, of twelve men, or thirty-six one year's men. To meet this deficiency, a fund of two thousand dollars was raised by the men liable to draft, and with this money we continued to put men into the service till the latter part of March, 1865, and exceeded our quota.

But having money to work with, we concluded that it was best to keep on the credit side and be prepared for any future emergency, for disaster might again overtake our army, and another call be made for troops. Many towns were doing the same thing. The following is the final result:

**VETERAN RESERVE CORPS, MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).**  
Charles M. Wilkinson (43), must. in Dec. 5, 1864; must. out Nov. 30, 1865, by order of War Dept.

**11TH REGT. (CAVALRY) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).**

Fred. L. Grant (20), Co. C, must. in March 1, 1865; died March 13, 1865, on str. "Blackstone."

**1ST BATT'N HEAVY ART., MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).**

*Company B.*

Christopher C. Williams (21), must. in Dec. 2, 1864; must. out June 29, 1865, exp. of service.

Louis H. Williams (18), must. in Dec. 2, 1864; must. out June 29, 1865, exp. of service.

Samuel Johnson (33), must. in Nov. 29, 1864; must. out Oct. 20, 1865, exp. of service.

**6TH BATT. LIGHT ART., MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).**

*Mustered in Dec. 3, 1864; mustered out Aug. 7, 1865.*

Brewer F. Randall (22).

James Dorgan (19).

**56TH REGT. (INFANTRY) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).**

*Company B.*

John Collins (55), must. in Feb. 7, 1865; must. out June 20, 1865, by order of War Dept.

Daniel Meagher (35), must. in March 15, 1865; must. out July 21, 1865, by order of War Dept.

**31ST REGT. (INFANTRY) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).**

*Company B.*

John O'Donnell (30), must. in Feb. 9, 1865; must. out Feb. 9, 1865, rejected recruit.

Charles Hartman (41), must. in Feb. 21, 1865; must. out Sept. 9, 1865, exp. of service.

**19TH REGT. (INFANTRY) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).**

Christian Zeh (38), Co. E, must. in Feb. 18, 1865; must. out June 3, 1865, exp. of service.

**2D REGT. (CAVALRY) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).**

*Mustered out July 20, 1865.*

Timothy Conner (21), Co. F, must. in Feb. 18, 1865.

Bernard McQuade (27), Co. M, must. in Feb. 9, 1865.

Chas. A. Cummings (24), Co. G, must. in Feb. 16, 1865.

Patrick McGinn (29), Co. D, must. in Feb. 13, 1865.

Thos. Hickey (18), Co. C, must. in Feb. 1, 1865.

**61ST REGT. (INFANTRY) MASS. VOLS. (1 YEAR).**

Timothy Altman (28), Co. H, must. in March 1, 1865; must. out June 15, 1865, exp. of service.

Theodore C. Weld (18), Co. H, must. in Mar. 8, 1865; died May 22, '65, at Alexandria, Va.

**14TH BATTERY (LIGHT ART.) MASS. VOLS.**

Wm. Campbell (24), must. in Mar. 1, 1865; must. out June 15, 1865, exp. of service.

Jas. Dunne (21), must. in Mar. 6, 1865; must. out June 15, 1865, exp. of service.

**13TH BATTERY (LIGHT ART.) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).**

Robt. Topping (21), must. in Mar. 17, 1865; must. out July 28, 1865, exp. of service.

**62D REGT. (INFANTRY) MASS. VOLS. (1 YEAR).**

Henry B. Sprague, 1st sergt. (33), Co. B, must. in Mar. 16, 1865; must. out May 5, 1865, exp. of service.

Jas. Lowery (30), Co. A, must. in Mar. 14, 1865; must. out May 5, 1865, exp. of service.

**24TH REGT. (INFANTRY) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).**

Michael J. Burke (18), Co. E, must. in Feb. 23, 1865; must. out Jan. 20, 1866, exp. of service.

**55TH REGT. (INFANTRY) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).**

Andrew Williams (23), must. in Mar. 11, 1865; must. out May 15, 1865, exp. of service.

**U. S. VETERAN (HANCOCK CORPS).**

Patrick Kenney (30), must. in March 11, 1865; must. out Mar. 11, 1866.



**30TH REGT. (INFANTRY) MASS. VOLS. (3 YEARS).**

Willis G. Merrill (1st, Co. G, must. in March 10, 1863; must. out Mar. 10, 1866, exp. of service.  
 Samuel P. Dow (1st, Co. G, must. in Mar. 10, 1863; must. out Mar. 10, 1866, exp. of service.

Names of those who enlisted in the navy are as follows, viz.:

Michael Allen.....	Gunboat "Guard "
Patrick Allen.....	"Brooklyn "
Moses H. Cleaves.....	Master's Mate
George Cleaves.....	Master's Mate
John Griffin.....	"Delaware "
Alfred Gosay.....	
Levi Hill.....	Died at New Orleans April 11, 1864
Lawrence Griffin.....	Died April 16, 1863
Aaron Hodgkins, Jr.....	Killed at Fort Fisher, "Colorado "
George Hodgkins.....	"Penobscot "
Chas. Hasche (old).....	"Jas. S. Chambers "
Benj. F. Jacobs.....	Master's Mate, "Housatonic "
Henry M. Law.....	Paymaster's Clerk
George McLane.....	"Tahoma "
John C. Brime.....	Died at Key West Nov. 26, 1862
Arthur T. Parsons.....	Ensign, "Cherokee "
Thos. Parsons.....	Gunboat "Guard "
John Porter.....	Died at Philadelphia Dec. 1861
Chas. L. Pyle.....	"Scipio "
Wm. P. Tabor.....	On the "Cumberland" when she sank
Francis W. Stewart.....	
John Sanderson.....	"Pursuit "
Alvin Smith.....	Frigate "Roanoke," and Gunboat "Southfield "
Wm. N. Tarr.....	Died at Memphis May 5, 1863
Robt. Tarr, Pro. to Lieut. Commanding "Isaac Smith " and	Gunboat "Queen."
Michael Finney.....	"Portsmouth "
Michael Welch.....	"Pensacola "
Thos. H. Welch.....	"Cumberland "
Jas. Pool.....	"Brooklyn "
Jas. H. Stillman.....	Barque "Roebuck "
Wm. Wingood, Jr., Ensign "Ossipee," was at the capture of	Michie.
Thos. A. Knowlton.....	
Simon Knights.....	
Henry C. Robinson, Ensign.....	
Thos. Westworth.....	
Adrian Reed.....	Asst. Paymaster's Mate, Monitor "Mahopac "
Wm. Caldwell, Jr., Ensign Steward "May Seward" and "Ma-	hopac."
James Parsons.....	
Asa T. Sargent.....	
Calvin W. Pool.....	Paymaster's Steward, Monitor "Mahopac "

The total number of men furnished by the town for the army was three hundred and fifty-eight, for the navy forty-one. Paid commutation, thirty-four.

The adjutant-general, in his report for 1865, gives Rockport sixty-three more men than its quota.

The cost to the town for furnishing men under the several	
calls was.....	\$29,094.80
Deduct the amount reimbursed by the State.....	15,000.00
Leaving a balance of.....	14,094.80
Contributed by individuals.....	12,186.60
Paid by drafted men in 1867.....	10,610.00
Paid by individuals for substitutes.....	1,530.00
	\$39,421.80

On the 11th day of August, 1863, a portion of Company B, Fiftieth Regiment (thirty-six men), arrived from Fort Hudson, their term of service (nine months) having expired; they were cordially received by the citizens.

The next day, the 12th inst. after a short march, they formed line in front of the Congregationalist Church, at nine o'clock A.M., where a more formal reception was tendered them. Prayer was offered by Rev. Wakefield Gale, Capt. Josiah Haskell chairman, on this occasion, welcomed them by an appropriate address. Benjamin H. Smith, Jr., a former resident, spoke words of welcome and cheer. He was followed with a speech by the Hon. Franklin Pierce, ex-President of the United States, who was rusticiating a few weeks at Pigeon Cove. Rev. Stillman Barden, pastor of the Universalist Church, gave them a hearty greeting.

At eleven o'clock A.M. the soldiers and Pigeon Cove Engine Company, with invited guests, marched to Votery Engine Hall and partook of an excellent collation provided by the ladies.

Seven men that went out with this company from Rockport died abroad during their term of service.

How every loyal heart rejoiced when on that April day (1865) the news of the surrender of Lee to the Union forces, on wings of lightning, was heralded throughout the length and breadth of our land, the Union saved and we destined to become a more united people, as the procuring cause of disunion and war is now dead and buried past resurrection.

But how soon was our joy turned to mourning as the sad news fell upon our ears: "President Lincoln is assassinated." Shot by Wilkes Booth on the evening of April 14, 1865, at ten o'clock, he died at twenty-two minutes past seven the next morning. A telegram announcing his death was received here at nine o'clock A.M.

On Wednesday, the 19th inst., by proclamation of John A. Andrew, Governor, all the towns and cities within the Commonwealth were requested to hold a funeral service at twelve o'clock noon—a memorial of respect for this great and good man so suddenly taken from his high post of usefulness.

At the hour appointed the audience gathered in such numbers as to fill the Congregationalist Church to its utmost capacity, which was fittingly draped in mourning on this solemn occasion. An appropriate prayer was offered by Rev. Wakefield Gale; selections of Scripture were read by Rev. A. B. Wheeler, of the Methodist Church; an interesting and appropriate address was delivered by Rev. L. H. Angier, of the Second Congregational Church (pastors of other churches were out of town); hymns suitable to the occasion were sung by the choir. All of the services were solemn and impressive. Surely the 19th day of April was a day of sadness to all loyal hearts; but even in loyal States all did not mourn. This is the exception, not the rule; perhaps it is better to pity than blame.

During the day flags were displayed at half-mast, and the several church bells were tolled; business was very generally suspended.





## CHAPTER CXV..

## ROCKPORT—(Continued).

*Donation—Town Hall—Defective Highway—A Great Gale—Rescue of Three Young Men from Drowning—Town Library—Rescued Marines—Muster of Gildings—Landing of the Bennett and Mackey Commercial Cattle—Donation of a Clock—Deceased Physicians—The Sea-Sergeant—A Bomb-Sail in Church—Deceased Clergymen—The Rockport Review—Coal and Ice—Telegraph Communication—Mutual Marine Insurance—Lycæum—College for Girls—Young Men's Christian Association—Abolition—Roads—Town Officers.*

**DONATION.**—A donation was made to the town of Rockport by David Kimball, Esq., of Boston, formerly of this town.

" Boston, March 1, 1867.

" TO THE SELECTMEN OF ROCKPORT:

" Being desirous of presenting to my native town a testimony of remembrance, I respectfully tender to the inhabitants of the town of Rockport, in their corporate capacity—in trust—sixty shares of the capital stock of the Sandy Bay Pier Company, as a permanent fund; the income thereof to be expended annually, forever, for the following purposes, and in the manner following, to-wit:

" The income from fifty shares shall be distributed by the selectmen for the time being, at their discretion, to such of the American born inhabitants as are sick or infirm, who are unable to procure the comforts needful to their situation.

" No part of this fund, or its income, shall ever be used for the relief of those who are supported or assisted by the town.

" The income from the remaining ten shares shall be paid annually to those having the charge of, and oversight of, the public schools, to be by them expended for the purchase of books, to be given as prizes to the most deserving scholars. It is my wish that the prizes may be distributed in all classes—to the lowest as well as the highest—and not confined to the most talented and advanced scholars, but also given to such as distinguish themselves by their good behavior and who manifest a desire to improve, though less gifted by nature.

" Very Respectfully

" Yours, etc.,

" DAVID KIMBALL."

The town took action as follows:

" At a meeting of the inhabitants of Rockport, qualified to vote in town affairs, held March 4, 1867.

" Article 30 of the warrant being under consideration, which article was as follows, to-wit:—

" To be heard and acted upon a communication from David Kimball, of Boston, the following action was had:

" The communication from David Kimball, Esq., of Boston, presenting to the inhabitants of the town of Rockport—in trust—sixty shares of the capital stock of the Sandy Bay Pier Company as a permanent fund, was read to the meeting, by the chairman of the board of selectmen, and on motion it was voted unanimously the acceptance of the same by the town, and that the thanks and gratitude of this large meeting be presented to the donor. A true copy of record.

" AUGUST CALVIN W. POOL,

" Town Clerk.

" JOHN W. MARSHALL,

" Rockport, Mass."

**TOWN HALL.**—The need of a town hall for the transaction of town business and the accommodation of its officers, and for lectures, had been agitated from time to time, but the enterprise did not receive the favor of the voters until the year 1869. At the annual March meeting the town voted to purchase a lot and erect a town hall thereon, and appropriated thirty thousand dollars to carry this vote into effect.

A committee was chosen at this meeting with full power.

This committee consisted of the selectmen, who

were Francis Tarr, Jr., Austin W. Story and William Caldwell; the town treasurer, Dr. Joseph Manning; and three other citizens, viz.: James W. Bradley, Henry Dennis, Jr., and Samuel York.

A lot was purchased\* on Broadway, and the building was erected the same year. D. Somes Watson, of Gloucester, was the contractor and builder. The whole cost of the structure, including the furniture, as appears by the auditor's report, was \$36,221.56.

The hall was dedicated in December of that year by a concert by Gilmore's Band and solos by Arbuckle, which gave good satisfaction.

A course of lectures were given that winter with good success.

**DEFECTIVE HIGHWAYS.**—In addition to the expense of building the town hall this year (1869), the town was called upon to pay a large bill, \$9376.84, to Mr. J. E. Hartwell and Miss Ada Babson for damages alleged to have been sustained by them by a defect of the highway over which they were traveling. This case was entered some two years before, but came to final judgment this year. As these parties were riding it appears that from some cause the horse became unmanageable. Mr. Hartwell got out of the carriage and attempted to restrain the horse, but, notwithstanding all his efforts, the horse and carriage went down a steep embankment, there happened to be a vacancy in the wall protecting the travel on the road just wide enough to allow the carriage to go through. Miss Babson claimed to be severely injured, also Mr. Hartwell to some extent; hence the award. The town has been called upon in two other cases for personal damages on account of defect in the highway, one of which was the case of Ambrose Hodgkins—final judgment, 1875, sixteen hundred and ninety-three dollars, which includes cost of defense. The other was the case of Jacob B. Goldsmith, six hundred and twenty-four dollars, which includes the cost of the defense—final judgment in this case was in 1886.

**A GREAT GALE.**—On the afternoon of the 8th of September, 1869, this section of the country was visited with a terrific gale of wind from the southeast. Fruit and ornamental trees in this town suffered great damage. Some were uprooted, others were stripped of their foliage and in some cases, of their limbs. Fruit lay scattered in every direction. Great damage was done to shipping on the coast and many lives were lost. Schooner "Helen Eliza," of this town, went ashore on Peak's Island in Portland harbor and was totally lost, and the entire crew of twelve men, except one. Edward J. Millett, master, left a widow and two children, Emerson Colby left a widow and five children, Frederick T. Lane left a widow, David B. Harris and George Wood each left a widow, Albert Tarr, Joel Fairbanks, Benj. Lurvey, Charles H. Clark, James Bray, George W. Clark, unmarried. Charles Jordan was the only survivor. Years before, Jordan was shipwrecked on Cape Cod;



of a crew of thirty-seven, he only was saved. In 1873 he was struck by a passing train when serving as bridge-tender over Charles River, for the Boston and Maine Railroad, and survived his injuries but two weeks,—though twice saved from disaster, he finally died from injuries received while in the line of duty. Seven of the bodies were recovered and were brought home for interment. Four at one time were buried from the Congregationalist Church. Services were conducted by the pastor, Rev. James W. Cooper. They were very impressive and appropriate to the occasion, and were listened to by a large and sympathizing audience. The "Helen Eliza" was 33.63 tons, was owned by Capt. Millett and others, was insured in the Gloucester Mutual Insurance Office for \$1050.

The schooner "Yankee Girl," Capt. Atwood, of this town, was lost in the same gale and probably near the same place, with all on board—eleven persons—Capt. Clifton Atwood and son Horace, twelve years of age; (Capt. Atwood left a widow and two children, Freeman and Henry Abbot, the former left a widow and one child); Alfred Giles, Thomas Williams, David H. Elwell, unmarried; James Cann, of Rockland, Me.; James Kellogg, of Maine, widow and one child; Isaac Forester, of East Boston, and one other man name unknown. The "Yankee Girl" was 26.12 tons, valued at \$2800; one-half insured at the Rockport Office; was owned by the master and others. Other disasters were, schooner "Franklin D. Schenck" had her masts, jib-boom, everything carried away. One of the crew, Fred. Brown, had his arm badly injured. The vessel was towed into Portland, Me. Schooner "Neptune" lost foresail, anchor and cable. Schooner "Charles Frederic" lost mainsail and jib. Schooner "Rockaway" lost foresail and anchors. Schooner "Rebecca N. Atwood" lost fifteen barrels of mackerel, cable and both anchors. Schooner "Sparkling Bellow" lost cable and anchors. Schooner "E. N. Williams" lost foresail and bulwarks. Schooner "Lizzie D. Saunders" was knocked down by a sea and lost thirty barrels of mackerel, and had sailsplit. Schooner "Sea Breeze" lost seine-boat. The foregoing belonged to this town. We seldom, if ever, experienced a gale of such violence. Eighteen of the twenty-two men lost with the two vessels were citizens of this town. It was a sad day.

November 26th the same year a heavy north-east gale damaged the Rockport Granite Company's breakwater to a considerable extent.

**THE RESCUE OF THREE YOUNG MEN FROM DROWNING.**—Mr. James Rowe, on the 22d of October, 1869, then more than sixty years of age, was out in the bay in his dory setting his nets. Directly his attention was called to a sinking dory on which were three young men in imminent danger. He, as it were in a moment, cleared his dory of the nets and rowed with all his strength towards the sinking men and succeeded by almost superhuman strength in rescuing the three from a watery grave. They were

George L. and Jabez E., sons of Newall and Elizabeth Giles, and George, son of Edwin and Patience Paul.

For this act of heroism and strength these young men and their parents hold him in high esteem.

The Massachusetts Humane Society recognized this humane and skillful service by presenting Mr. Rowe with a handsomely framed diploma.

**TOWN LIBRARY.**—The first winter the new Town Hall was occupied a committee procured a course of lectures of an high order and by men of talent. They were well patronized. Notwithstanding the high cost, the committee had in hand after all expenses were paid about two hundred dollars. This sum they generously proposed to donate toward the establishing of a town library, provided the town would appropriate a like amount to the same object. The proposition was accepted, and at the annual March meeting in 1871 the two hundred dollars was appropriated, and the next year the town appropriated an additional two hundred dollars and the dog tax. The dog tax has been appropriated for the same object each year since, and in 1881, '82, '83 and '85 an additional sum of one hundred dollars each year; in 1877 one hundred and fifty dollars was appropriated. A donation of twenty-nine volumes has been received from S. Adams Choate. The children of our late and esteemed fellow-citizen, John G. Dennis, in accordance with a purpose of their father which he failed to accomplish, have donated to the town for the use of the library five hundred dollars. The library now contains about twenty five hundred volumes, and it is well patronized. The Library Committee are, Henri N. Woods, N. F. S. York and Francis Tarr; Librarian, Miss Elsie Dunn.

**AGRICULTURE.**—In the early years of the settlement of Sandy Bay the enterprise of the people was divided between agriculture and fishing, but the latter predominated.

We are told that as late as nearly the close of the last century or the opening of the present there was not hay enough raised in Sandy Bay for the wintering of their stock, and that they were dependent upon Chebacco and Ipswich to a considerable extent for salt hay, which was transported here in boats. During the present century there has been a great advance of this industry. Many acres of swamp and rocky pasture have been converted into fruitful fields. From 1836 to 1840, while the breakwater and wharves were being built at Long Cove, many acres of land were cleared of stone that was used in these works. The stone business, as it assumed proportions, called for hay for the feeding of cattle employed by the quarries. This incited our farmers to greater efforts in their line of business, as they had a ready market for their product. Now, in these later years, the great increase of population and in the fishing fleet of Gloucester call for an increased amount of vegetable food. Thus having a ready market near home,





our farmers are stimulated to greater efforts to supply this demand. With their improved methods and liberal use of fertilizers, it would seem that our farming interest has nearly doubled within the last ten or fifteen years.

Horticulture has greatly advanced during the last sixty years. The town is well supplied with fruit-trees, which almost every year yield a large supply.

While our fishing interest has decreased, our agricultural interest has greatly increased, and the stone business, whose infancy was in 1824, now assumes large proportions, employing about five hundred men.

**RESCUED MARINERS.**—Schooner "Cora Lee," of Pigeon Cove, George A. Saunders, master, while engaged in setting trawls on Jeffrey's Bank, about thirty miles east-northeast from Cape Ann, about eight o'clock on the morning of January 5, 1882, saw in the distance a boat showing a signal of distress. They immediately left their trawls and made for the boat with all possible speed. When they arrived alongside, a sad sight presented itself. The boat contained five men nearly exhausted for want of water and food and from exposure to the severe cold. Some of the number were badly frosted; two others lay dead in the boat; one other, the second mate, had died, and him they buried in the ocean. The live men were at once taken on board the "Cora Lee," where every attention possible was paid them. The schooner, with the boat in tow, immediately made for Pigeon Cove, that being the nearest port. The wind was light and towards night was nearly calm. Two of the crew manned the dory, and with their two sets of oars pulled for the harbor. The wind being light, these men could row the dory faster than the schooner could sail. They were anxious to obtain medical aid at the earliest possible moment. The "Cora Lee" arrived at Pigeon Cove at early evening. Drs. Sanborn and Tupper had been summoned by the earlier arrival of the dory; therefore they were on hand ready to attend to the relief of the sufferers. They were taken at once to the boarding-house of Mrs. Ann Pierce, where every attention was paid them. They received the best medical attendance and the most careful nursing. The dead were taken to the Pigeon Cove Engine-House and were watched over by members of the company. Suitable grave-clothes and neat coffins were provided. Members of the engine company and Mrs. Bishop provided flowers in good supply. Sabbath afternoon they were removed to the chapel. A large and sympathizing audience witnessed the very interesting and appropriate funeral service,—Singing by a Union choir; other services by Rev. R. B. Howard, Congregationalist; Rev. Edwin Davis, Universalist; and Rev. John Capen, Methodist. The boarding-house where the disabled ones were being cared for was near by the chapel. Thus they, as it were, could almost participate in the funeral service.

These men proved to be the captain and crew of the schooner "Almon Bird," of Rockland, Me., from Windsor, N. S., loaded with plaster, bound to Alexandria, Va. She was boarded by a heavy sea on Sunday night, January 1st, a few miles west-southwest of Boon Island, which broke down her hatches and also caused her to leak. Monday morning, the captain and seven men took the boat. They were able to supply themselves with but a small quantity of water and provisions. Some of the men were but scantily clothed. The weather was very cold; there was a heavy breeze from the northwest accompanied with snow. Thus for four days these men were exposed to this severe weather. It seems almost a miracle that any of them were spared. The captain suffered the amputation of several toes. Ferdinand Hamilton, who was the most severely frosted, died on 13th inst. His body was taken to Rockland, Me., for burial. Generous contributions were made for the sufferers. The Boston Globe Company sent a check of fifty dollars. The crew of the "Cora Lee" did not stop to estimate the cost of their trawls or the loss of their fishing trip, but as soon as they espied the signal of distress, hastened with all possible speed to relieve the wants of the sufferers. They were cooking chicken broth for their dinner. What more opportune for the suffering men! The crew of the "Cora Lee" performed a noble act and they should ever be held in grateful remembrance.

The citizens of Pigeon Cove were lavish in their attentions to these suffering men. Had their pockets been filled with gold, it could not have bought more skillful medical aid or provided them with more careful nursing. Their names were C. A. Packard (captain), William Harriman, Allen Small, A. R. Henderson, Ferdinand Hamilton, died on shore; Hiram Small, Patrick Hagan and Charles Staples, died on board the boat.

**MURDER OF GILMAN.**—The second murder committed in the parish or town was done under the following circumstances. On the 11th day of April, 1877, two men, among others, came in on the nine o'clock forenoon train. The two specially noticed were Albert Joy and Charles H. Gilman; it seems they were from Lowell. Their business was to sell some article to attach to sewing-machines. They had tarried at several places between Lowell and Rockport; they spent several days in Beverly. During the forenoon in Rockport they parted company; Gilman went down town and called at several houses for the purpose of selling his goods; Joy also went down town, but soon returned to the railroad station, went to the reservoir on the hill back of the station, from which it receives its supply of water. He inquired of the station agent if the town was supplied from that reservoir. At twelve o'clock, noon, they were seen to enter the station at the eastern end and pass through and leave at the western end.

At about half-past twelve o'clock Mr. Joy was seen





coming from the direction of the reservoir alone; he crossed the track and took the way of Pool's pasture lane to Main Street, then to Broadway to the restaurant of Aaron Hodgkins, where he called for an oyster stew and a cup of tea, also for a brush and blacking for his boots. He remained there until past one o'clock, then went to the railroad station and took a seat in the smoking-car. That train would leave about half-past one o'clock. A young man (Doyle) was on his way home from a gunning expedition in the pastures, and went to the reservoir for a drink, and beheld a dead man in the water.

He immediately gave an alarm. There were three fishermen about the station that forenoon; they also came on the nine o'clock train, and went to Pigeon Cove seeking a chance to go on a fishing cruise. They were not successful, and were intending to leave by the noon train, and were at the station when the body was discovered and the alarm given. As they entered the car where Joy was, they said a dead man had been found in the reservoir. Joy exclaims, "My God, it is my chum!" He then left the car, and was soon arrested and taken to the police station. When there he said he left Gilman at the reservoir and went for dinner, and was to bring Gilman some bread and cheese. This he neglected to do. A coroner's jury was summoned and heard the evidence in the case as conducted by Trial Justice N. F. S. York and Assistant District Attorney Kimball. Their verdict charged Joy with the murder of Gilman. He was committed to Salem jail awaiting trial before the Supreme Court. The three fishermen, being strangers, were also committed to Salem jail and held as witnesses. At the term of the Supreme Court held at Salem July 9, 1877, Judges Lord and Morton presiding, Joy was put upon trial, consuming some four days of the court. The government was represented by Attorney-General C. R. Train and District Attorney E. J. Sherman. The defense was represented by Wm. D. Northend and Henri N. Woods, Esqs. Joy was convicted; though the evidence was circumstantial, it was very conclusive; every circumstance pointed to Joy as the guilty man.

He was sentenced to be hanged on Friday, October 19, 1877. October 16th he was reprieved until December 13, 1877. December 5th his sentence was, by the Governor and Council, commuted to imprisonment for life.

This was brought about by the earnest efforts of his mother, aided by some influential citizens. He is now (1887) in State Prison. He was then a young man, perhaps twenty to twenty-three years of age. Gilman was probably a few years older.

**LANDING OF THE CABLE.**—In anticipation of the arrival of the steamship "Faraday" with the shore-end of the Bennett & Mackey cable, which was soon to be landed near Little Cape Hedge, the citizens of Rockport held an informal meeting at the town-hall on the 11th day of May, 1884, to take some action

in relation to giving a hearty welcome and suitable reception to this important enterprise. Nathaniel F. S. York, Esq., chairman of the selectmen, was chosen moderator; Andrew F. Clark, secretary.

A committee, consisting of John W. Marshall, George F. Tarr, Francis Tarr, Calvin W. Pool, Dr. J. E. Sanborn, George Elwell, G. T. Margeson, Jason L. Curtis, John G. Dennis, Alden Choate and James S. Rogers, were chosen to co-operate with the selectmen to devise a plan for a formal celebration of this important enterprise.

The committee met and organized, and formed a plan of reception, as the following results will show:

The steamer was sighted off Thacher's Island at 4.20 o'clock on the morning of the 22d day of May. This was twenty-four hours sooner than she was expected. The news was immediately telegraphed from the island to the Rockport Station. The town was soon awake to the situation. The steamer pursued her course, and at about five o'clock A.M. came to anchor about three-quarters of a mile from the shore upon which the cable was to be landed. The report of a gun upon her deck was answered by the ringing of the church bells and firing of cannon in the town. The sub-committee—viz., N. F. S. York, Nathaniel Richardson, Jr., and Calvin W. Pool—were soon on board, and tendered the compliments of the town to Captain L. Fanu and the other officers and electricians, extending to each of them a cordial invitation to the dinner to be served in the evening in commemoration of this interesting event. The committee were informed that they had been obliged to cut and buoy the cable two hundred and fifty miles easterly from this shore. Therefore, as soon as the shore end was laid, they would be obliged to weigh anchor and make their course for the end that was buoyed, paying out the cable as they steamed towards the buoy. On this account they were obliged to decline the invitation, which they assured the committee it would give them great pleasure to accept would the circumstances allow of it. The officers appreciated the attention of the citizens, and regretted their inability to accept the hospitality. The committee were shown every attention by the officers, as were also other citizens who visited the ship during the brief time she lay at anchor. As they could not be at the dinner, the toast-master being one of the visitors, offered the following: "The officers and electricians of the steamship 'Faraday.' We are proud to tender you with open hands and hearts our welcome. Without your skill and able efforts our gathering would have no cause to exist. We extend our heartfelt wishes that your individual and professional future may never be dimmed by a cloud of adversity."

Captain L. Fanu made a pleasant response.

The "Faraday" is 365 feet in length, 52 feet in width, 31 feet depth, and carries 200 officers and crew. This Bennett & Mackey cable is the largest



ocean cable ever laid; it weighs about twenty tons to the mile. The landing was effected by means of three large rafts, made of inflated double-ended rubber bags covered with canvas, and another raft made of boats lashed together and covered. Six hundred fathoms of cable were coiled upon these rafts, and then pulled towards the shore, the men paying out as they went. The scene was very exciting on the rafts, and along the shore crowds were gathered to witness the work.

The landing was effected about ten o'clock, and the cable was laid through a deep trench to the cable-house, a few rods above high-water mark.

The event was duly honored by a long procession, which, escorted by the Gloucester and Rockport bands, marched to the landing-place, and by the firing of a salute of thirty-eight guns, and the playing of "Hail Columbia" and "Rule Britannia" by the bands, and cheers of the people, responded to from the "Faraday" by her heavy steam-whistle and cheers of the crew. Thus the cable was laid, and when it shall be completed another bond of union will be effected between the Old World and the New. After the cable was landed the rafts returned, and about eleven o'clock A.M. the huge vessel weighed anchor and steamed away, trailing the cable at her stern as she went, to make the connection two hundred and fifty miles away, which will complete the circuit from Dover Bay to Cape Ann. It was a grand sight, as we stood upon the "Faraday's" deck and beheld the great crowds of people and carriages upon the shore; it was a grand panorama. The captain expressed in glowing terms his great satisfaction, and all hands considered themselves highly honored by the hearty welcome.

The Abbot House, under the management of Col. John F. Sweet, the popular landlord, was gaily decorated. Many visitors were present from out of town, and with marching and music and firing of cannon, the day, which was pleasant and also lively, passed away.

At evening a dinner was served in Haskin's Hall, complimentary to the officers of the Cable Company, representatives of the press and visitors. Plates were laid for eighty guests; the tables presented a fine appearance. N. F. S. York, chairman of the selectmen, presided. The divine blessing was invoked by Deacon C. W. Pool.

The waiters were fair young ladies dressed in white. After sufficient attention had been paid to the edibles, then came the intellectual feast. The chairman, in a few well-chosen words, gave our guests a hearty welcome to the festivities of the hour; then introduced as toast-master John W. Marshall, who, after a few preliminary words, proposed the following sentiment:

"The Old World and the New bound together by another cord of sympathy, bringing heart to heart in closer relation to daily life. May the electric pulse

wax stronger every day, and the coming future develop good to universal humanity." Responded to by Isaac Bell, Jr., of New York, vice-president of the Commercial Cable Company.

"Her Majesty, the Queen of Great Britain. Her virtues and her beautiful motherhood belong to the world. As a woman as well as a ruler, her wisdom and beneficence are the admiration of mankind." Responded to by George G. Ward, of New York, secretary of the Commercial Cable Company.

"Chester A. Arthur, President of the United States, called to an unexpected position. He has discharged his duties with marked ability, which commands the respect of other nations with our own." Responded to by Postmaster David W. Low, of Gloucester.

"Commercial Cable Company. Hon. James G. Bennett, herald of new tidings between the Old World and the New. John W. Mackey, who, from the Pacific slope, connects the East with the West. Their united efforts have caused this the day of our rejoicing." Responded to by H. De Castro of New York, a director of the Commercial Cable Company.

"He expressed his joy that Rockport would soon be in direct communication by cable, not only with the United States, but with the old continent. He hoped that a new era of wealth and happiness would dawn upon the land, and that not only would Rockport people have to congratulate themselves upon the realization of the new cable, but on the erection of a splendid breakwater, which would make Rockport one of the finest harbors in the world."

"Commonwealth of Massachusetts, foremost in public enterprise; she has ever stretched out her shores far into the Atlantic to greet her foreign neighbors and bind them to her with cables of quickest interest." Responded to by Dr. J. E. Sanborn, in rhyme.

"The officers, electricians and reporters of the 'Faraday.' We are proud to tender you open hands and hearts of welcome. Without your skill and able effort our gathering would have no cause to exist. We extend our most heartfelt wishes that your individual and professional future may never be dimmed by a cloud of adversity." Responded to by A. J. Kennedy, of the *New York Herald*.

"Cape Ann, with its Sandy Bay, has had taken from the Rocky Ribs of its Gloucester a Rockport, to become famous for its Atlantic cable and its Harbor of Refuge." Responded to by Francis Proctor, of the *Cape Ann Advertiser*, and W. Frank Parsons, of Gloucester, who gave many interesting facts of the history of telegraphy.

"Commerce and Law, the handmaid, of modern progress. The former is represented by the achievement of to-day. The latter will be defended by our young friend, Mr. Putman, of New York." Mr. Putman responded in a few words, speaking of this





the great event of the times, and of his pleasure in being present.

Frederick Ward, Esq., of New York City, was called out and gave some very interesting facts in relation to cables of the past and the present and the promise for the future.

"Last, but not least, the Press. We acknowledge its power and court its favor." Response by Thomas Maguire, Esq., of the *Boston Herald*.

He said he regretted the absence of the Harbor of Refuge at this particular time, as he would like to crawl into it. There was a particular reason why the people of Massachusetts should celebrate the landing of the cable, for all the great electricians who made a cable possible were Massachusetts men,—Franklin, the first electrician, was born in Boston; Morse, in Charlestown; and Cyrus W. Field, in Stockbridge.

After a few closing remarks by Chairman York, the meeting closed. Many adjourned to the Abbot House, where festivities were continued until a late hour; others took the special train for Gloucester and Boston. The day was very pleasant. The citizens and guests will long remember the arrival of the "Faraday" and the successful placing of the cable on the shore of Pebble-stone Beach and Little Cape Hedge.

"Rockport, May 26, 1884.

"The first message over the Commercial Cable was received here at two o'clock p.m.

"From steamer 'Faraday' to the Selectmen of Rockport, Mass.:

"The 'Faraday' wishes to thank the Selectmen of Rockport, as well as its citizens, for the hearty reception she received at their hands, and can only regret that her arduous work called her away so soon, and she trusts that this section connecting Cape Ann with Dover Bay will probably be completed this afternoon."

REPLY.

"The Selectmen of Rockport, with the citizens, cordially congratulate the 'Faraday' on the happy completion of the first part of this great undertaking and confidently hope the same success will in time crown the entire work. Our regrets at the brevity of the stay here, disappear only in our joy at the success of the undertaking."

When it is taken into consideration that the "Faraday" arrived twenty-four hours before she was expected, therefore before the plans of the committee could be perfected,—thus everything considered, the reception was a success. It was a pleasant time for the citizens of Rockport, and the visitors were lavish in their congratulations of the success of the enterprise and the attention paid them.

It was arranged by those that had charge of laying the cable, to continue from Dover Bay to Rockport direct; thus when the shore end was laid, the circuit would be complete, and it would have consumed twenty-four hours more of time before she could have reached here. But when within two hundred and fifty miles of the cape, it was found necessary to cut the cable and buoy it and make directly for our shore and land the shore-end, then steam back and make the connection.

**DONATION OF A CLOCK.**—A clock was donated to the town by John G. Dennis in April, 1885.

At a special town meeting held by adjournment on the 18th day of April, 1885, the following resolution was presented by N. F. S. York, Esq., chairman of the Board of Selectmen:

"Resolved, That we, citizens of Rockport, in Town Meeting assembled, do hereby tender to our esteemed friend and fellow-citizen, John G. Dennis, Esq., our sincere thanks and grateful acknowledgments for the donation of the beautiful clock which he has made to his native town, and has caused to be placed upon the gallery of this hall."

The foregoing resolution was accepted and adopted by a unanimous and a rising vote. It was voted that this resolution be printed in the history of the town, which is now being written.

Mr. Dennis was our Representative to the General Court this year (1885). He was also president of the Granite Savings Bank.

He died June 29th, a little more than a month after the passage of this resolution, much respected and lamented. He was always interested in the welfare of his native town, and labored for its prosperity.

**DECEASED PHYSICIANS.**—The following are the physicians who have died in Rockport: Dr. John Manning died November 25, 1841, aged eighty years. His father was Dr. John Manning, of Ipswich, whose father was Dr. Joseph Manning, of the same town, both of whom lived to an advanced age. At the age of seventeen he joined the American army in Rhode Island as surgeon's mate. Afterwards he practiced four years in Chester, N. H., and removed thence to Gloucester Harbor, about 1786, where he lived about two years, when he moved to Sandy Bay,—his home for the rest of his life. His attention to pursuits out of his profession was given first to commerce, afterwards to agriculture. The ample estate he acquired came principally from his medical practice, in which he was distinguished for skill and success. He served six terms as Representative to the General Court. He was a man of considerable eccentricity of character, which did not forsake him even in his last hours. His wife was Miss Hannah Goodhue, of Ipswich; her death occurred January 22, 1840, the first death in her household for forty-one years.

Four sons of Dr. Manning survived him,—Joseph B., John and Charles B., who graduated at Harvard College respectively in 1808, 1810 and 1819, and James. Joseph B. studied law, but never engaged in active practice. He died a bachelor in Ipswich, May 22, 1854, aged sixty-seven years. John commenced practice as a physician in Waldoborough, Maine, in 1813, where he remained until 1842, when he removed to Rockport and practiced until his death, February 7, 1852, aged sixty-two years, leaving four sons, one of whom (William H.) was collector of customs in Gloucester four years. Another (Joseph) is a practicing physician in Rockport (he has a son, Charles B., about entering the medical profession; he surely has a long line of medical ancestry).

Charles B. was a physician in his native place and died there December 16, 1843, aged forty-four.



James, whose occupation was farming the most of his days, is yet living here, hale and hearty, at more than eighty years of age.

Another aged physician of the town, *Dr. James Goss*, died November 29, 1842, aged seventy-nine.

He was a native of Billerica, and settled in his profession in Sandy Bay about 1792. Besides his medical practice, he was often employed in writing deeds and other instruments. In the early days of his settlement here he taught school in the old log school-house. By his various services he secured the respect of society, and the reputation of a useful man. He was Representative to the General Court. In 1832, *Dr. Goss* was twice married, first, to Polly Jaquith, of Wilmington, and next to Hannah Smith, of Ipswich. There were two sons by his first wife,—Sylvester and George; they became printers, married and settled away from home, and are long since dead. Eliza, the only child by his second wife, married William Caldwell, and are both dead. Their daughter Eliza has been one of our most efficient school-teachers for several years.

*Edward E. Barden, M.D.*, died December 3, 1875, aged twenty-nine years and seven months. He was a son of Rev. Stillman and Sarah Barden, who ministered to the Universalist Society of this town several years, and was a young man of much promise.

His wife, Alfarata, daughter of Addison and Abigail Gott, died April 1, 1876. Their infant child died March 27, 1875; thus within a few days more than one year the entire family passed away.

On the 21st day of January, 1878, *Benjamin Haskell, M.D.*, aged sixty-eight, died after an illness of a few days. He was born in Rockport, graduated at Amherst College in 1832, and was also a graduate of Bowdoin College, Maine, where he received his medical education. He spent nearly all his professional life in his native town. He was skillful and popular as a physician, and much respected as a citizen. In his later years, in addition to his professional life, he was interested in agriculture and farm stock, from which he derived a great deal of pleasure. He left a widow, Jane Caleb, but no children.

Out of respect to his memory a public meeting of the citizens was held in the Town Hall the evening after his decease. A large audience was present. John W. Marshall was called to the chair. Calvin W. Pool was chosen secretary. Prayer was offered by Rev. C. C. McIntire. Dr. J. C. Sanborn paid a tribute to his professional character and his usefulness by an interesting and appropriate address, which was listened to with marked attention. His address was supplemented by appropriate remarks by several other of the long-time acquaintances of the deceased. A committee was chosen to draft resolutions, and another committee to make arrangements for the funeral, after which the meeting dissolved.

**SEA-SERPENT.**—The sea-serpent has visited this coast several times in years past, and his appearance

has been witnessed by so many persons of undoubted veracity and quick discernment, that the existence of such a sea animal is placed beyond a doubt.

He last appeared here in August, 1886; he was seen and his movements were witnessed by about forty persons, one of whom was Granville B. Putnam, of the Franklin School, Boston. By his permission we publish his statement:

"On the afternoon of the 12th day of August, 1886, I heard the voice of Calvin W. Pool, town clerk of Rockport, at the door of my cottage at Pigeon Cove, saying, 'There is some strange thing in the water; I think it is the sea-serpent.' I quickly took my station upon the rail of my piazza, so that my marine glass was about fifty feet above the water and but thirty-six feet from the shore. The creature was advancing in a northerly direction, and but little more than one-eighth of a mile from me. I saw it approaching, passing, and departing, and watched it most attentively for about ten minutes. Judging by the apparent length of yachts whose dimensions I know, as they appear at that distance, I estimated the length to have been not less than eighty feet.

"The head short, and about the size of a milk-bask, while the middle of the body was larger than that of a large man; the color was a dark brown, and it appeared to be somewhat mottled with a lighter shade. As the head was at no time raised above the water, I could not determine the color of the throat. The surface of the head and back was very smooth, and no one of the forty or more persons who saw it detected anything that looked like a fin or flipper. Its movement was not that of a land serpent, but a vertical one, resembling that of the loach or the bloodsuckers of my boyhood. I could distinctly see perhaps fifteen feet of the forward portion of his body, while back of that, the convolutions being greater, the depressions were below the surface, so as to present a series of ridges, some ten or fifteen in number at a time. The extreme of the tail was not visible. During the whole passage of a mile and a quarter, either the muzzle or snout cut the water, so as to lead several to exclaim, 'His head is white!' This fact would remove the possibility of its being anything but along with the tide. The cutting of the water was by something at least a foot wide, and caused wakes on either side.

"From my elevated position I could plainly see the movements of the body between them, while the rear portion caused another wake behind. Its course was a direct one, and its speed uniform, and not more than five miles an hour. When it reached a point about half a mile north of us, the undulatory movement seemed to cease, and the body was for a moment extended along the surface. There was then an apparent gathering of the caudal extremity into ridges nearer together than those previously seen, after which he disappeared. I judged that this latter movement was to aid in diving, but of course this is only conjecture. On the 19th, a week later, the same creature, or one like it, appeared north of us, going in an easterly direction, and, although perhaps half a mile away, it was distinctly seen by Rev. David Brewer, assistant pastor of Park Street, Boston, by his wife and servant, and by several others. My attention was not called in season to permit me to see anything of abnormal interest."

**A BOMB SHELL IN CHURCH.**—On Sunday evening, November 1, 1861, there were in the Universalist Church an audience of about seventy persons listening to an address on the slavery question, by Parker Pillsbury. While he was speaking some person threw a sort of bomb-shell through a window on the north side of the house; it fell near Mr. Pillsbury's feet and exploded. The audience were greatly frightened and left the house, which was filled with smoke.

After the smoke cleared some few persons returned to the church, and Mr. Pillsbury resumed his lecture. There was no other disturbance.

This missile was made by wrapping a few pieces of coal and a quantity of powder in a cloth and securing it by a cord tightly drawn around it; the whole saturated with spirits of turpentine. The whole thing was about six inches in diameter.





Some four or five rows of pews nearest the pulpit were not occupied that evening. The why has not been known.

A considerable portion of the society were opposed to opening the house for such lectures.

DECEASED CLERGYMEN.—The clergymen that have officiated in and died in Sandy Bay or Rockport are as follows: Rev. Ebenezer Cleaveland, Congregationalist, died July 4, 1805, aged eighty; Licentiate Capt. Benjamin Hale, Baptist, died June 10, 1818, aged forty-two; Rev. Levi B. Hathaway, Baptist, died August 1, 1823, aged thirty-three; Rev. Samuel Gilbert, Baptist, died January 25, 1850; Rev. Elijah Mason, Methodist, died 1863; Rev. Stilman Barden, Universalist, August 7, 1865; Licentiate Capt. Levi Cleaves, Methodist, died June 16, 1865, aged fifty-eight years and nine months; Rev. Samuel Roy, Methodist, died October 24, 1874; Rev. Henry C. Leonard, Universalist, died March 7, 1880, aged sixty-two years.

At the time of his death he was chairman of the School Committee, which position he had occupied several years; he was popular with the scholars, teachers and the people; he in 1844 and '45 was pastor of the Universalist Church in this town; at the time of his death he was pastor of the church at Annisquam. He had been pastor of a church at Orono, Maine, Albany, N. Y., and at Philadelphia. He also served as chaplain of a Maine Regiment in the Civil War.

THE ROCKPORT REVIEW.—The *Rockport Review*, a newspaper, published every Saturday, was established here by H. C. Cheever in 1889. After a few years Mr. Cheever sold the whole printing and publishing establishment to Joseph Lemon, who is both editor and publisher; his business is on the increase and the *Review* is increasing in favor. We trust that it is an institution that has come to stay and prosper. Office on Bearskin Neck.

In 1872 the *Rockport Gleaner*, a monthly newspaper, was published by Levi Cleaves, of this town. It was printed at the office of the *Cape Ann Advertiser*, and was distributed gratuitously, therefore depending upon advertisements for support. It has now ceased to be published after fifteen years of service.

COAL.—The first anthracite coal brought to Sandy Bay was by the schooner "Franklin," Captain A. T. Doyle, in 1832, a few lime-casks full from Boston.

The next was about eighty tons, by the schooner "Stephen C. Phillips," Captain John J. Giles, from Philadelphia, in 1847. Nearly two years expired before it was all sold; the price was eight dollars per ton. The demand gradually increased in those earlier years of its introduction until it became of general use. Now, in 1887, some six thousand tons are called for to supply the annual demand.

ICE.—The ice business of this town was commenced by James Manning, Esq. He built a house for its storage in 1852, and on the 23d and 24th days of

February following he stored about four hundred tons. He continued the business a few years, then sold the property to C. Jerome Norwood, who has built two more houses and conducts the business successfully by his agent, Reuben Norwood.

John B. Hodgkins, a few years later than Manning, excavated a meadow and made an artificial pond and conducted the ice business a few years, then sold the entire premises to Anson Stinson. His son Fred, E. enlarged the pond, erected another house, and is successful in the business.

There is now sold from twenty-five thousand to thirty thousand tons annually.

TELEGRAPH COMMUNICATION.—Telegraph wires were extended to this town in 1858. Henry Clark was appointed operator, and continued in that position twenty years; when he resigned G. Tucker Margeson was appointed, and is the present incumbent.

The first message over the wire from here was to Winthrop Thurston, at Montreal, January 22d.

Addison Gott, Esq., was much interested in this enterprise.

MUTUAL MARINE INSURANCE COMPANY.—A Mutual Marine Insurance Company was organized here in 1827, with thirty-six members, and for more than forty years it continued in successful operation; it was finally dissolved, as by the terms of its organization and its manner of transacting business (it not being incorporated) was rather in the line of a copartnership, it was not considered prudent to continue business on that line.

LYCEUM.—In 1830 a lyceum was established in this village; connected with it was a library. The fee for membership was one dollar. It was a useful institution, and continued in successful operation quite a number of years. Many interesting lectures were given, meetings for debate were held and were quite well attended. The library was well patronized, but like many other good and useful institutions, it had its day and filled its place, acted well its part, and then joined the institutions of the past.

CALIFORNIA GOLD-FEVER.—When the California gold-fever broke out it affected the young men of this town, and in January, 1849, ten of them sailed for that place, *via* Cape Horn. Several others soon followed. From January, 1849, to February, 1850, about fifty of our young men went from home to the Golden Gate. Several of them made California their permanent home. Since 1850 a number more have gone to the land of gold.

In October, 1850, George D. Hale, Esq., received from his son George, who was one of the first to leave home for California, a specimen of gold weighing ten ounces. Dr. John Manning also received a fine specimen from his son Charles, who was early in the field.

Rockport, during these years since 1850, has been well represented on the Pacific Coast.

YOUNG MEN'S CHRISTIAN ASSOCIATION.—Sometime during the year 1869 the Young Men's Christian As-





sociation, that had been organized and doing good work some twelve years, purchased the chapel that was built in 1855 for the Second Congregationalist Church and Society.

It was dedicated to their use on Monday evening, November 16th. Calvin W. Pool gave an interesting history of the organization,—other exercises by Revs. Otis Leonard and W. D. Bridge. Also remarks were made by Levi Cleaves, Z. A. Appleton, N. Burnham and others. This association seemed to have completed its work and dissolved its organization a few years since.

**ALMSHOUSE.**—Previous to 1852 the town boarded out its paupers, but in that year they purchased about four acres of land and built an almshouse and barn at a cost of five thousand one hundred dollars. Sylvester Pierce was appointed superintendent. After a few years' service he resigned. Nehemiah Knowlton succeeded him; then William Knights, Samuel N. Burt, Caleb R. Bray, Abraham Lurvey, the present incumbent.

Whole number of inmates, February, 1887, was thirteen.

**ROADS.**—The road from Annisquam to Pigeon Cove was laid out and recorded by the selectmen October 21, 1707. It was continued through Pigeon Cove and over the Back Beach and Hale's Point to Pool's Bridge in or about 1716.

The road from the First Parish meeting-house, through the parting paths over Beaver Dam Brook, up the Great Hill and on by Richard Tarr's house to the brook, or Pool's Bridge, Sandy Bay, was laid out and recorded by the selectmen June 2, 1707.

The road from the head of Long Cove, over Cove Hill (Mt. Pleasant), by Peter Bennett's house to Salt Island, and to connect with the road from Witham's Corner and through the farms, was laid out and recorded by the selectmen in 1708. This was laid four rods wide.

We find no record of a road being laid out from Pool's Bridge, or brook, through Sandy Bay village to the head of Long Cove.

In the year 1847 a stock or land company purchased quite an extensive tract of land in the centre of the village, and laid out and built Broadway. Over this purchase they laid out lots on each side thereof and put them upon the market, with the injunction that no building should be placed within ten feet of the line of the street. John W. Hadlock built the first house upon this street. It is now (1887) occupied by Wakefield Hodgkins as a residence and dry-goods store.

In the year 1852 the proprietors offered the street Broadway and all of the minor or by-way street privileges to the town free of cost. The town accepted the proposition.

Gott Street was laid out by the selectmen in 1838.

Pleasant Street and a part of School Street was laid

out and opened for travel by Captain John Gott, through his land, about the year 1836.

Prospect Street was laid out and opened for travel by Andrew Lane, over his land, about the same year.

A piece of road near Gallop's Folly was built in 1852, by order of the county commissioners, at a cost of five hundred and seventy dollars. Other improvements by the same order were made at a cost of four hundred and ten dollars.

Marshall Street was laid out and built in the year 1856, at a cost of four hundred and eighty-nine dollars, including land damage.

In 1857 Pleasant Street, from Marshall Street to the cemetery gate, was opened at a cost, including land damage, of six hundred and eighty-nine dollars.

In 1860 Broadway Avenue was built from High Street to Broadway, at a cost, including land damage, of \$711.50.

Railroad Avenue, from Main to King Street, was laid out by the county commissioners in 1861, and was built in 1861-62. Including land damage, it cost \$3834.18.

School Street, from Main to High, was laid out by the county commissioners about the year 1836.

Forest Street, from King to Granite Street, was laid out by the county commissioners and built by the town in 1874, at a cost, including land damage, of \$1599.

The continuation of Summer Street to connect with Prospect Street was done in 1872; it cost \$563.

Improvement of Granite Street from Ephraim Nickerson's to Samuel Parker's house, as ordered by the county commissioners, cost \$6725.

In the year 1870 the town expended in widening road at Folly Cove \$265.

And on widening Mt. Pleasant Street \$404.

In 1871, expended in widening and improving road at Pigeon Cove, \$604.

In 1872, improvements on School Street, from Main to Broadway, the town expended \$631.

In 1874 Jewett Street was built at a cost, including land damage, of \$893.25.

Parker Street was laid out by the county commissioners, and was built in the year 1881, at a cost of \$3348.88.

Improvements on South Street, as ordered by the county commissioners, have cost about \$2000.

**TOWN CEMETERIES.** The town, in these later years, has purchased two tracts of land for cemetery purposes, one in each village, and has laid out lots therein for sale, as they may be called for by individuals.

Beech Grove, in the South Village, contains about fifteen acres, and was purchased in 1856; it has cost, with the improvements therein made, \$11,219.48. A large part of the lots have been sold, from which sale the town has realized \$5459.78. This cemetery is well situated, and receives considerable attention from lot-owners and from the town.



Locust Grove Cemetery, at the north part of the town (Folly Cove), contains about ten acres; it was purchased in small parts and in different years, viz., 1854, '64, '70. The whole cost, with the improvements, is \$5340.43. The town has received from the sale of lots, \$2252.59. A large number of good lots remain unsold. This ground is well located, and is well fitted for cemetery purposes, and is tolerably well cared for.

**SECRET SOCIETIES.**—There is an institution of Odd Fellows in town. *Granite Lodge, No. 127*, was organized in May, 1848, with thirty members. Its object is to promote good morals and to watch over and provide for their needy brethren. It has always been in a healthy condition; has disbursed a large amount of money in relieving the wants of the brotherhood. It now has a membership of two hundred and twenty-eight. They own a neat and pleasant hall, situated on the corner of School Street and Broadway, well appointed for the use of the order.

*Ashler Lodge of Free Masons* was instituted here in the year 1852, with nine members from other lodges. Eben Blatchford, Esq., was the first Grand Master. Their motto is "Faith in God, a hope of Immortality; Charity for needy members." It has disbursed a considerable amount of money to its needy members and is in good standing. It has a membership of about one hundred.

*Bay Tent, No. 224, Independent Order of Rechabites*, was instituted here March 11, 1847. October, 1849, it numbered one hundred members. Its object is to promote the cause of temperance and morality; to watch over and provide for its members when sick or needy. It yet continues its organization, though with reduced numbers, on account of many of their members leaving this organization and connecting themselves with the "Rechabite Temple of Honor." It is a good institution and has exerted a good influence.

*Otis W. Wallace Post, No. 106, G. A. R.*, is in a healthy condition and doing a good work, although it is a time of peace.

The organization of the *Sons of Veterans* is composed of young men whose hearts are full of loyalty to the Old Flag.

#### TOWN OFFICERS AND REPRESENTATIVES TO THE GENERAL COURT.

##### *Selectmen of Gloucester from Sandy Bay before the Incorporation of Rockport.*

1718. Ebenezer Davis.	1775. Same.
1719. Same.	1776. Same.
1720. Same.	1777. Stephen Pool.
1721. Same.	1778. John Rowe.
1722. Same.	1780. Mark Pool.
1723. Same.	1781. Same.
1730. Same.	1782. Ebenezer Cleaveland.
1731. Same.	1784. Mark Pool.
1732. Same.	1785. Caleb Norwood.
1756. Ebenezer Pool.	1786. Same.
1760. Same.	1787. Same.
1761. William Norwood.	1788. Mark Pool.
1766. Francis Pool.	1789. Caleb Pool.

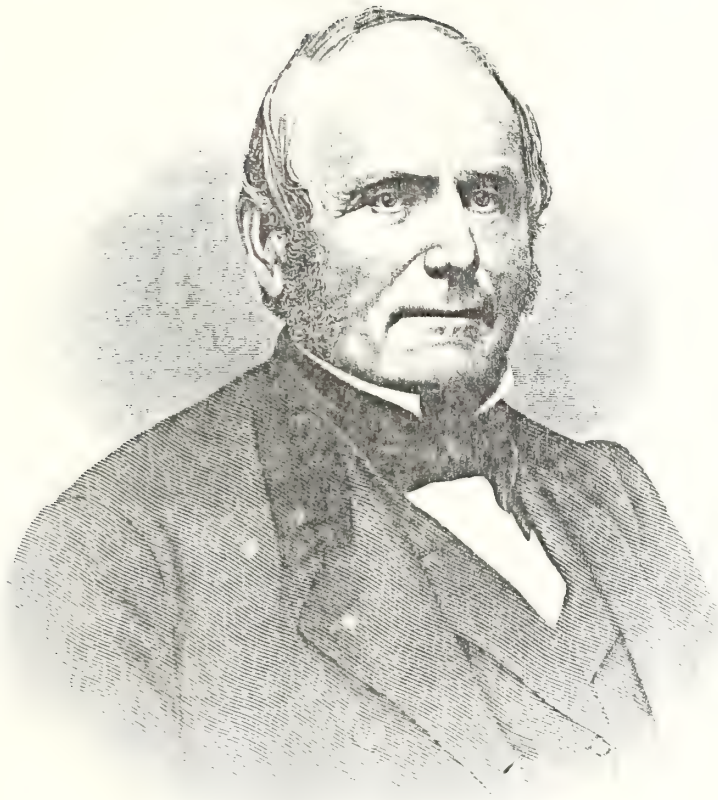
1790. Same.	1844. Same.
1791. Same.	1845. Same.
1792. Same.	1845. W.throp Pool.
1793. Same.	1846. Aaron Giddings.
1794. Same.	1847. Same.
1795. Same.	1848. Same.
1796. Ebenezer Pool, Jr.	1849. George D. Hale.
1797. Benjamin Tarr.	1831. Same.
1798. James Goss.	1832. Same.
1805. John Manning.	1833. Same.
1806. Ebenezer Oakes.	1834. Same.
1807. Caleb Norwood.	1835. Same.
1809. Caleb Norwood, Jr.	1836. John W. Marshall.
1810. Francis Norwood.	1837. Same.
1812. Same.	1838. Same.
1813. Ebenezer Oakes.	1839. James Haskell.

##### *Selectmen of Rockport since its incorporation.*

1810. David Babson, Jr. Jas. Haskell. Thos. O. Marshall.	1863. Austin W. Story. William H. Bradley, Jr. Henry Dennis, Jr.
1811. David Babson, Jr. Jas. Haskell. Wm. H. Bradley.	1864. Henry Dennis, Jr. William Marchant. David Brooks.
1812. David Babson, Jr. Wm. H. Bradley. Wm. P. Burns.	1865. Henry Dennis, Jr. William Marchant. William Caldwell.
1813. Same.	1866. Same.
1814. Same.	1867. Same.
1815. David Babson, Jr. Wm. P. Burns. Geo. D. Hale.	1868. Henry Dennis, Jr. Austin W. Story. Ezekiel Bridstreet.
1816. Same.	1869. Austin W. Story. Francis Tarr, Jr. William Caldwell.
1817. David Babson, Jr. Benj. Tarr. John Pool.	1870. Austin W. Story. Francis Tarr, Jr. James Fernald, Jr.
1818. Same.	1871. James W. Bradley. Henri N. Woods. Abraham Lurvey.
1819. David Babson, Jr. Wm. Boynton. Wm. P. Burns.	1872. James W. Bradley. Abraham Lurvey. John W. Marshall.
1850. David Babson, Jr. Wm. Boynton. Geo. Gott, Jr.	1873. John W. Marshall. Abraham Lurvey. Henry Dennis, Jr.
1851. David Babson, Jr. Wm. Boynton. James Manning.	1874. Same.
1852. Jas. Manning. Wm. H. Bradley. Thos. Hale.	1875. Same.
1853. Thos. Hale. John W. Marshall. Dudley Choate.	1876. Same.
1854. John W. Marshall. Dudley Choate. Amos Story.	1877. Same.
1855. James Manning. Wm. H. Bradley. Benjamin Atwood.	1878. John W. Marshall. Abraham Lurvey. Andrew F. Clark.
1856. John W. Marshall. Washington Tarr. Daniel Wheeler.	1879. John W. Marshall. Andrew F. Clark. Stillman L. Mason.
1857. John W. Marshall. Washington Tarr. Austin W. Story.	1880. John W. Marshall. Andrew F. Clark. Abraham Lurvey.
1858. Austin W. Story. James Manning. Alfred Parsons.	1881. Jason L. Curtis. George A. Lowe. Nathaniel F. S. York.
1859. John Manning. Moses Haskins. Wm. Marchant.	1882. Same.
1860. John W. Marshall. William Marchant. Addison Gott.	1883. Nathaniel F. S. York. Nathaniel Richardson, Jr. Austin W. Story.
1861. Same.	1884. Same.
1862. Joshua Tarr. Austin W. Story. William H. Bradley, Jr.	1886. Nathaniel F. S. York. Henry H. Thurston. Joseph B. Dunahue.
	1887. Charles H. Cleaves. Joseph B. Dunahue. Otis E. South.







*Ezra Cames*



*School Committees.*

1840. Dr Lemuel Gott. Joseph B. Manning. William Mann.	1863. Rev. Stillman Barden. Henry Dennis, Jr.
1841. William Whipple. William Mann. Lemuel Gott.	1864. Rev. Stillman Barden. <sup>2</sup> Henry Dennis, Jr. Daniel Wheeler.
1842. Wm. Boynton. Jabez R. Gott. John Harris.	1865. Henry Dennis. Daniel Wheeler.
1843. William Boynton. William Caldwell. John Harris.	1866. Nathaniel F. S. York. Andrew F. Clark. Daniel Wheeler.
1844. Lemuel Gott. William Caldwell. William Mann.	1867. Same.
1845. Same.	1868. Andrew F. Clark. Daniel A. Wheeler. Daniel Wheeler.
1846. Same.	1869. Nathaniel F. S. York. William Marchant. Leckiel Bradstreet.
1847. William Caldwell. John Manning. William Mann.	1870. Nathaniel F. S. York. Calvin W. Pool. Frank H. Knowlton.
1848. Lemuel Gott. William Caldwell. Epes Young.	1871. Same.
1849. Benjamin Giles. William Boynton. Epes Young.	1872. Nathaniel F. S. York. Calvin W. Pool. Rev. C. A. Merrill.
1850. Alfred C. Pool. Lemuel Gott. Epes Young.	1873. Nathaniel F. S. York. Calvin W. Pool. Rev. Henry C. Leonard.
1851. Joseph Bartlett. Lemuel Gott. William Mann.	1874. Nathaniel F. S. York. Rev. H. C. Leonard. Dr. Edward E. Barden.
1852. William Pool. Joseph Bartlett. Moses Mayo.	1875. Dr. Edward E. Barden. <sup>3</sup> Rev. H. C. Leonard. Andrew F. Clark.
1853. Same.	1876. Rev. H. C. Leonard. Henry Dennis, Jr. John W. Marshall.
1854. Benjamin Giles. Rev. A. C. L. Arnold. Austin W. Story.	1877. Same.
1855. Same.	1878. Rev. Henry C. Leonard. <sup>4</sup> John W. Marshall. Nathaniel F. S. York.
1856. William Caldwell. John Manning. William Mann.	1879. Same.
1857. James Haskell. Benjamin Tarr. Joshua Tarr. William Mann. Thomas Hale.	1880. Same.
1858. Benjamin Giles. William Mann. Samuel H. Brooks.	1881. Nathaniel F. S. York. Stillman L. Mason. John W. Marshall.
1859. Rev. Elijah Mason. William Mann. David Brooks, Jr.	1882. Nathaniel F. S. York. John W. Marshall. John C. Pierce.
1860. Rev. Elijah Mason. Benjamin Tarr. William Mann.	1883. Nathaniel F. S. York. John C. Pierce. Dr. John E. Sanborn.
1861. Rev. Elijah Mason. Benjamin Tarr. John W. Leggaller.	1884. Dr. John E. Sanborn. John C. Pierce. James S. Rogers.
1862. Benjamin Tarr. John W. Leggaller. Rev. Elijah Mason. <sup>1</sup>	1885. Dr. John E. Sanborn. James S. Rogers. Nathaniel F. S. York.
	1886. Nathaniel F. S. York. John C. Pierce. Dr. Charles B. Hall.
	1887. Dr. Charles B. Hall. Nathaniel F. S. York. William Marchant.

*Town Treasurers.*

1840-42. Capt. John Gott.	1855-56. George Gott, Jr. <sup>6</sup>
1843-51. William Gott.	1857-61. Henry Clark.
1852-54. James Manning.	1865-87. Joseph Manning.

*Town Clerks.*

1840-48. Col. William Pool. | 1869-87. Calvin W. Pool.

*Representatives.*—Representatives from Sandy Bay to the General Court were chosen as follows:

1806. Caleb Norwood, Jr.	1834. John Blatchford.
1807. Same.	1835. John Blatchford. James Harris.
1809-15. John Manning, M.D.	Timothy R. Davis.
1830. John Gott.	1836. Timothy R. Davis. John Davis. James Harris.
Aaron Giddings.	1837. John Davis.
1831. John Gott.	Eliaser Boynton. David Dunahue.
Solomon Pool.	1838. Eliaser Boynton. William B. Haskins.
1832. James Goss, M.D.	1839. Samuel L. Andrews.
Nehemiah Knowlton. Gorham Babson.	1840. William B. Haskins.
1833. George Lane. Josiah Griffin. Gorham Babson.	
1834. Josiah Griffin. Gorham Babson.	

*Representatives to the General Court from Rockport.*

1841. James P. Tarr.	1868. Moses Pool.
1842. None.	1869. Ambrose Hodgekins.
1843. Thomas O. Marshall.	1870. William Marchant.
1844. William Grover.	1871. Rev. George H. Vibbert.
1845. " "	1872. James W. Bradley.
1846 to '50 inclusive. None.	1873. " "
1851. Addison Gott.	1874. John J. Giles.
1852. Newell Burnham.	1875. Henry Dennis, Jr.
1853 and '54. None.	1876. " " "
1855. Benjamin Parsons, Jr.	1877. William Marchant.
1856. Samuel York.	1878. Jason L. Curtis.
1857. Thomas Hale.	1879. Amos Rowe.
1858. Wm. W. Marshall.	1880. Wm. H. Sargent (7th Ward, Gloucester).
1859. Henry T. Lowe.	1881. Nathaniel Richardson, Jr.
1860. John D. Sanborn.	1882. Jason L. Curtis.
1861. Austin W. Story.	1883. Edward H. Shaw.
1862. Moses Pool.	1884. George Elwell.
1863. Rev. David Bremner.	1885. John G. Dennis.
1864. Austin W. Story.	1886. Rufus McLellan (7th Ward, Gloucester).
1865. Amos Rowe, Jr.	1887. Theodore L. Pool.
1866. William Caldwell.	
1867. Benjamin Hale.	

## BIOGRAPHICAL.

## EZRA EAMES.

Ezra Eames was born in Holliston, Mass., August 26, 1801. He was the son of Isaac Eames, an officer in the War of 1812; one of six children,—two boys and four girls. The only survivor of the family, Mrs. Betsey Marsh, now resides in Napoli, N. Y. At a very tender age Ezra accompanied his father from Holliston to a town in one of the western counties of New York State, but being unable to content himself away from his native State, he returned in a short time to Cambridge, Mass., where he secured employment in a pork-packing establishment, and here, with but six dollars in this world's goods and an invincible determination to work out his own destiny, single-handed and alone, he began the great battle of life. He remained here until 1827, when ambition led him to seek a broader field of usefulness; thus at the age of

<sup>1</sup> He died before the close of the year.

<sup>2</sup> Died before the close of the year.

<sup>3</sup> He died before the close of the school year.

<sup>4</sup> Died in 1880.

<sup>5</sup> Died while in office.



twenty-six years he came to that part of Gloucester called Sandy Bay, and after an investigation of the place and its opportunities for business, his keen foresight and superior judgment led him to take hold in earnest of the stone business. Therefore, with Mr. Beniah Colburn as partner, they began operations at what is now known as the Colburn Pit, at Pigeon Cove. After a few years' association with Mr. Colburn, by mutual consent this partnership was dissolved, and a new partnership, under the firm-name of Eames, Stimson & Co., was organized. This partnership developed those extensive quarries now the plant of the Rockport Granite Company, and here was devoted the full vigor of his middle life, as during the War of the Rebellion they furnished thousands of tons of granite for the State and country, viz., the fortifications of Boston, Portsmouth and Portland harbors, the Charles Street Jail and State's Prison at Boston, and others that we might mention. He was a public-spirited citizen, a prominent leader in the founding of many of the enterprises of Cape Ann and other parts of this State, among which was the Annisquam Mills, erected in 1847; was one of the founders of the Rockport Bank, was its first president at its organization, in 1851, and remained so until his death; he was interested in the Pigeon Cove Harbor Company, the Lanes Cove Pier Company, the Rockport Branch of the Eastern Railroad, constructed in 1860-61, and active in its interests until sold to the Eastern Railroad in 1868; president of the Cape Ann Isinglass Company, and the very leader in the establishment of the First National Bank of Gloucester, organized in 1865; a director of the Mystic River Improvement Company, in the Bunker Hill District, Boston.

He married Miss Miriam R. Colburn in 1836. The result of this union was two sons and six daughters, who all (with the exception of the wife, who died in 1879, and one daughter in childhood) survive him. He was a staunch Republican, but had no desire for office of any kind; a firm temperance advocate and a devout defender of Rockport's famous "Hatchet Gang," so called being a company of ladies who, without invitation, entered the places where liquor was kept, ejected the packages, and with their hatchets caused small rivers of rum to run in our public streets, in 1856. His religious expressions and devotions were in sympathy with the Universalists—generous in his support of the same. He was sincere in his belief that usefulness was the great object of man's creation; that a promise was sacred, and at all hazard should be kept and fulfilled. A man of individuality, of decision; possessed of those qualities of mind and heart that lived above the performance of any unmanly act.

He passed on to his rest, August 17, 1874, at the age of seventy-two years. A coincidence of this date is the fact that while one life was passing off life's busy stage, another was stepping on, for in an adjoining

room to the one where a noble life had just closed, another, Ezra Eames Cleaves' (a grandson's) life began. Ezra Eames, faithful to life's end! More cannot be said of any that have lived.

## CHAPTER CXVI.

### NAHANT.

BY EDWARD J. JOHNSON.

*Early Traditions—Early Settlements—Genealogies of the Johnson, Hood and Reed Families—Nahant in 1800—War of 1812—Descriptive Letter—The Hotel—Steamboat Landing—Steamboats—Francis Johnson—Cornelius Coolidge—Mr. Frederick Tudor.*

EARLY TRADITIONS.—Nahant, one of the smallest in population and number of acres of any town in the county of Essex, was one of the earliest of the many settlements which the Puritans founded along our coasts. By going back to the early voyages of Thorwald, Gosnold, Pring and John Smith, to the landing of our fathers at Plymouth, and so down through the colonial records of court and town, we can extract from them the history of Nahant.

From the stories of the Norse voyages we learn that Thorwald, in 1004, spent the winter in Narragansett Bay, and in the spring set sail to find his way back to the coast of Greenland. Working his way around Cape Cod, which he called Kialarnes, he sailed northward to the main land, and came to anchor near a bold promontory which projected into the sea, covered with forest to the water's edge. He was so delighted with the place that he exclaimed: "Here it is beautiful, and here I should like to fix my dwelling!"

While at anchor near this promontory, and while preparing to go ashore, the Norsemen discovered three small canoes, each containing three natives, whom they pursued, killing all but one, who escaped to his tribe. He, with just indignation, soon returned with others of his tribe to destroy, if possible, the Northmen, who had so cruelly betrayed their confidence. But the arrows and the frail birch canoe of the natives were as nothing compared with the battle-screens raised by the Northmen on their ship's side; so that the natives soon retired, but not until they had mortally wounded Thorwald, who had only time to say, "This is my death-blow; I desire you to depart as soon as possible, but first take my body to the shore and bury it upon the promontory before you, where I had intended to make my abode. I shall now dwell there forever. Place a cross at my head and also at my feet, and call the place Krossanes."

Abbot, in his "History of Maine," says: "This event took place, as it is supposed, near Boston Harbor. It was the first conflict between the native





Americans and the Europeans, and in this encounter the Europeans were probably outrageously in the wrong." Thorwald's men, after the death of their leader, returned to Narragansett Bay, where they spent the winter, and in the spring set sail for Greenland with a cargo of wood and furs.

Lewis, in his "History of Lynn," says: "The question has arisen whether Krossanes was Nahant or Garnet Point." There is nothing remarkable about the latter place, and though so long a time has passed, no person has thought it desirable to dwell there, but it is used as a pasture for sheep. It is far otherwise with Nahant, which answers the description well; and thousands, on visiting it, have born witness to the appropriateness of Thorwald's exclamation: "Here it is beautiful, and here I should like to fix my dwelling-place!"

The above account of Thorwald would be a very important historical record in the history of Nahant, if we could find sufficient authority to identify it with "Krossanes," the promontory near which Thorwald anchored his ship; with the beach where he saw the Indians; the bay where the one surviving Indian escaped and returned with his fleet of canoes; the point or cove where the first battle between the Indian and the European was fought in New England; the landing-place where they made the grave for Thorwald, and where they erected the two crosses. But the shadowy history of nearly a thousand years ago is but a story that must be read and weighed by the reader, who can judge for himself whether Nahant was "Krossanes" - the Cape of the Cross.

That it should have been Nahant is certainly very possible. Abbot admits it to be near Boston Harbor, and Lewis also is in favor of Nahant.

Coming to a later day, we find that John Smith, in his voyages along the New England coast, noticed Nahant, which he called the Mattahunt Isles, and made a landing there. He also speaks of the iron-mines, referring to the clifs on the northeast coast of the peninsula, which much resemble iron-ore. But although John Smith called Nahant the Mattahunt Isles, yet, according to the earliest records about the time of Governor Endicott, it is mentioned as Nahant, so called probably from an Indian chief named Nahanton.

EARLY SETTLEMENTS. By early records we find that Robert Gorges, in 1622, obtained a grant of lands in Massachusetts Bay, in which grant Nahant was included. Before Blackstone or Johnson made their home at Boston, settlers were tilling the soil of Nahant and cutting down the woods for their dwellings and fences, as a settlement was probably made there previous to 1630 or thereabouts.

This is proved by the deposition of one William Dixey, which we quote below:

"Swearing with, that about twenty-eight years ago, Mr. Isaac Johnson being my master, Writ to the Hon'd Governor; as now is Mr. Endicott for a piece to sit down in upon which Mr. Endicott gave me

and the rest leave to go where wee would, upon which I went to Saugust, now Lynn, and there we met with Sagamore James and some other Indians, whose did give me and the rest leave to dwell there or thereabouts, whereupon I and the rest of my master's company did cutt grass for our cattell and kept them upon Nahant for some space of time, for the Indian, James Sagamore and the rest, did give me and the rest, in behalf of my master, Johnson, wt land wee would, whereupon we sett down in Saugust and had quiet possession of it by the above said Indians and kept our cattell in Nahant the summer following."

(Deposition given May 1, 1657.)

After this date (1630) Isaac Johnson left Lynn for Boston, being one of its first settlers. This first settlement at Nahant was made with the full consent of the Indians, all living in peace together.

Thus the first settlers obtained a title to their lands first from Gov. Endicott to go where they would, and afterwards from the Indian, Sagamore James.

Lynn, including Nahant, was a large township adjoining the town of Salem, the first landing-place of the Puritans. In this large territory the Puritans placed their homes at long distances from each other, in convenient or chosen spots, each family occupying large tracts of land. A few families gathered at Tower Hill, Breed's End, Sagamore Hill and Swampscott, as well as at Nahant.

Although there was so much land, far more than could be utilized, yet soon after the settlements had been made disputes and much quarreling arose over titles and boundaries. In order to peacefully settle this question, the majority agreed to allot to each settler as much as it was thought each needed, the remainder being held in common, subject to vote in town-meeting. To this arrangement there was a dissatisfied minority, who purchased of the Indian sagamores their favorite tracts of land, as they deemed the Indians the true owners. Among these purchasers was one Thomas Dexter, who, by verbal purchase, bought Sagamore Hill and Nahant, claiming them as his own, tilling the soil and making inclosures for his cattle, and denying the right of any one to interfere with his fences. Dexter's fellow-townpeople of Lynn decidedly objected to his claim of Nahant, causing much ill-feeling, which finally resulted in a suit at court, which made a great deal of trouble for the newly incorporated town. Nahant was especially desirable on account of its excellent pasture lands for cattle, as a fence placed across the northwest end of Long Beach protected the whole peninsula, keeping the cattle safely enclosed, besides serving as a barrier to keep out the bears and wolves. These great advantages were not overlooked by the settlers at Nahant, who deemed it a locality worth contending for.

It is not therefore at all surprising to find at this time several claimants for Nahant. One was Thomas Dexter, who, as we have said above, claimed it by right of purchase from the Indians. There is in a deposition evidence sufficient to show that he purchased Nahant, fenced it in, and that a suit of clothes was a part of the consideration paid. Another claim-



and was the town of Lynn, whose early settlers claimed it by their right of first settlement, and who had given it to the rest of the townspeople, to be used in common.

Still another claim made was by the settlers who had already taken land at Nahant, and who were much annoyed by the appearance of two rent-gatherers, one sent by Thomas Dexter, the other by the settlers at Lynn. Many of the settlers, becoming disgusted, moved away to more peaceful abiding-places, but the more stubborn remained to contest their own right of free settlement, refusing to pay any tax levied upon them.

The contest for Nahant appears to have been both severe and stubborn, so much so, that after the town of Lynn had voted to allot the land at Nahant equally to the several proprietors, it was voted at a subsequent town-meeting, "that the soil should be sown down to English grass, and that no house should be left standing!" Such an act it is hardly possible to find elsewhere; but in spite of it, the administrators of Thomas Dexter appealed to the decision of the court. In 1676 the case was decided against them in favor of the town of Lynn.

We next hear of Nahant in 1687, when the notorious Edward Randolph, the English commissioner of Charles II.'s time, petitioned "His Excellency, Sir Edward Andros, Knight, Governor, etc., etc," for a grant of Nahant. In 1706 Lynn voted to divide its lands among the townspeople and received from the courts the legal right to hold and divide all the common land. A committee composed of three persons, citizens of other towns, made a division and reported it to the town-meeting, when it was duly accepted. Previous to this act of the town a deed of Nahant had been procured by Lynn from the Indians, dated September 4, 1686, thus making the title of Nahant satisfactory after seventy years of contest at law.

The committee just mentioned divided Nahant into two hundred and eight lots, the largest containing four acres and six rods, the smallest thirty-eight rods. The division was made by making eleven strips or ranges forty rods wide, running across the peninsula from northeast to southwest.

Bass Point was laid out in six ranges, running east and west, and Little Nahant in two ranges. Between these ranges of land a narrow strip of land one rod wide was left for a right of way to the several lots that were laid out across these ranges; the lot lines running at right angles with the narrow roadway. These lots were conveyed by written deed, under seal and recorded, giving title to other and new proprietors. These strangers, who now began to come and cut the grass in the fields which the settlers had tilled and occupied, and which had been the playground of their children, declared the land their own, with the authority which comes from the vote of a town-meeting, sanctioned by the supreme ruling of

the courts of England. The title of all the lands on Nahant rest to-day on this town vote of 1706.

On the 26th of July, 1708, Dr. John Burchsted attached the house of Hugh Alley, Jr., at Nahant, bringing a suit of trespass against him for cutting and hauling away about ten hundred pounds of English hay from his land. The land from which Alley took the hay was from the lots in the fourth range, laid out to Joseph Collins Jr. and Samuel Newhall, and had been purchased from them by Dr. Burchsted. Hugh Alley claimed this land, "having held and enjoyed it for above fifty years last past down to this last year by mowing, fencing and improving, without disturbance or molestation till now."

He further claimed that the town of Lynn gave him eight acres of land at Nahant for his services in the Pequot War. Dr. Burchsted's evidence was that Alley was a tenant only, and paid rent to the town of Lynn, for the land which Alley claimed had been decided to be the property of Lynn previous to 1706. Of course Alley could furnish no legal title against Burchsted, and so he was forced to abandon his claim, and was fined, with the costs of the suit. It is not, however, to be wondered at that Hugh Alley, after a peaceful and unmolested residence of his father and himself for upwards of fifty years, should jealously defend this house, and gather in his barn the hay mowed by others than himself. The decree of court and the fine caused Alley to abandon Nahant and make Lynn his home.

The several depositions in this case prove most conclusively that Alley Sr. lived at Nahant as early as 1617, making him the second known inhabitant; for in an indenture made between one Armitage and the citizens of Lynn in the year 1656, 19th day, 1st Month, we find the following phrase: "For as much wood as groweth upon six acres of land on Nahant, near unto ye place where Thomas Graves' house stood," showing that one Thomas Graves had lived at Nahant and had had a house there, which had been destroyed prior to the year 1656. This makes Graves the first known inhabitant and Alley the second.

Probably two settlers, named Lindsay and Fferne, also lived on Nahant about this time, as Susanna Fferne's testimony in the land controversy shows. She "Testifieth that ye Land in Controversie between Doctor Burshted and Hugh Allie, Ever since my remembrance (for at best thirty years), has been in ye possession of and improvement of Hugh Allie, deceased, and James Mills under him, and they never have been dispossessed by any man, and that ye sd Land has been fenced in ever since my remembrance, I being Borne at Nahant, near ye same place. I further testifie yt Hugh Allie, Deceased, had another piece of Land fenced in where his House stood, which was a considerable distance from ye land in Controversie, which now lies common, and has dun soe for many years." The suit of Burchsted *vs.*





Alley settled the land controversies on Nahant, the owners now beginning to convey their lands and give a good title.

Hugh Alley, Sr., one of the earliest and most prominent settlers at Nahant, the only one who kept his home there in opposition to the decree of Lynn that it should be sown to English grass, deserves more than a passing notice. The first that is known of him is in 1635, when, at the age of twenty-seven years, he embarked, a "no subsidy" man, from Stepney Parish in England, in the ship "Abigail," bound for New England. In company with him were Henry and Ann Collins, with three children—Henry, John and Mobery. Hugh Alley probably married Mary Graves, daughter of Thomas Graves, by whom he had eight children,—Mary, born January 6, 1642; John, born November 30, 1646; Martha, born July 31, 1649; Sarah, born April 15, 1651; Hugh, born May 15, 1653; Solomon, born August 2, 1656; Hannah, born June 1, 1661; Jacob, born September 5, 1663. He must have settled at Nahant as early as 1647 or '48, as six of his children were born here. John Lewis, aged seventy-eight years, testifieth "that I plowed ye land in controversie for Hugh Alley for forty years from year to year, to my best remembrance." Also by deposition of Benjamin Collins, aged about sixty years, who "testifieth to his knowledge that said Alley had another field within fence, where his house stood, some distance from ye land in controversie." Eleanor Hudson, aged seventy-seven years, gave the same testimony, and Joanna Alley, of full age, testified that she saw her mother-in-law, Mary Graves, above named, put James Mills in possession of "ye aforesaid house and land that was formerly in ye possession of Hugh Alley about thirty-three years since." According to this testimony of Joanna Alley, the house and barn of Hugh Alley were standing in 1673 or '74. These depositions also show that the remainder of Nahant, outside of the Alley farm, was laid out and used in common for pasture by the townspeople of Lynn.

Hugh Alley served in the Pequot War, as by deposition of Benjamin Collins and others, "the land now in controversie, called the Hope Well, was given to Hugh Alley for his services in the Pequot War." It would seem that they were a sturdy, fighting family, for his son Solomon was killed afterwards in King Philip's War.

The exact spot upon which Alley's house stood cannot be definitely determined. The only indication we have is that it was not far from Hope Well, which was in the fourth range, so that the house must have stood on land partly owned now by Mr. Albert Whitney and Mr. Fred. Sears, probably in the north corner of the Sears lot. The place named Hope Well was probably so called from the name of the ship "Hope Well," which arrived at Salem, September, 1635, bringing among its passengers Joanna and Mary Graves, aged thirty and twenty-six respectively,

who were probably children of Thomas Graves, as they came to Nahant, where Graves was settled. Hugh Alley died January 25, 1674.

Martha, one of the daughters of Hugh Alley, married James Mills, who tended the sheep and cattle and occupied the house of his father-in-law. Hugh Alley, Jr., married Rebecca Hood, December 9, 1681, and left five children,—Rebecca, Benjamin, Jacob, Samuel and Hannah. Thus through all the turmoil and strife for the soil of Nahant, Hugh Alley and his descendants defended themselves, keeping their buildings and fences standing.

The homestead was a most desirable dwelling-place; it had the best of soil for farming, with numerous springs of water, an abundant supply of wood, besides being a safe place for the pasturage of cattle. There were plenty of fish and sea-birds, with an abundance of plover and land-birds, making a home surrounded with plenty at its very doors. This was too much for one or two to enjoy and soon attracted others, and it was about this time that Isaac Johnson and Saltonstall sent their servants to take charge of cattle sent to graze on these fields so early cleared by the first settlers. These settlers stayed in Nahant until Boston and Charlestown opened border fields, with an abundance of salt marsh land from which hay could be procured for feeding cattle through the winter.

Joseph Jacobs married one of the daughters of Alley and became a large land-owner on Nahant, but he conveyed his lands to other parties and moved to Lynn.

Among other early settlers are John and Michael Lambert, the latter of whom married Eleanor Hudson, and lived near Alley for about twenty-four years.

Christopher Lindsay, another early settler, also lived on the land called Hope Well for four or five years—"till his death." Susanna Fierne, born at Nahant in 1664, married Michael Lombard, and lived at Nahant upwards of twenty-four years; but to trace these would hardly be worth the time and research necessary.

Ann, the daughter of Benjamin B. Alley, son of Hugh Alley, Jr., married Jonathan Johnson. They lived near the spot where Hugh Alley's house stood.

From two of his sons, Joseph and Caleb, the numerous family of Johnsons sprang, living, some of them, on those inclosed acres settled by Hugh Alley in 1617, or two hundred and thirty-nine years ago. Samuel Breed, Sr., who married Annie Hood, February 5, 1696, a sister of the wife of Hugh Alley, Jr., bought sixty acres of land from Dr. Burchsted and others in 1717, which he conveyed to two of his sons, Samuel and Jabez, in the year 1735. In 1738 they divided it between them, and the next year Jabez sold his land to Richard Hood and moved to Lynn. It is uncertain whether Samuel Breed, Sr., lived at Nahant previous to 1717, when he purchased his land



there; but his two sons were both living there in separate houses before 1739. His marriage to the sister of the wife of Hugh Alley, Jr., may have induced him to make Nahant his home, as some of his children were born there, viz.: Samuel, Ann, Jabez, Martha, Vessiah, Ruth, Ebenezer and Benjamin. Subsequent marriages show that the descendants of Hugh Alley returned to the old homestead and made Nahant their home; so this homestead, over which there had been so much quarreling, again came into the possession of the descendants, being occupied consecutively by the Alleys, James Mills, Samuel Breed, Sr. and Jr., and their descendants. Jabez Breed built a house which he conveyed to Richard Hood, making two houses only on Nahant at that time.

The first known ancestor of the Johnson family at Nahant is JOHN JOHNSON (a cousin of Isaac Johnson), who came from England with his wife Margery, and his children, Isaac and Humphrey. He probably had other children besides these, as he speaks of five in his will in 1629. He settled at Roxbury, and was admitted freeman in 1630.

He was a learned and leading man in the colonies, and represented the town of Roxbury in the General Court for many years. He was also surveyor-general of the arms of the colonies.

Mr. Edward Johnson, of Woburn, says: "To write the history of John Johnson would fill a volume, and his worth as one of the founders of the government of the colonies of Massachusetts is too well-known to be recorded here." He died September 29, 1659. Margery, his wife, died June 9, 1655.

Humphrey, a son of John Johnson, married Ellen Cheney March 20, 1642. Their children were Melitable, born September, 1644; Deborah, born June 20, 1650 (these two were born at Roxbury); John, born March, 1653; Joseph, born June 21, 1655; Benjamin, born August 27, 1657; Margaret, born August, 1659 (the last four were born at Scituate).

Humphrey, attorney for Plymouth, witnessed the will of Governor Winthrop, and was a leading man both in Plymouth and Scituate.

John, a son of Humphrey, married Mary ——. Their children were Elizabeth, born May 19, 1675; Joseph, born October, 1677; Rebecca, born November 17, 1679; Rachel, born December 23, 1681; Jonathan, born February 20, 1682—all born at Rehoboth.

JONATHAN JOHNSON came to Lynn in 1706, and married Sarah Mansfield May 30, 1710. The inhabitants of the town of Lynn granted him, in town-meeting, a piece of land "to set his house upon." On his first coming to Lynn he was warned out of town by the constable, but refused to go. Ten years later he was chosen constable and gave similar warnings to those who came into the settlement. The children of Jonathan Johnson and Sarah Mansfield were Mary, born 1712; Phebe, born 1714; Sarah,

born 1718; Edward, born 1721; Jonathan, born 1723; Elizabeth, born 1726.

Sarah, wife of Jonathan Johnson, died in 1726 and he married for his second wife Susanna Mower, in the year 1726. Jonathan Johnson died at Lynn June 11, 1741, in his fifty-eighth year.

Of his sons, Edward lived at Lynn and Salem, where he proved himself a successful merchant. His descendants now live in Boston and Lynn.

Jonathan, when a young man, enlisted in a cavalry regiment, under the command of Major Graves, and fought in the French and Indian Wars, from which event in his life he gained the sobriquet of "Trooper." After returning home he learned chair-making and also block-making, and soon after moved to Marblehead, where he worked at his trade.

He married, June 11, 1745, Katherine Brumage, who died February 13, 1753. They had one child, Jonathan, born December 29, 1745, who died in his youth.

For his second wife he married Susanna Farrington, July 25, 1753. Their children were Mary, born May 8, 1755; Rebecca, born February 26, 1757; William, born January 3, 1759.

He married for his third wife Ann Alley, the widow of Thomas Williams, and a granddaughter of Hugh Alley. He then bought out Jeremiah Gray's interest in Nahant and moved there, where his three sons were born—Benjamin, October 11, 1771; Joseph, February 12, 1776; and Caleb, December 7, 1778.

He spent his time at Nahant in farming and fishing and following his trade. On one occasion, while out fishing in his boat, the "Jolly Venture," a severe northwest gale arose, carrying away the sails of his little craft and making her unmanageable; however, with the pieces of sail he had, he managed to make a landing on the lower part of Cape Cod, where he lost his boat, but saved himself. From there he traveled on foot, following along the shore, receiving the charity of the settlers, who gave him lodging and food, until he reached home, after two weeks of hardship, with feet and hands frost-bitten. It is said that afterwards he would stand in his doorway whenever the wind blew furiously and curse the north wind. He died in 1799, while living with his son, Caleb Johnson.

The three sons of Jonathan Johnson—Benjamin, Joseph and Caleb—served an apprenticeship of seven years at the shoemaker's trade with their half-brother, Thomas Williams.

Benjamin married Betsy Batchelder, September 24, 1795, and made Market Street, Lynn, his home. Their children were Anna, born November 2, 1785; Lewis, born January, 1800, died January 15, 1801; Benjamin, born July 1, 1804; Jonathan, born September 19, 1806, died young.

Among the country people who came to Nahant for pleasure and health were Mr. and Mrs. Hartwell, of Claremont, with their daughter Olive. An attach-

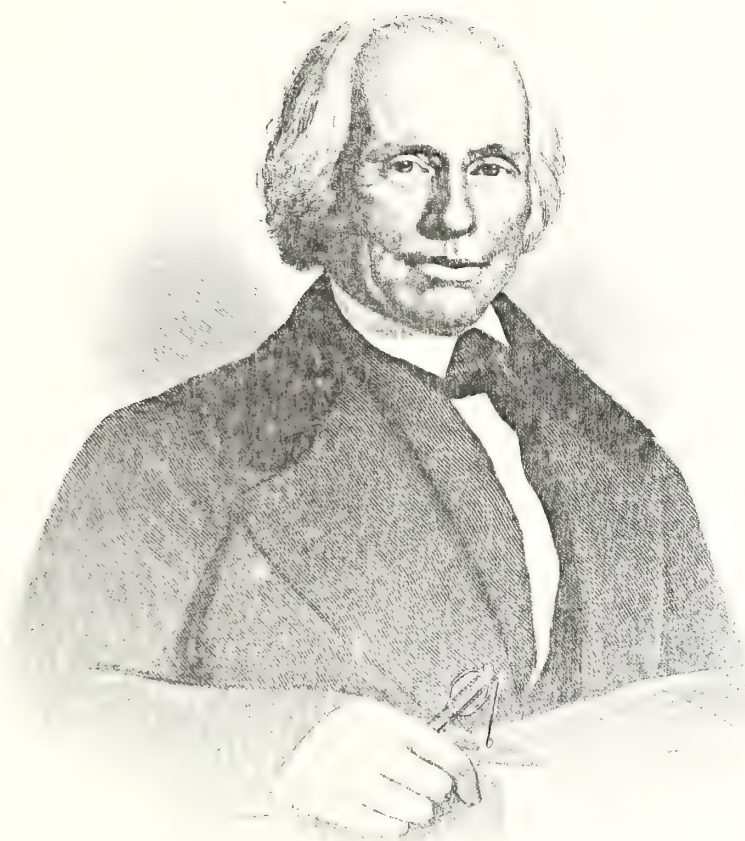




Colt - Johnson  
— H —







*Joseph Johnson*



ment was formed between Olive Hartwell and Caleb Johnson, but at the time of the departure of Mr. Hartwell and his family he had not been accepted as a suitor for the daughter. In this condition of affairs the father and daughter left Nahant for their journey homeward, but Caleb, unwilling to be left behind, followed the retreating vehicle on horseback. He overtook them in Malden, and followed close after until Worcester was reached; here Mr. Hartwell, thinking such persistency should be rewarded, offered his seat in the vehicle to Caleb, while he rode the horse; thus the engagement was made, and soon after Olive Hartwell became the wife of Caleb Johnson, in the year 1798.

CALEB JOHNSON always lived in the old Johnson homestead, where he commenced his married life, and where all his children were born. Nearly all his life was spent in the fishing business. He was a part owner of the "Dolphin," "Jefferson" and "Lafayette," which vessels he commanded the most of the time they were employed in the fishing business at Nahant. He was noted for his great endurance and his remarkable memory. He would remember the accounts of the sale of his fares of fish to the various customers during the week, so that when he received the money for himself and crew, it was always found correct, as verified by the book account which had been kept by the customers.

In the forwarding of the building and maintaining of school and church, he contributed money, and bore the same burdens with his brother Joseph, although his name does not appear as prominent in the official government of these institutions as that of his brother Joseph.

A severe accident, occasioned by a fall, unfitted him from the further pursuit of fishing, which he had steadily followed for about fifty years. Yet he always held an interest in the fishing fleet; to use his own words, "he always wanted to own a timber-head in some of the boats," and he held an interest in the last boat of the fleet until the time of his death. When an old man, over eighty-four years old, it was not uncommon to see him, before the break of day, at anchor in his dory patiently waiting for the "day-light spurt."

He died at the advanced age of eighty-nine years.

The old Johnson homestead was built about a hundred and fifty years from the present date, and has been occupied by members of the Johnson family for more than a century. There, four generations of the family have lived. Some of the rooms in the old homestead, the "cradle of the Johnson family," now remain the same as then occupied by the generations who have passed away.

The small windows and paneled walls, the narrow door, the old-fashioned furniture, the folding-bed, the old clock, the two small rocking-chairs which Caleb and Olive Johnson occupied, facing each other in their chosen places by the fire-place, where the embers

for so many years never went out, were familiar sights to many.

In the homestead Caleb and Olive Johnson commenced their married life in 1798, and all their children were born there. It is a notable fact that the first death that occurred in Caleb Johnson's family was the death of his wife at the advanced age of eighty-four years.

Mrs. Johnson, or Aunt Olive, as she was familiarly called, was in many respects a remarkable woman, and possessed to a marked degree those qualities which make up the excellent wife and mother. Her judgment was always wise and foreseeing, and her children, when grown up to men and women, would always come back to her for counsel and guidance in whatever business enterprises they were about to engage.

The children of Caleb and Olive Johnson were Mary, born December 6, 1800; Welcome William, born August 26, 1803; George L., born April 8, 1806; Clara, born March 15, 1808; Edward Augustus, born June 15, 1816; Caleb Hervey, born May 21, 1812; Daniel W., born February 5, 1815; Olive Cornelia, born February 12, 1817; William Frederick, born July 30, 1819; Charles Warren, born January 2, 1823.

JOSEPH JOHNSON married Mary Cox, daughter of Captain Francis Cox, of Salem, May 7, 1797; and commenced his married life on Broad Street, Lynn, but returned to Nahant a few years later and built his house there.

The children of Joseph and Mary Johnson were Joseph, born January 5, 1798; Jonathan, born February 6, 1800; Francis, born July 3, 1802; Eliza, born July 29, 1806; Pamela, born October 11, 1808; Washington Harlow, born July 16, 1811; Dolly Madison, born July 28, 1813; Walter, born October 20, 1816.

Mrs. Mary Johnson died November 19, 1818; and June 1, 1819, Joseph Johnson married Miss Betsy Graves, daughter of Captain Nathaniel Graves, of North Reading.

Their children were Daniel Alfred, born April 26, 1820; Edward Kirke, born November 7, 1822; Frederick Henry, born April 30, 1825; Franklin Everett, born November 4, 1827; Mary Graves, born April 15, 1830, died 1831; Edmund Buxton, born July 13, 1832.

Joseph Johnson's long and useful life was nearly all spent at Nahant. In the winter months he was engaged in fishing, in summer in farming. For many years the simple sign marked J. Johnson was nailed to the west corner of his house, which was one of the first hotels in the town. It dated back to 1812, and was familiarly known as Johnson's hotel.

He was among the first to forward the building of a church and school-house at Nahant, and contributed his full share in money, as well as generously furnishing board to the workmen while constructing the build-





ing,—a sacrifice known only to the pioneers who zealously founded and cared for these institutions.

In records of the past the name of Joseph is conspicuous as a member of the School Committee and as a member of the First Methodist Church in Lynn, until the building of the village church at Nahant, where he served as trustee and deacon until his death, in 1854.

RICHARD HOOD (mentioned above), the son of Richard Hood, Sr., was born in Lynn. He married Theodate Collins, May 20, 1718; and had nine children, viz.,—Theodate, born October 27, 1719; Jedediah, born September 25, 1721; Content, born December 20, 1722; Rebecca, born April 3, 1725; Hannah, born December 3, 1727; Patience, born September 9, 1730; Abner, born September 26, 1733; Abigail, born September 14, 1736.

Jeremiah Gray married Theodate, a daughter of Richard Hood; he built a house in 1741, and inclosed it with a stone-wall, on land purchased by Richard Hood of Samuel Breed, Jr., which comprised two lots originally laid out to Widow Ivory and Captain Elezer Lindsay. Gray afterwards conveyed the land to Jonathan Johnson in 1758. At that date there were but three families living at Nahant,—Breed, Hood and Johnson.

Abner Hood, son of Richard Hood, inherited by will all his father's real estate on Nahant, which comprised fifty-three acres, including a house and barn. He came to Nahant with his father in 1739. Mr. Hood was married when fifty years old to Keziah Breed, a sister of the then somewhat distinguished Ebenezer Breed, of Lynn.

They had five children,—Abner, born April 1, 1784; Richard, born March 13, 1788; Theodate, born May 23, 1787; Benjamin and Ebenezer, born April 7, 1790. At his death he left his estate, comprising the homestead with over one hundred acres of land, to his four sons, who made a division in 1820. Mr. Hood was a small man and always wore the Quaker style of dress, as he belonged to that sect. He served as a selectman of the town of Lynn, and was also a member of the committee that decided the line between Lynn and Reading. As the Society of Friends, however, objected to his holding office, on the ground that it was worldly and not consistent with their religious teachings, he resigned from all public trusts and refused to hold public office further. He was a prudent and industrious farmer, spending all his life on Nahant, and dying there at the age of eighty-four. Of the sons of Abner Hood, Abner Hood, Jr., married, in 1807, Mary Newhall Richards; Ebenezer Hood married Abbie Phillips, of Lynn; Benjamin Hood married Hannah, daughter of John Phillips, of Lynn. He inherited the homestead, with one-fourth part of his father's estate. Uncle "Ben," as he was familiarly called, was the humorist and practical joker of the village, and made life enjoyable to all who knew him, while at all public gatherings he imparted a

ripple of wit and humor, throwing sunshine into every shadow.

Richard Hood married Clarissa Herrick, daughter of Dr. Martyn Herrick, of North Reading. Dr. Herrick was a man of considerable note in the last century. He was born in Reading in 1747, graduated at Harvard College in 1772, and there began the study of medicine with Dr. (afterwards Governor) Brooks, of Medford. He met Paul Revere in his memorable ride from Boston, and going in the opposite direction, spread the warning. He fought in the battle of Lexington, and after the battle assisted Dr. Brooks in caring for the wounded. He enlisted in the army, from which he was transferred to the navy as surgeon, and was twice captured by the British. After the war he settled as a practicing physician in North Reading, where he died in the year 1820.

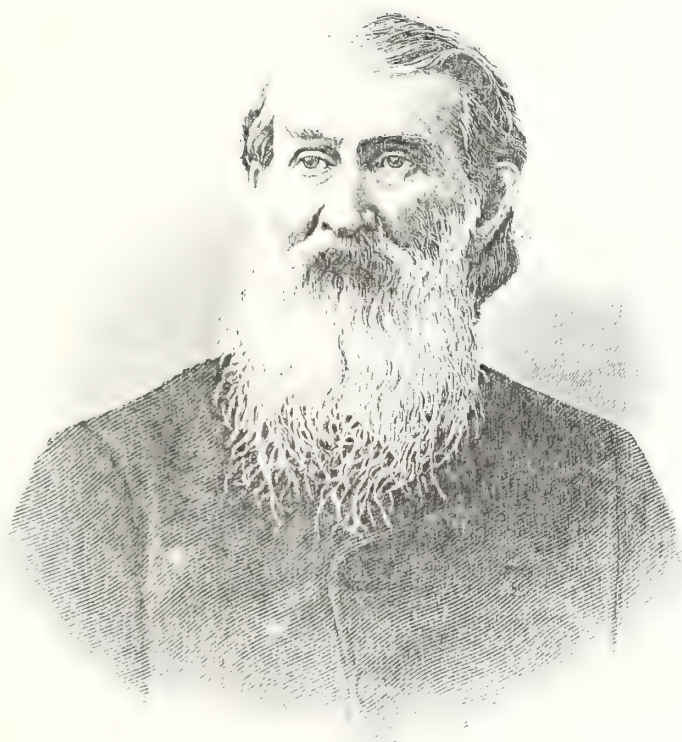
Mr. Richard Hood, unlike his brothers, who were farmers, engaged in the fishing business, and was one of the owners and crew of the "Dolphin" and "Lafayette." In 1819 he built the Hood Hotel for transient and summer boarders. In 1826 he conveyed his estate to Mr. Charles Bradbury, who afterwards conveyed it to Mr. Jesse Rice, who succeeded Mr. Hood in the hotel business. Richard Hood moved to Portland, Maine, where he engaged in the packet service between Boston and Portland. In 1847 he returned to Lynn, where he resided with his son Martyn until his death.

When an old man he returned to Nahant for the summer, and in a small boat pursued the business of his early choice, catching his fish from the old and familiar fishing-grounds, some of which grounds bear his name to this day. He was famous for relating stories of the past history of the town and State, which, if they had been gathered then, would be worth the telling now.

MARTIN HERRICK HOOD, the son of Richard and Clarissa Hood, was born at Nahant, September 15, 1813. Here he lived until the age of twelve, when he accompanied his parents to Portland, Maine, where he learned the shoemaking trade, in which he was employed until 1848, when he returned to Lynn and there engaged in the manufacture of boots and shoes.

December 9, 1852, he was married to Miss Sarah G. Hay, of Charlestown, daughter of Mr. Francis Hay. In 1860 he was one of the first to enter in the new industry of sole-cutting, that large and growing industry in which to-day millions of capital is invested. He retired from active business life at the age of seventy-three, rich in the rewards of a long and industrious life. His lineage is marked by illustrious men and women in the earliest history of the colonies, dating back to the days of Endicott, Johnson and Saltonstall. His ancestors on his father's side were Quakers, and adverse to war, while on his mother's side they were among the first to fight for liberty and country. These two qualities still live in





*Martin H. Hand.*



the representative of the Hood families, whose portrait finds a place in this volume.

The Breed family were among the first families to make their permanent home at Nahant, Samuel Breed having lived there previous to 1706. Samuel Breed, Sr., was married to Annie Hood February 5, 1690. Their children were Samuel, born November 11, 1692; Amos, born July 20, 1694; Jabez, born January 26, 1695; Abigail, born September 7, 1698; Nathan, born January 3, 1702; Keziah, born October 16, 1704; Annie, born July 28, 1706; Ebenezer, born May 1, 1710; Ruth, born March 10, 1711; Benjamin, born July 4, 1715.

Samuel Breed, Jr., was married to Deliverance Basset, January 25, 1719. Their children were Anna, born March 20, 1726; Sarah, born September 29, 1729; Hulda, born May 13, 1731; Nehemiah, born January 19, 1736.

Nehemiah Breed married Abigail ———, probably a daughter of Nehemiah Bassett. Their only child was William Breed, born September 21, 1759. William Breed was married to Hannah Bassett, daughter of Joseph and Eunice Bassett. Their children were Nehemiah and Daniel. Nehemiah Breed married Miriam Alley, daughter of Benjamin and Hulda Alley. Their children were Abigail, born March 27, 1813; Lydia Alley born November 2, 1814.

Daniel Breed, son of William Breed, married Abigail Newhall, daughter of Rufus Newhall. Their children were William N., born June 28, 1825; John H., born September 26, 1839. Daniel Breed, died September 2, 1858.

NAHANT IN 1800.—At the time of Jonathan Johnson's death, just as a new century was beginning, Nahant looked very differently from what it now is.

A stone wall, from shore to shore, fenced in the first range; another stone wall, also running across from shore to shore, between ranges two and three, inclosed the second range,—the one owned by Breed and the other by Hood. From about the centre of the wall between the first and second ranges another stone wall ran in a northwesterly direction to the range line between ranges five and six, thence north-easterly by the range line to the road; continuing along the road in a southeasterly direction to a large boulder, a few rods above Whitney's Hotel; from there, in a westerly direction, to where it intersected the long line of wall from the second to the sixth range. Still another wall inclosed the Bank field or homestead of Richard Hood. At Bass Point a field was inclosed and a hotel built by Joseph Johnson, of Lynn—one of the first hotels built on the coast for summer visitors.

One road ran through the town, winding here and there so as to avoid the numerous boulders which were scattered about the pastures. From this main road others, at convenient places, ran over the slope of the hill to the beaches and to Bass Point.

Leading from these two or three roads, foot-paths and cow-paths wound through the barberry bushes, across hill and marsh land, to the several small springs from which the cattle got their supply of water. A few cedar trees still survived on Little Nahant, where a cart-way extended across the western end from Short Beach to Long Beach. A few trees of the primeval forest that once grew in the low lands below Whitney's Hotel, with here and there a stray willow or cedar, were all that remained to break the monotonous stretch of bare pasture land. A narrow foot-path wandered along the shore, leading hither and thither down to the waters' edge.

Of the three families at that time living in Nahant, two,—Hood and Breed,—were farmers, who owned nearly all the land in the first, second, third and fourth ranges, while the third, Johnson, who was a fisherman, owned only about ten acres of land. He had his fishing-boat anchored near Nipper Stage Point, and had also a small boat-house on the bank, with flakes for drying fish. In summer countless flocks of plover, curlew, peep and other birds frequented the shores; while in winter at every point innumerable sea-fowl, coots, black duck, blue-winged teal, brant, wild geese, etc., fed in the coves and bays. Fish, of course, were abundant, and thus Nahant, primitive in society and unsurpassed in sporting attraction, seemed, from the very first, destined to be a place of summer resort. Even at this early time it attracted some of the best families of Boston and Salem, first as boarders with the three families dwelling there, and later as owners of cottages.

On the southwest side of Nahant are two small coves, the only places where a safe landing can be made in severe storms. Nipper Stage, a point or rocky ledge running out in a westerly direction some twenty rods, breaks the undertow of the sea from the first cove. A smaller ledge separates the two coves; beside which stretches a sandy beach about fifty yards in length. This little sandy beach, bordered by a grassy slope, was in the early period the common landing-place for the fishermen and farmers of Nahant. Hence, no doubt, the wood cut by Armitage in 1658 was transported by water to Marblehead and Boston. Here, at the head of the little cove, were the flakes for drying fish, which were gathered into parcels or quintals to be brought to market by water, although the greater part was sold to country people, who visited Nahant for that purpose; as we learn from the statement of Mrs. Abner Hood, who said that many country people came to purchase dry and fresh fish, lodging at the Breed Tavern.

As early as 1738 Samuel Breed, Jr., was designated in a deed as "Samuel Breed, Inn Keeper," and the land conveyed to him was described as near Nipper Stage.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Concerning the origin of this queer name we have no certain knowledge. The word Nipper is the local name for perch, and in early times





This ledge of rocks is now the site of the wharf and steamboat landing. In 1800 a spring near the cove furnished an abundance of good water. A foot-path led up from this cove, across the field and through the swamp, crossing by the way two ditches, a plank serving as a bridge, while on either side were bushes from three to ten feet high; thence the path wound up the steep hill, through a grove of locust trees to the Johnson house and the road. Another road circled northward around the hill from the old boat-house to Dorothy's Cove. This connected with the cart-way that led up the hill to the main road, and was used for many years for the cartage of fish, wood, stores, etc., from the landing to the village.

Many a story has been told by the older people of adventures and incidents at this spot. Here was the first steamboat landing of 1817. Off this point were anchored the "Dolphin," "Lookout," "Sally Ann," "Lafayette" and others, besides the fishing-boats. Near by was a large boulder, where a fire-place of stone was made, upon which a kettle of tar and pitch was boiled for many years; the tar and pitch being used as a coating instead of paint on the outside planks that covered the bottom of the boats. Here, too, parties came in summer to catch "nippers" and make fish chowders.

On the death of Hood, Breed and Johnson, their land came into the possession of their children. The Richard Hood land, which contained over one hundred acres, became the property of his son, Abner. The Breed land also descended to an only son, Nehemiah; and what he had purchased together with that which he inherited amounted to upwards of one hundred and twenty acres. The land left by Johnson was inherited by his three sons,—Caleb, Joseph and Benjamin. In 1800 there were still but three families living on Nahant,—Abner Hood, Nehemiah Breed and Caleb Johnson.

The public-house mentioned before at Bass Point, now familiarly known as the Castle, was built and used as a summer hotel by a Joseph Johnson, of Lynn, in the year 1802, as the following notice shows:

"NAHANT.

"Joseph Johnson informs the public in general and the valetudinalists and sportsmen in particular, that he has reopened a House of Entertainment on the most delightful, pleasant, airy and healthy spot on Nahant, where he will be found ready furnished with every 'good thing' to cheer the heart, to brace the frame, or to pamper the appetite. His house is commodious and neat—in the vicinity of the best fishing and bowling on the peninsula; and he keeps a neat sail-boat always aloft for the accommodation of his friends. To the other inducements he adds his respectful invitation; and while he will attend his guests with delight, he assures them that every favour shall be remembered with gratitude.

"Friend to pastime, foe to care.  
Come, enjoy our sports and fare!

they were very frequently called by this name. Probably a wharf or staging might have been built for the landing and loading of fish, wood, groceries, etc. Perch could be caught there in great numbers.

Come, and stay a week or so—  
But if uneasy, haste to go."

"Nahant, July 26, 1802."

WAR OF 1812.—Before 1812, however, three other dwelling-houses were built by Joseph Johnson, Ebenezer and Abner Hood, for their own use and for summer boarders, and this, with fishing and shoemaking, as in nearly all the sea-board towns, was the business of the few who dwelt there. In the year 1812 the schooner "Dolphin" was sold to John Phillips, of Swampscott, from fear of the English cruisers, which left the little settlement without a vessel. However, soon after, peace was declared, and Caleb Johnson purchased of Mr. Crowninshield the sloop "Jefferson," of Salem, which had been used as a privateer.

In *Harper's Magazine* of September, 1886, is the following description: "The schooner 'Fame' sailed in the afternoon and sent the first prize into Salem. The second prize was sent in by the 'Jefferson,' a boat of only fourteen tons, carrying one gun and twenty men." This little boat was used as an excursion boat in summer and for fishing in winter until 1816, when, having become unseaworthy, she was sold in Lynn and broken up for fire-wood; a new boat was then built called the "Dolphin," which took the place of the "Jefferson."

In the War of 1812 it is stated by the old people now living, that the English ships frequently sailed by Nahant opposite Bass Point, so near that the men could be seen on the deck of the frigates. Fishermen were very often captured by these frigates. One skipper, when captured and brought alongside of the vessel, refused to allow the captain to take his fish without paying for them, which so amused the officers that they paid him for the fish, remarking, "Let the exacting Yankee fisherman go; but if we catch you again we will keep your fish and you too."

Mrs. Polly Hood remembered seeing "Uncle Billy Breed" ride from his tavern to Lynn on horseback with a bag of money behind him, frightened at the appearance of the English ships. It is also said that English officers in citizens' dress, at times boarded at the Hood House. At the time of the celebrated naval engagement between the "Chesapeake" and "Shannon" all the headlands were covered with people from Lynn and adjoining towns to witness the encounter. Old residents declare that there have never been so many people on Nahant at one time since.

In 1817 the Breed family moved to Lynn from Nahant, leasing their house and farm to Jesse Rice.

DESCRIPTIVE LETTER.—In the *Patriot* of Saturday, August 14, 1819, the following letter describes the Nahant of that day better than any one now can:

"Nahant possesses advantages as a watering-place superior to any in New England. It is a peninsula stretching two miles into the sea. You approach it by land, over a most excellent turnpike road, surpassed by none in the United States; and across a beach of surpassing smoothness, on whose hard level the wheel leaves no mark, and which may be justly considered as one of the curiosities of the country.



"From its bleak bluffs the ocean spreads itself before you in all its grandeur, now bearing on its broad and beautiful bosom the whitesails of commerce, and now roaring in rage and breaking its wild wave on the shore. You have here the sublimity of a sea voyage, with the security of a residence on land. The rocky shore of the peninsula presents another appearance of sublimity and grandeur; the rude magnificence and gigantic outline of one part is relieved by the beauty and regularity of others; and in the clefts and caverns which diversify the scenery, an admirer of nature may find abundant amusement in exploring the innumerable traces of her workmanship.

"Some of these have obtained appropriate names from the attention of visitors, and the Swallow's Cave, Spouting Horn, Five Sisters, Pea Island, The Point and the Grotto remind those who are familiar with this curious place of some of its romantic situations. Nor do you appear to be on an island. Shut out from the world, on the south you perceive the spires of the capital and the dwellings of its busy population; on the west and north arise the green fields and farms of rich husbandry and grateful cultivation.

"On the high grounds of Nahant the air is most pure, refreshing and salutary. The heat of a summer sun is moderated by luxuriant sea-breezes which never fail, from some quarter, to alleviate its intensity.

"Its waters afford abundant sport for fishermen; small fish are caught in surprising quantities from the rocks; and at a short distance in the bay cod, haddock, mackerel and halibut reward the labor which pursues them.

"Nahant was formerly a fine place for gunning, but the crowds which have of late years resorted to its shores have almost entirely scattered the birds, which were accustomed to frequent it. A short sail, however, will put the sportsman on an island where his best expectations may be gratified.

"It is surprising, that with all these natural advantages, art should almost wholly have omitted to add anything to the rest.

"The company who have visited Nahant have hitherto resided among the few Quakers of the place, and partook of such homely accommodations as they could conveniently procure; but their ability has not equalled their good disposition.

"It is only necessary that a hotel and bathing-houses should be erected to make Nahant one of the most frequented places in New England. These advantages, if attracting here the company which annually seek amusement or health abroad, is prodigious, if calculated only in a pecuniary point of view. A circulation of at least sixty or seventy thousand dollars in specie would be annually derived from the people who frequent any well established watering place, and with the superior natural accommodations of Nahant, the assistance of a small capital would place it on the most desirable establishment.

"Something has already been done by an enterprising and public-spirited individual, and a scheme for great improvements set on foot which, if successful, will render it a most delightful retreat from the cares of business or the unhealthy atmosphere of the capital."

*Editor's Note.*—"A recent establishment of Mr. Rice, though not dignified with the appellation of a hotel, may nevertheless be considered as approaching very nearly to a house of that description."

*Editor's Note.*—"We have received this beautiful description of Nahant in a very intelligent and respectful manner."

**THE HOTEL.**—July 9, 1821, Thomas H. Perkins and William Paine, both of Boston, for the consideration of \$1800, bought of Nehemiah Breed all the south-east part or first range of Nahant, which was then called the "Run Pasture." This piece of land contained about eighteen acres, and on this land, in addition to several acres more afterwards purchased, the Nahant Hotel was then built. We clip the following notice from the *Columbian Sentinel* of September 15, 1821:

#### "NAHANT HOTEL."

"Those gentlemen who have generously subscribed towards erecting a hotel at Nahant, with such as may be disposed to promote the object, are requested to meet the undersigned at 12 o'clock, on Monday next, at the American Insurance Office, to consider what measures shall be taken to complete the subscription, or whether it shall be abandoned altogether. The necessity of erecting the wall the present season, if it is expected the house shall be occupied the next summer, makes it necessary that something decisive should be determined upon.

"T. H. PERKINS,  
"WM. PAINE."

The ensuing year, June 26, 1823, the hotel was completed and opened. The following notice of the opening appeared in the Boston papers:

#### "NAHANT HOTEL."

"This magnificent establishment is now open for the reception of visitors, to the most delightful spot on the American coast for health or pleasure. It is impossible to select a residence which combines so many natural and artificial advantages.

"Located in the bosom of the ocean, the air is salubrious and inviting; while the spacious bay continually presenting the fleets of commerce, with the hills, verdant plains, islands, villages and country seats, extending from the heights of Sertuda to the peninsula of Cape Ann, form a panorama unrivaled in any country.

"The numerous projecting cliffs afford excellent sites for the angler; from whence even old Isaac Walton would have thrown his line with pleasure, and looked abroad upon the wilderness of waters 'in moral contemplation wrapped.'

"The hotel is capacious and fitted up with every convenience, where the Superintendent, Captain James Mager, so distinguished for his gentlemanly deportment and kind disposition, is most assiduous to make every one happy and comfortable. There are floating hot and cold and shower salt water baths, billiard-rooms, bowling alleys, a beautiful marine hippodrome which twice in twenty-four hours is laved and rolled smooth by the waves of the ocean, and numerous interesting walks for health, exercise and amusement. In truth, Nahant is the chosen domain of the youthful Hygeia, the pleasant summer residence of the invalid and of all those who seek enjoyment or require relaxation from the cares and business of life; whether they flee from the sultry clime of the South, or the 'stir of the great Babels' of commerce, there they can be at ease and well come."—*Thursday, June 26, 1823.*

In the following year we find a further description in an advertisement of the hotel:

"The hotel itself is a large stone edifice, containing seventy chambers, in a number of which are recesses for beds.

"There is a dining room fifty feet in length, and of sufficient size to accommodate one hundred and twenty-four persons at table; besides these there are several private parlors and a capacious stable, a handsome bathing-house for warm and cold baths, a machine of peculiar construction for bathing in the open sea, excellent boats for sailing and fishing, &c.

"MURDOX DERRICK,  
"HENRY JOHNSON."

The above proprietors kept the hotel until 1827.

In that year we quote the following extracts from the papers of that date, showing how popular Nahant then was as a watering-place:

"On Saturday last six hundred persons left Nahant for Boston; we are glad to find that visitors at this pleasant retreat are again becoming frequent. On Monday nearly three hundred people were at the Nahant Hotel and were exceedingly well accommodated.

"One company, composed principally of members of musical choirs of several societies of the city, to the number of nearly two hundred, dined at tables extending the entire length of the three piazzas. . . .

"Among the visitors at the Hotel this season are numbers of our Southern friends and if we may be pardoned for introducing the name of a lady, we should mention that Mrs. Randolph, the daughter of the venerable Thomas Jefferson, was one of them."

Another correspondent in a Salem paper the same year says:

"Nahant contains about a dozen dwellings, and has about three hundred and five acres of fertile land under high cultivation. . . . Nahant has long been a place of resort in the warm season for the fashionable and gay from the metropolis who are in pursuit of amusement and recreation, and for invalids from the vicinity and interior of the country, who are in pursuit of health, in the most oppressive heat and sultry weather of summer. . . . Immense quantities of sea-weed are cast by the ocean on the beach and shore of the peninsula. Not less than three thousand tons a year are conveyed to the main land by the farmers. . . . The number of visitors at Nahant this year has never been equaled. Strangers are enticed here from the more southern cities. The point of





attraction is Nahant, which, like the orbit of a circle, encloses all the taste, elegance and fashion of the country. The balls are splendid and gay, the conversation lively and amusing."

The last proprietor of the Nahant Hotel, as first built, was Phineas Drew, who, in 1852, conveyed the hotel and grounds to parties in Lynn, who made extensive improvements in the grounds and built a new hotel in the winter of 1853-54. The hotel thus enlarged and rebuilt was a large wooden building, new wings three and four stories high having been added on each side of the stone work of the former hotel. The building was over four hundred feet long and had about three hundred rooms. Eleven hundred people could be accommodated at one time, and the spacious dining hall could seat over six hundred. It was one of the largest and most convenient hotels on the Atlantic coast. Every summer the house was filled, and it was not an uncommon thing for the proprietors to furnish mattresses in the hallways for guests when there were no rooms left for them. Everything was furnished for the comfort and pleasure of those who spent the summer there. Telegraph wires connected with Boston, and there were bowling alleys, billiard-rooms, stables, and boating and fishing accommodations. A steamboat was built expressly for the accommodation of its patrons to and from Boston. The hotel and everything connected with it was a great success, until the war broke out, when, like many other enterprises, it failed to receive its accustomed patronage.

The following advertisement of the hotel is taken from the *Boston Journal* of June 10, 1854:

"The Nahant House has for many years been one of the most popular resorts, during the summer season to be found on the whole seaboard. The hotel has just been rebuilt and entirely remodelled, furnished and equipped by the Napoleon of hotel proprietors, Horatio Stevens Esq., and whose energetic and enterprising management we doubt not that Nahant will speedily become the most popular resort to be found in this section.

"The house is to be opened on Monday, when the new steamer, 'Nelly Bower,' commences her trips."

On September 12, 1861, this large hotel, which cost over one hundred thousand dollars, was burnt to the ground. The fire caught about ten o'clock in the evening, and the one small fire-engine in the town proved of little use. The people of the town gathered on the cliffs and watched the flames as they spread over the great building, which in a short time was burnt to the ground. The blaze was seen for miles around. All that was left of this immense hotel property was a few outlying buildings—the stable and bowling alley and the billiard-house—which still stands on the cliff, in appearance the same as when built over fifty years ago. A few years later the grounds and remaining buildings were purchased by Mr. John E. Lodge, and his two children have there built their summer residences.

**STEAMBOAT LANDING.**—At the opening of the Nahant Hotel, a new road, leading to Swallow's Cave was built by the Hotel Company and Mr. Coolidge. From this road a path was left leading by the ledge

in a westerly direction, where a short flight of steps lead over the ledge to a covered building. This was an open six-sided building, with seats on the sides and ends; a passage-way ran through to a long flight of steps which led over the ledge to a narrow walk. Two ship spars had been laid from the foot of these steps to a square wooden frame made of logs pinned together. This frame-work was then filled with stones, making a barrier against the sea, and upon this the ends of the spars were fastened, and piles were driven, slanting in a westerly direction, to deep water. On these piles a long plank walk was made, at the end of which the steamboats made a landing at all times of the tides. Subsequently Mr. Coolidge built the sea wall, filling the space between the wall and ledge with stone and gravel, which gave plenty of room for the wharf and for the passage-way from the wharf.

At the northeasterly end of this new addition the "Nahant House," now the residence of Mr. George Peabody, of Salem, was built. A rivalry commenced between the proprietors of the Nahant House and the Nahant Hotel, which caused the Nahant Hotel Company to build a new wharf on their own property, near Great Ledge, in the little cove near the site of the residence of Mr. George Abbot James. This new wharf was used during the summer of 1828 as the landing-place for the steamer "Housatonic." The company afterwards purchased that part of the first wharf which was built by Mr. Coolidge, and made there a good landing for a steamboat, to the northwest of Swallow's Cave. Lines of steamboats were now running their regular trips between Boston and Nahant, the "Eagle" making one hundred and fifty trips that season.

This landing was used until 1875, when Central Wharf was built by Mrs. Fenno Tudor, at the old and first landing-place near Nipper Stage.

**STEAMBOATS.**—The first steamboat that arrived in Boston Harbor was the "Massachusetts," and the *Columbian Sentinel* of July 19, 1817, contains the following notice of her:

"The new and beautiful steamboat 'Massachusetts' has, by perseverance, so far overcome the prejudices of the public, that on Thursday afternoon, in her excursion around the harbor, she was filled almost to overflowing with ladies and gentlemen. . . .

"The 'Massachusetts' is one hundred feet long on the deck, and measures one hundred and twenty tons."

This steamboat probably made excursions to Nahant in 1817, but there is no evidence of her making regular trips until three years later, when we find her advertising regular trips to Nahant and Boston from Foster's wharf. In 1818 the steamboat route was fully established between Boston and Nahant, the steamboat "Eagle," July 18, 1818, being advertised to run as follows: "Steamboat 'Eagle' leaves this morning for Nahant at 9, and returns to Boston at





*Francis Johnson*



12 M. She will return to Nahant precisely at 3, and leave there at half-past six."

At the same date we also find the following notice of the "Eagle": "This new, safe and convenient boat arrived at this port a few days since from Nantucket, for the purpose of gratifying the inhabitants of this town and vicinity with the repetition of those pleasant excursions down the harbor, with which they were so much delighted the last summer, in the steamboat 'Massachusetts.'"

August 26th, the same year, we also find the steamboat "Eagle," Captain Clark, in addition to her trips to Nahant, advertised as "leaving to-morrow for Hingham."

From this it seems quite certain that the first steamboat route out of Boston was to Nahant. The following is a list of the steamboats from 1817 to the present date: 1817, "Massachusetts," Captain Walker; 1818-19, "Eagle," Captains Clark and Wood; 1820, "Eagle" and "Massachusetts," Captain Wood; 1821, "Massachusetts" and "Eagle," Captain Wood; 1822-25, "Eagle," Captain Wood; 1825-27, "Patent;" 1828-29, "Housatonic," Captain Francis Johnson; 1830, "Housatonic," Captain Samuel Silsbee, and "Rushlight," Captain Burnham; 1831, "Fanny," Captain Henry; 1832, "Connecticut" in excursions only, Captain Porter; 1833-34, "Hancock," Captain Porter; 1835, "Fanny," Captain Marsh; 1836, "Mount Pleasant," Captain J. Gillespie; 1837, "Kingston;" 1838, "John Jay;" 1839, "Thorn," Captain W. H. Byron; 1840, "Hope," Captain Van Pelt; 1841-47, "General Lincoln," Captain B. F. Betts; 1848, "Nahanteau," Captain Betts; 1849, "King Philip," Captain Betts; 1850, "Suffolk," Captain Betts; 1851, "Norwalk," Captain Betts; 1852, "Clifton," Captain Carr; 1853, "Queen of May," 1854-56, "Nelly Baker," Captain A. L. Rowell; 1857, "Nelly Baker," Captain F. Covell; 1858, "Nelly Baker," Captain A. W. Cadden; 1862, "Nequasset," Captain T. J. Gerry; 1863, "General Berry," Captain T. J. Gerry; 1864, "Clinton," Captain C. Kilby; 1865, "Orient," Captain C. Kilby; 1866-72, "Ulysses," Captain A. W. Cadden; 1873, "Meta," Captains Cadden and Rowell; 1874-77, "Meta," Captain Cadden; 1878-83, "Nahant," Captain Cadden; 1884, no boat; 1885, "General Bartlett," Captain J. B. Ingersol; 1886, "Julia," Captain J. P. Garet; 1887, "Anita," Captain F. W. Lund.

FRANCIS JOHNSON, the third son of Joseph Johnson, inherited the sterling qualities of his father. He succeeded his father in the care of the schools, and was instrumental in establishing the first Sunday-school library at Nahant.

At an early age he engaged in the fishing business. He made his first voyages in the "Jefferson," in mid-winter, and now relates the hardships he then experienced in one of these midwinter voyages as one of the hardest ever experienced by him, although he had commanded, at different times, more of the fleet of

vessels at Nahant than any of his predecessors. He was married, October 30, 1827, to Miss Sally Rice, a daughter of Mr. Jesse Rice.

In 1828 and 1829 he commanded the steamboat "Housatonic," and the excursion steamer "Byron" in 1830.

In 1836 he returned to Nahant, where he engaged in the fishing business until 1842, in which year he established the since large and prosperous lobster business, known throughout the country as Johnson & Young, which he successfully conducted for upward of forty years.

CORNELIUS COOLIDGE.—In 1824 Cornelius Coolidge, an enterprising Boston merchant and contractor, purchased of Breed and the Hoods nearly all the land to the eastward of Rice's Hotel. This was laid out in new streets and sixty-two building-lots. On these lots Mr. Coolidge subsequently built the following cottages: the Bryant cottage, Dr. Robbins', David Sears' (now the Appleton cottage), Hubbard's (now the Charles R. Green cottage), B. C. Clark's (now the house occupied by the family of the late Amos A. Lawrence), N. P. Russell's, and also the Nahant House (now the Peabody cottage). The Villa, the last house built by Mr. Coolidge, is now the residence of Mrs. John E. Lodge. But owing to financial embarrassments Mr. Coolidge was obliged to sell his lands and houses and give up all his plans. This was unfortunate for Nahant, as he had contemplated other great improvements. Among other things he built the stone-work of the old wharf, and gave, as his contribution to the Nahant Church, the land on which it now stands.

In the year 1825 Nahant had seventy-five permanent residents; and by the following statement it will be seen that during the half-century from 1775 to 1825 only two deaths occurred, with the exception of deaths from old age, or diseases incident to old age: Jonathan Johnson, old age, aged seventy-four years; Nehemiah Breed, palsy, seventy-three years; Abby Breed, inflammation of the brain, seventeen years; Abner Hood, old age, eighty-five years; Mary Johnson, consumption, thirty-one years.

THE SEA-SERPENT.—Nahant seems to have been unusually fortunate during the year of 1823, in the attractions she had to offer, as a now established watering-place, to the families of Boston and vicinity; for in addition to all that was offered by the new hotel, nature herself seemed to have been so kindly disposed as to furnish, besides, a new and rare spectacle,—that of the fabled serpent. In the *Patriot* of July 16, 1823, appears the following account of the monster as seen by one of our oldest inhabitants, Captain Francis Johnson:

"I, Francis Johnson, Jr., testify that in going into the harbor from Nahant, July 12, 1823, at about nine o'clock A.M., I saw 'standing' into Lynn harbor, something in the water resembling a row of porpoises. I then supposed it to be such, and forbore to notice it.

"About two hours afterwards I heard a noise in the water, and saw





about four rods distant, something resembling the head of a fish or serpent elevated about two feet above the surface, followed by seven or eight bunches, the first over six feet from the head, all these bunches being about six feet apart and raised about six inches above the water.

"It stood eastward at the rate of five miles an hour, with an undulating motion like that of a caterpillar. Its color was dark, like that of a shark or porpoise.

"I pursued it about a mile, being in a small fishing-boat, and had a fair view of it for about thirty minutes, the water being smooth and the sky clear, and then I lost sight of it, supposing it to have beneath the surface. I believe it to be what I took for a row of porpoises two hours before.

"I am about twenty years of age; was born and have always lived at Nahant; have been constantly employed in fishing; have seen every species of fish accustomed to visit our coast, but never saw anything resembling this.

"I have heretofore constantly doubted the existence of a sea-serpent, but now firmly believe what I saw to be the animal hitherto described as such.

"Signed,

"FRANCIS JOHNSON, JR.

"Nahant, July 12, 1823.

"We hereby certify that the above statement was given in our presence, and from our knowledge of the character of Mr. Johnson, we have no doubt of his veracity.

"H. A. S. DEARBORN.

"NATH. AMORY.

"SIDNEY BAYLETT.

"THOMAS WILMORE.

"RICHARD D. HARRIS.

"RUSSELL JARVIS.

"I certify that Francis Johnson, Jr. made the same report to me previous to his landing at Nahant, July 12, 1823.

"J. S. DORR."

Many other accounts of those who have described the sea-serpent, as seen by them, could be given. It is still often reported that the sea-serpent has been seen off Nahant, and other places along the coast. But there are many who are very incredulous about the existence of such a sea monster.

Some of our old fishermen have looked in vain for his appearance. One who was present on Long Beach when his snakeship was reported to have been seen, declared it was three horse mackerel sharks following in the wake of each other with their heads and back fins appearing above the water. As these lines of mackerel sharks are frequently seen on a calm day, they may have been mistaken for the sea-serpent. Whichever it may be, the mysterious and fabled sea-serpent or only a row of horse mackerel, let those who see, judge.

MR. FREDERIC TUDOR.—Mrs. Delia Tudor, in or before 1820, was a frequent visitor and resident at Nahant. She built the stone house in the eighth range, which, in 1824, was purchased by her son Frederic Tudor, who made this for many years his summer residence, purchasing adjoining lands, building a stable and additions to the house, and in many other ways improving the estate. In the early days, he and his brother frequently traveled on foot from Boston to Nahant. Mr. Tudor's first effort towards public improvement was in the planting of two rows of Balm of Gilead trees, on each side of the main road, from the hill near Short Beach to Summer Street. Prior to this, William Wood and Thomas H. Perkins had planted a row of elms from Summer

Street to the Breed House. Mr. Tudor did not allow this much-needed improvement to suffer any neglect, and from the earliest planting of trees, through his many years of residence here, he caused this work to be continued every spring and autumn. Nearly all the beautiful elms, maples and other varieties of shade-trees that now grow along our streets were planted by him. He once remarked that every tree he planted was as much of a benefit to the citizens of any State, Georgia for instance, as to the citizens of Nahant, since, in time, both would enjoy them jointly,—thus anticipating for Nahant a more prosperous future than any one has as yet realized.

He inclosed his own lands with heavy stone fences, ploughed and cultivated these inclosed fields, planted corn and other grains, and built new streets. The following letter, published in 1849, describes Mr. Tudor's garden:

"Among the many beautiful features of Nahant, one of the most beautiful is the residence of Mr. Tudor. We called to see his place on the occasion of a recent ride to our famed and favorite Nahant, and were politely received by our friend, Mr. Wm. F. Johnson, to whom we express our thanks for his attention.

"The cottage and garden of Mr. Tudor are well worth a visit, and certainly deserve a mention to the public.

"The cottage is built of stone which was collected at Nahant, of a coarse or dark granite which is quite abundant there; the roof is covered with hemlock bark, giving the building an ancient appearance, which seems to be a taste the proprietor studies.

"Mr. Tudor's garden contains over two acres, and is inclosed by a very substantial fence, about seventeen feet high, which not only protects it from intruders, but prevents in a great measure the effect of the violent wind. He has a large collection of very fine fruit-trees, many of them beautifully trained on fences, giving them a very tasteful and ornamental appearance. One cherry-tree, with its branches trained horizontally, covers a space of over five hundred square feet; some of its branches are about twenty feet in length, extending each side of the trunk perfectly straight. The pear-trees look exceedingly well, considering that it is an unfavorable season for the pear crop in this vicinity, owing to the late frost in the spring.

"His plums are worthy of notice, all looking finely, and, notwithstanding the depredations of the curculio, many of these trees are loaded with the finest plums.

"There are many interesting experiments in shading trees from the sun in the hottest part of the day, which have proven quite successful. All his experiments are tried in the most thorough manner. Among the many experiments is one quite novel of capturing insects; he has suspended in his trees between two and three hundred small bottles, partly filled with sweetened water, into which all flies, bugs and moths are attracted and are drowned.

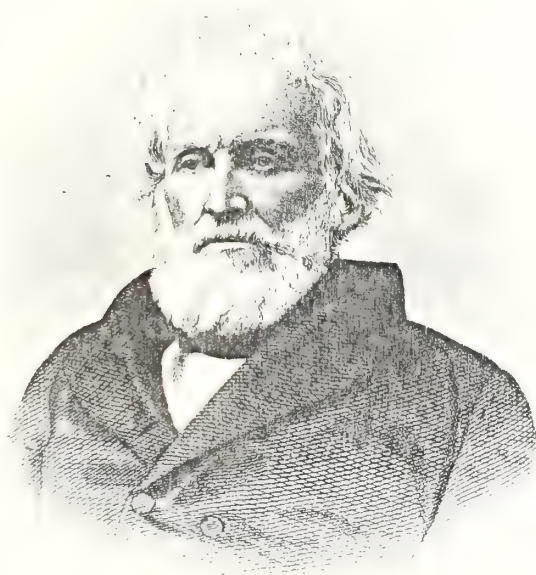
"Great quantities have been destroyed in this way. During two weeks of the dry weather in June there were captured about five hundred thousand bugs, and in thirty-six hours on the nineteenth and twentieth of June, one hundred and eight thousand were taken,—thus, besides destroying the effect of the insects, preventing an immense increase by propagation.

"Although his principal interest is in trees, yet he has a portion of his grounds dedicated to Flora, and a beautiful marble figure of the goddess is in the centre of this department.

"When we take into consideration the fact that one-half of the community think that nothing can be grown successfully at Nahant and twelve years ago not one in a hundred could be found that believed it, no one will deny that Mr. Tudor is entitled to a great deal of credit for his persevering efforts, for by them he has established the fact that the barren soil of Nahant will yield to the industry of man as well as other places. And quite an interest has been aroused in many of the inhabitants of Nahant, which it may not be improper to attribute to the example of Mr. Tudor.

"Besides the gardens, Mr. Tudor has quite a farm, raising large quantities of beets and carrots. He has harvested the past season about fifty





Frederic Tison





tons of hay; although he has never yet devoted his attention personally to that branch, yet there is no reason why he cannot have one of the finest farms in the country. In addition to gratifying his own private taste, Mr. Tudor has not neglected the public, as any one who resides on Nahant cannot fail to observe.

"The many fine trees on each side of the road are living witnesses of the fact, and the many hundreds of trees scattered about on the lots. It must have required an unusual degree of care and expense to have brought them to their present thriving condition.

"In short, the entire appearance of the peninsula has been changed, and the beautiful contrast between the green trees and the wild ocean make the spot doubly interesting to the lover of nature or the seeker of pleasure, for all of which the future generations cannot fail to be ungrateful, and to remember him with gratitude."

Mr. Tudor also contributed to and helped to build the Nahant church, besides giving liberally to the village church, and he was one of the first to offer a bounty for the encouragement of volunteers in the war of the Rebellion. The establishment of the Maolis Gardens, and the building of the hotel adjoining, with the swings and "shades," and the substantial sea wall and the road along the north shore, are all his works. Whatever he undertook to build, he built in the most substantial manner. That constructed with wood has now almost gone; the fences that surrounded the fine gardens are also disappearing, and all that seems to remain are the lofty elm trees and granite sea walls besides his stone cottage.

In the *Boston Journal* of October 5, 1858, is the following interesting account of cider-making on the premises of Mr. Tudor:

#### "CIDER AND PERRY-MAKING AT NAHANT.

"The first fruit of the above nature in our peninsular history occurred last week upon the premises of Frederic Tudor, Esq. By invitation, kindly extended to all the merchants, a large party met on the afternoon of Saturday, the 2d of October inst. Cider, perry (made from the juice of the pear) and merry-making conviviality and good feeling generally were the order of the day. Here were gathered in abundance the rich fruits of the earth. The first cider-mill ever seen at Nahant was put in operation, and the first cider was reserved from the hand of Mr. Tudor by the oldest inhabitant (Uncle Caleb), and drank with an appropriate toast.

"The delicious beverage ran freely from the press, and was as freely dealt out to the multitude, who by smiling faces and pleasant remarks evinced their appreciation of its merits. Then followed the manufacture of perry, which was universally pronounced 'most excellent.' In addition to two barrels of cider, distributed at the gathering, and in a barrel party, six or seven other barrels of cider are yet to be made, and large quantities of fall and winter apples and pears are yet to be gathered.

"Some interesting and appropriate remarks were made upon the occasion by Mr. Hammond, who addressed the party in response to a call. Allusion was made to present condition of Nahant in regard to fruit, &c., as compared to a few years since, when, under the auspices of Mr. Tudor, fruit and ornamental trees were introduced and their culture encouraged and promoted. Then Nahant was comparatively barren, unsheltered from the driving storms of winter and the fierce rays of the summer sun; now, the finest varieties of fruits are comparatively abundant, and shaded walks and groves greatly enhance its native attractions.

"Some one present produced the *Atlantic Monthly* for August, from which Mr. Hammond read a portion of an article in which the writer makes disparaging mention of Mr. Tudor's ugly fences and scrubby pear-trees. Suffice it to say that the statement, when brought in contrast with the facts in the case, exhibited altogether a sorry contrast. No expression of indignation followed, but twice three deafening cheers for Mr. Tudor gave evidence of the prevailing feeling.

"Retiring from the scene of cider-making the party, each provided (even to the ladies) with a bottle of pure juice of the apple or pear, were conducted by Mr. Tudor to his large garden orchard on the south-

side of the peninsula. Here in every direction upon the lip of mother earth and hanging from the trees were the finest of fruits in the greatest abundance. Free to all, 'As God gave to me, so give I to you,' was the generous sentiment of the host. Here, in eloquent volumes, did those pear-trees pronounce thees ruddy epithet a misnomer.

"Wishing to Mr. Tudor length of days in which to enjoy the fruits of his labors, the merry and happy party repaired to their homes, long and gratefully to remember the pleasant and interesting occasion.

"We will state in this connection, Mr. Editor, that there has been gathered on Nahant the present season, by Charles Amory, Esq., twenty barrels of apples; by Caleb Johnson, eight or ten barrels; W. W. Johnson, four barrels; J. W. Page, Esq., from many trees, quantity unknown; Francis Johnson, five or six barrels; Walter Johnson, eight or ten barrels; W. R. Johnson, five or six barrels and a goodly quantity of fine pears; Albert Whitney many barrels, say eight or ten, by estimate; A. Colby expected to gather several barrels; Jonathan Johnson, five or six barrels; Joseph Johnson, about three barrels.

"There has also been gathered a quantity of butternuts and English walnuts. This is pretty fair, considering that the trees are of but a few years' growth."

After the death of Mr. Tudor, his wife, Mrs. Fenno Tudor, with the same spirit, continued the improvements Mr. Tudor had begun. She purchased the old landing-place, Nipper Stage, and land adjoining, on which she built the new wharf, the present steamboat landing.

In the earliest years of this century a young man just entering mercantile life, looking around him with a beginner's enthusiasm for unthought-of and cheap commodities to carry to new and dear markets, hit upon the ice which in limitless fields clothed his native lakes in winter. Even at that time, well-to-do people housed a little ice for summer's use, and to him occurred the possibility of transporting this great absorbent of heat and producer of cold to tropical latitudes, where its value would be greatest.

The substance was easily obtained, and to cut it into blocks convenient for handling cost very little. An uncertain but probably large part would be lost by melting; would there be a residue after storage, transportation and handling which could be sold at such a price that all expenses would be covered and a profit left over? The young man who considered this project was Frederic Tudor, the third son of Colonel William Tudor, a Revolutionary officer and friend of General Washington, and a lawyer of eminence. Born in Boston, September 4, 1783, he was scarcely twenty-one years old when he began to ponder the scheme of a trade in ice, and he had so well satisfied himself of its feasibility that in 1805 a cargo of ice cut from a pond on his father's country place in Saugus was actually loaded on board a schooner, and in charge of himself as owner and supercargo, was shipped to the island of Martinique.

The project, of which this was but an attempt, a bare opening of what he calculated would grow to be a great trade with the Indies, was laughed at by all his neighbors as a crazy undertaking.

He confessed that one reason for sailing along with his novel merchandise was to escape the jeers of his

<sup>1</sup> Written by his son, Frederic Tudor.



acquaintances and the well-meant restraint of his friends, but as such things have no weight with the man who is possessed by an idea and seriously in earnest in its development, his chief reason was undoubtedly to watch the effectiveness of his precautions to preserve the ice, and to introduce the new product to its first market in the tropics in person.

So unaccustomed were the residents of the island to the properties of ice, and so unprepared to receive and use it, notwithstanding the efforts of his advance agents, that no real advantage was obtained from it; but the whole cargo arrived with trifling shrinkage, and the success of this most important part of the experiment was satisfactorily demonstrated.

Another motive which induced young Tudor to take passage on the schooner was to give confidence to the sailors, who hesitated to embark on a vessel filled with what was likely to shortly turn into water, possibly with suddenness, and, if not sink her, certainly make her water-logged and unmanageable. In later years experience proved ice to be one of the best cargoes. Becoming welded into a solid mass, it gave stiffness and strength to the hull inclosing it; it could not shift; a vessel loaded with it could not sink; perishable products shipped with it were preserved, and but a small part was lost by melting, if suitable precautions were taken, even during a voyage lasting for months.

The venture at Martinique, although nearly swamping his small capital, for he found it difficult to dispose of his merchandise, was, after all, of a nature to encourage him in new attempts, not only here, but in all the larger islands of the West Indies. From this time for many years his enthusiastic nature carried him forward, in spite of disasters, losses, accumulating debts and innumerable discouragements. He managed, in spite of his lack of money, even with a heavy load of debt which favoring fortune never lightened without soon involving him deeper by unexpected and improbable disasters, to steadily extend his business. While under heavy expenses from efforts to introduce the trade into new and untried markets, interlopers appeared and sought to wrest from him those which were well established and profitable; his agents would cheat him out of his receipts; sometimes, through the connivance of corrupt government officials, they defrauded him out of profitable privileges. His creditors not only hounded him, but actively endeavored to break up the very business which was their only reliance for payment.

For nearly twenty years his days and nights were spent in a continuous contest against adversity.

When he began the enterprise in 1805, being only a youth, he wrote on the cover of his journal, "He who gives back at the first repulse, without striking a second blow, despairs of success, has not been, is not, and never will be a hero in love, war or business." Many times in his long history of discouragements he

refers to this motto and takes courage again. He argues with himself that it would be better to give it all up and enter some business where such labor as he has given would be well paid; but he always finally decides to continue. He is, all through, completely overcome by the consciousness and conviction of a great impending result, and after each repulse, returns to the struggle with new energy.

In spite of innumerable reverses, which permitted only the slowest progress, he at last got the trade into a condition in which an ultimate reward of great profit was certain. His success encouraged a return to his earliest business of trading in merchandise.

A speculation in coffee, conceived and managed by his friend, Mr. Parrish, of Philadelphia, in which he took an interest, resulted in great loss, and, as he was still without great resources, caused his failure. Calling his creditors together, he assured them of his ability and willingness to pay them all in full with interest, if they would give him time. Assuming thus an enormous debt, and terribly handicapped by it, he went to work to accomplish its payment, which he finally did after years of patient perseverance, his business growing meanwhile, and enabling him to accumulate, besides, a large property.

His early youth had been largely spent upon his father's country place, "Rockwood" (now the Poor Farm of the town of Saugus), where the homestead is still standing. Here he and his brothers and sisters indulged their taste for gardening, farming and country life, and entered actively into the study of nature and the making of agricultural experiments. They kept a record of their doings mainly in the handwriting of the boy Frederic, who even then seemed overflowing with ideas and enthusiasm. Although he was the only one of four brothers who was not graduated from Harvard College (which he never ceased to regret afterwards), he had great fondness for letters and the company of cultivated people.

While attending to his work, extending the ice trade to all parts of the tropics, where Europeans or Americans had gathered in large enough numbers to make his shipments of ice profitable, he found time to cultivate his mind by study and reading and by converse and association with leading intellects, and in later years to indulge his fancy in the rearing of plants and trees at his country place.

It was probably as a horticulturist that he was best known in Essex and adjoining counties.

Fond of the sea, he had, along with Col. Perkins, Stephen Codman and others, been first to pitch upon that gem of the ocean, Nahant, recognizing its great charms as a summer resort. Originally a common belonging to the town of Lynn, and used from the earliest time as a pasture, the promontory had been stripped of what must have been a crowning beauty, its forest trees.

Tudor, who had now made Nahant his home, set





about to restore this feature somewhat; and in addition to the extensive gardens which he laid out on his own grounds, located and built the public roads, and planted and cared for trees on their margins. The promontory being so bold and high, offered no shelter from the merciless arctic winds of winter; the site was dry, bleak and most unpromising for experiments in horticulture. But it was his characteristic both to test the unknown and to accomplish the impossible.

As the essence of a sport is the surmounting of obstacles, so without this stimulus, perhaps, his efforts as a gardener would have failed to interest him. His success should be measured not only by results, which were considerable, but by the difficulties successfully overcome and the permanent character of his improvements. During his life his garden was kept in the most advanced state of cultivation, the products frequently taking the highest prizes; the results were due to his own knowledge and care, assisted by such native Yankee talent as he could find about him. He never employed a trained and educated gardener. It was his pleasure that the community should enjoy free what had cost him so much; admission to the gardens was always readily granted, and when the fruit was ripe, all the children of the town were invited to come with baskets and to fill them during the day. Afterwards they were entertained by a sumptuous collation.

He made many attempts to discover valuable seedlings, but met with no substantial success, although he spent years in costly experimenting; nor did he need this glory. He won credit enough in his hard-earned success in covering his loved Nahant with trees, now, nearly thirty years after his death, in their prime, and by his generous expenditures in public improvements for her benefit. His method in planting and transplanting was principally to provide artificial shelters. He used to set out hardy and quick-growing trees as wind barriers to protect those of slower growth and greater shade-giving qualities, which, when they had grown to sufficient size, would support each other in resisting the wind, after the protecting trees were removed. No one who should visit Nahant at the present time can understand the utter incredulity with which his attempts at tree-planting were regarded by his contemporaries, so magnificent is the outcome of his perseverance.

The first growth of Balm of Gileads has now nearly all disappeared, and the protected trees now stand secure, and handsome elms and maples, some of them two feet in diameter.

A word about the man himself. To accomplish such results he required confidence in their ultimate value, enthusiasm, self-reliance and perseverance; also belief in himself and the rightness of his course, that is to say, honesty and truthfulness. He possessed these qualities in an eminent degree, and, in addition, such an originality of thought and language and con-

duct as to be remarkable, and make him a most entertaining companion. While he was a stubborn fighter for his own rights, he was generous in conceding the rights of others. He had a deep sense of religion, without cant; was charitable, yet with discriminating justice. He possessed a romantic, even poetic nature, and his hard life, ever subdued his finer feelings or diminished his sympathy with his fellow-men. He was a champion to the weak and to women chivalrous in an unusual degree.

His mother and sisters were women of marked character and accomplishments; perhaps from them he derived a high ideal of women, such as springs from sincere admiration and a contact with none but the noblest and best.

He lived to see all his concerns in a flourishing condition, and died peacefully in the midst of his family on the 6th of December, 1864, in the eighty-first year of his age.

## CHAPTER CXVII.

### NAHANT—(Continued).

*Incorporation of Town—Roads—The New Town—Summer Residents—Fishing—Tavern—Other Industries—Shipwrecks—and Storms—Schools—Churches.*

**INCORPORATION OF TOWN.**—In 1846 the residents and non-residents petitioned the Legislature to be incorporated as a town, but their petition was so strenuously opposed by the Lynn people that the prayer of the petitioners was refused by the Legislature. The petitioners then asked of the Lynn people in their town-meeting to grant sufficient sums of money to protect the beach, and to make improvements in the roads at Nahant, but they failed in these requests.

A movement was then made by the Nahant people to commence the several improvements from their own contributions. Mr. Frederic Tudor was one of the largest contributors, and built nearly all the street now known as Willow Road.

The road from Nahant to Lynn was then simply a long beach, and at high tide nothing more than a ridge of soft sand, through which it was very difficult and wearisome to travel, but at low or half-tide the hard, firm sand made a much easier road. All journeys, therefore, across the beach were made at low tide, unless necessity demanded otherwise. The time-table for the first stage line to Nahant was changed weekly to correspond with the tides. It was probably this dependence on the tides which encouraged the steamboats to run so early to Nahant from Boston. A plank breakwater had been built across the low places on the beach, and at the beginning and end of Long Beach a tall, white pole was placed as a guide. In 1845 a meeting of the citizens of Nahant was held at the Nahant Hotel to forward the building of a graveled road across the beach. Some





of those present thought it would not be practicable, as by putting gravel over the loose sand the wheels of vehicles would cut through, and in this way the gravel would become mixed with the sand, making the road no better than before. With this view they proposed a plank road, which did not meet with approval. After a full discussion, a committee was appointed, consisting of Josiah Quincy, Frederic Tudor, John H. Gray, Phineas Drew and Caleb Johnson, who were instructed to ascertain the expense of a road, to receive subscriptions for the same, and to consult with the selectmen of Lynn in order to procure the co-operation of the town. That this was not the only scheme at that time appears from the following quotation from the *Lynn Whig* of September 13, 1845: "A correspondent of the *Transcript* states that the committee will probably report in favor of building upon this beach (Long Beach, Nahant) a branch for the Eastern Railroad."

In 1847 a town-meeting held at Lynn voted an appropriation of one thousand dollars to defray a part of the expense of constructing a road over Long Beach, provided that said road be built and finished to the satisfaction of the selectmen. The road was then built by spreading gravel over the sand, and was about one rod wide. It was completed in the summer of 1848. Again, in April, 1849, the town of Lynn voted one hundred and fifty dollars for the new road over Long Beach, provided that an equal sum be subscribed by the Nahant people. In this way a narrow, graveled road was completed from Lynn to Nahant.

In March, 1851, a severe storm entirely submerged the beach, damaging the breakwater, washing gullies through the new road, and covering a large part of it with sand. The newspapers of that day reported the road as washed away, but it proved otherwise, as the sand had only covered the gravel, and, when removed, the road-bed was found to be but slightly damaged, as the gravel was washed away only in a few places. From year to year large sums were expended upon the widening and perfecting of this beach road. A breakwater was built, and at great cost has been maintained down to the present time; so that to-day we have one of the best roads in the State—well watered in the summer, and lighted at night throughout the year.

In 1848 an act was passed by the Massachusetts Legislature for the protection of Long Beach, "forbidding all persons to carry away or remove by land or by water any stones, gravel or sand from the Long Beach, in the town of Lynn," and in 1852 an additional act was passed by the Legislature, forbidding the removal of sea-weed from Long or Short Beach.

In 1853 the inhabitants of Nahant again petitioned the Legislature to be incorporated as a town, to be called Nahant. This petition proved successful, and the act, making Nahant a separate town, was approved by the Governor March 29, 1853. The new town had

within its boundaries all of Long Beach. The city of Lynn consented to this division, as it would be thereby freed from further expense in maintaining the breakwater and keeping the new road in repair. The settlement with Lynn regarding the public property was left to referees, who agreed that the town of Nahant should pay to the city of Lynn \$2033.45. The *Boston Bee*, referring to the new little town of Nahant, says,—“It is said to contain about thirty voters. Hull must cave in. In the future it will be ‘as goes Nahant, so goes the State.’ We wish Massachusetts were as sure to be right as Nahant is.

“We know of no other town of which so large a per cent. are Whigs. It is to be expected from such that they are a model people in other respects.

“Long live the small town of Nahant!”

THE NEW TOWN.—The new town had a population of three hundred people, sixty-nine dwellings and thirty voters.

There was a long road or street from Lynn to the Nahant Hotel; a cart-way to North Spring; a street, one rod wide, to the school-house and Cary's gate, called School-house Lane. Below Whitney's Hotel the streets had been laid out by Coolidge. Very few were laid out in straight lines, and all the roads and curved paths were as irregular as the lines along the shore that mark the tides.

Nahant had at the time of its incorporation two churches, one school-house with forty-eight scholars, four public-houses, ten boarding-houses, two firms of carpenters and builders, one paint-shop, a grocery store and post-office. A small building at Bass Point was kept in summer by Mr. Nathan Moore as a restaurant, which was a popular resort for picnic-parties. Above the residence of Mr. Tudor all the land was a wide, open pasture, with foot-paths running in every direction, to and from the main road to the several beaches. But few walls or fences obstructed the right of way over these broad acres; stranger or native might roam at will. The pebbly beaches were as free to all as the ocean itself. Fishing was free on the rocky points and by the still waters in the coves. There were no signs then of "Private Grounds," "No Trespassing Here," and the cattle roamed at will over the fields.

Longfellow says, in his journal of 1850: "One of the prettiest sights of Nahant is the cows going over the beach at sunset, from the cow-rights of Nahant to the cow-yards of Lynn. Their red hides and the reflection in the wet sand light up the gray picture of the sky and surge." In the bay were the fishing vessels, and among them was the only yacht of that day, the "Raven," owned by one of the summer residents. This trim little craft, decked in the flags of different nationalities and the private signals of the owner, made a striking contrast with the homely fishing vessels. The first sound that disturbed the unbroken silence of early morning was the ring of the heavy fisherman's boots, as they passed through the streets



on their way to their boats; then the sounds of hoisting sails, the sharp click of the windlass, as the heavy mooring chains were lifted from the bows of the fishing fleet,—then one by one with spreading sails they silently left their moorings, to appear again in the distant horizon with their white sails dancing like fairies in the morning sun. In the evening the vessels returned again with bountiful fares.

The town had hardly launched out in its self-government when the contested question of land rights and ownership in surplus lands and of the beaches arose. As early as 1800 a society was formed and known as the "Proprietors of the Nahant Pastures." This society held annual meetings and designated the number of acres of land that should comprise a cow-right; but nevertheless, the lands soon began to be sold in small parcels, on which houses were built. When Nahant was incorporated as a town, it claimed the ownership of the land, and the proprietors of the Nahant pastures were ignored. In 1856 a committee was appointed in town-meeting to make investigations relative to the rights of the town in the undivided and unimproved lands within its corporate limits. This committee surveyed the town and found in nearly every range sufficient land to give each lot, as laid out in 1706, its full acreage and poles.

In their report, they returned two surplus parcels of land at the end of the ninth and tenth ranges, with a list of lots as laid out to several original proprietors, these lots appearing to have no recorded title from the original grantors of Lynn.

The town could have no claim to these lots, as the original owners received their title from the vote of town-meeting in 1706, and the town of Lynn was the original grantor. This barred Nahant from any ownership, excepting by purchase from the grantors or their heirs. Subsequent conveyancers have found titles from the registry of deeds for all the several lots claimed by the town, and there is hardly a lot that is not traceable and has not a recorded title, which should dispel the erroneous idea that Nahant lands are lacking in good titles. Surplus land and the title to the beaches, however, offered questions which have been discussed more than any other. It was claimed by one party that the citizens of Nahant owned the beaches in common, for gathering drift-wood, kelp and sea-weed. This right had been reserved for the citizens of Lynn by the division made in 1706, as by that division all the land was divided into lots and parcels for each inhabitant, but the beaches were reserved for the use of the townspeople in common. In accordance with this right, the citizens of Nahant, when it became a separate town, claimed all the beaches within the corporate limits of the town. On the other hand, those owning land bordering on the sea claimed the right to the shore to low-water mark, by statute law. This latter opinion prevailed, as at this date, and there is now but little, if any, question on this point.

After a continuous struggle with the city of Lynn for the title of Long Beach, the courts decided that the right to the beach had passed from the city of Lynn, by the act of incorporation that made Nahant a town, and thus the right of Long Beach went to the new town, as the beach was held to be a part of its territory.

SUMMER RESIDENTS.—The cottages of the summer residents were at first small and primitive, usually of one and a half stories, a few having two stories. There were generally piazzas on each side, and rose-bushes usually were planted by the side of the pronged posts that supported the piazza roof, and this was about all the pretension there was to floral display, save the lilac and a few other hardy plants. The foot-paths leading from cottage to cottage gave the appearance of an informal and social summer life among the cottagers. Longfellow says in his journal: "Life at Nahant partakes of the monotony of the sea. The walk along the shore, the surf, the rocks, the sails that embellish the water, books and friendly chat,—these make up the agreeable rounds."

Among the many distinguished people who made their summer homes at Nahant was WM. H. PRES-COTT, the historian. It was his custom every morning to spend several hours walking back and forth under a row of willow trees, now a part of the estate of Mr. Sears. The boys of the village would often meet him there, as they carried their supplies of bread, groceries or milk, in their baskets or pails, to the summer residents. He would usually see them coming, and wait at the end of the path until they reached him; then he would take basket or pail and carry it up the hill to the other end of the path. We all loved the kindly man who so many times helped us with our little burdens up the hill.

LONGFELLOW we saw every morning sitting by the window writing, and we used to wonder what he could be writing so much about. Years later we read the "Song of Hiawatha," which was partly written in the Johnson house.

DANIEL WEBSTER visited Nahant in 1851, and an account of his visit here is given in a Lynn paper at that date:

"The Hon. Daniel Webster is now at Nahant, at the residence of Mr. James W. Paige. The people of Nahant called upon him at about nine o'clock on Wednesday evening and were very cordially received by him.

"He shook them warmly by the hand, and greeted them with the familiarity of old friends. After a half-hour's social conversation and earnest greeting they gave three hearty cheers for 'Webster and the Union,' which were responded to by Mr. Webster in a few remarks, urging the importance of inculcating and cherishing union principles. After expressing his gratification and thanks for the honor of the visit, he bade them an affectionate good-night





"The company left highly gratified with the visit, and feeling that they had been favored by an interview with the greatest man the world now knows.

"We understand that Mr. Webster has taken rooms at Colonel Drew's, where we doubt not he will be re-invigorated by the sea breezes at that delightful place of resort. He appears in much better health than we have seen him for some time."

PROFESSOR AGASSIZ made his home at Nahant for many summers, and nowhere could he have been more respected and beloved than he was by the townspeople. He endeared himself to all by his perfect simplicity and by his kind and cordial manner. One day a strange fish was caught by the fishermen; no one could find a name for it, and finally they decided to go themselves and consult Professor Agassiz. When they reached his house they found him at dinner; but on this occasion, as on many another of the same nature, he at once left the table and appeared on the piazza to welcome his callers. I am sure no one that was present will ever forget that pleasant countenance as he took the fish, and holding it up in both hands, he looked at it a moment, and then turning to the fishermen said, "Why, is not this a bonito?" This occasion was made so pleasant by the further description of the fish that all were filled with admiration for him, and ever after to be lucky enough to catch a rare fish to carry to Professor Agassiz was a treat all strove for.

Among other interesting occasions at Nahant was the visit of Father Matthew, the celebrated temperance reformer. A platform was built for him under the trees in front of the old Johnson homestead, from which he addressed the citizens present, and many at the close of his address signed the pledge.

Mr. N. P. Willis was also one of the early summer residents at Nahant. The first summer he spent here he occupied rooms at the Nahant Hotel, but afterwards had a cottage. He was an enthusiastic admirer of Nahant, as the following quotation will show.

In describing the beach before the road was built he writes:

"Road to Nahant there is none. The roads go there by steam, but when the tides down you may drive there with a thousand chariots over the bottom of the sea. As I suppose there is not such another place in the known world, my tale will wait while I describe more fully. Nahant (it is so called by its Indian name Nahant) rises far out into the ocean that what is called the 'ground-swell'—the majestic heave of its great bosom going on forever like respiration, though its face may be like a mirror beneath the sun, and a wind may not have crisped its surface for days and weeks, rises broad and powerful within a rod of the shore as it is a thousand miles at sea.

"The promontory itself is never wholly left by the ebb; but from its western extremity there runs a narrow ridge, some broad enough for a horse path, impassable for the rocks and sea-weed of which it is matted, and extending, at just high water mark, from Nahant to the mainland. Seaward from this ridge extends an expanse of sand, left bare six hours out of twelve by the retreating sea, as smooth and hard as marble, and as broad and apparently as level as the plain of the Forum. For three miles it stretches away without shell or stone, a surface of white, fine-grained sand, beaten so hard by the eternal hammer of the surf that the hoof of a horse scarce marks it, and the heaviest

wheel leaves it as printless as a floor of granite. This will be easily understood when you remember the terrible rise and fall of the ocean swell, from the very bosom of which, in all its breadth and strength, roll in the waves of the flowing tide, breaking down on the beach, every one with the thunder of a lost precipitated from the battlements of a castle."

JOHN LOTHROP MOTLEY loved and admired Nahant, and spent many summers there, passing his last summer in this country at the "Villa" with his friend, Mrs. J. E. Lodge. From the life of the Rev. Samuel May we quote the following:

"During the summer of 1820, at the invitation of several gentlemen of Boston, I accompanied them to Nahant, which had then become a favorite resort in the hot season, and spent three months. I instructed their children during the week, and conducted the service of public worship each Sunday morning. I remember that I employed no other school, and that among my pupils were some boys who have since become distinguished men, especially the Rev. Robert C. Waterson, and the historian, John Lothrop Motley."

From this statement we infer that Mr. Motley learned his first lesson in the old stone school-house. In later years he spent a number of summers in the Hood house, where a part of one of his histories was written.

JOHN ELLERTON LODGE<sup>1</sup> was born in Boston November 26, 1807, and was the third son and sixth child of Giles Lodge and his wife, Abigail Langdon. Giles Lodge was a young Englishman, who came to the West Indies on business about 1790, and fled from St. Domingo in 1792, at the time of the great massacre, narrowly escaping with his life. On reaching Boston he established himself there as the correspondent of his brother's firm in Liverpool, and soon afterward married, and became an American citizen. Mrs. Lodge was descended from the well-known Langdon family, and through her mother from Lieutenant-General John Walley, who at one time commanded the colonial forces in Queen Anne's wars.

Mr. Lodge received his early education at the Boston public schools. He was an active, energetic boy, but fond of books; and his one great desire was to go to Harvard College. His father, however, although a successful and prosperous merchant, had a large and growing family and many expenses. After the New England fashion, therefore, he sent his eldest son, Dr. G. H. Lodge, the translator of "Winckelmann," as a matter of course, to Cambridge, but felt that he could not afford to do more for the younger boys. Accordingly John, when he finished school, went at once into his father's counting-room. A boy's place in the Boston counting-rooms of that day was no sinecure, and Mr. Lodge chafed under the restraint and also under the parental discipline, which was extremely strict. He finally made up his mind to shift for himself, and at the age of sixteen, with two hundred dollars which he had saved, he left his father, and, being of an adventurous turn, went to New Orleans, a far cry from Boston, in 1823. There he engaged in the

<sup>1</sup> The engraving which accompanies this sketch is by Wilcox, from the portrait by Ennes, painted in 1812, and now in the possession of Mrs. John E. Lodge.





John E. Lloyd





cotton business, and being both bold and sagacious, he prospered and made money. He remained in New Orleans for more than fifteen years, coming North only for the summers, which he spent at Nahant, or in making an occasional journey to England. About 1840, having accumulated a moderate fortune, he retired from business and returned to Boston to live, and in 1842 married Anna, the only surviving daughter of Henry Cabot, of Boston. After his marriage Mr. Lodge again engaged in business as a China merchant, in which he became very successful, owning many ships and carrying on an extensive trade with the East.

Mr. Lodge had always been fond of Nahant, and as his wife's family had lived there for many years, he had made it his summer home. Despite his many and large business cares, he always interested himself cordially and actively in everything which came into his life, and very soon, therefore, extended his interest to the little town where he passed his summers. For many years he was the treasurer of the Union Church at Nahant, and gave to its prosperity much time and thought. He also did everything in his power which could tend to advance the welfare of the town. He never entered public life in any way; but leaving the Whig party after Webster's 7th of March speech, became an ardent Free Soiler and Republican. This, with him, was not a difficult step, for during his long residence in the South he had imbibed an intense hatred of slavery, and he now threw himself into the opposition to its extension with all the ardor of a strong nature. He took a profound interest in the Fremont campaign, making then the only political speeches, of which he was ever guilty, to the assembled longshoremen on Commercial wharf in Boston, where his office was and where his ships were unloaded. He was a devoted friend and admirer of Charles Sumner, who passed many weeks of every summer as his guest at Nahant; and he aided the Republican cause with his purse and influence in unstinted measure.

In 1861 Mr. Lodge bought some land adjoining Mr. Cabot's house, where he lived, and amused himself by cultivating and improving it. About a year later he formally became a citizen of the town, and interested himself more than ever in its welfare and advancement. At the same time the great panic ruined, among many others, the Chicopee Mills, and Mr. Lodge was chosen treasurer of the corporation, thus undertaking, in addition to his already extensive business, the heavy burden of restoring the fortunes of the bankrupt company.

While he was thus engaged the War of the Rebellion broke upon the country. Unable, on account of physical disability, to enter the army, as he wished, he threw himself into every measure in support of the war with characteristic intensity. His name stands at the head of the subscription to raise and equip the little quota of Nahant, and in Boston he

gave lavishly to every similar demand. To one friend who came to him for a subscription for some new regiment, he handed his signed check with the amount left blank, to be filled up at the pleasure of the committee.

In 1861 the hotel at Nahant on East Point was destroyed by fire, and the property was thrown upon the market. Mr. Lodge, who had long desired a larger place than the one which he occupied, immediately bought the hotel estate for the mortgages then upon it, and at once set about putting the property in order, with a view to building there. This was the amusement and pleasure of the summer of 1862, the last of his life. The cares of his business, the work of restoring the Chicopee Mills, which had been successfully accomplished, and the intense anxiety which he felt as to the war, all combined to break down a strong constitution. He never spared himself, but gave to everything his utmost strength, without reckoning the cost. The vital forces had been sapped, and he died suddenly at his home in Nahant, September 11, 1862. He left a widow and two children,—Elizabeth Cabot James, the wife of George Abbot James, and Henry Cabot Lodge, who still own and live upon the East Point estate at Nahant.

The editor of the *New York Express Messenger*, in the last number of that journal, informs his readers that he has found at last the right spot to spend the warm weather in. We quote his advice and description, as both are seasonable at this time. He begins his epistle from Nahant in the following strain:

"O! thou fagged and jaded citizen, well nigh worn bone-bare by the moil and heat of 'the town,' hast ever been to Nahant?"

"And you, ye pleasure-seekers, ye hunters after cool spots and invigorating breezes, if ye have never been to Nahant, ye cannot possibly have an adequate idea of its unapproachable superiority over every other watering place in this hemisphere."

"Probably there is not a habitable acre upon any sea-coast, upon this or any other continent, so wildly and grandly picturesque, yet abounding in comfort."

"It is a narrow tongue of rock and earth, thrust out from the land, into the sea, *to cool*."

"On three sides it is baulked by the blue waters of the Atlantic, and fanned by ocean winds which are whistling, and in my ears as I scribble this."

"Nature has done much for Nahant—in fact, almost all—and art has supplied the deficiency."

"To those familiar with Boston and its beautiful vicinities, nothing new can be told, perhaps, about the locality, and whose cooling breezes it is now my felicity to report, while my southern and western friends and the self-sacrificing fashionable at Saratoga are sweltering in the horrid, torrid temperature of from ninety to a hundred degrees Fahrenheit."

"But there are thousands at this moment prospecting through the country for a cool spot to 'lay off in,' who must be in heathen ignorance of the fact that Nahant is the place where all the sea-breezes 'pat in' when *other shores are too hot for that*, and that here is the most spacious and magnificent temple that old Neptune has ever raised to his honor."

"Aug. 4, 1851."

**FISHING INTEREST.**—From the earliest times the fishing interest largely entered into the support of the townspeople, and from it quite a revenue was derived. Fishing vessels were owned by Nahant residents from





the first; but we know but little of the real history of these very early boats and crews. In 1824 the well-known schooner "Lafayette," which was built at Essex, was at Nahant. This fishing vessel, with her crew of native fishermen, had many an adventure; but with the skillful management of her captain and crew, she always reached her moorings in safety, and we have no casualty to record in her many voyages. She was built after the old style fishing boats of her day, having a sharp or "pinky" stern, full bows and schooner rig, being of thirty tons burden. Her two skippers were Caleb and Joseph Johnson. Joseph was always in command during the winter months, but Caleb was her more permanent skipper. Both were remarkable men, as is shown by their abilities as pilots and seamen on their fishing trips, for the only nautical instrument they had, with which to navigate their craft, was a compass, which, through neglect, was often out of order. It is related that one of them, when twenty miles from land, in a thick snow-storm, kept saying to himself, "How can I find where the land is without a compass?" but in spite of his dark forebodings, he made Boston Light exactly ahead, showing his great and instinctive judgment. They never forgot the bearings of the various fishing-grounds, although years might have elapsed since they had last visited them. As pilots in Boston Harbor, none could excel them, either in day or night navigation, and they seemed to be familiar with every channel, rock and shoal. For fifty years Caleb was constantly employed in fishing, until a severe accident happened to him by falling through an upper-scaffold floor in his barn, from which fall he never fully recovered.

Caleb Johnson was noted for his caution, but his brother, Joseph, was of a different type, and neither wind, weather or roughness of the sea daunted him, and he was always remarkable for his endurance. Joseph never left his fishing-lines until he had caught the fish he was after, and he would always bring home his full share of them. When an old man he spent a day on the fishing grounds, in his favorite craft, the "Lafayette," and, on returning home, a northwest gale sprang up, and he was allowed to take the helm. The old pluck had not abated one jot. He carried sail and refused to have a reef taken, until the crew, becoming alarmed, persuaded him to leave the helm. This proved to be his last "trick at the wheel."

Their fishing trips were of short duration, and were known as shore or market voyages. They left home in the early morning, caught a fare of fish, and got them fresh the same day to Boston market. Their boats were kept almost constantly sailing, except when actually on the fishing-grounds, and at their moorings, or at the wharf in Boston Harbor. They started from home or market in the night, so as "to catch the fish before the dew got off their fins," as the old fishermen expressed it. The accuracy and ability required to make the exact spot of land intended to be made,

often without either compass or timepiece, in running for harbor from the different fishing-grounds in stormy and foggy weather, is worthy of mention. The "dipsy" lead and the compass were, as a general rule, all the nautical instruments owned and used by them.

Fish were then quite abundant and not unfrequently the catch would be one thousand pounds to a man. Two fishing-lines only were used by each fisherman, so that it required both tact and skill to secure a full share of fish. Through their good judgment and constant watchfulness, they managed to escape many dangers, and, indeed, very few serious accidents have ever occurred at Nahant.

A story is related of a narrow escape of the schooner "Lafayette." On one of her trips to Boston, which she had safely reached in a severe northeast snow-storm, she took shelter by the side of a large schooner; her sails were furled and the crew had "turned in;" but through the habit of a life-long watchfulness, one of the crew, on looking out of the fore-castle to see if all was well, perceived a brig, which had broken loose from Lewis' Wharf, coming before the wind, and heading exactly to the spot where the "Lafayette" lay. With surprising quickness the crew of the "Lafayette" moved their boat out of the way; the brig at the same moment just grazed her and struck and sunk the large schooner, beside which she had been lying. The stories of narrow escapes and perilous runs would fill a volume, but as one expressed it, "we always knew where we were, and trusted to the staunchness of our boats to bring us safely home."

It is related of a successful skipper, who had been persuaded to retire from fishing and open a fish market in a neighboring city, that, while carrying an order which led him past the bay, then being lashed by a "Nor' Easter," he paused and, looking wistfully over the sea, was heard to say to himself: "If I was only out there in the bay at anchor, with mast and sails blown away, I should feel all right, but to carry a pint of oysters three miles is a small business."

On the introduction of trawl-fishing, bay-fishing, which had been carried on for many years previous to 1860, was abandoned at Nahant. But the fishing-grounds are now barren of fish, where once they were so plenty. It is not to be wondered at that this should be the case, when one considers that in trawl-fishing one man uses a line a mile long, to which are attached fifteen hundred or two thousand hooks. In this way a crew of ten men would fish ten miles of line, having twenty thousand baited hooks; whereas in bay-fishing one man used only two lines, having one or two hooks only attached. Covering the fishing-ground with these hundreds of trawls soon broke up the schools of fish that regularly came in the bay to lay their spawn, and it is a sad fact that the square miles of water now looked upon from our headlands, and once so productive of fish and so remunerative to



the townspeople, have been entirely abandoned and are no longer productive.

The schooner "Foam," built at Salisbury in 1844, was one of the first sharp boats built for fishing. She had a sharp bow, with a square stern, was of about thirty tons and was schooner rigged. She proved to be one of the fastest fishing boats in her day. She was used in the summer as an excursion boat, and the rest of the year in bay-fishing. Perhaps no crew has ever brought home better fares and stocked more money than the crew of this boat. Like the "Lafayette," the "Foam" was a lucky boat, no very serious casualties happening to her or her crew, although she was in the bay in the roughest of weather, and had her full share in perilous events. In a famous sail in Boston Harbor, with the schooner "Jane," of Swampscott, a schooner that never was beaten by any fishing vessel, the "Foam" proved herself to be nearly her equal in speed, although she was but half the tonnage of the "Jane." This gave our little Nahant schooner a notoriety that was remembered through her long and successful career. In the gale of September 8, 1869, by the parting of her cable, she went ashore on Phillips Beach, Swampscott, and was a total wreck.

In 1858 the business of winter lobstering was begun, and in this occupation the last vessels of the fleet of fishing boats were employed. This proved a profitable business, and employed about forty men and four vessels. The "great stock" of money received some seasons would be as much as thirty thousand dollars. The lobster proved not to be a migratory fish, but a native, so that a number of given localities in the bay were in a few years almost entirely stripped of them. At the present time all this staunch fleet of vessels employed in this business has been disposed of. At one time one thousand and twelve hundred lobsters have been taken from one hundred traps, making an average of twelve lobsters to a trap. Half that average was the common fare. Each year's lobstering showed clearly to all that this industry would be short lived. A law was enacted to protect all the smaller lobsters under ten and a half inches long; but the decrease in the catch under this law so increased the demand that it encouraged the fishermen to make the law of but little, if any, protection to the lobster.

Another branch of the fishery was in supplying the local market. Cod, haddock and halibut were plentiful, so that one fisherman with his two fishing-lines could easily supply the fish for nearly every family during the summer months. The supply was caught every morning, and delivered to the several families in season to be served at dinner. A fish two days old was not thought fit for the table, even if kept in an ice-house, which then, in every family, took the place of the present refrigerator. From two to three hundred pounds was the average catch per man, with often a halibut to increase his fare of morning's

fishing, while the smaller fish were so abundant that they were not of much account. Compare this with the present day. No one now thinks of making fishing a business here, for supplying the hotels and summer residents. The most expert fisherman could now hardly catch enough cod, haddock and halibut to supply his own table. The fresh fish now kept in the markets is from Boston and other markets; nearly all the halibut comes from the Banks, usually not less than a week old; the cod and haddock are sometimes a day or two old, while the lobsters used are partly imported from Canadian waters. The modern improvements in packing fish in ice-chests aboard of the large fishing vessels, which now take the supply of fish from the Georges and the Grand Banks for the Boston markets, obviates in a measure the loss of the supply formerly caught. It would seem, if the Legislature should abolish trawl-fishing in our bay, and protect the menhaden and other small fish, known to be the natural food-fish for the cod and haddock, from the purse seine and if the catching of lobsters be forbidden at stated times, we might yet, in the future, be encouraged in the hope of once more having the fresh fish daily supplied for our tables and the old industry renewed.

February 11, 1858, while fishing was still an industry with us, the schooner "Charles Amory," of sixteen tons, was christened. It was the first vessel ever built at Nahant, and was the work of Mr. E. J. Johnson. At the christening Mr. Walter Johnson served as president of the day. The exercises were opened by singing "A Life on the Ocean Wave," in which all joined; an address was then given by Alfred D. Johnson, parts of which may be quoted.

"It is indeed fitting that he whose name is associated with those of the best friends of Nahant, whose humanity has caused him to exert a powerful influence in behalf of the suffering sons of the sea, who has by his influence caused our whole coast to be supplied with life-boats and apparatus to relieve the shipwrecked from a dreadful death, and who for years has been among the first to encourage and help on all movements calculated to promote the prosperity of our people, should receive this tribute of gratitude. . . . Go, then, little craft, from this spot, whence you have sprung into existence, to the waters, towards which you are steadily pointing, and upon whose bosom you are to find your future home; and as you spread your wings to catch the favoring breezes of heaven, may prosperity attend you, and may this gilded hand which adorns your brow ever successfully point out to your gallant crew a haven of safety from the stormy dangers through which you will successfully bear them. May you combat the stormy waves for years, remaining, as now, the favorite of all, the pride of your owners and crew,—and may no one ever have cause to regret that you bear the honored name of Charles Amory."

This interesting event was further celebrated at the





residence of Jonathan Johnson, where one hundred guests were present at tea, and after tea, music and dancing continued until morning.

This little craft proved to be an excellent sailor and sea-boat. She remained in the fishing fleet at Nahant until sold to parties in Scituate, where she kept up her former reputation.

The following are the names of some of the vessels that have been engaged in the fishing business at Nahant: The "Dolphin," "Jefferson," "Sally Ann," "Caroline," "Lafayette," "Josephine," "Foam," "Fairy Queen," "Spray," "Susan," "Greyhound," "Faustina," "Fashion," "Charles Amory," "Lizzie Phillips," "Frederick Tudor," "Signet," "Joseph and Henry," "Panther," "Echo," "Zephyr," "Fox," "John Randolph," "Raven," "Evergreen," "Unity," "James and Isaac," "General Marion."

INDUSTRIES.—Besides the fishing interest at Nahant, binding and making shoes was also a profitable employment for many of the people. Manufacturing shoes was at one time commenced, but it did not prove successful and was soon abandoned. A shoe-making shop in the early days here was usually a small building ten feet square, with four windows and a door and window in the front. This building was usually painted red or white, and was lathed and plastered inside, with a chimney in the end, held up by two joints. In the centre of the room was a box stove. Sometimes a room was finished off for a shoe-making shop in the loft of a barn, and one was over the grocery store, with a stairway leading to it, outside.

Each shop was known by a local name; one was called the "Band-box," two others went by the name of the "House of Commons" and the "Invincible," the latter being generally well crowded with men and filled with tobacco smoke, especially in stormy weather, when the fishermen could not go on the bay. In these times, especially in the evening, the toiler on the bench, having but two tallow candles for light, could only pursue his work with difficulty, the tobacco smoke becoming so dense that the dim light could hardly be distinguishable across the room. The "Invincibles" were never known to be smoked out but once, although it was many times attempted. The binding of shoes was done by the mothers and daughters in their several homes, but the sewing-machine soon did away with this employment. Sewing societies were held in turn at each house for binding shoes, the proceeds being invested in cloth to make clothing for the poor in Lynn, for Nahant had no poor. The ladies spent the afternoon in working, but in the evening the men were invited to tea, and the long tables would be loaded with the best the market could produce. The people of the town were like one family, all equals, happy and prosperous. The introduction of the machinery now used in manufacturing shoes has caused this once profitable business to be entirely abandoned, nothing of the kind being now carried on in the town.

Thus to catch a fish and make a shoe were in those times the two arts of life here, but they are now among our "lost arts." Considerable attention was paid to farming in those days; many acres of land were tilled, and each family had sufficient ground for a garden, with fields of grain and vegetables besides. The harvest of the Rice, Hood and Johnson families in the autumn was of no little account. The husking-parties in "Uncle Caleb's" barn and "Aunt Olive's" generous suppers ought never to be forgotten. Peace and plenty were in every household.

SHIPWRECKS AND STORMS. Nahant, from its earliest settlement to the present day, has had its full share of storms and shipwrecks. We give below a list of vessels that have been cast away on our shores. This list has been collected from newspaper files, Lewis' "History of Lynn and Nahant," and from private journals.

February 18, 1631, a vessel, owned by Captain Thomas Wiggin, of Portsmouth, was wrecked on Long Beach. December 17, 1740, in a great storm a vessel was wrecked on Nahant rocks. February 24, 1755, a schooner from Salem was cast away on Short Beach. February 6, 1757, two merchant vessels from London, valued at £100,000, were wrecked on Lynn Beach. February 8, 1766, an English brig, from Hull, was cast away on Pond Beach, on the south side of Nahant. 1769, a sloop was driven ashore at Nahant in a severe storm. March 21, 1772, a fishing schooner was wrecked on Long Beach, and Jonathan Collins and William Boynton, the only two men on board, were drowned. January 26, 1778, a sloop commanded by Captain Pendleton was wrecked on Lynn Beach. December 9, 1795, the Scottish brig "Peggy," Captain John Williamson, from Cape Breton, was wrecked near the southern end of Lynn Beach. There were twelve men on board, only one of whom, Hugh Cameron, of Greenock, Scotland, escaped. May 10, 1827, a schooner from Kennebunk was driven, by a storm, upon Lynn Beach and was dismantled. March 5, 1829, a brig named "Elizabeth and Ann" was cast away on the Shag Rocks, Nahant, where all her crew perished. She was dashed entirely to pieces. December 17, 1836, the brig "Shamrock," Captain Jostin, of Boston, was wrecked on Long Beach. December 15, 1840, the schooner "Catharine," from Philadelphia, bound for Boston, was wrecked on the rocks near Bass Point, Nahant. Captain Nichols and one man were saved. March 17, 1843, the schooner "Thomas," Captain William Sprowl, of Belfast, was wrecked on Long Beach. November 21, 1851, the brig "Exile," of Yarmouth, N. S., Captain Sharp, was wrecked on Long Beach. Large quantities of her deck-load of wood were washed ashore. All her crew were saved. September 30, 1856, the schooner "Shark," Captain Carlisle, bound from Bristol, Maine, for Boston, was wrecked on Long Beach. The vessel went to pieces; but no



lives were lost. The disaster was caused by the Egg Rock light being taken for that on Long Island.

The winter of 1857 was most severe in its cold weather and storms. On Friday and Saturday, the 16th and 17th of January, the thermometer sunk to fourteen degrees below zero. The wind had been from the northwest, which had made the sea smooth, so that Lynn Harbor was frozen over, and ice had formed in all the coves about Nahant; the bay between Nahant and Swampscott was full of fields of ice, a thin sheet of ice extending to and beyond Egg Rock. Sunday morning the wind changed to the northeast, and snow began to fall. The wind increased steadily until sunset, when it became a hurricane. The howling of the wind around our dwellings, with the heavy falling and roar of the waves as they broke and beat upon the shore, brought a feeling of dread to all, yet "we all knew we could trust our rock-bound shore." Gusts of wind pressed so heavily against the windows and sides of the houses, that it would seem as if they must crush them in. Then there would be a lull in the storm, and the houses would sway back again as if to straighten up and brace themselves against the next terrible gust which was sure to follow. In these lulls the roar of the sea could be heard, and at intervals sounds like the discharge of signal guns, caused by the waters as they were thrown back into the gale from Spouting Horn. This lasted throughout the night. In the morning the gale had not abated, but, if anything, had increased; banks of snow had accumulated so fast in the night, that the doors were blocked, as if to make all prisoners while the storm lasted. In such a storm the shore must be searched, in order to discover the casualties of the past night,—shipwrecks or other disasters that may have happened,—but none but the strong and hardy could venture forth in this terrific gale. The north shore was found to be strewn with plank and timbers from some vessel that must have been lost in the night.

At the full of the tide, at noon, the wind and snow decreased a little, making Egg Rock visible from the shelter afforded on the lee-side of Dr. Millin's cottage, where a small party had gathered. Some would have called it a grand sight to have looked upon the ocean at such a time; but as I remember it, it was a terribly realistic scene of the power of the wind and ocean, rather than one of grandeur. The great waves, as they rolled in towards the shore, jarred the ground under our feet. At times Egg Rock seemed to be covered with water and spray, which would rise above the lantern. From the rock to the shore great waves rolled themselves over and over, gathering up the water in long lines to fall like a cataract as they met the receding undertow from the shore; then they would gather again, and, with tremendous force, dash against the rocky shore. These high waves would fall upon and completely cover Castle Rock, while from the summit of Cedar Island the water fell from

every side, so that the rock looked as if it were rising out of the Falls of Niagara. East Point was covered with the breaking and dashing waves, which sent the spray apparently a hundred feet in the air, and along the shore by Pulpit Rock sheets of water were thrown far above the land, and the spray could be seen above the hotel. A great wave rushed through Canoe Beach Cove, over the road and across the land, emptying itself in the cove by Mr. James' house. Along the shore, by Spouting Horn, was a continued sheet of spray, making the Cary House an uncomfortable place of shelter. The sea rolled in past Swallow's Cove, then over the wharf, washing wood, boats and lumber into the sea. The lowlands were full of water—from the willows, in Mr. Whitney's field, to Dorothy's Cove. The waves washed over Pond Beach, filling the meadow with water, while Bailey's Hill was overwhelmed by wave after wave, some of which, at times, would nearly reach the summit. The Long and Short Beaches were washed over, making Nahant appear like a group of islands wrestling in the furious waters for an existence. At evening the roaring of the sea could be heard above the storm, denoting that it was nearly over. The wind and snow gradually decreased through the night, and on Tuesday morning the sky was clear, while the waves along the shore formed themselves into long deep ridges to more steadily break on the rocks, but the washing of the stones by the tide made a continuous sound like distant thunder. The beaches were strewn with small fish and lobsters, which could be gathered by cart-loads.

As soon as the roads were broken out sufficiently to make them passable, many availed themselves of the opportunity to visit Nahant, to witness the grandeur of the ocean after the storm; and they brought with them the news of the wreck of the "Tedesco."

February 2, 1859, during the violent storm, the "Vernon," a British bark of two hundred and sixty-five tons, bound from Messina for Boston, was wrecked on Long Beach. Her cargo was chiefly of oranges. All her crew were saved.

On the morning of the 10th of December, 1864, the schooner "Lion," from Rockland, Maine, laden with granite, was seen at anchor between Egg Rock and Long Beach. She rode at her anchor till near night, when at low water the sea broke over her, causing her chains to part; the jib was then hoisted, and, under this sail, she was run ashore on Long Beach, near Little Nahant, where she went to pieces before help could reach her. All her crew were lost. The bodies of the unfortunate men were found washed ashore the next morning, and carried to the vestry of the village church, where a funeral service was held the next day, after which the bodies were carried to their late homes, in Rockland. This made the second vessel lost on Nahant in which all the crew were drowned.





About fifteen years before the wreck of the "Lion" two vessels were wrecked at Nahant at different times, the exact date not being on record. One of these schooners, the "Major Ringold," loaded with lumber, was wrecked on Canoe Beach, and was badly injured. A part of her load was broken to pieces in the surf on the beach, but that in her hold was saved. She was got off and towed to Salem, where she was repaired.

The other schooner, loaded with iron, was wrecked on the same beach, but was got off with little damage. The crews of both vessels were saved.

The last vessel that was wrecked on our shore was the schooner "Augustus Smith," Capt. J. N. Smith, of Lockport, N. S., bound for Boston. She carried a cargo of thirty-six hundred bushels of potatoes and rutabagas. She was cast ashore on Short Beach, December 21, 1883. On the 29th, by throwing overboard a part of her cargo, she was got off and towed to Boston.

**SCHOOLS.**—It would be difficult to fix the exact date of the first school at Nahant, but as far we can ascertain, a school was first held in the Hood house and in the old Johnson homestead. A building for a school was used previous to 1812. It had been formerly a shoemaker's shop, but was refitted and refurnished as a school-house. It was located nearly opposite the site of the present post-office. A description of this school is best given by one of its pupils, now living at Nahant in his ninetieth year:

"The first school that I ever attended was in the Hood house, and was kept by Nancy Carter during twelve weeks in the winter. Some three winters after, we went to school in the old red school-house. There were then about thirty scholars. Benches ran across both sides of the school-room, so that we faced each other; long benches for our seats ran behind these; and the teacher had a table at the end of the room, where she sat. The school was kept only in spring and winter. Clarissa Herrick was the first teacher, who afterwards married Richard Hood. Betsey Graves, who afterwards married Joseph Johnson, taught the school from 1812 to 1816.

The following is a list of the permanent scholars attending the school in 1812, some of whom are now living: Joseph Johnson, Jonathan Johnson, Eliza Johnson, Francis Johnson, Pamelia Johnson, Mary Johnson, Welcome William Johnson, George Lovel Johnson, Clarissa Ann Johnson, George Hood, Martha Ann Hood, Harriet Argans, David Bickford Mudge, Albert Newel, Thomas Rich, Priscilla Hitchings.

Transient scholars: Thomas and Amos Bulfinch, George and Henry Stone, Malinda Howard, Augustus Breed, Thomas and Otis Stone, Mary Stone and Nabby Breed.

The next school-house was built about 1819, of stone gathered from the granite boulders that were scattered through the pastures. It was about twenty-five feet

square, with a hip-roof. There was a window in each side, with two in the front,—one on each side of the door. A library and a few pictures were given by Mr. William Wood, Thomas H. Perkins and other summer residents; also a bell, which was placed in the cupola; the bell-rope hung down through the centre of the roof, bringing it in the centre of the school-room. The room was heated in winter by a large box-stove, burning wood, the scholars each taking turns in building the fire and splitting the wood, carrying enough in the school-house for the supply for the day. This school-room was used for school, church, political and like purposes, by the people of the town. By the school records we find Joseph Johnson served on the prudential committee for many years. He used to collect from Lynn the small sum allowed for the Nahant school, while the balance was contributed by the parents whose children were sent to the school. It is worthy of record that Joseph Johnson and his sons served as school committee for over sixty consecutive years. In 1851 this school building was torn down and the present primary and intermediate school-house was built. It was dedicated Tuesday, September 16, 1851. Three original poems were read and several addresses were made, that of Rev. E. G. Brooks being a very interesting and eloquent discourse, which was listened to with much attention and pleasure. Interesting and appropriate remarks were also made by James R. Newhall, Esq., Hon. George Hood, Joseph and Caleb Johnson and others. "The singing was by a select choir, under the direction of Mr. C. A. Adams, and was of a high order, the singers deserving much credit for the manner in which they contributed to the interest of the occasion. The new school-house is a fine building, beautifully located, and perfectly convenient and comfortable. The system of ventilation is particularly noticeable, being on a new plan, which is for the first time in Lynn introduced in this edifice. The pure air is introduced beneath the floor through places in the sides of the room. The school-house was designed by Mr. Francis Foster, and built by Samuel Lord, both of whom have faithfully performed their duty." This school-house became the property of Nahant in 1853, when it was set off from Lynn as an incorporated town.

The second or primary school was established in 1853.

In 1876 a High School was established in the town-hall, a room being set aside and furnished for this purpose. Mr. C. J. Hayward was the first principal.

A fourth school was established in 1880, with Miss Nellie M. Palmer as teacher. In 1884 a new school-house was built for the grammar school. Thus we have at the present time four schools, accommodating one hundred and fifty pupils.

**CHURCHES.**—Previous to the building of the stone school-house, the few families at Nahant attended church in Lynn. The Hoods and Breeds were Quakers





and members of that society. The Johnson families belonged, one to the Baptist, the other to the Methodist Church; while the Rice family belonged to the Orthodox Church. The children of each family attended Sunday-school in these various churches. After the services came the long walk home, of three and a half miles over the beach. If the tide was out, the journey was made easily; but at high-water it became very tiresome, for it was as much as the horses could do to drag the empty vehicle, so that both parents and children were obliged to go on foot, wading through the sand home.

When the stone school-house was built, religious meetings were held there by the different pastors of Lynn. A Sunday-school was established, Mr. Jesse Rice being the first superintendent, assisted by Mr. Hubbard. This lasted until the present village church, called Independent Methodist, was built, when all, by common consent, made this edifice their church home. At the evening meetings the lighted lanterns, carried to and from each home to the church, were placed in rows by the door; then after the meeting was over they were carried back to the homes of every family, as if the light of the Gospel was literally carried from the church to the home. These united church-people have nearly all passed away, and with them the lights in their lanterns have all gone out.

Before this church was erected, in 1831, a chapel was built by the summer residents, which was used only in the summer months; and it was generously offered by them to the inhabitants to be used as their place of worship throughout the year; but it was thought best to build a new church. The builders of this first chapel were largely the builders of the village church, in fact we may say that the chapel was the parent of the village church, in that, like the former, it agreed that all could unite in the praises and teachings of Christ, whatever their religious preferences might be. Its pulpit has been occupied by clergymen of nearly every denomination.

At the dedication of the village church Mr. Frederic Tudor, one of the founders of the Nahant church, wrote an original opening hymn, which is quoted as follows:

## ORIGINAL HYMN.

BY FREDERIC TUDOR.

"While Thine we seek, protecting power,"  
Thou stormy sea in vain shall roar;  
Although below its rage we cower,  
Secure we trust our iron shore.

Humbly before Thy mighty throne,  
We here another altar raise,  
Of varied Christians, making one,  
We sing a psalm to Thy praise.

United Christians come to Thee,  
With hopeful hearts to consecrate;  
We ask that this new temple be  
A place Thy name to venerate.

The hoary head in meekness bows,  
The smiling child, the mid-aged man,

Each in his heart still thinks he knows  
Of Providence, Thy mighty plan.

Teach us a lowly course to take,  
To learn Thy beauties, and adore;  
Accept the offering we make,  
And ever bless our rock-bound shore.

The land upon which the church was built was given by Caleb Johnson and J. W. Page.

A bell weighing eight hundred pounds was presented by Dr. William R. Lawrence. A silver communion service was given by Mr. Charles Amory. The ladies of Nahant presented the carpet and furniture for the church.

In 1852 a small debt remained, which was canceled through the kindness of Miss Catherine Hayes, who gave a concert in Lynn for the benefit of the church, an account of which is given below.

CATHERINE HAYES' LIBERTYDAY. A grand concert was given at Nahant on Tuesday evening, by Catherine Hayes, for the benefit of the "new Church" in that place. The following is the acknowledgment of the Committee of the Church:—

"To MISS CATHERINE HAYES:—*Most respected lady,* By request of sundry inhabitants of Nahant, worshipping in the new Church in this place, allow us to tender you and your musical associates their grateful acknowledgment of your magnificent and substantial aid rendered to their religious enterprise, by your Grand Concert, for their benefit, in Lyceum Hall, last evening. It has discharged our debt, and will enable us to worship God without pecuniary embarrassment. Beamed, we are assured that it gave our citizens, generally, great pleasure to have an opportunity to see and hear among them one whose fame in song has filled the land and the world, and to bear their public testimony to your distinguished talents and worth. We shall ever remember your valuable services with thankfulness, your residence among us with grateful emotions, and your departure from us for a far distant part of the country with regret; and should a kind providence allow you to return to our shores, rest assured that we shall welcome you with outstretched hands and warm hearts. In behalf of those whom your charity has blessed, and of your many friends in this place, we have the honor, esteemed lady, to remain your obliged servants.

"NAHANT, October 13, 1852.

"W. H. JOHNSON,	} Committee."
"DEXTER STILES,	
"W. W. JOHNSON,	
"A. COLE,	
"E. JOHNSON,	

The Nahant church and the village church have both been enlarged and improved, so that but little of the original of each remains.

In 1868, by the joint contributions of the residents and non-residents, a parsonage was built and given to the village church. Mrs. Fenné Tudor and Mr. Welcome W. Johnson were the largest contributors.

In 1876 a Young Men's Christian Association was formed through the efforts of the Rev. J. W. Dearborn, pastor of the village church. The land was given by Mrs. Fenné Tudor, and a small building was erected.

The Rev. Patrick Strain, of Lynn, and others of his church, preached and said Mass for members of the Roman Catholic Church in the old chapel until in 1872, when they built a church for themselves, the money being raised through the efforts of Father Strain, who was assisted by the resident and non-resident Roman Catholics.



## CHAPTER CXVIII.

## NAHANT—(Continued).

War—Improvements—Long and Short Beaches—Little Nahant—Cemetery—  
 Cadets—John's Pond—Mills—Gardens—North Shore—Iron Mine—  
 Sporting House—Bass Beach—Pulpat Rock—Cliffs at East Point—  
 Snodgrass's Cove and Old Wharf—Clark's Point—Southwest Shore—  
 Lookouts—Conclusion—Valuations—Cord List.

WAR.—The first settlers of Nahant, although Quakers, who did not believe in fighting, nevertheless have a good war record to show. One, by his own testimony, received land on Nahant for his services in the Pequot War, and he also had a son killed in King Philip's War. Another early settler served in some of the French and Indian Wars, and many of his descendants fought in the War of the Rebellion. It is a notable fact that one of our naval officers from Nahant, who served through the War of the Rebellion, had both of his grandparents serve in the same regiment in some of the French and Indian Wars.

At the breaking out of the Civil War the descendants of the early soldiers were ready to bear the burdens of war, that the Union might be preserved. On the 23d of April, 1861, an enthusiastic meeting of the citizens of Nahant was held in the vestry of the church, where patriotic speeches were made by the citizens, and a company, called the "Home Guard," was formed.

Nearly all the men there, fit for military duty, signed the roll and Luther Dame was elected captain. Arms were bought by subscription and military drill was at once commenced.

The uniforms were purchased by the members of the company. Their first public parade was as a part of the Home Guard Battalion, at Lynn, where they received the Volunteer Companies D and F of the Eighth Regiment, on their return to Lynn, August 1, 1861.

A flagstaff was raised at the top of Bass Beach Hill, upon which the stars and stripes were hoisted. On this occasion Captain Dunham, who had served in the War of 1812 and in the Mexican War, had command of the gun. He applied the match, sending the report thundering over sea and land, amid the applause of the assembled citizens. This enthusiastic old soldier expressed great regret that his age and wound prevented him from again enlisting in his country's service.

Nahant, as well as the rest of the towns in the Commonwealth, was fully aroused and prepared to answer any call that the country might make upon its citizens. Meetings were held in the school-house, where subscriptions were received and aid guaranteed for the benefit of the families of those who should enlist in the war. Many of those who enlisted in the Home Guard joined the army in the field, making this organization of short duration.

The first to enter actual service was Mortimer L. Johnson, who volunteered and was assigned to the

U. S. frigate "Sabine," as midshipman. He served through the war with Rear-Admirals Du Pont and Porter and Commodore Thatcher, who make honorable mention of him as an able officer. Commodore Thatcher, in his report of January 14, 1865, writes: "I have to commend to your notice, especially, Lieutenant M. L. Johnson, who, in the midst of a heavy fire from the enemy, with a boat's crew of volunteers, carried a boat's hawser from this ship to the 'New Ironsides,' in order to enable us to bring all the guns to bear from the port battery, and was for more than half an hour a target for the forts, which they availed themselves of, but fortunately without success."

C. Warren Johnson enlisted in the navy, and served on board the "Naraulanza." He died in the service.

In March, 1862, it was voted to appropriate three hundred dollars for aid to soldiers' families, and to pay a bounty of two hundred dollars to each volunteer, when mustered in and credited to the quota of the town. John E. Lodge and Frederick Tudor added to the town bounty of each volunteer the sum of twenty-five dollars, or one hundred and seventy-five dollars in all to be added; James W. Paige added twenty-five dollars to each of the first four recruits, and Nathaniel Walker twenty-three dollars to each of the other three. Seven was the number required to be raised. The town voted to raise fourteen hundred dollars for recruiting purposes.

In August it was voted to pay a bounty of two hundred dollars to each of the volunteers for nine months' service.

Elbridge G. Hood served in the Thirty-fifth Regiment as first lieutenant August 1, 1862; as captain December 16, 1862. He was severely wounded in the battle of Antietam, and was discharged April 29, 1863, for disability. He afterward served as captain in Company A, Eighteenth Regiment Reserve Corps.

The following is a list of those from Nahant who served in the war:

Mortimer L. Johnson	U. S. N., Commodore
Charles Warren Johnson	U. S. N., Seaman
Charles H. Pabst	Fourth Regiment
Otto Bush	Ninth Regiment, Co. B
George F. Newhall	Eleventh Regiment, Co. K
Wm. L. Rand	Twelfth Regiment, Co. C
W. J. Johnson	Twenty-fourth Regiment, Co. F
Patrick Riley	Twenty-eighth Regiment, Co. A
Elbridge G. Hood, Captain	Thirty-fifth Regiment
Wilbur Hanson	Thirty-fifth Regiment, Co. C
Alexander Webber	Thirty-fifth Regiment, Co. D
John E. Wheeler	Thirty-fifth Regiment, Co. D
Charles T. Lawless	Vol. R. C.
George P. Stone	Daniel L. Scayer.
Marcellus Kidder	James Campbell.
George C. Neill	Forty-third Regiment
Luther S. Johnson	Forty-fifth Regiment, Co. F
Edmund B. Johnson	Forty-fifth Regiment, Co. F
Edward J. Johnson	Forty-fifth Regiment, Co. F
Samuel C. Johnson	Forty-fifth Regiment, Co. F
Edwin W. Johnson	Forty-fifth Regiment, Co. F
Shepherd H. Johnson	Forty-fifth Regiment, Co. F
Welcome J. Johnson	Forty-fifth Regiment, Co. F





Lorenzo P. Whitney.....Forty-fifth Regiment, Co. F  
Charles N. Babb.....Forty-fifth Regiment, and Eleventh Battery  
for three years.  
Arthur J. Balmuch.....Eleventh Battery nine months and  
Eleventh Battery three years.  
Wm. H. Perry, Jr.....Twelfth Battery  
John Simpson.....Twelfth Battery  
James Hogan.....Regular Army, Nineteenth Infantry  
Michael Mitchell.....Regular Army, Nineteenth Infantry  
John Williams.....Regular Army, Nineteenth Infantry

#### Enlisted in regiments out of the State :

John Henry Hood.....Hervey H. Marshall  
Nelson Tarbox.....Alfred Tarbox.  
George Tarbox.....Theodore M. Johnson.

Nahant furnished forty-two men for the war, which was a surplus of five over and above all demands. The whole amount of money appropriated and expended by the town on account of the war, exclusive of State aid, was six thousand five hundred and eight dollars. During the whole of the war the ladies of Nahant held meetings to make underclothing for the soldiers which, with boxes of provisions and small stores, were sent to the Sanitary Commission. There can be no better description of the summer season here during the war than the following quotation from one of its summer residents from his cottage by the sea: "Nahant is very solitary and deserted this year. I stood looking down at the steam boat landing opposite, not a fishing-boat, not a human being in sight; then the ghostly little steamer comes in and the phantoms go over the hill towards the ruins of the burned hotel, and all is still and lonely again."

IMPROVEMENTS. —From 1866 the valuation of personal assessments began to steadily increase.

A town hall was built and dedicated in 1869; later new streets were laid out, a Fire Department was organized and a new fire-engine built, with reservoirs for storing water, to be used in case of fire; a public library was established in 1872; edgestones and concrete sidewalks were laid on our streets; street lamps were placed along our highways and over Long and Short Beaches. In 1872 the valuation of the town was \$6611 202, being the largest valuation of any year since the town was incorporated.

The number of dwelling-houses in 1861 was one hundred and seven, while at the present time there are but two hundred and fifty, showing but a small increase for the past twenty-five years. Many of the houses have been enlarged and improved, while on many of the old sites of the summer cottages large and beautiful summer residences have been built, so that few, if any, of the old cottages of fifty years ago remain as first built.

The town has appropriated each year sufficient sums of money to encourage the improvements mentioned above, which were to beautify the town and make it more attractive.

Along some of the streets flowers have been planted in the small triangular pieces of land where two or three streets meet.

Many of our old summer residents protested against curbstones and concrete sidewalks, declaring that they would injure the beauty of the town and make it appear stiff and cityfied. They wanted to retain the green grass and irregular lines of the footpaths along our roads. "Let us have our Nahant primitive, the one place where there shall be no encroachments, a place which nature has itself made beautiful," they said. But their protests were of no avail, and the green footpaths were covered with concrete, so that at the present time these long, black, cheerless walks extend through nearly every street and lane throughout the town. Perhaps in the future the footpaths and the green grass may be restored, for then there was beauty and life, even to the grasshopper that flew away under our feet.

By the absence of any large hotel for the accommodation of transient visitors, Nahant has been a quiet home for summer residents, and the old times of hotel gayety have entirely passed away. Very few picnic parties now visit Nahant, although formerly they were very frequent, especially when the Maolis Gardens, a desirable and attractive resort, was in its prosperous days. Thousands visited it each season, but now its popularity is a thing of the past, and Bass Point, in a measure, takes its place.

A settlement of small summer cottages dot the hill-top and valley below. These cottages and small, cheaply constructed houses, prove to be a better shelter than the canvas covering that preceded them. New streets and small lots of land have been laid out and are now offered to those who may desire to purchase and build upon them. Already larger and more beautiful cottages are being built for the coming season. The hotels that flourish there have, from small beginnings, increased in popularity, until to-day they are known throughout the country and visited in summer by thousands of people.

In July, 1847, a post-office was established in the Nahant Hotel. The first postmaster appointed was Phineas Drew, the proprietor of the hotel.

In the autumn of the same year the office was removed to the grocery store in the village, and Mr. W. W. Johnson was appointed postmaster—an office he held until his death, when his son, Mr. Edwin W. Johnson, succeeded him. The mail was carried every day during the summer months, but only once a week during the remainder of the year. At the present time the mail is brought twice a day during the summer and once every day during the winter. Mr. T. Dexter Johnson is the present postmaster.

Prior to the establishment of the post-office, Johnson's Nahant and Boston Express route was commenced between Nahant and Boston. It is said to be one of the first express routes established in the country.

In 1880 a case of typhoid fever was brought into the town, and, from its contagious nature, was conveyed to those who had charge of the case, until



quite a number were sick with the dreaded disease. In some instances the plan of drainage introduced was very poor. The object seemed to be to get the sewage out of sight and as deep in the ground as possible; the old-fashioned surface draining was abandoned, with its small cesspool near the surface, where vegetation absorbed and carried off the sewage that might be deposited there. These cesspools were always to be found covered with a rank growth of grass and weeds. But these small cesspools were distasteful to many persons, and accordingly large reservoirs were dug, ten and in some instances fifteen feet deep. These were walled up with stones, and a brick arch was built over the stone-work, leaving an opening of two or three feet in diameter, over which an iron or plank covering was tightly fitted; this was covered over with earth to securely close it up. In many instances the bottom of these reservoir cesspools were on a level with the water in the wells, which of course affected the drinking-water. The thoughtlessness on the part of those who allowed these reservoir cesspools to be dug on their premises, caused, perhaps, a few cases of fever. Thus the alarm went abroad, and sanitary engineers were employed, who at once saw the difficulty. The earth in many cases had become filled with sewage near the water-line of the water in the wells. One course was left for the town—which was to put in sewers—and this work was commenced February 16, 1882, under the charge of Mr. E. W. Bowditch, of Boston. All drainage from the houses was conducted into sewers, which emptied into the ocean, and the old cesspools were filled with gravel and abandoned.

Two years later, water-pipes were laid and water was introduced by the Marblehead Water Company.

The following record of deaths, compiled from the town records from 1854 to the present time (1887), will speak forcibly for itself and show clearly Nahant in the past, as well as to-day, has a record for healthfulness unsurpassed by any town in New England.

The whole number of deaths in the town from September, 1854, to March 30, 1887, is two hundred and fifty-seven.

The following is a list of the diseases: Typhoid fever, 6; typhus, 1; scarlet fever, 5; paralysis, 12; lung fever, 5; cancer, 11; diphtheria, 4; whooping-cough, 5; croup, 6; cholera infantum, 10; phthisis, 5; canker, 8; meningitis, 5; brain diseases, 6; heart disease, 14; pneumonia, 6; intemperance, 2; cholera morbus, 2; drowning, 13; shipwrecked, 4; consumption, 22; other diseases, 89.

There are, besides, fifteen deaths from old age,—the oldest person being ninety-eight and the youngest seventy-three,—while twenty-two other old persons died of different diseases incident to old age—the oldest of these persons being eighty-four, the youngest seventy-five. This makes thirty-seven of the two hundred and fifty-seven who lived over seventy-five years.

Of the children born in the town, only twenty-four have died aged five years and under. We have living in the town to-day four persons over eighty-five years old.

We quote the following from a paper written by Dr. Walter Channing, published in the *New England Medical Journal* of January, 1821:

"Children who have been remarkably susceptible of the diseases of advanced summer, and to whom the whole of the hot weather has been very unfriendly, have experienced at Nahant uninterrupted and robust health. The health of infants and children who have been born in this place is proverbial. The oldest inhabitant does not recollect an instance of death in infancy or childhood in such individuals. The salutary effects of this climate in preventing disease are not confined to children. I know several adults who have also experienced them. In relieving or curing disease this place has been frequently instrumental. The effects on those who have made the experiments of a residence here have, in some instances, been very striking. Cases of perfect relief, in cases of extreme exhaustion from disease, and in others where the symptoms of disease still continued, have occurred within the writer's knowledge the last summer.

"In some of these the amendment took place in a very short time. What are the diseases for which this residence seems most appropriate? This question can be but imperfectly answered.

"The facts are not yet sufficiently numerous in relation to any particular affection or any class of diseases, to enable me to give a full answer. This, however, is true, that patients have gone there in an helpless state of exhaustion from a variety of causes, and have experienced very marked relief. There are three classes of affections in which a residence at Nahant has been found beneficial. First—in those of wearing children suffering the diseases of denudation and during the hot weather. Second—in the dyspeptic complaints of adults. Third—in the debility and emaciations with which some organic affections are attended. For the various cutaneous diseases and the chronic enlargements of glands attendant on the scrofulous diathesis, in which sea bathing and a fine bracing atmosphere are beneficial, this is an highly eligible situation."

**LONG AND SHORT BEACHES.** Three stone posts, located at the northeasterly end of Long Beach, mark the boundary line between Lynn and Nahant. A few rods to the east of the boundary line the Hotel Nahant is located. The present proprietor commenced business there at an early date, in a small building, adding each year bathing-houses, sheds, a restaurant, etc., until to-day he has a flourishing business and a large and commodious building. Thousands from Lynn and other places are attracted here daily during the summer months by the excellent surf-bathing and the cool breezes from the ocean. Nearly opposite is a yacht-yard, on the bay side of the beach. In winter many yachts are stored in and about this yard in the sand; in summer they make an attractive and lively appearance as they sail about in the smooth waters of the bay.

Long Beach contains about forty acres of land, covered with sand, which, above the tide-mark, is nearly covered with a rank growth of grass, which has flourished from the first planting; the seed was imported from Holland, from the grass sowed on the dikes. Under the sand, the whole beach is a bed of clay over fifty feet thick,—a sufficient barrier against the beating of the waves, and insuring a lasting highway between Lynn and Nahant.

The two or three trees planted near the centre of the beach have lived through the gales of nearly a





quarter of a century, but bear their impress in their bent and stunted appearance. Although this experiment has not proved much of a success, yet we hope in the future to see groves of trees planted in groups of a hundred trees, protecting each other from the gales and making a desirable resting-place for the many who would enjoy it.

**LITTLE NAHANT.**—At the end of the beach is Little Nahant, which is chiefly owned by the Simmons and Howe families, who have their summer residences here. From these cottages there is a fine view of the ocean and the town beyond. From the summit of Little Nahant the descent to the sea is gradual, and an easy access is had to the rocks; but on the south side the cliffs are irregular, and, in a few instances, are steep and rugged. There are a few natural curiosities here. One is a large boulder near the road, below the watering-trough. It is composed of pebbles and clay, and is as hard as flint. It is thought to have been deposited there in the glacier period from the Great Lakes. On the south side there is a spring.

Leaving Little Nahant, the road continues around the curve of Short Beach; and a road turning to the right over a short bridge leads to Bass Point.

On reaching Great Nahant, at the foot of a hill, there is a little village invariably known as "Irish-town."

**CEMETERY.**—Nearly up the hill, to the right, is Green Lawn Cemetery. This cemetery was dedicated in 1859; it is in a quiet and sheltered place, open to the south wind and sunshine, while a small hill forms a part of the eastern boundary and serves as a barrier from the easterly gales. It is zealously cared for by the town, and is laid out in walks, with many groves of trees and shrubs. Before this cemetery was set out and dedicated, many of the early settlers who died at Nahant were carried to Lynn and interred in the different burying-grounds there, while others have family burying-grounds. There was an old family burying-ground near the old school-house; but the remains of those buried there have been removed to the present cemetery.

At the top of the hill is the new grammar-school building, which is just three miles from the Boston and Maine Station in Lynn.

**CADETS.**—The hill to the left, formerly called Cannon Hill, was the early camping-ground of the First Corps of the Boston Cadets, who, for upwards of twenty-five years, had their annual encampment at Nahant.

But this land being purchased by a summer resident, they encamped farther to the eastward, in the field above John's Peril, until this field also was purchased, causing the corps to find accommodation elsewhere, thus depriving Nahant of her once boasted Cadet Week. These yearly encampments at Nahant were a marked event of the season, and were familiarly known as "Cadet Week at Nahant."

All gathered to the camp to enjoy the parades and drills, and in the evening to listen to the band concerts. Many people also from adjoining towns visited the camp and all in common made it the gayest week of the season.

**JOHN'S PERIL.**—Nearly opposite the school-house is a road which leads to the north shore. At the foot of the road is an overhanging cliff, some forty feet above the boulders below. This cliff is called John's Peril from the following incident:

John Breed, a member of the Breed family, then living at Nahant, while one day going along the shore with his oxen and cart, in search of drift-wood, came to this cliff, and to shorten the distance, attempted to make his oxen drag the cart up the steep ascent above the cliff, leading to the road; but half-way up the cart and load proved too much for the oxen; Mr. Breed saw his peril and with great presence of mind detached the cart-tongue from the yoke of oxen, letting the cart and load go over the cliff, where they were dashed to pieces on the rocks below. The name of John's Peril has ever since been attached to the cliff.

**MAOLIS GARDENS.** A little farther along the shore is the famous North Spring, so frequently visited in former years by parties from the adjoining towns. In the summer months not a day passed without one or more parties who spent the day there fishing and making chowders, for which purpose rude fire places were built by the side of the large boulders and in the crevices of the ledges. It was a favorite resort of military and fire companies, as well as religious societies and Sunday-schools. From these daily visits to the North Spring, Mr. Tudor conceived the idea of making these grounds more attractive by artificial improvements. He purchased and inclosed the land, planted groves of trees and built sheds, swings, etc. This has been known for the past twenty-five years as the Maolis Gardens. Until within the last four or five years it has been a favorite and popular resort, but to-day everything is much changed excepting the spring itself, from which the cold water is still running, filling the little bowl-shaped pool, which has been worn by the constant flow of water which pours into and over it until it reaches and mingles with the sea.

**NORTH SHORE.**—A short distance farther on there is a flight of stone steps, at the foot of which is a stone basin, over which the water of another spring bubbles up from under the shelving ledge; formerly a half-barrel tub was placed over this spring, and it was used as a watering-place for the cattle.

From these springs a marginal road extends over eighty rods in length, this road, as well as the sea wall of stone, having been built at great cost by Mr. Tudor. There was formerly a sloping bank, washed in at places by the sea, and always known as the North Side.

At the end of this road a foot-path runs along





below the bank, and winds along the shore. This path is generously maintained by the summer residents who occupy the land above.

**THE IRON MINE.**—A little below the Agassiz cottage is a bleak ledge and point of rocks, always known as the "iron mine." It is without doubt the same ledge discovered by Captain John Smith, and mentioned by him in the account he afterwards published. In 1691 iron ore, called rock mine, was taken from the ledge at Nahant for the forge at Braintree. "Some of it was smelted in the foundry at Saugus, and more was taken for the forge at Braintree." "It was voted that Mr. Hubbard of Braintree should give three shillings for every twenty tun of rock mine yet hee has from Nahant, to the town, for the town's use, and hee to have soe much as the town sees convenient." It is not probable that a great deal of this ledge was ever carried from Nahant to Lynn or Braintree for smelting. Although the quality of the ore smelted in these furnaces may have been good, there was not sufficient iron in the rock to make it profitable. The town records give no further account of the iron mine at Nahant.

Beyond this the path leads along the bank until quite a steep bluff is reached, where a seat has generously been kept for public use by the owners of the land. The cottage that stands a short distance inland from this seat is the first summer cottage built at Nahant, and the only one that remains as first built, although additions have been made on the west side; the front has the same appearance as when first built in 1829. For over fifty years it has been occupied by the Cary family.

**SPOUTING HORN.**—Beneath the bluff mentioned above is Spouting Horn; to the north, a few rods from the foot of this cliff, is Spouting Rock; beyond, a part of the ledge juts into the sea. At high tide it appears as a lone rock, and the sea washes it on every side, but at low tide a narrow channel separates it from the main ledge. The channel is always full of water, but narrow enough for stepping across. This is called Brook Rock, and is noted as a desirable place for fishing; cod, tautog and perch can be caught there, and it is related that one of our early fishermen caught a halibut from this rock.

Spouting Rock is formed by a narrow channel in the ledge, opened to the sea. Into this channel the waves rush to be met by the ledge that forms the inner end, which throws back the water in sufficient force to send the spray flying over the ledge beyond. The Spouting Horn is more of a natural curiosity, as it is at the foot of a large overhanging cliff, from the top of which one can look directly down into the long, narrow brook-like channel that has been worn smooth by the action of the water. As the water is forced into this channel it enters a cone, or tunnel-shaped hole in the ledge, and rushing into this aperture it is forced out by the compressed air in such force as to send the foaming waters and sea-weed

many feet in the air, to fall again upon the rocks, making a sound like the falling of water from a cataract. Then it tumbles back again into the foaming sea to be again forced back into the rock-channel, and again and again flung into flying spray. Thus at the right time of tide we have one of the grandest sights that visitors can witness, especially after a storm. But unfortunately, from some unknown cause, a few years ago a large part of the ledge was broken off and fell at the outer end or mouth of the channel, obstructing the water as it enters and breaking its force so much that it does not send the water so high in the air or with such force as formerly. Before this happened the noise of the water as it entered the channel could be heard distinctly in the village. If this obstruction could be removed, we should without doubt again see the old-time Spouting Horn throwing the spray, as in former times, a hundred feet into the air.

**BASS BEACH.**—From the cliff the walk continues to the eastward until a gateway is reached, which leads into a gravelly walk extending through private grounds, beautifully laid out. Looking seaward from this point can be seen a long, irregular point of rocks, called Saunders Ledge, running out into the ocean over an eighth of a mile. It is a famous place for fishing at low tide. Looking inland can be seen one of the most beautiful lawns the town can boast, and a summer residence, in a commanding position, with an unsurpassed sea view. Between the house and the main street are broad walks bordered with flowers and trees. The lodge by the gate is located on the spot where the old Hood House once stood.

A little farther on is Bass Beach Hill. A plank walk extends a part of the way along the path around the shore to the hill, at the end of which is a wooden seat placed on the top of the hill, from which a fine view can be had.

Below this steep bank is a pebbly beach, shaped something like a horseshoe. Castle Rock and a point of rocks to the north form the mouth of the cove. A long flight of steps, called "Forty Steps," leads to the beach. At the southerly end of the beach at low tide there can be seen a smooth ledge, worn out into bowls and basins by the constant washing of the sea over the ledge.

To the south, over cragged rocks and smooth boulders, Cedar Island is reached. On the top of this large rock there is a little patch of earth, on which grass and wild peas grow. The outer cliff, separated by a deep gorge from Cedar Island, is known as Castle Rock.

To the south of these rocks is another cove and pebbly beach known as Canoe Beach or Canoe Beach Cove. In this cove two vessels have been driven ashore by the northeasterly storms.

The grassy slope to the west was once the favorite camping-ground of the Penobscot Indians in the summer season. Opposite is a triangular piece of land



purchased by an Englishman, who commenced the erection of a summer residence there. The foundations were laid and preparations were being made to erect a building, when he was discovered to be a defaulter from the Bank of England, and was arrested and carried home for trial.

At the end of Nahant road an open gateway leads into a fine avenue, half-way up which a small sign directs to the cliffs. These cliffs rise up bold and steep from the ocean. To the left is East Point, and from here to the south or west a walk is provided. The stone house that stands near East Point was formerly the billiard-room for the Nahant Hotel, and is all that remains of what was connected with the hotel. There is a grand view of the ocean from its piazza, while to the west are seen two summer residences—one on the eastern slope, on the site where the Nahant Hotel formerly stood, and the other on the south or opposite side of the cliffs. The grounds of both are beautifully and tastefully laid out with groves of shade-trees and beds of flowers, walks and avenues winding through the green lawns, while at the base of the outcropping ledge, shrubbery and vines are made to grow.

**PULPIT ROCK.**—Among the natural curiosities of the cliffs is Pulpit Rock, a mass of rock about forty feet in height, standing out alone and apart from the cliffs. Natural Bridge is a small rocky arch, connecting two cliffs over a deep gorge. These cliffs rise out of the ocean to the height of thirty and forty feet. At the westerly end of the cliffs is the large boulder or Shelter Rock, from which is seen the Shag Rocks, two lone rocks, which were formerly a favorite place for sportsman and angler.

Pea Island juts out into the water from the cliff near which is the summer residence formerly occupied by Prescott.

The adjoining lot to the eastward is the stately residence of a descendant of one of the early summer residents. It is placed where once stood the cottage formerly occupied by Winchester, Crowninshield and Longfellow.

At the end of the street, down a steep decline, at the water's edge, is Swallow's Cave, accessible when the tide is out. A cavern or passage runs through the ledge, which rises perpendicularly from the water. The entrance from the west side is about ten feet high and opens into a large, roomy space in the rock. From this roomy space the ledge seems to have spread apart, leaving an opening sufficiently wide for an easy passage through to the rocks at the east end. In a westerly direction from here, along a foot-path on the edge of the bank, now abandoned, as the piazza of a resident covers it, and nearly opposite the old steamboat landing, was Irene's Grotto, described by Lewis as a "tall arch, singularly grotesque and beautiful, leading to a large room in the rock. This is one of the greatest curiosities on Nahant, and was formerly much more so, until sacrilegious hands broke down a

part of the roof above to obtain stone for building." At the present time it has no attraction, being the receptacle for ashes and drain-pipes for the cottage above it.

On the wharf where vessels formerly landed their cargoes of wood and coal, a residence has been built, from the piazza of which one can catch small fish. This is a striking contrast to the old days of steamboat travel, when crowds of people landed and embarked there. The once busiest spot in the town, during the summer season, is now quiet and retired, its quiet broken only by the wash of the tide.

To the northward is Josie's Beach, curved in towards the land from the sea. It is a long, sandy beach below high-tide mark, while above it, stones form little points jutting out in the water. The stones are worn smooth by the constant sweeping up and down the sloping beach, by the tide. At the westerly end of the beach a steep and almost perpendicular bluff rises up forty feet or more, and on the top is built the residence of the late Amos Lawrence, formerly for many years the site of the summer residence of Mr. B. C. Clark.

A little farther on a rock boldly makes up out of the water, which was formerly called Bass Rock, while at a more recent date it has been known as Clark's Point; the name was given in honor of the former owner, who maintained a flagstaff here, from which the stars and stripes were hoisted, during the many years that he owned the rocky point. To the west, twenty or thirty rods in the bay, the yacht "Raven" was moored, the pride of its owner. For upwards of thirty years this little craft came and went from these moorings, until she was sold to be used as a fishing vessel, and a new yacht, the "Young Raven," replaced her. Her new owners, by chance, once, anchored her near her old anchorage grounds. While at anchor there she went ashore, by the parting of her cables, in the gale of March 13, 1865, and was dashed to pieces, her planks and timbers being strewn along the rocks, where her former owner had for years previously landed and embarked in his favorite craft.

From the point northward the land rises in a gentle ascent from the sea to the hill, where there are two estates—the Longfellow and Lawrence cottages. No pretensions are made in artificial improvement by planting of trees or shrubs from the former estate. Blackberry and barberry bushes, with here and there a clump of sumach, wander at will over the grounds, making them as primitive in appearance as when Captain John Smith first saw them.

A foot-path through the grass and wild bushes leads to Stony Beach, where once the boat-houses were built. Upon these floors tons of fish were emptied from the fishing fleet, and were transported in wagons to be sold in the Boston markets.

To the west, by an inward curve of the beach, along a path constructed by Mrs. Tudor, is Nipper Stage Point, now the landing-place for the steamboat





in summer. Looking across the water of the cove is the long row of willow trees which shade Willow road.

Upon the ridge, nearly midway between Dorothy's Cove and Bailey's Hill, a summer residence has been built, which appears as if it had risen out of the sea and tide. The spray from the breakwater that protects it is blown into its windows. At high tide it appears as a cottage anchored in the sea.

Beyond this ridge of sand and stones deposited by the sea is a long stretch of meadow land.

Bear Pond makes its southern boundary, and a narrow brook runs through the centre of the meadow, passing under "Little Bridge," and enters into the bay.

The land gradually rises from this meadow to the eastward, until a height is reached from seventy to eighty-five feet above the sea. It is covered with a fertile soil, in which the granite boulder and other rock formations are found.

The ledge upon which the whole peninsula rests in some places appears above the soil. In one portion of the ledge an artesian well has been sunk two hundred and twenty feet. The first twenty feet passed through seamy rock, where there was a small supply of water, but below this the remaining distance was through hard, seamless, solid rock, discouraging the proprietor from further progress in the work.

The lowlands or swamp extends along two-thirds of the southern part of the town, commencing at the willow trees, and running westward to Lynn Harbor. It seems that this marsh was covered with a rank growth of bushes of alders, birch and maple before the swamp was filled with earth washed down from the hill. Over this swamp a forest of pine trees grew. The trees did not grow to a large size, as but few stumps are found that measure over two feet in diameter. It is very probable this forest covered all the land in the south slope of the hill. Bass Neck may have been covered with a growth of forest trees, as the soil in this locality is of a sufficient richness to support the trees that might grow upon it. But along the north shore of Nahant the scrub oak and cedar trees may have been hardly enough to battle against the fierce gales from the north and east. The old people now living remember a part of the forest that grew in the swamp below Whitney's, where, when boys, they shot the wild pigeons that were there in large flocks in the fall of the year. The last trees in this forest were cut down by the Breeds and Mr. Rice.

To approach Nahant from the east by sea, the eye meets a long range of ledge, with points extending into the sea, rising in some places into high and rocky cliffs, over which the tops of the trees appear, their branches rising above the cottages that circle the shore.

Approached from the south and west, a picture presents itself of cottages sheltered in the many

groves of trees, green lawns and the many-colored houses, the red piazza roofs making a striking contrast against the dark green of the trees. No large, ill-shaped, awkward building mars the picture.

The hill and shore of Bass Point are covered with clusters of small cottages. Streets, at regular distances, run from the shore to the Nahant Road, which passes through the entire length of the town.

CONCLUSION.—To-day Nahant offers many attractions as a summer resort, but recently many new places have become popular, besides Nahant, as summer watering-places. On nearly every headland can be found hotels and cottages for summer residents. But Nahant stretches out into the sea, and the wind from every quarter must pass over the water before reaching it, which cools the air in summer and brings a warmer temperature in winter. There are ample accommodations by land and water to Boston and Lynn, with twelve miles of road that affords many pleasant drives. Many of the roads are shaded by tall elms, willow and maple trees, while others are open to the sunshine. The accommodations for bathing are unrivaled; on the north shore a cool surf-bath can be had, while on the south the water is of a warmer temperature and more desirable for many.

The past industries of Nahant have nearly all died out, causing nearly all of those that once pursued them to find homes elsewhere; but a few remain. The places of those that have gone have been filled by a new people, who know not of the old and pleasant associations of the past.

It is with just pride that we can give the record of the descendants of those that once made Nahant their home. Their names are prominent as pioneers in the early settlements of the West; they have helped to build it up and were identified with its business and government; they have helped to found towns and cities in the Pacific States and Territories. Their names are prominent to-day as trustees of colleges and institutions of learning, and as skilled mechanics and engineers in business circles.

In the towns and cities of this Commonwealth, wherever they have built their homes, they have proved themselves, by their worth and industry, to be peers in the business circles, having wealth and influence in the place of their adoption. As manufacturers in our neighboring city, we find them autocrats in the business circle. As ministers of the Gospel, as editors of newspapers and teachers in the schools, they have held and still hold honorable places. In politics they have held places of trust as representatives to Congress, as senators and representatives in this Commonwealth and as chief magistrates of cities. As sailors and soldiers they have not been found wanting.

From the States of Maine and New Hampshire, mechanics and builders have made Nahant their home, and have by their skill and industry built



many of the beautiful residences that now adorn our town. They are filling places of honor and trust in the town.

In the public schools of to-day the boys and girls are our and their representatives; shoulder to shoulder there, they are preparing an education to meet the realities of life. Like those who have preceded them, few may remain here and many will find homes and occupations elsewhere. In the institutions of learning, in colleges, in law and divinity schools, their names are already enlisted. In politics and mechanics, in agriculture, and as sailors in the merchant service, we shall find them hewing their way up into the broad fields of education, wealth, honor and influence. But a few of those who were actors in the past still linger in their homes by the sea, but many have passed away with lives "full of honor and years."

The storms, the dashing spray, the sunrise out of the water, the midday rays of the sun, as it shines and sparkles over the sea from shore to shore, the constant murmuring of the sea along the beach, the always changing view of the far-spreading ocean, will ever linger in the memories of those who will make homes elsewhere.

#### VALUATION OF NAHANT FROM 1861.

	Personal.	Real Estate	Dwelling-Houses.
1861.....	\$29,179	\$511,770	107
1862.....	22,600	479,550	109
1863.....	16,823	161,050	107
1864.....	13,478	507,025	106
1865.....	12,710	513,225	107
1866.....	32,067	617,600	107
1867.....	27,167	789,150	116
1868.....	98,078	815,015	122
1869.....	1,382,088	950,500	135
1870.....	1,150,100	985,000	138
1871.....	1,880,285	1,002,300	140
1872.....	1,005,152	1,161,000	112
1873.....	5,085,795	1,167,400	157
1874.....	4,901,014	1,256,200	160
1875.....	4,781,000	1,320,850	163
1876.....	4,754,980	1,325,825	177
1877.....	1,008,312	1,561,664	181
1878.....	758,004	1,650,012	18
1879.....	3,007,131	1,715,315	191
1880.....	2,815,709	1,800,800	190
1881.....	2,844,798	1,800,500	201
1882.....	2,895,253	1,908,019	208
1883.....	2,773,365	1,969,311	222
1884.....	2,611,667	1,991,219	200
1885.....	2,815,800	2,032,815	217
1886.....	2,779,727	2,031,160	247

#### Representative to Congress.

Hon. Henry Cabot Lodge.

#### State Senators.

Hon. George Hood.

Hon. William F. Johnson.

#### Representatives.

Wm. F. Johnson.

Edward J. Johnson.

John Q. Hammond.

Henry Cabot Lodge.

#### Town Clerks.

Washington H. Johnson

Alfred D. Johnson

#### Selectmen.

Wm. F. Johnson.

Thos. P. Whitney.

Dexter Stetson.

C. Hervey Johnson.

Washington H. Johnson.

Joseph Johnson.

Jesse Rice.

Edmund B. Johnson.

Albert Wyer.

Wm. Luskomb.

J. Bishop Johnson.

J. T. Wilson.

Artemus Murdock.

Edwin W. Johnson.

Walter Johnson.

J. Colby Wilson.

Edward J. Johnson.

Wm. K. Whitney.

#### Treasurers.

Welcome W. Johnson.

Edmund B. Johnson.

#### School Committee.

Welcome W. Johnson.

Harrison Barnes

Walter Johnson.

Samuel Hudson.

Edmund B. Johnson

Jesse R. Johnson.

John Q. Hammond.

Joseph T. Wilson.

Francis Johnson.

Joseph A. Crandall.

Alfred D. Johnson

Wm. R. Whitney.

Thomas E. Colby.

Joseph W. Hammond

Franklin E. Johnson.

Samuel Hudson, Jr.

John E. Whitney.

#### Postmasters.

Phineas Drew.

Welcome W. Johnson.

Edwin W. Johnson

T. Dexter Johnson.

## CHAPTER CXIX.

### SALISBURY.

BY W. H. E. CURRIER.

Of the settlements of New England, Salisbury ranks among the earliest. In 1638, just eighteen years after the Pilgrims landed, ten years after the organization of Salem, and three years later than "Old Newbury," a "plantation" was begun on the north side of the Merrimac. In March, 1638, this strip of territory extended from the Merrimac River north a distance of nearly ten miles, including in its circuit what is now known as the town of Seabrook, a portion of Hampton, Exeter, Kensington, South Hampton and Kingston, in New Hampshire; the Haverhill line on its western border and its eastern shore bounded by the Atlantic Ocean.

The first settlement was near the ocean. Here the original grants of land were made, and in later years what became the "East Parish" was the germ of a flourishing town. It appears by documentary evidence that diversity of opinion existed among the settlers as to the name the town should take, as, September 4, 1639, it was ordered to be called Colchester. At a session of the General Court, held October 7, 1640, the name was changed to Salisbury, and thus the town became incorporated. Several of its first settlers came from Salisbury, in the county of Wiltshire, England, among the number being the first minister, Rev. William Worcester. The location of the town, with its eastern border washed by the





waves of the ocean; the Merrimac dividing it on the west; the winding Powow River running through the centre of its territory, and encircled by a chain of hills, made it an attractive place of settlement even among the many towns of the beautiful valley of the Merrimac.

Coffin, the historian of Newbury, says of the early settlers of the town: "They were men fitted by education to adorn any civil station;" but more particular reference to them will be made as the data of events are noted.

Salisbury was, very early in its history, honored by the title of a shire-town, and so continued from 1643 to 1649. But it was the court-town of a county not now existing in Essex,—the county of Norfolk,—comprising the New Hampshire plantations of Exeter, Hampton, Portsmouth and Dover, then (1643) united to Massachusetts, together with Salisbury and Haverhill. In 1679 New Hampshire was separated from Massachusetts, and the town lost its court. The court-house was erected in the East Parish, and the place of its location and the "stocks," where culprits were punished, is known to this day by the citizens of the ancient locality. Where justice was dispensed and the guilty were *stocked*, one of the descendants of the trial justices tills a fertile farm and occasionally turns up a stray brick that formed the foundation of the wall of this old court-house.

With the loss of its title of shire-town, Salisbury did not lose its importance, for subsequently the dignity of the Legislature was not tarnished by a session within its limits.

For several years the boundary line between the States of Massachusetts and New Hampshire had occasioned much trouble and considerable controversy. In this perplexing condition of affairs, the border towns of Hampton and Salisbury were mixed up. At times it threatened to involve them in a border war, as between the two sections taxes were assessed upon the inhabitants living on the disputed territory, which they declined to pay until their status was definitely fixed. The ancient records of the town contain accounts of petitions and records of meetings held to adjust matters between the tax-collectors and individuals asking to be relieved from paying taxes, on the ground that they were assessed on both sides of the disputed line, and claiming "that the burden was too grievous to be bourn."

In August, 1737, commissioners appointed by the Crown met at Hampton Falls for the purpose of settling the controversy. The Massachusetts Assembly, after the session was called at Hampton, met at Salisbury, and were in session several days deliberating upon the boundary question. The final decision resulted in a surrender of a portion of the territorial limits of the town and its return to New Hampshire. What is known as South Hampton and Seabrook were given up, and peace reigned on the border. And yet, after the lapse of one hundred and fifty

years, the boundary question between the two States is again a subject of controversy, and a joint commission has been appointed to adjust differences, New Hampshire making its claim for another slice of territory; but the issue is in doubt.

But to return to the early settlers and their action in forming the town, the original grantees of Merrimac plantation were Mr. Simeon Bradstreet, Mr. Daniel Dennison, Christopher Batt, Samuel Winsley, Samuel Dudley and John Sanders.

March, 1639, the records report a meeting held by the grantors, whereby they agreed that each settler should have two pieces of meadow and a certain amount of planting land, according to the wealth of the grantees, "four acres to every one hundred pounds." This was in accordance with the doctrine that to him which hath shall be given; the motive, probably, was to influence men possessed of some wealth to settle on the vacant lands.

General meetings were held during the year 1639 at intervals, when grants of land were recorded. Mr. Robert Pike was granted three lots of land near the land of Edmund French. The land granted to French is still owned by his descendants and occupied by George H. and William H. French. At one of the meetings of freemen, Anthony Colby was fined one shilling for departing the meeting. The first animals to cause trouble in the new plantation were goats, and a penalty of twelve pence was fixed for allowing goats or kids to run at large without a keeper. A penalty was fixed for allowing swine to roam at large. They also obliged grantees of land to put up sufficient fences.

The land grant to Rev. Wm. Worcester shows that he was possessed of considerable property, as he was given a large number of acres of meadow and upland in different localities. Some of the grants made during the year were called "great planting plots," and were west of the Powow River. The first burying lot was laid out on the Beach Road, and it is mentioned that Richard Wells' house lot adjoins it. Mr. Wells was one of the wealthy settlers.

Thomas Macy, whose name has been immortalized by Whittier's poem, and who afterwards became one of the first settlers of Nantucket, was granted a house lot on the north side of the Beach Road next below the house lot now owned by Edward French.

Mr. Thomas Bradbury, from whom originated all the New England branch of the family, settled near by Macy. He was a man of good education and of superior worth, filling many important offices; and as a teacher did much to spread a love of education among the tillers of the soil.

Mr. John Hodges was granted upland and meadow and a certain creek in the tide meadows is known to this day as "Hodges' Hole." The descendants of John Hodge became well-known manufacturers in the Merrimac Valley.

Willis Barnes, another name well known in colo-





nial history, is remembered by "Barnes" Island, a woody island in the tide meadow.

The grants of land made were confirmed by a committee consisting of Christopher Batt, Samuel Winsley, Samuel Hall, Thomas Bradbury and Isaac Buswell.

Quite a large tract of land was granted to William Hook adjoining the Merrimac River, reserving for the town the easternmost island by the side of the river for the fishermen.

October 10, 1639, a final meeting of the freemen was held, at which time some additional grants were made.

In the spring of 1640 certain surveys were made toward Hampton and also towards Lake "pentuck ett." At the first town-meeting held this spring it was ordered that in the first of every meeting there should be a moderator chosen, who shall have full charge of the meeting, with power to impose fines at his discretion. It was also voted that every freeman should speak by turn, and should signify his desire to speak by rising up or taking off his hat—and his speech being ended he should put on his hat or sit down—and he must not be interrupted until he had finished.

On the 5th of May, 1640, an island in the Merrimac River was granted to George Carr. This is now known as Carr's Island, and has always been kept in the Carr family until its recent purchase by Hon. Harvey N. Shepard.

On the 7th of September, 1640, a meeting of the freemen was held, at which time a large number of new grants were made.

At the meeting on the 5th of the Second Month, 1641, the price of labor was fixed by the town. Laborers during the summer months shall receive twenty pence per day, and carpenters to receive two pence per day more than laborers. The price of lumber was fixed by vote of the town, and the price of milk was fixed at three half-pence a quart for new milk, and one pence a quart for skimmed milk, ale measure; while gilt-edge butter brought six pence per pound.

On the 21st of the Second Month William Osgood was granted sixty acres of land on condition that he should build a grist-mill. The town this spring appointed two highway surveyors—Richard North and John Rolph—with power to compel each man to perform a certain amount of highway labor. Robert Pike, Luke Heard and John Harrison were the first fence-viewers. The making of pipe-staves now became an important business, and large quantities were conveyed to Newburyport for sale. John Bayley was granted the sole right to take fish from the Powow River, but the right was taken from him for not complying with the conditions which the town had imposed upon him. At a meeting held in November of this year, John Harrison was freed from town taxes on condition that he shall keep an "ordinaire" for two years in the town.

On the 14th day of the Eleventh Month, 1641, "ordered that Henrie Munday and Thomas Bradburie shall bargain with a workman or workmen to hang the bell on the meeting-house." During this month there was "granted to Abraham Morrell and Henrie Sayward three score acres of upland, so near the falls as may be convenient, on the condition that they shall before October next set up a mill which may be sufficient to grind all the corn which the town shall need."

The sole right of taking fish from the Powow River was again granted to John Bayley on the following conditions:

"1st. He shall not join with any person that is not an inhabitant in the town in the working of the same, whereby any fish should be disposed of from the town.

"2d. That he shall not dispose of any fish otherwise than he shall be appointed by the town, nor himself to have more than his share of all wives; provided that if they be refused by town within twenty-four hours after the taking of them, he is free to dispose of them to whom and where he please.

"3d. That he shall, before the next season of fishing, make up the 'wyers' to be full sea height, and provide sufficient materials so as the town may not suffer in the fish escaping and he is to be paid within twenty days after the delivery of the said fish per rate of three shillings per one thousand in work, and a cattle of no considerable commodities at equal prices."

On the 26th of the First Month of 1642, a house-lot of four acres was granted to Thomas Macy, and the record is made three times in succession of this grant.

On the 4th of the Fifth Month, 1642, John Hall, Thomas Bradbury and Thomas Macy were elected assessors. Richard North and Thomas Bradbury were elected highway surveyors. At this time a bounty of ten shillings was ordered to be paid for every wolf killed or taken. Also voted that the ordinances shall be removed near the Powow River by the last of September next, come twelve months.

On the 26th of the Tenth Month, 1642, at a general meeting of the freemen, it was "ordered, there shall thirtie families remove to the west side of the 'Pawwaus' River."

5th of Eleventh Month, 1642, at a meeting of the freemen, it was "ordered that these persons under-written shall be accounted townsmen and none other: Mr. William Worster, Mr. Samuel Dudley, Edmund French, Richard Wells, William Pattridge, Robert Pyk, Mr. William Hook, Ralph Blazdale."

5th of Eleventh Month, 1642. "Ordered that after this present no man shall be admitted a townsman but by the vote and suffrage of every one of the freemen, except such an one as shall be called for an elder." Also the same day it was "ordered and agreed that thirty families of this town shall remove their dwellings to the west side of the Powow River before the first of the Third Month in the year 1645; and those persons to be such persons as the seven men shall approve of; to which persons they shall distribute all the lands and timber on the west side of that river, and that all those persons shall be excluded the right and use of all commons but on that side



from that time aforesaid forever, and also that all such inhabitants as shall continue to the east of that river shall be excluded all right and use of commons with them forever, excepting the liberties for one family, provided that at such times as any of those persons residing on the west of the river aforesaid shall have occasion to plow or cart hay in other parts of the town they shall have liberty to feed their working cattle in the *Ox Comon*, on the neck. And also that those persons dwelling to the east of the river shall have the propriety of all the lands and timber there remaining. Also that all public charges shall be defrayed by the inhabitants of both places, or any dwelling in any part within the limits and bounds of the town."

Also it was ordered "that this order shall stand unrepealed forever, except it be by the consent of every freeman in town."

"Ordered that seven men shall have power to make rates and also to certify all the old records of the town and bring them into this new book, and what shall be done by them shall be and remain firm and forever."

On the 20th of the Twelfth Month, 1642, that certain land granted to twenty-two persons on the east side of the Powow River should be decided by drawing lots, which was done at this time. The power formerly put into the hands of seven men for ordering the affairs of the town was taken from them with their consent, 26th of Twelfth Month.

14th of Second Month, 1643. Richard North chosen pound-keeper and fence-viewer, and also "Cryer of the Town of Salsbery for the year ensuing." Ordered that all grants of lands shall be recorded in the new book.

4th of Third Month, 1643. The following seven men were elected to take charge of town affairs: Mr. Batt, John Severance, Tho. Macy, Mr. John Hall, Robert Pike, John Sanders and Thomas Bradbury. At a general meeting of the seven men, 18th of Fifth Month, 1643, it was ordered that Tho. Bradbury and John Severance shall be "Surveyors" of the highways. Also a rate was ordered of £15 for the digging of the Town Creek and for defraying other town charges. It was further ordered that all the townsmen that have meadow lots within the bounds of the town shall meet upon the 22d, 23d and 24th days of the Sixth Month next ensuing, by seven o'clock in the morning, at the meeting-house, upon the forfeiture of five shillings for every particular man's default—the object of this was to set sufficient bounds between their meadow lots. The road which runs from the Powow River up into the country was ordered to be laid out.

8th of Tenth Month, 1643. Samuel Dudley was chosen deputy for the next Court of Election. The improved land on the west side of the Powow River was to be taxed at half the rates of land on the east side until they have a minister there. Rev. Mr. Wor-

cester was allowed £27 for six months' service last past.

19th of Twelfth Month, 1643, Samuel Dudley and Samuel Winsley were chosen deputies for the next General Court to be held at Boston.

25th of First Month, 1644, Richard Goodale "shall have for his hunting this present year ending six weeks before Michaelmas, one peck of Indian corn of each townsman,—£3 to be paid him in wheat as soon as merchantable, equally to be levied. Also he is to have for every fox he killeth, 2s. 6d. and for every wolf £2 (pounds)."

18th of Second Month, 1644, Josiah Cobham was grand jurymen; several persons were fined £2 10s each for felling trees against a town order.

6th of Eleventh Month, 1644, ordered that Mr. Samuel Hall shall pay five shillings for his abusive speeches against the freemen, saying "you are all lords," "all monarchs" "your will must be a law" and such like.

At a meeting of ye 5 men, 21st of Second Month, 1645, it was "ordered that no person shall improve or make use of any candle wood or pine trees for the making pitch or tar or rosen to sell or carry out of the town upon a penalty of twenty shilling for every load."

1st of Third Month, 1645, Samuel Winsley was chosen deputy for the Court of Election, to receive eight shillings per week.

8th of Third Month, 1645, at a meeting of the freemen, "ordered that John Sanders, Richard Wells and Willi Patridge shall have power to lay out the highway to the beach."

20th of Eighth Month, 1645, at a meeting of the freemen, Ralph Blesdale was elected to keep the ordinary, with full power to draw and sell such in case the court will give him license.

29th of Eighth Month, 1645, meeting of the freemen; there shall be a rate made of £8 to defray town charges, as to daub the meeting-house, etc.

8th of Eleventh Month, 1645, any person that shall kill any wolf in the town bounds shall have £1 10s., and for every fox, one shilling.

At a meeting of the seven men, 24th of Twelfth Month, 1646, "Ordered whoever shall burn any kiln of candle-wood within the libertie of the town without license, shall forfeit five pounds for ever kiln he so burns, to be levied by the constable."

At a meeting of the freemen, 3d of First Month, 1647, Richard North shall have fifty shillings for ringing the bell two years and a half past, and twenty shillings to ring it one year more.

At a meeting of the five men, the 4th of Twelfth Month, "what person soever shall kill a wolf within the town bounds with his gun shall have ten shillings, and whosoever catcheth or kills them with a trap shall have fifteen shillings, and whosoever kills them in hunting with dogs shall have twenty shillings; also six pence per head for foxes."





10th of Second Month, 1648, at a meeting of the freemen, Mr. Munday, Mr. Batt, Mr. Winsley, Isaac Buswell and Josiah Cobham were "chosen to serve upon the grand jury for ye next court at *Salisbury*." Also Lieutenant Pike, Thomas Macy, Richard Wells, John Severance, John Elsley and Philip Challice are chosen to serve upon the jury of trials.

18th of Tenth Month, 1648, meeting of freemen, "Lieutenant Pike, Mr. Samuel Winsley, Willi Sergeant, Henry Ambross and Philip Challice shall have power to view and make the bounds between Salisbury and Hampton, and to hire a man to inform them and to be paid for their pain." Mr. Winsley, John Severance, John Stevens and Henry Brown are fined twelve pence a piece for disorderly talking in the meeting.

Mr. Carr to have the ferry for fourteen years, upon terms agreed upon by a committee. This ferry was by a boat from the Newburyport side of the river to Carr's Island; a bridge was built from the north side of the island to the Salisbury shore. The water in this part of the river is not more than eight feet deep at low water. This bridge was built of timber, and was not used for teams, but for foot passengers, beasts and persons on horseback. The landing on the Salisbury shore from Carr's Island is well defined, and the old path can be traced up to the highway. Ralph Blasdale was given the use of four acres of meadow during the time he shall keep the ordinary. Isaac Buswell and George Carr "shall have power to call upon Newbury town to lay out the country way so far as belongs unto them from the ferry to Mr. Clark's farm." Samuel Winsley fined twenty shillings for refusing to be a constable. Willi Patridge was fined 2s. 6d. for putting a contrary name in voting for a constable. Also Willi Patridge was chosen constable, and upon his refusal was fined 20s.

At a meeting of the freemen, 11th of First Month, 1649, Lieut. Pike and four others were chosen to serve upon the jury of trials, "the next County Court to be holden at Salisbury."

At a meeting of the freemen, 2d of Ninth Month, 1649, Thomas Pettit was admitted a townsman, and liberty was given him to dwell in the watch-house till May day next ensuing.

24th of Tenth Month, 1649. At a general meeting of the town, "Ordered that all the meadow upon the north side of the little River shall be reserved to the use of the *Common*, and not to be altered without the consent of the whole town."

At a meeting of the five men, 16th of Eleventh Month, 1649, all those men that were fined for not coming to the town-meetings formerly past are hereby acquitted.

18th of Twelfth Month, 1649. Meeting of freemen. Steven Flanders was admitted a townsman upon the condition that he shall constantly keep the town herd of cows.

20th of Eleventh Month, 1650. At a general meeting of the town of Salisbury Vall Rowell was admitted a townsman, to have his privilege "in y<sup>e</sup> commons with others." There was granted to Richard Ball and Anthony Nuland six acres of upland at Rings Island, provided the town be reserved liberty on said Island to set up a stage and flakes for fishing.

3d Twelfth Month, 1650. At a general meeting of the town of Salisbury, it was "ordered that all whose names are hereunder written shall be accounted townsmen or Comoners, and none but them to this present." Fifty-six names were recorded, among them Rev. Wm. Worcester and Robt. Pike.

10th of Twelfth Month, 1650. A committee was appointed to view and settle the bounds between Salisbury and Hampton.

March 20, 1651. At a meeting of the prudential men, a rate of thirty-five pounds was ordered towards repairing and finishing the meeting-house and paying town debts. Henry Brown and Samuel Fellows were chosen fence-viewers for the old town, Jarrett Had-don and Mr. Hoyt for the new town, for the year ensuing.

16th of Second Month, 1651. At a general meeting of the freemen, a committee, consisting of Samuel Winsley, Samuel Hall, John Severance and Willi Sargent, were appointed to arrange the town bounds between Salisbury and Hampton.

At a meeting of the town of Salisbury, 19th of Eleventh Month, 1651, "Ordered that any of the inhabitants shall have power to fetch away that rick of hay which stands next to Mr. Hall's farm, between this town and Hampton, and the town to secure them from all damage that may any way arise thereby."

26th of Eleventh Month, 1651. Meeting of town of Salisbury. "The old meeting-house shall be repaired with an addition of a new frame of twelve foot, with convenient seats and whatever else is necessary. Before the meeting was finished, sixteen feet addition was voted instead of twelve."

16th of Twelfth Month, 1651. Town meeting. "Ordered that the Town shall bring an action against those of Hampton which have trespassed upon the said town by cutting grass upon the meadow, and that Thomas Bradbury shall prosecute the cause against them before the Commissioners of Salisbury."

23d of Twelfth Month, 1651. "Ordered that Lieut. Pike shall return this answer to the town of Pentucket: that for the present the town sees no reason to alter the line between us, but shall not be unwilling to attend any reasonable motion further about it."

"At a meeting of the townsmen, 1652, y<sup>e</sup> Fourth Month, the twenty-eighth day," a committee of eight were appointed "to divide the Comon which is given to be equally divided to y<sup>e</sup> townsmen inhabitants according to a former grant."

12th of Fifth Month, 1652. "Edward french shall pay five shillings for his abusive carriage in the meeting."



27th of Tenth Month, 1652. Town allowed Thomas Bradbury ten shillings "for keeping the Town Book for entering ye Town Acts." Surveyors are impowered to make the way toward the Beach over the meadows.

"At a general meeting of the Town of Salisbury, ye 10th of ye Eleventh Month, 1652, Mr. Thomas Bradbury was chosen to be schoolmaster for ye said town, to teach all their children (those only excepted that have not the knowledge of ye letters) in writing and reading and otherwise, so far as his abilities will reach unto. Salary was fixed at twenty pounds per annum—he to have the privilege of attending County Courts and also to have the privilege of teaching all out-town children unto himself. One-half his salary to be paid in good corn at the price current. Wm. Worcester, Sam. Winsley, Lieut. Robert Pike and Thos. Macy to be overseers of abovesaid school," who were to determine when the teaching of out-of-town children "are prejudicial to the town's children."

23d of Eleventh Month, 1652. "At a meeting of ye town, Ordered that the seats in the meeting-house shall hereditarily belong to ye houses, according as they are now placed by the men appointed." The following persons entered their "Contra dicent:" Mr. Wm. Worcester, Mr. Sam. Winsley, Mr. Thomas Bradbury, Richard Wells, Isaac Buswell, Jno. Stevens, Jno. Hsley, Richard North, Sam. Fellows, Rob. Fitts, Thos. Macy and Henry Brown.

31st of Eleventh Month, 1652, voted to pay Abraham Fitts thirty shillings for killing a wolf.

1st of Twelfth Month, 1652, Thomas Bradbury to have ten pounds out of the produce of the saw-mill, in part payment for teaching school.

14th of Twelfth Month, 1652, "Little River shall be appropriated to the sole use of the common for the space of seven years from this present."

21st of Twelfth Month, 1652, "there shall be nothing acted concerning the stinting the commons during the space of five years," and that notice shall be given to every townsman or left at his house when anything is acted concerning the same. "Men appointed, did lay out a highway to the beach." Also "that the fore seats of the leanto of the meeting-house shall be brought forward 18 inches into the alley, and that there shall be three seats with that addition backward to the side of ye leanto." John Severance and Willi Partridge were appointed to have "ye ferry settled" and "to have power with the townsman of Nubery to lay out ye country highway between their town and ours, according to ye General Court order." A committee were appointed to lay out a highway from the common gate leading to the Great Neck, down to the low water-mark at the hog-house, not to exceed five rods in breadth. "Anthony Colby and Richard Currier shall have power to lay out a highway of four rods in breadth from ye Mill Bridge to ye common which leads to ye Lyons Mouth."

8th of Eighth Month, 1653, at a meeting of the five

men, John Hsley shall keep the town's stock of powder, bullets and matches.

"Att a meeting of ye Selectmen of ye Town of Salisbury ye 4th of ye 11th m. 1653, Mr. Sam. Winsley, plaintiff, agt. Phillip. Challis, defend., in an action of debt due upon accounts for goods delivered unto him—as an Iron Pot, a bottle of liquor and other things. Plaintiff withdraws his action—allowing the defendant for costs, 5s. and 4d. Also Sam. Winsley, plant. agt. Abraham Morrill, defend., for goods—a plough, harrow, &c. The Selectmen find for the plaintiff, five shillings and eleven pence damage and costs of the meeting. Allowed for costs, nine shillings."

At a meeting of the town of Salisbury 9th of Eleventh Month, 1653, "Mr. Sam Winsley and Mr. Sam Hall shall go to Hampton, to signify unto the said town, that it is the intent of the town of Salisbury to reserve the determination of the line betwixt them and us from Hampton River's mouth to the farthermost part of Mr. Batchelder's farm, to the General Court for as much as the return of the commissioners appointed by the General Court to lay out the said line, is very dark and doubtful to us." Also "they shall tender in behalf of the town unto the town of Hampton, our desire and readiness to join with them to procure a sufficient Artest to lay out the line betwixt us and them from the southernmost part of Mr. Batchelder's farm, to ye extent of our bounds up into ye contrey," etc.

23d of Eleventh Month, 1653, at a general meeting of the town of Salisbury, it was "ordered that that which is comonly called the beach comon, running from Merrimack River's mouth to Hampton River's mouth, all ye meadow and marsh undisposed of, shall remain a common to ye use of ye town forever."

27th of 12th Month, 1653, a committee was appointed to run the town line betwixt Salisbury and Haverhill.

14th of First Month, 1654, Robert Ring to have the sole fishing in Powow River for five years. Price of fish, four shillings and six pence per thousand.

May 1, 1654, Sam Winsley and Robert Pike were appointed to represent the town before the General Court concerning the boundary lines between Hampton and Salisbury and also between Haverhill and Salisbury.

It appears by the record of the mowing of the grass upon the Beach Common, by which every townsman was to have his proportion according to his estate, that the number of property-owners was one hundred and twenty. The Beach Common extended from Hampton River's mouth to Merrimack River's mouth. Sixty names are recorded in the division, and Anthony Colby, Thomas Macy, Mr. Munday, Abraham Morrill, Samuel Hall and Jonathan Rolfe were evidently the largest real estate owners.

1654, Joseph Pearley and Thomas Macy, for violat-





ing a law which forbade any but ordained ministers from preaching, were arrested and fined. This was virtually the first expression of sentiment against the old parish law of church government. Much excitement was created, and petitions numerous signed were sent to the General Court asking the remission of the fine and imprisonment levied upon Lieut. Robert Pike, who had defended the right of any man to preach, and was foremost in asking for the release of the penalty imposed. Those even who signed the petition were called to account and bound over in £10 each. Such as acknowledged their offense were released.

Major Robert Pike was one of the first and most active settlers of the town. He may be classed as a pioneer in every movement where anything savoring of injustice or wrong was involved, and feared not to speak against it in high places. Born in Longford in 1616, he came to Newbury with his father, John Pike, who died in Salisbury in 1654. Admitted a freeman in 1637, he was a representative from the town in 1648 and for seven other years. Lieutenant in 1647, captain in 1663, a mayor in 1668, assistant from 1682 to 1686, one of the Council of Safety in 1689, and one of the first Council under the charter of William and Mary in 1692. He died December 12, 1796, aged ninety-two. To him is attributed the action of defending the two Quakers who were sentenced to be whipped by a justice in Dover on the way to Salisbury, and declared that no such act would be inflicted upon them in the town. Whittier honors the old hero in a beautiful poem for his action.

In 1655 the first bridge was built across the Merri-mac—a floating bridge between Carr's Island and Newbury—at the old ferry. It was five feet wide, rails on each side, and two hundred and seventy feet long. It was built by George Carr, who owned the island, and for this service he received liberal grants of land in the town.

We pass over much of the records, having given sufficient to illustrate the methods and historical data of facts bearing upon the early history and its inhabitants, and will only glance at the events of importance as they occurred. The thirst for land appeared to be a growing desire among the settlers, and the division of five hundred acres by vote occasioned opposition. Lieutenant Robert Pike denounced the action as unjust, declaring it was equivalent to "saying because we have the power, we will take it and divide it among ourselves." In this he was sustained by Thomas Bradbury, Edmund Elliott, Robert Ring, John Stevens, John Rife, Robert Ring and John Maxfield. Robert Pike wanted the land as a common heritage to all who should settle among them.

In 1659 it was voted that there shall be a general meeting for the choice of all public officers for the town, and for the election of a deputy to the General Court, and for one man to administer oaths and marrying. It was ordered that Rev. Wm. Worcester

shall have his maintenance for the year, either fifty or sixty pounds, and the produce of the old saw-mill on Little River, provided the new town continue with the old.

12th of February, 1661. Willi Buswell chosen a "prudential man," and refusing is fined fifteen shillings. Capt. Robert Pike, Lieut. Phillip Challis, William Osgood, Edward French and John Hsley chosen prudential men. The following persons were appointed "to divide the land lying between the river that comes from the new meadows and the Mill River to the head thereof: Capt. Pike, Mr. Winsley, Richard Wells, Willi Brown, George Goldmyer, Ed. French and Andrew Greely."

The rules to which they had an eye in dividing the land—

- "1st. The charge or disbursement that men have been generally at.
- "2d. The service that men have been put upon generally.
- "3d. The number of the persons in a family.
- "4th. The necessity that men have and theirs.
- "5th. The Antiquity of the inhabitants and the legality of their rights.
- "Fifty-eight lots were sett off, containing from 30 to 120 acres each."

9th of Tenth Month, 1662, John Severance and John Stevens were sent to Wells for some necessaries, from thence for Mr. "Wheelwright."

January 20, 1662, Capt. Thomas Bradbury, Jno. Stevens, Wm. Buswell, Henry Brown and John Hsley, prudential men, to begin February 12th next.

March 10, 1662, Capt. Pike chosen Deputie for the town of Salisbury. Wm. Buswell was chosen "Clarke of ye market;" Richard Currier was chosen "Measurer." Willi Buswell, Andrew Greely, John Stevens, Jr., and Nathl. Brown were ordered to perambulate Hampton line.

22d of Sixth Month, 1663, Andrew Greely added to the prudential men. Mr. Jeremich Hutchins, of Boston, was chosen Deputie for ye next Sessions of ye General Court.

2d of Twelfth Month, 1663 (February), Mr. Carre, Andrew Greely, Jno. Dickinson, Roger Eastman and Sam. Fellows, prudential men.

23d of Twelfth Month, 1663 Mr. Hutchins was chosen deputy for ye town of Salisbury. The prudential men shall make a sufficient highway to the beach this year. County Court was at Salisbury in 1664.

20th of December, 1664. Ordered there shall be a new meeting-house built with all convenient speed.

27th of December, 1664. Capt. Pike, Capt. Bradbury and Cornet Severans chosen building committee.

28th of Tenth Month, 1664. The meeting-house not to exceed forty-six foot in length, and thirty foot in breadth.

1st of February, 1664. Thos. Bradbury, Easton Buswell, Jno. Clough, Jno. Gill and Richard Hubbard, prudential men, commencing February 12th.

9th of March, 1664. Mr. Jeremih Hutchins chosen Deputy,—Mr. Henry Dearing to have ten pound a year for teaching school. School commenced at "Young goodales house."





27th of March, 1665. Wm. Buswell "clarke of the market."

22d of April, 1665. Robt. Pike, Andrew Greely and Wm. Buswell were chosen to perambulate Hampton line, and to make out ye bounds.

15th of Eleventh Month, 1665. Richard Currier chosen constable. Wm. Osgood, John Severans, Jno. Hsley, Phillip Challis and Sam. French, prudential men, to begin February 12th next. Capt. Pike, Thos. Bradbury and Deacon Richard Wells were chosen commissioners to end small cases.

5th of First Month, 1666. Jeremiah Hutchins chosen Deputie.

22d of First Month, 1666. Articles between the old town and the new shall be entered in the town book for preservation.

May 14, 1666, Thomas Bradbury chosen deputy for General Court for first session.

September 3, 1666, Captain Pike chosen deputy for General Court.

28th of Eleventh Month, 1666, Richard Wells, William Buswell, Sam. Fellows, Henry Brown and Thos. Bradbury, Sr., prudential men.

April 15, 1667, Captain Robert Pike, Andrew Greely, William Buswell, Wymond Bradbury and John Stevens were appointed to run the line between Salisbury and Hampton, from the rock called "ye bore," within John Brown's farm, unto the bound tree at the new meadows marked by Capt. Shapleigh.

April 23, 1667, prudential men "ordered John Barbar to depart out of the town, the town being not willing he should abide in this town."

22d of Fourth Month, 1667, Captain Pike was ordered to buy a barrel of powder.

10th of Twelfth Month, 1667, Thomas Bradbury, Ensign Buswell, Henry Brown, John Clough and John Gill prudential men.

2d of Twelfth Month, 1668, Thomas Bradbury, Edward French, John Stevens, John Hsley and Willi Allen prudential men.

March 5, 1669, "Willi Osgood to build a sufficient bridge over back river."

October 6, 1669, Robert Pike chosen deputy.

6th of Tenth Month, 1669, John Hsley, John Gill and Henry Brown were chosen grand jury men.

January 31, 1669, Thomas Bradbury, Willi Osgood, Ensign Buswell, John Clough and Sam. Fellows prudential men.

17th of First Month, 1670, Robert Pike chosen deputy.

9th of Twelfth Month, 1670, Captain Bradbury, John Hsley, Henry Brown, John Gill and Ensign Buswell prudential men.

6th of First Month, 1670-71 (page 162), several roads laid out.

13th of Twelfth Month, 1671, Thomas Bradbury, William Buswell, Henry Brown, George Goldwyer and John Eastman prudential men.

March 11, 1672-73, Mr. Thomas Bradbury, John

Severans, Sam. Fellows, John Clough and John Hsley chosen prudential men. Town-meeting ordered at the meeting-house March 17th.

October 13, 1673, Ephraim Winsley appointed school-master by the prudential men. £10 a year and 3d. for every one that learns to read, and 1d. to every one that learns to write and read.

1st of Tenth Month, 1673, commoners mentioned

February 18, 1673, Major Pike, Captain Bradbury, Ensign Buswell, Cornet Severans and Samuel Fellows, Sr., prudential men.

May 14, 1674, granted to Ezekiel Levitt one acre of land to build upon for his trade of shoemaking, which he is to follow for the use of the town.

8th of Twelfth Month, 1674, time of term of prudential men to end December 1st in each year. Thomas Bradbury, Ensign Buswell, Cornet Severans, John Hsley and Henry Brown elected prudential men.

April 26, 1675, committee appointed to establish line between Amesbury and Salisbury.

September 20, 1675, "What soldier or inhabitant soever belonging to this town shall refuse or neglect to come to work about ye fortification appointed by ye militia forthwith to be erected for ye security of ye town, especially women & children, ye said partie so refusing shall pay 5 shillings."

September 27, 1675, Quartermaster Osgood was given charge of the fortifications about the meeting-house.

January 3, 1675, prudential men chosen, Thomas Bradbury, William Buswell, William Osgood, Thomas Mudgett and Henry Brown.

April 23, 1677, prudential men, Thomas Bradbury, William Osgood, Thomas Mudgett, William Buswell and John Hsley.

September 17, 1677, Major Pike, Captain Bradbury and Henry Brown were chosen commissioners to end small cases.

January 3, 1677, Captain Bradbury, Samuel Fellows, Sr., Henry Brown, Willi Buswell and John Hsley were chosen prudential men.

January 7, 1678, Captain Bradbury, Ensign Buswell, Henry Brown, Sr., Sergeant Henry True and John Stevens, Jr., were chosen selectmen.

January 5, 1679, Captain Bradbury, Mr. Mudgett, Quartermaster Osgood, John Hsley and Samuel Fellows were chosen prudential men.

31st Tenth Month, 1680, Captain Thomas Bradbury, Henry Brown, Henry True, Nathaniel Brown and Robert Ring were chosen selectmen; Thomas Bradbury was chosen schoolmaster.

January 4, 1681, Captain Bradbury, Ensign Buswell, John Hsley, Henry Brown and John Stevens, Jr. chosen selectmen.

May 16, 1682, "Voted that the town with all thankfulness accept of ye bell which is presented unto them by Mr. George Hewes; also voted to make Mr. Hewes, a present of Deare Island."



January 8, 1862, Selectmen, Mr. Thomas Bradbury, Isaac Morrill, Mr. Thomas Mulgett, Quartermaster Osgood and Ensign Buswell.

December 26, 1683, Selectmen, Mr. Thomas Bradbury, Henry Brown, Henry True, John Stevens, Jr., and Jacob Morrill.

January 8, 1684, Selectmen, Captain Bradbury, Ensign Buswell, Onesí Page, John French, Sr., and Richard Hubert.

January 8, 1685, Prudential Men, Henry Brown, Sr., Sergeant True, Sergeant Brown, Jacob Morrill, Sergeant John Stevens, Jr.

January 4, 1686, Prudential Men, Captain Thomas Bradbury, Jacob Morrill, Sergeant Nathaniel Brown, Benjamin Stevens and Sergeant John Stevens, Jr.

28th of Tenth Month, 1687, the selectmen were Henry True, Ensign Wm. Buswell, Richard Long, Ephraim Brown and Jarves Ring.

June 11, 1689, the prudential men were Lieut. Henry True, Jacob Morrill, Ephraim Brown, Benj. Easman and Nathl. Brown.

February 13, 1689, the selectmen were Henry True, Capt. Buswell, Onesiphors Page, Richard Hubberd and Mr. Tho. Bradbury.

February 13, 1690, the selectmen were Capt. Tho. Bradbury, Jacob Morrill, Lieut. True, Willi Allin and Oneseforus Page.

February 12, 1691-92, the selectmen were Capt. Bradbury, Capt. Buswell, Richd. Long, Jno. Easman and John Allin.

March 7, 1692-93, the selectmen were Lieut. True, Jacob Morrill, Ensign Brown, Cornet Hubberd and Joseph Eaton.

March 13, 1693-94, the selectmen were Richard Long, Isaac Morrill, William Allin, Jarves Ring and Philip Grele. Capt. Thos. Bradbury chosen town clerk; Richard Long, clerk of the market.

March 18, 1694-95, Reverend Mr. James Allin was chosen town clerk, but he declined to serve. The selectmen were Ephraim Winslow, Mr. John Wadly, Lieut. Henry True, Jacob Morrell and Sargt. Saml. Gill.

March 20, 1694-95, Lieut. Henry True was chosen town clerk. Capt. Thos. Bradbury died this year. He left a legacy of "*five pounds*, to be divided by the selectmen for ye use of ye poor of ye town."

March 17, 1695-96, the selectmen were Lieut. Henry True, Ens. Nathaniel Brown, John Clough, Jacob Morrill and Sargt. Joseph Eaton.

April 9, 1696, "sent to Mr. Cushing to engage him in ye work of ye ministry."

May 21, 1696, "agreed to give Mr. Caleb Cushing sixty pounds and four contributions for his first year's salary."

March 16, 1696-97, the selectmen were Capt. Henry True, Saml. Eastman, John Wadley, Jarves Ring and

Ensign Joseph Eaton. Capt. Henry True was chosen town clerk. Isaac Morrill, Sr., town treasurer.

March 24, 1697-98, Capt. Henry True chosen town clerk. The selectmen were Capt. Henry True, Mr. Wm. Bradbury, Ephraim Winsley, Jarves Ring, Benjamin Eastman.

Rev. Caleb Cushing ordained November 9, 1698.

March 8, 1698-99, the selectmen were Jarves Ring, Wm. Bradbury, Saml. Eastman, Ephraim Winsley and Capt. True. Capt. True was chosen town clerk.

March 13, 1699-1700, town clerk, Willi Bradbury. The selectmen were Willi Bradbury, Capt. True, John Clough, Jacob Morrill and Ens. Joseph Eaton.

March 13, 1700-1, town clerk, Willi Bradbury. The selectmen were Jarvis Ring, Saml. Eastman, Mr. John Wodleigh, Joseph Page and Capt. True.

March 2, 1701-2, town clerk, Nathaniel Browne. The selectmen were Mr. Isaac Morrill, Jarvis Ring, John Clough, Jacob Morrill and John Webster.

March 23, 1702-3, town clerk, Nathaniel Brown. The selectmen were John Clough, Jarvis Ring, John Webster, Daniel ——— and Abraham Morrill.

March 14, 1703-4, Nathaniel Brown was chosen town clerk. The selectmen were Isaac Morrill, Capt. True, Tho. Bradbury, Willi Smith and Samuel Collins.

1704-5, town clerk, Lieut. Brown. The selectmen were John Clough, Benjamin Easman, Capt. True, Saml. Easman and Tho. Evans.

March 19, 1705-6, town clerk, Nathaniel Brown. The selectmen were Capt. Wadleigh, Isaac Morrill, Jr., Mr. Willi Bradbury, Capt. True, Abraham Brown.

1706-7, town clerk, Nathaniel Brown. The selectmen were Capt. True, Jacob Bradbury, Sargt. Saml. Gill, Isaac Morrill, Jr., and Capt. Wadleigh.

March 16, 1707-8, town clerk, Lieut. Brown. The selectmen were Col. March, Jacob Bradbury, Isaac Morrill, Jr., Sargt. Tho. Bradbury and Jarvis Ring.

March 15, 1708-9, town clerk, Lieut. Brown. The selectmen were Capt. True, Mr. Wymond Bradbury, Jeremiah Stevens, Jacob Bradbury and Ezekiel Morrill.

March 21, 1709-10, town clerk, Lieut. Nathaniel Brown. The selectmen were Capt. True, Tho. Bradbury, Tho. Morrill, Capt. Wadleigh and Onesiphorus Page. The town agreed to exempt from taxation iron works which John March, John Barnett and Jarvis Ring, proposed to build and set up on the Powow River.

March 20, 1710-11, town clerk, Lieut. Nathaniel Brown. The selectmen were Cornet Jeremiah Allen, Ensign Thomas Morrill, Benjamin Easman, Abraham Browne and Isaac Morrill, Jr.

March 18, 1711-12, Town Clerk, Lieutenant Nathaniel Brown; Selectmen, Ensign Thomas Morrill, Joseph French, John Morrill, James Purington, and Cornet Jeremiah Allen. "Voted that the annual

<sup>1</sup> Most of the town-meetings near this date (1695) were held at the house of Joseph Fletcher.





meeting of the town in the future to be the second Tuesday in March."

March 10, 1712-13, Town Clerk, Lieutenant Nathaniel Brown; Selectmen, Ezekiel Morrill, Samuel Collins, John Morrill, Joseph Page and Samuel Easman.

March 9, 1713-14, Town Clerk, Lieutenant Brown; Selectmen, Samuel Collins, Cornet Allin, Lieutenant Stevens, William Smith and Jacob Morrill, Jr.

March 8, 1714-15, Town Clerk, Lieutenant Brown; Selectmen, Samuel Collins, Jacob Bradbury, John Morrill, Samuel Currier and Captain Henry True.

March 13, 1715-16, Town Clerk, Lieutenant Brown; Selectmen, Sergeant William True, Jacob Bradbury, Joseph Tucker, Jacob Morrill, Jr., and Cornet Jeremiah Allin.

March 12, 1716-17, Town Clerk, Lieutenant Brown; Selectmen, William True, Jarvis Ring, Joseph Tucker, Lieutenant Allen and Mr. John Webster.

March 14, 1717-18, Town Clerk, Nathaniel Brown; Selectmen, Samuel Collins, Jacob Bradbury, John Morrill, Joseph French and Sergeant William True.

March 10, 1718-19, Town Clerk, Lieutenant Brown; Selectmen, John Morrill, Joseph French, Sergeant William True, John Merrill and William Smith.

1719-20, Town Clerk, Nathaniel Brown; Selectmen, Sergeant William True, John Merrill, Daniel Morrill, John Morrill and Henry True. Town-meeting was held in the West Parish meeting-house.

March 14, 1720-21, Town Clerk, Captain Nathaniel Brown; Selectmen, Samuel Collins, Ensign Henry True, Onesiphorus Page, John Morrill and Joseph French.

March 13, 1721-22, Town Clerk, Captain Brown; Selectmen, Lieutenant William True, Sergeant Edward French, Cornet Ezekiel Morrill, Sergeant Samuel Collins and Quartermaster William Smith.

March 12, 1722-23, Town Clerk, Captain Nathaniel Brown. Voted to have three selectmen only. Elected L. William True, Mr. John Morrill and Captain Joseph Eaton.

March 10, 1723-24, Town Clerk, Mr. Nathaniel Brown; Selectmen, John True, Robert Smith, John Morrill, Samuel Collins and Joseph French, Jr.

March 9, 1724-25, Town Clerk, Mr. Nathaniel Brown; Selectmen, Thomas Fellows, Stephen Merrill, Samuel Collins, Joseph French, Jr., and Aaron Morrill.

March 8, 1725-26, Town Clerk, Mr. Nathaniel Brown; Selectmen, Mr. Samuel Collins, John Merrill, Robert Smith, Daniel Morrill and Joseph French.

March 14, 1726-27, Town Clerk, Mr. Nathaniel Brown; Selectmen, Samuel Collins, John Merrill, John Morrill, Andrew Downer and Joseph French.

March 12, 1727-28, Town Clerk, Mr. Nathaniel Brown; Selectmen, Moses Merrill, Elias Pike, Abraham Brown, Jun., Israel Webster, and Samuel Collins.

March 11, 1728-29, Town Clerk, Nathaniel Brown; Selectmen, Lieutenant True, Robert Smith, Philip Rowell, John True, and Lieutenant John Morrill.

March 10, 1729-30, Town Clerk, Nathaniel Brown; Selectmen, John Merrill, William True, Philip Rowell, John Morrill and Thomas Fellows.

March 9, 1730-31, Town Clerk, Nathaniel Brown; Selectmen, Samuel Collins, Richard Long, Philip Rowell, John Morrill and Moses Merrill.

March 14, 1731-32, Town Clerk, Nathaniel Brown; Selectmen, John Morrill, Andrew Downer, Samuel Collins, Philip Rowell and Jabez True.

March 13, 1732-33, Town Clerk, Mr. Nathaniel Brown; Selectmen, Samuel Collins, Philip Rowell, John Merrill, John Morrill and David Ring.

March 12, 1733-34, Town Clerk, Mr. Nathaniel Brown; Selectmen, John Page, Philip Rowell, John Stevens, John Morrill and John True.

March 11, 1734-35, Town Clerk, Mr. Nathaniel Brown; Selectmen, Samuel Collins, John Morrill, John Merrill, Caleb Cushing, Jun., and Ephraim Brown.

March 9, 1735-36, Town Clerk, Nathaniel Brown; Selectmen, John Morrill, Philip Rowell, Jabez True, Caleb Cushing, Jr., and Samuel French.

March 8, 1736-37, Mr. Nathaniel Brown was chosen Town Clerk; Selectmen, Caleb Cushing, Jr., Philip Rowell, Robert Smith, David Ring and John Morrill.

March 14, 1737-38, Town Clerk, Nathaniel Brown; Selectmen, Deacon Benjamin True, Lieutenant Cushing, Abraham Morrill, Deacon John Merrill and Aaron Morrill.

March 13, 1737-38, Town Clerk, Nathaniel Brown; Selectmen, Stephen Merrill, Philip Rowell, Captain Elias Pike, Lieutenant Caleb Cushing and Captain John Merrill. Philip Rowell refused to be sworn and Aaron Morrill was elected.

March 11, 1739-40, Town Clerk, Mr. Nathaniel Brown; Selectmen, Captain Pike, Nathaniel Fitts, Lieutenant Cushing, Reubin Morrill and Ephraim Wadleigh.

March 10, 1740-41, Town Clerk, Mr. Nathaniel Brown; Selectmen, Captain John Morrill, Stephen Merrill, Captain Elias Pike, Philip Rowell and William True.

March 9, 1741-42, Town Clerk, Mr. Nathaniel Brown; Selectmen (voted to have but three), Captain John Morrill, Captain Elias Pike and Philip Rowell.

March 8, 1742-43, Town Clerk, Mr. Nathaniel Brown; Selectmen, Lieutenant Cushing, Philip Rowell and Israel Webster.

March 13, 1743-44, Town Clerk, Caleb Cushing; Selectmen, Captain Elias Pike, Mr. Philip Rowell, Mr. Nathaniel Brown.

March 12, 1744-45, Town Clerk, Caleb Cushing, Jr.; Selectmen, Captain Elias Pike, Winthrop True and Stephen Merrill.

March 11, 1745, Town Clerk, Caleb Cushing, Jr.;



Selectmen, Reubin Morrill, Winthrop True and Captain Elias Pike.

In 1662, October 28th, the Rev. William Worcester died. For twenty-three years he was the one minister of the town, who, by his intelligent counsel, had guided the settlers in the better way. One of the early historians of New England writes of him as "one of the reverend, learned and holy divines, arriving from Europe to America, by whose evangelical ministry the churches of New England have been illuminated." It was also decided, on the petition of the new town (Amesbury), then subject to the ecclesiastical rule of the Salisbury Church, "that they should not content themselves with ordinary help while the Lord is pleased to continue *so bright a star in their candlestick.*"

The successor of Mr. Worcester was Rev. John Wheelwright, settled in 1662, who "for his maintainance while the new town should remain with us was to receive three-score pounds a year, otherwise to be paid fifty pounds a year by the town of Salisbury, beside accommodation of house and land." The ministry of Mr. Wheelwright was not a very pleasant one. He came in contact with Capt. Robert Pike upon some matters of church policy, and between appeals to the parish and the State government still stronger prejudice was excited, and his connection with the church was broken in 1678. He soon after went back to England; returned to this country, and settled in Exeter, N. H. and left upon the records of that town evidence of his genius, not only as a scholar, and teacher but as a wise statesman. He returned to Salisbury, and was buried in the old yard on the Beach road, beside his former associate, and where to-day lie the first four ministers of the town without a stone to mark their last resting-place.

In 1668-69 there was a more earnest demand for the building of roads and the care of forest trees, and for the settlement of school-teachers. Care and provision was made for the raising of stock and the providing of public-watering places. The record shows there was reserved convenient land for a watering place for cattle about the Pine Hill Ridge to remain to ye said use forever."

In 1672 the selectmen were given authority to appoint surveyors of highways and to instruct them in their duties.

In 1675 the fear of the Indians whose appearance had been noted by unfriendly acts for some months, caused the town to erect a place of security from sudden attack. Three such places were built—one in the vicinity of Congress Street, one near the Rabbit Farm and a third in the Seabrook Road.

In 1676 Henry Brown was appointed town appraiser, Wm. Brown constable, and Thos. Rawlinson to keep "the town's flock of sheep from May until October, and to have six pence a head," to be paid as follows: "four pounds of butter for every twenty sheep and lambs and one bushel of corn for every score, and y<sup>e</sup>

remainder of y<sup>e</sup> pay in corn." Much of the trade or business of the town was by barter, and the chief article for this use in the heavier transactions was lumber.

In 1679, Mr. James Alling was invited to the pulpit in the parish made vacant by the leaving of Rev. Mr. Wheelwright. One of the inducements offered for his settlement is recorded thus:—"To settle among us and marry; if it shall please y<sup>e</sup> Lord, y<sup>t</sup> he dies while he is with us, the town doth engage and order that his wyfe shall have twenty acres of upland, or in lieu of land, three score pounds." Mr. Allyn accepted the offer, and the town fulfilled its engagements. To-day this land is known as the "Allen lot." He died in 1696.

Rev. Mr. Alling's successor was Rev. Caleb Cushing, and for his services the town voted him sixty pounds in good merchantable pay, ten of it in silver money, with four contributions "besides y<sup>e</sup> sixty pounds," and the use of the parsonage house, and all the lands and meadows belonging thereto, during his stay. The ministry of Mr. Cushing shows him to have been a careful guide, not only over the spiritual affairs of his parish, but he was equally interested in the temporal welfare of his flock. He became a large land-owner in the town, and the property acquired was held in the family for several generations, and the late Hon. Caleb Cushing shared in the division, and the Cushing estate continues upon the assessor's books to this day. The descendants of Minister Cushing were honored by their townsmen.

So far our history deals with the people of the East Parish—they in all purposes were the town. But the land about the Powow River was being settled upon and manufacturing interests were developing, which led to the creation of another parish, which was forced by church dissensions. As early as 1665 the second meeting-house in the territory of Salisbury was built, but it was not until many years later (1714) that the West Parish of Salisbury was established. To avoid a division of its territory into two different church parishes, the town, for nearly a hundred years, built and repaired its meeting-houses and its parsonages, and supported its ministers from a common assessment upon the inhabitants of the town. A full history of the church organizations of the town, and the early and later movements in connection therewith, would require a volume by itself.

The grant of timber land to William Osgood, on condition that he should build a saw-mill, to be completed before May, 1652, was the first movement of the early settlers to build up an industry in the West Parish. It was stipulated that said Osgood should have liberty to make use of all the pine timber between the west side of the path leading from the house of John Bagley to Exeter, and on other growths. This grant of land comprised some three hundred acres, but he was to give to the town "one half-hundred boards and planks for every thousand sawn at the





mill." At this mill the first planks were sawn for ship-building purposes on the Merrimac River. A ship built by Nathan Gold and one by Mr. Graeves were furnished planks at this mill. In 1689, Willie Osgood surrendered up to the town all his right in this grant of timber-land. The capacity of the mill is learned by a deposition found in the Essex County Court files, wherein Richard Currier testifies that the mill in Salisbury is in no way inferior to the mill at Amesbury, which in the spring saws about five or six thousand feet of board a week, for three months together. In 1693-94 a saw mill was built by John Wadley on the Powow River, making the third mill. Benjamin Easman also petitioned for a right in Powow River between the mill bridge and the old saw-mill, now in possession of Major March, Thomas Currier and Jacob Morrill, and with it "the right to improve four rods of land adjoining for the purpose of building a fulling-mill to full the town's cloth, before any other town, they paying as other towns." Agreed to so long as the said Easman performed the said conditions. In 1710 the town received the following petition, which is an indication that there was a growing desire to further improve the water facilities of the Powow:

"The humble petition of we, the subscribers, to the town of Salisbury, assembled this 21st day of March, 1710: hereby sheweth that whereas your petitioners have had thoughts for to set up and build Iron Works upon y<sup>e</sup> falls in y<sup>e</sup> Powow River, humbly prays y<sup>e</sup> town that they would please to grant them some small matter for y<sup>e</sup> promoting that design, which if we shall go on with y<sup>e</sup> work it may prove to great benefit to y<sup>e</sup> town. Therefore we pray y<sup>e</sup> town to grant that we may be freed from all rates that may arise on said work and to give something that may promote that work; so hoping that you may oblige us in this thing, we remain your humble servants, John March, John Barnett, Jarvis Ring."

The petition received favorable action by the town; the works were built, and for several years did quite a business, but they were situated on the north side of the river. From the first three saw-mills sprang up the iron-works, and following this the nail-factory. The first woolen-mill was operated in Salisbury in 1812, and the first contract for clothing the soldiers in the war was filled by this mill. At this period the town contained several tanneries. As early as 1780 liberty was given Jacob Brown to set up a hatter's shop on the highway near David Currier's barn (near where the lower factory boiler-house is now situated). This industry was continued there for many years, or until the burning of the hat-factory, some fifty years ago. Previous to 1793 there was located on the banks of the Powow five saw-mills, seven grist-mills, and, in succeeding years, two linseed oil-mills, a fulling-mill, carding-mill, iron and nail-factory.

Strange as it may seem to the present generation, ship-building was also prosecuted on the banks of the

Powow River. As near as can be ascertained, the first ship-builder on the Powow was a Mr. Adams, as early as 1702. His yard was located near where Biddle's carriage-factory now is. In 1726 Joseph Wadleigh, Jr., Aaron Wadleigh, John Wadleigh, Jr., and Abraham Wadleigh petitioned "for liberty to use y<sup>e</sup> town's landing-place, near y<sup>e</sup> widow Ring's house, on the spot where Mr. Adams formerly built vessels, for the purpose of building a small vessel." The Wadleighs built quite a number of ships on the river. In 1727 liberty was given Jarvis Ring to set up a vessel on the river at the landing-place. In 1731 Philip Rowell and Abraham Morrill were given "liberty to set up a sloop at y<sup>e</sup> mills." Major Currier built vessels on the Amesbury side. The last vessel built on the Powow was in 1835, by Captain Samuel Fallonsbee, one of the old ship-builders of the Merrimac. His ship-yard was just below Boardman's soap-factory. Thus for nearly one hundred years ship-building was one of the industries of the Powow. From the wharves at the Landing great quantities of lumber and staves were shipped, and the lumber trade alone employed quite a force of men. Notwithstanding the extent of wilderness of woods, extending from the sea-shore to the extreme limits of the town in all directions, the care with which the early settlers guarded the growth of the forest trees is accounted for on the ground that it was one of the articles of exchange in trade, aside from its use in building ships and the quantity required to furnish warmth in winter. No person could fell a tree on any street, or about the town, or on the "green," without first receiving permission from the town, and the penalty for violation of this order subjected one to a fine of twenty shillings.

In all things pertaining to the early government of the town, its affairs were guarded with a jealous interest. Persons who had been granted lots of land in the township and had not settled thereon were notified that unless they did so before the 1st of November of the year 1641, their land would be forfeited to the town. The pay of laborers was also fixed as follows: For every lot of land laid out upon the Powow and Merrimac Rivers, lot-layers were to receive one cent per acre. Laborers were ordered to be paid sixteen pence per day for work during the winter months, and the winter months were to be accounted "from the first of November to the last of the first month, and the seven other months shall be summer months;" and for the summer months twenty pence per day for laborers; all carpenters to be paid two pence a day more than laborers, that is, eighteen pence in winter and twenty-two pence in summer. Mowers to have two pence per day more. The sale of certain articles was also regulated thus: Clapboards five feet in length, three shillings per hundred; split, four shillings six pence per hundred; butter, six pence per pound; milk, three half-pence per quart; new milk, one pence.





To carry out these provisions, a clerk of the market was appointed. At the same time, we have mentioned the sale of its fishing rights and the price put upon the sale of fish, making provision that its own townsmen should be first served. In contracting with its early teachers in the schools, it stipulated with Thomas Bradbury that he should first give his time and attention to scholars in the town, and then, if he have time at his disposal to teach others, he may do so.

If land was granted for any specific purpose, the interests of the town was the first consideration, as illustrated in the answer to Abraham Morrill and Henry Saywood, who petitioned for a mill privilege near the falls on the Powow River. These were given three-score acres of upland on condition that they set up a mill of sufficient capacity to grind all the corn the town shall need.

The first record of any trouble with the Indians appears in 1643, when hostilities were threatened by the tribes along the Merrimac, and they were ordered to be disarmed by the court. Accordingly, forty armed men were sent out for that purpose, twelve of whom belonged in Salisbury.

In the early records there is evidence that the settlers and leading men were disposed to deal justly by the Indians, notwithstanding the many traditionary tales of violent deeds of blood.

The old Indian trail extending on the borders of the marsh from Salisbury to Hampton can be traced to-day as distinctly as when the red men traversed it two hundred years ago. The shell mounds below Ring's Island, near the Merrimac, continue to attract attention, while from adjoining farms along the river-shore large collections of arrow-heads and Indian implements have been found.

At a meeting of the inhabitants held 6th of First Month, 1666, Thomas Bradbury, moderator, "there was granted to Ned, an Indian, the right to set up a fish-ware in the town creek, to catch fish for the summer following." In another instance it is recorded that one of the settlers was held to account for dealing unfairly by an Indian. It is possible that the exemption of this town from the raids of Indians upon its settlement, notwithstanding the fears excited by their approach oftentimes, and means of defense erected, was in a great measure due to these acts.

In the colonial records is the following:

"Josias Plaistowe, for stealing four baskets of corne from the Indians, is ordered to return them eight baskets, to be fined five pounds, and hereafter to be called by the name of Josias and not Mr., as formerly he used to be."

Of the sixty-four grantees of land in the town, sixteen were ordered to be called *Mr.*,—a large proportion, for, says Hutchinson, in a list of one hundred freemen, you will not find above four or five distinguished by *Mr.*, although they were generally men of some substance. The second class comprised the farmers, mechanics, etc., and the third class the

servants, whose time had been bought of themselves or were hired by the month or year.

In 1773 the town was visited by a violent tornado, equaling any blizzard of recent date in western lands. The Rev. Dr. Webster, the West Parish minister, in his diary, says of it: •

"This tempest was preceded by heavy rain and great darkness. It first appeared on the Merrimac river and rolled up the waters upon the banks, and threatened to swallow up the affrighted inhabitants. From the river inland it covered three-quarters of a mile, and extended to the sea. The tempest continued for three minutes, and wrecked and destroyed one hundred buildings in the town. Yet through the great and marvelous mercy of God, who ruleth in the storm, no life was lost or bone broken on the Salisbury side, where the most damage was done."

The action of the town during the Revolutionary period, from 1770 to the close of the war, is a record of patriotism and self-devotion to the interests of the nation. Patriots and heroes who fought at Crown Point, at Ticonderoga, at Quebec, at the fall of Louisbourg, at Bunker Hill, and sailors who manned the yards in the old ship "Alliance," and other of our naval vessels.

March 13, 1774, the town voted that:

"Thanks be given to the respectable body of merchants in Boston and other towns, for their truly generous non-importation agreement, and for their prudent and vigorous endeavors in this critical time to save their country. That we will not ourselves drink any foreign teas and endeavor (sickness excepted) that none shall be drunk in our houses till the duties are taken off, and the Revenue acts are repealed."

In 1772 the freeholders and other inhabitants voted and unanimously resolved:

"1. That the most essential rights of mankind are,—Life, Liberty and Property.

"2. That the only end and design of government is to secure these.

"3. That gross invasions have been made upon these our rights by the British administration, till our grievances and oppressions are become intolerable.

"4. That our Representative be instructed to use all his influence in the house that all proper measures may be taken to obtain a redress of these grievances.

"5. That if this fails of effect, this town is ready to unite with the other towns in this government, and with all the other British government, in this continent, in all lawful measures which, on joint consultation, shall be judged necessary to save our sinking state, and to obtain redress of our grievances.

"6. That a copy of these resolutions be transmitted by the town-clerk, to the gentlemen of the Committee of Communication and Correspondence in Boston, thanking them for their seasonable and prudent care of the public good."

On the reception of the news of the blockade of the harbor of Boston 1774, the town voted:

"That since we cannot have commerce with Great Britain upon no easier terms than giving up our liberty and property, it is best to have none, and therefore, that if the other colonies, or we, of this Province in general, come into measures, we will, after the 1th inst., forbear all trade with Great Britain, and Ireland, and the West Indies, till the port of Boston is again opened as heretofore."

For the distress occasioned to the poor of Boston by the "embargo," the town not only voted aid, but contributed sixty pounds. Mr. Samuel Smith, Capt. Henry Eaton and Major Nathaniel Currier were a committee to confer with the town of Marblehead on the state of affairs. The Committee of Correspondence were Capt. William Hackett, Dr. Samuel Nye and Lemuel Stevens.



Twenty pounds were voted to provide timber, rocks and labor towards stopping the channel of the Merri-mac, to prevent British ships from entering.

The Committee of Safety were John March, Moses Pike, Josiah French, Capt. Steven Merrill, Henry Moody, Henry Morrill, Lieut. Benjamin Evans, Captain Joseph Pike, Captain William Hackett, Dr. Samuel Nye, John Hackett. This committee were given full power to act in the town's behalf, and during the pleasure of the town. The town provided for the payment of its minute-men, purchased powder and ball and clothing for its soldiers, and instructed the selectmen to hire money to pay its soldiers.

Names of soldiers who served in the Revolutionary War:—For two months' service at Cambridge and classed as "minute-men:—"

Jacob Currier.	William Osgood.
Abel Morrill.	William Tucker.
Isaac Morrill.	Samuel Dudley.
William Morrill.	Philip Osgood.
Rufus Smith.	Stephen Smith.
Daniel Gale.	Jeremiah Morrill.
Joshua Morrill.	Archelaus Adams, Jr.
William Hackett, Jr.	Elias Pike.

#### For service at Winter Hill:

Joseph Wadleigh.	Jacob Currier.
Thomas Arnold.	Jeremiah Brown.
Samuel True.	Sylvanus Eaton.
Jona. Webster.	Daniel Morrill.
Abel Jackman.	John True.
Isaac Dalton.	Robert Fowler.
Richard Brown.	William Osgood.
Robert Maxfield.	Samuel Hackett.
David Eaton.	Benjamin Eaton.
Moses Collins.	William Morrill.
Jeremiah Morrill.	Charles Morrill.
Lieut. William Brown.	Joseph Gerrish.
Jonathan Sellers.	John Dalton.
Joseph Maxfield.	John Merrill, Jr.
Simon French.	Jabez True.
Nathaniel Jackson.	John Brown.
Jacob Ring.	Aaron Dow.
Benjamin French, Jr.	Jere. Dole.
Samuel Carr, Jr.	William Pike.

Those paid as Continental soldiers, and enlisted for the war, some of whom fought at Bunker Hill, were:

John Blaisdell.	Moses French.
Thomas Griffin.	James Davis.
Jona. Blaisdell.	Elijah Dow.
Jeremiah Brown.	Lieut. Wm. Brown.
Winthrop Wiggin.	Stephen Smith.
James Sellers.	Jona. Sawyer.
Thomas Brown.	John Mansfield.
John Carr.	Joseph Adams.
William Sellers.	Capt. Nath'l Currier.
John Griffin.	Jeremiah Dole.
Samuel Morrill.	Richard Hoyt.
Samuel Colby.	Daniel Marshal.
Nathaniel Dustin.	Moses Collins.
Dudley Stearns.	Samuel Webster.
Eliphalet Woodward.	Moses French.
John Merrill.	Jona. Fowler.
David Davis.	William Carr.
Enos French.	Lieut. Lewis.
Samuel Dudley.	Daniel Gale.
Samuel Stevens.	Levi Tilton.
William Gould.	

Thirteen soldiers were paid who went to Providence, and ten were paid who went to Rhode Island.

The cost of shoes, clothing and blankets furnished the soldiers of the Continental army by the town was £1900 6s.

For fear the British ships might sail up the Merri-mac, and to further prevent such a catastrophe, the town voted to build two fire rafts. These were completed at a cost of £17 6s 11d. William and John Hackett superintended the work thereon.

The money in aid of the defense of American liberty was loaned to the town by its own citizens, and by a number of women possessed of estates; among the latter class a Mrs. Clark contributed £500.

Upon the adoption of the new Constitution in 1779, we find that the town voted to accept every article, except the third article in the Bill of Rights after these words: And all moneys paid by the subject to the support of public worship and the public teachers aforesaid, shall, if he require it, be uniformly applied to the public teachers of his own religious sect and denomination, provided there be any on whose instruction he attends. It is the mind of this town that these words should be added—"provided, also, that he signify his mind publicly and enter his dissent at the settlement of a minister, as being of a different denomination." The reasons urged for this settlement were—"That the people being left at an utter uncertainty who is to support their minister, and the minister whether he can have any support at all, and also for the reason that a man might change his religious sentiments for the sake of avoiding his civil obligations, and it does not come within the power of the government to dissolve such a contract." Fifty-five voted for the amendment, twelve against.

The first petition against the parish tax system, preceded by strenuous opposition from Mr. Robert Pike, who declared it to be against the Constitution of the State, was sent to the Legislature from this town. Upon the presentation of this petition a town-meeting was called on the 27th day of December, and Caleb Cushing, Major Joseph Page, Dr. Samuel Nye, Benjamin Evans and Moses Rowell were chosen a committee to prepare reasons against the prayer of said petition.

The controversy thereon had been gathering strength for some years, as it was shown that the "ministers' rates" in the town in frequent years exceeded the whole town expenditures. In 1788 the town voted not to take any action in ministerial affairs, and voted against hiring the Rev. Mr. Webster and the Rev. Mr. Noyes.

The men prominent in the affairs of the town were wise and capable of understanding its needs and necessities. It allowed none to represent them but those capable of expressing themselves by vote and action in an intelligent manner, and very often gave their representatives instruction upon the public





policy of the day. Thus, in 1786, they gave special instruction to the representative-elect upon questions of finance—"declaring against the emission of paper-money as a dangerous expedient, promising rather an increase of confusion and fraud and injustice throughout the land, than any solid advantage to the public." They enjoined "Frugality and economy in every department of the government, and such laws as would tend to diffuse these virtues, together with temperance and industry, throughout the State, as we look upon the practice of these and the cultivation of the most useful manufactures among ourselves to be the surest and safest method of extricating us from our present disagreeable and embarrassed condition." The report is addressed to Samuel Marsh, representative, a most worthy man of his time.

A history of the town, however brief, would be incomplete without some allusion to the character of its founders. Simon Bradstreet is a name that is well known in the history of the State. He was born in Lincolnshire, England, 1603; came to this country in 1630; was one of the assistants, and was so continued till 1673. He was secretary of the colony from 1630 to 1644; was chosen Deputy Governor in 1673, and so continued until 1679, when he was elected Governor. He received no grants of land in Salisbury, but helped to organize the town by laying out roads, the "green" upon which the first meeting-house and court-house stood, and assisted in the adoption of rules for the government of the plantation of Merrimac. He settled in Ipswich, afterwards in Salem. Daniel Dennison was one of the organizers of this plantation, but received no land grant. In 1671 he was appointed to hold a court at Salisbury and Hampton; was commissioner of the United Colonies.

Samuel Dudley, a son of Governor Thomas Dudley, born in 1606, came from England with his father in 1630; settled in Salisbury and secured house-lot, planting lot and meadow-lot at the first division of land in 1639. He held several important offices, and 1648 appointed to keep the court at Norfolk. The same year he sold all his land in Salisbury and removed to Exeter; became one of its first ministers, and died there in 1683, aged seventy-nine.

John Clark, born in England, 1598, was in Newbury in 1638; was one of the petitioners for the Merrimac plantation, but received no grants of land. Tradition says, "he was one of the first regular educated physicians who resided in New England."

Christopher Batt came from Salisbury, England, and settled in Salisbury, Mass., 1639. He introduced the tannery business into the town, from which early sprang that branch of trade—now extinct. He received large grants of land. In 1650 he removed to Boston and became a noted merchant there.

Henry Dilley came from Salisbury, England; received house-lot, planting and meadow-lots at the first division. He died, and his widow sold her land.

She married for her third husband the Rev. Wm. Worcester.

John Sanders received house, planting-lots and meadow-lots. He was from Wiltshire County, England. He sold his land in Salisbury to Richard Wells and removed to Wells, Maine.

Samuel Winsley, one of the grantees of the town, was the only one of the twelve who settled in Salisbury, and remained there until his death.

Next to the early ministers, who take rank as men of great ability and worth, we may mention Thomas Bradbury, who, for many years, filled various public positions in the town, and left a record of usefulness which has been duly set forth in a biographical sketch written by one of his descendants. He was the first school-teacher employed. His record upon the books of the town proves his intelligence and worth.

Major Robert Pike was the greatest commoner of all,—a veritable Oliver Cromwell in decision and energy of character, and for the many qualities which made him prominent in the history of the town. A descendant has written a genealogy of the Pike family, in which the old hero, who came to Salisbury in 1637, and was admitted as a freeman, occupies a large space.

The twenty-eight counselors appointed by charter in 1684 were very important officers. The people selected their best representative men to be approved by the King to attend to the affairs of the colony. Robert Pike, of Salisbury, was selected and appointed to this office to serve for nine years. This appointment was during the reign of King Philip, the great leading warrior of the Eastern tribe of Indians, an inveterate enemy of the English and the civilization they sought to establish. On the expedition to the "Eastward," in 1690, Major Pike was ordered to raise three hundred men, to fill the required complement called for by Governor Hinckley, under Major Church. Major Pike responded to this large demand, and in nine days' time added two companies and filled the quota of men necessary for the expedition. The letter of instructions to Major Church by Major Pike is interesting. It required him to sail by the first opportunity to Casco, or places adjacent that may be most commodious for landing with safety and secrecy, and to visit the French and Indians at their headquarters at Amerascoggon, Pejepscoot or any other place, and to kill, destroy and utterly rout the enemy wherever he may be found, and also to recover our captives. In this expedition several men enlisted from Salisbury, but their names are not recorded on our records. To those familiar with the history of the French and Indian War the history of the expedition proves a chapter of sad interest.

Major Pike was a foe to intolerance in religious matters, and dared give expression to his sentiments in a manner that subjected him to disfranchisement and fine. He protected the Quakers from the insults



and abuse attempted upon them, and when the witchcraft delusion swept over the country he came to the rescue of the wife of Mr. Bradbury and saved that kind and Christian woman from the foul aspersions which were cast upon her in her old age.

It is not improbable that the influence of Robert Pike had much to do in saving the good name of the town from the fatal delusion which makes so dark a record in neighboring places.

The wife of Thomas J. Bradbury was accused of bewitching John Carr, and was condemned on the 9th of September, 1692. She was afterwards acquitted. She was the daughter of John Perkins, of Ipswich; was probably not far from eighty years of age, as she was married about 1637. Her sister, Elizabeth Sargent, was the wife of William Sargent, one of the first twelve settlers of Ipswich, then in Newbury, then Salisbury, then Amesbury, where many of his descendants still reside. In this connection we give the following, sent to the court which sentenced Mrs. Bradbury:

"Wee, the subscribers, do testefy that her life was such as become the gospel. She was a lover of the ministrie in all appearance and a diligent attendant upon God's holy ordinances, being of a courteous and peaceable disposition and carriage; neither did any of us (some of whom have lived in the towne with her above 50 years) ever know that she had any differences or falling out with any of her neighbors, man, woman or child, but was always ready and willing to do for them what lay in her power, night and day, though with hazard of her health or other danger. More might be spoken in her commendation, but this for the present.

(Signed by 118 men and women).

"July 28, 1692."

Coming down to later generations of men are the Websters, who settled along the Point shore and early engaged in commerce. The Hacketts, of which William was the ship designer and the first inventor of the water-line model,—the ancestor of Professor Hackett, the best Greek and Latin scholar of his day. The Clarks, of which Master Clark is the representative name, who engaged in the West India trade and aided in developing the tanning trade to an extent it had not known in the town, by establishing his four sons in business and which was prosecuted by them for many years. The Carriers, who built ships and saw-mills, and laid the first brick for a woolen-mill in the town, all the while extensive land-owners and farmers—descendants of Richard, known in the history of Amesbury. The Morrills, who operated the first machinery—such as "Ensign Morrill and his two sons." The Browns, who figured as merchants and mechanics of note. The Rowells, who operated brick yards and saw-mills and built the first brick building in the town—Franklin Hall—in 1628, and where the first public discussion was held upon the enormity of the sin of slavery. The Misses Grimkie, two Southern ladies, who had liberated the slaves which were theirs by inheritance upon the death of a relative, representing property at that time valued at fifty thousand dollars, spoke upon the question and delivered the first public anti-slavery address held in

the town; though later came Garrison and Stephen Foster, and other early disciples of the reform, until the whole town was in a turmoil of excitement over the agitation, and became allied to the towns in Essex County, who espoused the cause of freedom and held the balance of power in the vote previous to 1840, and was one of the first towns to be represented in the Legislature by a pronounced abolitionist.

The town can also claim the honor of being the birthplace of the mother of Daniel Webster,—Abigail Eastman, who was the second wife of Col. Ebenezer Webster, then a resident of New Hampshire, but a native of Kingston. By this marriage they had three children,—the Hon. Ezekiel Webster, the Hon. Daniel Webster, and a daughter who married a Mr. Haddock, and was the mother of the late Professor Haddock, of Dartmouth College. Abigail Eastman, the mother of Daniel Webster, was born in Salisbury, at the "Four Corners," or, as known by its local name, the "Rabbitt Farm." She was a woman of sterling good sense.

The Cushings sprang from Minister Caleb Cushing, and the honored statesman of this nation claims Salisbury as his birthplace.

Thomas Macy and Tristram Coffin were each men of remarkable character. They were the original settlers of the island of Nantucket. Macy was called to account for harboring Quakers and for his non-conformist notions; he evaded the sentence of the law passed upon him by making a voyage to Nantucket in a somewhat sudden manner, an account of which has been graphically described by the poet Whittier.

Nathaniel Currier, of Salisbury, held a commission under King George III.; but on the breaking out of the War of the Revolution he cast his influence on the side of the patriots, and was elected to the "Congress at Watertown" in 1773. He died in 1775.

Capt. John March, Capt. True, William Sevet, Oliver Osgood, Ezekiel Hackett, Worthens, Morrills, Stevenses, Lowells, Hoyts, Colbys, Eatons, etc.

RELIGIOUS SOCIETIES. — *First Congregational*, founded in 1638, two years before the incorporation of the town, and was the eighteenth church in Massachusetts. The first pastor was Rev. William Worcester, settled at the organization, and died October 23d, 1662. Second pastor, John Wheelwright, settled December 9th, 1662, died November 15th, 1679. Third pastor, James Alling, a native of Boston; settled May 4th, 1687, died March 3d, 1696, aged thirty-seven. Fourth pastor, Caleb Cushing, born at Scituate, settled November 9th, 1698, died January 25th, 1752, aged eighty. Fifth pastor, Edmund Noyes, born at Newbury, settled November 20th, 1751, died July 12th, 1809, aged eighty-one.

*The Rocky Hill Church, or West Parish of Salisbury*, was built in 1716. The first settled minister was Rev. Joseph Parsons, installed November 28th, 1718. The covenant was in accordance with the custom of the





early New England churches, there being no distinct creed or articles of faith. It was as follows:

"We do this day, in a grateful sense of the call of Christ unto us, avouch the Lord Jehovah to be our God, Father, Son and Holy Ghost, and giving up ourselves to God and Christ and one another, we do, by the grace of Christ assisting us, cheerfully submit ourselves to his government and to all his ordinances and institutions, taking and acknowledging him to be our prophet, priest and king, further promising by the grace of Christ to shun all avoid all errors, with all unrighteousness and ungodliness. We do also with ourselves give our seed to be the Lord's, submitting them also to the discipline and government of Christ in his Church, promising moreover that we will endeavor to uphold and promote the worship of God in public or in private; and finally that we will walk together as a church of Christ in all mutual love and watchfulness, to the building up of each other in faith and love, humbly craving help at the hands of God for the performance hereof."

Mr. Parsons died at Salisbury, March 13th, 1739, aged sixty-nine years, and in the twenty-first year of his ministry. He was a graduate of Harvard College in 1697. During his ministry, two hundred and ninety-one persons were added to the church. His wife was the daughter of Dr. Benjamin Thompson, of Roxbury. They had five children, three of whom were born in Salisbury: Samuel, born in Salisbury, was a graduate of Harvard College in 1730; William, born in 1716, graduated at Harvard 1735; John, died October, 1740, while attending Harvard College.

The church was strong in members and influence. Rev. Mr. Parsons was an eminent Christian, an accomplished, able and faithful minister. I copied from the humble monument in the parsonage lot of the old graveyard, near by the old meeting-house site, a few days ago, this uncommon, brief inscription on an insignificant, moss-covered stone:

"REV. JOSEPH PARSONS.

"Only this, and nothing more."

"Can storied urn or animated bust

Back to its mansion call the fleeting breath?

Can Honor's voice provoke the silent dust,

Or flattery soothe the dull, cold ear of death?"

No "storied urn" nor "honor's voice" of flattery here to soothe with solemn, ancient epitaph; but here beneath the sod is mingled with the dust of many of the once loving and beloved parishioners of the Second West Parish Church of Old Salisbury their first minister, Joseph Parsons, whose honored name is rudely marked on the moss-covered slate at the head of his grave. We look not down to read his noble record here; but we know by the good works of earth of that record of promise in letters of gold, written higher and brighter in heaven's glorious record of the faithful.

The second minister was Rev. Samuel Webster, of Bradford, who was ordained March 24, 1741.

After a ministry of nearly fifty-five years, he died at Salisbury, July 18, 1796, aged seventy-eight years. His eldest son, Rev. Samuel Webster, Jr., was born at Salisbury, September 16, 1743; graduated at Harvard College, 1791. He was ordained at Temple, N. H., October, 1771.

The third pastor was Andrew Beattie; ordained

June 28, 1797, and died March 16, 1801. He was born in Chelmsford; graduated at Harvard in 1795. Mr. Beattie, during his brief ministry of three years and nine months, won the respect of his parishioners. He was buried beside Rev. Joseph Parsons in the Rocky Hill Church-yard.

The fourth pastor was Rev. William Balch, who was born in Danvers, Mass., January 17, 1775. He was three years in Harvard College, after preparation in Phillips Academy, Exeter, N. H. He excelled as a Latin scholar. Previous to his settlement he served as chaplain in the United States Army. He was ordained pastor of this church November 17, 1802, and was dismissed February 20, 1816. During the latter part of the ministry of Mr. Balch many of the church and parish became disaffected, and were unwilling to aid in his support. After much unpleasant contention, an *ex-parte* council was convened by the church, which Mr. Balch consented to make mutual, and by it matters were so adjusted that he was honorably dismissed. The difficulties arose out of the excited political feeling which at this time divided the community. The churches called to settle this difficulty were Seabrook, Hampton Falls, Fourth in Newbury, Exeter, West in Amesbury, and East in Haverhill. A memento of this council of these neighboring churches is still preserved, which doubtless may have been indirectly one cause of the happy, mutual and friendly adjustment that resulted in the desired honorable dismissal of the pastor. It is a settled bill of the expenses of said council which I will here copy:

#### "THE WEST PARISH IN SALISBURY.

To David M. Leavitt, Dr.

To Brandy and Rum, as per bill .....	\$9.20
4 Turkeys .....	4.60
8 Chickens .....	2.00
6 lb. loaf sugar, 37 cts. per pound .....	1.88
16 " Bacon, 12½ cts. per pound .....	2.00
38 " Beef .....	2.82
3 " Raisins and Currants .....	.40
6 " Brown Sugar, 1½ lb. Tea .....	2.00
Butter, cheese, horse-keeping, potatoes, lodgings, etc. ..	10.00
Time attending on council .....	10.00
Journey to Exeter and Hampton Falls .....	1.50
	\$46.90 "

During the interval from the dismissal of Mr. Balch, in 1816, to the commencing of the Rev. Benjamin Sawyer, in 1835, the pulpit was supplied by a committee, and the preachers remained for a longer or shorter period. During the time more or less of the members of the parish "signed off," as it was called under the Religious Freedom Act, and worshipped with other churches. Rev. Thomas C. Upham, afterwards a professor in Bowdoin College, preached here with great acceptance. Then followed Rev. Mr. Turner and Rev. Charles Bowles, neither of whom were able to secure the harmonious co-operation of the whole parish. Rev. Mr. Harris came as a supply in 1828. Rev. Thomas Rich came in 1829 and continued until





1834. At the parish meeting, December 17, 1835, Rev. Benjamin Sawyer, then of the old Sandy Hill Church, Amesbury, was invited to supply the pulpit, and again in April 4, 1836.

Mr. Sawyer removed to the parsonage in Salisbury November, 1835, and for five or six years preached for the Amesbury Church and the Rocky Hill Society. After 1841 he gave his entire time to the Salisbury Church, and continued his connection here until his death, March 26, 1871, aged eighty-eight years, six months. He prepared for college with Rev. Abijah Wines, and graduated at Dartmouth College in 1808. Rev. S. J. Spaulding, in an address on the

far completed, Dec. 7, 1785, that a meeting of the town was held in it.

The sound material of the old house was used in the building of the new house, which is located nearly half a mile south of the old site. On its firm rocky foundation it has rested for more than a century, and is still well preserved, retaining unaltered its quaint, ancient style. A rare relic of y<sup>e</sup> olden time, within and without, suggestive in its associations to the generations of Salisbury of the early fathers and mothers, and kindred who worshipped here so long ago.

All of the churches of the West Parish, now consisting of five denominations, may be classed as originating in the Rocky Hill Parish.

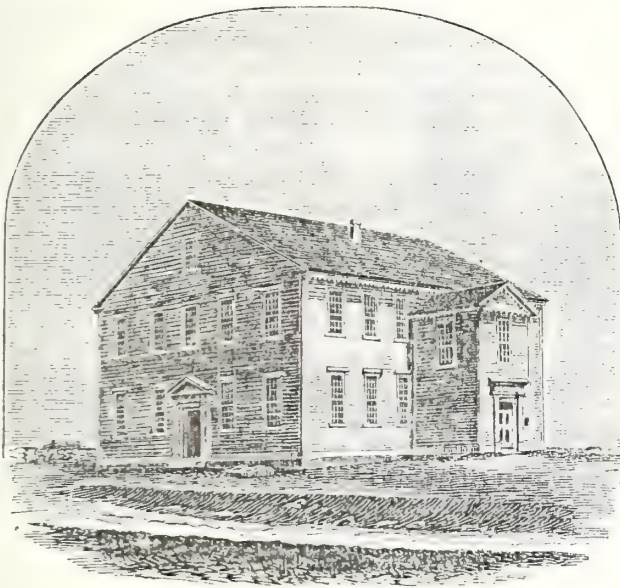
The *Christian Baptist Society* were the first to separate, consisting at first of but few members, who for a time previous to 1827 held meetings in the "Old Loft," so-called, of Capt. Oliver Osgood's store-house on the wharf at the Point, increasing in numbers in 1827 to such an extent that a meeting-house was needed, and built, in which for years a large and flourishing society met, comprising worshippers of a large portion of the Point, together with members from other sections of Salisbury and Amesbury. It is still occupied by the same denomination, although by not so large a congregation.

About 1835 another society, composed of a portion of the Rocky Hill Society of Salisbury and the Sandy Hill Society of Amesbury, united and built the house on the western extremity of the Point and formed a Congregational Society, with the church name of *The Union Evangelical Society of Amesbury and Salisbury*.

It has increased its membership and influence from year to year by the lessons proclaimed from its pulpit, by the many good and faithful teachers of the way that leads to the better life beyond.

The *First Baptist Church* of Salisbury was organized as a branch of the Brentwood Baptist Church Sept. 14, 1821. Preachers of the Baptist denomination visited and preached in this vicinity at irregular periods for several years before a society was organized here; but they were often assailed and subjected to the same manner of persecution as followed the Quakers.

The first recognized preacher was Dr. Samuel Shepard. He was born in the East Parish. The prime movers in the establishing of the Baptist Church were Moses Chase, Barnard Currier and David Currier. It is related of Dr. Shepard, that while preaching at a dwelling-house in Salisbury a constable approached with the intention of arresting him. Holding the Bible in his hand and extending it towards them, he remarked, "Here are my credentials." He was not further molested. The "exhorters" of the Baptist faith were a bold and persistent class, and no fear of



ROCKY HILL CHURCH.

centennial occasion of the church in 1885, gives the following tribute of respect to the worthy pastor of Old Rocky Hill, who, for thirty-six years, was connected therewith. He was justly held, by all who knew him, in high esteem:

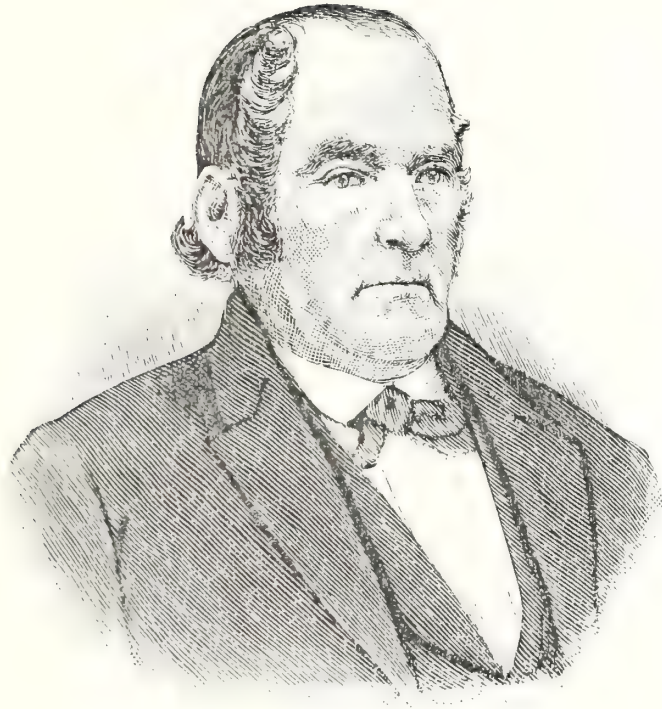
"Father Sawyer preached his last sermon October 30, 1870, on which occasion his mind was as clear and he spoke in the mild, tremulous tones which characterized his delivery, reading his hymns and Scriptures without glosses. His public labors were abundant. During his residence in Amesbury and Salisbury he attended eleven hundred funerals, and performed fourteen hundred marriages. He served on the school committee of Salisbury for twenty-one years, and in 1844 and '45 he represented the town in the Legislature. May 15, 1859, he preached a sermon at Rocky Hill on the fiftieth anniversary of his entrance on the ministry of the Gospel. January 12, 1866, he celebrated his golden wedding. Father Sawyer was faithful and sympathetic as a pastor; kind, generous and helpful as a citizen, neighbor and friend, and consistent and exemplary as a Christian.

"Since the death of Mr. Sawyer the supply of the pulpit has been, for the summer season, by Rev. Albert G. Motton, an aged Baptist clergyman, who still remains with this people, honored and respected by all.

"Such, in brief, was the ministry of the Second Church in Salisbury. The pastors were all educated, faithful, God-fearing men. The morality, intelligence and good order of the community attest their fidelity."

Rocky Hill Church was built Aug., 1785, or was so





*Benj. Sanger.*





law or personal violence seems to have turned them aside from "the call to preach the Gospel." Persecution and opposition only tended to increase their numbers, and their church attained a strong and vigorous growth.

The *Methodist Society* was founded in 1805, and its first pastor was Samuel Norris. The Universalist was incorporated in 1831.

In closing our brief notice of church matters, we may add that the pastors of the first churches of New England were the first teachers of the people. Very few of the early settlers were educated men, and for many years the great majority of the people of the colonies were dependant upon the clergy for both civil and religious instruction. Men who by their natural ability had become famous by successful enterprise, statesmanship and scientific attainments, like Benjamin Franklin, Washington and hosts of others, were, in point of the higher branches of learning, very far below the standard of the minister of the gospel. Our first ministers were thoroughly schooled in the time-honored universities of the mother country—masters of the Greek, Hebrew and Latin tongues, as well as perfected in English lore. Not only in theology, but in all matters of practical import, they were well versed, and from this fact may we not trace the cause of the great respect entertained for them by the people?

**SCHOOLS.**—The record of the first schoolmaster gives the name of Thomas Bradbury. But there is no record of the building of school-houses in the early history of the town. The schools were held in dwelling-houses, and were moved about from one section of the town to another, that all the children might be accommodated with such instruction as the first four teachers employed might furnish. Although the laws of the province were stringent in regard to the schools, the small towns lacked enthusiasm in this direction, and by indifference and neglect ignored and evaded them, and many towns were "presented" to the Great General Court for negligence in the fulfillment of the requirements of the law.

In 1692 the law required "That every town within the Province having fifty Householdors or upwards shall be constantly Provided of a School Master to Teach Children and Youth to Read and Write, and when any such Town or Towns have a Number of One Hundred Families or Householdors there shall also be a Grammar School sett up in every such Town, and some Discreet person of good Conversation, well instructed in the Tongues, procured to keep such School. Every such School Master to be suitably Encouraged and Paid by the Inhabitants; and the Selectmen and Inhabitants of such Towns respectfully shall take Effectual Care and make due Provision for the settlement and Maintenance of such School Master or Masters." It appears by an act of the court in 1701, in addition to the above, that in many instances the law had been neglected or evaded, and the court

notices the same as follows, viz.: "The observance of which Wholesome and Necessary Law is Shamefully Neglected by the divers Towns, and the Penalty thereof not required, greatly tending to the nourishment of Ignorance and Irreligion, whereof grievous Complaint is made." • I will here add that the penalty of 1692 was ten pounds, which in 1701 was made twenty pounds.

It was also enacted that no minister of any town shall be accepted as a school-teacher of such town. It is thus manifest that the clergy had been compelled to serve in the capacity of teachers, and the law came to their rescue, although teachers were to be approved by the ministers.

Salisbury and Amesbury were frequently "presented" as delinquent in obeying the school law. The town at the period of our writing is maintaining the following schools: one at Ring's Island, three at East Salisbury, two at the Point, one at Rocky Hill, one at the Plains, ten at the mills, and the school expenditures are eight thousand dollars per year. The first school-houses erected were built by subscription among the citizens interested in the cause of education. At the Mills such was the case, and the house was erected on an island in what is the yard of the factories of the Hamilton Mills Co. One of the scholars, the late Mrs. Stephen Osgood, when a girl of ten years, fell from a plank leading across the stream in approaching the school-house, and was carried down the current into the flume of one of the saw mills and over the dam. She came out unharmed by the adventure and lived to the age of upwards of eighty years.

Among the prominent teachers the name of Michael Walsh is pre-eminent. He was the author of the first *Commercial Arithmetic* published in New England. Among his scholars can be classed the names of many prominent sea captains of Newburyport, Salisbury and adjoining towns, who were taught the science of navigation. Among his scholars who were taught at his house at the Point was the late Seth Clark and Hon. Caleb Cushing.

The first school-house at Salisbury Point was erected by subscription in 1793.

**SALISBURY POINT.**—There are few villages in the Merrimac Valley that embellish the landscape more brilliantly than the village of Salisbury Point. Situated on the bank of the Merrimac, the river sweeps in a graceful curve to Deer Island, and the waters of the Powow flow along its western border, while on the Newbury shore the steep banks are covered with oaks, maples and evergreens. The village very early came to settlement from its location and value as a place for building ships. Its people were attached to their homes, and for patriots on sea and on land have given abundant proofs of their valor.

Upon the issuing of the King's proclamation in 1759, in which he called "upon his faithful and brave subjects of New England to join and co-operate



in arresting by a most vigorous and extensive effort all danger which may threaten North America from any more irruptions of the French," we find quite a number enlisted from the Point. Many of these were shipwrights and were detailed at Lake George to build "batteau"-boats used on the expedition to Quebec. Captain William Swett, of the Point, kept a diary of the expedition, giving the details of every day's march from the Point to Lake George, he being in charge of a company of recruits from this village. It will be of interest to learn who of our ancestors engaged in this expedition, which forever stopped the progress of the French in their designs upon New England.

Attached to Colonel Willard's regiment are the following recorded names:

*Colonel Willard's Regiment.*

Philip Colby.	Elijah Colby.
John Goodrich.	Geo. Worthen.
Reuben Lowell.	Amos Davis.
Thos. Carrier.	Moses Davis.
Benj. Ring.	Robert Gould.
Wm Bagley.	Samuel Bagley.
Ezra Jewell.	Henry Trussell.
Sergt. John Hackett.	Peletiah Hoyt.
Corp. Adonijah Colby.	Benj. Badger.
John Brown.	Wm. Lowell.
Sergt. Thostere Hoyt.	Thos. Hoyt.
Sergt. Gideon Lowell.	Joseph Hadlock.
Joshua Maxfield.	Thos. Gould.
Ezekiel Hackett.	

*Colonel Lovell's Regiment.*

Gideon Rowell.	Jona. Saunders.
Totts Thomas.	Dani. Kelley.
Jona. Thomas.	Laban Heath.
Thos. Talley.	Timothy Baker.
Jedw. Bevans.	Eleazar Gove.
Jas. Howard.	Stephen Ambler.
Dani. Greenough.	Ralph Cross.
Joseph Giles.	Moses Bailey.
Wm. Prasen.	

*Colonel Rodgers' Regiment.*

Eleazar Davis.	John Buntin, or Boynton.
Joseph Jackson.	Elevers Pratt.
Benj. Marble.	Dennis Locklen.
Ephraim Robbins.	Arenbald Gimmes.
John Frost.	John Belknap.
John Wilson.	

*"Train."*

Wm. Perkins.	Abram Williams.
Caleb Bandy.	Morris McGregg.
Maltha Pettingil.	Joseph Jenkins.
Nathl. Webster.	Jesse Warner.
Solomon Brown.	Benj. Sanborn.
Nathan Parks.	Joseph Davis.
Samuel Newett.	

The following items, copied from Mr. Richard Hackett's account-book, may be of interest, showing the price of substitutes for this last call:

"1758, April. Paid Joseph Page (town officer) 20 dollars for half a man, by Captain True's order (old currency), £15 (s. 6d).

"April 10, 1759. Paid Jarvis Ring ten dollars for one-quarter of a man, £22 10s. 0d.

"April 26th. Ezekiel Hackett and Judah enlisted and went off the 14th day of May, 1759.

"Ezekiel Hackett enlisted (next year) and went off the 21st day of May, 1760."

The exulting joy resulting from the capture of Quebec, and the close of the war, was of but short duration,—the home government had been at great expense in consequence of the few important features of the Point village, in the patriotic endeavor to throw off the yoke of oppression, and make their country a nation free and independent.

Although there was no company formation for the army, the men of Salisbury did not lack the general spirit and enthusiasm of the time, but ever responded promptly to the call to arms, and other assistance to the cause of liberty; many during the war served in the field, and as many were seafaring men at the time, they found appropriate place in the naval department, rendering valuable and faithful service to the cause.

A large proportion of our people were shipwrights, and it is said that with this class of mechanics commenced the War of American Independence. It is a well-known fact that the ship-builders of New England were ever patriotic and energetic in aid of the cause of liberty. This village had the honor of one of the most skillful naval architects of New England, at the time of the Revolution, and highly distinguished as a builder of ships,—a true patriot, and prominent in every matter of public welfare; as the builder of the first frigate ("Alliance") for the continentals, he will live in the history of the nation.

After the refusal of other noted shipwrights to join him in the undertaking, he fearlessly contracted to build this first frigate for the Continental Congress, and the name of William Hackett, of Salisbury, as the builder of this historic war-ship, will ever be preserved on the records of a great nation. As the correspondence in regard to the building of this ship may be of interest historically, I will here copy a portion of these relics, which have been well preserved by a descendant, together with other valuable papers of y<sup>e</sup> olden time of historical importance and interest:

*Letter from Elias Haskett Derby, of Salem.*

"Salem, Jan. 23, 1776.

"MESSRS. HACKETTS—Sirs: At Watertown, I saw a Member of the Continental Congress, who has orders to build two Ships-of-War, one of 700 tons and one of 600 tons, he has sent to Newbury Port to know the depth of water on the bar. The Newbury members of the Court are very fond of building both. I should think at this time it might be a great service to your place to build one of them,—and as they are not yet agreed for—I told ye person I would see you on the affair—and made no doubt if you would come to Watertown (and if you should lose your labor the expense is not much). From what was said by Mr. Cushing, Carrier and myself, I think you would be as likely to get it as Newbury.

"From your friend,

"ELIAS HASKETT DERBY."

The Cushing referred to was Thomas Cushing, of Boston, one of the prominent men of the Revolution, an associate with Samuel and John Adams, Robert Treat Paine in the Continental Congress; afterwards Lieutenant-Governor of Massachusetts, with John Hancock as Governor.





*Letter from Thomas Cushing.*

"BOSTON, Jan. 14, 1777.

"SIR:—I am about building a Thirty-six gun Frigate for the Continent. I have not yet received the dimensions, but am directed to engage some suitable persons to fell the Timber. I shall build this ship at Muggridge's Point. I propose that you (if you incline) and Mr. Jonathan Greenleaf, or, if he declines, Mr. Cross, should (if we can agree), build this vessel at the place before mentioned. As it is highly necessary that the timber should be cut immediately, I must desire you, together with Mr. Greenleaf or Mr. Cross, would immediately take measures to engage some suitable persons to sett about felling the Timber suitable for such a Ship, as also the plank; I may consult Mr. Greenleaf and sett about it immediately.

"Do not let anybody know that I am about building this vessel. Should be glad to see you or Mr. Greenleaf immediately about this matter.

"I am your Obedt. Serv't, THOMAS CUSHING.

"TO MR. WM. HACKETT."

*Second Letter from Thomas Cushing.*

"BOSTON, Jan. 23, 1777.

"SIR:—I desire you would immediately procure good white oak Timber and plank sufficient for building a Thirty-six Gun ship of about eight hundred tons for the use of the Continent, Agreeable to what I wrote you the 14th inst.

"Your humble serv't, THOMAS CUSHING.

"TO MR. WM. HACKETT."

It is evident by this last note and other papers that no agreement was made either with Greenleaf or Cross, shipwrights of Newburyport, as the intended building-place was changed from Newburyport to Hackett's building-place at Salisbury Point, at which place William Hackett and his cousin, John Hackett, built the frigate "Alliance" in the old ship-yard of Daniel Webster, at the western extremity of the village of Salisbury Point,—the first navy-yard of the Continental Congress and the Great Republic.

The Hacketts of Salisbury were scientific shipwrights and excellent mechanics, whose ancestors were quite early engaged in this great industry of New England. They built many war vessels, also superintended the construction of others in other places; (they the vessels), are of historic fame, as are his build of merchant vessels of his time. His vessels were fine models, remarkable as sea-boats, so termed, and proverbial for their sailing qualities. The history of his ships would make an interesting volume of the early shipping, both national and local.

The "Alliance" frigate was said to be the fastest sailing vessel of the navy; her rate of sailing speed was fourteen knots an hour. With old papers of the builder, is the full dimensions of the hull and spars, but unfortunately her lines, or plan, is missing, and may possibly be in the Navy Department at Washington.

How familiar the names of the old Salisbury and Amesbury shipwrights and blacksmiths, as they appear on his old record of accounts! Here is the survey bill of timber and plank, which Cushing requested "sett about cutting immediately."

[Copy.]

"AMESBURY, 1777.

"To surveying Timber & Plank at several times for ye Continental Ship.

"To surveying 508 tons and 24 ft. Timber..... £14 12s. 4d.  
"To surveying 41,308 feet of Plank..... 3 2 2

£18 1s. 6d.

"Rec. of Capt. Hackett eighteen pounds, it being in full payment.

"WINTHROP MERRILL."

I will give an extract from the iron account,—the iron delivered to each partner of the smiths who did the iron-work of the ship. The blacksmiths were David Bladell, of Amesbury; Ezra Merrill, of Salisbury (Point); Nathl. Ring, of Salisbury (Point).

[Copy of heading of bill.]

"MESSRS. BLADELL, MERRILL & RING to Thomas Cushing, DE, To Iron Delivered at sundry times for 36 Gun Ship, between the dates of April 30, 1777, and July 23d, 1778, at which time the frigate was probably completed."

It appears that each smith kept account of his iron used separate, and was so charged the amount delivered him.

"David Bladell's acct.....	21,473 pounds
Ezra Merrill.....	16,257½ "
Nathl. Ring.....	14,123½ "
	50,853 pounds.

"BOSTON, Sept. 16, 1778, Errors excepted.

"FOR THOMAS CUSHING, ESQ., JR JNO. ODIN "

One more relic of the Revolution we feel proud to place on record, showing the patriotism of Salisbury Point in the very earliest period of the struggle for independence, only two days after the memorable battle of Lexington, and their prompt act in aid of the army, on receipt of the news of that first conflict with British troops, in defense of the rights and liberties of the people.

[Copy.]

"SALISBURY, April 21st, 1775.

"Money Recd of Deacon Daniel Merrill to purchase Bread

for the Army.....	25s 5d.
Of Mr. Stephen Merrill.....	47 6
Of Capt. Clark.....	7 0
Of Dea. John Stevens.....	18 0
Of John Hackett.....	23 5
Of Ezra Merrill.....	23 5
Of Arkelus Adams.....	9 0
Of John Webster.....	45 0
Of Moses True.....	50 0
Of Oliver Osgood.....	7 0

(This was sterling or lawful money, which, by old tenor, amounted to £21 0s. 10d. With this, bread was bought, as per document indorsement.)"

There is much incidental and biographical matter historically interesting, but it is the same experience of other towns of New England in the aggregate—hardship, struggle with poverty, sufferings by sickness, and death on the battle-field, and in their homes, which was the common sacrifice of a people determined to be free. We have not the time necessary to give the soul-trying details of this great war, and will here end the brief story attempted by adding that our section of New England, old Essex County towns, in their great endeavor, did nobly for the cause of the nation's independence.

At the close of the war the Point was the business portion of the town, and with peace, prosperity, by industry and enterprise continued with intervals of depression. Our main industry has been ship-building; also considerable has been the commerce in the years past; also the fisheries for years continued profitable, and gave the industries connected therewith prominence; and various industries, the manufacture





of shoes, hats, carriages, etc., have had short seasons, of enterprise and note, but they have not remained a permanent industry here. The only industry holding place since the Revolution is boat-building,—the dory manufacture, commenced by Simeon Lowell, and through his generations, reaching to the present time, consisting of seven firms, manufacturing in the aggregate nearly twenty-five hundred boats annually for the fisheries of New England, British and French provinces. The manufacturing portion of the town, The Mills (so called), has long since taken our place as the enterprising and business portion of the town,

The War of 1812 found our mechanics and seamen ready to fight for "Free trade and sailor's rights," which in the main was a naval warfare, in which our navy made an illustrious record, as also did the private men-of-war—privateers of which there were many, and effectual as a means of shortening if not ending the war.

Since this war, ship-building, for quite a term of years, gave employment to many men of different trades which were necessary in the construction of the ship. The demand for freighting ships of larger tonnage than formerly employed the firm of Keniston & Colby for years in the building of vessels of this class, and the demands of the mackerel fishermen for fishing vessels for quite a number of years was also a source of employment to the mechanics and seamen of the Point. This fishery was for some years a profitable enterprise, and many vessels were built and fitted out by the enterprising men of the village, but for some reason it has been discontinued, as have also many of the former industries that once flourished in this beautiful, crescent-shaped village of the Merrimac—Salisbury Point.

Salisbury Point never entertained the desire to change her name and give up the historic associations which for more than two hundred years clustered in the old homestead of Salisbury. But the Great and General Court, in June 16, 1886, by vote of its members, and by signature of the Governor of Massachusetts, annexed this ancient Salisbury Mills Village and Point, comprising the whole early West Parish of the town, with its industries, and a valuation of upwards of two million dollars, and a population of three thousand people, to the town of Amesbury.

**BIRTHS IN SALISBURY.**—The following is a record of the births recorded in Salisbury from 1637 up to 1641:

Wymond, son of Mr. Tho. Bradbury and Mary, his wife, born 1st of Second Month, 1637.

Samuel, son of Jno. Severans and Abigail, born 19th of Seventh Month, 1637.

Judith, daughter of Mr. Tho. Bradbury and Mary, his wife, born 2d of Eighth Month, 1638.

[I think the above were born before their parents removed to Salisbury—probably recorded by Mr. Bradbury after he became town-clerk.]

Hester, ye daughter of John Sandets and Hester, his wife, born 5th of Seventh Month, 1639.

Abigail, daughter of Willi Allen and Ann, his wife, born 4th of Eleventh Month, 1639.

Jonathon, son of Rich. Singletary and Susana, born 17th of Eleventh Month, 1639.

Mary, daughter of Jno. Dickinson and Mary, born 12th of First Month, 1639.

John, son of Jno. Stevens and Katherine, born 2d of Ninth Month, 1639.

[Land was assigned to Mr. Stevens for a house-lot, which he built upon, and has never been out of the family—still occupied by Samuel Stevens, Esq., as a homestead—short distance south of Cushing's Corner.]

Sarah, daughter of Jarret Hadon and Margerite, born 15th of Eleventh Month, 1639.

Eben, son of John Severanos and Abigail, born 7th of First Month, 1639.

Mary, daughter of Josiah Cobham and Mary, born 25th Sixth Month, 1640.

Thomas, son of Mr. Tho. Bradbury and Mary, his wife, born 23th of Eleventh Month, 1640.

Isaac, son of Anthony Colby and Sussana, born 6th of Fifth Month, 1640.

John, son of Rodger Eastman and Sarah, his wife, born 9th of First Month, 1640.

Elizabeth, daughter of Daniel Lad and Ann, 11th of Tenth Month, 1640.

Thomas, son of Jno. Hoyt and Frances, born 1st of Eleventh Month, 1640.

Gregoric, son of Jno. Hoyt and Frances, born 1st of Eleventh Month, 1640.

[Twins—1st pair.]

Sarah, daughter of Will. Holdred and Isabell, born An. 1640.

Jacob, son of Mr. Wm. Hooke and Elner, born 15th of Seventh Month, 1640.

[The Hook name was once very common; now no male of the name in town.]

Ephraim, son of Mr. Samuel Winsly and Elizabeth, born 15th of Second Month, 1641.

Thomas, son of Tho. Bernard and Helena, his wife, was born 10th of Third Month, 1641.

John, son of Mr. Jno. Hall and Rebecka, born 18th of First Month, 1641.

Rebecka, daughter of John Bagley and ———, was born 24th of Ninth Month, 1641.

Abigail, daughter of Jno. Severanos and Abigail, born 7th of Eleventh Month, 1641.

Enrico, daughter of Ric. Singletary and Susana, his wife, born 7th of Eleventh Month, 1641.

Mary, daughter of Tho. Hauxworth and Mary, born 22d of Second Month, 1641.

Elizabeth, daughter of Jno. Stevens and Katherine, born 7th of First Month, 1641.

Ann, daughter of Mr. Samuel Dudley and Mary, born 16th of Eighth Month, 1641.

Mary, daughter of Tho. Carter and Mary, born 6th of Eighth Month, 1641.

Mary, daughter of Ralph Blasdale and Elizabeth, born 5th of First Month, 1641.

[Ralph Blasdale was employed to ring the bell on the church and was also keeper of the "Ordinary."]

John, son of Jno. Bayly, born 18th of Third Month, 1643.

Abigail, daughter of Jno. Severanos and Abigail, born 25th of Third Month, 1643.

John, son of Willi. Huntingdon and Joanna, born August, An. 1643.

Thomas, son of Wm. Sargent and Elizabeth, born 11th of Fourth Month, 1643.

Rebecka, daughter of Wm. Holdred and Isabell, born 20th of Fourth Month, 1643.

Martha, daughter of Josia Cobham, and Mary, born 3d of Fifth Month, 1643.

Hannah, daughter of Rich. Currier and Ann, his wife, born 8th of Fifth Month, 1643.

Moses, son of Mr. Wm. Worcester and Sarah, born 10th of Ninth Month, 1643.

Tho., son of Tho. Carter and Mary, born An. 1643.

Hannah, daughter of Wm. Barnes and Rachel, born 25th of Eleventh Month, 1644.

["Barn's Island," so-called to this day, is a woody island, in the Tide meadows, a short distance from Town Creek, owned by Wm. Barnes.]



Hannah, daughter of Geo. Martyn and Hannah, born 1st of Twelfth Month, 1643.

John, son of Luke Heard and Sarah, born 4th of Twelfth Month, 1643. Sarah, daughter of Robert Pike, born 24th of Twelfth Month, 1641.

Mary, daughter of Robert Pike, born 22d of Twelfth Month, 1643.

Abigail, daughter of Henry Brown and Abigail, born 23d of Twelfth Month, 1643.

Rebecca, daughter of Anthony Colby, 11th of First Month, 1643.

Fourteen births are recorded in 1644. Fifteen births are recorded in 1645.

John, son of John Sanders and Hester, his wife, born 1st of Fifth Month, 1641.

Sarah, daughter of Mr. Wm. Worcester and Sarah, his wife, born 4th of Second Month, 1641.

Mary, daughter of Wm. Holdred and Isabella, his wife, born 22d of Second Month, 1641.

John, son of Mr. Christopher Batt and Ann, born 4th of First Month, 1641.

John, son of John Harrison and Grace, born 26th of Fourth Month, 1642.

Josiah, son of Josiah Cobham and Mary, born 12th of Second Month, 1642.

Nathaniel, son of Henry Brown and Abigail, his wife, 30th of Fourth Month, 1642.

Hannah, daughter of Willi Allin and Ann, born 17th of Fourth Month, 1642.

Daniel, son of Daniel Lad and Ann, born 26th of Seventh Month, 1642.

Timothy, son of Mr. Wm. Worcester and Sarah, born 14th of Third Month, 1642.

John, son of John Dickison and Mary, born 26th of Eighth Month, 1642.

Ruth, daughter of John Sanders and Hester, born 16th of Tenth Month, 1642.

Elizabeth, daughter of John Clough and Jane, 16th of Tenth Month, 1642.

Nathaniel, son of Thomas Barnard and Hellen, born 15th of Eleventh Month, 1642.

Elizabeth, daughter of John Stevens and Kathrine, born 4th of Twelfth Month, 1642.

Elizabeth, daughter of Wm. Partridge and Ann, born 14th of Twelfth Month, 1642.

Paul and Barnabas, sons of Christopher Batt and Ann, his wife, born 16th of Twelfth Month, 1642.

Elizabeth, daughter of John Hoyt and Francis, born 23d of Twelfth Month, 1642.

John, son of John Hsley and Sarah, born ye First Month, 1642.

John, son of Robert Barnard, was born 2d of First Month, 1643.

Mary, daughter of Mr. Thomas Bradbury and Mary, born 17th of First Month, 1642.

Nathaniel, son of Roger Easman and Sarah, born 18th of Third Month, 1643.

Town Officers.—7th of Ninth Month, 1649, after grants of land were recorded, the following is added: "All ye above said grants were confirmed by Mr. Christopher Batt, Mr. Saml Winsley, Mr. Sam Hall, Tho. Bradbury and Isaac Buswell according to the order of ye Towne provided in that behalf."

25th of First Month, 1641, the same statement is made.

10th of Fifth Month, 1641, Samuel Dudley, John Sanders, Mr. Batt, Mr. Munday and Thomas Macie appointed to set off land as granted.

4th of Fifth Month, 1642, Mr. John Hall, Thomas Bradbury, Thomas Macie and Robert Pike shall make the rate, etc. Sam Dudley, Richard Wells, John Sanders, John Severance and John Harrison to make the rate for Mr. Worcester.

19th of Tenth Month, 1642, Samuel Dudley, Mr. Worster, Mr. Batt, John Sanders, Robert Pike, Josiah Cobbitt and John Severance to have full power until 20th of First Month next ensuing, to order all things concerning the house lots. John Hall, Henry Munday, Thomas Macie and Thomas Bradbury power to make a rate for debts, etc. Also ordered that Mr. William Worster, Samuel Dudley, John Sanders, Samuel Winsley, Robert Pike, Josiah Cobbitt and John Severance to distribute all lands with power to lay out streets, etc.

26th of Twelfth Month, 1642, Samuel Dudley, John Hall, Mr. Batt, Thomas Macie, John Sanders, Robert Pike and Thomas Bradbury were appointed to order all town affairs.

29th of First Month, 1643, Richard North appointed town cryer.

4th of Third Month, 1643, ordered that seven men—that is to say, Mr. Batt, John Severance, Tho. Macy, Mr. John Hall, Robert Pike, John Sanders and Thomas Bradbury—shall have full power to order all the affairs of the town, excepting viewing out of lands, until the 1st of Sixth Month, next ensuing—they or any five of them.

15th of Eleventh Month, 1643, grants of land confirmed by Christopher Batt, Sam Winsley, Sam Hall, Thomas Bradbury and Isaac Buswell.

19th of Twelfth Month, 1643, Sam Dudley and Sam Winsley chosen deputies for the next General Court at Boston.

18th Second Month, 1641, Josiah Cobham chosen grand jurymen for the year ensuing. At the same meeting ordered that Mr. Dudley, Tho. Bradbury, Robert Pike, Mr. Munday and Isaac Buswell shall have full power to order all the affairs of the town, except about lands, until the 1st day of November next.

13th of Third Month, 1644, Richard Dummer, of Newbury, was chosen deputy for the town of Salisbury for the next General Court of election.

6th of Eleventh Month, 1644, Sam Winsley, John Severance and John Hsley shall lay out the highway that goeth by Goodman Moyce's and to the comen towards the Little River, to be laid five rods broad where may be most commodious for the town's use.

20th of Eleventh Month, 1641, at a meeting of the freemen, it was ordered that these five men, viz.: Mr. Sam Winsley, John Sanders, John Hsley, John Stevens and John Hsley, shall have power to dispose of all the town's business, excepting giving of lands, until the 1st day of ye Third Month.

8th of Second Month, 1645, Jarrret Hadden was chosen grand jurymen for the year ensuing.

1st of Third Month, 1645, Sam Winsley was chosen deputy for ye court of election.

2d of Eleventh Month, 1645, the "Clarke" allowed a penny for every grant of land recorded.

27th of Eleventh Month, 1645, the "5" men elected were Sam Dudley, Christopher Batt, Henry Munday, Edmund French and John Eaton.

13th of Second Month, 1645, John Eaton chosen grand jurymen.

27th of Eleventh Month, 1646, "7" men chosen for one year—Samuel Dudley, Lieut. Pike, Tho. Bradbury, Raffe Blesdale, Tho. Macy, Sargt. Challice and Mr. Sam Winsley.

2d of Twelfth Month, 1647, the "6" men elected were Mr. Batt, Tho. Bradbury, Edward French, Isaac Buswell and Richard Wells.

10th of Second Month, 1648, Richard Munday was added to the townsmen for rating estates according to court order.

17th of Sixth Month, 1648, John Stevens appointed tax collector by the "7" men.

19th of Eighth Month, 1648, Sam Dudley, Christopher Batt, Tho. Bradbury, Tho. Macy and Henry Ambrose chosen to order prudential affairs.

18th of Tenth Month, 1648, Mr. Munday, Henry Ambrose, John Severance, John Stevens and Tho. Macy chosen grand jurymen.

11th of First Month, 1649, Lieut. Pike, Isaac Buswell, Richard Wells, Edward French and Josiah Cobham chosen jurors for county court to be holden at Salisbury.

2d of Ninth Month, 1649, Sam Hall, Geo. Goldwyer, Richard North, Ant. Coleby and Tho. Barnett chosen to serve upon the grand jury.

7th of Eleventh Month, 1649, prudential men elected were Sam Hall, Richard Wells, Edward French, Lieut. Pike and Isaac Buswell.

20th of Eleventh Month, 1650, prudential men were Tho. Bradbury, Josiah Cobham, John Severance, Geo. Goldwyer and Jno. Clough.

16th of Second Month, 1651, Tho. Bradbury was chosen deputy for the year ensuing.

19th of Eleventh Month, 1651, prudential men were Edward French, Isaac Buswell, Richard Wells, Ant. Colby and Phillip Challice. Then John Stevens added in room of Phillip Challice and Willi Partridge in room of Richard Wells. Tho. Bradbury, town clerk.

1st of Twelfth Month, 1652, prudential men, Thos. Bradbury, Thos. Macy, John Hsley, Andrew Greely and John Gyll.

13th of Twelfth Month, 1653, Samuel Winsley, Samuel Hall, Richard Wells, John Severance and John Clough chosen prudential men.

29th of Eleventh Month, 1654, Thos. Bradbury was chosen moderator; Samuel Hall, John Severance, Jos. Cobham, George Goldwyer and John Clough elected prudential men.

11th of Twelfth Month, 1655, Robert Pike, Edward French, Isaac Buswell, Andrew Greely and Phillip Wollidg, prudential men.

1747, March 10th, town clerk, Caleb Cushing, Jr.; selectmen, Timothy Townsend, Reuben Morrill and Winthrop True.





1747, March 8th, town clerk, Caleb Cushing, Jr.; selectmen, Elias Pike, Philip Rowell, Samuel Smith, John Buswell and Nathaniel Fitts.

1748-49, March 14th, Caleb Cushing elected town clerk; selectmen, Captain Pike, Moses Merrill, Jr., and Philip Rowell.

1749, March 8th, town clerk, Caleb Cushing; selectman, Captain Pike, Jonathan Stevens, Ebenezer Morrill, Philip Rowell and Winthrop True.

1750, March 12th, town clerk, Caleb Cushing; selectmen, Caleb Cushing, Moses Merrill, Jr., and Philip Rowell.

1752, March 10th, town clerk, Caleb Cushing; selectmen, Captain Elias Pike, Philip Rowell, Richard Hackitt, Abraham Morrill and Benjamin Morrill.

1753, March 13th, town clerk, Caleb Cushing; selectmen, Benjamin Morrill, Henry Eaton and Richard Hackitt.

1754, March 12th, Caleb Cushing was chosen town clerk; selectmen, Benjamin Morrill, Richard Hackitt and Henry Eaton.

1754, May 21st, Caleb Cushing was chosen representative to General Court.

1755, March 11th, Winthrop True, town clerk; for selectmen, Richard Hackitt, Henry Eaton and John Eastman.

1755, May 19th, for representative, Abraham Morrill.

1756, March 9th, town clerk, Winthrop True; selectmen, Richard Hackitt, John Eastman and Henry Eaton. May 18th, Caleb Cushing elected representative.

1757, March 8th, town clerk, Winthrop True; selectmen, John Eastman, Winthrop True and Stephen Merrill. May 18th, representative, Caleb Cushing.

1758, March, town clerk, Winthrop True; selectmen, Henry Eaton, Winthrop True and Richard Hackitt. May 23d, representative, Caleb Cushing.

1759, March, town clerk, Winthrop True; selectmen, Winthrop True, Henry Eaton and Richard Hackitt. May 22d, representative, Caleb Cushing.

1760, March 11th, town clerk, Winthrop True; selectmen, Stephen Merrill, Richard Hackitt and Henry Eaton. May 11th, representative, Caleb Cushing.

1761, March 10th, town clerk, Winthrop True; selectmen, Winthrop True, Lieutenant Moses Pike and John Eastman. May 19th, representative, Caleb Cushing.

1762, Winthrop True, town clerk; Winthrop True, Moses Pike and Wm. Brown, selectmen; Caleb Cushing, representative.

1763, Winthrop True, town clerk; Philip Rowell, Moses Pike and Winthrop True, selectmen; Caleb Cushing, representative.

1764, Winthrop True, town clerk; Winthrop True, Philip Rowell and Moses Pike, selectmen; Caleb Cushing, representative.

1765, Winthrop True, town clerk; Winthrop True, Moses Pike and Wm. Brown, selectmen; Caleb Cushing, representative.

1766, Winthrop True, town clerk; Winthrop True, Moses Pike and Wm. Brown, selectmen; Caleb Cushing, representative.

1767, Winthrop True, town clerk; Daniel Morrill, Daniel Fitts and Winthrop True, selectmen; Caleb Cushing, representative.

1768, Winthrop True, town clerk; Winthrop True, Daniel Fitts and Deacon Daniel Morrill, selectmen; Capt. Nathaniel Currier, representative.

1769, Winthrop True, town clerk; Deacon Daniel Morrill, Lemuel Stevens and Daniel Moody, selectmen; Caleb Cushing, representative.

1770, Winthrop True, town clerk; Winthrop True, John Pike, Jr., and Daniel Morrill, selectmen; Caleb Cushing, representative.

1771, Winthrop True, town clerk; Henry Morrill, Daniel Moody and Lemuel Stevens, selectmen; Caleb Cushing, representative.

1772, Winthrop True, town clerk; Henry Eaton, Aaron Clough, Jr., and Henry Morrill, selectmen; Samuel Smith, representative.

1773, Winthrop True, town clerk; Daniel Moody, Aaron Clough, Jr., and Henry Morrill, selectmen; Samuel Smith, representative.

1774, Winthrop True, town clerk; Daniel Moody, Henry Morrill and Aaron Clough, Jr., selectmen; Samuel Smith, representative.

1775, Winthrop True, town clerk; Henry Morrill, Daniel Moody and Aaron Clough, Jr., selectmen; Nathaniel Currier, representative.

1776, Benjamin Evans, town clerk; Aaron Clough, Jr., Henry Morrill and Daniel Moody, selectmen; Nathaniel Currier, representative.

1777, Daniel Morrill, town clerk; Daniel Moody, Dr. Samuel Nye and Aaron Clough, Jr., selectmen; Joseph Page, representative.

1778, Daniel Morrill, town clerk; Joseph Fitts, Benj. Evans and Daniel Morrill, selectmen; Joseph Page, representative.

1779, Daniel Morrill, town clerk; Daniel Morrill, Benj. Evans and Daniel Moody, selectmen; Joseph Page, representative.

1780, Benj. Evans, town clerk; Daniel Moody, Benj. Evans and Daniel Morrill, selectmen; Joseph Page, representative.

1781, Benj. Evans, town clerk; Daniel Moody, Benj. Evans and Daniel Morrill, selectmen; Ezekiel Evans, representative.

1782, Benj. Evans, town clerk; Joseph Page, Daniel Moody and Daniel Morrill, selectmen; Benj. Evans, representative.

1783, Benj. Evans, town clerk; Daniel Moody, Joseph Page and Ezekiel Morrill, selectmen; Benj. Evans, representative.

1784, Benj. Evans, town clerk; Daniel Moody, Ezekiel Morrill and Aaron Clough, selectmen; Benj. Evans, representative.

1785, Benj. Evans, town clerk; Joseph Fitts, Belcher Dole and Moses Rowell, selectmen; Joseph Page, representative.

1786, Samuel Nye, town clerk; Joseph Fitts, Belcher Dole and Moses Rowell, selectmen; Joseph March, representative.

1787, Samuel Nye, town clerk; Daniel Moody, Moses True and Moses Rowell, selectmen; Joseph March, representative.

1788, Benj. Evans, town clerk; Daniel Moody, Moses True and Moses Rowell, selectmen; Joseph March, representative.

1789, Benj. Evans, town clerk; Daniel Moody, Moses True and Ezekiel Morrill, selectmen; Ezekiel Morrill, representative.

1790, Benj. Evans, town clerk; Daniel Moody, Moses True and Moses Rowell, selectmen; Joseph Page, representative.

1791, Benj. Evans, town clerk; Henry Moody, Ezekiel Evans and Moses Rowell, selectmen; Joseph Page, representative.

1792, Benj. Evans, town clerk; Joseph Fitts, Moses True and Moses Rowell, selectmen; Joseph Page (died this year), representative.

1793, Benj. Evans, town clerk; Joseph Fitts, Moses True and Moses Rowell, selectmen; Jacob Brown, representative.

1794, Benj. Evans, town clerk; Aaron Clough, Joseph Fitts and Jacob Brown, selectmen; Jacob Brown, representative.

1795, Benj. Evans, town clerk; Joseph Fitts, Aaron Clough and Joshua Follansbee, selectmen; Joshua Follansbee, representative.

1796, Benj. Evans, town clerk; Joseph Fitts, Samuel Nye and Joshua Follansbee, selectmen; Joshua Follansbee, representative.

1797, Benj. Evans, town clerk; Joseph Fitts, Samuel Nye and Joshua Follansbee, selectmen; Joshua Follansbee, representative.

1798, Benj. Evans, town clerk; Josiah French, Samuel Nye and Joshua Follansbee, selectmen; Joshua Follansbee, representative.

1799, Benj. Evans, town clerk; Josiah French, Samuel Nye and Jacob Brown, selectmen; Joshua Follansbee, representative.

1800, Benj. Evans, town clerk; Josiah French, Samuel Nye and Jacob Brown, selectmen; Samuel March, representative.

1801, Benj. Evans, town clerk; Josiah French, Samuel Nye and Jacob Brown, selectmen; Samuel March, representative.

1802, Benj. Evans, town clerk; Joseph Fitts, Capt. Enoch Collins and Lieut. Joshua Follansbee, selectmen; Jacob Brown, representative.

1803, Benj. Evans, town clerk; Jonathan Morrill, Samuel Nye and Josiah French, selectmen; Jonathan Webster, representative.

1804, Benj. Evans, town clerk; Josiah French, Samuel Nye and John Morrill, selectmen; Jonathan Webster, representative.

1805, Benj. Evans, town clerk; Josiah French, Samuel Nye and John Morrill, selectmen; Jonathan Webster, representative.

1806, Benj. Evans, town clerk; Josiah French, Samuel Nye and John Morrill, selectmen; Jonathan Morrill, representative.

1807, Benj. Evans, town clerk; Jabez True, Seth Clark and Amos Morrill, selectmen; Jonathan Morrill and Jonathan Webster, representatives.

1808, Benj. Evans and John Flanders, town clerks; Jabez True, Seth Clark and Amos Morrill, selectmen; representative, no record.

1809, John Flanders, town clerk; Jabez True, Seth Clark and Amos Morrill, selectmen; Col. Jonathan Smith, representative.

1810, Elijah Wadleigh, town clerk; Jabez True, Seth Clark and Amos Morrill, selectmen; Amos Morrill, representative.

1811, Elijah Wadleigh, town clerk; Jabez True, Seth Clark and Amos Morrill, selectmen; Amos Morrill, representative.

1812, Edward Dorr, town clerk; Jabez True, Seth Clark and Amos Morrill, selectmen; Samuel March and Jonathan Smith, representatives.

1813, Edward Dorr, town clerk; Moses Deal, Jr., Seth Clark and Amos Morrill, selectmen; Samuel March and Jonathan Smith, representatives.

1814, Edward Dorr, town clerk; Moses Deal, Jr., Seth Clark and Amos Morrill, selectmen; Samuel March, representative.

1815, Joseph Nye, town clerk; Samuel March, Seth Clark and Amos Morrill, selectmen; Samuel March, representative.

1816, Joseph Nye, town clerk; Samuel March, Seth Clark and Amos Morrill, selectmen; Ephraim Morrill, representative.



1817. Joseph Nye, town clerk; Samuel Eaton, Jr., Seth Clark and Amos Morrill, selectmen; Ephraim Morrill, representative.
1818. Joseph Nye, town clerk; Samuel Eaton, Jr., Seth Clark and Amos Morrill, selectmen; Samuel March, representative.
1819. Joseph Nye, town clerk; Samuel Eaton, Jr., Seth Clark and Amos Morrill, selectmen; Ephraim Morrill, representative.
1820. Joseph Wadleigh, town clerk; Samuel Eaton, Jr., Seth Clark and Amos Morrill, selectmen; Ephraim Morrill, representative.
1821. Joseph Wadleigh, town clerk; Samuel Eaton, Jr., Benj. Evans and Amos Morrill, selectmen; Samuel March, representative.
1822. Joseph Wadleigh, town clerk; Samuel Eaton, Jr., Benj. Evans and Amos Morrill, selectmen; Ephraim Morrill, representative.
1823. Joseph Wadleigh, town clerk; Samuel Eaton, Jr., Benj. Evans and Amos Morrill, selectmen; Ephraim Morrill, representative.
1824. Joseph Wadleigh, town clerk; Samuel Eaton, Jr., Daniel Webster and Amos Morrill, selectmen; none voted for.
1825. Joseph Wadleigh, town clerk; Samuel Eaton, Jr., Benj. Evans and Amos Morrill, selectmen; Samuel March, representative.
1826. Joseph Wadleigh, town clerk; Samuel Eaton, Jr., Joseph Wadleigh and Amos Morrill, selectmen; Dudley Evans, representative.
1827. Joseph Wadleigh, town clerk; Capt. Samuel Eaton, Dudley Evans and Amos Morrill, selectmen; Dudley Evans, representative.
1828. Joseph Wadleigh, town clerk; Henry M. Brown, Azor O. Webster and Dudley Evans, selectmen; representative, none voted for.
1829. John Colby, town clerk; Henry M. Brown, Azor O. Webster and Elias French, selectmen; Daniel Blasdell and Benj. W. Lowell, representatives.
1830. John Colby, town clerk; Elias French, Azor O. Webster and Henry M. Brown, selectmen; representatives, none voted for.
1831. John Colby, town clerk; Reuben Evans, Dudley Evans and Samuel Eaton, selectmen; Reuben Evans, John Colby and Cyrus Dearborn, representatives.
1832. John Colby, town clerk; Samuel Eaton, Wm. O. Mills and Henry M. Brown, selectmen; Reuben Evans, Benj. Bachelor and Elias French, representatives.
1833. John Colby, town clerk; Samuel Eaton, Wm. O. Mills and Henry M. Brown, selectmen; Jacob Morrill, Benj. Bachelor and Elias French, representatives.
1834. John Colby, town clerk; Henry M. Brown, Azor O. Webster and Moses True, selectmen; Henry M. Brown, representative.
1835. John Colby, town clerk; Henry M. Brown, Azor O. Webster and Moses True, selectmen; Henry M. Brown, John Morrill and True G. Graves, representatives.
1836. Azor O. Webster, town clerk; Henry M. Brown, Enoch Fowler and Moses True, selectmen; Angier M. Morrill, Enoch Fowler and True G. Graves, representatives.
1837. Azor O. Webster, town clerk; Henry M. Brown, Enoch Fowler and Samuel Eaton, selectmen; Nathaniel George, representative.
1838. Azor O. Webster, town clerk; Josiah B. Gale, Robert Fowler, Jr., and Wm. M. Pettengill, selectmen; Nathaniel George and John Morrill, representatives.
1839. Azor O. Webster, town clerk; Henry M. Brown, Robert Fowler, Jr., and Wm. M. Pettengill, selectmen; Henry M. Brown, representative.
1840. Azor O. Webster, town clerk; Henry M. Brown, John Evans and Wm. M. Pettengill, selectmen; John Evans, representative.
1841. Azor O. Webster, town clerk; Timothy P. Morrill, John Evans and Wm. M. Pettengill, selectmen; representative, none voted for.
1842. Azor O. Webster, town clerk; Olin Boardman, Dudley Evans and Elias French, selectmen; Aaron Morrill, representative.
1843. Azor O. Webster, town clerk; Reuben Evans, Wm. H. Bagley and Elias French, selectmen; representative, none chosen.
1844. Azor O. Webster, town clerk; Timothy P. Morrill, John Morrill (3d) and Elias French, selectmen; Benj. Sawyer, representative.
1845. Azor O. Webster, town clerk; Timothy P. Morrill, Wm. H. Bagley and Samuel Stevens, selectmen; Benj. Sawyer, representative.
1846. Azor O. Webster, town clerk; Timothy P. Morrill, Wm. H. Bagley and Samuel Stevens, selectmen; representative, no choice.
1847. Azor O. Webster, town clerk; Timothy P. Morrill, Wm. H. Bagley and Israel Morrill, selectmen; Joshua M. Pike, Jr., representative.
1848. Azor O. Webster, town clerk; Thomas J. Clark, Daniel Webster, Jr., and Samuel Stevens, selectmen; Joshua M. Pike, Jr., representative.
1849. Azor O. Webster, town clerk; Thomas J. Clark, Daniel Webster and Samuel Stevens, selectmen; no choice for representative.
1850. Azor O. Webster, town clerk; Thomas J. Clark, Daniel Webster and Samuel Stevens, selectmen; John Q. Evans, representative.
1851. Azor O. Webster, town clerk; Thomas J. Clark, Daniel Webster and Cyrus Dearborn, Jr., selectmen; no choice for representative.
1852. Azor O. Webster, town clerk; Thomas J. Clark, Daniel Webster and Cyrus Dearborn, Jr., selectmen; Timothy P. Morrill, representative.
1853. Azor O. Webster, town clerk; Thomas J. Clark, Daniel Webster and Cyrus Dearborn, Jr., selectmen; Joseph S. Colby, representative.
1854. Azor O. Webster, town clerk; Thomas J. Clark, Charles O. Stearns and Cyrus Dearborn, Jr., selectmen; Robert Rich, representative.
1855. Azor O. Webster, town clerk; Ebenezer Tucker, Wm. H. Bagley and Cyrus Dearborn, Jr., selectmen; Wm. H. Bagley, representative.
1856. Azor O. Webster, town clerk; Reuben Evans, Wm. H. Bagley and Cyrus Dearborn, Jr., selectmen; Wm. H. B. Currier, representative.
1857. Azor A. Webster, town clerk; Thomas J. Clark, John Q. Evans and Moses T. Cilley, selectmen; Robert W. Patten and Benj. Evans, representatives, District No. 1.
1858. Azor O. Webster, town clerk; Thomas J. Clark, Charles O. Stearns and Moses T. Cilley, selectmen; Winthrop O. Evans, Newburyport, and E. M. Morse, Amesbury, representatives.
1859. Azor O. Webster, Jr., town clerk; Thomas J. Clark, Charles O. Stearns and John True, selectmen; E. G. Colby and T. S. Robinson, representatives.
1860. Azor O. Webster, Jr., town clerk; T. J. Clark, B. E. Fifield and John True, selectmen.
1861. Azor O. Webster, Jr., town clerk; T. J. Clark, B. E. Fifield and John True, selectmen.
1862. Azor O. Webster, Jr., town clerk; T. J. Clark, B. E. Fifield and Wm. S. Pettengill, selectmen.
1863. Azor O. Webster, Jr., town clerk; T. J. Clark, B. E. Fifield and Moses K. Pike, selectmen.
1864. Azor O. Webster, Jr., town clerk; T. J. Clark, B. E. Fifield and Wm. S. Pettengill, selectmen.
1865. Azor O. Webster, Jr., town clerk; T. J. Clark, B. E. Fifield and Streeter Evans, selectmen.
- 1866 to 1874. Samuel J. Brown, town clerk; W. H. B. Currier, B. E. Fifield and J. M. Eaton, selectmen.
1875. Samuel J. Brown, town clerk; J. N. Clark, B. E. Fifield and J. M. Eaton, selectmen.
1876. Samuel J. Brown, town clerk; J. N. Clark, B. E. Fifield and J. M. Eaton, selectmen.
1877. Samuel J. Brown, town clerk; W. H. B. Currier, Moses G. Wilson and J. M. Eaton, selectmen.
1878. Samuel J. Brown, town clerk; W. H. B. Currier, John W. Sanborn and J. M. Eaton, selectmen.
1879. Samuel J. Brown, town clerk; W. H. B. Currier, J. W. Sanborn and J. M. Eaton, selectmen.
1880. Samuel J. Brown, town clerk; W. H. B. Currier, John Sanborn and J. M. Eaton, selectmen.
1881. Samuel J. Brown, town clerk; W. H. B. Currier, W. H. Blaisdel and J. M. Eaton, selectmen.
1882. Samuel J. Brown, town clerk; Daniel Webster, George H. Morrill and J. M. Eaton, selectmen.
1883. Samuel J. Brown, town clerk; Daniel Webster, George H. Morrill and J. M. Eaton, selectmen.
1884. Samuel J. Brown, town clerk; Daniel Webster, George H. Morrill and J. M. Eaton, selectmen.
1885. Samuel J. Brown, town clerk; Daniel Webster, George H. Morrill and J. M. Eaton, selectmen.
1886. Samuel J. Brown, town clerk; W. H. B. Currier, John F. Currier and J. M. Eaton, selectmen.

**SALISBURY SOLDIERS IN THE REBELLION.**—The town preserved its ancient historic record by arming and equipping soldiers to preserve us a nation, as the following list will show:

John F. Goodwin, private, 28th Mass. Regt.  
 James Goodwin, Jr., private, 28th Mass. Regt.; died of wounds.  
 Robert Burnett, Jr., corporal, 40th N. Y. Regt.; killed in battle.  
 Dudley E. Gale, private, 3d Cav.; served full term, three years.  
 George H. Morrill, captain, 17th Mass. Regt.; disch., disability.  
 John B. Mansfield, private, 40th N. Y. Regt.; died of disease.  
 Nathaniel Fifield, corporal, 40th N. Y. Regt.  
 Jonathan E. Blaisdel, private, 24th Mass. Regt.; re-enlisted.





William N. Hoyt, private, 40th N. Y. Regt.; served three years.  
 John S. Follart, private, 24th Mass. Regt.; re-enlisted.  
 Alner Guild, private, 40th N. Y. Regt.; served three years.  
 Edwin A. Moulton, corporal, 17th Mass. Regt.; re-enlisted.  
 George A. Campbell, private, 24th Mass. Regt.; re-enlisted 4th Cav.;  
 disch., disability; died July 1864.

Cyrus E. Kendrick, private, 17th Mass. Regt.; disch.; re-enlisted 2d H. A.

John Thorn, corporal, 24th Mass. Regt.; disch. and re-enlisted.  
 George H. Lundburg, private, 17th Mass. Regt.; served three years.  
 Joseph Colby, private, 12th Mass. Regt.; was in four rebel prisons;  
 served three years.

Thomas Hessian, private, 28th Mass. Regt.; disch., disability.  
 Charles L. Ramsdell, private, 17th Mass. Regt.; disch., disability;  
 also 2d Mass. H. A.

George O. Morrill, private, 40th N. Y. Regt.; disch., disability.  
 J. Plummer Cammett, private, 40th N. Y. Regt.; disch., disability.  
 William Shaw, private, 17th Mass. Regt.; disch.; re-enlisted 2d H. A.  
 John B. Allen, private, 40th N. Y. Regt.; served three years.  
 John G. Morrill, bugler, 40th N. Y. Regt.; disch. and re-enlisted.  
 Stephen C. Pearson, private, 40th N. Y. Regt.; died Andersonville.  
 Asa E. Perkins, private, 40th N. Y. Regt.; died of disease.  
 Albert D. Bailey, private, 40th N. Y. Regt.; served three years.  
 Simon F. Blake, 1st sergt., 17th Mass. Regt.; disch., disability.  
 William O. Coffin, private, 17th Mass. Regt.; disch., disability, first  
 time; re-enlisted 2d H. A.; died of disease.

George P. True, private, 40th N. Y. Regt.; disch., disability.  
 M. Webster Osgood, private, 40th N. Y. Regt.; served three years.  
 James O. Carruthers, 5th sergt., 28th Mass. Regt.; pro. to 1st sergt.  
 and lieutenant.

Timothy Osgood, private, 10th Illinois Regt.  
 Andrew J. Wadleigh, flag sergt., 40th N. Y. Regt.; served three  
 years.

Henry K. Wadleigh, private, 40th N. Y. Regt.; served three years.  
 Timothy Hessian, private, 24th Mass. Regt.  
 Henry M. Brown, 1st sergt., 40th N. Y. Regt.; disch., disability.  
 John J. Brown, private, 17th Mass. Regt.; died of disease.  
 John B. Morrill, private, 40th N. Y. Regt.; disch., disability.  
 Thomas B. Wiley, corporal, 22d Mass. Regt.; disch. and re-enlisted.  
 Jeremiah A. Greely, captain, 17th Mass. Regt. and 2d H. A.; captain  
 Co. M, 2d H. A.

Theophilus Sanborn, corporal, 17th Mass. Regt.; re-enlisted; died in  
 rebel prison.

James M. Allen, 2d sergt., 22d Mass. Regt.; disch. and re-enlisted in  
 32d Regt.

John Cowen, sergt., 17th Mass. Regt.; disch. and re-enlisted.  
 Charles E. Flanders, private, 17th Mass. Regt.; disch. and re-en-  
 listed.

Joseph A. Collins, captain's orderly, 24th Mass. Regt.; served three  
 years.

Enoch Collins, private, 40th N. Y. Regt.  
 John Bladell, private, 24th Mass. Regt.; disch.; re-enlisted; died of  
 disease.

Charles T. Moulton, private, 24th Mass. Regt.; died of disease.  
 George W. Morrill, private, 24th Mass. Regt.; disch., disability.  
 David French, private, 24th Mass. Regt.; died of disease.  
 George W. Carr, private, 40th N. Y. Regt.; disch.; re-enlisted;  
 wounded; died of disease.

George A. Morrill, corporal, 40th N. Y. Regt.; disch., disability.  
 Simon H. Davenport, corporal, 40th N. Y. Regt.; wounded and disch.;  
 lost left arm by gunshot.

George H. Barnard, private, 24th Mass. Regt.  
 Enoch S. Dow, private, 40th N. Y. Regt.; disch. and re-enlisted, and  
 died of wounds November, 1864.

George W. Dow, private, 3d N. H. Regt.; disch., disability.  
 William H. Knight, sergt., 40th N. Y. Regt.; disch., disability.  
 William H. Paisley, private, 17th Mass. Regt.; died Andersonville.  
 Alonzo Falls, corporal, 23d Mass. Regt.; disch. and re-enlisted.  
 William B. Hammond, private, 24th Mass. Regt.

Charles E. Osgood, sergt., 14th Mass. Regt.; disch. by reason of pro-  
 motion; wounded; prisoner in Libby Prison; paroled and disch.  
 Warren F. Osgood, corporal, 16th Mass. Regt.; wounded; trans. to  
 Invalid Corps and disch. at exp. of service.

Mansfield P. Hatch, musician, 26th Mass. Regt.  
 Lowell M. Dow, corporal, 3d N. H. Regt.; disch., exp. of service; now  
 at home.

Napoleon T. D. Shehan, private, 40th N. Y. Regt.

Jabez S. Jones, private, 9th N. H. Regt.; re-enlisted 50th Mass. Regt.;  
 wounded and taken prisoner; died in prison.

George W. Morrill, private, 11th Mass. Regt.  
 William Nicholson, private, 28th Mass. Regt.  
 C. A. J. Appleton, private, 1st Lt. Batt.  
 Joseph Carr, private, 9th Mass. Regt.  
 David E. Blackstock, private, 40th N. Y. Regt.; re-enlisted and disch.;  
 three years; wounded in battle.

John Moundorf, private, 40th Mass. Regt.  
 Patrick Higgin, private, 40th Mass. Regt.; disch., disability.  
 Jacob C. Bagley, sergt., 40th Mass. Regt.; died of wounds.  
 Newell Frost, private, 40th Mass. Regt.; died of disease in S. C.  
 Charles R. Colby, private, 40th Mass. Regt.; disch., disability.  
 James H. Campbell, private, 40th Mass. Regt.; disch., disability.  
 Charles Lehman, private, 40th Mass. Regt.; disch., disability.  
 Moses N. Bartlett, private, 40th Mass. Regt.; disch., disability.  
 James Kelly, private, 40th Mass. Regt.; disch., disability.  
 George H. Evans, orderly, 40th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.  
 Timothy Driscoll, private, 17th Mass. Regt.; disch., disability.  
 John N. Pike, private, 40th Mass. Regt.; disch., disability.  
 William Schonhutte, private, 40th Mass. Regt.; now at home.  
 Frederic G. Storey, private, 40th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of ser-  
 vice.

William H. Dow, private, 40th Mass. Regt.; died of disease in S. C.  
 George E. Flanders, private, 40th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of ser-  
 vice.

Charles H. Perry, private, 40th Mass. Regt.; disch. June, 1865, exp.  
 of service; wounded May 16, 1864.

Duncan Johnston, private, 40th Mass. Regt.; died in hospital.

Walter W. Flanders, private, 40th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of ser-  
 vice; wounded.

Thomas Exley, private, 40th Mass. Regt.

John C. Berry, private, 40th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.

Felix D. Perry, 2d sergt., 32d Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.

Francis B. Colby, private, 14th Mass. Regt.; died in rebel prison.

James Dolan, private, 17th Mass. Regt.

Dennis Lynskey, private, 17th Mass. Regt.; disch., disability.

Job Booth, private, 17th Mass. Regt.; died of wounds.

Joseph L. Smiley, private, 32d Mass. Regt.; died of wounds.

Timothy Donovan, private, 40th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of ser-  
 vice.

J. Russell Wells, private, 17th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service;  
 broke left arm.

James Barry, private, 17th Mass. Regt.; disch., disability.

John Davison, private, 14th Mass. Regt.

Frederick E. Lowell, sergt., 2d lieutenant, 1st lieutenant, 40th Mass. Regt.  
 disch., disability.

Nathaniel O. Swett, private, 24th Mass. Regt.; died of wounds.

Francis E. Cammett, corporal, 33d Mass. Regt.; killed in battle.

Charles A. West, private, 40th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.

Charles T. Rich, private, 2d Mass. Cav. and 17th Mass. Regt.; died in  
 rebel prison.

Bradford Gillmore, private, 14th Mass. Regt.; died of disease at New  
 Orleans, La.

Henry L. Dowdell, private, 14th Mass. Regt.

Newell E. Lamprey, private, 40th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of ser-  
 vice.

George Lawrence, private.

George Herbert, private.

William Walton, private.

Richard Lewis, private.

W. H. Mears, private.

Hugh Arthur, private, 53d Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.

William S. Pettengill, captain, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of ser-  
 vice; nine months.

Albert Morrill, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.

David B. Bartlett, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.

Butchelder Stevens, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of ser-  
 vice.

Thomas Lamb, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service; also  
 2d Mass. H. A.

William V. Jones, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.  
 David T. Clark, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; re-enlisted 2d Mass. H. A.  
 and killed in battle.

William H. Page, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.

Joseph H. Stevenson, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of ser-  
 vice.





William H. Cortiss, corporal and sergeant, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.  
 S. Foster Woodman, corporal and sergeant, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.  
 Joseph W. Collins, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.  
 Emery M. Lamprey, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.  
 Edbridge A. Healey, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.  
 John D. Colby, drummer, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.  
 George E. Batchelder, corporal, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.  
 Warren P. Collins, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; died of fever.  
 Calvin E. Tibbotts, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.  
 Charles W. Hunt, corporal, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.  
 William H. Gidlings, corporal, 48th Mass. Regt.; re-enlisted 2d Mass. Regt., Co. I.  
 John D. Pickering, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; re-enlisted; died of sunstroke.  
 Edward L. Shaw, sergt., 48th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.  
 William B. Moore, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.  
 Jacob E. True, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.  
 Jonathan K. Pitton, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.  
 Joseph M. Eaton, 4th sergt., 48th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.  
 Perkins Merrill, corporal, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.  
 William M. Greenleaf, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service; re-enlisted in 2d H. A.  
 Gardner I. Moody, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.  
 Otis R. Pike, corporal, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.  
 Benjamin G. Hinkson, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.  
 Isaiah F. Pike, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service; re-enlisted in 1st Batt. H. A.  
 Edmund E. Burnard, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; killed in battle.  
 James A. Emery, 1st. lieut., 48th Mass. Regt.; re-enlisted in 2d Mass. Regt. H. A., as lieut., and disch., exp. of service.  
 Jacob Bartlett, private, 11th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.  
 John G. Colby, private, 21 Mass. H. A.; died at Norfolk, Va., small-pox.  
 William H. Cortiss, private, 21 Mass. H. A.; disch., exp. of service.  
 Orrin T. Haywood, private 2d Mass. H. A.; disch., exp. of service.  
 John N. Quimby, private, 21 Mass. H. A.; disch., disability.  
 John Whipple, private 2d Mass. H. A.; disch., exp. of service.  
 Robert B. George, private, 2d Mass. H. A.; disch., exp. of service.  
 John Stoker, private, 2d Mass. H. A.  
 Henry Todd, private, 2d Mass. H. A.; killed in battle.  
 Hiram Pike, private, 10th Battery; disch., exp. of service.  
 Hugh Gillis, private, 2d H. A.  
 John Love, private, 2d H. A.  
 Truman Merrill, private, 24 Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.  
 Henry Randall, private, 7th Battery; disch., exp. of service.  
 Justin Smith, private, 48th Mass. Regt.  
 Wallace W. Flanders, private 50th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.  
 George W. Christian, private, 50th Mass. Regt.; died of wounds.  
 John Page, private, 2d Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.  
 John G. Merrill, private, 40th N. Y. Regt.; paroled from Andersonville Prison.  
 John Williams (colored), private, 5th Cav.  
 James Henshaw, private, 2d Inf.  
 Charles O. Berrey, private, 2d Inf.  
 James B. Rollins, private, 2d Inf.  
 William Kelly, private, 2d Inf.  
 John Burgen, private, 2d Inf.  
 Charles Campbell, private, 2d Inf.  
 Frederick Gilbert, private, 2d Inf.  
 William Mullen, private, 2d Inf.  
 William Reiss, private, 2d Inf.  
 Adolph Ritter, private, 2d Inf.  
 Joseph Schmidt, private, 2d Inf.  
 Frederick F. Huggins, private, 1st Batt.  
 James Marlow, private 2d Inf.  
 Stephen Roley, private, 2d Inf.  
 James Rose, private, 15th Mass. Regt.

James Stevens, private, 2d Inf.  
 John Allen, private, 2d Inf.  
 James Smith, private, 2d Cav.  
 John R. Horsey, private, 33d Mass. Regt.  
 John Morrill, private, 2d Cav.  
 John Keeler, private, 3rd Inf.  
 John Stevenson, private, 3rd Inf.  
 Stephen H. Brown, private, 1st Batt. H. A.; disch., exp. of service.  
 Alvah Brown, private, 1st H. A.; disch., exp. of service.  
 Harrison Brown, musician, 1st Batt. H. A.; disch., exp. of service.  
 Harvey B. Sanborn, musician, 1st Batt., H. A.; disch., exp. of service.  
 Frederick Schooff, musician, 1st Batt. H. A.; disch., exp. of service.  
 John L. Colby, private, 2d H. A.; wounded and disch., exp. of service.  
 Wm. H. Tibbotts, private, 2d H. A.; disch., exp. of service.  
 Andrew H. Locke, private, 2d H. A.; disch., exp. of service.  
 Stephen H. Andrews, private, 1st Batt. H. A.; disch., exp. of service.  
 Moses E. Dow, private, 2d H. A.; disch., exp. of service.  
 Wm. H. Currier, private, 2d H. A.; disch., exp. of service.  
 Chas. L. Tucker, private, 2d H. A.; disch., exp. of service.  
 John O. Tucker, private, 2d H. A.; disch., exp. of service.  
 Frank P. Morrill, private, 2d H. A.; disch., exp. of service.  
 Chas. T. Worthen, private, 2d H. A.; disch., exp. of service.  
 Geo. Tate, private, 4th H. A.; disch., exp. of service.  
 Joseph Carr, private, 4th H. A.; died of wounds.  
 William E. Carleton, private, 4th H. A.; disch., exp. of service.  
 Smith Titcomb, private, 1st Batt. H. A.; disch., exp. of service.  
 Leonard N. Morrill, private, 29th Unattached; disch., exp. of service.  
 John McGinley, private, 1st Batt. H. A.; disch., exp. of service.  
 Michael J. O'Neal, private, 61st Mass. Regt.  
 Michael R. Glispen, private, 61st Mass. Regt.  
 Edward W. Duncan, private, 61st Mass. Regt.  
 Patrick Peation, private, 2d Mass. Regt.  
 Patrick Powers, private, 4th Cav.  
 Jeremiah Lynch, private, 3d H. A.  
 Charles H. Fogg, private, 27th Unat. Inf.; disch., exp. of service.  
 Geo. T. Munson, corporal, 1st Regt. Frontier Cav.; disch., exp. of service.  
 Charles W. Dow, private, 1st Frontier Cav.; disch., exp. of service.  
 Benjamin S. Clough, private, 1st Frontier Cav.; disch., exp. of service.  
 Geo. W. Bragdon, private, 1st Frontier Cav.; disch., exp. of service.  
 Edwin I. Merrill, private, 1st Frontier Cav.; disch., exp. of service.  
 Amos P. Austin, private, 1st Frontier Cav.; disch., exp. of service.  
 John Brooks, private; disch., exp. of service.  
 James H. Beede, private; disch., exp. of service.  
 Geo. N. Roberts, private; disch., exp. of service.  
 Albert B. Feltch, private; disch., exp. of service.  
 Albert W. Patten, private; disch., exp. of service.  
 Henry K. Wadleigh, private, Hancock Corps; disch., exp. of service.  
 Charles O. Roberts, private, 17th Mass. Regt.  
 Thomas Jones, private, 19th Mass. Regt.  
 John Shean, private, 31st Mass. Regt.  
 James Martin, private.  
 Thomas McDonald, private.  
 William Wade, private.  
 Amasa Pike, private, 48th Mass. Regt. and 1st Batt. H. A.; disch., exp. of service.  
 Levi J. Merrill, private, 1st Batt. H. A.; disch., exp. of service.  
 Francis A. Jackman, private, 48th Mass. Regt. and 1st Batt. H. A.; disch., exp. of service.  
 Charles Moody, private, 1st Batt. H. A.; disch., exp. of service.  
 Jacob B. Collins, private, 1st Batt. H. A.; disch., exp. of service.  
 Alvin Lewis, private, 48th Mass. Regt. and 1st Batt. H. A.; disch., for disability.  
 John McCarty, private.  
 Benjamin F. Evans, private, 4th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.  
 Robinson N. Schoff, captain, 48th Mass. Regt. disch., exp. of service.  
 Alphonso D. Elkins, private, 2d H. A. and 48th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.  
 John C. Jones, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.  
 Edwin T. Pike, orderly sergeant, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.  
 Aaron Pike, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.  
 Jonathan B. Currier, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch., exp. of service.



Wm. Moody, Jr., private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch. exp. of service.  
 Samuel Eaton, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch. exp. of service.  
 Samuel Stevens, Jr., sergeant, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch. exp. of service.

Geo. K. Pike, corporal, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch. exp. of service.  
 John B. Pike, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch. exp. of service.  
 Joseph S. Pike, wagoner, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch. exp. of service.  
 Elias P. Bartlett, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch. exp. of service.  
 Enoch M. Collins, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch. exp. of service.  
 Horace Haddock, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch. exp. of service.  
 Samuel Coffin, 2d Lieutenant, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch. exp. of service.

John W. Coffin, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; died of disease.  
 Wm. H. H. Pike, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch. exp. of service.  
 Charles T. Phillips, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch. exp. of service.  
 Josiah F. Brown, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; reenlisted and discharged.

John Dow, Jr., private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch. exp. of service.  
 Aaron M. Dow, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch. exp. of service.  
 Joseph N. Dow, drummer, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch. exp. of service.  
 Geo. A. Curtis, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch. exp. of service.  
 Samuel L. Morrill, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch. exp. of service.  
 Stephen Dow, private, 48th Mass. Regt.; disch. exp. of service.  
 James Muldowney, private; killed in battle.  
 Wm. Schmidt, private.  
 John O. Deneill, private.  
 Wm. Campbell, private.  
 Hugh Galle, private.  
 Abraham Wright, private; drafted; sent to Long Island.  
 Wm. H. H. Bradbury, private, 2d H. A.; disch. exp. of service.  
 Joshua W. Eaton, private, 2d H. A.; disch. exp. of service.  
 Zadoc H. Smith, private, 2d H. A.; disch. exp. of service.  
 David Page, private, 1st H. A.; disch. exp. of service.  
 Gustavus H. Eaton, private, 2d H. A.; disch. exp. of service.  
 Richard L. Currier, private, 2d H. A.; disch. exp. of service.  
 Jesse W. Shaw, private, 2d H. A.; disch. exp. of service.  
 Thomas Welch, private, 2d H. A.; disch. exp. of service.

#### *Salisbury in the Navy during the Rebellion.*

Merrill George, on "Sumter" and "Colorado."  
 James Kennison, ship "Iro." He was in engagement that captured Mason and Slidell. Served one year and was discharged.  
 Simeon Lowell, on "Kittatunny;" drowned off Texas.  
 Howard F. Williams, on U. S. "Sabine," "Blockader" and "Niagara;" disch. exp. of service.  
 Herbert W. George, on "San Jacinto."  
 Oliver Lauprey, on gunboat "Cambridge;" coal-heaver, promoted to fireman.  
 John S. Pettengill, on bark "Young Rover;" disch. exp. of term, which was 1 year.  
 Herbert K. Pike, on receiving ship "Ohio;" died of fever.  
 Henry P. Wells.  
 Edward Gordon, on "Vincennes."  
 David Lamb, on "Ohio" and "Sabine;" disch. for disability.  
 James A. Rowell, on "Ohio" and "Sabine."  
 Daniel Page, on "Ohio" and "Sabine;" disch. exp. of service.  
 Geo. W. Colby, on "Sabine," "Vermont," "Land Castle," etc. disch. exp. of term.  
 John W. Wadleigh, on "Ohio" and "Fort Henry;" disch. for disability.  
 Wm. V. Jones, on "Fort Henry" and "Vandalia;" disch. exp. of service.  
 Denville Foot, on "Ohio" and "Nita;" disch. exp. of service.  
 Wm. Oakes, on "Portsmouth;" disch. exp. of service.

## BIOGRAPHICAL.

### SETH CLARK.

Thomas Clark (first generation), the pilgrim, came to this country in the ship "Ann," 1623. His sons were Andrew, William, James and Nathaniel; they were all prominent men, and, on the maternal side, were

linked with the Lothrop, Mortons, Bangs and Dillinghams. In line follows Andrew (second generation), oldest son of Thomas, the pilgrim, then Thomas (third generation), Seth (fourth generation), Seth (fifth generation), who moved from Harwick (that part now Brewster) to Salisbury, Mass. He was an officer on a frigate that was sent to France, as a present, in consideration for their assistance during the Revolutionary War. He afterwards became a captain in the service, was taken captive and thrown into prison, where his health became so impaired that he died of consumption February 23, 1787.

Seth (sixth generation) was born at Salisbury, Mass., December 31, 1772; he married Susannah Noyes, December 5, 1797, daughter of Edmund Noyes, and had seven children,—Sarah, born July 31, 1799, and died February 17, 1875; Seth (seventh generation), born March 25, 1801; Edmund, born September 16, 1803, and died November 7, 1880; Thomas J., born January 24, 1806, and died August 12, 1877; Joseph N., born October 17, 1808, and died December 14, 1883; Susan, born June 20, 1812, and died February 16, 1882; Ann, born April 17, 1818, still living. Seth (seventh generation), married Rebecca W. Webster, daughter of Jonathan and Sarah (Waite) Webster. Jonathan was the son of the Rev. Samuel Webster, D.D., who was a minister in Salisbury for nearly fifty-five years, and a descendant from John Webster, who came from England and settled in Ipswich at an early day. The children of Seth and Rebecca W. were Jonathan W. (who died in infancy), Sarah, Susan R. and Seth (eighth generation).

Edmund married Sophronia Locke, and had four children, viz.: John (who died February, 1876), Adeline, Edmund and Mary. Thomas J. married Sarah (Currier), and had one child, Susan, now Mrs. E. R. Sibley. Joseph N. married Harriet Allen, and had seven children, viz.: Eliza, George, Charles, Harriet (deceased), Josephine (deceased), Clara and Marion.

Susan married John Pickett, of Beverly (no children); Ann married David Bailey, and had one child, Susie, now Mrs. Jessie Trask; Seth (eighth) married M. Belle Philbrick, and they have three children,—Mabel P., Gertrude M. and Seth (ninth generation).

Seth (sixth), the subject of this sketch, and whose portrait adorns these pages, was born December 31, 1772, and in early life was largely engaged in the fishing business, owned a number of fishing-vessels and was also a merchant. He was one of the organizers of the Powow River Bank, and its first president, holding the office for fourteen years; and it is largely due to him, in a measure, that it owes its complete success. He was director in the savings bank, was postmaster of Salisbury, appointed by Jefferson, and held the office some forty years, the longest in the State in continuous service. Mr. Clark was the "squire" of the town, and was sought on all hands for advice in matters of busi-







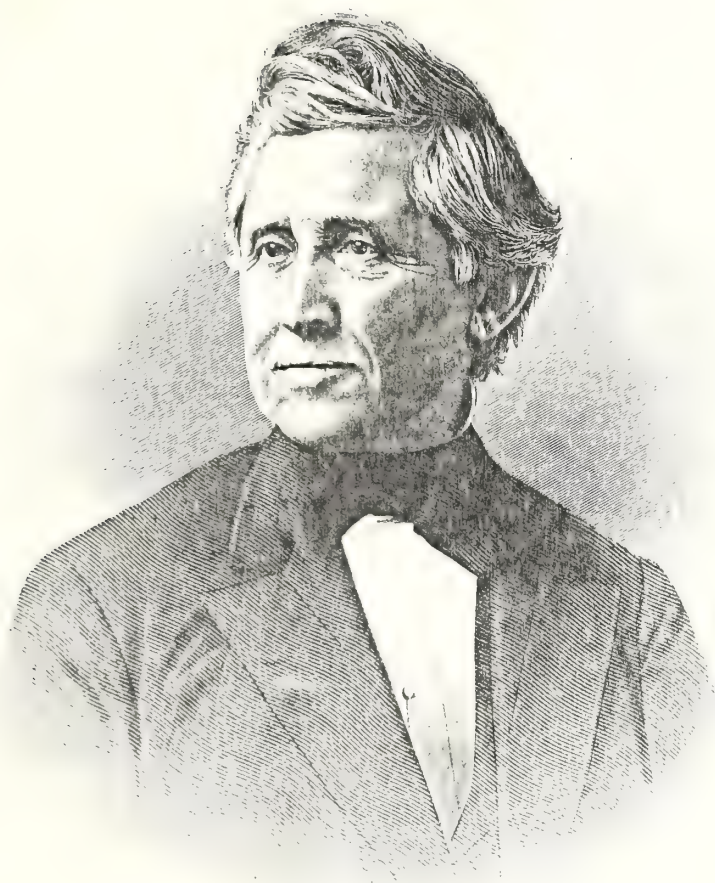
*Seth Clark*





Leth Clark. ~





Thomas J. Carr





ness, and was held in the highest esteem by all who knew him—an honest and upright man—and his long life of usefulness will ever be cherished by his descendants and all who remember him. He died September 25, 1850, aged seventy-eight years.

#### SETH CLARK.

Among the business men of this generation, none have occupied a more prominent position in the town than Seth Clark, Sr., born in Salisbury March 25, 1801. He was the eldest of four sons,—Seth, Thomas, Edmund and Joseph. His birthplace was Salisbury Point. In early life he had the advantages of special instruction, under the tuition of that celebrated teacher, Michael Walch, who, in his time, fitted more men for business pursuits than any other instructor in New England. Among the scholars who attended Walch's private school at the Point, kept in his own private dwelling, were the late Hon. Caleb Cushing and Professor Horatio B. Hackett, the celebrated Greek scholar.

Mr. Clark received a strict business education, which served him well in later years. As he entered life the tanning business was being prosecuted to some extent at Rocky Hill, and he learned this branch of trade. In 1823, in company with his three brothers, the firm commenced business on Elm Street, where the Colchester Mill now is, and erected an extensive tanning establishment. The senior member of the firm was practically its business manager, buying the raw hides and selling the manufactured leather in the markets of Salem and Boston. At stated seasons he drove his own team of two horses, loaded with leather, into Boston, completed his sales and returned on the following day.

The business of the firm prospered and its tannery was enlarged. After thirty years of active labor, Mr. Clark withdrew from the firm and turned his attention to real estate investments. He was able to forecast the future, saw the prospective rise in values, and became the largest owner of real estate in the towns of Salisbury and Amesbury, as well as the most wealthy citizen. In matters affecting questions of trade and investment his opinion was sought and cheerfully given. He was conservative to a fault, and thoroughly believed in the pay-as-you-go principle.

Mr. Clark served as president and director of the Powow River National Bank for many years, and was one of the trustees of the Provident Institution for Savings from the date of its incorporation, in 1828. He also served the town in several offices of trust and responsibility.

In habits of thought and action he represented the Puritan element of character. In all business transactions he expected and exacted the same punctuality and methods in others that governed his own conduct. In social life he was kind and considerate. He married a granddaughter of the Rev. Dr. Webster, one of the first ministers of the Rocky Hill

Church. His only son, Seth, has been engaged in the manufacture of carriages about twenty-five years, and is one of thirty firms doing business in Salisbury Mills.

September 23, 1887, the subject of this notice died, at his residence on Market Street, at the age of eighty-six years and six months. As a mark of esteem for his long and useful life and business career, work was suspended in the community on the afternoon of his burial, and his funeral services were largely attended by all the influential and prominent men, mechanics and manufacturers.

His death closes the immediate family history. In the eighty-six years of his life he had seen the little village of a few hundred inhabitants grow in wealth and prosperity from a valuation of two hundred thousand dollars to that of two millions, and his own name published as the largest among its many tax-payers.

#### THOMAS J. CLARK.

Thomas J. Clark, more than any other man of his day, was identified with the interests of Salisbury and vicinity, and was well known throughout the country. In early life he was a tanner, and retired from that for more public duties; was nineteen years a selectman of the town, for more than fifteen years moderator at the town-meetings, twenty years treasurer of the "Provident Institution for Savings in Salisbury and Amesbury," and at the time of his death was president of the Powow River National Bank, of which he was a director from 1836 to 1870, a director of the Amesbury and Salisbury Mutual Fire Insurance Company, and of the Amesbury and Salisbury Gas Company. He was also a trustee in the Essex Agricultural Society. More than forty years ago he was a member of the Massachusetts Senate, contemporaneously with the late Hon. Henry Wilson, and up to the time of Mr. Wilson's death the friendship formed so many years before was continued. For four years from 1849 he was naval officer at the Custom-House at Newburyport. In every sense he was a man of the public. He was never at rest, and was always at the beck and call of his fellow-citizens. He has administered more estates and been the guardian of more children, and the trustee of more property than any other man in this section. He has also been unremitting in his attentions to the sick, and has superintended more funerals than even the town clergy. Always fresh and vivacious, vigorous in manner and in the conduct of his business, he did not show his years. His disease was congestion of the brain, accompanied by general debility, which so rapidly developed that his body became debilitated in sympathy with his mind, and his death, which occurred August 12, 1877, was in some respects a sudden one. He is greatly missed in the community in which he was so long known, and of which he was one of the wealthiest and worthiest citizens.



His funeral took place Wednesday, August 15, 1877, and was by far the largest ever known in this section. The village was in mourning. The Powow River National and Savings Banks, the American House and several stores were heavily draped in mourning, and every store and manufactory in town was closed.

The funeral rites were performed by Rev. Mr. Hartman, of the Baptist Church, where the deceased worshipped. He said that on the sad occasion which had called together the mourning company there assembled, it would not be possible to say all that ought to be said of the noble brother whose life had so suddenly been brought to a close. A life so noble, so self-sacrificing, so profitable to the community, deserves a better eulogy. The deceased possessed virtues and excellencies of character such as few men were endowed with. In the line of those virtues and noble traits the speaker, as he had gone from State to State, had never seen his equal. His death was an eminent loss to the society and the business of the community. Throughout the entire region round about, all would miss him. They would miss his familiar face, his helping hand, his wise counsel. The poor and the destitute and the friendless, the widow and the orphan would miss him. Never had his heart or his hand been shut to them. None hesitated to approach him in any extremity. To them his loss would be irreparable. To his friends and relatives, and his sorrowing family circle, he had only the consolation of Christ's love to offer—the consolation given by One who had endured every human trial that He might sympathize with poor humanity.

#### EDMUND MORRILL.

Edmund Morrill was the son of Abraham and Mary (Bagley) Morrill, and the grandson of Abraham, both of whom were born in Salisbury. It is said by the older members of the family that the first of their line that came to this country were Reuben, Samuel and Ebben, from which Edmund Morrill descended. The children of Abraham and Mary were Eliza, born June 14, 1802 (she married Daniel Merrill); John, born February 5, 1805, and married for first wife Sally Marston, and for second Elmira Morrill; Edmund, born May 29, 1807, and married Abigail Leavitt, daughter of Simon Leavitt, of North Hampton, N. H.; Amos, born August 25, 1809, and married Merandy Dickson (he went to Texas, where he practiced law and became a judge and was widely known); Mary Ann, born November 25, 1812; Abigail, born September 19, 1818, and died in infancy.

The children of Edmund and Abigail Morrill are Mary A. and Abraham L. Mary A. married A. W. Bartlett, and had three children—Mary A., Alice M. and Edmund M. Abraham married Sarah E. Smith, and has one child—Lida,

Abraham, Sr., the father of Edmund, was a representative farmer and one of the substantial citizens of Salisbury. He died June 24, 1862, aged eighty-six years and three months.

Edmund, his son, whose picture is here shown, lives on the old farm. He, like his father, is a farmer, and extensively engaged in the lumber business, and is one of the solid citizens of Salisbury (now Amesbury).

#### CAPTAIN ABRAHAM COLBY.

Captain John Colby was the son of Gee and grandson of Obediah, and was born in Salisbury, Mass., November 28, 1785. Gee was born December 16, 1761, and died April 21, 1822; he had four children—Abraham, born in 1785; Mary O., born September 13, 1787; John, born March 27, 1790; and Hannah, born in June, 1810.

Captain Abraham Colby married Sarah, daughter of Colonel Jonathan Smith, and had two children, viz., Mary O. and Samuel S.

Captain Colby in early life learned the trade of tallow chandler, and later in life was engaged in the fishing business, sending out vessels for that purpose, and was also employed for a time in the coasting trade. In 1812 he went privateering in the ship "America;" finally retired from active business and settled down to enjoy the fruits of his labors.

He was president of the Amesbury and Salisbury Savings Bank for several years, and was one of the substantial citizens of the town. He died September 15, 1865.

#### JOHN ROWELL.

The son of Jacob and Abigail Rowell was born in Amesbury January 28, 1806 (see sketch of Jacob); his father was a farmer, but with John this occupation was not congenial, and he followed various pursuits until about the year 1853, when he engaged in the watchmaking, jewelry and fancy goods business. This he followed with success for a number of years. In 1867 he was appointed by Governor Bullock justice of the peace, and in 1855 was appointed deputy-sheriff of the county, which office he held fourteen years. Mr. Rowell was purely a man of the public, honest in all his dealings, quick to act and a good adviser.

His happy, jovial way made him exceedingly popular, and many amusing incidents are related of his experience with the class he was obliged to deal with in performing the duties of deputy-sheriff.

He was widely known throughout the county, and his happy way and manner were calculated to make friends wherever he went. He was one of the oldest members of the Powow River Lodge, and herewith we append the report of that fraternity after his death,—

"At a meeting of the Powow River Lodge, held







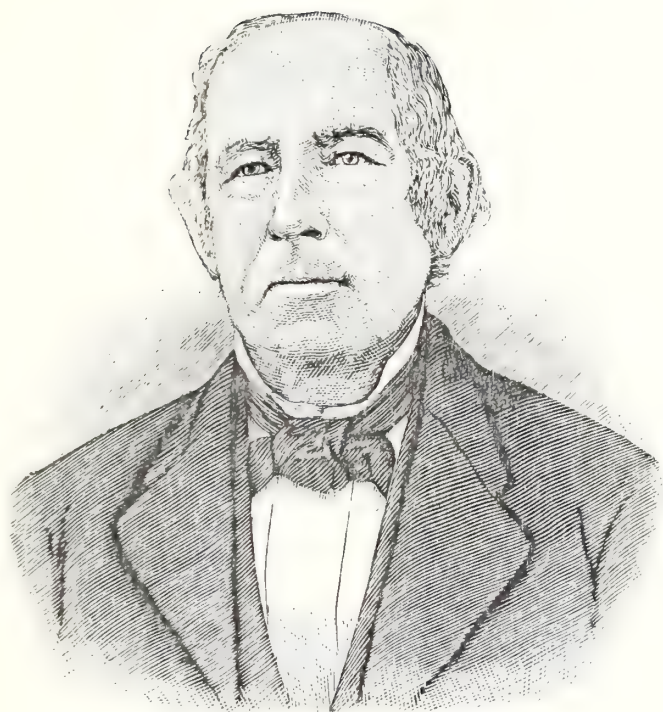
*John Russell*





*Holley.*





*Edmund Morrill*







Chas B Patton





John Morris





Tuesday, July 2, 1872, the death of our late brother was reported with appropriate remarks, and a desire was expressed to extend our sympathies to the family of the deceased at this time of their deep affliction. All that human power and skill of man could do has been done to arrest the progress of disease, but in the providence of God all was in vain. Death came and has removed from us an affectionate husband, a kind father, and a true and faithful brother. We mourn his loss, and shall long cherish the memory of his many excellent qualities. To especially the widow of the deceased do we offer this tribute of condolence, and if during the remaining years of life she should need our aid, council or advice, be assured we will not be found wanting in the discharge of the obligations of the Order, of which Mr. Rowell was for so many years an honored member."

Mr. Rowell married Sarah, daughter of Alexander Stuart (she died November 20, 1879). They had two children—J. Stuart and Sarah A. J. Stuart married May Cary, of Watertown, Mass., and had one child, who died in infancy, and the father and mother are also deceased.

Sarah A. married Stephen C. Patten, son of Charles B., a merchant of Amesbury.

#### CHARLES B. PATTEN.

Charles B. Patten, the son of Willis Patten, was born in West Amesbury, September 18, 1794. His father was a blacksmith in West Amesbury for many years. Charles learned the trade of blacksmithing of his father, and in 1819 or '20 moved the shop on the ice to Salisbury, which was considered quite a feat in those days. The carriage business was then in its infancy, one man making the wheels (by hand), another the bodies and so on. Charles B. was the only blacksmith in these parts and made all the iron-work and springs for wagons and chaise. After a time there was as many shops making wagon-parts as there were parts to a wagon, and so year after year it kept increasing. It might be said that Mr. Patten was a pioneer in this particular department of the carriage business. His shop was located on Market Street, a stone's throw from where Stephen Patten now lives. Mr. Patten, in later life, was in delicate health, had a stroke of paralysis, which prevented him from active work in the shop, and after a time was obliged to give up his work to his son George, who succeeded him after his death, which occurred March 23, 1846. Mr. Patten was a man highly respected and widely known. He was a member of St. Peter's Lodge, Newburyport, and was lieutenant in the old Amesbury and Salisbury military company. Mr. Patten married Mary, daughter of Jacob and Rachel Clement; they had eight children, viz.: Mary Elizabeth, Caroline, George H., Sarah L., Emeline, Chas. W., Susan H. and Stephen C.

Elizabeth died in 1861; Caroline married Cyrus A. Brewer; Geo. H. died in 1872; Sarah L. died in 1871; Emeline married Jonathan W. Keniston; Chas. W. married Elizabeth O. Sargent; Stephen C. married Sarah Ann Rowell, daughter of John Rowell.

Stephen C. worked with his brother, blacksmithing, until twenty-six years of age, when he started in the furniture business, in which he is now engaged, covering a period of twenty-six years.

#### JOHN MORRILL.

Abraham Morrill (first generation) settled in Salisbury in 1641. Jacob (second generation) was his second son. Then in line comes Aaron (third generation), fourth son of Jacob; Elijah (fourth generation), first son of Aaron; Ezra (fifth generation), first son of Elijah. Elijah had nine children, viz.: Ezra, born in 1742; Anna, born 1744; Elijah, born 1745; May, born 1749; Betsey, died in infancy; Robert, born 1753; Betsey, born 1755; Eliza, born 1757; Benjamin, born 1759. Ezra married, first wife, Elizabeth Greeley, and had three children,—Anna, Elizabeth and Hannah. Mrs. Elizabeth G. Morrill died July 10, 1777, in her thirty-third year.

Mr. Morrill married, for second wife, Sarah Morrill, November 5, 1780. Their children were John, born October 5, 1784; Ezra, born April 3, 1787; and William, born November 6, 1789. Mrs. Sarah Morrill died November 5, 1790, and her husband Ezra died December 23, 1797, aged fifty-six years.

John married, January 2, 1811, Abigail Currier. She was born January 6, 1791, and was the daughter of Benjamin Currier. They had six children,—Sarah, born July 13, 1811; William E., born July 13, 1813; Elizabeth, born January 19, 1816; Abigail, born March 19, 1820; Ezra C., born September 4, 1822; Mary J., born February 6, 1826. Sarah married Benjamin Osgood; she died childless in 1874, aged sixty-three years. William E. married Mary F. Merrill, and had three children, viz.: John W., Mary A. and Sarah F. Mrs. William E. Morrill died April 7, 1881, aged sixty-six years. Elizabeth married Paul Bickford, and had three children,—Sarah M., John and Frank. Abigail married Aaron Morrill; have four children,—Anna, Mary, Alice and John. Ezra C. married Hannah Swett, daughter of Timothy Swett, and have had three children,—Edward W., Charles E. and William F. Mary J. married Thomas Eaton, and have had two children. Edward W. married Mary Pender, and have had two children,—William E. and Fred. William F. married Eliza Lane.

John Morrill, whose picture is here shown, learned the carpenter trade in early life at Newburyport, which occupation he followed through life. He was a prominent man of the town. Served two terms in the Legislature (1836-38), besides holding other minor town offices. He was business-like in his bearing, honest



in all his dealings, retiring in manner, yet stern, and his word was as good as his bond. He was an active member of the Rocky Hill Church and contributed liberally to its support. Mr. Morrill was respected by all who knew him. He died February 20, 1856, aged seventy-one years. His two sons are now active business men. William has followed the business of contractor and builder; Ezra learned the trade of ship-joiner, and is at present engaged in the building of dories. Both William and Ezra Morrill are men of high standing in their town and respected by all.

## CHAPTER CXX.

### SWAMPSCOTT.

BY JAMES R. NEWHALL.

*Introductory Remarks—Natural Situation—Name—Commencement of Settlement.*

History touches all human life, on every side. It instructs the individual. It gives a new tone to a community. It elevates a nation. It enlivens a generation. It inspires the human race.—*John A. Andrew.*

As the voyager eastward from Boston skirts along the northern shore of Massachusetts Bay, and passes the dark, wave-worn cliffs of Nahant, there opens upon his left the picturesque inlet called in the old maps Nahant Bay, but more frequently, in popular parlance, Swampscott Bay. In calm sunshine it is a beautiful expanse; but in wind and storm, full of terrors and dangers. One of the most conspicuous objects that meet the eye is Egg Rock, precipitous and lonely, with its little light-house, shedding at night its hospitable rays of silent warning.

Along the whole extent of the shore of the little bay lies the town of Swampscott, with its picturesque fishing flotilla rocking languidly in front, as if keeping watch and ward, unless it be an hour when duty has called them off to "tempt the dangers of the deep." On the rising grounds above the beaches the active body of the town is seen. Upon the rocky heights and among the partially wooded hills in the background and the jutting headlands on either hand are scattered many residences of the wealthy and romantic, as well as humbler habitations of the less ambitious toilers.

Such is the natural situation of Swampscott—healthy, attractive and by no means isolated. It is about a dozen miles from Boston, in a northeasterly direction, with a population of two thousand four hundred and seventy-one, according to the census of 1885, which number is greatly augmented in summer by the influx of temporary sojourners who are attracted by the salubrity of its airs and the charms of its scenery.

Swampscott remained a part of Lynn till 1852,

when it was set off as a separate town, the first town government being organized on the 5th day of June of that year. The earlier history of the place is so interwoven with that of Lynn that it becomes in a sense awkward to attempt to treat it as separate. Though there was no distinct Swampscott municipality till 1852, it may be claimed that this, as well as any place, is entitled to a recognition of occurrences within its borders, under whatever name or jurisdiction it may have existed.

"Swampscot is the original Indian name of the fishing-village at the eastern part of the town," says Mr. Lewis, the historian of Lynn, who always spelled the name with one t; and there seems to be no reason why another should have been added. The Indian language was unlearned and unwritten, at least by the tribes hereabout, and many of the attempts at etymological tracing are more curious than satisfactory.

The first white man who settled in Swampscott appears to have been FRANCIS INGALLS, a tanner by trade. He came with the little band of five who arrived, according to the commonly received opinion, on a June day, in 1629—three years after the settlement of Salem by Roger Conant and one year before the settlement of Boston, leaving out of the account the lodgment of Mr. Blackstone. The names of the others composing the little company were Edmund Ingalls, a brother of Francis, William Dixey, John Wood and William Wood, the two latter probably father and son. There may have been others with them; but, if so, the names are lost. They settled in the vicinity of each other, as was natural, under the circumstances, though Francis Ingalls seems to have been the only one who pitched his tent over the Swampscott border, as it is now defined. But it is by no means certain where the Swampscott line then, and for many years thereafter, ran. If the name means Red Rock, as suggested in Thompson's Sketches, it might apply to a large extent of shore both westward and eastward from the present lines.

The settlers do not seem to have purchased any lands, but to have come under the broad permission of the arbitrary Endicott to "goe where they would." The Indian population about here at that time was very small, and there was little to be apprehended from their hostility, even though they might in some instances feel aggrieved. It is not, however, intended to insinuate that the settlers did not honestly pay for their lands when true owners subsequently appeared. The lands were of little or no value to the red men, for they were not an agricultural nor a pastoral people. And no doubt some of the beautiful tracts that now command thousands of dollars were once purchased for a hatchet, a hoe, or half a dozen drams of "fire-water."

William Wood was evidently the most active and intelligent of the party, had a more just comprehen-





sion of the condition and prospects of the immigrants, and soon began by his pen to celebrate and magnify the merits and advantages of the new Canaan. He was the author of "New England's Prospect," published in London in 1634—a work which then did much to direct attention to New England, and which is still held in high repute as faithfully picturing affairs as they then existed. He indeed took a rosy view of most things, but in no essentials led the way to disappointment.

It has been claimed, with possibly too much pertinacity, that General John Humfrey, who was one of the original Massachusetts patentees and took great interest in the prosperity of the colonists, became an early resident of Swampscott. But it is not perceived how that could have been, unless the territory that went by the name extended so far westward as to include Nahant Street in Lynn. The error of locating him at Swampscott probably arose from the inadvertent statement of Mr. Lewis, who, in the "History of Lynn," speaking of his arrival, in 1634, says he "went to reside on his farm at Swampscot." But he had no farm at Swampscott. The land there was not granted to him till 1635, and then only conditionally. The words of the court record, May 6, 1635, are: "Further it is ordered that the land betwixt the Clifte and the Forest Ryver, neere Marble Head shall for the present be improved by John Humphrey, Esq." Nobody seems to doubt that this is the land in question. And it will be noticed that this was the year *after* his arrival, and that it was for his improvement "for the present." And furthermore, the court add that if the people of Marblehead should need the land, or if the people of Salem could show a right to it, Mr. Humfrey should part with it. Now is it at all likely that he, a shrewd lawyer, would build a house on land to which he had no better title than that? It was not till 1638, only three years before he left the country, that the grant was made absolute, it probably then appearing to the court that neither Salem nor Marblehead would make any claim.

It is certain that Mr. Humfrey had a house on Nahant Street, Lynn, and owned lands adjacent. In no deed, will or inventory does the writer find evidence that he had a house in Swampscott. It was in 1640 that his barn was burned by the careless use of gunpowder by a servant. And the court record says, "Henry Stevens for firing the barne of his master, Mr. John Humfrey, he was ordered to be servant to Mr. Humfrey for 21 years from this day [Dec. 1, 1640] towards recompencing the loss." Mr. Lewis, in stating the fact, says the barn was on Nahant street. This seems to indicate that he had become aware of his mistake in locating him at Swampscott. He also says, under date 1636, "Mr. Humfrey built a windmill on the eastern mound of Sagamore Hill." The barn and windmill were, no doubt, near the house, which was probably endangered by the fire. The mill was built within two years after his arrival, and the fire occur-

red but the year before he left the country. How happened it, if he lived in Swampscott, that his barn and mill were away off on the west of Nahant Street in Lynn?

That Mr. Humfrey's extensive land grant in question came to be called his "farm Swampscott" is no doubt true; but it does not follow that he lived there, any more than that he lived in Lynnfield where he likewise had an extensive grant. It may have been a mere arbitrarily distinguishing name, after the fashion of the old English gentry in designating their outlying farm lands. Lechford speaks of Mr. Humfrey's farm Swampscott, not his farm *at* or *in* Swampscott. Winthrop speaks of it as "a farm of Mr. Humfrey;" and would he have spoken thus if it had also been his residence? And even Mr. Lewis, in speaking of Lady Moody, says, "In 1641 she purchased Mr. John Humfrey's farm *called* Swampscott."

It is well to remember that Mr. Humfrey was in the country but a short time. He came in 1634 and left in 1641, and does not appear to have lived in Lynn the whole of even that short period. Mr. Drake, the accurate historian of Boston, says, "He resided a while in Lynn, then at Salem." And Bently speaks of him as residing in Salem. And all seem to agree that he was of the Salem church.

The "Farm House" still standing on the estate so improved and adorned by the late Hon. E. Redington Mudge has been claimed to be the identical house reared and occupied by Mr. Humfrey. But does not the structure itself show that it belongs to a later period of New England architecture? And, moreover, the late Josiah M. Nichols, who spent much time in patiently examining the old records and tracing out titles, maintained, with much positiveness, that that part of the Mudge estate did not come within any grant to Mr. Humfrey. The writer has some satisfaction in the assurance that the "Farm House" was reared by an ancestor of his own, not far from the close of the seventeenth century—a Burrill, of the old Burrill family of Tower Hill, Lynn.

Ebenezer Burrill, the first of the name who settled in Swampscott, became possessor of the land there by the will of his father, known as Lieutenant John Burrill, who lived on Boston Street near Federal, in Lynn. But which of these Burrills or whether some other of the family built the "Farm House" is not known. Ebenezer, by will dated Jan. 14, 1761, gave the estate to his son Samuel.

The "Farm House" remained in the Burrill family many years; and the noble elm in front, that still spreads its patriarchal branches and allures to its refreshing shade thoughtful age and buoyant youth, as in far-off years it allured to noonday rest the sturdy toilers on the farm, and at evening invited the youth to their moonlight sports, is believed to have been planted by one of the family about the year 1740.

Historical mistakes, like that concerning the location of Mr. Humfrey, are not, perhaps, of much im-





portance to such readers as merely seek casual entertainment. But they may, under some circumstances, become of grave moment.

Mr. Humfrey was an eminent man, took great interest in the welfare of the colonists, and contributed liberally of his abundant means. He was a military commander, a legislator, executive and judicial officer; and all his doings were marked by ability and integrity.

A similar mistake to that regarding Mr. Humfrey's location has prevailed in relation to Lady Deborah Moody. She purchased a considerable portion of his Swampscott land, and probably for a short time occupied the house on Nahant Street, Lynn. Lechford says she lived in Lynn, though of the Salem church. She, however, could have been about here but a short time. Winthrop speaks of her as "a wise and anciently religious woman," adding that she was a member of Salem church. That she lived in Salem a part of the short time she was hereabout, there can be no doubt. The eminent authority last quoted speaks of a tempest that unroofed "Lady Moody's house in Salem," the site of which has been fixed by antiquaries as in Washington Street, where the present post-office stands. Mr. Upham describes the house as of one story, nine feet in height, and with a flat roof. She was a woman of large property and high family connection. Governor Vane was a kinsman of hers. On account of her convictions regarding infant baptism she was virtually banished, and in 1643 sought a home in the Dutch jurisdiction on Long Island, where she met with divers misfortunes.

It would not profit to further pursue these inquiries. And it need only be added, in a summarizing way, that there seems little room for doubt that Mr. Humfrey lived on the easterly side of Nahant Street, Lynn, very near where Ocean Street now opens; that he had extensive grants of land within the present bounds of Swampscott and in Lynnfield, the latter including the picturesque little lakelet still known as Humfrey's Pond; and that, adjacent to his residence, he owned a considerable tract, including much, if not the whole, of what is now known as Sagamore Hill, on which stood his windmill.

There is naturally a sentimental love of numbering among our own people distinguished individuals. And such men as Mr. Humfrey, who was eminent for his public services, his virtues and accomplishments, and whose wife was a daughter of the Earl of Lincoln, one of the first noblemen in England, might well justify such love in the good people of Swampscott. But there stalked a skeleton into that home. And one cannot, with complacency, contemplate the disasters that befell the tender offspring, left by father and mother in most unworthy wardship. Many a pang that rendered the latter days of Mr. Humfrey miserable—almost unendurable—arose from the strange desertion of daughters who had not even reached their teens. It is apparent that he was sadly

disappointed by the failure of certain schemes for political advancement, and though perhaps not broken down, morose or irritable, had fallen into a settled discontent; and that his wife was intolerably homesick, ever pining over her privations, and yearning for the brilliant scenes of her early home. So away they went, leaving their little ones to the tender mercies of custodians totally unworthy of the sacred trust.

## CHAPTER CXXI.

### SWAMPSCOTT—(Continued).

#### EARLY SETTLERS AND LATER RESIDENTS.

*Witter—Kings—King—Blaney—Burrill—Blanchard—Weeks—Ingalls—Phillips—Widger—Madge.*

To gather up the memorials of those who have gone before us, to reconstruct their living portraits from historical fragments so widely scattered; is a work of time, of patience and of unremitting toil; but, once completed, the ancestral line, reaching far down the vista of the past, will stand out clearly before us; the images of our fathers will tenderly live in our minds, and we shall reverently cherish their memories, as will likewise the generations to come.—*Shafter.*

**WILLIAM WITTER.**—One of the earliest settlers in Swampscott was William Witter, a farmer, who came in 1630. He appears to have been a man of strong opinions and much fearlessness in expressing them—not what would be called a man of education, but one with a good conception of manly rights and accountabilities. He was a sturdy exponent of some of the peculiar characteristics of the times, and a zealous participant in transactions that, in a local way, characterized the period in which he lived. One of the earliest occurrences in his life of agitation was an offense for which, on the 28th of February, 1643, he was presented at the Salem court. Says the record:

"William Witter—Now coming in, answered humbly, and confessed his Ignorance, and his willingness to see Light, and (upon Mr. Norris, our Elder, his speech) seemed to be staggered, inasmuch as that he came in court meltinghe. Sentence—Have called our ordenance of God, a badge of the whore—on some Lecture day, the next 5th day, being a public fast, To acknowledge his fault, And to ask Mr. Cobbett forgiveness, In saying he spok against his conscience. And enjoined to be heard next court att Salem."

Mr. Cobbett, whose forgiveness was to be asked, was a colleague of Rev. Mr. Whiting, minister of the Lynn church; and Mr. Norris, under whose speech he seemed "staggered," was then minister of the Salem church, and a successor of Hugh Peters, who was intermediate between him and Roger Williams. The offense of Mr. Witter was his declaring that infant baptism was sinful. He had evidently imbibed the principles of Mr. Williams, with whom, it is fair to presume, considering the proximity of their residences, he had neighborly acquaintance.

Three years after the above episode—that is, in 1646—it is found that he was again presented at the Quarterly Court,—



"for saying that they who stayed while a Child is baptized, doe worship the dyvil; also Henry Collins and Mathew West, dealing with him about the former speech, he speaks to them after this manner, That they who stayed at the baptizing of a Child, did take the name of the Father Sonne, and holly ghost in vaine and broke the Saboth, and confessed and justifieth his former speech. Sentence of Court is an Injunction next Lord's day, being faine, that he make a publique confession to Satisfaction, in the open congregation at Lyn, or else to answer it at the next General Court. And concerning his opinion, the court hath yet patience toward him, till they see if he be obstinate, and only admonish him."

These incidents clearly show the drift of Mr. Witter's opinions, his fearlessness in expressing them and the repugnance with which they were received. And his faith seems to have strengthened with his years; for when those Baptist missionaries from Rhode Island—John Clark, John Crandall and Obadiah Holmes—appeared, in 1651, they quartered in Swampscott, at his house, where, on Sunday, July 20th, Mr. Clark preached, administered the sacrament and rebaptized Mr. Witter,—

"This being reported to the authorities" (says Mr. Lewis), "two constables went down to Swampscott to apprehend them as disturbers of the peace. They carried a warrant with this direction, which had been granted by Hon. Robt. Bridges: 'By virtue hereof, you are required to go to the house of William Witter, and so to search from house to house for certain erroneous persons, being strangers, and them to apprehend, and in safe custody to keep, and to-morrow morning, at 8 o'clock, to bring before me.' Mr. Clark says: 'While I was yet speaking, there comes into the house where we were, two constables, who with their clamorous tongues make an interruption, and more uncivilly disturbed us than the pursuivants of the old English bishops were wont to do.' In the afternoon they were taken to Mr. Whiting's meeting, where they refused to uncover their heads. Mr. Bridges ordered a constable to take off their hats, when one of them attempted to speak, but was prevented."

"At the close of the meeting one of them made some remarks, after which they were taken to the Anchor Tavern, and guarded through the night. In the morning they were sent to Boston and imprisoned. On the thirty-first, the Court of Assistants sentenced Mr. Holmes to pay a fine of thirty pounds, Mr. Clark of twenty, and Mr. Crandall of five. The fines of Clark and Crandall were paid; but Mr. Holmes refused to pay his, or suffer it to be paid, and was retained in prison till September, when he was publicly whipped. When brought to the place of execution, he requested liberty to speak to the people, but the presiding officer, one *Find*, rightly named, refused, and ordered him to be stripped. His friends brought some wine, which they requested him to drink, but he declined it, lest the spectators should attribute his fortitude to drink. The whip was made of three cords, and the executioners put three times in his own hands, that he might not fail to know justice. In a manuscript left by Governor Joseph Jencks, it is written that 'Mr. Holmes was whipped to stripes, and in such an unmerciful manner that for many days, if not some weeks, he could not take rest, but as he lay upon his knees and elbows, not being able to suffer any part of the body to touch the bed.' As the man began to lay on the stripes, Holmes said, 'though my flesh should fail, yet my God will not fail.' He then prayed, 'Lord, lay not this sin to their charge.' When he was released, two spectators, John Shaw and John Hazel, went up and took hold of his hand to sympathize with him, for which they were fined forty shillings each. Such is the bitterness of religious persecution. Dr. John Clark was one of the most respectable physicians in Rhode Island, and wrote a book entitled 'Ill News from New England,' with a full account of this persecution."

Mr. Witter appears to have been afflicted with blindness, though not total, it is gratifying to believe. Mr. Clark, in his narrative, says:

"It came to pass that we three (himself, Crandall and Holmes), by the good hand of God, came into the Mathusets Bay upon the 16 day of the 5th Moneth 51; and upon the 19th of the same, upon occasion of businesse, we came into a Town in the same Bay called Lyn, where we

lodged at a Blind-man's house neer two miles out of the Town, by name William Witter, who being baptized into Christ waits, as we also doe, for the kingdom of God and the full consolation of the Israel of God."

For his re-baptism, and for neglecting to attend on the discourses, Mr. Witter was, on the 7th of November, presented at the Salem court.

These proceedings, taken together, not only illustrate the persistent character of Mr. Witter, and the faithfulness of the sufferers to their convictions but also the relentless rigor of the laws and the un pitying bigotry of some, at least, of those in authority.

Let us now give an incident or two of a more worldly nature, in the history of Mr. Witter. He seems to have been a friend of Poquannum, the Indian chief, known among the English as Duke William or Black Will, although the acquaintance must have been short, as the dusky noble was killed in 1633. He was a chief extensively known, and held in considerable repute; a large land-owner, if all that he claimed was really his. It was he who sold Nahant to Thomas Dexter, for a suit of clothes, a transaction which occasioned much trouble and expense to the town in after years.

Mr. Witter, according to a deposition of his, made April 15, 1657, purchased his own house-lot of the Duke, and not that alone, but hundreds of other eligible acres. Says he: "Blacke will or Duke william, so called, came to my house (which was two or three miles from Nahant), when Thomas Dexter had bought Nahant for a suit of clothes; the said Black will Asked me what I would give him for the Land my house stood upon, it being his land, and his father's wigwam stood their abouts, James Sagomore and John, and the Sagomore of Agawam, and diuers more, And George Sagomore, being a youth was present, all of them acknowledginge Black will to be the Right owner of the Land my house stood on, and Sagomore Hill and Nahant was all his;" and adds that he "bought Nahant and Sagomer Hill and Swamscoate of Black William for two pestle stones." Not an exorbitant price, compared with that at which those lands would sell for in this year of grace. In the legal proceedings of the town to obtain permanent relief from the annoying claims of Mr. Dexter, Mr. Witter testified in support of the purchase.

Black Will's Cliff, the commanding battlement of turf-crowned rock that rises near the southeasterly end of King's Beach, is supposed to have been the site of Poquannum's habitation. It must have been a lovely and salubrious spot in those days, as it still is, though shorn of much of its pristine beauty and romance. He is supposed to have been the same Indian who, in 1602, went on board of Gosnold's ship, and to the surprise of the voyagers welcomed them in plain English, being likewise clothed in an English suit.

Mr. Witter died in 1659, aged seventy-five years.

GEORGE KEYSAR.—Mr. Keysar is stated to have been here as early as 1630, and to have settled as a





mill at Swampscott. If so, he was probably a miller without a mill, for Mr. Humfrey's mill, which appears to have been the only one within a large circuit, was on Sagamore Hill, in Lynn. In Thompson's Sketches this is found: "George Keysar [Keysar], a tanner in Swampscott, and who was admitted a freeman in December 14, 1638 (Savage says March 14, 1639), was probably connected with Mr. Ingalls's establishment." There is no doubt that Mr. Keysar was a tanner, nor is there any doubt that he carried on the business in what is now known as West Lynn, and that his tannery was on Boston Street, very near where the tubular wells were sunk, in 1880. It was in a tan-pit of his that a child of Thomas Newhall, who lived near, was drowned in 1665. This clearly appears by the recorded testimony of two witnesses: "We, Robert Potter and John Newhall: understandin by too testimonies, That Thomas Newhall's child was drowned in a pett, which pett we heard George Keesar say he digged: farther we doe Testifie that George Keesar had a tanfatt in that pett. I, John Newhall, doe furdur testifie that George Keysar did take up his fatt and left the pett open."

This George Keysar was a respectable man, and married the daughter of Edward Holyoke, ancestor of the venerated Dr. Holyoke, of Salem, and others of the name hereabouts. He is thus remembered in his father-in-law's will, dated December 25, 1658: "I dispose of the yoke of oxen and my mare to my son-in-law, George Keysar." He also disposes of articles of clothing to one and another, and then says, "all the rest of my wearing apparell to my son, Keysar." He, Keysar, was one of the committee appointed by the town, in 1657, to oppose the claim of "farmer Dexter" to Nahant, under his purchase from Black Will, for a suit of clothes. He seems, after getting well along in years, to have removed to Salem, and there, perhaps, was a pioneer in the great tanning business of the present day.

Confusion may have arisen in this case, also, by the uncertainty as to what in these early days was meant, territorially, by "Swampscott." Or there may have been a confusion of names. There was a *Thomas* Keysar here quite early—perhaps a brother of George, whom the Lynn people would probably very readily give over to Swampscott. He figures somewhat largely and not very creditably on the records. "One Keysar, of Lynn," Winthrop calls him. In 1645 he sailed as mate under a Captain Smith, who is represented to have been a Boston church member, in the ship "Rainbow," on a cruise to Guinea, in a slave-hunting expedition. And on the African coast and other parts, things seem to have been carried on with a high hand. In conjunction with some English adventurers, they attacked the natives and killed many. Winthrop says that some of the mariners confessed that "near one hundred were slain." They had on hand but two of the slaves when they reached Boston, but great indignation was manifested on ac-

count of their nefarious traffic. These two were the first slaves in New England. Keysar and his captain had serious difficulties which led to violence, or at least threats of violence, while abroad, and lawsuits at home. The court adjudged Keysar to have damaged Smith to a considerable amount, and required him to pay a substantial sum. But in regard to the negroes for whom Smith claimed compensation, the court says, "for the negars, they being none of his, but stolen, we thinke mette to alowe nothing." They also, in adjusting matters, required that "Captain Smith should allow Kasar 10*l*. for threatening to pistol him." The two were also proceeded against criminally by Richard Saltonstall, as prosecuting officer, who, in his presentation to the court, says: "I conceive mysef called by virtue of my place to act in the case concerning the Negars taken by Captain Smith and Mr. Keser; wherein it is apparent that Mr. Keser upon a Sabbath day gave chace to certaine Negers; and upon the same day took diverse of them; and at another time killed others and burned one of their townes." A committee was subsequently appointed "to examine witnesses and draw up y<sup>e</sup> case about Captain Smith and M<sup>r</sup>. Kesar killing, stealing and wronging y<sup>e</sup> negars." But it is not necessary to pursue this matter in detail to its final termination. One purpose in introducing it is to show the utter detestation in which slavery was held by this community even at that early period, when the civilized world regarded it in a very different light. There is little doubt that the conduct of Smith and Keysar was the occasion of the determined action of the court against "the hainous and crying sinn of man stealing," which took place soon after. There is nothing special to indicate that *Thomas* was the Swampscott Keysar, though he was a sailor and that was a maritime settlement. He evidently lived in some part of Lynn, and there will hardly be any great neighborhood strife for the honor of harboring him.

It may be well to remark here that confusion has in many cases been made by attempting to identify some of the early settlers by their occupation. They generally followed different callings at different periods, and sometimes simultaneously. In the old country they pursued one kind of business and were designated by that. But here it was different, for there was not enough in one kind of industry to keep them busy. Thus even at a considerably later period, the father of Franklin, while in England, was a dyer, but after settling in Boston he found that there was little to be done in that trade, and so set up as a tallow chandler. He was therefore known both as a dyer and a candle-maker.

DANIEL KING AND HIS FAMILY.—Just at the foot of the hill, where Lewis Street, Lynn, reaches the Swampscott line, lies King's Beach. It is one of the larger beaches that stretch along our shore, and is of hard, compact, fine and sparkling sand. Here, and



upon Blaney's Beach, which lies a little farther eastward, were for many years witnessed scenes of great activity and picturesqueness, when, towards evening, the numerous little fishing crafts returned with their daily fares ready to be disposed of to customers in waiting for their finny merchandise. Since the introduction of trawl-fishing, however, which was about thirty years ago, some of the peculiar features of the stirring picture have gradually changed.

King's Beach perpetuates the name of a family once conspicuous in the vicinity, and possibly Blaney's Beach derived its name from Blaney King, a member of the family, though most probably from some of the Blaney family, who also appeared thereabout at an early day.

The King family, as a whole, enjoyed a good local reputation, for they were enterprising, well-connected and evidently ambitious in a worldly way. Though located in and about Swampscott, they owned lands in other quarters. There were Daniel, the father, and Daniel and Ralph, the sons. Daniel, the elder, seems to have suffered under some bodily infirmity, as, in 1646, the court says: "In ans<sup>r</sup> to y<sup>e</sup> petition of Daniell King, itt is ordered y<sup>e</sup> y<sup>e</sup> petition<sup>r</sup> shall appeare before y<sup>e</sup> military officer's of y<sup>e</sup> east regiment, at their next meeting, who shall examine his allegations concerning his not appearance at dayes of trayning, to performe such service as might have binn imposed on him, and to proceed w<sup>th</sup> him according to lawe; but for time to come, this Courte doth discharge him, in regard to his bodily infirmity, from attendance vpon ordinary traynings, for any service in armes." His goods had been taken by the captain of the Lynn train-band, for neglect of military duty.

In 1669 the "Dolphin," a vessel belonging in Charlestown, lost a topsail and some other rigging in Ipswich Bay, and these were taken up at Lynn by Mr. King—Daniel King, the elder, it is probable—and he, for some reason that does not appear, refused to give them up, notwithstanding recompense had "been tendered for all his paynes and charge in securing the same. Uppon application for redress, by the master, Major Hathorne was empowered by the Court to heare and determine the case according to lawe, to allow what recompense he shall judge meet, and cause said sayle and rigging to be delivered to the said master." This transaction does not seem to leave the old gentleman in a very favorable light; but there may have been explanatory circumstances.

Then there was the remarkable lawsuit, Taylor against King, brought to recover damages for the goring to death of the plaintiff's mare by the defendant's bull, which was decided in 1646. The vicious character of the bull was brought in question, and the testimony develops some of the peculiar customs of the times. Hon. Robert Bridges, the magistrate who granted the warrant for the arrest, at Swampscott, of the three Baptist missionaries from Rhode Island, Clarke, Crandall and Holmes, in his

testimony, says: "... myself being on horseback with my wyfe behind me, y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> Bull stood in the high way as I was riding a Longe. When I came up to the Bull, not knowing whos beast it was, neither thinking of any opposition, I struck at the bull w<sup>th</sup> my stick, to put him out of the way; ymedietely y<sup>e</sup> bull made att my mare, and placed his horn vpon her shoulder, and had well nigh overthroned both the mare and her riders; and although I endeavored to shunne y<sup>e</sup> bull, yet he still so prest vpon mee y<sup>t</sup> I cannot but conceave had not the neareman bin att hand to beat him off that some hurt had bin done, either to o'selves or my mare, or both; but god's good hand better provided." Much other testimony touching the character of the bull was given; but it need not be introduced here.

The judgment in the case was as follows: "Bost. 7: 3: 1646. It was agreed that in the Judgm<sup>t</sup> of Lawe, it is to be concluded that y<sup>e</sup> bull did kill y<sup>e</sup> mare, and y<sup>t</sup> y<sup>e</sup> owner of y<sup>e</sup> Bull, upon such notice as he had, ought to have taken order to prevent any future mischief." . . . "Salem, 18 5mo. 1646. The magistrates assembled at Salem doe judge y<sup>t</sup> m<sup>r</sup> King shall pay halfe the vullue of the mare unto m<sup>r</sup> Tayler, w<sup>h</sup> is Judged to bee 7£, that is, according to the rate of 14£ for the mare."

Daniel King, the elder, died May 28, 1672, leaving an estate appraised at £1528 9s. The son Daniel married Tabitha Walker, a daughter of Capt. Richard Walker, who lived a little west of Saugus River, and who became a member of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery at its organization, in 1638. The son Ralph married Elizabeth, also a daughter of Capt. Walker. There was a Shubael Walker, a farmer, living at Swampscott in 1640, who also had the title of captain. He was apparently a sort of migratory personage living at times in Rowley, where he was town clerk, in Haverhill, Bradford and Reading. He married in Lynn.

Ralph King was a man of considerable local note in his day. His name stands first of the grantees in the Indian deed of Lynn, executed in 1686. He was one of the "Seven Prudential Men," or selectmen, in 1678. In 1679 he was lieutenant of a new troop of forty-eight men formed at Lynn in that year, his father-in-law, Richard Walker, being commander. Among his territorial possessions was the romantic little headland now known as Phillips Point. A very commendable episode in his life was his zeal in opposing the impudent pretensions of Secretary Randolph, when, in 1688, he attempted, through a petition to Governor Andros, to become possessor of the whole of Nahant, with the pleasant dream, no doubt, of erecting it into a lordly manor. But Mr. King was not left to work single-handed in this important matter, for such strong coadjutors as John Burrill, Oliver Purchis and Rev. Mr. Shepard entered into the affair with equal enthusiasm. He died in 1691, leaving an estate quite considerable for the time, the inventory footing up £2365 4s.





Daniel King, the younger, does not appear to have been quite so public-spirited as his brother Ralph, though he was active, if not always successful, in business. In a memorandum dated May 6, 1653, he says: "I have rec. of my cosen, William Guy [of London], a parcell of goods amounting to the valew of forty-five pounds, flourteene shillings, nine pence starling money, which goods I have rec. upon the account of Guy as an adventure by him, promising to doe my outmost indevor for the sale of the aforesaid goods, and to make him returns by Christmas next, if," etc. But such "ifs" seem to have intervened that a settlement was long delayed, and the matter finally got into court. Five years after—that is, in 1658—his father, Daniel King, Sr., makes the following statement: "Boston, this 14th of August, 1658, these presents witness that I, Daniell King, of Lyn, sener, doe acknowledge that Capt. Jn<sup>o</sup>. Peirce, commander of the ship 'Exchange,' hath bene with mee and demanded of mee a debt of aboutt forty-five pounds, which my sone Daniell, did receive in goods of Mr. Wm. Guy, of London, haberdasher; and my Answer is that my sone Daniel is gone to burbados and hath carried with him goods in order to the making the returne much more than I can judge will ballance that acc<sup>o</sup>. And I hope either by this time or very sudenly hee will return a satisfactory acc<sup>o</sup>." Two years after the foregoing—namely, in 1660—Mrs. Elizabeth King, mother of the delinquent Daniel, Jr., comes to the rescue of her son's credit and reputation in the following propitiatory epistle to her nephew, Guy: "from Linn, in New England, Decemb<sup>r</sup> the 28th, 1660. . . . After respeccks presented, these earr to lett you under stand that yours wee have received. Return you manny thanks for your patiente lines, but being much troubled that wee yett cannot answer your ends according to your expecttations. Many ways wee have tryed, by Burbadoes, by Bills of Exchange, and by getting of Bever for you, but as yet cannot procure anny of them. But by the next shepping, I hoape wee shall find out some way or other whereby you shall have sattisfaction; my sonn Ralph and my sonn Blaney douth intend, if pleas god they live and doe well, to com to England; soe hoaping that you will bee pleased to ad one mitt of patience unto your abundance which you have had, soe resting and remaining your ever loving Ante till death. *Elizabeth King.*"

But few of the old King family are now to be found in Swampscott. Some of the descendants, however, are still making a mark in other places.

It will not be inappropriate to introduce brief notices of a few of the other families that have from time to time become conspicuous in Swampscott; especially of such as have not come under notice elsewhere.

BLANEY is an old Swampscott name. The first of the family here was John Blaney, who came in 1659. It does not appear just where he settled, but he mar-

ried Hannah, thought to be a daughter of Daniel King, the elder, and a sister of Ralph, so well known for his public spirit and business activity. He had six children, and some of his descendants remain in Swampscott and Lynn and many are scattered abroad. For his second wife he married Elizabeth, widow of Thomas Purchis, then in the eighth month of her widowhood. Mr. Purchis died in 1678, at the alleged age of a hundred and one years. He had been in Lynn but about a dozen years, having removed hither from Maine, where he had long been engaged in the fur trade and where he owned extensive tracts of land, notably that on which Brunswick now stands, of which place he was the first settler. His house there was attacked by the Indians and pillaged at the time of the King Philip War, 1675, and he then removed hither. Blaney's Beach and Blaney Street perpetuate the name. The prosperity of the fishing business in early times was largely attributable to their enterprise, and some of the name are yet among the most thrifty in that industry.

BURRILL.—The Burrills appeared in Lynn at a very early day of the colony. George came in 1630 and was one of the richest of the planters. He settled near Tower Hill, in what is now known as West Lynn. He had sons,—George, Francis and John. It was long a famous family, and counted so many worthy sons and daughters that it was called the royal family of Lynn. So much concerning them appears in other connections in these pages, that little is needed here.

The Hon. Ebenezer Burrill, a grandson of George, the first comer, was born in 1679, and was a younger brother of the eminent presiding officer, John Burrill, so long in the House of Deputies, and who was compared by Governor Hutchinson to Sir Arthur Onslow, who had the reputation of being the most accomplished speaker the House of Commons ever had. Ebenezer was himself much in public life, being a member of the Crown Governor's Council and a Representative for a number of years.

It was the Hon. Ebenezer who became the first settler of the name of Burrill in Swampscott. He settled, as elsewhere stated, on the estate given him by his father, and which included a portion of that belonging to the late Hon. Enoch Redington Mudge. The old farm-house, which Mr. Mudge deeded to his daughter, Fanny Olive, in 1863, is the identical house in which Mr. Burrill lived. Whether he or his father built the house does not seem certain, though it was doubtless built about the time he took up his residence there. He was thrifty and able to provide well for his family of ten children. And the writer has some pleasure, perhaps pardonable, in being able to trace his line to so respectable a source. Both his grandmothers were granddaughters of this worthy of our early days. Mr. Burrill died on the 6th of September, 1761, at the age of eighty-two years. Some of his Swampscott lands are still owned by descend-





ants, and though not many now remain, the name is perpetuated in Burrill Street.

Could space be allowed, it would be interesting to speak somewhat at large of others of the older families and also of deserving individuals of later days.

There was Captain NATHANIEL BLANCHARD, who came to Swampscott while yet a boy, determined to work his way up in the world. He served in the War of 1812; was captain of a company under the old military organization; was a selectman of Lynn, and a warm politician in the old Jacksonian days, and sometimes commanded the stalwart processions of the unterrified voters who marched up to the polls at the old Town Hall, on South Common Street, with their band of music. Good-natured and complaisant was he when his cohorts were not interfered with, but unyielding and defiant when opposing partisans stood in the way. He did a thrifty business for many years in the fishing line, and was the builder of the first brick-house in Swampscott. He died in 1871.

EBENEZER WEEKS, who came to Swampscott in 1805, as poor as most of us, rose to be a substantial and much respected citizen. He engaged largely in the fisheries, and pursued the lobster trade long and to much profit. He also kept a public-house near Blancy's Beach, where many temporary sojourners have enjoyed his hospitality. He was a good specimen of the true Yankee, who is ever ready to turn his hand to whatever promises beneficial results, and his good judgment was generally a safe guide in his various enterprises.

INGALLS FAMILY.—This ancient family has been so frequently spoken of in other connections, that little need be said here. From those first settlers, Francis Ingalls and Edmund, his brother, the former of whom located as a tanner just within what is now the western border of Swampscott, and the latter in the same neighborhood, just over the present eastern border of Lynn, have sprung descendants who have in almost every walk of life added honor to the family name. At the present day are to be found prominent representatives in all departments of business, in science and literature. In political stations, from the Senate of the United States down to the humble municipal office, and in military and diplomatic positions others appear, faithfully acquitting themselves. Not many New England families can boast of a better record. A few of the lineage still remain in Swampscott.

PHILLIPS.—This name has long been known at Swampscott. The first settler of the family seems to have been Charles Phillips. His wife's name was Hannah, and he had two children, John and Hannah. He may have been father of the John, mentioned by Mr. Lewis under date 1650. The name of Walter Phillips likewise appears not long after. And it was to Walter and John that Elizabeth and Daniel King, in March, 1693, sold some four hundred acres of land which was a part of the Humphrey grant, and in-

cluded some of the land eastward from Fishing Point, which has of late years become of great value for summer resorts. Walter became a Quaker, and refused to perform military duty, for which a fourth of an acre of his land was seized in 1703, and sold for payment of his fines. And he was one of the seventeen signers of the letter sent by the Lynn Quakers to Governor Dudley, who had requested a list of the names of those of the faith in the town. It was likewise signed by Walter Phillips, Junior. Walter and John were ancestors of some of the most wealthy and conspicuous members of the family in later times. Indeed, it might have been said, for many years, that not to know the Phillipses was not to know Swampscott. It was an energetic and thrifty family, as a whole, some being engaged in agriculture and some in the fisheries.

THOMAS WIDGER.—Capt. Widger was a typical representative of one class of the old Swampscott seamen. Though a native of Marblehead, he made Swampscott his home for many years, and died here on the 21st of January, 1871, at the age of eighty years. He commenced a sea-faring life when but nine years old, shipping at that time for a fishing voyage to the Grand Banks. He afterwards sailed on merchant voyages, and early in the War of 1812, was taken prisoner by the British, and remained a year in a prison ship. He was subsequently in the privateer service, sailing from Salem; was in the famous cruiser "America," which was said to be the fastest ship on the sea at that time. She was extremely fortunately in her captures, bringing into port property valued at considerably more than \$1,000,000. He was also on board that other noted Salem privateer, the brig "Grand Turk," which was manned by a hundred and fifty men, and carried eighteen nine-pounders. She was at first commanded by Capt. Holten J. Breed, a brother of Andrews Breed, who so long kept Lynn Hotel, and uncle of the fifth mayor of Lynn. She captured nearly half a score of rich prizes, one with an invoice of £30,000 sterling, and another with specie to the amount of \$17,500. At the close of the war, the "Grand Turk" was sold to the eminent merchant, William Gray. One of the cannons captured by her found its way to Swampscott, where it has done service as a patriotic mouth-piece on many occasions.

Mr. Widger, after the war, was again in the Grand Bank fishery; and continued to follow the seas till age so pressed upon him that he fell back into the humble capacity of a dory fisherman. His habits were temperate, and through life he enjoyed remarkably good health and well-preserved faculties, never requiring the use of spectacles in reading the finest print. An interesting incident in his stirring life, and one indicative of his horror of inhumanity in a sailor, was his joining in the famous feat of tarring and feathering "Old Floyd Ireson," which remarkable performance has been so often celebrated by his-



torian and poet. It should, however, be kept in mind that it was long since positively denied, and with a show of much reason, that Skipper Ireson was guilty of the "hord-horted" act of refusing assistance to the wrecked crew, which was the occasion of his ignominious treatment, but was the victim of false accusation.

In the career of Capt. Widger were aptly exemplified the vicissitudes of a sailor's life.

ENOCH REDINGTON MUDGE.—Upon the left of the highway near the entrance of Lower Swampscott by the Lynn road, and overlooking King's Beach, portions of Nahant, a long stretch of the bay, with rugged and precipitous shores, one may observe a beautiful stone villa with an extensive lawn in front and picturesque surroundings, indicating taste and wealth in the proprietor. This was the residence of the late Enoch R. Mudge.

The Mudge family did not appear in this immediate vicinity at a very early period, though the name was known in the colony as early as 1638. In the desperate encounter with the Indians at Bloody Brook, September 18, 1675, James Mudge, a soldier in Lathrop's "flower of Essex," was killed.

Mr. Mudge, the subject of this notice, was born in Orrington, Me., on the 22d of March, 1812, and was a son of Rev. Enoch Mudge, a native of Lynn, and the first Methodist minister born in New England, a man of fervid piety, great mental activity, and possessing, withal, something of a poetic turn. At an early age Enoch Redington was united in marriage with Miss Caroline A. Patten, of Portland, Me., and they became the parents of seven children. One son and two daughters survived their parents. The eldest son, Charles Redington, a lieutenant-colonel in the Union forces, was killed in the battle of Gettysburg, July 3, 1863, and the eldest daughter, Fanny Olive, died July 23, 1879. It was especially in memory of these that Mr. Mudge erected the beautiful St. Stephen's Memorial Church, on South Common Street, Lynn, the corner-stone being laid on the 19th of May, 1881.

Mr. Mudge purchased the Swampscott estate in 1843, and soon after set about erecting the villa above alluded to, and improving and embellishing the grounds, which embraced about a hundred and thirty acres; and there he continued to reside during the warm months, till his death, on Saturday, the 1st of October, 1881. He was at his place of business, in Boston, on Friday, and on his way home, towards night, called at the church in Lynn, to inspect the concluding work there. Up to the time of retiring at night he appeared in his usual health; but the next morning, before rising, was seized by a severe pain in the head. Medical attendance was promptly summoned, and every effort made for his relief, but without effect, and before noon he had breathed his last.

The burial service over the remains of Mr. Mudge was held in St. Stephen's Church, then just on the verge of completion, on Tuesday, the 4th of October.

It was the first service of any kind ever held within those walls, was simple and in strict accordance with the rubrics. The edifice was entirely filled, large numbers of distinguished persons from abroad and many of the clergy being present. The large attendance of the authorities and citizens of Swampscott, and of the people of Lynn, indicated the high esteem in which he was held by his neighbors. The remains were conveyed to the cloister garth, and there, with prayer and sacred melody, and words of Heavenly promise and amid the tears of loved kindred, committed to their final resting-place.

The death of no one in this community has produced more wide-spread and unfeigned sorrow than that of Mr. Mudge, for he was universally respected for his integrity as a business man, his great liberality in the furtherance of all good works, and for his Christian principles and genial manners. By diligence, enterprise and uncommon business capacity he had accumulated a large fortune, which he evidently regarded as entrusted to him for a higher purpose than to be expended in mere self-gratification. For many of the latter years of his life he was extensively concerned in cotton and woollen manufacturing, though in earlier manhood his attention was directed to other pursuits.

Mr. Mudge undoubtedly regarded the erection of St. Stephen's Church as the crowning work of his life. And that elegant structure will long remain his noblest visible monument. It is gratifying to think that he lived to see the work well-nigh completed, though it may be lamented that in the ways of a mysterious Providence he was not spared for a few additional days that he might witness the solemn ceremony of consecration—a consummation he so devoutly contemplated. His sudden decease sent a thrill through the community such as is rarely experienced. And the numerous meetings that were held in Boston and elsewhere by business men and public associations, and the eulogistic addresses and resolutions of sympathy showed that one held in far more than ordinary esteem had been called from among us. Governor Alexander H. Rice, in an address before the Commercial Club at Boston, on the 15th of October, 1881, paid an affectionate tribute to the memory of Mr. Mudge, from which a few passages may be here introduced: "Mr. Mudge was so generally known and so universally respected and beloved, that since his departure every breath has seemed to bear his eulogy until the atmosphere has become eloquent with his praise." His biography "has all the merit and all the romance of so many American lives, which, from small beginnings, have widened into honorable and notable results. We, who lived in the same city with him and were familiar with his daily walk and conversation and deeds, hardly appreciated him until he was gone. It was difficult to enter the rounds of enterprise or charity and not encounter him; for he was so interested in





them all, that the whole social fabric seemed constituted with him as an elemental part, and all so interdependent with him, that we quite forgot the coming day when he would go, and the fabric stagger for a while under the loss of vitality which he contributed.

"I turned away from his grave the other day, as doubtless some of you did, with a sense of personal bereavement. The world seemed more vacant, life less cheerful; shadows fell in unwonted places, and we walked pensively and with hushed voices, lest we should disturb the supernatural silence that was abroad. A friend of mine, with whom Mr. Mudge had been intimate, came to my office and said: 'I feel as if I had lost something, and I grope about fruitlessly to find it, and return with a larger appreciation of what has gone from us.'

"Do we not, must we not, in the consideration of such a life and of such a death, feel an illumination which dispels the shades of sorrow?—a life so full of honor and so filled out in usefulness to its latest hours. In the church of his affections and in whose form of worship he delighted, among his life-long prayers was one that he might be delivered from sudden death; and his prayer was answered. No summons could be sudden to him; none find him unprepared. Besides, to such as he, especially,

'There is no death;  
What seems so is transition; this life of mortal breath  
Is but the suburb of the life elysian,  
Whose portal we call death.'

In person Mr. Mudge was of full medium size, remarkably well formed, dignified in manners and always very attentive to those who addressed him, whether high or low. He was quick of apprehension, self possessed, decided in his views and able at all times to give a reason for the faith that was in him. It was impossible for one to have intercourse with him for an hour and not perceive that he was a man of superior mental endowment. And those who had fellowship with him in church work were at once impressed with his fidelity to his clearly-defined principles, his bright, cheerful anticipations, and his freedom from bigotry.

For political honors he did not aspire, though he served a term in the State Senate. Yet he took commendable interest in public affairs, labored and expended liberally for the advancement of enterprises that he believed were for the public good. He manifested especial interest in young business men, gave lectures to them in Boston and improved every opportunity to urge upon them the formation of habits of strict integrity, industry and moral rectitude, as the ground on which alone permanent prosperity could rest. Though he made no pretensions as an orator, he was yet a very effective speaker and one who always secured the close attention of his auditors. His style was earnest and indicative of his own deep convictions. His language was well chosen,

his points concisely and clearly presented, and his arguments effective from resting on a basis of sound common sense.

Mrs. Mudge survived her husband but a short time. And her remains, together with those of their children, Charles Redington and Fanny Olive, were laid beside his in the garth of St. Stephen's.

In 1886 the parish placed a fine chime of ten bells in the tower of the church, consecrating them "to the Triune God and the memory of him who gave the Church." The first ringing was on Easter-day.

## CHAPTER CXXII.

### SWAMPSCOTT—(Continued).

#### MISCELLANEOUS SUBJECTS.

*Egg Rock—Sea-Serpent—War of the Rebellion—Statistics—Religious Societies and other Organizations.*

EGG ROCK.—Directly in front of Swampscott, and about three miles distant, lies Egg Rock, solitary, time-worn and storm-riven. It rises eighty-six feet above the tide, and in outline, when viewed from the north, bears some resemblance to a couchant lion, a circumstance which, in poetic conceit, has produced the figure of the king of beasts on perpetual guard against invasions from the sea. True, it is not so perfect in delineation as the Lion of St. Mark's, that guards old Venice, or Belgium's Lion, that overlooks the field of Waterloo; but the elastic imagination is sufficient to supply deficiencies.

The Rock can be reached by small boats in calm weather, and a landing may be made at one point, and only one. It is of compact feldspar, three acres in extent, and has about one acre of arable soil. It was all in view of the celebrated scientist, Agassiz, as he meditatively sat upon the veranda of his delightful summer home at Nahant, and, as may well be supposed, attracted many an inquiring gaze,—inquiring as to its origin and age. It is said that he pronounced it an outcropping of the rocky base of Nahant, and asserted that it must have stood there, one of nature's earliest pyramids, ages before Europe emerged from the chaotic mass.

The name originated in the fact that formerly great numbers of sea-birds there deposited their eggs; few, however, are at present seen about there. The Rock was ceded to the United States in 1856, and a lighthouse soon after erected upon it, at a cost of three thousand seven hundred dollars, the light being shown for the first time on the night of the 15th of September, 1856. It was at first a white light, but in June, 1857, was changed to red. The dome is one hundred and seven feet above the sea.

It is in the waters about Egg Rock that the famous



sea-serpent has pursued his gambols, attracted, perhaps, by the abundance of his favorite food. Sharks, too, are sometimes seen, opening their hungry jaws for a dainty morsel, that may not be found in deeper water. And even the venturesome, or more probably bewildered, whale has occasionally been seen within the dangerous precinct. Anciently, great quantities of the smaller fish were found here, and some kinds that are now seldom seen; fish, as well as birds, having steadily retired before the pressing tide of human population.

#### "THE SEA-SERPENT."

"The great sea-shake 's the subject of my verse;  
For, though my eyes have never yet beheld him,  
Nor never shall desire the hideous sight,  
Yet many accounts of men of truth unstained,  
Whose every word I firmly do believe,  
Show it to be a very frightful monster."

—*Peter Bess's Norland*, 1749.

Year after year come renewed accounts of the appearance of this monster of the deep upon our coast—accounts which, in any other case, would be received without doubt or suspicion. But, somehow, the word of the most truthful is here subjected to criticism; and while there may be no charge of deliberate falsehood, there is evidently a belief that some deceptive appearance, aided by awakened curiosity and credulity, have supplied the marvelous details. There certainly is no wonder that still a large majority of sea-side residents have no belief in the existence of such a marine wanderer. To this day, with here and there an exception, the Swampscott fishermen, the yachtsmen and those living near the shore ridicule the idea of the existence of such a prodigy. Probably not above three in twelve of the old fishermen believe that anything more like a serpent than a horse-mackerel ever sported in these waters. But this is negative; and the positive testimony of even three credible persons may reasonably be expected to outweigh it in most minds. Three persons might see a thing that forty others did not see, though in a position where they could hardly have avoided the sight; but their not seeing it could not strike it out of existence.

The first appearance in the waters of Lynn and Swampscott, at least since the white settlers came, of what was supposed to be a sea-serpent, was in the summer of 1819, and the writer well remembers the excitement that for some days prevailed. Many people from all the region round about, some in carriages, some on horseback and more on foot, at times assembled on the beaches with glasses and straining eyes, to watch for the mysterious stranger. It happened to be the year in which the notable Nahant Hotel was built, the fame of which went rapidly abroad, attracting great numbers of genteel guests; but whether the serpent was emulous of being reckoned in with such company, or was merely summoned as an outside attraction, it is not the purpose here to inquire. No

matter what the envious keepers of other establishments and their friends surmised.

There have been too many descriptions of the alleged sea-serpent, to require any particular details here; nevertheless, it may be well to quote a brief account given by Nathan D. Chase, who saw him on his first visit, in 1819. Mr. Chase was a man whose word was above reproach, and who had always lived so near the sea as to be little likely to be deceived by what might be the mere resemblance of a serpent; yet he was young and of course subject to the sometimes deceiving enthusiasm of youth. Says Mr. Chase: "I had the pleasure of seeing his snakeship off Long Beach and Red Rock. He passed along within one hundred feet from where I stood, giving me a very good sight of him. At that time he carried his head out of water about two feet, and his speed was like that of an ordinary ocean steamer. What I saw of his length was from fifty to sixty feet. It was very difficult to count the bunches, or bony fins, upon his back, as by his undulating motion they did not all appear at once. This accounts, in part, for the varied descriptions given of him by different parties. His appearance at the surface of the water was occasional, and but for a short time. This is the best description I can give of him from my own observation, and I saw the monster as truly, though not quite so clearly, as I ever saw anything."

Four respectable persons made oath to having seen him on the 20th of August, 1820. Their testimony is embodied in the following deposition of Andrew Reynolds, one of the number, the others concurring in his statements:

"I, Andrew Reynolds, of Lynn, of lawful age, depose and say: 'That on Saturday, the fifth day of August instant, about 1 o'clock P.M., I discovered in the water, near Phillips Beach, at Swampscott, an animal different from any that I had ever seen before. He was lying on the surface of the water, which was at that time very smooth, and appeared to be about 50 or 60 feet long. Jonathan B. Lewis and Benjamin King, who work in the same shop with me, also saw him, and we took a boat and rowed towards him. We approached within about 30 yards of him, and had a very distinct view of him. He had a head, about two feet long, and shaped somewhat like an egg, which he carried out of the water when he was moving. There were several protuberances on his back, the highest points of which appeared to be seven or eight inches above the level of the water. He was perfectly black. When we first drew towards him, he was moving westerly from Phillips Point, and as we drew near to him, he turned and moved eastward, and when we got within about thirty yards of him he sank under water and disappeared.'

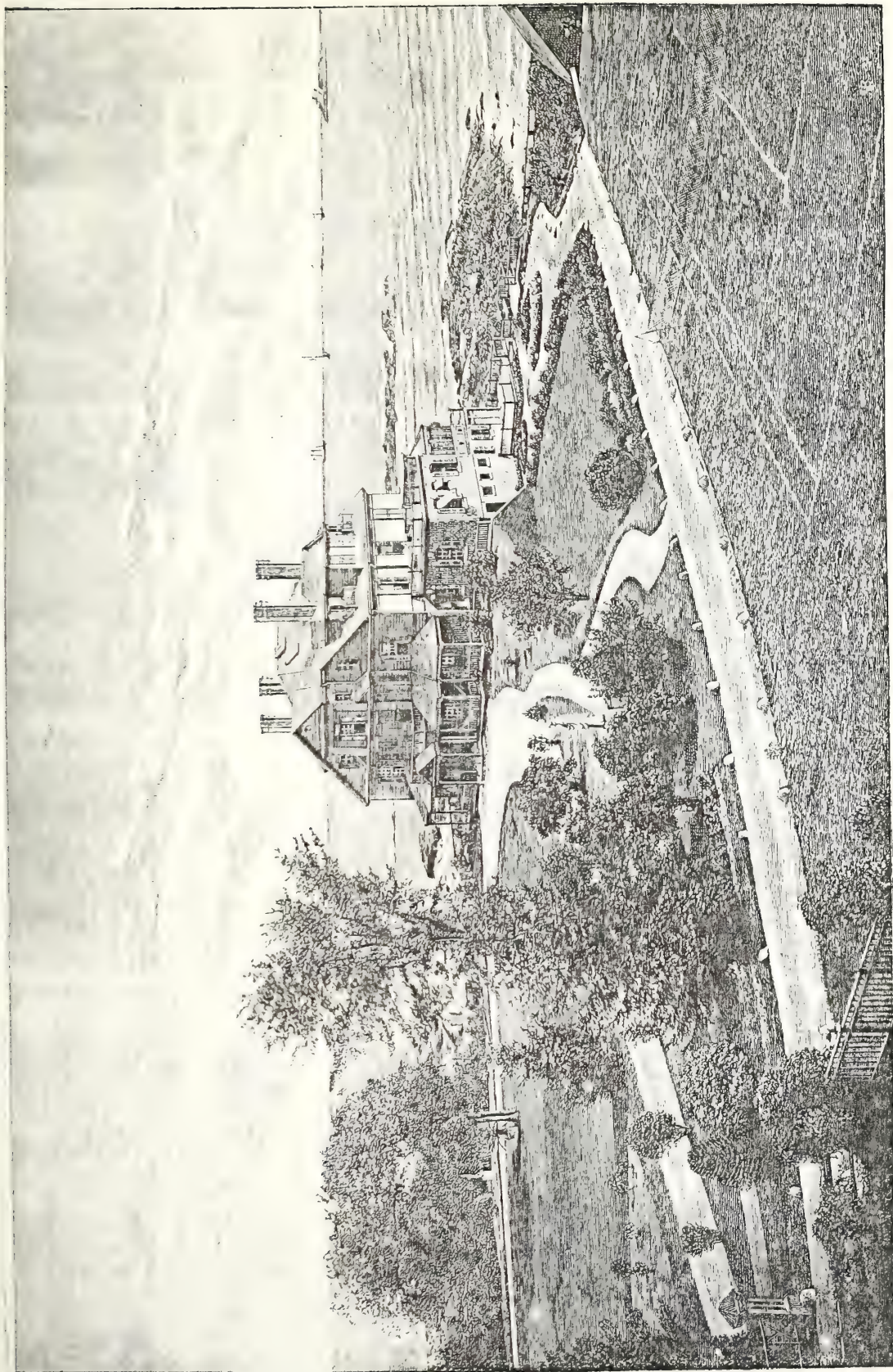
The learned naturalist Agassiz said, in a lecture delivered in Philadelphia, March 20, 1849:

"I have asked myself, in connection with this subject, whether there is not such an animal as the Sea-serpent. There are many who will doubt the existence of such a creature until it can be brought under the dissecting knife; but it has been seen by so many on whom we may rely, that it is wrong to doubt any longer. The truth is, however, that if a naturalist had to sketch the outlines of an Ichthyosaurus or Plesiosaurus from the remains we have of them, he would make a drawing very similar to the sea-serpent as it has been described. There is reason to think that the parts are soft and perishable, but I still consider it probable that it will be the good fortune of some person on the coast of Norway or North America to find a living representative of this type of reptile, which is thought to have died out."

In 1849, John Marston, a respectable and truthful resident of Swampscott, in an affidavit sworn to before







STRODEHURST,  
RESIDENCE OF CHARLES W. GALLOUPE, ESQ.,  
GALLOUPE'S POINT, SWAMPSCOTT, MASS.





Waldo Thompson, a justice of the peace, says that as he was walking over Nahant Beach, on the 3d of August, his attention was suddenly arrested by seeing in the water, within two or three hundred yards of the shore, a singular-looking fish, in the form of a serpent. He had a fair view of him, and at once concluded that he was the veritable sea-serpent. His head was out of water to the extent of about a foot, and he remained in view from fifteen to twenty minutes, when he swam off toward King's Beach. Mr. Marston judged that the animal was from eighty to a hundred feet in length at least, and says, "I saw the whole body of the serpent; not his wake, but the fish itself. It would rise in the water with an undulatory motion and then all his body would sink, except his head. Then his body would rise again. His head was above water all the time. This was about 8 o'clock A.M. It was quite calm. I have been constantly engaged in fishing since my youth, and I have seen all sorts of fishes, and hundreds of horse-mackerel, but I never before saw anything like this."

But there has been so much fanciful pro and con theorizing by learned naturalists on the question, that the tendency has been rather to increase than allay doubt. It is claimed by some—among them it is said Professor Baird is to be ranked—that fish have no maturity, and hence may live and grow perpetually. It is asserted that there is a pike now alive in Russia which was known to have been living as far back as the discovery of America by Columbus; and that in the Royal Aquarium at St. Petersburg are fish which were there nearly a century and a half ago. Now, if the supposed extinct *Ichthyosaurus*, or more likely the *Plesiosaurus*,—that enormous marine reptile, whose remains have been found,—were really fish (and the perpetuity of fish-life is admitted), is it unreasonable to suppose that an individual or two of the race may have escaped the common casualties of fish-life and survived to our time? And if the date of the sea-serpent's birth does really lie away off in pre-historic ages, he has had ample time to attain his enormous length. But if one has escaped to exhibit himself in these latter days, possibly a few others have, and perhaps, propagated in unknown seas, whence there has been a solitary emigration to our waters; or even more than one may have made his way hither, for the descriptions so vary as to warrant the conclusion that several are believed to have been seen. Sea-serpent stories are by no means new. They are found far back in history, and are always tinged by the apprehensions and superstitions of the times and places of their origin. Bishop Pontoppidan, of Norway, writing in 1751, says: "They tell me that these serpents fling themselves in a wide circle round a boat, so that the men are surrounded on all sides; and that they will sometimes raise up their frightful heads and snap a man out of a boat."

The remark that 1819 was the year of the first appearance of the sea-serpent in our waters was

not strictly true, as related to some other places. He was described as having visited the waters of Cape Ann, one or two years before.

And the year 1886 becomes memorable for his again vouchsafing his presence there. Several of the numerous summer sojourners testify to having seen him, and give circumstantial accounts of his enormous proportions and dignified movements as he passed in review. But then Cape Ann and the adjacent waters have abounded in wonders ever since good old Roger Conant pitched his tent there. William Wood, of Lynn, who wrote in 1633, says,— "Some affirm that they have seen a lion at Cape Ann. . . . Some, likewise, being lost in the woods, have heard such terrible roarings as have made them much aghast, which must be either devils or lions." It is not probable that they were lions; but as to the other gentry, if the Cape is now free from them, it is more fortunate than some of its neighbors. And then again, Josselyn, under date 1638, tells of "A Sea-Serpent or Snake that lay coiled up, like a cable, upon a Rock at Cape Ann. A boat passing by, with English aboard and two Indians, they would have shot the serpent, but the Indians dissuaded them, saying that if he were not killed outright, they would be in danger of their lives." Very prudent of the Indians, but not so brave of the English. Had they killed or captured the monster, perhaps the great mystery of the sea-serpent that has so disturbed these times would have been solved.

The fact that in all cases when the spectators have been impelled to bravely approach the monster, he has pusillanimously sunk out of sight, would indicate that he was of a peaceful or timid disposition, and might, in the mind of a doubter, recall some of the legendary incidents of money-digging, wherein just as the treasure-chest seems within grasp, it suddenly sinks away and is no more seen. There are still lingering doubts as to whether the accounts concerning the sea-serpent should be regarded as veritable truth, or set down as a chapter in the great volume of "Fish Stories."

"STRODENHURST," the residence of Charles W. Galloupe, Esq., at Galloupe's Point (a portion of Phillips Point), Swampscott, is picturesquely situated upon a rocky bluff, fifty feet above the level of the ocean and but half a score of yards from its water's edge.

The mansion is of quaint, colonial architecture, four stories in height on the ocean side, the two lower stories being of brick, with stone trimmings, and the upper ones of wood, and is liberal in its dimensions, containing about forty rooms. The grounds are tastefully laid out in lawns, terraces and parterres, with a sufficiency of trees and shrubs, and it is, taken in all, a most lovely place.

Phillips Point, of which Galloupe's Point is a portion, includes the territory between the estate of Colonel John Jeffries and Little's Point, being limited by



Phillips Beach on the east and Whale's Beach on the west, and possibly it may originally have included the land upon which the Lincoln House now stands.

The name "Strodehurst" is taken from "Strode," in Dorsetshire County, England, an estate which is now, and has been, in the possession of the Gallop family for more than four centuries. John Gallop, for whom the island in Boston Harbor was named, the emigrant ancestor of the owner of "Strodehurst," was of the eighth generation in descent, and came to this country in the ship "Mary and John" in 1630.

The delightful and extensive views from this point, if equaled, are unsurpassed by any upon the shores of Massachusetts Bay. To the west, surmounted by High Rock (the home of Moll Pitcher), are seen the towns of Swampscott and Lynn, sloping gradually to the sea, their pretty residences, graceful church spires and monumental chimneys affording a most interesting and agreeable picture of busy, civilized life; farther to the west, the high lands of Saugus, Medford, Chelsea, Somerville and Bunker Hill form a pleasing and effective background to the sparkling waters and glittering sands of Revere, Crescent and Nahant beaches; to the southwest, Nahant, capped by the distant Blue Hills of Milton, curves its comely arm gracefully around the waters, forming a beautiful bay, which, if it does not emulate, certainly suggests its gorgeous sister of Naples. Between the surf-buffeted rocks of Nahant Point and the bleak and weather-beaten cliffs of Egg Rock rises, crowned with pretty houses, the summit of the Hill at Hull, upon which many of our Puritan ancestors found a home, long before the arrival of Winthrop and his company. To the south, Point Allerton, which vied with Hull (then Natascot) and Plymouth in its welcome to our Pilgrim fathers; Nantasket, with its attractive beaches and hospitable people; Cohasset, with its tasteful summer-houses, and Scituate, with its church-crowned hills and its merciless, sea-jutting ledges, stretch along the horizon, until the lofty shaft of Minor's Light terminates the line of the landscape, leaving, interrupted only by the continually moving procession of white-winged vessels, the unbroken line of the ocean, until the rocky shores of Marblehead Neck complete one of the most charming and delightful panoramas upon the coast of the Atlantic.

The place is familiarly known, and has been long and gratefully enjoyed by the numerous summer visitors of the North Shore, who, through the liberality of the owners, have been allowed free access to the premises.

WAR OF THE REBELLION.—Swampscott furnished for actual service in the field one hundred and seventy-five men, and for the naval service twenty-five. Says Mr. Thompson,—“One hundred and twenty-nine of the men who enlisted in the army received a bounty. The whole amount of bounty money voted and paid by the town, together with

that raised by subscription, was \$27,375; other expenses, \$5814.41; total expenses, \$33,189.41. There were fifty-five men who enlisted in the army and twenty-nine in the navy who received no bounty. All the town's quotas under the different calls of the President were promptly filled, and at the close of the war a surplus of twenty-two men over all calls was remaining. . . . That the ladies of the town were equally patriotic with the men is shown by the fact that in the year 1862 they formed themselves into an association for the purpose of aiding the Swampscott soldiers, and by their devoted labors were able to contribute many supplies for their relief and comfort.”

Lieutenant-Colonel Charles Redington Mudge, eldest son of Hon. E. R. Mudge, was killed at the battle of Gettysburg July 3, 1863. He was twenty-three years of age, a young officer of great promise, and at the time he was killed was in command of the regiment, gallantly leading on a charge. He was born in New York City, and graduated at Harvard with the 1860 class. His remains were brought to Lynn, and now repose in the consecrated garth of St. Stephen's Church.

Rev. Jonas B. Clark, who had for about twenty years been minister of the Trinitarian Congregational Society of Swampscott, enlisted as a chaplain in the army, and served faithfully till compelled by ill health to resign. Others became conspicuous for their bravery and soldierly traits, and, as a whole, the men from Swampscott acquitted themselves in so meritorious a manner as to receive much commendation.

In 1883 the Soldiers' Monument, in Monument Square, was erected. It is a granite shaft, with bronze trimmings, and cost two thousand nine hundred and forty-three dollars. Its height is thirty feet, and it has four bronze tablets, on two of which are inscribed the names of the fourteen soldiers who fell in defense of their country.

It was proposed to place at the foot of the monument an old cannon, already referred to, bearing the date 1798, and some insignia of British royalty, which has an interesting history, though not specially connected with our Civil War. It was captured by the privateer "Grand Turk," during the War of 1812, the vessel on board of which was Captain Thomas Widger, who died at Swampscott, January 21, 1871, aged eighty. Some time after its capture it was brought hither and used in firing salutes on all sorts of public occasions. Its most lamentable performance, at least since it quit the work to which it was originally destined, was on the 4th of July, 1857. On that day John Draper and Henry Scales, while firing a patriotic salute, were fatally injured by a premature discharge. Draper had an arm broken, an eye destroyed and was otherwise injured. He was taken to the Massachusetts Hospital, and in about two months died of lockjaw. Scales received a bad wound in the bowels, and had an arm broken. He also was taken to the hospital and there died. The venerable war-





like relic, however, is not now (May, 1887) at its proposed resting-place near the monument, but, owing to some untoward circumstances, rests on the premises of a Lynn junk dealer.

**STATISTICAL ITEMS.**—*Population.*—As elsewhere remarked, Swampscott was set off from Lynn and incorporated as a separate town in 1852. Since then the population has been as follows: 1855, 1335; 1865, 1535; 1875, 2128; 1885, 2471.

*Valuation and Taxation, 1886.*—Total valuation, \$3,658,460; of which \$1,275,405 was personal estate, and \$2,383,055 real. Number of tax-payers, 931, of whom 347 paid only poll-tax. Rate of taxation, \$9.50 on \$1000.

*Town Debt, 1886.*—\$55,500.

*Appropriations and Expenditures, 1886.*—Whole amount of appropriations, including receipts, \$50,214.01. Expenditures, \$50,725.47.

*Dwellings, Polls, 1885.*—Number of dwelling-houses, 555. Polls, 657.

*Schools, 1886.*—High School, 1; grammar schools, 2; intermediate, 4; primary, 3. Appropriation for support of schools (including \$23.37 from State School Board), \$8523.37. Expenditures, \$7664.36.

*Public Library, 1886.*—Number of volumes, 5055. Circulation during the year, 14,935. Appropriation (including certain receipts, amounting to \$22.50 and dog-taxes amounting to \$262.60), \$585.10. Expenditures, \$527.19.

*Births, Marriages and Deaths, 1886.*—Whole number of births, 51,—males, 29; females, 22. Marriages, 24. Deaths, whole number, 40,—males, 16; females, 24.

*Cemetery.*—The Swampscott Cemetery was consecrated September 16, 1854, the address being delivered by Rev. Jonas B. Clark. Up to January 1, 1886, the whole number of interments was 783. Interments in 1886, 26. Expenditures for 1886, \$219.29. Receiving tomb built 1884.

*Appropriation for the Poor, 1886.*—\$1500.

*Value of Public Property, 1886,* including Town House, school-houses and other real estate, together with the apparatus and other personal estate in use by the various departments, \$71,353.79.

#### RELIGIOUS SOCIETIES AND OTHER ORGANIZATIONS.

**RELIGIOUS SOCIETIES.**—The *First Congregational Society* was formed on July 15, 1846, and was the first church organization in the village. Rev. Jonas B. Clark was the first minister. In 1854 a *Methodist Society* was formed, Rev. E. J. Best being the first minister. A *Christian Society* was formed in 1865, and a chapel erected on Burrill Street, Elder W. L. Hayden being the first minister. A *Baptist Society* was formed in 1872, and Rev. Lucian Drury settled as pastor. All the above societies have good houses of worship, and are zealous to promote the spiritual advancement of the people. And it should not be omitted to mention that *Unitarian* and *Universalist*

services have been held at intervals for a number of years, especially during the warm season.

Other leading organizations are: The *Free Public Library*; Post No. 118, *Grand Army of the Republic*; *Swampscott Lodge of Odd Fellows*.

## CHAPTER CXXIII.

### SWAMPSCOTT—(Continued).

#### INDUSTRIAL PURSUITS.

*Agriculture—Manufactures—Fisheries.*

**AGRICULTURE.**—Swampscott can hardly be ranked as an agricultural town, though it has productive land, and the sea throws up a liberal contribution of valuable manure. From recently published statistics, it appears that the number of farms is 15; yearly value of products, \$16,000; bushels of potatoes raised, 1805; dozens of eggs, 4200; gallons of milk, 23,750; tons of hay, 447; number of horses, 251; number of cows, 137.

**MANUFACTURES.**—Swampscott cannot certainly be called a manufacturing place. To the present time, indeed, it has been more of a farming than manufacturing town. But the fisheries have always taken precedence of all other industries. So little has been done in manufactures that the public reports have often passed them by unnoticed. Yet shoemaking has long been engaged in to some extent, especially in former days, as a winter occupation.

**FISHERIES.**—Fishing continues to be the great business of Swampscott, as it has been almost from the first settlement, though it is now conducted in quite a different way from what it formerly was. The settlers soon discovered that the bay was stored with fish in great variety and great plenty. The following quaint lines of an old rhymester enumerates some of the then most common kinds:

"Nor must we from our list leave out the store - of savory fish,  
That fill the ponds and fill the sea and make the dainty dish.  
The cod, the haddock, halibut, the eel and pickerell,  
The alewife, perch, bass and tautog, the smelt and mackerell.  
Lobsters and crabs too, so abound, 'tis marvelous to see;  
And mussels, clams and great quahaugs make up variety.  
Then why should wee not live to eat, as well as cat to live,  
And bless the Lord who gave the meat and pray him o'er to give?"

The Swampscott fishermen were engaged only in dory-fishing down to about the close of the last century, it being in 1795, according to Mr. Thompson, that the first schooner was purchased. She was of twenty tons burden, and named the "Dove." Two years afterward she was totally wrecked in a storm. Soon after, another schooner, named the "Lark," a trifle smaller than the "Dove," was procured, and in 1799 she was also lost, having sunk near her moor-



ings. But it was not many years before quite a fleet of "jiggers," as they were called, stanch and graceful craft, made lively the Swampscott waters and the deep sea beyond.

The neat little volume lately published by Mr. Waldo Thompson, entitled "Sketches of Swampscott," to which reference has already been several times made, contains many interesting facts regarding the place, its people and business. And we cannot do better than introduce in this connection some of his items regarding the fishing business and kindred employments.

"December 16, 1826, six schooners went out from Swampscott in the morning and returned at night with fifty thousand pounds of fish, chiefly cod.

"About the year 1828 oil clothing began to take the place of leather, and in a few years the old, heavy and expensive equipment was known no more.

"In the year 1832 there were ten small vessels, manned by eighty men, engaged in winter fishing, and about sixty dorymen in summer.

"In the year 1850 there were thirty-nine vessels engaged in the mackerel and cod-fishing, aggregating one thousand tons. There were captured five thousand barrels of mackerel, valued at \$50,000, also fifty-six thousand one hundred and sixty quintals of codfish. \$6300 worth of cod liver oil was sold for medicinal purposes.

"A horse mackerel was caught August 24, 1865, which weighed one thousand pounds; it was ten feet long, and six feet round in the thickest part. A sunfish was also caught off Swampscott, which weighed two hundred and fifty pounds.

"In 1850 the schooner 'Light' caught sixty-two thousand and seven hundred pounds of codfish in thirteen hours. The schooner 'Jane' caught a large trip, and twelve of her fish weighed on an average fifty-six pounds; Captain Nathaniel Blanchard caught one cod which weighed ninety-four pounds.

"Some of the fishermen began to use trawls in 1857. A trawl has from six hundred to ten thousand hooks, the lines are made of cotton.

"February 25, 1863. The Swampscott fishing fleet landed one hundred and fifty thousand pounds of fish on Briney's Beach.

"In 1861 the 'Blunehaha' caught off Boon Island three hundred and fifty barrels, and the 'Flying Dart' one hundred and thirty barrels of mackerel in about four hours.

"September 26, 1865. Augustus Story caught a halibut which weighed one hundred and ninety-four pounds. He received \$51.32 for his prize.

"February 16, 1872. The schooner "Champion," with a crew of twelve men, caught thirty thousand pounds of fish, which sold at four cents a pound. The next day's catch yielded \$72.00 per man.

"While J. G. Twislen was fishing in the bay, in 1878, he lost his two-pound lead and line, and a few days afterward, fishing near the same place, he captured the fish that deprived him of his tackle a few days before. [This reminds the writer that when a youth, fishing from Nahant rocks, a funny marauder snatched off his bait and hook. Replacing the lost property and continuing the sport, he some hours afterward drew up the predator with the stolen hook piercing his upper lip.]

"In 1879 the schooner 'Alice M. Hawkes' brought in forty-nine thousand pounds of codfish in one day.

"In 1880 Captain Henry Y. Hatch, while fishing in the bay off Swampscott, caught a halibut weighing three hundred and sixty pounds."

Mr. Thompson mentions that while Colonel Stetson kept the Astor House, in New York, he sent him a lobster, taken off Swampscott, that weighed twenty-two pounds. He likewise records that in September, 1852, Isaac Newcomb, one of the crew of the "Zepie," caught an electric fish weighing three hundred pounds. When taking it from the hook he received a shock that knocked him over, and Warren Jaquith, who grasped the tail of the fish, also received a

severe shock. It was of the species sometimes called cramp-fish, electric ray, or torpedo. Sickness at the stomach is sometimes produced by the touch.

LOBSTERS.—The lobster catch along our coast has been large and profitable for many years. The trapping of lobsters was first practiced at Swampscott in 1808 by Ebenezer Thorndike, who had twelve pots. For the year ending May 1, 1865, there were caught at Swampscott thirty-seven thousand lobsters, averaging in value, as taken from the pots, six cents each. Since that time the annual catch has gradually diminished. For the quarter ending December 3, 1880, the district of Lynn, Nahant and Swampscott returned as the product of their lobster-fishery seven thousand pounds. In consequence of the growing fears that the lobster would be exterminated from our coast, the Legislature has of late attempted to do something for its preservation. Yet one would think there cannot be much danger in that direction, as naturalists inform us that a single female lobster will in one year lay forty-two thousand eggs. But probably other fish help themselves to the greater share.

As to the other fisheries, the district returned for the same quarter, that ending December 3, 1880, of cured codfish, 300,000 pounds; mackerel, 400,000 pounds; salted herring, 100,000 pounds. Of fresh fish, a daily catch of 315,000 pounds was returned; the whole, with a few other items, making up a total value of \$44,141.50.

In 1886 the Swampscott fishing fleet numbered from twenty to twenty-five sail.

## CHAPTER CXXIV.

### SWAMPSCOTT—(Continued).

#### HISTORICAL COMPEND.

1629. Francis Ingalls, the first settler of Swampscott arrived. The whole territory, comprising Lynn, Lynnfield, Nahant, Saugus and Swampscott, was called Saugus—an old Indian name—till 1637, when the name was changed to Lynn. Swampscott was made a separate town in 1852.

1630. A brick-kiln set up in Swampscott, near Humphrey's Brook.

1632. Francis Ingalls commences a tannery. This is stated by some local historians to have been the first tannery in New England. But it is a mistake, as there were tanneries in Plymouth several years before. It was, no doubt, the first in Massachusetts Colony. In 1825 a hide, in good preservation, was found in one of the long-forgotten vats.

1634. Hot summer, with long drought.

1638. First division of lands among the settlers. May 3d, a violent gale, with heavy sea.





1642. Daniel King, from whom the name of King's Beach was derived, settles in Swampscott. The winter of this year was exceedingly cold, and there was much snow.

1650. The first Swampscott settler named Phillips, arrives.

1651. The three Baptist missionaries from Rhode Island, Clarke, Crandall and Holmes, are arrested at the house of William Witter, in Swampscott, for disturbing the peace in disseminating their doctrines. They were convicted and punished.

1659. Road to Marblehead over the beaches laid out, in July. The part between Ocean Street and King's Beach, say the committee, "has been a country highway thirty and odd years, to the knowledge of many of us." The "odd years," at least, must have been an exaggeration, as they would place it beyond the arrival of the first settlers.

1666. Nathaniel Bishop and Hope Allen, curriers, petition the court to forbid tanners and shoemakers exercising the trade of curriers. But the court judged "it not meete to grant y<sup>e</sup> peticoners' request."

1671, Jan. 18th. Violent storm, with thunder and lightning. Other remarkable storms during the year.

1672. There appears to have been no professed musician in the colony up to this time, and no dancing-school till the one established this year, which, however, was soon suppressed by the law. A heavy easterly storm, Nov. 10th, brought in "so great a tyde as hath not bene this 36 years."

1673. A new road to Marblehead laid out, north of the former one; the same now forming the extension of Essex Street, Lynn.

1679. A new troop was formed this year, consisting of forty-eight men. Ralph King was lieutenant.

1688. Ralph King actively opposes Randolph's petition for a gift of Nahant.

1689. Capt. Ralph King died. The appraised value of his estate was £2365 4s.

1696. Great clams in immense numbers were cast up on the beaches by the storms of this year, and the town voted that the inhabitants might gather all they wished for their own use; but none were to be carried out of town.

1703. Walter Phillips, Sr., a Quaker, for refusing to perform military duty, had a fourth of an acre of his land seized and sold for the payment of his fine.

1706. Second division of lands among the settlers.

1723, Feb. 24th. A terrific storm, occasioning, says Mr. Dexter in his diary, "Ye mightiest overflowing of y<sup>e</sup> sea yt was almost ever known in this Country."

1751, Feb. 8th. Capt. Benjamin Blaney, of Swampscott, was killed in Malden, by falling from his horse.

1755, Dec. 9th. A whale seventy-five feet in length landed on King's Beach. Dr. Henry Burchstead rode into his mouth in a chair drawn by a horse.

1761, Sep. 6th. Ebenezer Burrill dies in Swampscott, aged eighty-two. He was born at Tower Hill, in Lynn, and removed to Swampscott, being the first of the

Burrills here. His father, John Burrill, gave him the Swampscott estate, and he lived in the "farm-house" still standing on the E. R. Mudge estate. He was for nine years a crown counselor.

1775, April 19th. The battle of Lexington. Among those killed in this, the opening conflict of the Revolution, was Abednego Ramsdell, of Swampscott, who was a son of Noah Ramsdell, and had elder brothers Shadrach and Meshech. He was a young man of twenty-four years, somewhat of a sportsman, and on the morning of the fatal day was out on a gunning tramp. On his return he heard of the march of the British troops toward Concord, and dropping the game he had secured—two black ducks, says Mr. Lewis—and without stopping to eat of the waiting breakfast, seized a ration of Indian cake, and gun in hand hastened off to the field of expected conflict. He reached Lexington about noon, and had time to fire but one or two shots before a British bullet laid him low. His wife was Hannah Woodbury, whom he married March 10, 1774.

1776. A midnight alarm that the English had landed on King's Beach occasioned great consternation. Many fled to the woods. The military rallied, but had not marched far when it was found to be a false alarm.

1795. First Swampscott fishing schooner, called a "jigger," fitted out. Previously there was only dory-fishing.

1808. Trapping of lobsters first practiced at Swampscott.

1815, September 23d. Terrific southeasterly gale. The ocean spray was driven inland several miles, and fruit was impregnated with salt. Some declared that it rained salt-water.

1819, August. The first-known appearance of the renowned Sea-serpent in Swampscott Bay.

1828, May 2d. A whale sixty to seventy feet in length landed on Whale Beach.

1829, October 31st. The stone beacon on the outer cliff of Dread Ledge was thrown down in a storm. It was erected a short time before, by the United States government, at an expense of one thousand dollars. Another, of granite, twenty-five feet in height, and three feet square at the base, was erected in 1831. In March, 1864, this last was broken off by the violence of the sea, during a severe gale.

1830, July 12th. Joseph Blaney, aged 52 years, while fishing, had his boat overturned by a shark, which sprang into it. Mr. Blaney was not seen afterwards, having, no doubt, been devoured by his voracious assailant.

1833, November 13th. Extraordinary shower of meteors. Friction matches come into general use, superseding the old tinder-box with flint and steel.

1838. Eastern Railroad opened for travel. Regular trains first passed through Swampscott August 28th.

1839. Swampscott suffered greatly by a severe





storm that began December 15th, and continued three days.

**1843**, February 1st. A splendid comet appeared about noonday.

**1844**, September 6th. Great Democratic clam-bake at Swampscott,—a political demonstration, attended by twenty-five thousand people. The escort was composed of four military companies, with bands of music. One hundred and seventy barrels of clams and one thousand lobsters were among the articles of food provided. Hon. Robert Rantoul, Jr., was orator of the day.

**1846**. The Rockaway House and contiguous buildings destroyed by fire, January 1st; loss, twenty thousand dollars. Swampscott post-office established, and Waldo Thompson appointed postmaster. First life-boat received. First Congregational meeting-house dedicated, July 15th.

**1849**. Gold discoveries in California. Several men went from Swampscott to seek their fortunes. September, James C. Lamphier found a dead turtle off Swampscott Beach, weighing six hundred pounds. It was eight feet, six inches from end of nose to end of tail, and the shell was six feet long, and three and a half wide.

**1851**, October 26th. British schooner "Brothers" wrecked at night, off Swampscott, by striking on Outer Ledge. Outcries of crew heard about midnight and all, seven in number, saved.

**1852**. Swampscott incorporated as a separate town. The event was celebrated with much enthusiasm. A procession was formed, and, with a band of music and banners, made a protracted march through the streets. At the post-office Rev. J. B. Clark delivered an appropriate address, and in the evening there was a display of fire-works. In the procession was an ensign that waved at the masthead of the frigate "Constitution" during her triumphant battle with the "Guerriere," August 19, 1812. When Lynn adopted the city form of government, in 1850, Swampscott, then being Ward 1 of the town, strongly opposed the change. And it was at that time that the desire to separate began to take determined shape.

**1854**, August 3d. A white-faced seal, four feet in length, shot off Swampscott.

**1855**. In the early part of this year considerable damage was done by the sea, to embankments especially. Bathing-houses were thrown down and King's Beach at times completely overflowed. Deep sea-seining commenced this year.

**1856**. About the middle of February a large hump-back whale was seen several times near the Swampscott shore. A severe northeast storm began April 19th and continued two days. The steeple of the Methodist meeting-house, then in process of erection, was blown down. The first Methodist house of worship in Swampscott, dedicated June 30th, Bishop Simpson preaching the sermon. A severe thunder-storm August 5th; house of John Blaney struck.

Within a circuit of ten miles the lightning struck in some twenty places. Egg Rock light first shown September 15th.

**1857**, January 18th. Bark "Tedesco" wrecked at Long Rock, Swampscott, in a terrible snow-storm, the cold being intense. All on board, twelve in number, perished. The remains of six were buried from the Methodist meeting-house, Swampscott, at one time. The "Tedesco" was from Cadiz, with a cargo of wine and salt. Trawl-fishing began to be practiced this year. June 13th, barn of Captain Fuller, in Humfrey Street, burned, the fire being occasioned by two little boys playing with matches. One of the boys was burned to death.

**1858**. Joseph Hill, aged twenty, was instantly killed by the accidental discharge of a fowling-piece while gunning at Swampscott, March 3d. On the afternoon of August 6th a barn belonging to Jonathan F. Phillips was struck by lightning and burned, with fifty tons of hay. The famous trotting mare, Lady Lawrence, valued at a thousand dollars, being in the barn, was killed by the lightning. October 13th, first electric telegraph to Swampscott completed. Blue fish appear in the offing in great numbers during the autumn, and countless numbers of menhaden are found dead upon the shore—probably killed by the blue-fish.

**1860**. In January an unusual amount of ice accumulated in the bay. Great shoemakers' strike commenced in Lynn. Many of the craft in Swampscott joined. November 3d, a severe storm. The "Gazelle," a small vessel belonging to Gloucester, broke from her moorings and went to pieces on King's Beach.

**1861**. The great Civil War commences. Swampscott furnished for service in the field one hundred and seventy-five, and for the naval service twenty-five. Town Hall built, at cost of four thousand six hundred and fourteen dollars. Enlarged in 1882 at cost of two thousand five hundred and eighty-eight dollars. In 1884 the tower was built, the bell raised and fire alarm connected.

**1862**. Swampscott Library Association formed.

**1863**, July 3d. Lieutenant-Colonel Charles Redington Mudge, of Swampscott, killed at the battle of Gettysburg. Extraordinary number of caterpillars appear in the summer.

**1865**, April. The fall of Richmond and return of peace celebrated at Swampscott with much enthusiasm. A procession marched through the streets, bonfires were lighted and many buildings illuminated. April 15th, News of President Lincoln's assassination received at Swampscott with manifestations of deep sorrow. Popular indignation towards one individual who expressed gratification at the event culminated in the application of a coat of tar and feathers. Extraordinary drought from July 25th to October 15th. Meteorologists claimed that it had not been equaled in eighty-one years.

**1867**, January 17th. Terrific snow-storm. No



storm for twenty-five years equaled it except that of January 18, 1857, when the "Tedesco" was wrecked. And on the 21st the tide rose higher than at any time since the storm that carried away Minot's Ledge light-house, April 15, 1851. A beautiful mirage in the bay June 23d. Immense quantities of mackerel appeared in the offing in July. Several whales and horse-mackerel followed in pursuit. August 10th, a swing-tail shark, fifteen feet in length, was taken off Swampscott, in a net, and sold to Professor Agassiz. This is a rare fish on our coast. September 3d, Encampment of Second Brigade of Massachusetts Volunteer Militia commenced at Swampscott.

1868. Atlantic Avenue, from Humphrey Square to Marblehead through Beach Bluff, laid out.

1869, September 8th. A very severe gale in the afternoon; next in violence to that of 1815. Considerable havoc was made among the yachts and small shipping at Swampscott. September 29th, a blue heron, a very rare bird in this region, shot in Swampscott woods. Its height, when standing upright, was nearly four feet, and its spread wings measured some five feet from tip to tip.

1870, April 3d. On Sunday, about midnight, the brig "Fred Bliss" was wrecked on the Swampscott shore, near the Ocean House, a few rods from where the "Tedesco" was wrecked in 1857. The crew, though in much danger, were saved. A violent storm and heavy sea were raging. The brig was driven so far up that a plank was laid from the deck to the shore. A regatta took place at Swampscott in the summer, yachts from New York and other places taking part.

1872. Several extremely cold days in the early part of March. Ice formed all the way between Swampscott and Nahant. On the 7th, fishermen were able to walk on the ice to their vessels at the moorings—a feat they were not able to perform before for nineteen years. The summer was remarkable for excessive heat, the frequency and severity of thunder-showers, and for the abundance of mosquitos and house flies. September 25th, Joseph Harding died, aged ninety-seven. He was supposed to be the oldest Free Mason in the State, having joined the Adams Lodge, in Wellfleet, in 1800. So famed had Swampscott now become as a watering-place, that it was estimated that as many as ten thousand visitors were there during the warm season. The strange horse disease known as epizootic prevailed in the autumn.

1873. Branch railroad from Swampscott to Marblehead opened October 20th. November 17th, the three-masted schooner "Robert Raikes" struck on the "outer ledge," Swampscott, near midnight, during a severe storm, and was completely wrecked. All on board, five in number, perished. Two brothers of the captain, who were elsewhere exposed to the same storm, also lost their lives.

1874. Some Indian remains were exhumed at Swampscott during the summer. Horse railroad from Lynn extended to Upper Swampscott.

1876. The "equinoctial storm" set in suddenly and with much violence, on the evening of March 20th; three or four of the fishing jiggers were wrenched from their moorings, driven on shore, or wrecked on the rocks. April 2d, the beautiful summer residence of Charles W. Galloppe totally destroyed by fire; loss, some sixty thousand dollars. A hair-seal, weighing ninety-five pounds, taken off Swampscott.

1877, March 9th. A storm, with a high wind, attaining a velocity of seventy-two miles per hour, prevailed. For several days in September, at night, the waves dashing along the shores exhibited an extraordinary phosphorescent glow. The spectacle was grand and attracted multitudes. A strong east wind had brought in a heavy sea.

1878, Dec. 17th. This is the date on which United States paper currency reached par value for the first time in sixteen years—that is, when one hundred dollars in greenback government notes would purchase one hundred dollars in gold. The former depreciation was, of course, attributable to the Civil War. The extreme of depreciation was in July, 1864, when two hundred and eighty-five dollars in notes were required for the purchase of one hundred dollars in gold.

1879. The post-office at Beach Bluff established. A bald-headed eagle, weighing eighteen pounds, shot on Blaney's Beach. Two Indian tomahawks dug up on farm of E. B. Phillips.

1880. A number of icebergs seen in the distance by Swampscott fishermen. May, a severe thunder-storm. The lightning struck in nine places, in Swampscott, among them the "farm-house" on the E. R. Mudge estate. "Summit Villa," on the Galloppe estate, Swampscott, was destroyed by fire, with most of its contents, June 2d; loss, fifteen thousand dollars. It was rented to Com. Hutchins, of New York. November 22d, a beautiful mirage appeared in the bay.

1881, May 14th. Horse cars began to run as far as Monument Square. Sept. 16th, memorial services on death of President Garfield. Address by Rev. J. B. Clark. October 1st, Hon. Enoch Redington Mudge dies, aged sixty-nine.

1882, August 4th. Nickerson's oil clothing factory burned. Miss Emma Stone, an employee, lost her life. Loss of property, about nine thousand dollars. September 6th, Jonathan Blaney's house, "Hillside," destroyed by fire. September 6th, Ocean House, near Whale Beach, destroyed by fire; loss, about sixty thousand dollars. Tubular wells, twenty in number, sunk to depth of thirty feet by Swampscott Company. A splendid comet adorned the southeastern sky for several weeks in October and November. It rose a few hours before the sun.

1883. First steam fire-engine purchased. Soldiers' Monument erected. The residence known as Cedar Hill Cottage burned; loss, five thousand five hundred dollars.





1884, June 25th. Horse-cars begin to run to Marblehead.

1886, September 25th. Capt. Martin V. B. Stone, yachtsman, of Swampscott, receives an ovation in consideration of his triumph in the race for the America's prize cup between the yacht "Mayflower," under his command, and the English yacht "Galatea," under command of Lieutenant Henn. A gold watch embellished by an engraved representation of the yacht was presented by his fellow-townsmen.

CLOSING REMARKS.—But little space is required for the few closing remarks that seem desirable. It has been seen that the first settlers, with hardly an exception, were from the toiling ranks; manual labor was a necessity with nearly every one; and to this may in a measure be attributed the fact that years passed without the presentation of any specially marked character or incident. Extreme physical want was, indeed, not known, but it required constant exertion and vigilance to keep the wolf from the door. It was not till after generations appeared that some of the nobler family traits became conspicuous. Penury is not a congenial soil for the growth of those higher intellectual powers that need persevering study and deep meditation. Says Bulwer: "How many noble natures, how many glorious hopes, how much of the seraph's intellect, have been crushed into the mire or blasted into guilt by the mere force of physical want!" But the Burrills, Kings, Blaneys and Phillipses appeared, opened new avenues of progress and infused new energies. In these later days, as has been seen, Swampscott is by no means found lagging behind her neighbors in the paths of refinement and influence.

It may not be amiss to again direct attention to the varied and picturesque scenery of Swampscott, which, in conjunction with invigorating airs, unsurpassed facilities for sea-bathing, interesting drives and convenient means for frequent intercourse with the metropolis, has rendered her so famous as a watering-place. Perhaps no place on the New England coast can present greater attractions for the jaded city denizen who would seek a temporary home for the days of summer vacation. But the most enjoyable feature is the ocean. The ocean has peculiar attractions. And who can wonder that its deep mysteries have in all ages induced feelings akin to adoration in the contemplative mind,—

"Earth speaks of man,—

Her level'd mountains, and her cultur'd vales,  
Town, tree, and temple, and triumph'd arch,  
All speak of him, and moulder while they speak.  
But of whose architecture and design,  
Speak thine eternal fountains, when they rise  
To combat with the cloud, and when they fall?  
Of whose strong culture tell thy sunless plants,  
And groves and gardens, which no mortal eye  
Hath seen and lived?  
What chisel's skill hath wrought  
Those coral monuments, and tombs of pearl,  
Where sleeps the sea-boy 'mid a pomp that earth

Ne'er showed her buried kings?  
From whose loom  
Came forth thy drapery, that never waxeth old,  
Nor blancheth 'neath stern winter's direst frost?  
Who hath thy keys, thou Deep?—Who taketh note  
Of all thy wealth?—Who numbereth the host  
That find their rest in thee?"

## BIOGRAPHICAL.

ENOCH R. MUDGE.

Enoch Redington Mudge was a descendant of Thomas Mudge, who was born in England about the year 1624, and appeared in Malden, Mass., in 1657. His father, Rev. Enoch Mudge, was born in Lynn, June 28, 1776, and was the first native Methodist preacher in New England. He was received in the New England Conference as a preacher in August, 1793; received deacon's orders at the age of seventeen and orders as elder at the age of twenty-one. He finally made Orrington, Maine, his home, where he married Widow Jerusha Hinckley, a daughter of John and Ruth Holbrook, of Wellfleet, Mass. His children born in Orrington were Solomon Hinckley, born January 18, 1803; Anne Bickford, January 15, 1806; Mary Atwell, February 18, 1810; and Enoch Redington, March 22, 1812. He died in Lynn April 2, 1850.

The subject of this sketch received his education in the various places where his father was stationed, and at the age of fifteen years became a clerk in the banking-house of S. & M. Allen, of Portland, Maine. His connection with this business was of short duration, owing to the failure of his employers, but it was sufficiently long to train him in the business of banker, which, in after-life, when he had achieved success, he re-entered with a competent knowledge of its methods and means.

His next venture was in the commission business on his own account in Portland, which continued until his failure, in 1835, when, at the age of twenty-three, he went to New York and became a clerk in the Astor House, then recently opened under the management of Coleman & Stetson.

In 1840 he went to New Orleans, where, until 1845, he was the proprietor of the St. Charles Hotel, then new. New Orleans was, at that time, in the height of its prosperity, and the St. Charles became at once the leading hotel,—the gathering-place of the merchants and a sort of exchange. During his five years management of this house Mr. Mudge acquired what was then considered a fortune, and in 1845 returned to New York and became interested in manufactures. In 1846 he built the Saratoga Victory Cotton Mills, acting as its treasurer, and buying his own cotton in the New Orleans market. He next formed a connection with David Nevins, in the importation of dry-





*Edmund*







*Edw. B. Phillips*





goods, and shortly after established, in Boston, the banking-house of Fay, Mudge & Atwood, which continued in business until 1857.

The great ability of Mr. Mudge, which had led him so truly and successfully along the difficult paths of business life, soon attracted the notice of manufacturers, and at their solicitation he established a commission-house in Boston, with a branch in New York, having the agencies of the Washington Mills, the Chicopee Cotton Mills, the Burlington Woolen Mills, and the Victory Cotton Mills, of the last of which he had continued from its establishment to be the treasurer. These mills, with a capital of three millions of dollars, ran ninety thousand spindles, and with four thousand operatives, yielded a product valued at nine millions of dollars, which was sold by the house of E. R. Mudge & Co., and manufactured under their direction.

Mr. Mudge, while in business in Boston, held his residence in Swampscott, and in 1868 represented the First Senatorial District of Essex County in the State Senate. His life was active to the last, and while pursuing, with zeal and energy, his large and increasing business he was stricken down while his career seemed far from finished, and died at his home in Swampscott, in 1881, at the age of sixty-nine years.

Though Mr. Mudge seemed immersed in the overwhelming duties of a business life, he lost no opportunity to educate an intellect naturally strong, and cultivate tastes which seemed a part of his refined and gentle nature. For the gratification of these tastes he possessed ample means, and he surrounded himself with books and paintings and works of art, which not only illustrated his fondness for the beautiful in life, but taught him daily lessons for its higher elevation and advancement.

Mr. Mudge was a man of an affable and winning deportment and won not only the respect, but affection of those about him. After his death the Board of Trade of Boston, of which he was an active and honored member, held a special meeting to express the feelings of the Board relative to the sad event, and appointed a committee, which reported an address appropriate to the occasion. It said: "In the life of our late associate, Enoch Redington Mudge, we have seen how large a place, and many-sided, a good man can fill. A tender and loving husband and father; a Christian gentleman, tolerant of the sincere opinions of others, yet firm in the courteous assertion of his own; a devoted lover of his country, ready for any sacrifice in her hour of peril, and a partisan only for her sake; an open-handed and warm-hearted philanthropist, earnest in all good works; a good citizen, faithful to every public duty; courteous, genial, hospitable as a companion and neighbor, possessing, in a rare degree, the high qualities which give assurance of a man worthy the respect and admiration of other good men; such was Mr. Mudge, and in these char-

acteristics he will be honorably and fitly remembered by other bodies than ours in which he has borne a part.

"It is of Mr. Mudge in his character as a man of business, as a manufacturer and an eminent merchant, it is most fitting that the Boston Board of Trade and other commercial bodies should speak. In business he was successful beyond the hopes of all but the few and foremost. In his own lectures to the young men of Boston, he taught the lesson of commercial success, the key to his own—the alliance of strict integrity with devoted attention to business, fidelity to every trust, with cool and sagacious study of the markets and of events that affect markets. But Mr. Mudge was successful beyond the accumulation of wealth, beyond anything of which he could teach the art to others. His self-possession and courage in emergencies, his quiet, but great force of will and gracious power of influence, quick perception of opportunity, sagacity that rarely failed to distinguish between the safe and dangerous in the character of persons, or circumstance, were qualities not granted to all men to hold in such large measure, combined with his moral qualities. . . .

"The merchants of Boston feel that in the sudden death of Mr. Mudge they are deeply grieved. In this affliction they gratefully remember that the influence of his useful life will survive as an example of what a merchant's life should be, and they desire that the officers of this meeting convey to the family of Mr. Mudge a suitable expression of sympathy of the members in their great sorrow under this bereavement."

Mr. Mudge married, May 9, 1832, Caroline A. Patten, daughter of John and Olive Patten, of Portland, and had the following children: Olive Patten, born February 12, 1835; Fanny Olive, August 5, 1837; Charles Redington, October 22, 1839; Lucy Anne Jerusha, July 20, 1841; Marie Louise, July 12, 1844; Caroline Estelle, July 9, 1850; and Henry Sanford, July 1, 1852.

Charles Redington Mudge, the oldest son, graduated at Harvard in 1860, and was commissioned first lieutenant in the Second Massachusetts Volunteers, May 25, 1861. He was made captain July 8, 1861, major November 9, 1862, lieutenant-colonel June 6, 1863, and was killed at the battle of Gettysburg, July 3, 1863.

#### EBEN B. PHILLIPS.

Eben B. Phillips, the third child and second son of James Phillips, and of Mary (Burrill), his wife, was born July 8, 1808, in Swampscott, Mass., then known as Lynn.

His parents were constant attendants at the church of the Society of Friends, or Quakers, and he was brought up in that faith, receiving such an education as was possible in his native town, in a small country school, at that period.



His natural abilities were great even in the days of his boyhood, following fishing for some years. It was during one of these trips that he was driven to sea in a severe gale and snow-storm, in the little schooner called the "Essex," in 1829.

No land could be seen, and it was necessary to lash the helm and for all to go below to await the result. All on board gave themselves up as lost; but after many days of exertion they effected a landing at Chatham, Mass. Being completely iced up, and without provisions, it was through the determined effort of Captain Phillips that all on board were saved.

Mr. Phillips' operations in business at the first stages was to supply fish-oils to the manufacturers of leather in the towns of Woburn and Salem, and also to the making of what was known as the "Phillips Beach Dun-fish," which were well-known for their excellent qualities, causing his trade to be very extended.

In the days of his early manhood considerable attention was given to farming pursuits; he excelled any of the others employed about his place in physical labor. One instance of the amount of work done by him in one day alone was in digging one hundred bushels of potatoes; and in mowing or any other manual duties performed, he was bound to take the lead.

From doing his fish-oil business in a small way, it had increased so largely that in the year 1830 he established a store in Boston, on Fulton Street, for the sale of his products.

One special branch in the line of his business was the manufacture of cod-liver oil, for medicinal purposes.

After some years he established a second store in the same city on Congress Street, to prosecute the same line of business.

He was the first man who started the extracting of oil from menhaden fish. Purchasing nets and kettles, he employed parties near Blue Hill, Maine, to manufacture for him, and since that time the business has so greatly extended that steamers are employed, and thousands of dollars are invested in factories for the production of this oil.

Not only in New England did he transact an immense business, but also in the Western States, being often styled in his latter years "Oil King," as the volume of business done by him governed the market. Much of his accumulated wealth was invested in Boston store property, owning not less than sixteen at the time of the great Boston fire in 1872, which swept down during that conflagration every one which he owned; and being obliged to meet the loss with no insurance to speak of, he gave his personal attention to the re-building of all these stores immediately after the fire; and it was in one of his largest new stores that he continued his fish-oil business up to the time of his death.

Another of his favorite investments was in sea-shore property along the coast of Swampscott, Rockport and Pigeon Cove, Mass.

In the latter place he built miles of avenues and numerous summer cottages to beautify the place, and it is at the present time one of the most favorite summer resorts along the north shore. His commercial transactions, demanding great attention, occupied most of his time, but in the intervals of business he found great pleasure in shooting sea-fowl, which were to be found among the i-lands of Massachusetts Bay.

During the winter months he would often take the risk, with the temperature below zero, to row many miles for the pleasure realized in this sport. And being an excellent shot, it was a common occurrence in those times for him to bring home a wagon-load of ducks. On an invitation from the Massachusetts Gunning Club, while shooting on his farm at Swampscott, he killed nineteen live pigeons out of twenty.

The great charm of the sea had so fastened itself upon him, since his youth, that he owned for many years a small schooner called the "Moll Pitcher," and in about the year 1870 the now well-known yacht "Fearless" was purchased by him. On different occasions he changed her rig somewhat, and making some alterations to her hull, she became one of the fastest vessels of her size afloat, taking out of twenty-six consecutive races nearly every first prize, and in no instance did she ever sail in any race unless Captain Phillips was at the wheel, or the vessel was under his special command.

In person Mr. Phillips was heavily built, broad and square-shouldered, of middle stature, with very regular features, a high, square forehead, and blue eyes.

He was a very peculiar person, sometimes a man of very few words, and one who held within himself that which he did not choose to give forth, but very observing, and a great lover of poetry, taking great pleasure in committing to memory his favorite author, the famous Alex. Pope.

Mr. Phillips was president of the National Grand Bank at Marblehead for many years, and was director in the Providence and Worcester Railroad, and the Shoe and Leather Insurance Company up to the time of his death, which was November 26, 1879, being then in his seventy-first year. He was twice married,—first to Nancy (Knowlton) in February, 1837, from which union there was one son, still living; secondly, to Maria (Stanwood) in April, 1841, by whom he had seven sons and three daughters; the seven youngest children are still living.

The love of labor seemed to be his great ambition. So fully, indeed, was he impressed with the idea that constant employment was one of the greatest duties in life, that he kept in active operation up to his last sickness, just previous to his death.







Henry J. Parker



"Extremes in nature equal good produce,  
 Extremes in man concur to general use.  
 Ask we, what makes one keep, and one bestow?  
 That power who bids the ocean ebb and flow."

The merits and means by which he acquired his immense fortune were probity of the strictest kind, diligence unsurpassed, perseverance in all pursuits, and a frugality as remote from parsimony as from extravagance. His person, his habits and his home evinced the love of what was simple.

His disregard for ostentation, above all men most able to revel in luxury or to roll in a splendid equipage, he fared at all times alike, and within a few years of his death rode in the style of a plain farmer, rather than that of a millionaire.

Could his lips open once more in the language of this earthly state, he would say: "They may think of me as dead and gone: as one whose shrewdness and business capacities are forever repressed; but they are mistaken. All the power, impulse and energy that surged within me, and made me successful in days gone by, live, and will eternally live to be manifested in other forms, and through new avenues in days to come."

#### COLONEL HENRY G. PARKER.

Col. Parker, whose portrait appears in connection with this notice, may be properly called a man of destiny. Though beginning his career in pursuits far removed from that in which he is now distinguished, each step in his life seems to have been guided by a power beyond himself, until at last he entered the field of journalism, for whose exacting labors it is now easy to believe that he was born and, without being conscious of it himself, had been educated and prepared. Few men have, like Colonel Parker, been tossed on what seemed to be the waves of accident and circumstance, and at last unmistakably shown that accident and circumstance were only the mandates of an unerring law, by which they were drawing towards a profession which they were destined to follow with ardor and skill and success.

Colonel Parker was born in Plymouth, Mass., March 19, 1836. His father, Ebenezer Grosvenor Parker born in Falmouth, Mass., in 1796, was bred to business in Boston, and in 1832, at the time of the organization of the Old Colony Bank in Plymouth, was chosen its cashier, and acted in that capacity with marked skill and fidelity until his death, on the 9th of September, 1849. The grandfather of Colonel Parker, Dr. Henry Parker, also born in Falmouth, was a surgeon in the United States Navy, and died in Batavia June 12, 1800. He married Mary, daughter of the Rev. Ebenezer Grosvenor, a descendant from John Grosvenor, who came from Chester County, in England, to Roxbury, and was one of the settlers of Pomfret, Conn., who obtained a grant of land from the General Assembly in 1686, and an act of incor-

poration as a town in October, 1713. This grant of land, commonly called the Mashamoquet purchase, was made to James Fitch, Wm. Ruggles, John Gore, John Pierpont, John Chandler, Benjamin Sabine, Samuel Craft, John Grosvenor, Joseph Griffin, Samuel Ruggles, John Ruggles and Nathan Wilson, all of whom, it is believed, were or had been Roxbury men.

Ebenezer Grosvenor was born in Pomfret in 1739, graduated at Yale in 1759, and, after a settlement of seventeen years in Scituate, removed to Harvard in 1782, where he officiated as a settled minister until his death, in 1788. The Grosvenor family, though not largely represented by name at the present day, carried in its veins the best blood of the Massachusetts colony, and in each generation has been characterized by learning and public spirit.

Dr. Henry Parker, the grandfather of the subject of this sketch, was the son of Joseph Parker, of Falmouth, who married Hannah, daughter of Nathaniel Stone, of Harwich; the grandson of Joseph, who married, in 1734, Rebecca, daughter of Benjamin Freeman, of Harwich; the great-grandson of Joseph, born in 1658, who married, in 1698, Mercy Whiston; and great-great-grandson of William Parker, who was a freeman of Scituate in 1640, and married, in 1639, Mary, daughter of Thomas Rawlins, and, in 1651, Mary, daughter of Humphrey Turner.

The mother of Colonel Parker was Rebecca Morton, daughter of William Davis, of Plymouth, who, until his early death, in 1824, was associated in business with his father, William Davis, widely known as an eminent and opulent merchant. The Davis family, which has for many years been identified with Plymouth, is descended from Thomas Davis, of Albany, who, about the year 1700, married Katherine Wendell, of that town. The grandmother of Colonel Parker, on his mother's side, was Joanna, daughter of Gideon White, of Plymouth, directly descended from Peregrine White, the first-born child of New England.

Thus it will be seen that in his ancestry Colonel Parker can find much of which he may well feel proud. Few can claim with him that they are descended from twelve passengers of the "Mayflower." It may be said of him, however, with truth that he holds ancestry to be of little account in the real value of men, and that what a man by his own efforts and talents makes himself should alone enter into an estimate of his character and worth.

Col. Parker, in his earlier years, attended the common schools in his native town, but after the removal of his mother to Boston he attended a famous private school in Brookfield, Mass., where William Bliss, president of the Boston and Albany Railroad, Charles P. Clark, president of the New York and New Haven Railroad, Stanton and Arthur W. Blake and their brother, the late George Baty Blake, were among his fellow pupils. Later he attended the Adams School and Chauncy Hall School in Boston. On his retire-





ment from school, when his entrance into college would have been an easy step, his mother yielded reluctantly to his strongly expressed wishes for an active life, and he entered, as a boy, the store of Blanchard, Converse & Co., of Boston. After a year's service there he became assistant book-keeper in the counting-room of Callender, Rogers & Co., also of Boston, where he remained three years. During the succeeding three years he was employed as book-keeper by Blodget, Clark & Brown, and subsequently took the position of confidential clerk in the private office of Jordan, Marsh & Co.'s wholesale establishment, which he held until 1869. At this time he received, from Francis Skinner & Co., an offer to act as treasurer of one or more of their mills, too tempting to resist, but which eventually failed in consequence of the unfortunate suspension of that eminent firm. Another offer, from James Fisk, Jr., who had left the firm of Jordan, Marsh & Co., to enter upon his astonishing career in New York, to join him as an assistant, at a large salary, was declined; and for a few months he was without settled occupation. While with Jordan, Marsh & Co., he married, on the 7th of June, 1865, Lucy Josephine, daughter of the late William Brown, well known as a druggist, who had pursued his business many years in Boston with eminent success. A daughter was born on the 21st of June, 1868, around whom the affections of father and mother gathered with an intensity which her death, in 1877, seems never to have weakened. Indeed, the tenderness always manifested by Col. Parker to his only child, and the softening influences which her memory sheds on his life, attest the warmth of heart, which is a marked trait in his character.

Up to this time, aside from the business pursuits in which he was engaged, Col. Parker constantly indulged in an avocation which was preparing him for the career of journalism, which he eventually entered. He had, by inheritance, a ready pen, and used it in the production of fugitive articles in some of the Boston dailies, in letters to the *New York Mirror* as its regular correspondent and in dramatic criticisms and book notices for the *Boston Daily Courier*, when that journal was conducted by George S. Hillard, George Lunt and John Clark, and in the *Boston Saturday Evening Gazette*, when that journal was conducted by Col. William W. Clapp, now editor of the *Boston Journal*. These relations with the press, assumed for the purpose of occupying and amusing his active mind, were all the while instructing him in the methods and the requirements of the profession to which, sooner than he was aware, he was destined to devote all his energies and talents. His criticisms of the actors of that day were marked by strict impartiality and good judgment, and won the commendation of both the theatrical guild and the public. He was always frank in his praise and fearless in his disapproval. No actor of merit, com-

ing unheralded under his observation, failed to receive from him words of encouragement, and none, with a reputation which he believed undeserved, escaped the sting of his pen.

In 1870 the opportunity came to purchase the *Saturday Evening Gazette*, and in April of that year Col. Parker became its proprietor and editor. That journal had long enjoyed a high reputation and large circulation, both which were then somewhat waning, and it required all the courage which he possessed to attempt its revival. The *Gazette* was the oldest newspaper in Boston, and a man less conscious of his own skill and resources would have feared that its decline was a symptom of age antecedent to its dissolution. It was established in 1813, by Wm. Burdick, and soon passed into the hands of William Warland Clapp, the father of Col. William Warland Clapp, by whom it was conducted until 1846, Charles W. Clapp being, during the last eight years, associated with his father in its management. For a short time after the last-named date C. W. Clapp and his brother, W. W. Clapp, conducted the paper, the latter, however, soon assuming its exclusive control. In 1865 the *Gazette* passed into the hands of P. B. Goodsell, Roland Worthington and others and five years later into the hands of Col. Parker. It is not intended to enter here into a detailed history of the journal or of the methods adopted to resuscitate it, and which soon placed it upon a firmer footing than it had ever held before. It is sufficient to say that at the end of the first year its circulation and advertising patronage had been so far enlarged as to yield a profit to the proprietor of twenty-one thousand dollars. This tells the whole story of the fitness of Col. Parker for the position in which he was placed. From that time to the present the energy which marked the revival of the *Gazette* has never relaxed, nor has its popularity, in social and business circles, ceased to strengthen. It is not too much to say that while there are other journals in Boston printing larger editions, there are none whose roots are more deeply imbedded in the affections of the people among whom it was born seventy-five years ago. The personal columns of the *Gazette* represent a feature of journalism new to Boston, which Col. Parker initiated against the current of popular opinion, but which has long since been unanimously approved by the community, and imitated by journals by which it was at first severely ridiculed and condemned.

Colonel Parker has been conspicuous in other fields than that of journalism. In 1869, while with Jordan, Marsh & Co., who were prominent among the projectors of the first National Peace Jubilee, he was selected as general secretary of the executive committee, of which the Hon. Alexander H. Rice was chairman, and performed his arduous duties with such promptness and good judgment that at the second jubilee, in 1872, his services in the same capacity were demanded and somewhat reluctantly yielded. Serving as he did





under the eye of Mr. Rice, that gentleman had the best opportunity of estimating his peculiar gifts, and when inaugurated Governor of Massachusetts in 1876, he appointed him a member of his staff. He served in this capacity during the three years' term of Governor Rice and received the deserved compliment of a reappointment by Governor Talbot, during whose single year as commander-in-chief he also served.

Since his retirement from the staff he has devoted himself assiduously to his labors as journalist and to the advancing success of his paper, in which he feels a just pride.

Since his marriage his winter residence has always been in Boston. In 1872 he bought an estate in Plymouth, his native town, which he occupied during the summer until 1877. In 1878 and 1879 he made Newport his summer residence and spent the summers of 1880 and 1881 in Swampscott, where, in 1882, he bought an estate, which since that time he has occupied during a part of each year, having become a citizen of Swampscott.

It only remains to speak of those traits which most prominently mark the character of Colonel Parker, some of which have already been alluded to. They could be spoken of more freely and with a stamp of sincerity more generally acknowledged, if he were not still among the living. What would be a just eulogy of the dead might be suspected to be flattery when spoken of the living man. Aside from perfect integrity and uprightness and energy and tenderness of heart, of which mention has been made, he possesses no more striking traits than those of liberality and entire frankness. Of the former of these he makes no boast nor any conspicuous display. It is such a natural and easy outflow from the warmth of his heart, that when others feel it and are grateful for it, he is scarcely conscious of it himself. The latter trait no one who knows him or has even casually met him can have failed to notice. No friend can be unaware of his friendship, no enemy can be deceived into thinking him his friend. His frankness is applied to himself as well as to others, and thus becomes what might be called openness or transparency. Indeed, the world is to him a sort of confessional. He not only does not conceal his faults, but proclaims them when they might not otherwise have been discovered. There are so many under-currents in men's lives, and there is so much hypocrisy in concealing them, that it is refreshing to meet now and then a man like Colonel Parker, who exhibits his whole self and says to the world, "Here I am; take me for exactly what I am worth; estimate me by my weight and not by the varnish or plate or gilt with which I may be covered."

Colonel Parker is still in the prime of life, in good health and vigor, with a career before him which, if his life should be preserved, is far from finished.

## CHAPTER CXXV.

## AMESBURY.

BY JOSEPH MERRILL.

SCARCELY had the little colony at Salisbury established their homes around the "green" when the subject of a new town west of the Powow River was determined upon. That stream was looked upon as a natural boundary between the large territory, which they evidently considered suitable for two towns. Actuated by these views no doubt, they proceeded, as early as 1642, to carry the plan into effect by passing the following order: "Ordered yer shall thirtie families remove to the west side of y<sup>e</sup> Powwas River." At a meeting held ten days later the time in which the order should be carried into effect was fixed "before the first of the third month in the yeare 1645." This order included nearly one-half of the families in Salisbury. But it was found very difficult, if not impossible, to enforce the order, and the removal was very much delayed and partially defeated by the reluctance of the people in quitting their homes to plunge still deeper into the unbroken forests, which covered hill and valley in the western territory. Other orders soon followed, calculated to encourage the new settlement by the grant of certain privileges. January 15, 1644, it was "ordered that those persons that go up to live upon the west side of the Powwas River shall have the sole feeding on that side for the year ensuing, and power to make order about fences." Again, in February of the same year, this privilege was confirmed and a further inducement given by reducing the taxes to one-half of the rate in the old town. The favorable condition offered finally induced a small colony to remove their families to the new territory.

BOUNDARIES.—It is hardly possible to correctly define the boundaries of the new town at this early date, as the State line was unsettled and uncertain, and new plantations were very poorly defined. It is certain, however, it included all of the territory west of the Powow River which Salisbury then owned. Its limits included Newton, N. H., and probably part of Kingston. Grants of land were made near "y<sup>e</sup> great country pond," and in 1675 the island in the pond was given to Thomas Haynes. This fact is confirmed by a town map drawn in 1715, which gives the "peake," as Newton was then called, as having been laid out with much regularity into large lots called "farmes." Haverhill formed the western boundary from "Brandy Brow" Hill to Merrimac River, which formed its entire southern boundary. This beautiful stream has an average width of about one-fourth of a mile and is navigable to Haverhill for small vessels. The Merrimac River, Powow River and Kimball's Pond constitute the principal bodies of water in and around the town.



**SETTLEMENT.**—There is a tradition that the settlers came in two divisions, the one containing nine and the other eight families; but we find no confirmation of this theory on the records, and it is probable that the removal was without much regularity. Their homesteads at Salisbury were sold at different times, commencing with 1647, which indicates a gradual occupancy of the new territory.

Not until 1654 had a sufficient number crossed the river to organize and virtually establish a new town. At that time eighteen legal voters were in the territory, who styled themselves "the inhabitants and commoners here in y<sup>e</sup> new town."

**AGREEMENT.**—The certainty of a new town was now established and on the 14th of March, 1654, a permanent agreement was entered into between the two settlements containing eight articles intended to define the rights and privileges of the contracting parties.

The first article related to the boundaries and disposition of the common lands, as follows: "The inhabitants of y<sup>e</sup> new towne shall have for their full part and portion of the said common all those lands which lie upon the west side of the pawawaus River up to Haverhill bounds, and the said river to divide the bounds between the new towne and the old towne of Salisbury." The remainder of the common land east of the river was reserved to the old town.

By the seventh article the new town people were to contribute to the support of the ministry in the old town till they obtained a minister to settle among them. The eighth article provides for the separation as follows: "Last of all it is fully concluded and agreed upon by the inhabitants of each towne that the said townes, upon the assignment of the aforesaid articles of agreement, shall be absolutely dismiss of themselves and have no further to meddle with the affaires of each other in any town matters whatsoever." This document was duly signed May 1, 1654, by Thomas Bradbury, Joseph Moyce, Samuel Winsley, George Goldwyer, William Buswell, Edward French, William Allin, Samuel Felloes, Thomas Carter, John Rolfe, John Eaton, Isaac Buswell, William Osgood, John Stevens, Henry Browne, Roger Eastman and Richard North on the part of the old town, and Anthony Colby, George Martin, John Hoyt, Philip Challis, Jaret Hadon, Richard Currier, John Weed, Thomas Macy, Edward Cottle, William Barnes, Thomas Barnard and Valentine Rowell on the part of the new town.

Although by this compact the new town appears to be entirely freed from the old, excepting in the minister's rate, yet such does not appear to be the fact, as the inhabitants were assessed to repair the roads, and the old town generally chose one of the prudential men from Amesbury till the final separation in 1666. Surveyors and viewers of staves were also chosen, at the old town's annual meeting, for the new town.

**SURFACE AND SOIL.**—The landscape is diversified by numerous hills and valleys, which give a great variety of scenery. The western section is specially noted for its numerous hills, which speck its surface in places to the rivers' banks, where they rise high above the tide. The principal plains are the Sandy Hill, Martin and Buttonwood in the East Parish, and the Pond Plain and plain on Church Street in the West Parish. Near the centre of the town is Kimball's Pond, the Indian name of which was "Attitash." It is a beautiful sheet of water about one mile in diameter, nearly surrounded with hills which long have borne the name of "Pond Hills."

The Merrimac River on the south is about half a mile wide and navigable to Haverhill for small vessels. On the east winds the famous Powow, a small stream which rises in New Hampshire, and on its way to the Merrimac, with which it unites at the Ferry, affords extensive water-power, which has been utilized from the first settlement of the territory. In 1872 the Salisbury Mills Company completed a massive dam, known as the "Gardner Dam," near the mills, which has formed a beautiful sheet of water known as "Lake Gardner."

The soil is generally good, although somewhat hilly in the western part of the town. Some of the prominent hills, are Bear Hill, Brandy Brow, Red Oak and Tucker's in the West Parish, and Pond Hills, Ring's, Goodale's and "Whicher's" in the East Parish. Several plains are found, among which are Pond Plain, "Jamaco" Plain,<sup>1</sup> Tucker's Plain, Sandy Hill Plain<sup>2</sup> and plain at Martin Place.

**1655.** A meeting was held the 19th of March, at which the number of commoners was fixed, the manner of transacting the public business defined, and the method of calling meetings and notifying the inhabitants prescribed,—in short, an agreement was entered into for the regulation of all matters pertaining to the welfare of the colony. Thomas Macy was chosen clerk to record the orders of the company, and the small book which he used is still in the clerk's office.

Staves at this time were an important article among the colonies, selling readily in the West Indies for goods needed here, and the commoners claimed fifty for every thousand made from trees cut on the common lands. The old saw-mill also paid tribute to the new town for one-fourth which was owned here.

At this meeting a strong vote was passed as follows

"At a meeting y<sup>e</sup> same day of y<sup>e</sup> inhabitants it was agreed and voted that the number of Inhabitants that shall be commoners shall not exceed the number of twenty-six without the consent of every Inhabitant of y<sup>e</sup> plantation."

James George was made a townsman and commoner on condition that he come and live on his land.

<sup>1</sup> Name of the section in early times.

<sup>2</sup> On Highland Street.





Having thus regulated matters, the eighteen commoners confirmed the whole doings of the meeting as follows:

"We, the Inhabitants, have hereunto set our hands the day and year above written.

" Anthony Colby.	Thomas Barnard.
John Hoyt.	Edward Cottle.
Phillip Challis.	John Weed.
George Martin.	Orlando Bagley.
Jarret Hadden.	Henry Blasdell.
Richard Currier.	Thomas Macy.
John Bayley.	William Sargent.
William Huntington.	William Barnes.
Valentine Rowell.	John Colby."

The above were the original proprietors of the town but Orlando Bagley and John Bayley were not permanent residents.

By the Massachusetts records it appears that the following of the eighteen took the oath of freemen before the General Court at the dates named below, viz.: "Jarret Hadden and Anthony Colby, May 14, 1634; Willie Sargent, 3d month 1639, 22d; Thomas Masie, 6th day of the 7th month, 1639; William Barnes, 2d, 4th month, 1641; John Bayley, May 19, 1669." The record of the others has not been found. It is nearly certain that most of those pioneers who settled Salisbury and Amesbury came from towns of the same name in England. Those ancient towns are closely connected there, and said to be very pleasantly situated. Salisbury is specially noted for its elegant cathedral of ancient build, and Amesbury for its Druid temple or anointed stone, erected by the Druids at a very early period.

1656. It was now found that a second saw-mill was needed, and Richard Currier and Thomas Macy were authorized to build a saw-mill on the west side of the Powow, with the privilege of using all the timber on the common not included in the grant to the old mill, "excepting oak and the right of the people to make canoes." For this privilege they were to pay the town £6 per annum for ten years, in boards at current prices. The prices for sawing were all regulated by the town. As money was very scarce, the sawing was done upon shales, the mill being allowed one-half.

Joseph Peaslee was this year made townsman. He was a self-constituted preacher, and gave the General Court a great deal of trouble while living at Salisbury, by his "unfit preaching." His farm was in the West Parish, but at his death he was in Haverhill owning a farm there.

1657. Nathan Gold was this year made a townsman, and granted eight acres of land on condition that he make his home there.

In December the selectmen of Haverhill joined those of Salisbury in defining the bounds between the two towns, agreeable to the order of the General Court. And October 14th, the line between Hampton and Salisbury was run by John Appleton, Joseph Medcalf, Will Bartholomew and Daniel Perse by order of court.

1658. January 1st, "Thomas Barnard and John Weed were chosen for ordering the prudential affairs of the Company, and the extent of their power is according to the prudential men chosen last year, the men being chosen for y<sup>e</sup> yeare ensuing."

At this meeting it was decided to lay the great swamp out in lots, and Thomas Barnard, John Hoyt and John Weed were ordered to measure it, and receive two shillings and six pence a day for their work from those who had the lots. A way was to be reserved next Powow River forty rods wide for the use of the plantation.

This order was not carried into effect until 1664. All had plenty of wood, and there was no hurry about dividing this section.

January 25th, Thomas Barnard and John Weed were chosen standing lot-layers, and served in that capacity a great many years. Small lots were given to the freemen at almost every meeting, and at this meeting John Weed received ten acres at the But-tonwood, now owned by Charles Rowell, and occupied by his new residence.

May 26th, a petition was sent to the General Court praying that Phillip Challis might be confirmed,— "Left to y<sup>e</sup> foot Com<sup>y</sup> in Salisbury," and it was referred to the next County Court.

October 29th, a general meeting was held, and a large tract beyond the pond, bordering on Back River, was ordered to be laid out and given to the inhabitants. This was the first general division made in the "new towne of Salisbury" since the Agreement of 1654. The original members received forty acres each; newly-admitted ones, ten each.

This year an unsuccessful attempt was made to obtain a legal separation from the old town. Salisbury opposed the measure, not yet being quite willing to lose the help they received towards the support of the minister, and perhaps for other good reasons. The people were ordered to attend meeting in the old town; but the order was disregarded, and they still flocked to hear Joseph Peaslee preach, although by so doing they incurred the displeasure of the General Court.

Finally, at the October term of the General Court, an order was issued, "that the recorder for the County of Norfolk forthwith issue out his warrant requiring Joseph Peasley & the rest of the inhabitants of the new towne, being masters of families, or at their owne dispose, to make theire personall appearances before the next County Court, to be held at Salisbury, to answer for their disobedience to authorities in not complying w<sup>th</sup> said order; and the said County Court is hereby impowered, authorized & required to proceede ag<sup>t</sup> all such of them as in their appearance shall not fully make it cleare they haue, since the said order, performed theire duty and repajred to the public worship of God on the Lord's day at the ould towne, to fine them for every day's absense there five shillings."



Under this order many were fined, and Peaslee with the others. It has been thought by some that this persistent preacher was a Quaker; but the General Court said he was a member of the church at the old town.

Robert Quinby, a ship carpenter, first appears in town this year.

1659. To encourage settlers, five hundred acres of land beyond the pond was set apart for the children. This section was long known as "the children's land." It was intended for the oldest son in each family; but in case there were no sons, then a daughter took the family share.

Walter Taylor was this year made a commoner, with liberty to use what timber he wanted for building vessels so long as he lived in town. He lived at the river, where "Uncle John Davis" lived at a later period. He was a rough person and a little given to profanity, being once fined ten shillings for "vying cursing speeches to his servants." Thomas Hoyt and Thomas Jonson were apprenticed to him to learn the ship-carpenter's trade, but ran away and were fined "five shillings a peece for going away disorderly."

A committee, consisting of "Thomas Barnard, George Martin and Samuel Foot," these three are appointed to lay out the land upon the river, and are to have two pence an acre for laying it out." Twenty-six lots were laid out, No. 1 commencing at the Buttonwood Road, and extending along the river westwardly towards Haverhill. Probably these lots were not completed and drawn till 1661, as Widow Colby and Widow Peasly received lots.<sup>2</sup>

Joseph Peasly will not keep silent, but continues to preach, although fined and threatened by the authorities for doing what his conscience told him was his duty. And the new town people would hear him, notwithstanding his preaching "was very weak and unfit." A compromise was finally made, which it was hoped would satisfy the new town and settle the matter, which was becoming very troublesome.

The old town consented that Mr. Worcester preach at the new town every fourth Sunday. This plan was approved by the General Court, which graciously respited one-half of the fines till the next session. But still Peasly preached, defying the orders of court and the wishes of Mr. Worcester's church. The General Court now assumed a threatening attitude, and forbid his "preaching any more in this jurisdiction till he give full satisfaction to this court for what have been past." This was ominous of his fate if he disregarded the order, and very likely he quit preaching. The conflict soon came to an end by the death of Peasly in 1660 or 1661.

Thomas Macy, one of the original settlers of Ames-

bury, and the first clerk, probably left town this year. The record is in his handwriting until the 1st of November, but the next annual meeting was recorded by Richard Currier. Macy offended the General Court by harboring Quakers, and was summoned to appear before that body to answer for the crime; but either from his inability to do so, or intentionally, he failed to comply with the order. He, with Thomas Barnard and others, were proprietors of the island of Nantucket, to which place Macy now removed. Tradition says that he took his family in his open boat and sailed away to his favorite island, where he lived to a good old age. Mr. Whittier has written a beautiful poem entitled "The Exiles," which finely illustrates this singular adventure of Macy's, and the sentiments of those early times.

TOWNSHIPS.—1660. To enjoy all the rights of freemen, grants must be obtained from the commoners who held the territory, granting it to whom they pleased. On the 10th of December a town-meeting was held which may very properly be designated "a township meeting," as no other business was done. The following were admitted townsmen, viz.: Samuel Foot, Samuel Colby, Nathan Gold, William Osgood and Robert Quinby. The children's land was also divided among the children of the proprietors.

When our ancestors came to this wild territory wolves were very plenty and troublesome, and bounties were early offered for their heads, but 30s. was hardly sufficient to destroy them, and this year it was increased to 50s., if not killed by Indians. The General Court had previously ordered the constables to pay the Indians three quarts of wine and a bushel of corn per head for all they killed.

Another effort was made to obtain a separation from the old town, but without avail. The new town people, supposing they had secured the services of Rev. Shubael Dumer (an orthodox minister), petitioned the General Court for an act of incorporation, which was granted, provided Mr. Dumer was obtained. He finally declined the call, probably not considering the encouragement given quite sufficient. The old town very kindly gave consent to the proposed change, but the measure failed.

1661. Various grants of land were made this year, among which were the "frog pond at the north side of Robert King's hill," where the second instance of tunneling occurred about 1749.

Thomas Haynes, son-in-law of Thomas Barnard, first appears on the record this year, by a grant of five acres of land near "Whicher's hill."

Anthony Colby died in the early part of February. He came over from England with Winthrop and others, in 1630. He is number ninety-three on the list of church-members at Boston, and was made a freeman, May 14, 1634, with Jerard Haddon and some eighty others. He probably lived at Cambridge in 1632, from whence he moved to Salisbury, previous to 1640, with his wife, Susannah, and the following

<sup>1</sup> Not a legal townsman till 1660.

<sup>2</sup> Widows of Anthony Colby and Joseph Peasly, who died in 1660 or 1661.





children, viz.: Sarah, born ———; John, first son, born ———; Samuel, born ———; Orlando, born ———; Isaac, born July 6, 1640; Rebecca, born March 11, 1643; Mary, born Sept. 19, 1647; Thomas, born March 8, 1650. Anthony was one of the eighteen who signed the regulations at the organization of the new town in 1655. His inventory amounted to £359 19s. 4d.

1662. No record is found of the election of a town clerk since the flight of Thomas Macy in 1659, until this year, when Richard Carrier was chosen. Much of the early record is missing, which may account for the deficiency.

George Carr was granted a common right when he or any of his sons came to live in town, and also the right to cut timber on the common for building vessels. This was offered as an inducement to Mr. Carr to become a citizen of the new town, and it was successful in calling George Carr, Jr., a few years later to engage in building vessels at the Ferry. An offer of land was once made to Major Pike if he would remove to the new town.

A large tract of land between the pond, Pine Hill and Powow River was ordered to be laid out to all who had a "common right." "Goodman Marting, Goodman Hoyt and Goodman Rowell were appointed to lay out the land in the Lion's mouth and Great Swamp." These orders, if complied with, would dispose of nearly four thousand acres, one division, called "the great lots," containing three thousand eight hundred and seventy-six acres.

May 17th Valentine Rowell, one of the first eighteen and a signer of the articles of agreement, died. He was early in town and sold his first homestead to John Bayley previous to 1652.

His children were Hannah, born January, 1643; Thomas, born September 7, 1644; John, born 1645; Philip, born March 8, 1647; Mary, born January 31, 1650; Sarah, born November 16, 1651; John, born November 15, 1655; Elizabeth, born August 10, 1657; Margaret, born September 8, 1659.

1663. This year the town bought one acre of land of Edmund Elliott for a burying-ground. It was the eastern part of the ancient cemetery at Bartlett's Corner. Up to this time Golgotha had been the only burying-ground in town.

On the 16th of March a meeting was held, and five hundred acres of land disposed of among the inhabitants, but not without strong opposition.

Ezekiel Wathen, one of the ancestors of the families in Salisbury and Amesbury, first appears as a townsman this year by a grant of land near his house. He lived at Pleasant Valley.

1664. The Great Swamp ordered to be laid out in 1662 was this year given out in lots, and a sweeping vote passed disposing of all the common land. This measure was opposed by some of the most prominent men, and at a subsequent meeting entirely changed by the following vote: "Att y<sup>e</sup> same meting it was

voted that this tract of land above ritting shall not be disposed of this twenty yeare to these men above riting."

John Pressey appears this year, having purchased two river lots west of "Pressey's creek," and near South Amesbury. •

1665. The most important event of this year was building a meeting-house on the acre bought of Edmund Elliott. Hitherto all efforts to obtain a separation from the old town had failed, because no provisions had been made to permanently establish and maintain public worship. Having become sensible of this fact, it was resolved to make due preparation for the long-desired event of a legally established township by the erection of a church in which the people could assemble on each returning Sabbath. Thomas Barnard, John Hoyt and Richard Carrier were chosen to carry forward the work, which was to be completed by "mid-summer." It was a small house,—thirty by twenty-five feet,—but large enough to seat the few inhabitants of the town.

A committee was chosen "to go to Mr. Showell or Mr. Woodbridge's son to see if they can attaine either of them to be helpful two us in y<sup>e</sup> worke of y<sup>e</sup> ministry." The committee failed to obtain either, and in April it was decided "to treat with Captin Pyke to see if they can obtain him to be helpful to us in the work of the ministry." What grounds the new town had for offering to engage Captain Pike to preach for them we can hardly imagine, for, although quite a scholar, he was no minister, and by the laws of those times would not be allowed to preach.

1666. The first act of the year was to fix the minister's salary at forty pounds per year, which was quite liberal for those times. Having built their church and established the minister's salary, it was determined to apply to the General Court for an act of incorporation and a minister.

May 14th a meeting was held and the following vote was passed, viz.: "At the same meeten it was agreed to send to the General Court for the obtayning of Mr. Benjamin Woodbridg to be helpfull to us in the work of the ministry, and also to see if we can obtain to be a township of ourselves." The effort was successful, a township being obtained and the services of the Rev. Benjamin Woodbridge secured. The petition was presented at the May session of the General Court, when the following order was passed:

"In answer to the petition of the inhabitants of New Salisbury, this Court doeth grant them the liberty of a township, according to the agreement with the old towne & that upon their providing a minister approved off according as the law provides, they then to be taken off from contributing to the minister of y<sup>e</sup> old towne."

Mr. Woodbridge was a nephew of the Rev. Thomas Parker and the Rev. James Noyes, first ministers of Newbury. He graduated in the first class which completed their studies at Harvard College, standing at the head of the class. He had been a member of Magdalen College at Oxford, in England, but chose





to finish his studies here. He came to America with his brother, Rev. John Woodbridge, in 1634. Dr. Calamy says of him: "He was a universally accomplished person; one of a clear and strong reason and of an exact and profound judgment." His stay in Amesbury was short, not exceeding three years.

June 15th the town organized, by the choice of Thomas Barnard, Phillip Challis, John Meed, Robert Jones and John Hoyt, Sr., prudential men.

1667. At the annual meeting, the division of land set apart for the children in 1659 was ordered "to every child according to his father's estate, given in to the makin of Mr. Woodbridge's first reat in the new town."

A vote was passed "that the town shall make a bregth over the swamp at Gorg. Martin's house." The remains of this ancient causeway may yet be seen near the Martin Road.

Edward Goodwin, Richard Hubbard, William Hacket, John Nash and Thomas Nichols were granted common rights this year.

A meeting was held July 9th, at which some forty of the inhabitants were seated in the meeting-house. Further provision was ordered for the minister, by the grant of two hundred acres of land which "Liften, Challes, John Hoyt, Sen., and George martyn were chosen to lay out."

When the town was incorporated no name was given, but in the early part of this year the name was fixed as follows: "At the seam metten the Towne have named this Towne Amesbery." This name was confirmed by the General Court in 1668, but the name was slightly changed, to "Emesbury."

1668. On the 18th of February a meeting was held, and a hundred lots of land disposed of to the settlers. The first division was on "Whicher's" Hill, the second in the vicinity of the pond, the third between the pond and Birchy Meadow and the fourth was to begin on the west side of the Pond Brook. These sections embraced most of the undivided lands in town.

The County Court at Hampton appointed Edward Goodwin to keep the ferry over the Merrimac River near his house this year. A private way was laid out from the "country highway" to the saw-mill, the owners paying for the land taken.

1669. James Frees, William Sargent, Jr., Josue Goodsmith, Thomas Stevens, Jossef Lankester, John Ginn-en and Jos. Wathen were granted common rights.

Early this year Amesbury was without a minister, and "Jan. 18th It was granted unto that minister that do come and live and inhabit with us fifty akers of land lying in that part of the common between fox island and Georg. Martyn's house." This land, with fifty acres given to the ministry by Philip Watson Challis,<sup>1</sup> has always been known as the

"parsonage." In addition to this, it was decided to purchase a house for the use of the ministry.

Mr. Woodbridge boarded with "Goodman Sargent," but it was thought advisable to give the coming minister better accommodations. In February it was decided to send to "Mr. Hobberd, of Kettle, to see if we can obtayn him, to be helpful to us in the work of the ministry." Mr. Hobberd was not inclined to accept the call which the town, through their committee, had given him, and several weeks later a new committee was chosen, but met with poor success. Some two months later (May 7th) Robert Jones was chosen to find a minister and invite him to come and make a visit. Mr. Hobberd was finally induced to accept the pressing call which was extended to him, and received the land set apart for the ministry.

The old road north of the hill (Goodale's), which bounds Pleasant Valley on the northward, was ordered this year.

1670. The ancient road over Ferry Hill was located this year, traces of which are yet visible. There were, at a very early period, two houses on the hill—one owned by Abraham Morrill, the other by some person unknown. This highway connected with Goodwin's Ferry, and was, for nearly half a century, the only public road leading northward.

1672. In the early part of last year the town voted to give Mr. Hubbard "his fire-wood in addition to his £40 per year;" and this year an addition to his salary of £5 was made, and grass to make four loads of hay. He was evidently popular, and giving excellent satisfaction, or he was pressing the people for a large increase of salary. However this may have been, there came a very sudden change, and the town voted "not to ad any more to Mr. Hoberd's maintainance, neither in land nor anything else." No doubt the faithful preacher considered this equivalent to a dismissal, and so it proved, for in less than two months an invitation was extended to the Rev. Thomas Wells, a young man of good talent. He had preached at Newbury and the Shoals some, and may have occupied Mr. Hubbard's pulpit on some occasion, when his eloquence had captivated the hearts of the people. He was readily obtained, and his salary fixed at forty pounds per year and the use of the land set apart for the ministry. It was also voted to build him a house "fower and forty foot long or there abouts, and twenty foote wide and thirteen foot and a half stood." The Vane lot (now Bartlett's Corner) was obtained of Abner Jones, and here Mr. Wells lived during his long pastorate of more than sixty years. The lilacs and well near the new High School building still mark the spot where the "village preacher's modest mansion rose." The offer to build was not carried out, and an offer to move the house bought of John Hoyt (for Mr. Hubbard) to the Vane lot was also declined, and Mr. Wells built to suit himself.

<sup>1</sup> First instance of middle name on record; but the *w* generally omitted by him.



1674. The town having some difficulty with Philip W. Challis in regard to an exchange of land, commenced suit against him, but was beaten, and, as he says, "upon tryal of case nothing did appear." But notwithstanding the suit, Mr. Challis freely deeded fifty acres of land for the use of the ministry for certain considerations, but "more especially of or great desire & affeccion towards a Godly ministry "to be settled & upheld in y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> town of Amesbury." This deed was signed March 25, 1673, and acknowledged March 12, 1674, before Robert Pike.

A singular meeting was held near the close of the year, which was far from satisfactory to a large number of the voters. A new town clerk was chosen, and a large committee appointed to correct the errors in the "Town book off records" before the next annual meeting.

What occasioned this sudden move against Richard Currier, the present clerk, who had held the office since Macy's flight in 1659, is not known. Perhaps the new minister may have suggested the measure. It does not appear that the books were corrected, but Thomas Currier (son of Richard) was confirmed at a subsequent meeting, as clerk, and held the office till 1712.

1675. William Sargent, one of the original settlers, died this year, aged seventy-three years. He came to Virginia with William Barnes, John Hoyt and others, settling at Newbury, Hampton, Salisbury and finally at Amesbury. In deeds he is styled "mariner." He was twice married—first to Judith Perkins, by whom he had Lydia, Sarah and Mary; second to Elizabeth Perkins,<sup>1</sup> by whom he had Thomas, born June 11, 1643; William, born January 2, 1646; Elizabeth, born November 22, 1648; Sarah, born February 29, 1652.

The business of the town at this time was farming, fishing, making staves and building vessels. These occupations required other tradesmen, such as blacksmiths, weavers, carpenters, tailors, etc. River and harbor fishing came next to farming in importance, furnishing an important article of food. The raising of cattle and sheep was by no means neglected, if we may be allowed to judge from the old inventories. The small grains were also raised in abundance, and orchards are mentioned within ten years of the settlement of Salisbury. No potatoes are found on ancient inventories till about 1730.

1676. In the early years of the settlement little, if any, trouble was occasioned by the Indians, but, having grown more numerous, they grew troublesome, obliging the inhabitants to keep constant watch day and night. For the convenience of the watchmen the town was divided into wards, each having a watch-house for quarters. Each ward was required to furnish wood for the watch-house, under a fine of five shillings for neglect. The garrison-houses were

to be kept in order, and everything betokened an alarming state of affairs. No one ventured into his field without a gun, and even friendly Indians could hardly be trusted. The forts or garrison-houses were built in different sections of the town, that should an alarm occur all might readily seek safety therein. There was a garrison near the Estes estate, one at Pond Hills, one at "Jamaco," one near Birchy Meadow, and probably one at the Highlands.

The constables and watches were obliged to keep nights from May to October, and all persons (males) over sixteen were required to take turns or hire a substitute. No persons were allowed out after ten o'clock at night, and lights were to be put out at that hour, and all noises cease in the streets. These precautions were none too severe, as we shall find next year.

1677. The much-feared Indian raid occurred this year, and several persons were murdered, notwithstanding the great precautions taken to prevent a surprise. Secretary Rawson, in a letter to Governor Anderson, of New York, says,—“As for damage done us by the eastern Indians, mentioned in our letter dated July 28th, was in taking our fishing catches about Cape Sable, and a notorious murder committed upon some men, women and children at Amesbury about the middle of July, but not known to us or y<sup>e</sup> Commissioners at Pemaquid until after the peace was concluded between some of the eastern Indians & Capt. Brockles.” From the above it would be inferred that the murders here were committed by eastern Indians, but it is a matter of history that there were Indians nearer home quite as treacherous as those farther east. There was one Symon, who had lived among the English and with William Osgood awhile, that was a treacherous fellow. He was without doubt the leader of the murderous assault made July 7th of this year, when “men, women and children were killed.

Robert Quinby is supposed to have been killed, and his wife was knocked down and left for dead, but recovered, and stated that Symon was with the party and attempted her life. The names of those killed are not given by the records.

1678. The town had some controversy with Rev. Mr. Wells about land granted him and an exchange which he wished to make. A large committee was chosen to settle the matter, and enter their decision on the town book, but no report is found.

Samuel Colby, living at Bartlett's Corner, was chosen “to keep a public-house of entertainment,” which is the first tavern mentioned on the records. These were popular resorts much favored by the people.

1679. This year a monthly lecture was ordered, “the last Wednesday of every month from March to Mickaelmus.”<sup>2</sup> The minister's rate was made twice per year—spring and fall.

<sup>1</sup> The late Jona. B. Sargent authority.

<sup>2</sup> Feast of Michael, September 29th.





1680. Mr. Wells' salary was increased to fifty pounds per year during the remaining time which he may be engaged in the work of the ministry. His eight years' service was no doubt satisfactory.

1682. George Martyn, Robert Jones and John Prowse were appointed to lay out the "Peeke" land, which embraced a large tract near Kingstown, called "the farms" on the map of 1715. It probably included all of Newton, N. H., and possibly part of South Hampton. These farms were laid out in regular order, having suitable roads located between them, crossing each other at right angles.

The saw-mill which was built in 1656 was yet in running order according to the following deposition:

"The deposition of Richard Currier, aged about sixty-six yeares, testifieth that I keep a Sawe Mill at Amesbury, neare unto the Sawe Mill that do belong unto Salisbury upon the seam river and I have sawin this Spring about five or six thousand foot of bord a weeke for three months together, and do swere that y<sup>e</sup> Sawe Mill that do belong unto Salisbury is no waies inferior to the mill at Amesbury and have ben as well improved, and further saith that the Sawe mills did sett about four month but had not a full head of water.

"Sept. 25th, 1682.

RICHARD CURRIER."

1683. The acre bought in 1663 for a burying-ground was enlarged this year by the purchase of additional land of Thomas Colby.

1685. By order of the town, the main road from Amesbury to Haverhill was run out and defined by the selectmen of the two towns. It was recorded four rods wide from the meeting-house in Amesbury to the bridge at the east meadows in Haverhill.

1686. Up to the present time the minister's salary was paid almost wholly in produce from the farms, but now Mr. Wells is to receive "fifty shillings in money." But he was notified "that there should be no more added tow Mr. Wells is mayntainance." The sober second thought repealed this vote at a later meeting. Mr. Wells was this year chosen registrar, and the births, marriages and deaths, of which no previous record is found, commenced at this time. The record of these items for the first twenty years of the town's corporate existence is missing, and we know of no tradition which accounts for the loss.

George Martin died this year, it is believed, as his name disappears from the "lot-layer's" committee, where he served from the settlement of the town. He was one of the original number who crossed the Powow River to establish a plantation here and a signer of the articles of agreement. He was probably born in England and came over when young. He was a blacksmith by occupation, but became a large land-holder before his death.

His children were Hannah, born February 1, 1644; Richard, born June 29, 1647; George, born October 21, 1648; Abigail, born October 10, 1649; John, born January 26, 1651; Hester, born April 7, 1653; Jane, born November 2, 1656; William, born December 11, 1662 (died a few days old); Samuel, born September 29, 1667; William, born —.

1687. The Indians were again on the war-path, greatly alarming the people, but no damage was done. Captain Pike's troop of horse was thought to be insufficient to protect the scattered inhabitants of the two towns, and assistance was asked of the General Court, but none was given.

Wolves were still troublesome and a bounty of twenty shillings was offered for every one killed.

Walter Taylor died February 11th. He was a ship-carpenter and built vessels near the ferry. After his death Francis Davis took the land granted him, and was probably the first of that name in the East Parish.

Thomas Jewell first appears in town this year, settling in the northern part of the town (now South Hampton). He came from Hingham, where he lived a short time after arriving in this country. Tradition says that he was hostler to Lord Guilford and finally eloped with his daughter to this country.

Richard Currier died February 22d. He was one of the original number of those who colonized the town, and took a very prominent part in public affairs, seldom being out of office. He was the second clerk, and was "Clark of the writs," built the first mill with Macy, was on the committee to build the first meeting-house, was sole agent to get the town incorporated, selectman twelve years, was commissioner to end small cases and, in fact, served in about every office within the gift of the people. He was born in England about 1616, and may have come over with "Mr. Brian Dowe," to whom he was servant when he first came to Salisbury. His children were Hannah, born October 5, 1643; Thomas, born October 1, 1646; and probably Richard.

1688. Sergeant John Hoyt died February 28th. Among those entrusted with office he was very prominent. He was of the original number which signed the agreement in 1654, and was early in town. He served as selectman eight years, was a military officer in Norfolk County, constable, and was frequently appointed on committees.

His children were Frances, born —; John, born 1638; Thomas, born January 1, 1640; Georgie, born January 1, 1641; Elizabeth, born February 23, 1643; Sarah, born January 16, 1645; Mary, born February 24, 1646; Joseph, born May 13, 1648; Joseph, born November 27, 1649; Marah, born November 27, 1653; Naomi, born January 23, 1655; Dorothea, born April 13, 1656.

Jarred<sup>1</sup> Haddon died some time during the year, but his death is not recorded. The inventory bears date June 1, 1689.

He was one of the first eighteen and a signer of the articles of agreement in 1654 and took the freeman's oath May 14, 1634. He was a large land-holder and probably lived at the Ferry. He held office less than some others, but was commissioner to end small

<sup>1</sup> Name sometimes spelt Gherard.



cases in 1673, and selectman in 1676, '79 and '80. His children, so far as known, were—Sarah, born Jan. 15, 1640; Mary, born —; and Elizabeth.

1689. Lieutenant John Weed died March 15th, after a long and useful life. He was one of the first proprietors and signed the articles of agreement in 1654. He served as selectman nine years, was commissioner, constable and lot-layer, was frequently entrusted with important business by the town, and was seated at the table in the meeting-house. He was, so far as we have been able to ascertain, the wealthiest of the eighteen, his inventory amounting to £737 7s. 8d., His children were Samuel, born February 15, 1652; Mary, born September 5, 1653; John, born November 1, 1655; Anna, born July 26, 1657; Deborah, born June 15, 1659; George, born May 25, 1661; Ephraim, born February 24, 1667; Nathaniel, fifth son, born —; Joseph, born —.

It is probable that Wm. Huntington died this year. He was early in town, living on a small place at the Ferry, which was given to his wife by her father, John Bayley, Sr. His name appears with those who organized the town in 1655, but is not on the articles of agreement. He held very little office in town, but received land in most of the divisions and was probably a large farmer. His homestead was at Pleasant Valley, and a portion of it is yet in the hands of his descendants. His children were John, born the last week in August, 1643; James, born —, died in infancy; Mary, born July 8, 1648.

The town's management of religious matters was very singular, especially in regard to the minister. Mr. Wells was settled according to the customs of the times, which was for life, and yet the town annually voted that they were clear of him and he of them. At the annual meeting, after choosing a moderator, it was "voted y<sup>t</sup> we desire to have a minister among us," just as though Mr. Wells must leave unless engaged anew. The next vote was to send to him to know whether he had a mind to stay and "continue in y<sup>e</sup> work of y<sup>e</sup> ministry among us." The next was "y<sup>t</sup> y<sup>e</sup> towne was clear from Mr. Wells and Mr. Wells from y<sup>e</sup> towne." Having established the two points of independence, they went to work and voted "to pay the minister £50 per year" and "att y<sup>e</sup> same metting y<sup>e</sup> towne made choyce of Mr. Wells" to be their minister. They then voted "that Mr. Wells shall have his firewood brought home to him for this yeare ensuing."

Thus in their own peculiar way they satisfied themselves and gave Mr. Wells a liberal supply.

In 1686 the King sent a commission to take possession of the government of Massachusetts Bay, which measure met with strong opposition, but without effect. On the accession of William and Mary, in February of this year, the people restored the former government. Amesbury sent their "tristy frinds Capt. Foot and Samuel Colby as Representatives" to aid in reinstating the former officers and restoring charter rights.

James II. had usurped the government and the people embraced the first opportunity to overthrow his hated officials. Gov. Andros was summarily deposed.

1690. Indian wars were almost continually harassing the colony, making it necessary to keep companies of soldiers to guard against surprise. These troops were raised in the towns, the only exception being in "frontier towns" which were excused from contributing to the common safety on account of their exposed situation.

Amesbury petitioned the General Court to be considered a frontier town and very likely her request was granted. Merrimac then called "Jamaco," suffered severely by these raids, and this year tradition says Capt. Samuel Foot was captured and tortured to death by the Indians.<sup>1</sup> He died July 7th, but the cause of death is not stated on the record. He probably lived on the plain not far from the cemetery<sup>2</sup> and kept the garrison there. At the same time three men were killed and three houses burned.

Edward Cottle, one of the first little colony here, lived at "Jamaco," and a tradition has been handed down that his house was burnt twice, once by accident, and once by Indians. He was discouraged and removed to Duke's County. John Hoyt, Jr., suffered by having his house plundered by Indians.

1692. The most noted and saddest event of the year was the accusation, trial and conviction of Susannah Martin as a witch. She was the widow of George Martin, a prominent man of the first company. She was a good, but outspoken woman, and died a martyr to the superstitions of the times. This singular delusion prevailed to an alarming extent at this time, filling the jails with suspected persons of both sexes. The dark stain of Salem witchcraft can never be blotted from history.

1693. This year "tything men" were first chosen, their duties being very much like those of State constables of modern times. As an inducement to faithfulness, they were to receive the benefit of informers which probably meant part of the fines. They were to carefully inspect all licensed houses and to inform of all disorders and misdemeanors which they may discover.

1694. Mr. Wells was chosen school-master, with a salary of twenty pounds. The Indians were still troubling the settlers by the raids. September 4th, Joseph Pike, of Newbury, deputy-sheriff of Essex, while traveling with one Long between Amesbury and Haverhill, fell into an ambuscade of the enemy on the ridge near Gilman Merrill's, and was murdered. It may have been at this time that one Rowell, a mail-carrier between Newbury and Portsmouth, was killed in Patten's Hollow.

1696. Again we find the Indians committing depredations on the towns, and John Hoyt and one Peters

<sup>1</sup> See Dr. Parrish's "History of New England."

<sup>2</sup> Upper County.





were killed in Andover while on the road to Haverhill. It was at this time that the murderous descent was made on Haverhill, where nine persons were killed or carried into captivity, and among the number the plucky Hannah Dustin.

1697. The little church built thirty-two years ago was hardly large enough to hold the people, and Mr. Wells asked leave to build a pew on the outside, between the south door and the southwest corner.

1698. William Barnes died March 14th, and was no doubt the last of those who organized the town in 1655. He was one of the most prominent of the company, and his services were always in demand. He was selectman twelve years, moderator at sixteen meetings, commissioner to end small cases five years, constable, juror, and on the committee to correct the clerk's book. He is said to have come from England in 1635, in the "Globe," Jeremy Blackman, master, at the age of twenty-two; and if so, he was eighty-five at his death. He was a house-carpenter. His children were Mary, born —; William, born —; Hannah, born Jan. 25, 1643; Deborah, born April 1, 1646; Jonathan, born April 1, 1648; Rachel, born April 30, 1649; Sarah, born —; Rebecca, born —; Jonathan died before his father, and so did William.

1699. An appropriation of five pounds was made to build "gallies on y<sup>e</sup> foreshore and at each end" of the meeting-house. The population increased but slowly during the first half-century of the settlement, if we may judge by the fact that galleries were but just needed. It should be considered, however, that their old-style settees seated more people in the same space than modern pews.

Educational matters were not forgotten, and this year it was left with the selectmen "to procure a School Master or school Dames that may supply the town," and six pounds was allowed towards paying the master. The custom had long prevailed of raising by subscription some portion of the school money.

1700. A sharp, spiky letter was received from Major Pike in regard to his Indian ground, over which he said the town had laid a road forty rods wide, without notifying him. His Indian ground lay at the Buttonwood, and that section was the favorite resort of the Indians in early times, as shown by the arrow-heads and other implements found there. This letter was ordered to be kept in the town-book, and it is there to-day in a good state of preservation.

1701. The earliest record of the Society of Friends commences this year, although a few were living in town at an earlier date. The Hampton Monthly Meeting decided to build a meeting-house twenty-six feet square and fourteen "foot stud," and here the members from Amesbury, Salisbury and Hampton met for some four years.

Many small vessels were built at this time on the river for fishing and the West India trade. The

name of one has been saved and handed down—the "Katch Peter," of thirty tons.

1702. A stringent law was passed this year, requiring towns to maintain schools and employ qualified teachers, other than ministers, under a penalty of twenty pounds. To comply with the law, the selectmen were authorized to hire a master. Thus the free-school system was permanently established, the appropriations gradually increasing till, in 1875, it reached nearly twelve thousand dollars.

Seven young ladies had leave to build a pew in the gallery of the meeting-house, which they very modestly occupied till marriage thinned their ranks. Before the year closed two were married and others soon followed.

The Quakers were taxed for the support of preaching, and this year the constable took two calves from Ezekiel Wathen, valued at thirty shillings, to pay his rate.

1703. This year the commoners held two meetings, choosing a clerk, and ordering a large tract of land near the late Moses Merrill's to be laid out in lots and disposed of. At the second meeting the only business transacted was confirming the grant to Francis Davis of the Walter Taylor land at the river.

A new officer was chosen this year, styled "Howard," but the duties of the office do not appear from the record.

A small vessel of forty tons was built this year and registered by the name of "Friends' Adventure."

There was taken from Ezekiel Wathen two thousand and one hundred shingles to pay the "prestes rate" this year.

The famous "Woolpit" Hill, sometimes called "sugar loaf" in modern times, is mentioned on this year's record. It is supposed to have been named from pits which were dug on its sandy top to entrap wolves, in the early years of the settlement. This hill is a singular formation, mostly of clay and stone, rising abruptly nearly or quite a hundred feet above the river at its base, affording a fine view to the south and east. The river road winds along at its foot, crossing Goodwin's Creek and entering that beautiful valley known as Pleasant Valley. One residence has been erected near its summit, and others will no doubt soon follow.

1704. At this date tanning was an important business, as most of the leather used was of home manufacture. Many old tan-pits were to be seen half a century since, and their remains are to be found in several places at the present time.

The town paid Samuel Colby, Sr., twenty shillings for ringing the bell and sweeping the meeting-house the past year, but the Quakers opposed the vote.

A square-stern vessel of about forty tons was built this year and named the "Success." Many others were no doubt built, although no record of them is found.

1705. The town was troubled with Indian depreda-





tions to such an extent that the children were in danger on their way to school, and it was unsafe for Jamaco people to come down to meeting. To obviate the danger, schools were kept in less exposed places, and Mr. Wells preached at Jamaco every third Sabbath. As their numbers increased, the Indians became more aggressive, and murders were frequent.

The Friends in Amesbury and Salisbury took measures to build a meeting-house, and a committee was appointed to select a location. Thomas Barnard gave a small piece of land, which tradition locates on Friend Street, near No. 8 Mill.

The first marriage recorded on the Friends' book of records took place this year, at the house of Thomas Barnard. The groom was John Peasley, grandson of Joseph, the preacher, and the bride was Mary Martin, granddaughter of George Martin. The marriage was signed by forty-seven witnesses.

1706. The first rate to pay for schooling was made this year, thus placing educational interests on a firm basis.

The Indians who were threatening the settlements last year continued their hostile demonstrations, and several of the inhabitants were killed about the 1st of July. The militia were called out, but the savages had fled beyond the reach of pursuit and nothing was accomplished.

1707. This year the town voted to hire four or five school "Dames" for young scholars, and two masters for two months, to teach young persons to write and cipher. Seven schools were thus provided during a portion of the year. The pay of teachers was very small, but a little money went a good ways. For fifty years after the settlement of Salisbury, butter remained at the price first fixed upon—six pence per pound—and other articles were equally low.

1708. The town ordered a road laid out from the six-rod highway near John Challis', to the plain near Tappan Emery's. John Challis lived on the corner, near the late Moses Merrill's, and the road was the one which crosses Sandy Brook, near Daniel F. Merrill's.

Benjamin Eastman petitioned the town for leave to build a fulling-mill just below the mill bridge, on the Powow River, and also to take the water underground across the road to drive the mill. The request was granted, and thus was put in operation the first fulling-mill of which we have any account.

Sept. 7th. The commoners held a meeting and granted Col. John March several pieces of land on the original right of George Carr.

1710. Col. John March, John Barnard, Joseph Brown and Jarvis Ring petitioned for leave to build iron-works on the Powow River without being taxed, which was readily assented to by the town. The works were built, and in operation many years. This was a new branch of business, and, in connection with the saw-mills, grist-mills and fulling-mill, was making brisk times in this little village. It is prob-

able that the stock of this company was divided into twenty-four shares, as ancient inventories mention " $\frac{1}{24}$  part" of the iron-works and mill privilege. In 1733 these shares were valued at seven pounds each, or one hundred and sixty-eight pounds for the entire concern. The ore was mostly raked from the bottom of the large ponds in Newton and Kingston, although some bog ore was dug. The stones in and near Powow River show strong indications of iron, and in the northern part of Newton the road walls are largely composed of iron-stones. The fact that most of the ore was obtained in Kingston may account for the removal of the works to Trickling Falls, after some years' experience at the Mills.

Capt. Harvey petitioned for leave to build vessels at Jamaco, and was allowed to do so. The town landings were always free to the business men in town.

The school appropriations were raised to thirty pounds, and schools were ordered to be kept half the time at the meeting-house and half the time at the house of Roger Stevens, at Jamaco.

1711. The Grammar School was ordered to be kept at the meeting-house four months, at "ye Pond Hills fort" four months, and at "Left Foot's fort or thereabouts" the last four months.

1712. Powow River, even in ancient times, failed to supply the mills with water during the dry season of the year, and to supply the deficiency, resort was now had to Kimball's Pond. Capt. John Wadleigh built a dam at the pond's mouth "to preserve water in a dry time for grinding." This was the first attempt to utilize the waters of Kimball's Pond.

Thomas Carrier, the third town clerk since 1654, died this year, having served since 1674, when he superseded his father, Richard. Father and son held the office about fifty-two years. Thomas was a neat penman and correct business man, or at least the town thought so. He held the office of selectman seventeen years, besides filling almost every other town office. He was a schoolmaster, and chosen by the town to "teach to wright and sipher such as shall come to him."

He had, by some means, acquired a good education for those early times, and if through the town schools, it speaks well for their efficiency and his industrious habits.

On the 13th of October Orlando Bagley, Jr. (grandson of the first Orlando), was chosen clerk, and held the office till 1754. He was also a schoolmaster, and chosen to keep a private school by the town.

1713. At this time Amesbury extended to Kingston, and the selectmen notified those of that town to meet them "at ye pond's mouth, called ye country pond," to perambulate the town line.

1714. The meeting-house built in 1665 had grown old, and was out of repair, and a meeting was called January 7th to consider what should be done. But



there was a difference of opinion, and the votes were rather conflicting. It was first decided to repair the old house, but some believed it better to build new, and the latter proposition finally prevailed. A committee of six was chosen "to consider and conclude concerning y<sup>e</sup> building of a meeting-house, and they to bring in their result at y<sup>e</sup> next March meeting, for y<sup>e</sup> town's approbation, and also y<sup>e</sup> place where y<sup>e</sup> house shall be built." As no report of the committee is found, we are unable to state what it was, but at the annual meeting the town voted to build two houses, and then adjourned to April 12th. When again met it was decided to build the first house at Jamaco, on the Pond Plain, on land given the town by Jarvis Ring for a burying ground. But no committee was chosen, and the measure failed for the present, evidently on account of conflicting opinions.

1715. The first important question upon which the town was called to act was that of building one or more churches, and deciding upon proper locations.

A meeting was held January 7th, but adjourned to the 24th, when the work of last year was reconsidered; and the town voted to build but one meeting-house, and located it on "y<sup>e</sup> parcel of land called y<sup>e</sup> parsonage, neare Edward Hunt's."

This settled the question, which no doubt caused some ill feeling, and was a concession to the people at the west end by shortening their route to church about one mile. Its location was on the corner of the Martin Road, opposite the house of George W. Bartlett. The house was to be finished by the 1st of November, 1716. Deacon Joseph Brown, Thomas Hoyt and Thomas Sargent were appointed to carry forward the work. Its dimensions were—forty-five feet long, thirty-five feet wide and twenty feet posts. An appropriation of one hundred and fifty pounds was made to carry forward the work. To satisfy the people at Jamaco, it was voted to build a house there, three years after the completion of this. The location of this new church was not a lonesome one, as within the range of half a mile were half a score of houses.

1716. Orlando Bagley, Jr., gave the town an eighth of an acre where the pound now stands, for a school-house lot, and it was decided to build a house "twenty foot square and seven foot stud, within y<sup>e</sup> space of two years." The Pond Hills has seldom been without a school, even when there was not a school-house in town, and the schools were held at private houses, forts or the meeting-house. This central locality was convenient and favored on that account.

1717. The school-house at Pond Hills begun last year was not completed, and Thomas Challis was chosen to finish the work.

The meeting-house was not wholly finished, some persons not having built their pews according to order. These were given twelve months' longer time, and if the pews were not then built, the privilege was lost.

The pulpit, deacons' seats and many of the pews were completed and seats assigned to many persons, and meetings were discontinued in the old church, which was now given to the faithful pastor, who had occupied it for forty-five years.

Mr. Wells' experience with the town, in a financial point of view, had not been of the most pleasing kind; wars and scarcity of money had often rendered it difficult to raise his salary and caused some friction between the parties. He now proposes a final settlement up to September 29, 1714, the town giving him leave to build a pew in the east meeting-house and also in the one to be built at the west end of the town, and he to abate ten pounds of his rate made October 23, 1716, and sign the following receipt:

"Id acquitt, discharge and absolve y<sup>e</sup> inhabitants of y<sup>e</sup> town of Amesbury, considered conjunctively as y<sup>e</sup> town, of all debts, dues and demands whatsoever relating to my yearly salary for my ministerial maintenance from y<sup>e</sup> beginning of y<sup>e</sup> world unto y<sup>e</sup> twenty-ninth day of September, in y<sup>e</sup> yeare of our Lord, one thousand seven hundred and fourteen."

The town accepted this proposition and harmony was restored.

1719. In the early days of the town "Lot layers" were important officers; their duties being those of lotting out the new divisions, laying out highways and at stated periods returning all lots in town for record in the town-book. Samuel Weed had served in the capacity from 1694 to the present time, when he was discharged. The town voted him "ancient and decayed," although but sixty-six years of age.

Constables were in early times important officers, and on them devolved the duty of collecting all rates. In consideration of their valuable services, they were not taxed, but this year a change was made, taxing constables and paying them six pence per pound for collecting.

A school-house was ordered to be built at Jamaco, which may be the second one in town.

Three important roads were located this year—the Ferry Road, Birchy Meadow Road and that part of the Lion's Mouth Road between the Poor Farm and Francis Locke's. What may have been the condition of the land at the Ferry is hardly known, although tradition says that a large portion of the land was covered with wood and bushes.

There were a few houses between Bartlett's Corner and the river, and three only are mentioned in the return of the road, viz.: Jacob Bagley's, James Harbard's and Gideon Lowell's frame. There was, however, an ancient "logg house" near the river. No doubt there was a path of some kind before this three-rod way was opened, but this was an important step towards building up the village.

The Birchy Meadow Road was located very nearly as found to-day, and was a very important measure to that vicinity. The extension of the Lion's Mouth was also a good move.





On the 6th of December the causeway from the Poor Farm at the Lion's Mouth across the boggy and sunken swamp to Birchen Plain was laid out as a public highway. It is probable that some rude path had already been made, by which it was possible to cross, but nothing like a road was there. To avoid the immense quantity of gravel which would be required, the way was first graded with logs and then covered with soil.

1721. The Hunt road, connecting the Haverhill and Buttonwood roads, was widened to three rods and defined.

This year the General Court authorized the emission of bills of credit to the amount of £50,000. There was great scarcity of money, and it was becoming very difficult to transact the ordinary business of the colony. These bills were loaned to the towns and held by trustees, who loaned them, on good security, to the people. Each town received in proportion to its last province rate, which rule gave Amesbury £373. Captain Richard Currier, Jonathan Blasdell and Orlando Bagley, Jr., were chosen trustees, to loan the money on time, which should not exceed four years. For their services they were to receive one-fourth of the interest.

At this date hogs were allowed to run at large, and it was now "voted that all hoggs should go at large on y<sup>e</sup> commons in said towne for y<sup>e</sup> yeare ensuing, they being youked and ringed as y<sup>e</sup> law directs."

The people at Jamaco were growing impatient in regard to their meeting-house. Mr. Wells was willing to preach there a portion of the time, but no suitable place was to be found. Late in the season (Dec. 11th) a meeting was called to consider the matter, and it was decided to "proceed in building a meeting-house at y<sup>e</sup> west end of y<sup>e</sup> town, commonly called Jamaco."

Thomas Challis and four others opposed the measure, they being Quakers, but without avail. The meeting decided to locate the house on "y<sup>e</sup> country road, near y<sup>e</sup> house of Thomas Bettells." Thomas and Jeremiah Fowler owned land there, and offered to give one-quarter of an acre for the purpose. Captain Richard Currier, Jacob Sargent and Orlando Bagley, Jr., were chosen to proceed with the work. The house was to be of the same dimensions as the one at the parsonage. Although the town had fixed the location and begun the work, things were not working harmoniously, and there is evidently trouble ahead.

1722. The location of the new church had given such general dissatisfaction at Jamaco that a meeting was called, May 14th, to further consider the matter. At this meeting a reconsideration of the vote locating the house on the country road was carried, but not without strong opposition. An out-of-town committee was chosen, consisting of Colonel Henry Somerby, of Newbury, Captain Nathaniel Brown, of Salisbury, and Lieutenant Richard Heason, of Haverhill, with full power to determine the location. The result was

that the house was built on the plain a few rods from the present Congregational Church, and not far from the cemetery. This change occasioned some expense in removing the materials which had been collected, and the town agreed to foot the bills.

The Indians were now becoming very troublesome, frequent raids being made upon the settlements, which kept the people in constant alarm. They suddenly appeared at Jamaco, causing a general flight to the forts for protection. On this occasion Anna Cottle, a puny infant, was born in one of the forts, whither her mother had fled. But, notwithstanding the strange circumstances surrounding her birth, she lived to a great age, dying in 1810, aged eighty-seven years, eleven months and five days. At her death the Indians had disappeared, and garrison-houses were no longer needed.

It is probable that near this time a descent was made upon the Pond Hills. Tradition says that David Currier captured an Indian on his homestead (now owned by John Currier), near the Great Swamp. He was at work in his field, with his dog and gun near at hand, when the growling of his dog warned him of approaching danger. Snatching his gun, he quickly saw an Indian picking berries near the swamp, apparently not noticing any one near. He fired, wounding the Indian, who called for quarters, being too much frightened to flee or fire. "Lay down your gun and I'll give you quarters," was the reply, which condition was readily complied with. He was now Mr. Currier's prisoner, and was taken to the garrison-house, on the plain, near the late Rev. D. G. Estes' residence, and finally exchanged. His gun is yet in the possession of the family at Pond Hills.

An effort was made to engage a colleague for Mr. Wells. The eloquent young minister had now grown aged in the service, and it was proposed to lighten his labors by employing a young man to assist him. A town-meeting was called to "make choyce of men to procure an orthodox scholar to assist our reverent Mr. Wells, Minister, in ye work of y<sup>e</sup> Ministry." The record simply gives the choice of moderator, leaving us in the dark as to what other matters were acted upon, if any.

1723. The town having laid out a landing near Nichols' Creek (now Pressey's) found that the land taken of Thomas Nichols was in the "bank of credit" for security, and could not be held without authority from court. Accordingly, Captain Foot was chosen to petition the "enferour Court" to establish the landing.

1724. The new church at Jamaco was so far completed as to be ready for those having permission to build pews, and they proceeded with their work. For the privilege of pew-room each proprietor was to pay ten shillings, and if not built before the last of May the right was lost. Jamaco was now well prepared for religious worship, with the exception of a minister. And here the question arose,—how shall he be



hired and paid? To settle this question a town-meeting was called, April 24th, when it was decided that each end of the town pay their minister.

This was virtually a division of the town into parishes, which soon followed. The dividing line was Nichols' Creek and up the brook to the country road, thence north to the pond, and across to Back River, thence up the river to Bartlett's Brook to his saw-mill, and thence, as the brook goes, to the country pond.

Rice Edwards was now building vessels on the town landing, and asked leave to set a house thereon so long as he continued building, and was allowed the privilege. Ship-building was a permanent branch of business in those days, and did much towards building up the village.

1725. Captain Currier, Jacob Rowell and Samuel Lowell had leave to build a wharf on Powow River, to the northward of Gideon Lowell's wharf. This was, no doubt, needed for the accommodation of unloading their vessels which returned from the West Indies and other ports with cargoes of merchandise. Mr. Currier's "ware house" stood near by, according to the record.

Last year the town was divided into parishes, but not presented to the General Court for confirmation on account of some opposition on several points. The West Parish, however, went forward and hired a minister, but there was some disagreement about Mr. Wells' support in his old age and other matters. To settle all difficulties by the adoption of some just measures, John Challis was directed to warn a meeting on the 7th of April, at the East Meeting-house, "to consider of some means whereby to settle ourselves with respect to y<sup>e</sup> payment of our ministers; and to endeavor a loving agreement for y<sup>e</sup> future settling ourselves for y<sup>e</sup> future respecting y<sup>e</sup> same, either in our being together or asunder." Under this kind invitation the people assembled and confirmed the line to be perpetual and "mutually agreed upon and consented to and with by us y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> inhabitants, that y<sup>e</sup> lower precinct shall pay to y<sup>e</sup> upper precinct so much as y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> upper precinct are assessed to pay to y<sup>e</sup> maintenance of Mr. Wells for his work in y<sup>e</sup> Ministry in ye yeare 1724; within three months after y<sup>e</sup> date hereof, and it is further mutually agreed upon by y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> inhabitants that y<sup>e</sup> upper precinct shall have and enjoy y<sup>e</sup> one half of y<sup>e</sup> pasnage land and meadows conditionally that they shall and do pay to and for y<sup>e</sup> use of Mr. Wells' maintenance after he is disabled for carrying on y<sup>e</sup> work of y<sup>e</sup> Ministry y<sup>e</sup> one half of what is to be paid to him and also pay to Mistress Wells y<sup>e</sup> one half of what she must be paid by y<sup>e</sup> town's agreement with Mr. Wells." Thus a satisfactory settlement was reached, and the division was submitted to the General Court and confirmed.

1726. Having accomplished a separation from the First Church and Society, the new parish proceeded on the 19th of May to organize a Second Church and

make preparations for the ordination of the Rev. Pain Wingate, who had been called to the work of the ministry. Letters were sent to neighboring churches, and the ordination services were held in the new house on the 3d of June. Rev. Mr. Gookin preached the sermon from John 20: 15; Rev. Mr. Tufts offered prayer; Rev. Mr. Cushing gave the charge, and Rev. Mr. Parsons gave the right hand of fellowship. On the 13th of July the organization of the church was completed by the choice of Abraham Merrill and Joseph Colby as deacons.

1727. Old dairies and account-books mention an earthquake which occurred October 29th at ten o'clock P.M. David Bladell's account-book calls it the first earthquake. Richard Kelley wrote as follows in his diary: "In y<sup>e</sup> yeare 1727, October 29, about ten of ye clock, it being Sabbath day night, was the Grate earthquake which was extrodinary loud and hard as awaked many out of sleep, the housen did shake & windows ratel and puter and dishes clater on ye shelves & y<sup>e</sup> tops of many chimneys fell of & many ware so shatered as that people were fain to take them down and new build them again."

On the 26th of January Mary, wife of Thomas Wells, died.

1728. The province treasurer was directed to issue £60,000 in bills of credit, to be loaned to the towns on the same principle as those of 1721. In the first issue of £50,000 the town received £373, and had the same proportionate share been received now, it would have been £447 instead of £473 which was received. This shows that the town had been prosperous for the last seven years beyond the average of the province. This was called the Second Bank.

The ordination of the Rev. Edmund March, who was chosen to assist the aged pastor in the East Parish, took place July 3d. He was a graduate of Harvard College, in the class of 1722, being then twenty-five years old. There is but little doubt that Mr. March had assisted Mr. Wells for several years previous to his ordination.

1729. A lawsuit with Captain Humphrey Hook about the ferry was giving the town a good deal of trouble. He had at some time obtained possession of the privilege and refused to give it up. Public opinion was divided in regard to the merits of the case, and the town-meetings which were held sometimes showed his friends in the ascendancy and sometimes his opponents. It was a vexatious suit and not soon ended.

On the 21st of November, Josiah, son of Stephen and Hannah Bartlett, was born at the Ferry. His parents lived on the lot designed for an Old Ladies' Home. He studied medicine, and removed to Kingston, N. H., where he became prominent in political affairs from his intense love of freedom, and was elected to Congress early in the Revolutionary struggle, and is said to have been the first signer of the





Declaration of Independence. He was very popular in the State of his adoption, and was chosen its first Governor. Just previous to the Revolution his house was burnt by the Tories, who hated him very cordially for his patriotism.

1730. The punishment of certain offenses in the early history of the colony was singular, but far more effectual than that of modern times. Sitting in the "stocks or bilbowes, or putting their tongues in split sticks" were common punishments for small offenses, and, no doubt, were effectual in shaming culprits. The stocks were set up in some public place where friends, as well as foes, would be likely to notice them. At this time the town had on hand a lot of small rogues who deserved punishment, but no stocks suitable for the occasion, and so the annual meeting "voted to have one paire of stocks immediately built and set where y<sup>e</sup> Selectmen shall think most convenient."

1731. Jonathan Barnard obtained leave to build a bridge "across y<sup>e</sup> falls on Powow river, about four rods below y<sup>e</sup> bridge now across s<sup>d</sup> river, provided y<sup>e</sup> town of Salisbury may consent thereto, he y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> Barnard to make and keep y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> bridge forever at all times in good and sufficient repair, in consideration whereof he y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> Barnard to have our part of y<sup>e</sup> old bridge and also y<sup>e</sup> liberty of making a dam across s<sup>d</sup> river for his own use for y<sup>e</sup> flooding and stopping of water for y<sup>e</sup> use of a mill or mills not damifying y<sup>e</sup> highway nor y<sup>e</sup> town of Salisbury nor any other dam or dams, mill or mills." The water-power here was gradually being turned to account by the many mills on the stream.

The West Parish bought land of Captain Foot or John Foot, Jr., for a burying-place, and also two hundred and ten rods of land for a training-field. This last lot now lays common near the cemetery on Church Street.

1732. The Rev. Mr. Wingate received a supply of thirty cords of wood for his year's use, it being the usual quantity furnished.

1734. An effort was made by the town to establish a free school; and John Blasdell, Representative to the General Court, was instructed to petition that body for a grant of land for that purpose; but as no school was set up, it is safe to infer that the effort met with poor success.

At the May session of the General Court a very stringent law was passed in regard to fishing in the Merrimac River. People had, hitherto, been allowed to set up "wears, hedges, fish-garths, stakes, kiddles or other incumbrances," but these were all forbidden under a penalty of £59 for the first offense, and £100 for all subsequent offenses. This was, probably, the first attempt to regulate the river fishing. Salisbury early exercised authority over the Powow, but the Merrimac was free.

Rev. Thomas Wells died July 10th, in his eighty-eighth year. He was born at Ipswich, January 11,

1647, and was a son of Dr. Thomas Wells, who died in 1655, while Thomas was a mere boy. Some provision was made for his education, so that he studied for the ministry and was called to settle in Amesbury, next after Mr. Hubbard. His life-work was here, and during his long pastorate of sixty-two years he labored faithfully for the good of his people. He married Miss Mary Parker, of Newbury, by whom he had seven sons and three daughters. His residence was close by the High School building, where his well may yet be seen and his favorite flowers—the lilacs—still bloom. He was buried very nearly where the little church stood in which he preached for more than forty years.

1735. The town voted to join with Newbury in petitioning the Court of Sessions to establish a ferry at Savage's Rock, but the petition was not granted. Application was then made to the Quarter Court in September, and the request was granted.

On the 13th of October a town-meeting was held, when it was "voted to have our county of Essex divided into two counties," and Representative Blasdell was instructed to present the matter to the General Court. No reasons are given for this sudden movement.

1736. A new road was opened this year, along the river bank from Clapboard Landing to Cottle's Landing, "to encourage trade and for the conveyance for traveling." The owners gave the land for this much-needed way.

1737. A new move was made this year, looking to the erection of a house for idle persons, by the towns in this vicinity; but not receiving support from other towns, nothing was accomplished.

Wolves were even at this late day becoming troublesome, and a bounty of forty shillings was offered for each one killed.

A road was laid out through land of Thomas Hoyt to the "ould forte," for which the land damage was £100.

1739. At the annual meeting it was "voted to give unto David Blasdell ours y<sup>e</sup> towns Meeting-house Bell." Mr. Blasdell was a clock-maker, and may have used this ancient bell for casting clock bells.

Dr. Nathan Huse is first taxed in the West Parish this year.

1740. The prominent event of this year was tunneling the pond ridge. This singular geological formation of sharp ridges, extending in one continuous and nearly unbroken line from the Ferry Hill, far into Newton, N. H., has ever been to the student of nature a great curiosity. Its general course is north-west, and stretching along through the Great Swamp, passing the pond, it still continues its well-defined course, slightly broken by some pre-historic cause near the late Thomas Colby's, sufficiently to afford the only outlet which Kimball's Pond originally had. It then passes into Newton, and is there known as Pine Hill. On the early record this break is termed





the "terrormost end of y<sup>e</sup> pond ridge." A large tract of meadow land lay near the pond's mouth, almost worthless from stagnant water.

To improve and render valuable this waste tract, the project of tunneling was undertaken by Orlando Bagley, Esq., and Capt. Caleb Pilsbury. Having obtained leave of the town, a favorable locality was selected where the base of the ridge contracts somewhat, and the work of excavating a tunnel or drain was commenced and carried through to completion. This opened a short, direct route through to Powow River, which in its winding course comes near the ridge.

The road and landing at the river (now Merrimac Port), were bounded out and described as being given by Capt. John Sargent and Deacon Thomas Stevens, whose houses the road passed.

1741. The subject of an almshouse, in common with Salisbury and Newbury, was again brought up and approved by the town; but as before, it failed of accomplishment. The town was heartily tired of the old system of putting out the poor, and would gladly have established a more humane practice.

Orlando Bagley and his son, Jonathan, petitioned for leave to build a wharf fifty feet wide, on the flats between Gideon Lowell's wharf and Timothy Currier's, from the bank to the channel of Powow River, and was granted the privilege.

1742. The plan of building a common almshouse having failed, it was determined to establish one at home. For this purpose a meeting was held in February, and the plan adopted. The house of John Bartlett was secured, and he was chosen master, to take care of those entrusted to him and keep them to work. This was the first almshouse or workhouse in town.

1743. Rev. Edmund March, of the First Church, was dismissed this year by a council held at his house, and the Rev. Elisha Odlin was settled in his stead. The parish was badly in debt, owing Mr. Marsh nearly £400. In a financial point of view, Mr. Marsh's ministry was not a success.

1744. Deacon Abraham Merrill, of the West Parish, died September 26th. He was born in Newbury, and lived opposite Pleasant Valley until nearly sixty years of age. About 1722 he removed to the West Parish with his three sons—Abraham, Isaac and Jacob—and two daughters. When the church was organized in 1726 he was chosen deacon.

1745. The East Parish built a house for the use of the minister this year, costing £65 17s. 6d.

For many years there has been a few church people in town, and not far from this date a meeting-house was built at the Pond Hills, on the lot known as the "old church-yard."

The Rev. Matthias Plant, of Newbury, was their first minister, and in a letter written this year says,— "You will not think it amiss if I inform you that I have a pretty church at Amesbury, on the other side

of the Merrimac River. I gave a calf towards a dinner for the men who raised it, and £5 this currency for nails towards shingling it. I was going to send for glass to England for it, but, this unhappy quarrel arising, I forebore, but it is worthy of the notice of that venerable body. I have preached there for many years in a house before the church was built, and since in the church, where I had a numerous congregation." Samuel Weed and William Pressey are mentioned as churchmen as early as 1716, and George Worthen in 1722.

1746. The first by-laws of which any record is found were passed this year, and approved by the Court of Sessions. The penalty for violating them was twenty-five shillings, which was given to the poor.

1747. King George's War involved the colonies in a very expensive conflict with the French and Indians in Canada, which resulted after a protracted siege in the capture of Louisbourg. This year the order-book has the following:

"March 24, 1747. Ordered to Stephen Barnard, being  
in y<sup>e</sup> service at cape Britain..... £1 4s. 6d.  
To Jacob Bagley, Jr., being in captivity..... 2 6 0  
To Jacob Bagley being rated for a vessel that was taken 1 13 9"

Amesbury men served in all the old French wars each town being required to furnish their quota.

William Whicher was given leave to set up a brick-yard "near the Button tree," at the town-landing at the Buttonwood. How long Mr. Whicher continued in the business is not known, but, judging by the extensive excavation, there must have been a great many bricks made. It was favorably situated for boating to a market, which was the easiest conveyance at this date. Two other yards on the Buttonwood Road were formerly worked, indicating an extensive business in this vicinity.

The "Button tree" was a bound next the Bradstreet farm, and was mentioned in 1703, which shows it to be a very ancient tree.

Rev. Matthias Plant received £15 11s. 2d. from the parish rate on account of the church men, of whom the following is a list: John Bartlett, Enoch Bartlett, Frank Bartlett, William Currier, John Huntington, Samuel Huntington, Jonathan Huntington, Gideon Lowell, Samuel Lowell, John Hook and Batt Moulton. Their full tax was £20 3s. 6d. out of £879.

1748. The old road over the Ferry Hill was this year exchanged with Gideon Lowell (so far as went through his land) for two pieces of landing at Powow River.

1749. For many years the paper money has been growing of less value each succeeding year, till it now becomes necessary to designate in all deeds and contracts what money is meant. "Old tenor" was the depreciated paper in general use.

1750. The want of a bridge over the Powow at the Ferry had long been felt, and now some of the prominent men there and at the Point came forward



and offered to build one without expense to the town, provided leave is given. There is some evidence which goes to show that a bridge was built within a few years of this date. If built, it was not an expensive structure, like bridges of the present day, but of wood, with a draw, no doubt, as vessels were then freely passing up and down the Powow River.

Joseph Bartlett was granted land for a lime-kiln under the bank at Powow River. Lime was then made from clam-shells, which were found in large mounds on the shore below Ring's Island.

1751. Theodore Hoyt and Thomas Colby petitioned for a piece of land near Gideon Lowell's wharf for a ship-yard, and to set a work-house on. Ship-building was good, and other yards were occupied. The petition was granted.

1752. Rev. Elisha Odlin died in the early part of the year, and his widow Judith was appointed administratrix of his estate. The town voted Mrs. Odlin a present of twenty pounds. Rev. Mr. Wiburd supplied the pulpit the remainder of the year.

1753. Dr. Robert Rogers died April 28th, and was buried at the Plain Cemetery. He lived at the river, and probably in the house owned and occupied by the late David Sargent.

1754. Thomas Bagley was chosen town clerk in place of Orlando Bagley, Esq., who had grown old in the service. For nearly forty-two years he had faithfully performed the duties of the office. He was a very prominent business man, holding courts and officiating at a great many marriages.

This year closes the ministry of the Rev. Mr. Wiburd, and begins the labors of Rev. Thomas Hibbert. He was from Kittery, Maine, and during the early part of his ministry was quite popular.

1755. On the 18th of November there was a shock of an earthquake, which Richard Kelley, in his diary, describes as follows:

"1755, November y<sup>e</sup> 18, it being Tuesday about 4 o'clock in the morning, was an exceeding shock of y<sup>e</sup> earthquake, which shook me here as much as that in y<sup>e</sup> yere 1727, October 23, but y<sup>e</sup> noise was not so loud; it continued a great while, I think the longest that ever I herd in all my life and just as y<sup>e</sup> day broke there was another but nothing so hard as y<sup>e</sup> former and I have herd it every day since to y<sup>e</sup> 22<sup>d</sup> day of 3<sup>d</sup> month."

The French and Indians were very troublesome, and the colonies were obliged to keep an army in the field for many years. This town furnished about forty soldiers for Kennebec, Minis and Crown Point.

1756. The colonial forces were operating at several points along the Canadian frontier, hoping to reduce some strongholds and finally secure a lasting peace. Capt. Worthen and his company were at Lake George, and several of his men died there. A strong force was sent to the Bay of Fundy, under Col. Monson, which soon reduced the two principal forts there, and Arcadia fell into the hands of the English. The result of this victory was such as the world seldom witnessed. The peaceable inhabitants were assembled in various places, under false pretences, to the

number of twelve thousand, and some seven thousand of them were hurried on board of the ships and brought to the colonies, where, by order of the authorities they were scattered among the towns for support. Several of them were quartered on Amesbury, where for years they were cared for by the town, under the name of "French neutrals." Very few of them ever reached home—Joseph Busway and his daughter dying here in 1764.

Orlando Bagley, Esq., died May 3d. He was grandson to Orlando (1st), who married Sarah, daughter of Anthony Colby. He owned the farm at the Pond Hills, where Albert C. Hill lives. He was nearly ten years old when his father arrested and carried to Salem Susanna Martin, to be tried for her life on the charge of witchcraft. He was a very able and active man, holding many offices in town for a period of more than forty years. He succeeded Thomas Currier in the clerk's office, which he held for about forty-two years.

1757. The East Parish bought one acre and a half of the "Vane lot" at Sandy Hill, of Col. Jonathan Bagley, for a meeting-house lot. The house was built at the parsonage before the division into parishes; but the population having largely increased at the Ferry and Mills, it was proposed to remove and enlarge it for the convenience of the majority. But it was not till 1761 that this plan was carried into effect.

David Blasdell, the clockmaker, gunsmith, blacksmith, trader, etc., died at Lake George, whither he had gone as armorer with the forces stationed there. He was very much of a genius, readily turning his hand to almost any branch of business.

Early in the season a call was made for soldiers, and Capt. George Worthen being in high favor with the royal Governor, impressed twelve men, most of whom procured substitutes. Later in the season (August 15th) a draft was made from the second company (Janaco) of twenty-four men. The first company fared no better, having a very large number impressed and drafted. These recruits marched away August 16th, to join the main army under Lord Loudon, destined to fight the French and Indians at the Lakes. But when near Worcester, news of the fall of Fort William Henry reached them, and owing to the lateness of the season, they were allowed to return home.

1758. William Bayley, having contracted to build a large ship, asked the town for some land "near the stern of his ship one rod," his reason for the request being that "from his yard is sumthing difficult to launch." His request was granted.

Lord Loudon again collected an army to subdue the French, and Amesbury was called upon to supply men for the campaign. Captain Kelley's company, by enlistment, furnished twenty men, and no doubt the East Parish company enlisted as many more.

1759. The French and Indian War still continues,





and preparations are making at Lake George to prosecute it with vigor this season. Batteaux were being built at the Lakes, and some sixteen men went there to work. Several men were in Captain Sikes' and Bayley's companies from Amesbury.

The roads were this year repaired by a rate of £40, and the wages were, for each man, 2s. per day; for each man and yoke of oxen, 3s. 6d.; for each man, yoke of oxen and cart or plow, 4s.

**1760.** Small-pox, the scourge of early times, made its appearance in town, causing very general alarm. Two pest-houses were provided—one in the East Parish and one in the West. It seems to have been prevalent in all sections of the town.

Captain Robert Sargent was now running a fulling-mill at South Amesbury, the town abating the taxes on it. Very likely it stood on the stream where, at a much later date, the tannery was built.

William Whicher, who was granted the privilege of making bricks at the Buttonwood in 1747, now asks the privilege of a small piece of land, there to set a house, stating that not much lumber was brought there. The result does not appear on the record.

**1761.** The meeting-house at the parsonage was taken down and removed to Sandy Hill, where a lot was bought in 1757. Having stood at the parsonage forty-six years, it was now destined to be rebuilt nearer the centre of the population. It was enlarged and greatly improved in style of architecture. The internal finish was highly ornamental. It stood at Sandy Hill eighty-seven years, when it was sold and entirely demolished.

**1762.** At this period vessels could hardly be built as fast as wanted, although the shore was dotted with ship-yards for miles. Theodore Hoyt proposed setting up a new yard, and the town readily granted him liberty to do so, he keeping the bank-wall in repair. This yard was on the Powow River, and not far from the store of Daniel Worthen & Son.

At a very early period a log house stood near where "Swett's shop" now stands, and was mentioned when the Ferry road was laid out, in 1719. This may have been the William Huntington place, given him by his father (Bailey) in 1650.

**1767.** The French prisoners were this year allowed to return to their homes in Arcadia, the town giving them fifteen dollars to help them on their way. They were prisoners here for eleven years, receiving help, to some extent, annually, during that time, and when setting out on their long journey home, the town paid Stephen Bartlett, Jr., £3 to "transport them" to some point not stated on the record.

The Ferry now appears to be the busiest section of the town, and the town land was in good demand. Moses Chase was granted a small lot near Theodore Hoyt's ship-yard to build a hat-shop on. Marchant Cleaves also obtained a lot next to Chase's for a tailor-shop, and Eli Gale was granted a lot for "a

large blacksmith-shop," thus occupying this seemingly worthless steep bank on the Powow.

**1768.** Ichabod March received liberty to build a house on the spot where the meeting-house stood, on the corner of the Martin road, and there are yet some living who remember this gambrel-roof cottage, which went to decay about 1815.

**1769.** A sad event happened, on the 16th of April, by the upsetting of two boats on the bar. Fishing out over the bar in open boats had from the first been common, supplying an important article of food to the surrounding country. At this time Philip Gould, John Gould, Samuel Blasdel and Moses Currier went out in the evening, as was customary in those times, in company with another boat, but in returning, both boats were swamped on the bar.

**1771.** The unpopularity of the royal government was growing more apparent every year, as taxes were constantly increasing, the province rates amounting to as much as the town rate, frequently; and, taken together, imposed a heavy burden on the people. An address to the Governor was ordered at the May meeting, and Isaac Merrill, Jonathan Bagley and Thomas Rowell, Esq., were chosen to prepare the document. No doubt this address was designed to set forth some wrongs and ask redress. Every infringement of the people's rights now meets with determined remonstrance. The beginning of stirring times is at hand.

Timothy Barnard was given leave to build a wharf on the Mills flats at the foot of the falls to lay lumber on.

**1773.** On the 14th of August occurred the most violent tornado ever known in this vicinity. Although not lasting more than three minutes, it damaged or destroyed about two hundred buildings, which came within its course. Two vessels were removed twenty feet from the stocks, one of which was about ninety tons, and Captain Smith was killed. Its extent was about one-quarter of a mile in width and a mile and a half in length, near the river, in this vicinity. The damage at the Ferry was very great.<sup>1</sup>

**1774.** The people were now organizing throughout the colony, and making all necessary preparations for open resistance in case of any emergency. A town-meeting was held and £2 8s. 7d. appropriated for the Committee of Correspondence, which will soon be found the chief managers of political affairs. Governor Gage dissolved the refractory General Court and commenced fortifying Boston.

The people issued a call for representatives to assemble under the name of "Provincial Congress," a body to whom the patriots gave the supreme control of state affairs. This Congress immediately voted £20,000 to arm and train minute-men through the colony.

All hopes of reconciliation were gone, and the

<sup>1</sup> Rev. Samuel Webster.



province rates were refused the royal treasurer, the town voting to indemnify the selectmen for not returning the money to Harrison Gray, Esq., as had been previously done. Evidently there was no thought of returning to the government which had thus suddenly been overthrown.

**1775.** At a town-meeting held Jan. 24th, Isaac Merrill, Esq., was a second time elected to the Provincial Congress. At this meeting it was formally decided to acknowledge the acts of the Continental Congress, which, with the acts of last year, amount to an entire repudiation of all royal authority. The matter of raising minute-men was discussed, but referred to the annual meeting.

A colonial government was already organized and assuming control of public affairs, and to this the town pledged itself, and, in fact, no further support was accorded to British rule from this 13th day of March, 1775. At an adjournment on the 20th, it was decided to raise fifty able-bodied men as minute-men, to serve one year. April 17th, provision was made by the town for the payment of the minute men, and the selectmen were instructed to pay the province rates of 1773 and 1774 to the provincial treasurer, Henry Gardner, Esq. A bounty of two dollars was voted to each minute-man, and all needed preparations were made for determined work.

This meeting was held just two days before the fight at Lexington. The selectmen were authorized to hire one hundred pounds to carry out the measures thus early begun. June 6th, the town decided to join with Newburyport in sinking a pier at the mouth of the river.

Immediately after the fight at Lexington, active measures were taken to defend the rights of the people, by arming and drilling the minute-men. The town ordered a company to be raised, and in a few days the ranks were full, and Captain Currier marched away to the scene of conflict. But a more permanent organization was soon effected, and two companies marched to headquarters in season to take part in the battle of Bunker Hill.

Captain Currier's company was in that battle, and it is very probable that Captain Wm. H. Ballard and company was also present, as it is certain that he was at headquarters the 25th of June.

Of those engaged in the battle of Bunker Hill it is believed that but few were killed; at least no record is found giving but a single soldier in Captain Currier's company.

**1776.** On the 1st of July a town-meeting was held to consider the propriety of instructing the representatives to press forward the Declaration of Independence. The meeting declared "that they will abide by and Defend the Members of the Continental Congress with their Lives and fortunes, if they think expedient to declare the Colonies Independent of Great Briton." Most faithfully did they keep this solemn pledge during the long struggle which followed.

When this important measure was brought forward in Congress, Dr. Josiah Bartlett (the ferry-boy of 1729) was a member from New Hampshire, and his name stands next that of John Hancock on the document.

He was a fearless advocate of the measure, having previously been a known enemy to the tyranny of the mother country. So cordially was he hated by the Tories that they burnt his house at Kingston before the Revolution had fairly commenced.

From this time forth the town was obliged to take the most active measures to meet the calls for soldiers which were constantly made. The minute-men were discontinued, and the permanent organization of the militia effected, preparatory to enlistments for longer periods. The first call (in addition to the companies already in the service) was for thirty-seven men. To meet this call a bounty of twenty dollars was offered, which proving insufficient, it was raised to forty, requiring the sum of \$1480.

Scarcely had this excitement died away, when there came another call for every twenty-fifth man on the roll, being nine men. To obtain the men a bounty of twelve pounds was paid. On the 1st of August another call for six men was received and the town agreed to give those who should enlist ten dollars per month. Again, in September a call came for twelve men, and a bounty of six pounds was offered. Soon after this another call was made for one-fourth of the able-bodied men, and a bounty of twenty dollars was offered; but proving insufficient, was raised to thirty dollars. The repeated calls had so reduced the roll that but twelve were obtained at this time. Thus sixty-four men had been called during the year, in addition to those who held over from 1775, which may have been as many more. At the close of the year the prospect was not very brilliant, although the patriots had by no means lost courage.

**1777.** The frequent calls for men last year severely tried the resources of the town, but this year opens with new difficulties which must be met. The war had called to the army so many of the able-bodied men that the cultivation of the farms was but to a limited extent, and provisions were growing scarce and high. Many of the soldiers' families were supplied in part by the town, although the women freely went into the fields to work. In addition to this orders were frequently received for guns, gun-locks, shovels and many other articles, the cost of which must be assumed by the town for the present.

In April a call for fourteen men was made and a bounty of three pounds was offered, which secured the required number. This order was filled the last of April, and in seven days another call was received for "one-seventh part of all the male inhabitants from sixteen years old and upwards," to serve as soldiers.

Unless this demand was complied with, a draft would follow. The citizens assembled May 12th and under the excitement voted a bounty of one hundred





dollars, but upon adjournment this was changed to fifty dollars. This was subsequently changed to thirty pounds for serving seven months, which secured the twenty-two men.

On the 16th of August a call came for one-sixth of the able-bodied men (thirty), and a bounty of four pounds and ten shillings per month enabled the town to procure the required number.

On the 26th of August a meeting was held to take measures to raise seven men. A bounty of forty-three pounds proved effectual in securing the number called for. The calls this year amounted to nearly one hundred men. It was a gloomy period, perhaps more so than at any other time during the war.

**1778.** This year lengthy instructions were given to Capt. Caleb Pillsbury, representative to the General Court, in regard to the "Articles of Confederation and perpetual union betwixt the United States of America." The presentation of these instructions was the last important act of his life, as he died before the close of the year. From this time and up to the close of the war no complete list of soldiers is found, a change which is hard to account for.

March 30th it was "voted to make up their wages to seven pounds per month with what they have from the Continent and State."

April 9th, the town "voted to make up the wages of the soldiers that went to guard the prisoners taken by General Gates, to six pounds per month besides the twenty shillings the Court gave for sauce money or wages."

May 4th, a meeting was held to raise recruits for the army, when it was "voted that each man that shall enlist into the Continental army for nine months shall be entitled to the thirty pounds which the Court allows the town, and also thirty pounds more to each man as an additional bounty from the town." A bounty of thirty pounds was also offered to the eight months' men which were to serve on the Hudson River.

June 25th, measures were taken to raise ten men "at the town's cost, and also some soldiers to replace the guards under General Heath."

July 30th. A committee was chosen to procure the men just called for. This was probably a new requisition for men.

September 14th. A town-meeting was held to take measures to procure the men called, but the measures then adopted failed of success and a second meeting was held on the 23d, in regard "to the men that should enlist or be drafted equal to one-third part of the training list." The meeting ordered the selectmen and Committee of Safety to draft if the men could not be enlisted. It had now become very difficult to raise men on any terms.

**1779.** Continental money having greatly depreciated in value, it became necessary to offer large bounties, one hundred dollars extra being given to three years' men.

June 17th. The town met to devise some means to procure the men called for, to be paid "in money or produce as they can agree."

October 13th. More men having been called for, measures were taken by the meeting to fill the call. The soldiers' record is very deficient this year, but there is little doubt that frequent calls were made by government, and large bounties paid.

**1780.** The new form of government was submitted to the people May 29th, when the third article in regard to religious freedom was rejected by a vote of thirteen yeas to fourteen nays; the remaining articles were adopted by twenty one yeas to nineteen nays.

June 12th. The town held a meeting to devise some means of raising the men called for. The committee and selectmen were authorized to hire the required number.

July 24th. A meeting was called to raise money for current expenses and the sum of £48,400 was voted. Owing to the depreciation of the currency this large sum amounted to but little.

December 28th. A meeting was held to provide for raising twenty-one men to serve three years. This was a year of discouragement to the colonies. Provisions were scarce and paper money nearly worthless, and to crown the misfortunes which seemed to overshadow all, the colonial forces had suffered very general defeat. The South was almost overrun by the British forces, and Arnold came near delivering West Point to the enemy. Government was powerless to feed the army and their rations were drawn from the towns. Amesbury this year furnished 30,282 lbs. of beef, equal to thirty-three oxen of 917 lbs. each. But all did their best to sustain the cause. The wives and mothers contributed of their means to make the soldiers comfortable by sending clothes and stockings to the suffering army. They loaned the town money for war purposes, viz.—Rebecca Kelly, £75; Widow Hannah Kelly, £128; Tabitha Barnard, £280; and others smaller sums. The winter of this year is said to have been unusually severe, no perceptible thaw being seen for forty days. The dark day also, which occurred May 19th, was to many an omen of evil. These, in connection with the earthquake November 18th, were casting a gloom over the land.

**1781.** Repeated calls were made for soldiers which the town was but poorly able to supply. Nearly every able-bodied male from sixteen up was or had been in the service, and it became necessary to go "eastward" to obtain men to answer the calls. Hard money was very scarce and soldiers would no longer take worthless paper.

Under these difficulties there was but one thing to do, and that was to order one-half of the taxes to be paid in hard money. For the encouragement of those having money to loan, it was agreed to pay all notes in hard currency.

A meeting was held January 11th, when the select-





men were instructed "to hire the twenty-one men called for on the best terms they can."

Two thousand dollars in hard money was voted, but it is doubtful if so much could be collected. June 28th, a meeting was called to take measures to procure three men for five months, and the selectmen were instructed to hire the men at the town's cost.

The town also voted a rate of £924 in hard money for town expenses. This latter sum was assessed July 18th, and on the 2d of August the town instructed the constables to collect one-half of it in hard money. A large amount of beef had been called for and farmers would not part with their cattle for paper that was nearly worthless and extensively counterfeited.

On the 21st of August measures were taken to procure three men. It was agreed to continue the bounty already paid, viz.—ten hard dollars bounty and twenty bushels of corn per month for each man. No laborer at home could earn so much; but the cause was in a critical condition and must be sustained. Two months later, on the surrender of Cornwallis there was very general rejoicing among the patriots.

1782. The war record of this year is very scant, but several calls were received for men, which were no doubt procured according to order. The State was now pressing the payment of the State tax, and the selectmen were instructed to collect "as much money as they can," and pay the same into the treasury.

The people were now anticipating the close of the war, and considering what kind of a treaty should be made. Early in the year Amesbury instructed her representative to use his influence in the General Court for an application to Congress that in any negotiations with Great Britain for peace, the right to fish be an indispensable article in the treaty. This was an important branch of business to the eastern part of Massachusetts.

1784. No road had yet been opened on the river banks through Pleasant Valley, but this year a petition was laid before the town by several prominent citizens asking leave to locate a highway from the Ferry to the landing near Stephen Patten's. The town consented, provided it could be done at private cost. But people were not willing to give the land, and the measure failed for the present. Although much needed, it was too expensive for private enterprise.

The Rev. Thomas Hibbert, of the East Parish, was dismissed in consequence of his intemperate habits; but a portion of the church still adhered to him, finally organizing a new society, which they denominated a "Presbyterian Society." Mr. Hibbert now professed to be a Presbyterian minister and not liable to be taxed for the support of other preaching. He had been compelled to pay his rates, however, and last year commenced a suit to recover back the amount paid. There ensued a bitter controversy for several years.

Oct. 13th. The Rev. Benjamin Bell was ordained pastor of the First Church by an ecclesiastical council.

1785. At this time young minister Bell was very popular, and the parish decided to build a parsonage for his better accommodation. A lot was bought at Bartlett's Corner, where the parish house was built, which became the home of all succeeding ministers.

1786. The trouble with Mr. Hibbert, mentioned in 1784, was continued to this year. He and his friends petitioned the General Court for an act of incorporation as a Presbyterian Society, which met with determined opposition from the town. Some of the principal men in the parish, and several Salisbury men, adhered to him and built him a large house, where he preached for some time. Among his special friends was Deacon David Tuxbury, of "Little Salisbury," at Tuxbury's Mills. He was very persistent in establishing a Presbyterian Society, and though failing in his pet scheme every time, he finally made another and last effort in 1797. As on previous occasions, he was then unsuccessful.

In 1784 an effort was made to open a river road from the Ferry, along the bank of the river through Pleasant Valley, but without success. This year application was made to the Court of Sessions, which, after a protracted struggle, ordered the road to be opened. The town opposed this road for various reasons. It was a bad route to build, requiring several expensive bridges not needed, as the river lots had a road on the north end and the river on the south, and the town was badly in debt. A committee of the most influential men was chosen to oppose it, but without avail. At present this affords one of the finest drives in the valley of the Merrimac.

The West Parish refused to pay Rev. Paine Wingate his salary in 1784 and he commenced a suit, which was in court till this year, when he recovered judgment and an execution. He was now aged, having preached in the parish forty-eight years.

To aid in quelling the famous "Shay's Rebellion," the town was called upon to furnish sixteen men.

1787. It was the opinion of Amesbury that Boston was not a proper place for the great General Court, and in accordance with this opinion Peleg Challis, then representative, was instructed to use his influence to have it removed "from the town of Boston." The reasons for this change of the seat of government is not stated. We may surmise, however, that Shay's Rebellion had something to do with this new move.

The new meeting-house just completed in the Second Parish was dedicated in course of the year. It was a plain building, after the style of those times, with box pews, similar to those in the Rocky Hill Church, built some two years earlier.

1788. December 18th. The election of the first President of the United States was held to-day. There was apparently but very little enthusiasm, as only twenty-two votes were cast. There was no opposition



to the illustrious candidate, which may account for the small vote.

**1789.** This year is especially noted for the visit of President Washington. He arrived at Newburyport on Friday, October 30th, where he received a most hearty welcome, all professions, trades and occupation uniting to do him honor. Saturday morning he was escorted on his way to Portsmouth, passing up High Street to the ancient ferry, opposite Amesbury, where a barge appropriately decorated and oarsmen dressed in white awaited to convey him across the river. He landed at the foot of the Court, between the late Jonathan Morrill's and Nathan Nutter's, passing to the north side of Merrimac Street, where ample preparations had been made to receive the illustrious guest. The militia, school children dressed in white, and citizens were here to pay their respects to the great leader, who, by his wisdom and prudence, had elevated the colonies to an exalted position among the nations. And many a war-worn veteran was here to greet for the last time their much beloved general. From Amesbury he passed through the Point and over to Rocky Hill, where the militia were drawn up in line to receive him. He passed through their open ranks with his hat in his hand, bowing to the people. This was truly an exciting and joyful day.

June 3d. The Rev. Francis Welch was ordained pastor of the Second Church.

**1791.** A petition of Nathaniel Carter and eight others was presented to the Legislature for a charter to build a bridge across the river at Deer Island. This measure was opposed by the town and also by Newbury. The petitioners were successful in obtaining a charter, and the bridge was built and opened to the public in 1792.

A grist-mill was this year built by Ebenezer True, on a small stream where the Merrimac Hat-Factory is now located.

**1793.** Rev. Francis Welch, of the Second Church, died December 15th, aged twenty-eight years, having spent about four years in the ministry in town.

**1794.** The small pox prevailed in town this and last year, making it necessary to establish a pest-house. Accordingly, the house of Elijah Jones, situated on the Kimball road, was taken, to which patients were carried and properly cared for.

The old Artillery Company was organized this year by order of the commander-in-chief. The first officers were William Lurvey, captain; Ephraim Morrill, first lieutenant; James Lowell, second lieutenant.

Rev. Ebenezer Cleveland commenced his labors in the East Parish this year.

**1795.** The Revised Constitution of Massachusetts was submitted to the town, and resulted in four yeas and forty-seven nays.

The Rev. David Smith was ordained pastor of the Second Church this year.

**1796.** The eastern fisheries were very important to

Massachusetts people, but the treaty with Great Britain was causing some trouble at this time to our fishing vessels. May 2d, the town met to consider the matter, and a memorial to Congress was approved and signed by one hundred and thirty voters present. The demand for fishing vessels kept the carpenters, blacksmiths and caulkers busy at the many yards, and it was important that fishermen be well protected by government.

The matter of building a school-house at the Ferry occasioned some trouble there, the people not being able to agree what was most advisable to be done. The house was finally built by private subscription, and subsequently sold to the district. Mr. Burrows was the first teacher in the new house, receiving eighteen dollars per month for his services. The record says: "Mr. Burrows began his school January 16, 1797, on Monday. The First School that was Taught in this house." The house was built of brick and located on the town's land, near the late Stafford Sylvester's.

**1798.** Capt. Timothy Barnard died March 17, 1798. His homestead was the place owned and occupied for many years by the late Enoch Winkley, on Main Street. Clark's block and other buildings now occupy the spot. He was a man of business, and served in various town offices, and built vessels at the foot of Mill Street, where in 1771 he had leave to build a wharf to lay his lumber on. He also owned one-fourth of the lower grist-mill in Amesbury, which he purchased of Col. Jonathan Bagley in 1768. He was selectman in 1772 and 1780, and a good penman.

**1799.** Rev. Ebenezer Cleveland's ministry closed during the year, and the Rev. Stephen Hull was engaged to supply the pulpit of the First Church, but was not ordained till 1802.

**1800.** About this time the carriage business was started in West Amesbury by Michael Emery, William Little and Stephen Bailey. This has been the principal business of that section to the present time, and a source of much prosperity.

In the *Massachusetts Gazette* the following is found: "An extensive iron factory was established at the Mills in 1800, where one thousand tons of iron have been wrought in a year." This ancient iron-works stood on or near the spot now occupied by No. 8 Mill. A heavy trip-hammer was used in shaping the iron and forging the large anchors which were made.

Rev. David Smith was dismissed from the Second Church, May 22d.

**1801.** A school-house was built at the Mills this year, costing two hundred and fifty dollars. This was probably the brick house on Friend Street.

The East Parish held a meeting to commence some repairs on the meeting-house, and four hundred dollars was appropriated to be used in conjunction with a like sum from the pew-holders. A porch and spire were added to the east end of the house, which greatly improved it internally and externally.





**1802.** A new school-house was built at West Amesbury, at an expense of two hundred dollars.

A powder-house was built on Round Hill, near the Pond Hills School-house, similar to the one now standing on Brown's Hill.

The towns were always required to keep a stock of ammunition on hand; but until now no safe place was ever provided for that purpose.

**1803.** At this date the Ferry paid a larger tax and had more schooling than any other district in town. Ship-building, fishing and the West India trade were fast building up this section.

The Friends built a meeting-house this year, which was located on the lot where the Free Baptist Church now stands.

**1804.** The Second Church, having been without a settled pastor since the dismissal of the Rev. David Smith, now extended a call to the Rev. Samuel Meade, which was accepted.

A school-house was built at Pleasant Valley, costing three hundred and seven dollars.

**1805.** Last year an effort was made to establish an academy at Bartlett's Corner, for the benefit of Amesbury and Salisbury.

A stock company was organized, with a capital of two thousand dollars, divided into shares of ten dollars each. A lot was obtained where the High School building now stands. It was at first proposed to locate where Mr. Hibbert's meeting-house stood, near Mr. Child's residence, and that property was purchased for the purpose. Better counsels, however, prevailed and the present beautiful location was obtained. The building was completed this year and Mr. Abner Emerson was appointed the first principal.

On the 24th of December a fire destroyed the nail factory, one grist mill, two blacksmith shops and three hundred cords of wood at the mill. It was described as the greatest conflagration then known.

**1806.** The death of Capt. John Currier occurred December 22d, at the age of eighty years. His first experience as a soldier was in the old French and Indian War in 1756. He was then commissioned as lieutenant in Capt. George Worthen's company, and did service at Lake George. When companies of minute-men were organized, just previous to open hostilities, he was chosen captain of the Pond Hills company and retained command till the latter part of 1775. He was greatly interested in the struggle for independence, and as selectman and in many other ways performed valuable services throughout the war.

**1808.** The embargo was now having a very damaging effect on ship-building, and the discontent in town found expression in the following vote: "Voted to petition the President of the United States, praying him to suspend the operation of the law laying an embargo on vessels of the United States."

Col. Isaac Whittier died February 10th, at South

Amesbury, having been a prominent man in town affairs. He served as selectman eleven years, being chosen chairman of the board at his first term and at five subsequent elections.

**1809.** Dr. Nathan Huse died April 23d, aged ninety-two years. He came from West Newbury about 1739, and settled at the Highlands, in the West Parish. His practice extended over a period of about seventy years.

Capt. Isaac Randall died at the Ferry, April 27th, aged eighty-two years. He served several years on the Board of Selectmen, and was an excellent penman, and the records of his keeping are in fine shape.

**1810.** Ship-building had revived, and carpenters were busy in all of the yards. There were built on the river this year twenty-one ships, thirteen brigs, one schooner and seven other vessels of various dimensions.

On the morning of August 26th Nathan Long's bakery at the Ferry was burnt.

The Nail Factory Company bought of Deacon David Tuxbury half an acre at the pond's mouth, to obtain control of the flowage of the pond.

**1812.** Rev. Stephen Hull asked a dismission from the First Church, and his request was granted by a council early in 1813.

June 13th. War was declared against Great Britain. It was very unpopular in this town, and but few soldiers entered the army from here. The military companies were drilled, however, to be in readiness should a call be made.

The first factory was now built at the Mills, by Ezra Worthen, Paul Moody and others, and the manufacture of woolen goods begun on a small scale. It was an experiment, but very successful.

**1813.** The war created a brisk demand for home manufactures, and a second factory was built, by Jonathan Morrill, Esq., commonly known as "Ezra Morrill," and his sons Jacob and Jonathan. Both mills were located on Mill Street, where they still remain, though greatly changed from their original form.

The goods manufactured were mostly designed at first to clothe the army, but changed according to the demand.

Widow Judith Bagley died August 1st, at the Pond Hills, aged ninety-seven years, four months and four days. She was the daughter of Joseph and Judith Sargent, and great-granddaughter of William (1st). Her youngest son (Philip) was jail-keeper at Newburyport and sheriff for many years.

**1816.** This year is specially noted for the strong effort made to annex the towns north of the Merrimac River to New Hampshire. Amesbury approved the plan, and chose a committee to consult with other towns in regard to the measure. The incentive to this action was probably the moderate taxes in the adjoining State.

Rev. Benjamin Sawyer was installed pastor of the



First Church on the 19th of June. He was from Cape Elizabeth, but had been preaching here since 1814.

The manufacture of earthen-ware was commenced this year at the River Village, by James Chase, who continued the business till his death, in 1858, when his son Phineas succeeded him.

1817. President Monroe passed through the Ferry and Mills this year on his northern tour, stopping long enough to visit the factories then in operation.

No unusual display was had on this occasion, although the people were well pleased to entertain him.

1818. The Iron and Nail Company were now in full operation, doing an extensive business, and it was surmised that the personal property was not fully taxed. The town ordered an investigation, which showed all to be right.

Benjamin Lurvey, Esq., died at the Ferry January 24th, after a long and useful life. He had been honored with nearly every office within the gift of his fellow-townsmen. He was chosen representative to the General Court five times, and was elected a member of the Constitutional Convention, which shows that he was held in high esteem. He served twelve years on the Board of Selectmen and did much legal business, such as writing deeds and wills and settling estates. Being a sea captain, he was familiar with navigation, and received pupils for instruction in that branch.

1819. The Pond School District was established this year, being a portion of the Pond Highway District.

Rev. Moses Welch was ordained pastor of the Second Church in June of this year.

Marchant Cleaves died April 27th. He lived near the Catholic Church, and late in life kept a grocery-store there, but was by trade a tailor, having a shop on the town's land at the Ferry. He served as selectman several years, and was prominent in parish affairs.

1820. The mill now known as No. 3, standing hard by the Mills' Bridge, was built this year.

A post-office was first established at the Mills this year, and Jonathan Morrill appointed postmaster. It was kept near the residence of Mr. Steere.

1822. Warren Lodge of Accepted Masons was chartered this year, Benjamin Sawyer, Edward Dorr, Lowell Bagley, John Colby, Nathaniel Fifield, William O. Mills, Valentine Bagley, George W. Bagley, Daniel Long, James Horton, David Nayson, Benjamin R. Downes, William H. Bagley and Samuel Walton being charter members.

"The Amesbury Flannel Manufacturing Company" was incorporated this year with a capital of two hundred thousand dollars, and Joshua Aubin, Esq., was appointed agent and continued for many years. Mr. "Aubin's factory" was on Mill Street.

The road under the bank from South Amesbury to

Pressey's bridge was built this year, being a continuation of the Pleasant Valley Road built in 1786. This completed a direct and very pleasant way between the two villages, over which there is much travel.

October 28th Valentine Colby sold the right to flow his land around the pond to the "Amesbury Nail Company."

1823. The hotel at the Mills, now known as the American House, was built this year by John Gilman, who was landlord for some years. Since its erection it has been enlarged by a new front. The old wooden tavern-house occupied by Daniel Long was removed to make room for the new brick structure.

1824. A portion of the Mills Landing was sold to the Amesbury Flannel Company.

Dr. Jonathan French died April 17th. He was a good surgeon and successful practitioner. Previous to his absence in New York he resided in the house owned by the late James Follansbee.

1825. A poor-farm was purchased near Sanders' Hill, in the Birch Meadow District, this year.

Dr. Philip Towle commenced practice at the Ferry, taking the place of Dr. Rufus Hill, who had gone West.

The large mill now known as No. 2 was built this year by the Salisbury Company. The old nail-factory was sold to this company and converted into a weaving-room.

1826. Rev. Peter S. Eaton was ordained pastor of the Second Church September 20th.

1827. St. James' Episcopal Church was organized this year at the Mills.

The road at the Duck Hole was widened and straightened to Haverhill line.

The ferry at Patten's Creek was rented to Stephen Bailly for five years at one dollar per year. It had become nearly useless.

A Congregational Society was organized at the Mills this year, being the third of that denomination in town.

The Unitarians, having built a church on Main Street, installed the Rev. David Damon pastor.

The Provident Institution for Savings in Salisbury and Amesbury was incorporated this year. Jacob Brown, Esq., was chosen president and Robert Patten, Esq., treasurer.

1829. The famous breakwater across Joppa Flats was commenced this year, and thousands of tons of stone were boated down the river by John Huntington and David Goodwin, and thrown within the frame-work to solidify the structure.

The first steamer on the Merrimac made a trial trip this year.

1830. The population of the town, by the census taken this year, was two thousand four hundred and forty-five.

Christopher Sargent, Esq., died November 10th, being more than ninety years of age. He was the great-





grandson of William (1st) and a very prominent and useful man in town affairs. He served on the Board of Selectmen thirteen years, was representative fourteen years, and town clerk nine years. He wrote many deeds and wills, and his influence in town is said to have been very great. His grandson Moses now owns the homestead.

The appropriations were,—Schools, \$1000; town charges, \$2000; highways, \$900.

1831. The middle road, from near the house of Geo. W. Bartlett to that of Daniel F. Morrill, was laid out this year, although strongly opposed by the town.

The organization of the Congregational Church at the Mills was effected this year, the late Eleazer A. Johnson being chosen clerk, which office he held for forty years. Jonathan A. Sargent and George Perkins were chosen deacons.

Ephraim Weed died at the Pond Hills December 28th, aged eighty-one years. He served as town clerk twenty-seven years, and as selectman three years.

Jacob Bagley Currier, a Revolutionary soldier, died at the Ferry August 3d, aged eighty.

1832. The people were greatly alarmed this year by the prevalence of the Asiatic cholera in some of the large cities. The most stringent sanitary measures were adopted to guard against this scourge.

Dr. Philip Toole died March 4th at Charleston, S. C., whither he had gone for his health.

This year is also somewhat noted for the attempts to make oil from the sun-flower. Works were erected where the Hollow Mill formerly stood, and power obtained by a dam which flowed the low ground west of the road and produced "Patten's Pond." Farmers were induced to raise sun-flowers, hoping that this new branch of business might prove profitable. But the enterprise did not succeed, and the mill was changed to a tannery, and so occupied for many years.

1833. The articles of amendment to the Constitution of Massachusetts, abolishing the compulsory support of any particular religious sect, came before the November meeting and were approved by one hundred and thirty-five yeas to two nays, thus showing a liberal spirit.

1834. For a few years past the idea of introducing the cultivation of silk has been entertained by a few persons in town. Chinese mulberry trees were set to feed the worms on, and the needed preparations made for successful work. Captain Thomas Bailey, at the Ferry, planted a large number of trees, which grew finely, and in time succeeded in raising more than one hundred thousand worms. His large storehouse on the wharf afforded an excellent opportunity for testing the practicability of the experiment, and all went well till the worms were within ten days of maturity, when some evil-disposed person or persons broke into the premises and destroyed nearly the whole of them. This was fatal to the silk culture in Amesbury.

Rev. Joseph Towne was installed first pastor of the new society at the Mills March 5th.

1835. This year a general widening and straightening of the river road was ordered by the county commissioners.

The aged Revolutionary soldier, William Huntington, died February 15th. He was in the army for some length of time and was present at the surrender of Burgoyne.

Rev. Benjamin Bell, for several years pastor of the First Church, died December 31st. In his early life he was an eloquent preacher, and drew full houses.

Rev. Benjamin Sawyer resigned the pastorate of the First Church, where he had labored since 1814. New societies had drawn away many members and made it very difficult to raise the required salary. He was the last pastor settled by this ancient church and society, which had withstood the changes of time for one hundred and sixty-nine years.

1836. Captain Thomas Bailey erected a mill for grinding and other purposes on the Great Swamp Brook, where it enters the river and where the Merri-mac Hat Factory has since been built. Here he set in operation the first planing-machine used in town.

The Universalist Church at West Amesbury was built this year.

On the 30th of October Rev. J. H. Towne, who was installed pastor of the Congregational Church and Society at the Mills in 1834, was formally dismissed.

St. James' Church was consecrated October 22d. The society previously worshipped in Washington Hall. The Rev. Henry M. Davis was now stated supply for one year.

The Powow River Bank was incorporated this year with a capital of one hundred thousand dollars.

The removal of John Greenleaf Whittier from Haverhill, his native town, to Amesbury took place this year. He purchased a residence on Friend Street at the Mills, which is still his home, although much of his time is spent at Oak Knoll, Danvers. His poems have a world-wide fame and his home-ballads possess charms which no other poet can claim.

1837. This year began a very bitter contest in regard to the disposal of this town's share of the surplus revenue which the United States had deposited with the States, and which was passed to the towns. Many were in favor of reserving the sum as a school fund, and on the other hand a strong party advocated its division according to population. Many meetings were held with varying results, sometimes one party being in the ascendancy and then, perhaps, the next meeting reconsidering all that had been done. The controversy was continued through the year and into the succeeding one. The final disposal was a division among the people, in the shape of loans, each one giving a note for the amount (\$2.00).

Rev. Peter S. Eaton was dismissed from the pas-





torate of the Second Church May 10th, and the Rev. Lucius W. Clark was installed on the 1st of November following.

Rev. E. G. Brooks was this year ordained pastor of the Universalist Society at West Amesbury.

Rev. Charles C. Taylor was called to supply the pulpit of the Episcopal Society and retained till 1840.

Rev. James B. Hadley was ordained pastor of the Union Evangelical Society at the Ferry and Point September 20, 1838.

1839. Daniel Weed, Esq., died October 10th, having held the office of town clerk for the last twenty years. He was a good penman and the records were neatly and faithfully kept while in his possession.

Amos Weed, his brother, succeeded him, holding the office till 1844.

Captain John Blasdell died at the Ferry August 21st. He was in the army during a part of the Revolutionary War and drew a pension some years before his death.

Captain Valentine Bagley died at Bartlett's Corner January 19th. In his early life he was a sea-faring man, and once cast away on the desert of Arabia, where his sufferings were beyond the power of description. The last of his life was spent as landlord of the tavern-stand since owned by the late Daniel Huntington.

The River District built a school-house this year, the second story being occupied as a hall by the citizens.

Rev. J. S. Barry was settled by the Universalist Society at West Amesbury this year.

Rev. Seth H. Keeler was dismissed from the Congregational Society at the Mills October 7th.

1840. The poor-farm purchased in 1825 was anything but satisfactory, on account of its wet and heavy soil, which was unfit for old people to work on. Such being the case, the selectmen were instructed to sell it, which order was carried into effect. The White Hall Road was widened and straightened, greatly improving it.

James H. Davis opened a school in the Academy, which was continued for several years with good success.

Rev. Samuel H. Merrill was installed pastor of the Congregational Society at the Mills September 16th.

1841. The old road from the pound to the late Orlando Sargent's has for many years subjected the town to a good deal of expense on account of the accumulation of snow, and to avoid this difficulty, and at the same time secure a more level route, a road was built under the hill, which was a great improvement.

Rev. Silas Blaisdell was engaged by the Episcopal Society and retained till 1844.

The Universalist Society at West Amesbury settled the Rev. J. J. Locke the present year.

1842. On the 27th of July Nathan Nutter, Thomas

Osgood and Isaac Martin sailed out over the bar for a fare of fish and by some misfortune were upset and drowned.

On the 31st of August Rev. L. W. Clark, of the Congregational Church and Society at West Amesbury was dismissed, and December 29th the Rev. Henry B. Smith was ordained pastor.

1843. The custom of holding town-meetings in the meeting-houses was discontinued this year, and a town hall built at Pond Hills.

Little Salisbury (so called) was, on petition of Jonathan Ring and others, annexed to Amesbury.

James Horton and others obtained a charter to build a railroad from the Eastern to the Mills, and Jonathan Elliott and others also obtained leave to build a road to New Hampshire line.

The house of Jonathan Morrill, Esq., was burnt March 5th, by means of the defects in a clay chimney.

1844. Rev. S. H. Merrill was dismissed from the Congregational Society at the Mills, and Rev. John H. Mordough engaged as stated supply.

Rev. D. Gordon Estes was elected rector of St. James' Church, which office he held till 1850, when the Rev. W. Williams succeeded him till 1852.

At the annual meeting Joseph Merrill, Jr., was chosen town clerk, which office he retained till 1850.

1845. The Universalist Society at the Mills was incorporated April 8th. There was many years ago a society of this order in the village which, through neglect, had become extinct. The new society worshipped for about two years in Washington Hall, but purchased the old Episcopal Church, which was removed to Friend Street, and enlarged and refitted for use. Rev. George G. Strickland was engaged as pastor.

1846. The peculiarity of this year was the mania for railways. The first proposition was for a road from the Mills to Plaistow, N. H., and the second was from the Mills to the Boston and Maine, by way of South Amesbury. Both were approved by the town and both came to naught.

The new Episcopal Church was consecrated on the 5th of November.

1847. The subject of a new town was agitated this year, and a petition sent to the Legislature for an act of incorporation. The territory included came as far west as the Kimball road and near John Huntington's, on the river. This move was very strongly opposed by the town, and finally defeated.

Rev. S. C. Hewit was installed pastor of the Universalist Society at the Mills the present year.

1848. The Sandy Hill meeting-house was sold and removed this year, the society having become unable to support preaching. Thus in one hundred and thirty-three years from its erection at the parsonage, and eighty-eight years from its rebuilding at Sandy Hill, this venerable edifice disappears to be seen no more.



The Congregational Church at West Amesbury extended a call to Rev. Albert Paine, and he was ordained September 7th.

The West Amesbury Wheel Company was incorporated this year with a capital of forty thousand dollars. The works are situated on Cobler's Brook, near the grist-mill of the late Humphrey Nichols. This grist-mill and privilege, with a large tract of land in the vicinity, was formerly owned by the Harvey family. The last of the family here was John H. Hoag, who owned a few acres and small house near the Universalist Church.

1849. The present town farm at the Lion's Mouth was purchased this year. This place was for many years the homestead of the Bartletts, Deacons Stephen and Simeon living there in 1762 and subsequent to that time.

The Free Baptist Church on Friend Street was completed this year and dedicated September 20th. It was erected on the lot which for many years was occupied by the Friends' Meeting-house.

Rev. E. Howe was engaged to supply the pulpit of the Universalist Church at West Amesbury, and the Rev. Josiah Gilman that of the Universalist Society at the Mills.

1850. The town schools have been gradually progressing in work and expense until the sum of two thousand dollars has been reached for their support. The population also has increased from 2471 in 1840, to 3113 in 1850, which is a gain of 672 during the last decade.

Ship-building has not wholly died out, as we now find Osgood & McCay asking for the use of part of the town's landing at the Ferry for a ship-yard.

The necessity of some more efficient means of extinguishing fires was most satisfactorily shown by the burning of William Chase's house at South Amesbury, and at the November meeting the sum of two thousand dollars was voted for the purchase of four fire-engines to be located in the four villages.

Rev. Rufus King was ordained at the Congregational Church at the Mills April 7th.

The Society of Friends built their meeting-house, now standing on the corner of Friend and Sandy Hollow Streets.

James H. Davis, who had for the last ten years taught a private school in the academy, removed to his new room on Friend Street the present year.

1851. The mill built by the late Thomas Bailey, very near the spot now occupied by the Merrimac Hat Factory, was, April 2d, swept away by the breaking of the second dam, which precipitated a large body of water against the first dam, which soon gave way, washing the mill with an immense body of sand into the river. A violent rain was the occasion of this disaster.

On the 16th of April a furious northeast storm caused a sudden rise in the river, which swept away the ancient button tree, which was the southeast

bound of the landing next to the farm of the late Thomas Page. This tree was very ancient, being mentioned in 1703, and no doubt the local name of "Buttonwood" was derived from it. As age increased the top had crumbled away till the roots outnumbered the branches, and it floated gracefully down the current with its roots uppermost.

The South School-house at the Ferry, standing on the homestead lot of the late Benjamin Lurvey, Esq., was built this year.

Rev. H. P. Cutting was settled by the Universalist Society at West Amesbury this year.

1852. The most unfortunate event of the year was the strike of the operatives in the Salisbury Mills, of which Mr. Derby was agent. The cause of this ruinous proceeding was the abridgment of the ancient privilege of stepping out for a luncheon in the course of the forenoon, a privilege which had nearly died out; but the principle involved was what the operatives contended for. The town sustained the men, appropriating two thousand dollars to aid them, in addition to private subscriptions. But the company had their way, importing help, which materially changed the population of the village, but not for the better.

Rev. J. Davenport was settled by the Universalist Society at West Amesbury and Rev. J. E. Pomfret at the Mills.

Rev. Benjamin Austin was elected rector of St. James' Church and retained till 1854.

A carpenter's shop was this year built by Alfred Bailey near the site of the mill which was washed away, but finally disposed of to the Merrimac Hat Company for a dye-house. During the fall Mr. Bailey placed another building nearer the river for mechanical purposes.

1853. The manufacture of cheap carriages was now commenced at the Mills by Jacob R. Huntington, Esq. A few carriages had previously been built by Charles B. Patten and others, but they were clumsy and expensive. Mr. Huntington put a cheap article on the market, which sold readily, and enabled the multitude to ride. More will be given under the head of manufactures.

1854. A petition by John S. Morse and others was presented to the county commissioners asking for the location of a road from New Hampshire line to Merrimac River. This route avoided the sharp hill near the late Barzilla Colby's by ranging along on the north cant and entering the old road near George W. Sargent's house. It also cut a way from Johnson's Corner to the river near the bridge at South Amesbury. The town opposed the measure, but the petitioners were successful.

Rev. Albert Paine was dismissed from the Congregational Society at West Amesbury April 11th, and Rev. Leander Thompson was installed September 20th.

1855. By leave from the Legislature, the town sold





a portion of the ancient landing at the Mills to the Salisbury Manufacturing Company May 23d. A town-meeting was held to act upon six articles of amendment to the constitution of the State, and they were approved by a vote of twenty-five yeas to five nays.

Rev. Robert F. Chase was elected rector of St. James' Church and continued till 1858.

1856. This was the ever memorable "Know-Nothing" year, and the vote for Governor stood, Henry J. Gardner (Know-Nothing), four hundred and twenty-eight to one hundred and fifty-three for all others. The Presidential vote was five hundred and ninety-six, being the largest ever cast.

Rev. William P. Colby was engaged to supply the pulpit of the Universalist Church at West Amesbury.

Rev. A. C. Childs was installed pastor of the Congregational Church and Society at the Mills.

The Amesbury and Salisbury Agricultural and Horticultural Society was organized this year.

1857. A change occurred in the manufacturing interest of the village, by the organization of a new company under the title of "Salisbury Mills." This company purchased the whole property of the former company for the sum of two hundred and twenty-five thousand dollars. A long period of prosperity followed the new arrangement.

For the convenience of the people at South Amesbury a post-office was this year established, and Ebenezer Fullington was appointed postmaster.

From the earliest date the fish, which were annually caught in the Merrimac, had supplied a large amount of excellent food, but the erection of the massive dam at Lawrence, without a proper sluice-way, prevented the ascent of the fish to their usual spawning-ground, and thus eventually ruined the river-fishing. The impurity of the water may have had something to do with the failure of this business—probably had.

Hezekiah Challis, a well-known resident of the Ferry, died January 20th. He was a skillful mechanic and at the beginning of the manufacturing business at the Mills was employed in building booms and machinery. He was a descendant of Philip Watson Challis one of the original settlers in Amesbury. At his death but two bearing that name survived.

1858. Robert Patten, Esq., died at the Mills, February 27th, aged eighty-one years. For a long period he was a prominent man in town affairs, holding the office of selectman eight years, and that of Representative to the General Court three years. He also served on the Board of County Commissioners one term. His homestead, which he bought in 1808, was the original homestead of John Hoyt, Sr., who came across the Powow with the first grantees.

The well-known physician, Israel Balch, died at the Ferry this year, aged sixty-nine years. He studied medicine with Dr. Jonathan French, a very popular

physician in town, and commenced practice about 1820, and was a skillful surgeon.

Rev. Calvin Damon was this year settled by the Universalist Society at West Amesbury.

Rev. D. G. Estes was again elected rector of St. James' Church and retained till 1872.

1859. The Congregational Church at West Amesbury was this year sold and removed, and a larger and more costly house erected on the spot. It was dedicated January 12, 1860.

1860. A high school was established this year, to be kept five months at the east end of the town and the same length of time at the west end. The school was opened at the academy.

Rev. T. D. P. Stone was installed pastor of the Congregational Church and Society at the Mills October 1.

The appropriations this year were: schools, \$2500; poor, \$4000; highways, \$1000.

The population, according to the census taken this year, was three thousand eight hundred and seventy-seven, a gain of seven hundred and thirty-four in ten years.

1861. This year will ever be remembered as the beginning of the "Great Rebellion," which cost the country untold treasures and probably not far from half a million lives. When the first gun was fired at Fort Sumter, the North was fully aroused to the danger which threatened the Union. A call was made by the President for seventy-five thousand volunteers, which were quickly gathered and mustered into service. A town-meeting was held April 27th, to take measures to raise a company, and to encourage enlistments a bounty of ten dollars per month to single men and twenty dollars per month to married men was offered.

Great enthusiasm prevailed and the proceedings were very harmonious. A company was soon formed and Joseph W. Sargent chosen captain. This company was mustered into service July 5th, and did service during the war in the Fourteenth Regiment, which was subsequently changed to heavy artillery.

Volunteers were readily obtained during the first two years of the war, by bounties ranging from sixty to three hundred dollars. Large sums were appropriated by the town for the recruiting service and efficient measures taken to meet the calls as soon as made.

Dr. Benjamin Atkinson died October 22d, at West Amesbury, where he commenced practice in 1830, and was a very popular and successful physician, having an extensive practice in the vicinity.

1862. Several calls were made this year, the first being for three years' men. To fill the town's quota, three hundred dollars was offered, which proved effectual. Soon a second call came for nine months' men, and one hundred and fifty dollars bounty was offered. This proved sufficient to obtain the men. Most of these men went into the Forty-eighth Regiment, commanded by Col. Eben F. Stone, of Newburyport,



and served near New Orleans. On the 18th of September the town voted to extend the bounty to as many more, in addition to the forty-two men now in camp, as may enlist towards the next call.

The county commissioners having issued an order for the rebuilding of Powow River bridge, the selectmen were ordered to act with those of Salisbury in carrying on the work. It was an expensive, but thorough work, requiring a large amount of stone. The old draw was entirely discontinued.

Rev. T. D. P. Stone was dismissed from the Congregationalist Society at the Mills, July 30th, and Rev. George E. Freeman engaged Nov. 2d.

The great demand for woolen goods induced the Salisbury Mills to enlarge their works by removing the old nail factory and erecting a large mill on the spot, now known as No. 8. This mill was dedicated by a soldiers' levee, which proved the largest gathering ever held in town.

Jonathan Morrill died June 29th, aged seventy-two. He was born in Salisbury and was a descendant of Abraham Morrill, who built the first corn-mill on the Powow. In the War of 1812 he served as master-at-arms on board the privateer "Decatur," which his father, "Ensign Morrill" (as he was generally called), built. He was also interested in the factory on Mill Street, which his father built in 1813. He represented the town two years in the Legislature, and served as selectman several times.

1863. The town having incurred a large debt, which could not well be paid at present, it was decided to issue bonds to the amount of \$20,000. These were to draw five per cent. interest, and were redeemable in five years and payable in twenty.

As the war progressed it grew more difficult to obtain men for the army, and resort was had to a draft. This was really an alarming measure, one which the people dreaded and had taken every possible measure to avoid. Eighty-eight men were drafted, from which fifty-nine were to be selected. Some immediately enlisted, while others who were accepted paid the commutation fee of \$300. The selectmen were instructed to procure the men called for at the expense of the town.

The "Amesbury Hat Company" was organized this year, and after purchasing a portion of the town's landing near Powow River, proceeded to erect a building for that purpose. The business was highly prosperous, in common with all other branches. Subsequently this company was consolidated with and became a part of the Merrimac Hat Company.

Another mill was built this year, although for a different purpose. The "Hollow Mill," so-called, because located in Patten's Hollow, where the oil-mill and tannery once stood, was intended for the manufacture of woolen goods. It commenced operations by running eight sets of machinery driven by an engine of two hundred horse-power. It was a stock company, owned mostly in Amesbury and Salisbury.

The Wharf Company at South Amesbury was incorporated this year, with the right to extend a wharf into the river one hundred and fifteen feet and also to collect wharfage.

The Mills School District appropriated \$3500 to purchase a lot and build a school-house. The old High School building, on School Street, was then built.

The death of Lowell Bagley, Esq., occurred Feb. 26th at the Ferry. His principal business was holding Justices' Courts, writing wills and deeds, surveying land and settling estates. He held the office of selectman five years and was twice elected representative to the General Court.

1864. This year \$10,000 was appropriated to continue the recruiting service, and strenuous efforts were put forth to fill the renewed calls. Large bounties were offered, and it is believed that every call received a full quota from Amesbury.

Abner L. Bailey was authorized by the Legislature to extend and improve his wharf at the Ferry and collect wharfage.

A charter was obtained by a company to build a horse railroad from Newburyport to Amesbury, with a capital of \$120,000. The road was built and has been of great convenience to those living on the line.

The "Horton Hat Company" was organized the present year by Alfred Bailey and others, and the manufacture of hats commenced near the present brick building of the Merrimac Company.

A national bank was this year established at West Amesbury, with a capital of \$50,000, which has since been increased to \$200,000.

An effort was made to unite the towns of Amesbury and Salisbury, but when submitted to the people, failed to receive their approval.

1865. The Civil War closed in the early part of the year, and the soldiers who had fought so nobly for their country, returned to their homes. But not all came—many sleep on the Southern battle-fields, and the general rejoicing through the country is to some a sad reminder of husbands, fathers and sons who will return no more. Amesbury furnished about four hundred men. Of these, twenty died of sickness, seven were killed, thirteen wounded and six were confined in Andersonville Prison, two of whom died before reaching home.

A Catholic Church was built this year at the Mills, on the site of the present large structure, and dedicated Aug. 26, 1866.

Rev. Edward A. Rand was ordained pastor of the Congregational Society at the Mills, March 2d.

1866. Amesbury has four villages, and there was no central point for a high school, convenient for all, nor was it convenient to establish two such schools—one at each end of the town; consequently the four grammar schools were raised to the grade of high school requirements. This was expensive, but a very convenient arrangement.

This year the South Amesbury Wharf Company





erected a large building in connection with citizens, who subscribed about eight hundred dollars in order to secure the upper story for a hall. Citizens' Hall has been a very valuable acquisition to the village.

1867. Greenwood Street, containing some fine residences, was accepted as a public highway. This is one of the pleasantest streets in town.

Rev. Leander Thompson was dismissed from the Congregationalist Society at West Amesbury, May 2d, and Rev. E. A. Rand from the Congregationalist Society at the Mills, May 3d. Rev. W. F. Bacon was ordained, September 26th, as Mr. Rand's successor.

A Baptist Church was organized at West Amesbury, April 5th. Rev. John Brady was assigned to the pastorate of the Catholic Church the present May.

1868. This year the bridges across the Merrimac River were made free by act of the Legislature, thus throwing the entire expense of repairs on the towns in the immediate vicinity. Amesbury objected to this heavy tax, and refused to raise money to meet the expenses. Counsel was employed, but without avail, and the responsibility to a proportionate extent was fastened upon the town.

Aubin Street, containing a large population, was accepted as a public highway this year.

The West Amesbury Branch Railroad was incorporated May 8th, with a capital of one hundred and fourteen thousand dollars.

Rev. Henry W. Kling was installed pastor of the Baptist Society at West Amesbury in July.

The school accommodations at South Amesbury failing to meet the wants of the pupils, a new house was built, containing two fine rooms, and costing five thousand dollars.

Hon. William Nichols died at West Amesbury, November 30th. An appropriate sketch of him will be found in Merrimac.

Rev. Lewis Gregory was ordained pastor of the Congregationalist Church and Society at West Amesbury, October 15th.

1869. In consequence of a law abolishing the school district system, measures were taken by the town to appraise all school property, previous to taking control. This law wound up the system which had prevailed for nearly a century.

Communication by rail from the Mills to West Amesbury was greatly to be desired, and a charter for that purpose was obtained. But without town aid, funds could not be raised equal to the work. A full town-meeting was held to obtain an expression of the people, which proved to be adverse to the undertaking and the enterprise was abandoned.

The proprietors of the academy procured an act of incorporation under the title of "Amesbury and Salisbury Academy Incorporation," with power to hold real estate to the amount of ten thousand dollars.

The West Amesbury High School building was enlarged and greatly improved the present year, at a cost of eight thousand dollars.

On the 15th of July the corner-stone of the Baptist Church at West Amesbury was laid by the society founded in 1867.

Rev. William F. Potter was this year settled by the Universalist Society at West Amesbury.

The carriage-factory of J. R. Huntington, in Lincoln Court, was burnt, April 23d, and he commenced building near the depot the following May.

The present post-office building was erected this year, and also the block of stores on the opposite side of the street, by the Salisbury Mills Company.

1870. The population of the town now numbers five thousand five hundred and eighty-one, an increase of one thousand and seventy-four during the last ten years.

The appropriations have largely increased, owing in part to the change in the school system. For schools, \$6600; for highways, \$2500; for poor and town charges, \$7000.

A school-house was this year built at the Ferry, costing seven thousand dollars.

On the 4th of February a most destructive fire occurred at West Amesbury. The wheel-factory of Foster & Howe, with the adjoining buildings and contents, were entirely consumed; the total loss being not far from twenty-eight thousand dollars.

On the evening of the 5th of November the ancient academy was burnt. It was the work of an incendiary, no doubt, and it is a little singular that it was burnt "pope night."

1871. The newly-located roads around "Sargent's square" at West Amesbury were accepted by the town, and also Pleasant Street at the Mills.

A fire district was organized at West Amesbury the present year.

The stable of C. W. Little was burnt June 2d, but most of the contents were saved.

Rev. T. S. Boyd was installed pastor of the Congregationalist Society at the Mills December 27th.

Rev. N. R. Wright was settled by the Universalist Society at West Amesbury.

Captain Thomas Baily died at the Ferry, May 30th, aged eighty-two years. In early life he was a school-teacher, employed in several districts in town as early as 1812. At a later date he was largely engaged in ship-building. He was frequently on the Board of Selectmen, and served as Representative in 1828.

1872. The Salisbury Mills completed a dam across Powow River at White Hall, flowing a large tract of land, and inclosing a large body of water now known as "Lake Gardner." It was an expensive work, involving an outlay of some sixty thousand dollars.

The necessity of a larger hall in the village has been apparent for some length of time, and this year Messrs. Kelley and Woods completed the Merrimac Opera Hall on Friend Street.

Under a recent act of the Legislature road commissioners were chosen, but their services proving





unsatisfactory, the old system was restored after one year's experience.

Rev. E. M. Bartlett was installed pastor of the Baptist Church and Society at West Amesbury in October of this year.

Rev. Samuel S. Speer was elected rector of St. James' Church, and officiated till 1877.

On the 15th of August, about ten o'clock P.M., the hat factory near Powow River bridge was found to be on fire, and so rapid was the progress of the flames that the engines in town were unable to do but little service, except to protect the neighboring buildings. The factory was a large four-story wooden building, erected in 1863, and employed eighty persons.

On the night of the 24th of August, the barn at the "Major Gordon" place at the Ferry was burnt.

1873. On the evening of November 3d the Town Hall was found to be on fire, and owing to the scarcity of water, the engines which, were promptly on hand, were unable to render much assistance. It was the work of an incendiary without doubt, and done at this time to bother the town-meeting on the morrow.

The people assembled to hold the annual election, simply opening the meeting, and then adjourning to the house of Joseph Merrill, who was then clerk, and the election was gone through with in due form. Failing to elect the full number of Representatives a second meeting was held at Mr. Merrill's Nov. 24th.

Rev. Dr. Corkin was engaged as pastor of the Universalist Society at West Amesbury.

The foundation of the new Catholic Church was laid with appropriate ceremonies this year.

The horse railroad from Newburyport to Amesbury was completed this year, and was very liberally patronized.

The Amesbury and Salisbury Christian Society formed a church under the charge of Rev. George T. Ridlon.

The constant increase of population had so increased the number of scholars, that it became necessary to provide additional room. To meet this want, a house was built on Friend Street, at a cost of five thousand dollars.

The town decided to aid in building the "Amesbury Railroad" to the amount of fifty thousand dollars, but the undertaking failed of success.

1874. The death of Dr. Thomas Sparhawk occurred at Newburyport, May 17th. He was a prominent and much beloved physician at Amesbury for many years, removing to the city a short time before his death. He freely gave to all in want, and was ever ready to aid suffering humanity, being truly the "poor man's doctor."

A monument was erected over his grave by his friends and very properly inscribed "To the memory of our beloved physician."

This year a soldiers' monument was erected in the East Cemetery and dedicated by appropriate services.

1876. Amesbury, which for more than one hundred and thirty years had seen but slight change in its territory, was this year, by act of the Legislature, cut in two, and the town of Merrimac established in the West Parish. Thus, one-half the territory and two-fifths of the population were lost. The measure was strongly opposed by many, but without success. Financially the old town lost nothing by the change, while the new town gained some advantages with very little expense.

During the summer the Salisbury Mills suspended operations, which deprived hundreds of persons of employment, causing a very general depression in business.

June 1st. The Ring House at the Pond caught fire from a defect in the chimney, and was entirely consumed, with its contents.

1877. It was now very hard times, and help could be obtained at less than living prices. In fact, many were unable to find work at any price. The only exception was the carriage business, which continued good through the whole period of depression.

1878. During the latter part of last year the Merrimac Hat Company commenced the foundation of the present factory near Bailey's Pond.

The old mill at Salisbury Point had become unfit for use, and the abundant supply of pure water here made this a desirable location.

The building was completed early in the season, and dedicated March 21st, by a fair for the benefit of the Old Ladies' Home. It proved a decided success, the net proceeds amounting to one thousand dollars.

In May the Salisbury Mills were sold to John Gariner and others for one hundred and sixty thousand dollars. This was a most pitiable price, and citizens should have combined for the purchase. The change brought no relief; the mills were allowed to stand idle.

1879. Dr. Henry S. Dearborn, of the Mills, died August 25th. He was a physician of long standing, and had an extensive practice.

1880. Jonathan Nayson, Esq., died at the Mills April 23d. He was a druggist in town for many years, but had at different periods been engaged in other callings. The *Amesbury Chronicle*, devoted to the election of Andrew Jackson to the Presidency, was published by him and John Caldwell. In 1836 he was elected to the Legislature, and again in 1852, and also to the Constitutional Convention. Under Pierce's administration he was appointed weigher and gauger. Under Van Buren's administration he was appointed postmaster. He also held the office of selectman for several years.

On the 16th of March the Essex Mills were sold to the Hamilton Company for three hundred thousand dollars. The sale of these mills to this wealthy organization was hailed as the harbinger of better times; nor were people disappointed in their expectations, as will shortly be seen.



1881. The Congregational Church at the Mills celebrated its fiftieth anniversary on the 6th of December. It was interesting to note the changes which had occurred since 1831, when the first organization was effected. The village had largely increased since the erection of the factories, and it was felt that the village people ought not to be under the necessity of attending the Sandy Hill meeting. But notwithstanding the large increase of population, there were but eleven found to join in calling a council to organize the new church. In May, 1882, the late Eleazer A. Johnson was chosen clerk, which office he retained for forty years. He was present on this occasion, although very aged, and enjoyed every word spoken. Rev. Joseph H. Towne, D.D., the first pastor, was also present, and took part in the services, calling to mind many recollections of the last half-century. An historical address was delivered by the pastor, Rev. Pliny S. Boyd, full of interesting information, which was listened to by a very large audience.

The Hamilton Company, having purchased the entire property of the Essex Mills, were now making extensive changes and repairs on the corporation, with a view of putting their mills in full operation. New and improved machinery was procured to replace the old and worn, and several mills were changed from woolen to cotton. Business now wore a more cheerful aspect, nearly all of the operatives being busy at work.

1882. The large increase of scholars in town made it necessary to provide more school-rooms, and the committee and selectmen, by a nearly unanimous vote, were authorized to build on the Academy lot. A large two-story house was built with special reference to accommodating the High and Grammar Schools, which were opened here after its completion.

On the morning of the 19th of December the old Catholic Church, which had been removed to the rear of the new one, was burned, including a large and valuable library.

1883. During a severe shower on the 5th of July, the Hollow Mill was struck by lightning, and with its contents consumed. This was an unfortunate event, throwing out of employ a large number of operatives whose monthly pay was about \$5000.

The want of better means for extinguishing fires in the village had for a long period caused some fear in case the most thickly-settled part should be attacked by the devouring element, and a contract was made with the new Water Company for a supply of water. The large reservoir of the company is situated on Powow Hill, some two hundred feet above Market Square, and the water may readily be carried to all parts of the village.

The Amesbury National Bank, with a capital of \$100,000, was organized, and commenced business the present year, with Alexander M. Huntington president, and F. F. Morrill cashier.

1885. The matter of sewerage came before the town April 17th, when a plan for the village was laid before the meeting and was adopted. This system will require some thirty thousand dollars to complete the sewerage of the village. The meeting appropriated six thousand five hundred dollars to commence the work. On the 10th of September Rev. H. M. Schermerhorn was ordained pastor of the Congregational Church at the Mills.

1886. The 28th, 29th and 30th of January will long be remembered for the ice which covered every tree and twig, loading them so heavily that day and night the woods resounded with crashing limbs. The oldest inhabitants had no recollection of its equal, although in 1831 there was a heavy covering which did much damage. This year a little twig became an inch in diameter and it is hardly possible to estimate the load the trees were carrying.

On the morning of October 3d the Merrimac Opera Hall was found to be on fire in the third story, and so far advanced that all efforts to arrest the progress of the flames proved unavailing. Thus the village was left without a large and convenient hall.

At the session of the Legislature commencing January, 1886, a petition was presented, very numerously signed, asking for the annexation of a certain portion of Salisbury to Amesbury. The measure was approved by East Salisbury and was finally successful. But there was some trouble about arranging the line. The bounds agreed upon were to start from the chain bridge, thence running to the powder-house, and from there to the State line near John C. Evans' at a stone bound. This line left most of Rocky Hill in the old town, including the venerable church. However, before the final passage of the bill the line was changed to the eastward, slicing off a much larger portion of the old town. The act went into effect July 1st. On the 4th a very general celebration was held suitable for the day, although the object mostly in view was the union of the towns. But few changes were made in town matters during the remainder of the year. After the destruction of the Opera Hall no convenient room for town-meetings was to be obtained, and they were held in different places. The annual meeting in November was held in Veteran Hall, and several subsequent meetings were held in the carriage repository of R. F. Briggs & Co., and the annual meeting in that of Walker & Shields.

It is probable that before the fall election a large and elegant hall will be completed by a private company, with sufficient conveniences for town purposes. Ground has already been broken for the foundation on Main Street next to the Congregational Church, by Messrs. M. D. F. Steere, Wm. E. Biddle, Thomas D. Nelson and George E. Batchelder, the proprietors.

The front is to be of pressed brick, and the whole structure is to be built in the most thorough manner, and when completed will not cost less than sixty-five thousand dollars.





During the year an extension of Main Street at the Mills was completed across the Sparhawk place to the Sandy Hollow road, which, in connection with Highland Avenue recently opened across the Lasell estate, throws into the market a large number of valuable house-lots. This section is rapidly gaining in population and is destined soon to be one of the pleasantest locations in town. The rapid increase in business has called for additional tenements, and in every part of the village may be found new houses springing up as if by magic. In fact, "Po Hill" is already dotted with residences far up its southern slope, and bids fair within a brief time to be entirely occupied. And its twin sister on the west across Lake Gardner, "Whittier's Hill," will soon share a like fate. Several lots have been purchased far up on the southern side of the hill, where a most beautiful view of the village and surrounding country can be had.

Should present prosperity continue, the town will soon rank with the largest in the Commonwealth and possibly become a city.

**MANUFACTURES.**—In the early days of the colonies but little manufacturing was done. Some of the coarser articles were made by the slow hand-process, but machinery was nearly unknown. Rough carts, sleds, mill-wheels, plows, hoes and other similar articles were made by the blacksmiths and carpenters, and that was about the extent to which the mechanical arts had attained. The first enterprise which can, with propriety, be considered under this head, is the iron works at the Mills. In 1710 Colonel John March, John Barnard, Joseph Brown and Jarvis Ring petitioned the towns of Amesbury and Salisbury for leave to set up iron works at the falls on Powow River, without being taxed. Leave was readily granted, and the petitioners proceeded to erect suitable works. The manufacture of iron from the ore obtained in this section was, however, a very hazardous business, to say the least, and needed all the encouragement which the two towns could give. Hitherto the industries of the village had been confined almost exclusively to saw-mills, grist-mills and blacksmithing. The fact that iron existed in the neighborhood was probably known at a much earlier date, but the most favorable localities were first selected for the business. The principal inducement for commencing business here was the valuable water-power, which was important on account of the heavy trip-hammer needed in the work.

The ore was not abundant or easily obtained, being mostly taken from the ponds in Newton and Kingston. A small part was dug from the swamp.

That iron exists in this vicinity the casual observer will not fail to notice, from the stones in and near the Powow, many of which strongly resemble the crude ore. The walls by the road-side, in one part of Newton, have that rusty appearance which the presence of iron usually imparts.

This new enterprise was managed by a stock com-

pany, the capital of which is unknown. From the sale of the stock, at a later date, it was evidently divided into twenty-four shares. These frequently changed hands, and were described as "one twenty-fourth part." The ore was either boated or carted to the works at the Mills, as circumstances required, where it passed through the smelting process, and, when cooled to the proper temperature, was passed under heavy trip-hammers and drawn into bars ready for the blacksmith's use.

How long these works were continued at the Mills is not known, but probably some twenty-five years, till it became necessary to remove farther into the country, where wood was plenty and cheap.

The business was removed to Trickling Falls, where it was continued many years. The iron is thus described by one who, in his younger days, had worked it: "When I worked with my father, this old iron used to come in to be made over into different articles, but it was very poor, difficult to weld, and when hot would smoke and give out a bad smell. It could not be drawn into nails, and if bent short would break, unless very hot."

This home-made iron was made into anchors, saw-mill cranks, spindles for turning the stones in grist-mills, cart-tires, cranes, fire-dogs and other plain heavy work. A number of Amesbury and Salisbury people removed when the works were taken to Kingston, and their descendants are found in the vicinity at the present time.

Although the manufacture of iron was abandoned, the working of the material into articles of public use was continued for more than a century. In 1796, or near that time, Jacob Perkins, the famous inventor of machinery, set up the first nail-machine in the United States, here on the Powow. Until now nails were forged by the blacksmiths by a very slow process, and were an expensive article. By Mr. Perkins' invention they were made very rapidly. The first machine simply cut them, and a second process was required to head them, but an improved machine was soon invented which completed the nail at once.

The "Gazeteer of Massachusetts," printed in 1828, says: "An extensive iron factory was established at the Mills in 1800, where one thousand tons of iron have been wrought in a year." This, no doubt, refers to the old rolling-mill and nail-factory which continued operations till about 1825. Much heavy work was done at the rolling-mill; many heavy anchors were made, which called into use the heavy trip-hammer worked by water-power.

The late Enoch Winkley continued the nail business in a building on Mill Street for a short time, and was the last to engage in it at the Mills. After the discontinuance of the iron and nail business, the old rolling-mill was used for the manufacture of starch for a brief period. It was finally sold to the Salisbury Company, and in 1862 gave place to the large mill now known as No. 8.



*Cotton and Woolen Manufactures.*—Where the beautiful Powow comes foaming down over the ragged rocks, falling about ninety feet in a short distance, mills of some kind have been busy from a very early date, but not till 1812 was any attempt made to manufacture cotton and woolen goods on an extensive scale. This year (1812) a company was formed, composed, in part, of the following persons: Ezra Worthen, Paul Moody, Thomas Boardman, Jacob Kent, Mr. Rundlett and Mr. Wigglesworth. Ezra Worthen was appointed agent. This factory was on Mill Street, where it yet stands, although enlarged and greatly changed. The first cloths made found a ready sale to clothe the soldiers and people during the war with England. In fact, the demand was so great for that class of goods that the following year (1813) a second mill was built, just south of the first, by Jonathan Merrill, Esq. (commonly known as "Ensign"). These two mills gave employment to many of the townspeople and were a public benefit. In 1825 a large mill was built on High Street by the Salisbury Company, which gave a new impetus to business and largely increased the population of this section. But tenements could hardly be built to supply this sudden demand, and houses were moved from the Ferry to accommodate the workmen in the mills.

From the small beginning of one mill in 1812 the business has steadily increased until to-day the Hamilton Company have eight large mills in successful operation.

*Hatting Business.*—Of the first seventeen who became sole proprietors of the town in 1654, not one, so far as can be ascertained, was a hatter. The introduction of this branch was by Deacon Moses Chase, of Newbury, a descendant of Aquila Chase. The exact time when he commenced the business cannot be determined, but in 1767 he petitioned the town for a small piece of land on the Ferry road, next to Powow River, to build a hatter's shop on. The request was granted, he receiving a lot thirty feet square.

There is a tradition that his first shop stood near the small brook in the rear of the houses on the west side of the street, and the fact that he was here and taxed four years before, asking for the lot beside the Powow, would seem to confirm the tradition. In 1763 he paid only a poll-tax, but the next year he was rated for some property, which may have been a shop where he was working.

How long the business was continued at the Ferry by Deacon Chase and his son Bailey is not known, but the shop was occupied for hatting many years. The late Daniel Long manufactured hats here for some time. Nearly three-fourths of a century ago the business was started at the Mills, on Main Street, in the building since converted into a dwelling-house, owned and occupied by the late Daniel Morrill.

About 1838 Isaac Martin, a native of the Ferry, commenced hatting near Powow River bridge, in the basement of the house now owned by Timothy Bagley. Associated with him was the late Albert Gale. Subsequently they removed to the old building on the wharf, where the business was continued till about 1853. In the mean time the late Abner L. Bailey had become connected with the business and by his energy and perseverance became very successful. After continuing the business some length of time, mostly at Salisbury Point, under the title of "Merrimac Hat Company," a new company was formed, called the "Amesbury Hat Company," and the town landing (near Powow River bridge) purchased, on which a large factory was built. Before going into operation this company was consolidated with the "Merrimac Hat Company," of which Mr. Bailey was agent and a large owner.

In 1864 Alfred Bailey organized the "Horton Hat Company," which commenced operations near the present large mill on Merrimac Street. This company sold out to the Merrimac Company July 18, 1866, when the latter company assumed the entire business.

The company now employ one hundred and sixty-nine hands, viz.: one hundred and eighteen males and fifty-one females. The number of hats manufactured in 1886 was forty-one thousand four hundred and ninety-eight dozen, valued at two hundred and eighty-three thousand dollars. For the last thirteen years the present efficient agent, R. B. Hawley, Esq., has had charge of the business.

*CARRIAGE BUSINESS.*—About 1800 the carriage business was commenced on a small scale in the West Parish by Michael Emory, wood-worker; William Little, plater; and Stephen Bailey, trimmer. The method of manufacturing was very different from the present, the separate parts being made in shops devoted to that work. It was quite a task to make the exchanges necessary to complete a carriage. There was little variation in style or finish, and the carriages were mostly "the one-hoss chaise."

But from this small beginning an important business gradually grew up, and in 1880 more than sixteen hundred carriages were built, amounting in value to three hundred and seventy-two thousand five hundred dollars. To complete this large amount of work two hundred and fifty hands were employed.

For more than half a century the business was confined to the West Parish, but in 1853 Jacob R. Huntington commenced the manufacture of cheap carriages at the Mills. This was an important move in the right direction. Hitherto carriages had been expensive, those built at West and South Amesbury averaging two hundred and thirty-one dollars each. Mr. Huntington, in putting a cheaper article on the market, supplied a want of long standing. A ready sale was found, and soon others entered the business, spreading far and wide the products of their work-





shops. With the large increase of trade come also great variation in style and finish, to meet the constant demand for higher grade carriages. Work of every style and grade, from the cheap, light carriage to the most costly and elegant, may now be obtained at Amesbury.

There are at present about thirty establishments in the business, varying in their manufactures from a few thousands to three hundred thousand dollars. The largest number of carriages built by one firm in 1886 was 2500. One other firm built 2018, and one 1200. Nearly every firm built several hundreds, and when it is remembered that there are about thirty factories busily engaged, some idea of the large number of carriages made may be had. It has become an important industry, adding largely to the prosperity of the town, and one which is destined to be still further increased by the skill of the workmen and good judgment and enterprise of the manufacturers.

**CHURCHES AND RELIGIOUS SOCIETIES.**—There are eleven churches and societies in town, viz., three Congregational and one each of the following denominations: Baptist, Episcopal, Catholic, Friends, Free Baptist, Methodist, Universalist, Christian Baptist. The most ancient of these societies is the Friends', which was organized and a house built in 1705. From that date they have always had a house of worship on this street, which was very properly named for their order. The society at Rocky Hill was organized in 1714 as the Second Parish in Salisbury, and the present church built in 1785. Most of the other churches have been built and the societies organized within the present century.

**SCHOOLS.**—Amesbury has (including eight parochial) thirty-three schools. The consolidated High School is now occupying the High School building recently built on the ancient academy lot.

The whole number of children between five and fifteen is thirteen hundred, and the sum appropriated for school purposes fourteen thousand dollars. The education of the young is well provided for and carefully looked after by the School Board.

**FARMS.**—The town as now constituted may very properly be designated a manufacturing town. It has a territory of about twelve square miles, being three miles wide and four long.

The eastern section is thickly settled by the village, which extends from the Merrimac River nearly to the New Hampshire line. The western section is devoted to farming purposes. There are about seventy-five farms in town, not including homesteads of two or three acres.

Pleasant Valley, a tract of intervale land bordering the river, is a beautiful locality, containing several excellent farms within its limits. Formerly large quantities of salt hay were boated here for consumption on the farms, but the practice is becoming less frequent, the farmers depending largely upon patent fertilizers for their crops.

The Buttonwood (the southwest section of the town) has a few good farms and a factory engaged in the manufacture of fertilizers, owned and managed by William Lavery.

The Pond Hills District includes nearly twenty farms, and is purely a farming section. The soil is good and in a good state of cultivation. Large quantities of strawberries are raised here, many of which are sent to the Boston market. This street is the main thoroughfare between Amesbury and Merrimac.

The Pond District includes several farms which are somewhat broken by hills and ridges, and the soil is less productive than some other sections. Kimball's Pond is a beautiful sheet of water on the south side of the district and a general resort for pleasure-parties during the hot season.

The Lion's Mouth is a small district, including several farms and the Almshouse. The soil is good and the farms very productive. Having a good market very near has made land very valuable in this vicinity and it readily commands a good price.

White Hall embraces the northern section of the town to the State line. It is mostly an elevated tract of land and affords a very fine view of the village and surrounding country. There are several good farms in the vicinity, which are well-managed and in a high state of cultivation. Lake Gardner, on the east, is a beautiful body of water extending northward to the South Hampton line. "Whicher's" Hill, on the southwest, is a fine, well-rounded elevation which bids fair to be covered with residences in a few years.

To the eastward of Powow Hill is situated the district long known as "Allen's Corner." Here are several good farms, which, under the good management of their owners, produce large crops.

In the southeast section of the town is situated the district very generally known as Rocky Hill. The ledge, which underlies the entire territory from Haverhill to the Atlantic Ocean, crops out in this vicinity and very likely gave name to the district.

Most of the soil is good here, especially near the village. The eastern part, which borders on the large plain in Salisbury, is sandy, but produces very good crops of corn, rye, etc. The central portion of the district is hilly and somewhat broken by the protruding ledges. There are, however, some good and prosperous farmers. The village is fast encroaching on this romantic territory and soon it will be thickly dotted with residences.

The Amesbury and Salisbury Agricultural and Horticultural Society was organized in 1856 and has been accomplishing good results in its sphere of action.

**GENERAL MATTERS.**—*Banks.*—Amesbury has two national banks, viz., the Powow, incorporated in 1836, and the Amesbury, incorporated in 1883, and also the Salisbury and Amesbury Institution for Savings.





*Newspapers.*—The first paper printed in town was the *Amesbury Chronicle*, published every Thursday morning by Nayson & Caldwell, in 1832. In 1833 Mr. Caldwell assumed charge and continued the paper under the title of *Evening Chronicle*. In 1834 Mr. Caldwell changed the title to *Morning Courier*. In 1837 the name was changed to *News and Courier*, C. E. Patten, editor; Caldwell & Whitman, publishers. In 1839 Mr. Caldwell again resumed full control and changed the name to *Evening Transcript*, continuing its publication up to 1840, when he sold to Robert Rich. Mr. Rich soon sold to Joseph M. Pettengill, who changed the heading to *Village Transcript*. Mr. Pettengill retained the management up to 1845, when he formed a partnership with Joseph E. Hood, and the paper was continued under the title of *Essex Transcript*, and was made the organ of the old Liberty party in Essex County. Mr. Hood withdrew after a few months, and G. J. L. Colby was announced as editor. In 1848 Mr. Pettengill sold to Daniel F. Morrill, who continued its publication one year as the *Villager*. In 1849 W. H. B. Currier assumed control of the paper and continued to publish it for more than thirty years. In 1883 Mr. Currier sold to J. M. and I. J. Potter, who continue its publication as *Amesbury and Salisbury Villager*.

In 1880 a second paper was published by J. B. Rogers, called the *Weekly News*, but recently changed to *Amesbury News*. This paper is now on its sixth volume and bids fair to continue indefinitely.

*Post-offices.*—Until 1820 the Mills had no post-office, but mail matter was left at Clark Maxfield's store. At the above date Captain Jonathan Morrill was appointed postmaster and his office was near the spot where the new Opera Hall is to be located. About 1836 Jacob Carter was appointed and removed the office to Wadleigh's block. President Van Buren appointed Philip Osgood, who removed the office to a small building on the corner of Main and Friend Streets. Near the close of Van Buren's administration Mr. Osgood resigned and Jonathan Nayson was appointed. After the inauguration of President Harrison John Walsh was appointed and established the office in a building where No. 7 Mill now stands. After the accession of Mr. Tyler to the Presidency Daniel Bladell was appointed and removed the office to the corner of Friend Street again.

In 1853 David Bagley was appointed by President Pierce, and retained the office until President Lincoln's administration commenced, when David Batchelder took the office, holding it till the close of President Johnson's term. He removed the office to the store of David French. In 1869 W. H. B. Currier was appointed, and soon after removed the office to its present location. In 1873 J. T. Clarkson was appointed postmaster, and held the office till 1881, when J. T. Goodrich was appointed and served till the election of President Cleveland and the appointment of Hiram Foot, the present incumbent.

At present the town is enjoying a season of unusual prosperity; business of all kinds is brisk, creating a demand for tenements which cannot be supplied. But many new houses are being erected, the number which will be completed in course of the season being estimated at nearly one hundred. New streets are being opened in various parts of the village, thus bringing into the market many desirable house-lots. The population is rapidly increasing.

## BIOGRAPHICAL.

### THE ROWELL FAMILY.

Valentine Rowell, from whom most of the family descend, was here in the early settlement. He was granted land in the first division in 1640; married Joanna Pindar, of Ipswich, November 14, 1643; removed to Amesbury 1651; died May 7, 1662. His son Philip, born January 8, 1647, married Sarah, daughter of Abraham Morrill, Sr., of Salisbury, and was killed by the Indians July 7, 1690. His homestead was near the corner of School and Pleasant Streets. Jacob, son of Philip, was born 1669; married Hannah Barnard, of Andover. His homestead was on Friend Street. He died August 18, 1747. He owned a part of the iron-works located near the first dam on Powow River, doing an extensive business for those times. This, with other property he bequeathed to his son Philip, born January 28, 1695; married Elizabeth Parinton, October 10, 1719; died April 18, 1780. His homestead was where the residence of Mrs. Stephen Woodman now is. To him much of the early thrift and business of the village was due. He was not only actively engaged in the iron-works, but was also a surveyor of land, wrote many deeds and wills, and was an exchanger of currency which floated from province to province. He also dealt in English and West India goods. His was indeed the country store of olden days. He, as well as most of his descendants, was attached to the Friends' Society. In his will he gave fifty pounds to the Amesbury Friends' Meeting, which fund is enjoyed to-day. The society's first house was on the site of the Public Library; the second on the site of the brick house, Friend Street; the third, where the Friends' brick meeting-house now stands; their present house is their fourth.

Jacob Rowell, son of Philip, followed many of the avocations of his father. He was born February 12, 1724. His homestead was on High Street, corner of Powow. He married Anna, daughter of James Buxton, of Salem, January 22, 1761. He died September 29, 1813, aged eighty-nine. His wife died November 9, 1822, aged ninety-one years. They had eight children—Philip, who left three sons and one daughter; Abigail, who married Edward Southwick, of Danvers; James, drowned when a lad; John, un-



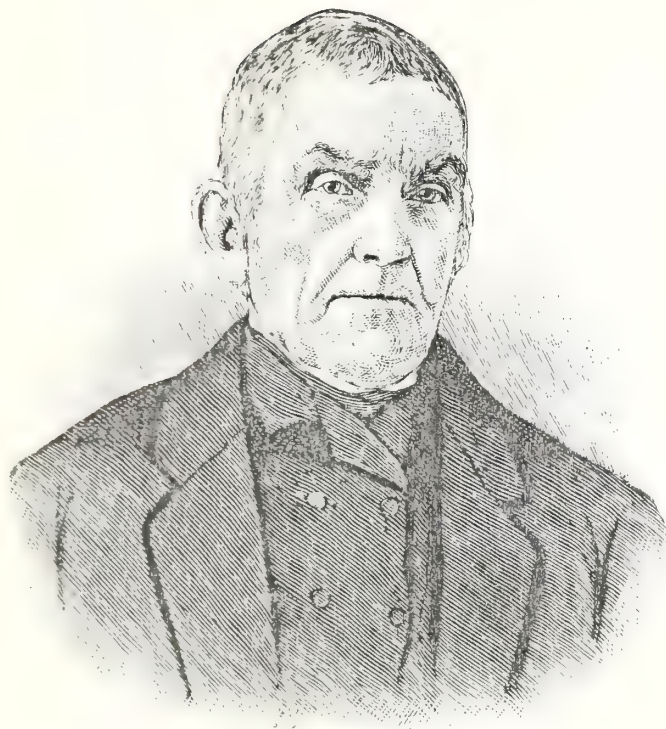


Engraved by J. H. Smith

*Jacob Rowell*







*Robert Cotton*





*J. B. Webster*



married; Elizabeth, married James Purinton, Kensington, N. H.; Jacob, of whom more later; Anna, unmarried; James, who left two sons, was drowned June 16, 1826.

Jacob Rowell, the subject of our sketch, was born October 30, 1771. He was a gentleman of sterling integrity, genial and sincere in his attachments. He enjoyed the friendship and confidence of many prominent men in social and business circles. He married Abigail, daughter of John Jones, November 22, 1804, in Friends' Meeting. She was born July 7, 1782, and died June 10, 1843; he died February 6, 1855, and together they are buried in the Union Cemetery, and a monument is erected to their memory. They were the parents of ten children—JOHN, born January 28, 1806, married Sarah M. Stuart, died June 27, 1872, left daughter, *Sarah A.*, wife of S. E. Patten; ELIZABETH, born February 8, 1807, living; JACOB, born December 10, 1808, married Irena A. Jones, died February 22, 1871, left two children, *Mary* and *George J.*; REBECCA, died in childhood; SAMUEL, living, born August 22, 1815, married Lydia J. Neal September 11, 1841, has five children,—*Abbie R.*, wife of Charles Fredic (has two daughters), *Oliver D.*, *Samuel, Jr.*, *Edward H.*, and *John*, who has two children; CHARLES, living, born October 24, 1817, married R. Ann Healey, has *Anna H.*, wife of George F. Talbot, and has two sons; *Jacob A.*, who has two daughters; *Charles, Jr.*, who has one daughter, and *Clarence E.*, who has one daughter; GEORGE, born September 16, 1819, married Rebecca G. Jones January 1, 1856, died November 19, 1871, left one son, *George William*; ABIGAIL J., living; SARAH, died November 23, 1884; MARY, died June 6, 1827.

Jacob Rowell resided during the closing years of his life in the house on Friend Street, corner of Pond, where reside his daughters, who gratefully cherish his memory.

The family, the most part being Friends, have been steadfast in the pursuit of their daily vocations, leaving the civil and military affairs to others, being at at once helpful in keeping alive the manufacturing and business interests, as well as the moral life of the past years of this community.

#### ROBERT PATTEN.

Stephen Patten, the grandfather of *Robert*, was born June 19, 1707, and his father, Willis, December 11, 1738, and died September 12, 1816. The occupation of Willis Patten, was that of cooper, brickmaker and farmer. He married Hannah Sargent, and had nine children, viz.: Stephen, Jonathan, Willis, Moses, Amos, *Robert*, Hannah, Unis and Thomas.

Robert, whose portrait is here shown, was born at South Amesbury, October 28, 1776, when the great struggle of independence was progressing. About 1807 he bought the John Hoyt, Sr., homestead of one of his descendants and moved to the

Mills, where he spent the remainder of his life. He was president of the Powow River Bank from 1850 until his death, February 27, 1858, and was the first treasurer of the Savings Bank, which office he held for several years. He was frequently called into town business, holding the office of selectman nine years, and was three times elected representative to the General Court. In 1841 he was elected county commissioner for three years, and served the town in various capacities during his life. His principal business was farming and brick-making, which he pursued for more than half a century. For many years he furnished all supplies in that line, there being no other brick-yard in this section of the town. No doubt it is the oldest brick-yard in town, and was first used by John Hoyt, Sr., and, in fact, the remains of an ancient yard were to be seen when Robert Patten moved there, so ancient that the oldest inhabitants knew nothing about it.

Mr. Patten married Rodie Sargent, and had Betsey, born March 9, 1804; Abigail, born September 30, 1806; Susan H., born February 4, 1811; Orlando S., born July 10, 1808; Hannah, born July 17, 1814; Robert Willis, born January 13, 1817.

Betsey married Patten Sargent; Abigail married Orlando Sargent; Susan married Daniel Sargent; Orlando (2d) married Ann M. Sawyer; Hannah never married; Robert Willis married Eliza A. Brown, daughter of Enoch Brown, and had two children, viz.: Enoch B. (not married) and Carrie B. (she married Stephen F. Woodman, and had two children, viz.: Willis P. and Esther).

Robert Willis Patten now lives in the old homestead, and carries on farming and the making of brick. When a young man of eighteen he learned the trade of tanning, and at the age of twenty-one years, engaged in this business with his brother Orlando, and continued for thirty years. He has been selectman and was representative in 1858.

#### JONATHAN B. WEBSTER.

Jonathan B. Webster, who was for many years a prominent citizen of Amesbury, died of pneumonia, February 17, 1870. He was an active and successful man, shrewd in business, of marked integrity and always held in high estimation by all his numerous acquaintances. Starting on the common level with his fellows, he maintained a steady, persistent course of life, until he became one of the wealthiest men in the community. He took no great interest in public affairs, but bestowed his greatest attention on the financial interests of Amesbury, which owes much of its prosperity to his efforts.

Mr. Webster was born at Amesbury Ferry February 23, 1799. When about fourteen years of age he came to the Mills, and worked as an apprentice with Ezra Worthen, the first manufacturer of woolen goods in this place. He continued with Mr. Worthen





until 1827, when he contracted with the Salisbury Mills to finish their goods, occupying that position until 1846, when he succeeded Mr. Nathaniel White as cashier of the Powow River Bank, which office he filled until May, 1858, when he was elected president, that office having been rendered vacant by the death of Robert Patten.

Mr. Webster was one of the principal men in establishing the bank, and was one of its directors from the time of its establishment, in May, 1836, until his death. He was also one of the prime movers in the organization of the Savings Bank, having been its treasurer for twenty years and vice-president for twelve years. He also suggested the formation of the Amesbury and Salisbury Mutual Fire Insurance Company in this town, and through his efforts this institution was incorporated.

At a meeting of the officers of the Powow River and Saving Banks, held February 21, 1870, the following resolutions were unanimously adopted: "*Whereas*, it has pleased the great disposer of events to remove by death J. B. Webster, Esq., one of the officers of this institution; therefore *Resolved*, that in his death we mourn the loss of one whose fidelity and unwearied devotion to the responsible duties of the several offices he has filled, commencing with their organization, his strict integrity, inflexible honesty of purpose, have rendered him deserving of our implicit confidence and highest regard, and we shall ever cherish him in our memories as a safe counselor, faithful friend and upright man. *Resolved*, that we tender to his widow and family our sincere sympathy in their bereavement, and as a token of respect to his memory we will, in a body, attend his funeral. *Resolved*, that these resolutions be published in the *Villager*, and a copy furnished the family of the deceased."

Capt. Stephen Webster, the father of Jonathan B., was born December 6, 1771. He was a ship-captain, and when forty-three years of age sailed from Portsmouth, N. H., in brig "Mars," and as nothing was ever heard from him, it is supposed that he was lost at sea.

Jonathan B. was the oldest in a family of five children, and was born at Amesbury Ferry February 23, 1799. His mother's name was Sarah (Bailey) Webster. He married, for his first wife, Mary Morrill, by whom he had one child,—William B. Mary Morrill died in 1833. The son, William B., married Julia Collins, of New York (no children). William B. died November 6, 1861.

Jonathan B. married, for his second wife, Laura Linscott, who died shortly after marriage. For his third wife, he married Abby R. Ballard, daughter of Henry and Abigail (Richardson) Ballard. She was born in Brattleboro', Vt., November 2, 1818. They had three children, viz.: Abby M., born March 30, 1839; Stephen H., born March 5, 1843, and died September 5, 1848; Stephen H. (again) born July 3, 1849, and died August 25, 1853.

Abby M. married Dr. Arthur T. Brown, a native of Kingston, N. H., and who has been for twenty years a dentist of Amesbury, Mass.

#### PHILIP JONES.

Philip Jones was the son of Philip and Ruth (Page) Jones and grandson of Ezekiel, and a descendant of Hobart Jones, who settled in Amesbury some two hundred years ago. Philip was born July 3, 1810, and was the only son in a family of seven children, viz., Lydia, born November 15, 1792, and died young; Elizabeth, born March 20, 1795; Ezekiel, born March 3, 1798, and died young; Hannah, born September 2, 1801; Ruth, born October 9, 1806; Philip, born July 3, 1810; Lydia, born July 28, 1814.

Elizabeth married Hiram Neal; Hannah married John Huntington; Ruth married Josiah Challis; Philip married Ann Osgood, the adopted daughter of Richard Osgood, of Salisbury, Mass.; Lydia married Charles M. Brown.

Philip was brought up on the farm, and was considered authority in all matters pertaining to agriculture. If there was a farm to be sold, Mr. Jones was called upon to appraise it.

He was a quiet man, very methodical and a natural mechanic, did his own iron-work and shod his own horses. If he wanted a new wagon or carriage, he bought the parts and put them together; was very enterprising and always encouraged improvements, and was considered an A 1 farmer, and his word was as good as his bond.

He was a prominent member of the Society of Friends, had been selectman of the town, and was highly esteemed by all who knew him. Mr. Jones died of paralysis April 9, 1884. Mr. and Mrs. Jones had one child—Lura A. She married a Bartlett. Mrs. Bartlett died November 1, 1869.

#### REV. NATHANIEL LASELL.

Rev. Nathaniel Lasell was born in Schoharie, N. Y., February 4, 1816. He was the fourth child of Chester and Nancy (Manning) Lasell. His father was a direct descendant of Elder Brewster, and his mother of Gov. Bradford. Thus was he of Pilgrim stock. There was also a Huguenot element in the father's family. His parents moved from Scotland, Conn., to Schoharie in 1806. He had a Christian training in a devoutly Christian home, and early came into the Christian life.

His preparation for college was in the academy of his native town and in New Haven, Conn. He entered Williams College in 1838, and graduated in 1842, among the first in his class. He pursued his theological studies at Auburn, N. Y. He was licensed to preach by the Presbytery of Cayuga April 16, 1845. He supplied the Presbyterian Church in Russia, N. Y., for some time. He was ordained and installed





*Philip Jones*







*Nathaniel Linsell*





*Geo. W. Morrell*



pastor of the Congregational Church in West Stockbridge, Mass., May 4, 1850, and dismissed July 7, 1853. He was acting pastor of the Congregational Church in Amesbury, Mass., from November 6, 1853, to April 6, 1856. He was installed pastor of the First Congregational Church in Exeter, N. H., June 9, 1856, and dismissed June 12, 1859. He then removed to Amesbury, where he ever after resided. He filled all these later years, however, with ministering to several churches. He was for five years acting pastor of the Union Church, Salisbury, near his residence. Several years he supplied the First Congregational Church in West Newbury. A like service he rendered for a brief time to the church in Brentwood, N. H., and for several years to the church in Mattapoisett, Mass., preaching until within a few months of his death. After a brief sickness he died on his sixty-fourth birthday, February 4, 1880.

As a scholar Mr. Lasell took high rank. As a preacher he excelled. By his clearness of statement, and by a certain freshness and individuality of presentation, he awakened and kept the interest of his hearers, and fixed his sermons in their minds. "It was easy to remember them" is the testimony of a hearer.

As a friend he was greatly esteemed. His affectionate nature, cordial manner, his keen and kindly wit, made him beloved by the people to whom he ministered, and by a large circle of personal friends. And all was consecrated by a strong and earnest piety.

He married Mrs. Susan L. Winkley, June 25, 1856, who survives him.

#### HON. GEORGE W. MORRILL.

Hon. George W. Morrill was born on May 15, 1818, at Amesbury, Mass. His parents, Moses and Hannah Morrill, were also natives of Amesbury. His father followed the trade of ship-carpenter at various points on the Merrimac River, and when ship-building was dull he worked his farm.

The son had no other school opportunities than those furnished by the common schools of Amesbury. The old academy served as the high school of the time, and even its privileges were not long at the students' command. While still a boy he went to work in the woolen mills for a time. Farm work being distasteful to him, he felt unwilling to defer to his father's wish that he should become a farmer, and went to Boston and formally bound himself as a carpenter's apprentice when eighteen years old.

To the acquirement of his trade he applied himself with the zeal and thoroughness which always characterized his efforts.

The years of his apprenticeship taught him much more than the complete mastery of his trade. His alert mind was awake to the intellectual life of the city, and, so far as he could do so, he made opportunity to share it.

He was careful to keep informed concerning all the great men of the day, and utilized every chance he could secure to listen to their public addresses.

His taste for politics was thus directed by Quincy Adams, Webster and Choate.

In religion and philanthropy John Pierpont and Theodore Parker furnished congenial thought and stimulus.

Music provided wholesome entertainment to a boy gifted with an exquisite ear for harmony. His flute-playing and fine tenor voice enabled him to give as well as to receive musical delight.

Boston was for him happily chosen as the place in which to learn a trade. In graduating from the carpenter's bench he knew the use of other tools, as well as those of his trade. He began the life of a journeyman carpenter in Brunswick, Georgia, whither he traveled by sailing vessel from New Bedford, at the age of twenty-one. He remained in the South three years, following his trade.

While working in the town and upon neighboring plantations he had a near view of the system of negro slavery. His rigid sense of justice condemned the violation of liberty and of human rights.

He naturally affiliated in politics with the anti-slavery Whigs, and became a member of the Republican party as soon as it was formed. Returning to New England, he plied his trade at several places in the vicinity of Boston.

In 1843 he married Lydia F. Wells, who was also a native of Amesbury. As boy and girl they had been playmates; as man and woman they were to be for forty-three years loving companions and helpmeets.

In 1849, at the request of the Wason Brothers, railroad car builders, of Springfield, Mass., he moved to that city, and went to work in the car-shops. In 1851 he helped to fit up and start a car-shop in Cleveland, Ohio, and moved his family to that growing city on the Western Reserve. Besides working in the shop, he served also as its clerk and book-keeper.

His services were of such value that he became a member of the firm, and ultimately its senior partner.

For sixteen years he conducted the car-shops with success, and in 1867 retired from active business with a competency. He took high rank among the business men of Cleveland. He was respected for his unswerving integrity and his ability. He was loved and admired for his winning personality, his graceful, genial manners and his generous charities, of which only the many recipients knew. Political honors sought him, placing him in the City Council for several years.

At this time Cleveland was one of the stations of the "under-ground railroad." Runaway slaves came here to take the night boats for Detroit, where only a river separated them from Canada and freedom.

George W. Morrill was known as a man willing to help the runaways. To him consignments of such





freight were addressed, and he accordingly met the anxious blacks and stowed them safely away aboard the steamboats.

Captain Pierce, agent of the line and an ardent Democrat, was always on the dock superintending the shipment of freights. Knowing Mr. Morrill's repeated violation of the Fugitive Slave Law, he often said to him: "Morrill, if I ever see you taking negroes onto my boats, I certainly shall deliver them up." But on Mr. Morrill's approach with the blacks, the humane captain would turn his back, so that seeing the negroes board the boat was out of the question. Mr. Morrill was pre-eminently a law-abiding man, and he always gave to the nation an active and an unwavering support; but to him the Fugitive Slave Law was subordinate to a higher law, which the human conscience sanctioned and enforced.

His achievements in Cleveland brought him wealth, social position and troops of friends. Most men so circumstanced would have settled permanently amid such surroundings. With him, however, had remained a love for his native New England strong enough to induce his return thither.

By this step he willingly surrendered the certainty of acquiring great riches, as well as the opportunity of winning the political prominence which his sterling merit, business sagacity and great popularity put within easy reach. No man in the city was more loved and honored than he.

In 1867 he moved to Boston and retained a residence there a few years, during a part of which time he traveled in Europe, securing the information a practical man, with keen observation and a just judgment in making comparisons, can obtain from the study which traveling affords.

In 1873 he built his home in Amesbury, and remained there the rest of his lifetime. His love for his native place had never abated, and an ultimate return thither had been his wish and purpose. He felt a warm interest in the prosperity of the town and a pride in the great beauty of its environment.

Political preferment he never sought. It came to him as the spontaneous offer of constituents. Chosen representative to the General Court for the session of 1875-76, he served with ability and characteristic zeal.

His efforts secured to Amesbury an advantageous boundary line, when the act was passed at this session, incorporating the new town of Merrimac. He was chosen Presidential Elector in 1876, and cast his vote for the successful Republican candidate.

In 1884 he was elected to the State Senate from the Fourth Senatorial District of Essex County by a Republican majority vote without precedent. He led his opponent in every town and city in the district. His able discharge of the duties of his position was indorsed by his re-election to the Senate the following year. As chairman of three committees, that of the Treasury being one of them, he conscientiously per-

formed every duty incumbent upon him. It afforded him satisfaction, while in the Senate, to be chiefly instrumental in securing the passage of an act uniting that part of the town of Salisbury known as Salisbury Mills to the town of Amesbury. This union of the towns was, in his opinion, a business need, and as such commanded his approval and received his efficient support. He declined to be a candidate for a third election to the Senate.

George W. Morrill, in private and in public life, gave his best endeavors to whatever he undertook to do. Faithfulness, truthfulness, sincerity and earnestness characterized his every thought and effort. As a mechanic, any deviation from a straight line or a symmetrical curve offended him; as a business man, only scrupulous exactitude and correctness received his approval; as a legislator, he was independent, and only such measures as he believed to be right in principle commanded his support. It is to be regretted that he would not turn his attention earlier to public affairs. Men like him are admirably equipped to give to the administration of public office the advantage of management on business methods.

Descended from Puritan ancestors rigidly narrow in theology, he was himself a vigorous advocate of freedom in religion, as well as in civil and political affairs.

Throughout his life he looked to reason and conscience for guidance; a kind and loyal husband and a loving and indulgent father, who taught by his own daily example, that most impressive of all teachings. Handsome in person, commanding in appearance, genial in manner, generous with his wealth, and with cheery words, his winning personality was universally respected as that of an able and good man.

He assumed no virtue that he did not have. A strong man mentally and morally, he was, at all times and wherever placed, outspoken in his opinions and with the courage of his convictions.

In the early summer of 1886 his health was impaired by a severe attack of erysipelas, and on December 10th of that year he passed away from earth suddenly in the sixty-ninth year of his age. No higher eulogium could be spoken of any man than that pronounced upon him by an old neighbor, who said: "I have known George W. Morrill for sixty years. In all that time he never did a dishonorable thing. He could not entertain a dishonorable thought."

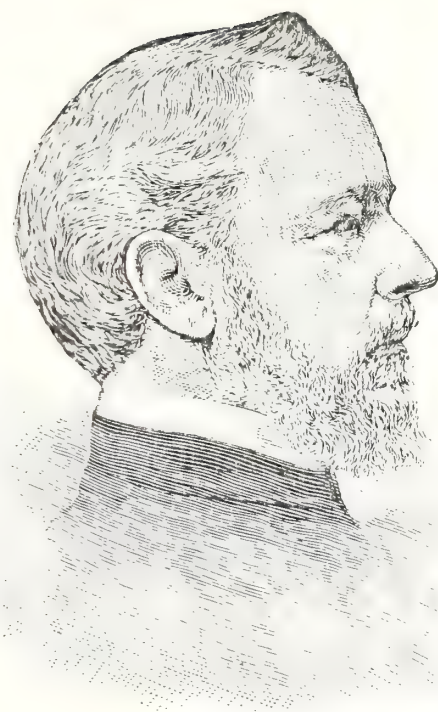
---

REV. D. GORDON ESTES, D.D.

Rev. D. Gordon, Estes, D.D., was born in Malden, Mass., and received his early education at the seminary in Andover, and was a graduate of Yale of the class of 1839. He was for a short time junior partner of an old-established mercantile house in Boston.

He entered the middle class of the "General Theological Seminary" at New York, and in 1845 was ordained priest of the Protestant Episcopal Church





*D. Gordon Estes:*







*W. D. F. Steere*



by the Rt. Rev. Manton Eastburn, D.D., in St. Peter's, Salem. His first parish was St. James' Church, Amesbury, Mass. In 1847, during a visit to Europe, he was matriculated as a member of the Halle Wittenberg University, and attended lectures of Professors Rœdiger and Tholuck. In 1848 he was present at the forcing of the Ducal Bastille of Venice; also in Naples during their attempt at revolution; and in Paris at the time of the memorable "Four Days of June."

On account of a bronchial trouble, he passed two winters in Florida, one in New Orleans, and resided several years in the West as rector of St. Paul's Church, St. Louis; Christ Church, Boonville; and Christ Church, Lexington, Mo., in the diocese of Bishop Hawks. From St. Paul's College, Missouri, with his dear friend and classmate, William B. Corby, he received the honorary degree of D.D.

He returned to Amesbury and to his first parish, which he was again obliged to leave, and passed a winter in St. Croix, West Indies, but never recovered his health, and, after great suffering, died of Bright's disease at his residence at Hillside, Amesbury.

He was a man of gentle dignity, high culture, amiable and affable, a dear lover of a good joke, courteous, hospitable and generous. These qualities made him universally beloved.

He married Hannah M., youngest daughter of Paul Moody, of Lowell.

M. D. F. STEERE.

Among the business men who have made their home in Amesbury, few have given such evidence of enterprise, perseverance and skill as the subject of this notice. Born in Pascoag, R. I., in 1828, he, like many New England boys, was compelled to seek the means of a livelihood at an early age. To him the battle of life was earnest; but with a mind trained to industry, he entered a woolen-mill, learning every department of the business, with the hidden resolution to win success. It was thus he shaped his future years for the good fortune which followed honest endeavor. Advancing step by step, he soon became the owner of a mill in Uxbridge and was engaged in the manufacture of woolen goods in that town, when he received a call to take charge of the Amesbury Woolen Company's mills, one of the largest concerns at that time in New England, and receiving a salary at one period larger than that paid to the President of the United States. From 1858, for nearly twenty-five years, Mr. Steere was employed as the agent of the mills in this town, covering a period of their greatest prosperity. During his agency, the working capacity of the company was doubled by the building of several of its largest factories, the water-power was vastly increased by the erection of a new and large reservoir for the storage of water, and the three companies which did business on the Powow River

were consolidated into one by purchase, over which he was the sole agent. In 1882 Mr. Steere resigned his agency to seek needed rest. In 1883-84 he was called to represent the First District of Essex in the Legislature, receiving nearly a unanimous vote. The same year he visited Europe in company with the late John Gardner, then treasurer of the Amesbury Mills. But one born to such active business could not long continue unemployed, and he soon after became a partner in the large carriage firm of Biddle & Smart, and carries into that industry the same energy of character. To him the town is in part indebted for the building of the fine opera-house which now adorns Main Street.

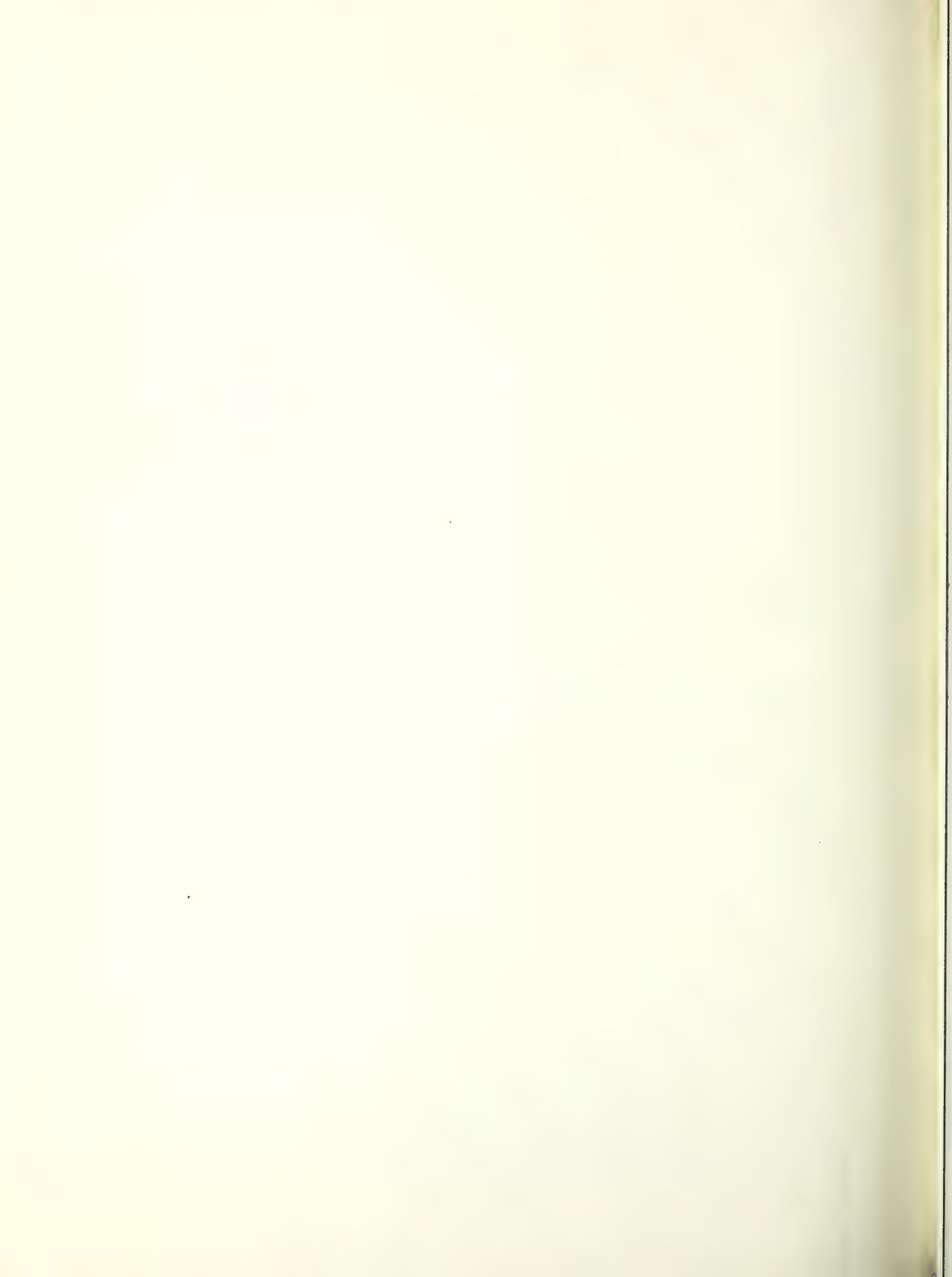
## CHAPTER CXXVI.

### MERRIMAC.

BY WILLIAM T. DAVIS.

THE town of Merrimac constituted the West Parish of Amesbury until its incorporation as a separate municipality, on the 11th of April, 1876. It is situated on the north side of the river from which it derives its name, and covers a territory about three miles long by two and a half miles wide, bounded on its four sides by the Merrimac River, the city of Haverhill, the New Hampshire line and the parent town of Amesbury. It is described in the act of incorporation as "all the territory now within the town of Amesbury, in the County of Essex, comprised within the following limits, that is to say, beginning at a point on the Merrimac River at the middle of the mouth of Pressey's Creek (so called); thence running northerly in a straight line to the most northerly point of land on the southerly side of Kimball's Pond; thence northwesterly in a straight line to a point on the town line, dividing Amesbury and Newton, N. H., 2050 feet west from the Monument on the State line, dividing Massachusetts and New Hampshire, situated on a road leading from Newton to Amesbury, and near the house of Arthur Robertshaw; thence westerly, southwesterly and southeasterly as the present division lines run between the said town of Newton, City of Haverhill and said town of Amesbury to a point on the Merrimac River; thence easterly by the Merrimac River to the point of beginning."

This territory is beautifully diversified by hill, valley and plain, and shares largely the picturesque qualities for which both shores of the Merrimac River are distinguished. On the south and west extends a range of hills known as "Long" and "Red Oak," which are easy of access and from which interesting views may be obtained of the undulating slopes through which, like a silver thread, the river





stretches from the mountains to the sea. From these points of view glimpses may be obtained, across and beyond the fields and forests nearer at hand, of church-spires along the New Hampshire line, while on the west "Birch Meadow," with its scattered farm-houses, and the summit of "Brandy Brow," the meeting-place of four towns and two States, catch the eye, and on the south and east and northeast the West Newbury highlands and "Bear Hill" complete the panorama of which the villages of Merrimac, the subject of this sketch, are the central and salient points. Near by is the birth-place of Whittier, within the limits of Haverhill, but near the Merrimac line, and bounded by the landscape which, if it did not create the poet, at least kindled his imagination and inspired his pen.

The date of the settlement of the West Parish of Amesbury cannot be definitely fixed. It is known, however, that Edward Cottle was located in that section at a very early period, and that Samuel Foot and John Pressey were there respectively in 1659 and 1664. Henry Tuxbury, Thomas Nichols, John Grimpsen and Thomas Sargent were all settled there before 1670, while the Allens and Fowlers and Morses were to be found there as early as the year 1700. What is now Merrimac was called Jamaco at an early date, and for a century or more it continued to bear that name. As the fear of Indian raids grew less year by year, the eagerness for landed possessions which characterized the settlers of New England pushed the wave of population farther and farther into outlying districts, and under the influence of this wave Jamaco increased gradually in population, adding yearly new families and new names to the settlement. The Davis, Kelly and Clement families made their appearance early in the eighteenth century, and about the year 1722 Abraham Merrill removed to Jamaco from Newbury with his family, including three sons,—Abraham, Isaac and Jacob,—whose descendants have until recently been numerous within its limits.

At an earlier date John Martin and Joseph Peaslee became settlers, the latter locating himself in Newton, then within the Salisbury grant, and finally in Haverhill, where he died. Joseph Lankester, Samuel Hadley and the families of Blaisdell and Hoyt were also there at an early date, and as early as 1666 a grant of land was made to Thomas Harvey. A Thomas Harvey was a ship carpenter and built vessels at Jamaco, on land granted to him by the town, in 1710. He was chosen a deputy in 1690, '94, '97, '99, 1706, '08, '13 and '14. At various times in the history of this district the names of Chase and Kendrick also appear and many others, some of which have been long extinct.

As early as 1715 the population of the West District had so far increased as to warrant the desire for a meeting-house within its limits. Indeed, a vote, afterwards reconsidered, was passed by the town in that year to build a house in that district. In 1722

the town agreed definitely to the plan and a meeting-house was at once erected. The West Parish agreed to pay the salary of their minister, and thus a separation of the two parishes was accomplished, which was confirmed by the General Court in 1725. On the 19th of May, 1726, the new church was organized and the church covenant was signed. Previous to the organization of the church the parish, at a meeting held on the 6th of July, 1725, voted to invite Joseph Parsons to settle as its minister. After some negotiations with Mr. Parsons he declined the invitation, and was afterwards ordained, on the 8th of June, 1726, as the third pastor of the church in Bradford, where he died, May 4, 1765.

At a meeting of the parish, held on the 5th of November, 1725, a committee of two was appointed to visit Mr. Hale, of Boxford, or Mr. Samuel Coffin or Mr. Edmund March, of Newbury, or Mr. Wingate, of "Hamtown," and if possible secure one of them to preach three or four Sabbaths. On the 2d of December, 1725, the committee reported that they had secured Mr. Wingate, and the parish appointed a committee, consisting of Captains Foot and Stephens and Mr. John Blaisdell, to confer with Mr. Wingate concerning an engagement to "preach for a considerable time."

At a meeting held on the 3d of January, 1726, it was unanimously voted "to observe a day of fasting for to seek the blessing of heaven, and Thursday y<sup>e</sup> 20th of January instant, was the day appointed, and Mr. Wells, of the First church, Mr. Cushing, of Salisbury, and Mr. Cooken, of Hampton, N. H., were chosen to carry on the work of a fast & to advise who to call to y<sup>e</sup> work of ministry." As a result of the advice sought, Mr. Wingate was invited to permanently settle with a salary of "four score pound a year for the first two years and afterward a hundred a year, and the use of the Pasedg." It was also agreed to give him thirty cords of wood each year, and that "in case his family should increase, there should be an increase of salary; and in case he should settle in the Precinct and provide for himself a horse and a dwelling-place, he should receive fifty pounds a year for the first four years over and above his fixed salary."

Mr. Wingate accepted the invitation, and it was voted "to observe the 19th of May as a day of fasting and specially seeking the blessing of Heaven upon the anticipated ordination." The fast was held as proposed, and Rev. Mr. Wells, of Amesbury, Rev. Mr. Cushing, of Salisbury East Parish, Rev. Mr. Parsons, of Salisbury West Parish, Rev. Mr. Tufts, of Newbury West Parish, and Rev. Mr. Brown, of Haverhill, were present. On the same day, as has already been stated, the church was organized and the Confession of Faith, consisting of fifteen articles, was made and acknowledged, and Rev. Paine Wingate, John Foot, Thomas Fowler, Abraham Merrill, Thomas Colby, Titus Wells, Valentine Rowell, Samuel





Stevens, Joseph Sargent, Joseph Bartlett, Philip Rowell, William Moulton, Tappan Ordway, John Bladell and Abraham Merrill, Jr. signed the following church covenant:

"Forasmuch as the Lord hath accepted us sinful wretches into covenant with his Majesty, in Christ we therefore avouch the Lord to be our God, and make firm and sure covenant with his Majesty and one with another (through the grace of Christ) to give up ourselves to him; to submit to his Government and all his holy ordinances, acknowledging him for our Prophet, Priest and King; to walk before him in all things according to the rule of his Word; shunning all Atheism and Anti-Christianism with all other errors and pollutions in the worship of God. We do also bind ourselves to walk together with the Church and all the members of it in mutual love and watchfulness to the building up of each other in the faith and love of our Lord Jesus Christ; to yield obedience to his holy will and to carry on the duties of his worship in public and private according to Gospel order and institution; hereby craving help at God's hands for performance hereof we do also with ourselves give up our seed unto the Lord to be his people and to submit under the watch and discipline of this Church according to the Rules of Christ."

The church having concurred in the invitation to Mr. Wingate to settle, the ordination took place on the 15th of June, 1726. Rev. Mr. Wells, of Amesbury, offered an introductory prayer; Rev. Mr. Gooker, of Hampton, N. H., preached the sermon from John 20: 15; Rev. Mr. Tufts, of Newbury, made the ordaining prayer; Rev. Mr. Cushing, of Salisbury, gave the charge; and Rev. Mr. Parsons, of Salisbury, the right hand of fellowship. On the 13th of July Abraham Merrill and Joseph Colby were chosen deacons, and the church organization was complete.

The following list of persons included in the first rate for the minister's salary will convey a pretty accurate idea of the extent and character of the population of Jannaco in 1726:

Abraham Merrill.	Joseph Moody.
Abner Whittier.	John Lanckester.
Benjamin Hatley.	Philip Sargent.
Cutting Peavor.	Thomas Beedle, Jr.
David Sargent.	Thomas Rowell.
Ephraim Pemberton.	John Foot, Jr.
Jacob Hoyt.	Timothy Sargent.
Jonathan Colby.	James Ordway.
Jonathan Sargent.	Timothy Colby.
John Pressey.	Jonathan Clement
Thomas Davis.	Samuel Pease.
John Martin.	John Ordway.
Samuel Hatley, Jr.	John Harvey.
Nathaniel Merrill.	Jonah Fowler.
Joseph Hatley.	Jacob Sargent, Jr.
George Hatley.	William Sargent, Jr.
Henry Dow.	David Coops.
Michah Lanckester.	Jonathan Nichols.
William Pressey.	Henry Trussell.
Abraham Colby.	Joseph Pregett.
Benny Tucker.	Joseph Collins.
Joseph Bartlett.	Nathaniel Davies.
Charles Sargent, Jr.	Jedediah Titcomb.
Daniel Hoyt.	Jeremiah Fowler.
Elias Colby.	William Moulton.
Eben Abbott.	John Whittier.
Philip Rowell.	Samuel Foot.
Joseph Sargent.	Joseph Cutrier.
Philip Sargent, Jr.	John Davies.
Nehemiah Heath.	Samuel Stevens.
Samuel Martin.	Joseph Harvey.
Ezra Tucker.	John Bartlett, Sr.
Richard Goodwin.	Joseph Shourt.
Samuel Silver.	William Harvey.

Jonathan Clark.	William Fowler.
John Hoyt.	Titus Wells.
Thomas Dow.	Jonathan Ferrin.
John Sargent.	Isaac Rogers.
Jacob Pressey.	Ezekiel Colby.
Abner Brown.	Samuel Juel.
Benjamin Tucker.	Henry Trussell, Jr.
Charles Allen.	Philip Col.
Daniel Sargent.	Thomas Beedle.
Ephraim Davies.	Thomas Colby.
Francis Davies.	Jonathan Kelley.
Timothy Hoyt.	James Dow.
Samuel Davies.	Samuel Colby, Jr.
Samuel Hunt.	Nathaniel Tucker.
John Straw.	Israel Young.
John Hunt.	Valentine Rowell.
William Davies.	Jonathan Davies.
Samuel Hatley.	Thomas Bartlett.
Richard Kelley.	Thomas Fowler.
Isaac Colby.	Andrew Rowen.
Joseph Lanckester.	Joseph Davis.
Thomas Stevens, Jr.	John Fowler.
John Nichols.	Capt. John Foot.
Robert Ring.	Robert Beedle.
John Pressey.	John Bartlett, Jr.
Jacob Sargent.	Thomas Wells.
John Bladell.	Charles Sargent.
Joseph Davies, Jr.	

Mr. Wingate's ministry was a long and eminently successful one. It continued nearly sixty years, and terminated only with his life on the 19th of February, 1786. He was born in Hampton, N. H., in June, 1703, and was the son of Joshua Wingate, of that town. He graduated at Harvard in 1723, and must have been settled in Amesbury soon after the close of his theological studies. His wife was Mary Balch, and his children were Paine, who married Eunice Pickering; Mary, who married Ephraim Elliot; Betsey, who married a Bartlett; Sarah, who married Samuel Bradley; John, who married two wives,—a Webster and a Kimball; Joshua, who married Hannah Carr; Abigail, who married an Ingalls; and Joseph, who married Judith Carr. Paine Wingate, the oldest child, graduated at Harvard in 1759, and after preaching several years in Hampton, N. H., became a judge of the Supreme Court of New Hampshire, and Representative and Senator from that State in the United States Congress. He died at Stratham, N. H., March 7, 1838, in the ninety-ninth year of his age. His father, the Rev. Paine Wingate, lies buried in the cemetery at Merrimac, and the following inscription is cut on his monument:

"In memory of

REV. PAINE WINGATE,

First Pastor of the Church in Amesbury West Parish. In his meekness and moderation unaffected Piety and Benevolence were eminently conspicuous. The People of his charge were for a long series of years edified by his preaching and animated to the practice of pure Religion by his example. Having faithfully discharged the duties of his ministerial office near sixty years, beloved and honored by those who best knew him, he departed this life in cheerful expectation of a better on the 19th of Feb., 1786, Etat 83."

Mrs. Wingate survived her husband less than two years, and having died on the 9th of October, 1787, at the age of eighty-one, was buried by his side. As her epitaph states, the monument over her grave was



erected "to record the virtues of the dead and the gratitude of the living."

In 1787 a new meeting-house was erected, and in the next year the church, with the concurrence of the parish, invited Rev. Francis Welch to settle, offering him the use of the parsonage, one hundred pounds as a settlement and a yearly salary of eighty pounds. The invitation was accepted, and on the 3d of June, 1789, the ordination took place, at which Rev. Mr. Webster, of Salisbury; Rev. Mr. Ames, of Newton; Rev. Mr. Noyes, of Southampton; Rev. Mr. Merrill, of Plaistow; Rev. Mr. Cummings, of Billerica; Rev. Mr. Adams and Rev. Mr. Shaw, of Haverhill; Rev. Mr. Peabody, of Atkinson; Rev. Mr. Tappan and Rev. Mr. Kimball, of Newbury; and Rev. Mr. Dutch and Rev. Mr. Allen, of Bradford, constituted the ordaining council. Mr. Cummings offered the introductory prayer, Mr. Merrill preached the sermon from Phil. 1: 8, Mr. Noyes made the ordaining prayer, Mr. Webster gave the charge, Mr. Adams the right hand of fellowship and Mr. Peabody made the concluding prayer.

The ministry of Mr. Welch was a short one, but long enough to impress the people of his charge with his dignity and uprightness of character, with the example of his Christian life, with his eminent ability and eloquence, and to win their warmest affection. He died December 15, 1793, and the slab covering his grave in the cemetery in Merrimac bears the following inscription:

"This Monument  
is sacred to the dust and memory of the  
REV. FRANCIS WELCH,

son of Joseph Welch, Esq., of Plaistow, N. H., who suddenly departed this life December 15, 1793, in the twenty-eighth year of his age and fifth of his ministry; within a year of his nuptial contract with Miss Priscilla Adams, who remains with an infant to mourn the loss of a tender and affectionate husband.

"Through the snares and dangers of life Reason uncontrouled held the Empire of his breast. Religion was his polar star. Modest without diffidence, steadfast without bigotry and devout without superstition, he well combined the most important qualifications for the ministerial office, and discharged it with faithfulness, reputation and success. Taken from prospects of extensive usefulness, and leaving an evidence of his worth in the universal lamentation of his acquaintance, he has led the way to those blessed mansions which he earnestly labored to fill with inhabitants."

Mr. Welch, as his gravestone states, was the son of Joseph Welch, of Plaistow; and his mother's maiden-name was Hannah Chase. He graduated at Harvard in 1787, in the class with John Quincy Adams, Abiel Abbot, William Crouch, Thaddeus Mason Harris, James Lloyd, Samuel Putnam and others who lived to win a national reputation. His parents were Baptists, and though his departure from ancestral faith was a source of domestic anxiety for a time, his father, at a later day, united with a Congregational Church; and a younger brother followed him into the Congregational ministry. He pursued his theological studies with Rev. Giles Merrill, of Plaistow, and married, December 6, 1792, Priscilla, daughter of

Rev. Phineas Adams, of the West Church in Haverhill.

In May, 1794, a call was extended to Rev. Jonathan Brown, which was declined, and in November in the same year Rev. David Smith was invited, and accepted, and on the 17th of January, 1795, Mr. Smith was ordained. The council consisted of the following ministers: Noyes, of Southampton, N. H.; Dana and Frisbie, of Ipswich; Merrill, of Plaistow, N. H.; Adams, of Haverhill; Peabody, of Atkinson, N. H.; Allen, of Bradford; Eaton, of Boxford; Kelley, of Hampstead, N. H.; and Dutch, of Bradford; and Mr. Peabody offered the introductory prayer. Mr. Dana preached the sermon from 1 Thess. ii: 5-8, Mr. Merrill made the ordaining prayer, Mr. Noyes gave the charge, Mr. Adams the right hand of fellowship and Mr. Frisbie made the concluding prayer.

At the end of a little over five years from the settlement of Mr. Smith, an irreconcilable difficulty grew up between him and the parish, in which at first the church took no part, except to oppose the efforts of the parish to bring about his dismissal. His relations with the parish became at last, however, so unpleasant that a council was called, the result of which was the dismissal of Mr. Smith, on the 22d of May, in the year 1800.

Mr. Smith was the son of Col. Isaac and Eunice (Adams) Smith, and was born in Ipswich, Mass., July 23, 1761. He graduated at Harvard in 1790, and studied theology with his pastor, Rev. Joseph Dana. After leaving Amesbury, he was employed for a time, by the Missionary Society, as a traveling preacher in Western New York, and after residences in Haverhill, and in Bath, N. H., he finally fixed his home in Portland, Me., where he died May 19, 1837. He was married twice—first, to the widow of his predecessor in the Amesbury pulpit, Rev. Francis Welch, to whom he was married September 27, 1795, and second to a lady of Portland, by the name of Cutler. His children, all by his first wife, were John Adams, born in Amesbury, December 20, 1797; David, born in Amesbury, July 3, 1799; William Perkins, born in Haverhill, June 10, 1801; Mary, born in Haverhill, July 23, 1803; Elizabeth, born in Haverhill, January 17, 1805; Charles Henry, born in Bath, N. H., December 12, 1809; and Myra Adams, born in Bath, N. H., September 21, 1812.

After the dismissal of Mr. Smith the church remained without a pastor until June 6, 1804, when Rev. Samuel Mead, of Danvers, was installed. The council at his installation consisted of Rev. Messrs. Hull, of Amesbury; Wadsworth, of Danvers; Kelley, of Hampstead, N. H.; Dutch, of Bradford; Tompkins, of Haverhill; Woods, of Newbury; and Rev. Mr. Hull offered the introductory prayer, Mr. Wadsworth preached the sermon from 1 Tim. iv: 6, Mr. Kelley made the installing prayer, Mr. Dutch gave the charge, Mr. Tompkins the right hand of fellowship and Mr. Woods made the concluding prayer.





The ministry of Mr. Mead continued until his death, which occurred on the 28th of March, 1818. He was the son of Zaccheus and Sarah (Barlow) Mead, and was born in Rochester, Mass., in 1766. He graduated at Harvard in 1787, and after pursuing for a short time the study of medicine, prepared himself for the ministry, and was ordained pastor of a church in Danvers before he was called to Amesbury. He married, at Rochester, January 1, 1797, Susannah, daughter of Major Earl Clapp, of Rochester, and afterwards of Woburn, who, after the death of her husband, removed to Woburn. Mr. Mead had eight children,—Samuel Barlow, born December 27, 1797; Jeremiah Clapp, March 4, 1800; Susan Clapp and Sarah Barlow, twins, November 15, 1802; Anna Barstow, December 5, 1804; Abby, March 6, 1806; Mary, April 16, 1809; and Jeremiah Clapp again, September 19, 1812.

After the death of Mr. Mead the church was again without a pastor, and this time for a period of eight and a half years. During a large part of the time Rev. Moses Welch, of Plaistow, a brother of the second pastor, supplied the pulpit, having been ordained as an evangelist on the 7th of July, 1819. In that year he was engaged for a year's supply, and the engagement was renewed annually in the four succeeding years. In 1824 he was invited to continue the supply for another year, but declined, and was subsequently installed over the church in Plaistow, his native town, December 26, 1826, and died in Wenham, February 17, 1831.

The next pastor was Rev. P. S. Eaton, who was ordained September 20, 1826. At his ordination Rev. Mr. Welch offered the introductory prayer; Rev. Dr. Eaton, the father of the pastor, preached the sermon from 1 Cor. 3:6; Rev. Mr. Dodge made the ordaining prayer; Rev. Mr. Kelley, of Hampstead, N. H., gave the charge; Rev. Mr. Farnsworth, of Oxford, N. H., the right hand of fellowship; Rev. Mr. Perry made the address to the people; and Rev. Mr. Sawyer the concluding prayer.

Mr. Eaton's ministry continued until May 10, 1837, when he received his dismissal.

Rev. Peter Sidney Eaton was the son of Rev. Peter and Sarah (Stone) Eaton, and was born in Boxford, October 7, 1798. His father was for fifty-seven years the pastor of the church in West Boxford, and his mother's father, Rev. Eliab Stone, was for sixty years pastor of the Congregational Church in Reading, Mass. Mr. Eaton graduated at Harvard in 1818, and from Andover Theological Seminary in 1822, and married, at Charlestown, December 4, 1828, Elizabeth Ann Leman. His children were Sidney Payson, born September 16, 1829; Henry Martyn, born June 28, 1835; and Elizabeth Ann, born May 16, 1841. He died at his home in Chelsea, March 13, 1863.

On the 1st of November, 1837, Rev. Lucius W. Clark was installed as the next pastor, and at the installation the sermon was preached by Rev. Mr.

Fitch, of Boston; the charge was given by Rev. Mr. Peckham, of Plaistow; the right hand of fellowship by Rev. Mr. Cushing, of the East Church in Haverhill; and the address to the people by Rev. Mr. Keeler, of Amesbury Mills.

During the ministry of Mr. Clark a new meeting-house was erected on the spot occupied by the present house, and dedicated September 18, 1839. Mr. Clark was dismissed at his own request, August 31, 1842, removed to Vermont, and died in Middlebury, in that State, January 2, 1854. He was the son of James and Jerusha (Morey) Clark, of Mansfield, Conn., and was born in that town July 2, 1801. He graduated at Brown University in 1825, and was licensed to preach by the Mendon Association in October, 1826. On the 9th of December, 1829, he was ordained as pastor of the church at South Wilbraham, Mass., and after three years was dismissed. He afterwards supplied a pulpit in Plymouth five years, and went from that town to Amesbury. He married, April 30, 1830, Lucy Beard Jacobs, widow of Dr. Simon Jacobs, of Oakham, Mass., and daughter of Rev. Daniel and Lucy (Beard) Tomlinson, of Oakham. Mr. Clark had two children,—Lucy Maria, born February 12, 1832, and Lucius Watson, born January 22, 1834.

The successor of Mr. Clark was Rev. Henry B. Smith, who was ordained December 29, 1842. The sermon at the ordination was preached by Rev. William Allen, D.D., of Northampton; the ordaining prayer was made by Rev. Dr. Perry, of East Bradford; the charge was given by Rev. Jonathan F. Stearns, of Newburyport; the right hand of fellowship by Rev. Edward A. Lawrence, of Haverhill; and the address to the people by Rev. Dr. L. Withington, of Newbury. Mr. Smith's ministry continued until September 29, 1847, when he was dismissed to accept a professorship in Amherst College. Mr. Smith was the son of Henry Arixene (Southgate) Smith, and was born in Portland, Me., November 21, 1815. He graduated at Bowdoin College in 1834, and immediately after served as tutor in the college, studied theology at Andover and Bangor, and spent a year or two in professional preparation at Halle and Berlin, in Europe. After leaving Amesbury he was professor of mental and moral philosophy in Amherst College from 1847 to 1850, and professor of ecclesiastical history in the Union Theological Seminary of New York from 1850 to 1854, when he became professor of systematic theology in the same institution, and died in New York February 7, 1877. He married, January 5, 1843, Elizabeth L., daughter of Rev. William Allen, D.D., of Northampton, Mass., and his children were Arixene Southgate, born at Amesbury, November 2, 1843; Maria Malleville Wheelock, born at Amesbury, December 15, 1845; William Allen, born at Amherst, August 16, 1848; and Henry Goodwin, born in New York, January 8, 1860.

The next pastor was Rev. Albert Paine, who was ordained September 7, 1848, on which occasion Rev.



Henry B. Smith, of Amherst College, preached the sermon; Dr. Samuel C. Jackson, of Andover, gave the charge; Rev. D. T. Fisk, of Belleville, Newbury, the right hand of fellowship; and Rev. Dr. L. F. Dimmick, of Newburyport, the address to the people. Mr. Paine's ministry continued until April 11, 1854, when, at his own request, he was dismissed. He was the son of John and Betsey Paine, of Woodstock, Conn., where he was born, July 21, 1819. He graduated at Yale in 1841, and, after studying for a time at Andover, finished his theological course at the Auburn Seminary in 1845. He married, November 20, 1849, Sarah, daughter of Patten Sargent, of Amesbury, and had four children,—Edward Sargent, born May 3, 1851; Charles Hamilton, born March 27, 1853; William Alfred, born January 29, 1855; and Dolly Elizabeth, born October 16, 1856.

The successor of Mr. Paine was Rev. Leander Thompson, who was installed September 20, 1854, on which occasion Rev. Samuel Wolcott, of Providence, preached the sermon; Rev. Ralph Emerson, D.D., of Newburyport, made the installing prayer; Rev. Daniel Dana, D.D., of Newburyport, gave the charge; Rev. Thomas Laurie, of West Roxbury, the right hand of fellowship; and Rev. Albert Paine the address to the people. In 1859, during the pastorate of Mr. Thompson, the meeting-house built in 1839, being found too small, was sold and removed to give place to the present house of worship, which was at once erected and dedicated January 12, 1860. The old house was after its removal used for a time for public purposes.

The ministry of Mr. Thompson continued until his dismissal, May 2, 1867. He was the son of Charles and Mary (Wyman) Thompson and was born in Woburn, Mass., March 7, 1812. He fitted for college at Warren Academy in Woburn, and graduated at Amherst in 1835. He pursued his theological studies at the Andover Theological Seminary, from which he graduated in 1838, and was licensed to preach by the Andover Association, April 10, 1838. He was ordained as an evangelist at Woburn November 30, 1838, and after supplying the pulpit at Granby, Mass., for about a year, sailed from Boston for Syria as a missionary, January 24, 1840. After a protracted and severe illness he returned home in 1843 and was installed as pastor of the South Church in South Hadley, Mass., December 13th of that year. He was dismissed from his pastorate at his own request August 28, 1850, and from that time until his settlement at Amesbury was precluded by ill health from engaging to any great extent in the labors of a ministry. After leaving West Amesbury he supplied for one year the pulpit of the Congregational Church in Wolfboro', N. H., the native town of his wife, and for three or four years the Congregational pulpit in Woburn, his own native town. During the last thirteen years he has been obliged, on account of the state of his health, to retire from the pulpit altogether. He has made his native town and the house in which he was born his

home and devoted himself largely to literary pursuits, chiefly of an historical character.

Mr. Thompson married, November 6, 1839, Ann Eliza, daughter of Samuel and Mary (Clark) Avery of Wolfboro', N. H., and had six children,—Charles Henry, born in Jerusalem September 27, 1840; Edwin Wheelock, born in Beirut December 13, 1841; Mary Avery, born in South Hadley March 25, 1844; Everett Augustine, March 28, 1847; Ann Eliza, October 29, 1848; and Samuel Avery, born in Wolfboro' October 16, 1850.

On the 15th of October, 1868, Rev. Lewis Gregory was ordained as the successor of Mr. Thompson, and was dismissed October 11, 1875. On the 7th of September, 1876, Rev. W. H. Hubbard was installed and was dismissed May 29, 1883. Thomas M. Miles was installed January 17, 1884, and is the present pastor of the church. In 1879 the name of the society was changed from the Second Congregational Church in Amesbury to the First Orthodox Congregational Society of Merrimac, and now bears that name. The meeting-house was also remodeled and rededicated January 1, 1879.

The history of the Congregational Church has been awarded a large space in this narrative as it was the point round which the population gradually crystallized which has now become the town of Merrimac. Indeed, the population and the church were identical, and no history of the town, though its incorporation was so recent, would be complete without a description of the gradual evolution of a municipality from its germ in the church and parish.

Until 1836 the Congregational Society was the only religious organization within the limits of what is now Merrimac. In that year the Universalists built a meeting-house, and in the next year, 1837, organized a society. Their first pastor was the Rev. Elbridge G. Brooks, who began his pastorate in 1837 and remained about eighteen months. He was followed by Rev. J. S. Barry in 1839, and Rev. J. J. Locke in 1841, who preached until 1843, when he was succeeded by Rev. George G. Strickland. The pastorate of Mr. Strickland continued five years, during which he married Ruth, the eldest daughter of Jonathan B. Sargent, a leading member of the society.

Mr. Strickland was followed in 1849 by Rev. L. Howe, who preached one year, and was succeeded in 1851 by Rev. H. P. Cutting. Mr. Cutting was followed in 1852 by Rev. J. Davenport, who served about three and a half years, and was succeeded in 1856 by Rev. William P. Colby, and in 1858 by Rev. Calvin Damon. The pastorate of Mr. Damon continued eight years, and in 1868 Rev. Wm. F. Potter became the pastor, and served two years; Rev. W. R. Wright followed in 1871, preaching one year; Rev. W. D. Corkin in 1874, who preached two years; and Rev. Henry Jewell in 1880, after a supply of the pulpit for several years by students of divinity. Mr. Jewell occupied the pulpit four years, performing





his parochial duties with earnestness and fidelity, and winning the affection and respect of not only his own people, but the whole community. Rev. Anson Titus followed in 1884, who has recently dissolved his relations with the society, and left it at present without a pastor.

The Baptist Society at Merrimacport was organized at the house of Levi Williams August 25, 1849. What is now Merrimacport was then called the river village of West Amesbury, and the church in question was at first called, until 1857, the West Amesbury Baptist Church. Previous to that time, preaching had been supplied since 1847 by Rev. J. N. Chase and Rev. George Keely, of Haverhill. The public recognition of the church took place at Mechanics' Hall, September 20, 1849, at which time there were thirty-seven members, and the church was received into the Salem Baptist Association, at its meeting in Lowell, September 27, 1849. Nathaniel S. Pinkham, from Concord, N. H., was ordained as the first pastor, March 28, 1850. The sermon was preached by Rev. E. E. Cummings, of Concord, N. H.; Rev. George Keely, of Haverhill, made the ordaining prayer; and Rev. D. C. Eddy, of Lowell, gave the right hand of fellowship. The meeting-house which had been erected by the society was dedicated on the same day, Rev. Mr. Pinkham preaching the sermon.

The pastorate of Mr. Pinkham closed in 1852, and Rev. Josiah H. Tilton followed on the 21st of September in that year, who preached until May 3, 1854. On the 13th of September, 1854, Rev. S. T. Thatcher was ordained and served until July, 1857, at which time the church took the name of the South Amesbury Baptist Church, and held it until the incorporation of Merrimac in 1876, when it assumed the name of the Merrimacport Baptist Church, by which it is still known.

Rev. Charles Freeman Foster followed Mr. Pinkham, December 4, 1857, and remained until June 19, 1859. On the 2d of the following September, Rev. John Richardson became the pastor, and continued until his resignation, in 1864. Rev. James J. Peck, succeeded May 2, 1865, and resigned March 1, 1867, followed by Rev. Obediah E. Cox, August 1, 1869, who resigned July 3, 1870.

The next pastor was Rev. Jonathan E. Brown, who began his labors November 1, 1870, and resigned June 1, 1871, followed by Rev. George W. Davis, November 8, 1871, who ended his pastorate March 1, 1874. Until July, 1878, the pulpit was supplied by Rev. R. G. Farley, Rev. J. H. Cox, Rev. A. Dunn and Rev. Otis Wing. In July, 1878, Rev. J. H. Seaver became the pastor, and closed his pastorate in August, 1882. After the resignation of Mr. Seaver the pulpit was supplied by Rev. W. A. Hodgkins, of Lawrence, J. R. Haskins, of Merrimac, J. K. Chase, of South Hampton, N. H., and W. H. Cossum, of Poughkeepsie, N. Y., until January, 1886, when the present pas-

tor, Rev. J. E. Dinsmore, entered on his pastorate. Another Baptist Church was organized in the central village of what is now Merrimac April 4, 1867, with eighteen members,—seven males and eleven females,—and was recognized by an association of Baptist Churches July 3, 1867. The first sermon was preached before the new society July 14, 1867, by Rev. C. H. Corey, D.D., president of the Colver Institute, in Richmond, Virginia, from Acts 5: 38, 39. The corner-stone of a church edifice was laid with appropriate ceremonies July 13, 1869, and the church was dedicated January 12, 1870, Rev. Dr. Lorimer, of Boston, preaching the sermon. The following pastors have been settled over this church: Rev. W. H. Kling, of Baltic, Conn., from July, 1868, to January 1, 1871; Rev. E. M. Bartlett, of Bath, Me., from October, 1872, to July 1, 1876; Rev. W. H. Coffin, of Nantucket, from December 19, 1877, to January 31, 1880; Rev. R. D. Fish, of Cheshire, Mass., from April 21, 1880, to August 20, 1882; Rev. J. R. Haskins, of West Acton, Mass., from June 1, 1883, to March 23, 1884; and Rev. S. D. Ashley, of Huntington, Mass., the present pastor, from March 1, 1885.

At Merrimacport there is a Methodist Society, which was organized in 1875. On the first Sabbath in December, 1874, Rev. E. M. Dinsmore, of the New Hampshire Conference of the Methodist Episcopal Church, began to preach in Citizens' Hall, and awakened a deep interest among the people. At the next Annual Conference, in April, 1875, he was appointed preacher in charge, and on the 5th of December following a Methodist Church was organized, consisting of twelve members. Mr. Dinsmore was held in high esteem by the whole community, and under his care the church took a permanent root. He was followed in 1878 by Rev. N. C. Alger, and in 1879 by Rev. C. E. Eaton. In 1880 Rev. Charles N. Chase was appointed pastor, and continued in charge until 1883, being succeeded by Rev. F. C. Pillsbury, who remained one year. In 1884 the pulpit was supplied by students from the Boston School of Theology, and in 1885 Rev. A. R. Lunt received the appointment of the Conference, and remained two years. In 1887 Rev. William Love was assigned to the church, and is still its pastor. The church continues to worship in Citizens' Hall, and has increased its membership to thirty-six.

During the summer of 1877, Episcopal services were held for the first time in Merrimac, in Sargent's Hall, Rev. Dr. Twing, of New York, and Rev. E. L. Drown, of Newburyport, officiating. During some years after 1877 occasional services were held at private residences, under the charge of the late Rev. John S. Beers, of Natick, general missionary for the diocese of Massachusetts. Interest in the services increasing, regular semi-monthly services have been held in Coliseum Hall since the autumn, of 1886. The society has no formal organization, but is known as the Merrimac Episcopal Mission.





The Catholics of West Amesbury, now Merrimac, first held services in Mechanics' Hall in 1870. The society being a mission of the Amesbury Parish, has always been under the charge of Rev. John Brady, of Amesbury. At the time of its organization the society numbered about one hundred and fifty. It continued to hold its services in Mechanics' Hall until 1884, when its growth and prosperity warranted the erection of the church it now occupies on Green Street, to accommodate its numbers, which had increased to about three hundred and fifty.

Besides the churches, it is proper that the schools in the West Parish of Amesbury before the incorporation of Merrimac should find a place in this narrative. The education of the youth in earlier years was of a meagre and unsatisfactory character. There were scattered schools open only a small part of the year, and taught by masters hired by votes of the town. The first School Board in Amesbury was chosen in 1792, and Rev. Francis Welch, Willis Patten, Mathias Hoyt and John Kelley were members from the West Parish. In 1803 there were in the parish four school districts—the "River District," receiving \$174.49, with fourteen weeks school; the "Esquire Sargent's," receiving \$181.17, with fourteen weeks; the "Birch Meadow," receiving \$135.10, with eleven weeks, and the "Highland," receiving \$92.55, with eight weeks. At the time of the incorporation of Merrimac, in 1876, there were within its limits eleven schools,—a high, grammar, intermediate and primary at the Centre,—a high, grammar and primary at South Amesbury (now Merrimacport), and four district schools at Birch Meadow, the Landing, Bear Hill and the Highlands. The whole number of scholars in the schools at that time was three hundred and sixty-seven. There are now fourteen schools in Merrimac—a High, Centre Grammar, Centre Intermediate, Centre First and Second Primaries, Prospect Street First and Second Primaries, Merrimacport Grammar, Merrimacport Intermediate and Primary, and the Landing, Bear Hill, Birch Meadow and Highland Schools. The whole number of scholars is four hundred and seventy-six. There are eight school-houses, the house at the Centre accommodating five schools, the house in Prospect Street two, two at Merrimacport, accommodating three, and one for each outlying school.

The High School was established in 1873, and Mr. Frank Wiggin was the first principal, continuing in charge until the spring of 1883, and followed by Prof. John A. Nichols, who served during the summer of that year. In the autumn of 1883, George F. Joyce became the principal, and still holds the position. In 1879, Ellen Gunnison was appointed assistant and continued until the summer of 1881, when she was succeeded by Helen K. Spofford who stills holds the position.

In 1873, the year of the establishment of the High

School, the Grammar School at South Amesbury (now Merrimacport) was raised to the grade of a High School, and was continued as such until 1879, when it was again made a grammar school.

The School Boards of Merrimac have been composed of the following persons:

1876. E. M. Dinsmore. O. F. Seavey, M.D. Wm. H. Hubbard.	1882. H. J. Cushing, M.D. Thomas H. Hoyt. William Chase.
1877. O. F. Seavey. C. M. Dinsmore. H. J. Cushing, M.D.	1883. Thomas H. Hoyt William Chase. M. Perry Sargent.
1878. Wm. Chase. H. J. Cushing, M.D. O. F. Seavey, M.D.	1884. William Chase. M. Perry Sargent. John W. Hobart, M.D.
1879. H. J. Cushing, M.D. Frank Wiggin. Henry Haskell.	1885. M. Perry Sargent. John W. Hobart, M.D. Thomas H. Hoyt.
1880. C. F. W. Hubbard. H. J. Cushing, M.D. Henry Haskell.	1886. John W. Hobart, M.D. Thomas H. Hoyt. Charles E. Rowell.
1881. Henry Haskell. H. J. Cushing, M.D. Thomas H. Hoyt.	1887. Thomas H. Hoyt. Charles E. Rowell. John W. Hobart, M.D.

There are other features in the history of the West Parish which may very properly be alluded to. In 1731 the West Parish established a second cemetery, having purchased land of Captain John Foot, Jr., on the plain, which was the nucleus of the present burial-ground. Another purchase was made of Captain Foot of two hundred and ten rods, for a training-field and parish uses, to "lay common forever." In 1735 an attempt was made to establish a ferry at Savage's Neck, and it was finally granted by the Quarter Court and left with the selectmen to manage.

In 1737 a way two rods wide was opened along the river bank, from the river landing to Cottle's Landing near Haverhill. This new road was given to the town by Captain John Sargent, Deacon Thomas Stevens and others. In the same year the town voted "to allow and pay to Captain Thomas Hoyt one hundred pounds of money for an open road of two rods wide through his land, wheron his son Jacob now dwells, beginning at ye northeast corner of Hannah Grant's land near his dwelling-house, and so through said Captain Hoyt's land to ye highway near ye old Fort." Thomas Hoyt lived at the Pond Hills and owned the large farm at Tucker's Hill where Moses B. Hoyt recently lived, and his sons John and Jacob lived on that farm. It is therefore probable that the road opened was the present Birch Meadow Road, to a point near the late Enoch Heath's land, where an old fort once stood. William Moulton, through whose land it was at first proposed to open a road, lived where the late Hon. William Nichols died.

In 1757, during the French War, Amesbury was required to furnish forty-three men to join the forces at Kennebec, Oswego and Crown Point. Of these, the West Parish men were probably:

John Martin.	Moses Pressey.
Robert King	Jacob Hoyt.
Samuel Colby.	Joseph Harvey



Timothy Sargent, Jr.	Philip Hunt.
Isaac Foot.	Thomas Sargent (3d).
Ephraim Sargent.	Jacob Harvey.
Bartholomew Perkins.	Trueworthy Sargent.
Joseph Buswell.	Joseph Nichols.
Captain Stephen Sargent.	James Sargent.
Thomas Clark.	Samuel Foot.
Timothy Colby.	Samuel Sargent, Jr.
Matthias Hoyt.	Thomas Stevens, Jr.
Thomas Studels.	William Williams.
Philip Sargent.	Gideon Colby.

In the same year a draft was made from the militia company in the West Parish to recruit the army under the Earl of Loudon,—including John Kelley, Joshua Sargent, Joseph Colby, Sargent Huse, Roger Colby, Thomas Williams, Stephen Sargent, Jr., Jonathan Montton, Daniel Hoyt, Jonathan Clements, Enoch Chase, Jr., Ephraim Currier, Jr., Benjamin Morse, Wells Chase, Jr., Jonathan Kelley (3d), David Currier, Enoch Nichols, Joseph Harvey, Jr., Elliot Colby, Nathan Hoyt, Joseph Dow, Jr., John Kendrick, Nehemiah Hardy and Christopher Sargent. Fort William Henry, which was their destination, surrendered to Montcalm while they were on the march, and they returned home after four days' absence. In 1878 Captain Richard Kelley, with twenty men of his company, joined in the successful expedition against Louisbourg.

In 1771 an account of the property and industrial interests of the West Parish was taken, which showed its total valuation £2261 10s. There were two hundred and seventeen acres of tillage land, and the largest amount cultivated by any one man was seven acres. Isaac Merrill had seven acres; Ensign Orlando Sargent, six; Nathaniel Davis, five; Barnabas Bradbury, four; Barzilla Colby, four; Ebenezer Farrington, four and a half; Benjamin Morse, four; Deacon Stephen Sargent, four; Thomas Sargent, Jr., four; Samuel Sargent, four; and Christopher Sargent, four. The number of acres in orchard was twenty-four, of which Isaac Merrill, with one and three-quarters acres, and Ebenezer Farrington, with one acre and a quarter, owned the largest shares. Some of the richest men were Orlando Sargent, valued in land at £36 2s. 6d.; Isaac Merrill, £47 7s. 6d.; Benjamin Morse, £31 7s. 6d.; Joseph Moody, £30 15s.; Thomas Sargent, Jr., £27 10s.; Josiah Sargent, £26 5s.; Christopher Sargent, £25 5s.; Thomas Rowell, £28 15s.; and Barnard Hoyt, £25. Isaac Merrill owned two negroes; Benjamin Morse, one; and Wells Chase, one. There were fifty-one horses, one hundred and seventeen oxen and two hundred and seventy-four cows. Isaac Merrill owned nine cows; Orlando Sargent, seven; Isaac Sargent, six; Ebenezer Farrington, six; and Barnard Hoyt, five. Jacob Harvey owned two mills on Cobler's Brook.

In 1775, after the battle of Lexington, Amesbury took immediate steps to raise volunteers for the common defense. Captain John Currier, of the East Parish, raised a company of fifty-four men, of whom about twenty belonged to the West Parish, and was in the

engagement at Bunker Hill. In this company Wells Chase was lieutenant and Timothy Silver corporal, and both were wounded. Early in 1776 twenty-six men entered the army from the town, and of these, four were from the West Parish. Soon after, fifteen more enlisted, and seven of these were West Parish men. In September of that year ten more men joined the army at Fairfield from the parish, and Wells Chase carted their baggage. Before the end of the year nine more soldiers were paid a bounty of thirty-six dollars each and enlisted, and during the year 1777 repeated calls for men were made, to which Jamaco always responded. In 1780 paper money had depreciated to such an extent that at a special town-meeting the sum of forty-eight thousand four hundred pounds was raised for the town's use. A call had been made for a supply of ten thousand three hundred and seventy pounds of beef, and Ezra Jewell and Seth Kendrick were appointed to procure it, and sixteen thousand pounds was raised to pay for it.

In 1782, the last year of the war, the number of polls in the East Parish was two hundred and thirty-one, and in the West, one hundred and sixty-three. In the former the value of estates was £43,859 3s. and in the latter £42,470 8s.

In Shay's Rebellion, which occurred in 1786, a call was made on Amesbury for men, and those who reported from the West Parish were Jacob Sargent, Robert Sargent, Moses Sargent and Jacob Hoyt.

In 1808 two prominent men in the West Parish died, Capt. Robert Sargent and Col. Isaac Whittier, both at the river. The former was born in 1716, and was in his ninety-second year. He served as selectman in 1758 and 1769, and held a military commission for some years. He died on the 22d of January. The latter died on the 10th of February, at the age of fifty-three years. He served six years on the Board of Selectmen, and was its chairman. He was a military man and held a commission as colonel.

On the 23d of April, 1809, Dr. Nathan Huse died, at the age of ninety-two years. He was a native of West Newbury, and at the age of twenty-two settled at the Highlands. For about seventy years he practiced in his profession, and always held the respect and affection of the scattered community in which he lived. In 1813, Capt. Mathias Hoyt died. He had been a prominent man, serving during the Revolution on the Committee of Correspondence and Safety, and afterwards for several years on the Board of Selectmen. At one time he kept a tavern where the late Joseph W. Sargent lived, but removed to the Highlands, where he died. In 1816, Deacon Willis Patten died, on the 12th of September. He lived at the river and was a prominent man in that part of the town. In this year James Chase began the manufacture of earthenware at the river, in which he continued until his death, in 1858, when his son Phineas assumed the business.

Since the incorporation of the town the death has





occurred of Colonel Joshua Colby, one of its most prominent citizens. He was born in West Amesbury June 25, 1795, and died in Merrimac August 31, 1881. He occupied many positions of trust in his native town, serving as selectman of Amesbury at various times between 1830 and 1860. He was Representative in the Legislature three years, between 1830 and 1840, and a member of the Executive Council in 1843, associated with Governor Morton. He was for forty years a director of the Powow River Bank of Amesbury, and acquired by his high character the esteem of his fellow-townsmen, and a large influence in their public affairs.

In 1824 a post-office was established at West Amesbury, and Edmund Sargent was appointed postmaster. The present postmaster is George S. Prescott, who was appointed by the present administration at the expiration of the term of George E. Ricker. In 1825, Major Thomas Hoyt died, on the 14th of January. He was a son of Capt. Matthias Hoyt, and served for a number of years both as selectman and Representative to the General Court.

In 1827 the ferry at Patten's Creek was rented to Col. Stephen Bailey for five years, at one dollar per year, and this was the last known transaction concerning ferries on the river. On the 10th of November 1830, Christopher Sargent died, at the age of ninety years. He was the son of Moses and Sarah Sargent, and was born May 18, 1740. He held the office of selectman thirteen years, was Representative to the General Court fourteen years, and town clerk nine years. He lived on the homestead, where his grandson Moses now resides.

In 1848, Thomas T. Merrill, Stephen Patten, Jonathan B. Sargent and their associates were incorporated, with a capital of fifty thousand dollars, under the name of the West Amesbury Manufacturing Company, for the manufacture of carriages and doors and blinds. The first meeting of the company was held June 1, 1848, and Joshua Colby, Stephen Patten, Jonathan B. Sargent, Alfred E. Goodwin and Thomas T. Merrill were chosen directors, and the capital was fixed at eight thousand dollars. Alfred E. Goodwin was chosen treasurer, and on the 10th of June Jonathan B. Sargent was chosen president by the directors. Thomas T. Merrill was appointed manufacturing agent, and held the position until his death, in 1871. The company was engaged exclusively in the manufacture of carriage wheels until they added that of carriage gears, under the charge of John S. Foster. The company has carried on an extensive business, increasing its capital stock until it now amounts to forty thousand two hundred and fifty dollars. Its present officers are Frederick Nichols president, S. S. Blodgett treasurer, and M. S. Gibbs manufacturing agent.

In 1850 two fire-engines were bought by the town—one for South Amesbury and one for West Amesbury. In October of the year previous the house of William

Chase, at the river, had been burned, and the town became alarmed at its want of fire apparatus.

The present Fire Department of Merrimac was organized in 1884, and is now under the direction of Edward H. Sargent, chief engineer; H. S. Stevens, first assistant; and Albert Parker, second assistant. The apparatus of the department consists of one steamer, "Niagara," third size, built in Manchester, N. H., in 1883, with twenty men—and W. H. Blodgett, engineer; one Howard & Davis hand-engine, first class, built in 1850, with thirty men; one Gleason & Bailey hand-engine, first class, with thirty men; one hook-and-ladder truck, with fifteen men; two thousand feet of hose, and two engine-houses, one at the Centre and one at Merrimacport.

In 1851 several new streets were accepted by the town, one from near the land of Humphrey Nichols to the wheel factory at Cobler's Brook, one near the residence of William H. Haskell and one at the River Village from the house of Ephraim Goodwin to that of Charles L. Rowell. In 1851 a new road was located from the New Hampshire line to the Merrimac River, to avoid the sharp hill at the west end of Bear Hill.

In 1857 a post-office was established at the River Village, and Ebenezer Fullington was appointed postmaster. The present postmaster is William H. Colby, who was appointed by the present administration and succeeded Charles E. Rowell. In 1859 a piece of new road was built at Patten's Creek, connecting the river road with the middle road, which was the means of discontinuing the old bridge.

In July, 1861, Capt. Joseph W. Sargent, of the West Parish, raised a company which was mustered into the United States service and formed Company E of the Fourteenth Regiment. The members of the company were,—

Benjamin C. Atkinson.	John B. Gray.
Webster Allen.	Wm. M. Hamilton.
Benjamin Baxter.	John Handley.
Richard S. Bailey.	Charles Kennett.
George Brown.	Timothy R. Leary.
Henry T. Badger.	Peter Liberty.
Lewis P. Caldwell.	Wm. F. Martins.
George W. Clark.	Henry Mcquesten.
Charles W. Carrier.	Charles E. Osgood.
William Crane.	Elbridge A. Ring.
Augustus Cunningham.	James Ross.
Warren Cowdry.	Alexander Smart.
Andrew F. Charles.	Warren Spear.
Emmons B. Christian.	Wm. G. Thompson.
Patrick O'Connell.	Elmer S. Harris.
Edward Cazier.	John Hawksworth.
Wm. L. Dorsett.	Frederick B. Kellogg.
Henry N. Dyke.	George F. Little.
John Doherty.	Charles S. Lunt.
Terence Dorsey.	Joseph Liberty.
Edwin Follansbee.	John T. Merrill.
Ezekiel Fowler.	John McNamie.
Wm. P. Foster.	Allen Osgood.
George F. Foss.	John S. Rannels.
Matthew Fitzgerald.	Gustavus D. Sargent.
Charles L. Flanders.	Nathaniel I. Spafford.
Frank E. Griswold.	Jesse M. Scott.
George W. Grant.	



During a larger part of the war the Fourteenth Regiment was stationed near Washington, and was finally changed to the Second Heavy Artillery. B. C. Atkinson was promoted to be first lieutenant May 28, 1862, and captain October 8, 1864. Henry F. Badger died of fever at Fort Albany, February 2, 1862. Lewis P. Caldwell was promoted to be second lieutenant May 28, 1862; to first lieutenant July 26, 1863, and died of wounds June 17, 1864. William L. Dorsett was promoted to sergeant and died at Annapolis, Md., December 8, 1864, from the effects of starvation in a Confederate prison. Edwin Follansbee was made corporal, and Sergeant William S. Foster became corporal. Charles L. Flanders was taken prisoner and died. William M. Hamilton became second lieutenant August 14, 1863. George F. Little became sergeant and William F. Martin became captain—was taken prisoner at Winchester and lost a leg. Charles E. Osgood became second lieutenant and was severely wounded. Allen Osgood was confined in Andersonville Prison ten months. Eldridge A. Ring was corporal and was promoted to sergeant. John S. Runnels was made quartermaster-sergeant and died September 18, 1863, at Fort Whipple. James Ross and Gustavus D. Sargent were prisoners at Andersonville. Alexander Smart became second lieutenant and William G. Thompson became second lieutenant June 18, 1862, and captain June 1, 1864, and died of wounds May 20, 1864. Capt. J. W. Sargent resigned his command December 24, 1863, on account of ill health. When his company left Washington it joined the Army of the Potomac at Petersburg, and was there engaged in the various attacks on the enemy's works. Some were wounded and several taken prisoners, and many re-enlisted and served through the war. In 1863 a draft was ordered of eighty-eight men, and thirty of these were men of the West Parish.

In February, 1864, the First National Bank of Amesbury was organized with a capital of fifty thousand dollars, and its name was changed by act of Congress December 27, 1876, to the "First National Bank of Merrimac." Its charter was renewed February 24, 1883. In June, 1864, its capital was increased to seventy-five thousand dollars; in October, 1864, to one hundred thousand dollars; in June, 1872, to one hundred and fifty thousand dollars; and in May, 1875, to two hundred thousand dollars. Its original directors were Patten Sargent, Thomas T. Merrill, John S. Poyen, Benjamin F. Sargent and William Gunnison. The present directors are William H. Haskell, president; William P. Sargent, J. A. Lancaster, John B. Judkins, Albert Sargent and Isaac B. Little. Patten Sargent was the first president, and was followed in 1871 by the present president, William H. Haskell, who had been cashier from 1864 to 1869. John L. Pearson was appointed cashier January 12, 1869, and was followed by the present incumbent, Daniel J. Poore, in May, 1874. The bank has always been well managed, and though

it has paid to its stockholders an average annual dividend of 8.45 per cent, it has a surplus of fifty thousand dollars.

The Merrimac Savings Bank was incorporated in 1871 as the Amesbury Savings Bank, and received its present name under an act of the Legislature passed in 1877. Its original officers were John S. Poyen, president; John P. Sargent, Isaac B. Little and J. B. Judkins, vice-presidents; treasurer, Wm. H. Haskell; secretary, James D. Pike; and A. E. Goodwin, Wm. Gunnison, Thomas C. Sawyer, A. B. Morse, James D. Pike, W. H. Haskell, John Cleary, Albert Sargent, M. G. Clement, J. Warren Sargent, B. F. Sargent and J. A. Lancaster, trustees. Its present officers are Wm. H. Haskell, president; Daniel J. Poore, treasurer; O. E. Little, secretary; Isaac B. Little, J. B. Judkins and John Cleary, vice-presidents; and Wm. H. Haskell, John Cleary, J. A. Lancaster, M. G. Clement, George G. Larkin, George E. Ricker, B. F. Sargent, Isaac B. Little, A. B. Morse, G. O. Goodwin, L. C. Loud, Albert Sargent, J. B. Judkins, James D. Pike, D. J. Poore and H. O. Delano, trustees. This bank has never lost a dollar, and has paid regular dividends averaging 5.04 per cent.

On the 8th of May, 1868, the West Amesbury Branch Railroad Company was incorporated with a capital of one hundred and fourteen thousand dollars. It was opened in 1872, and leased to the Boston and Maine Railroad Company for ninety-nine years from January 1, 1873.

In 1878 the street from the estate of George W. Currier to that of Mrs. Little, on the hill, was opened as a highway.

In 1876 the town of Merrimac was incorporated. It is unnecessary to recount the successive steps which led to this important event. The act of incorporation was approved by the Governor on the 11th of April, and a warrant for a town-meeting on the 20th was issued by James D. Pike and served by Thomas B. Patten for the purpose of choosing town officers. The meeting was held on Thursday, the 20th, in pursuance of the warrant, at Mechanics' Hall, and called to order by Mr. Pike, by whom the warrant had been issued. Joseph W. Sargent was chosen moderator, and Bailey Sargent town clerk. The selectmen chosen were Wm. H. Haskell, S. S. Blodgett, Alexander Smart. The selectmen, with James D. Pike and E. M. Morse added, were chosen a committee to confer with the town of Amesbury respecting a division of town property, and to adjust all matters between the two towns. At a meeting held on the 27th of April the same committee were authorized to survey and establish a line between Amesbury and Merrimac, and the selectmen were directed to draw up a code of by-laws and report at the next annual meeting.

The selectmen chosen each year since 1876 have been as follows:





1877. S. S. Blodgett. E. N. Sargent. J. S. Clement.	1882. Phineas Chase. John Cleary.
1878. Same.	1883. Same.
1879. E. N. Sargent. C. E. Rowell. C. F. Seavey.	1884. E. N. Sargent. Wm. H. Colby. J. L. Currier.
1880. E. N. Sargent. C. E. Rowell. Albert Sargent.	1885. E. M. Morse. Wm. H. Colby. J. E. Currier.
1881. E. N. Sargent. Albert Sargent. Phineas Chase.	1886. Same.
1882. Albert Sargent.	1887. E. M. Morse. C. E. Rowell. N. P. Cummings.

Before the incorporation of the town William P. Sargent, of Boston, a son of Patten Sargent and a native of West Amesbury, had promised the new town, in case of its incorporation, the gift of a town-house. Indeed, this prospective gift did much towards smoothing the way towards the formation of a new town. After the incorporation Mr. Sargent at once communicated his intention to the town, and at a meeting held on the 27th of April, 1876, the selectmen were constituted a committee to confer with him on the subject. The result was that the lot on the corner of Main and School Streets was bought and presented to the town by William H. Haskell, A. E. Goodwin, John S. Poyen, William Gunnison and Moses G. Clement, and the cornerstone of the hall was laid on the 27th of July. On the 13th of November it was dedicated under the name of "Sargent's Hall," completely finished and bearing a clock on its tower, presented by Patten Sargent, a native resident of the town. The cost of the land was about five thousand dollars, and that of the building about twenty thousand dollars. At a town-meeting held on the 27th of November, 1876, it was voted to purchase for the sum of two thousand five hundred dollars the lot of land, with the buildings thereon, owned by J. S. Poyen, northerly of the town-house, and to accept the offer from Colonel Joshua Colby to give to the town the land between the town-house and the above lot.

At a meeting held on the 21st of August, 1876, a communication from Dr. J. R. Nichols was read, offering a gift of one thousand volumes as the basis of a public library. The town accepted the gift, and, after voting to establish a public library, chose Patten Sargent, J. A. Lancaster, J. S. Poyen, William Chase, William H. Haskell and Dr. J. R. Nichols, trustees. On the 10th of May, 1877, the library was formally opened on the first floor of Sargent's Hall, a part of which it occupies, the remainder being occupied by the post-office, the National Bank and a business store. Valuable contributions have been made, from time to time, by various citizens, and in 1882 the sum of two hundred dollars was presented by A. E. Goodwin, the income from which is devoted to the purchase of books. The town also makes an annual appropriation of money for the support of the library, and at the present time its shelves contain nearly four thousand volumes.

In addition to the thanks of the town presented to William P. Sargent for his gift of the Town Hall, the selectmen were instructed in 1877 to cause a tablet to be placed in the vestibule of the building, commemorative of its donor, and in 1882 the sum of three hundred dollars was appropriated to procure his portrait. Among other gifts to the town was one made in 1883 by J. A. Lancaster of a lot of land for a cemetery.

Besides those institutions to which reference has been made, there are others in Merrimac worthy of mention. The Bethany Lodge of Masons was instituted December 30th, A. L. 5869. Its present Worthy Master is William F. Ward, and its Past Masters have been Morton B. Merrill, Frank Wiggin, Ora O. Little, Frederick M. Chase, Elbridge C. Sawyer, Alexander Smart, Ralph H. Sargent and M. Perry Sargent.

The Riverside Lodge, No. 174, of Odd Fellows was instituted December 3, 1875. On the 11th of May, 1887, the lodge dedicated a new lodge-room in the new building of J. S. Poyen & Co., and furnished it at an expense of two thousand dollars. Since its organization it has received from initiations, dues and interest \$10,421.63, and paid in sick benefits to its members twelve hundred and thirty-one dollars, in funeral benefits three hundred and fifty dollars, in relief to its members two hundred and sixteen dollars. It has at the present time one hundred and forty members, and the present Noble Grand is F. B. Follansbee.

The Colonel C. R. Mudge Post 114, of the Grand Army of the Republic, was organized December 20, 1869, under the command of Alexander Smart. Its Past Commanders have been, besides Captain Smart, M. B. Townsend, R. G. W. Foster, Ezra Hale, D. L. Getchell, C. J. Churchill, H. M. Howe, A. J. Sawyer, George A. Grant and Charles O. Roberts. Its present Commander is M. P. Brew.

The Young Men's Christian Association was organized January 19, 1867. It has a free reading-room, and prayer-meetings are held at the rooms of the association every Sabbath evening. Its present officers are Walter S. Williams, president; Wilbur E. Alton, secretary, and Charles Wilder, treasurer.

The Merrimac Branch, No. 326, of the Irish National League of America, was organized August 13, 1883, with thirty members and the following officers: Joseph P. Connor, president; Michael Collins, vice-president; Michael Burns, secretary; John Shehan, treasurer, and Daniel Sullivan, collector. At present it has twenty-five members and the following officers: Augustin O'Connell, president; Michael Burns, vice-president; Joseph P. Connor, secretary; Cornelius Murphy, treasurer, and John Shehan, collector.

The Colonel C. R. Mudge Ladies' Relief Corps, No. 24, was organized in December, 1882. Its officers are Mrs. Clara Howe, president; Miss Lena Sherman, secretary, and Mrs. Lydia Sargent, treasurer.





Besides these associations, there are the Monomac Council of the American Legion of Honor, organized May 10, 1882, T. Hayden Patten, Commander; the Attitash Colony of Pilgrim Fathers, organized October 11, 1881, A. J. Scott, Governor; the Good Templars; the Sons of Temperance, organized February 24, 1882; and the Cadets of Temperance, organized in September, 1887.

Merrimac, at the time of its incorporation, was assigned to the Eighteenth Representative District of Essex County, with West Newbury, Salisbury and Amesbury. In 1876 Frederick Merrill, of Salisbury, and Orlando S. Bailey, of Amesbury, were chosen to represent the district.

1877. James D. Pike, of Merrimac; Samuel Collin, of Salisbury.  
 1878. Orrin Warren, of West Newbury; Albert S. Adams, of Amesbury.  
 1879. Elias P. Collins, of Salisbury; William Smith, of Amesbury.  
 1880. Richard Newell, of West Newbury; Benjamin L. Fitch, of Salisbury.  
 1881. Oliver A. Roberts, of Salisbury; Albert Sargent, of Merrimac.  
 1882. Marquis D. F. Stearns, of Amesbury; David L. Ambrose, of West Newbury.  
 1883. John L. Cilley, of Salisbury; John B. Jenkins, of Merrimac.  
 1884. Alexander M. Huntington, of Amesbury; Moses C. Smith, of West Newbury.  
 1885. Hiram Walker, of Salisbury; George O. Goodwin, of Merrimac.  
 1886. Alexander Smart, of Merrimac; John H. Pousland, of Amesbury.

In 1886 the same towns constituted District No. 1.

At the last election in November, 1887, James D. Pike, of Merrimac, was chosen Senator from the Fourth Senatorial District of Essex County, composed of Amesbury, Haverhill, Merrimac, Salisbury and Wards Three, Four, Five and Six of Newburyport, and containing at the last apportionment 10,836 voters.

The manufacturing interests of Merrimac are considerable and its manufacturers are active and prosperous. In the early days of Amesbury, agriculture engaged the attention of its people, but in time saw-mills were built, the salmon and sturgeon and shad in the river were caught and sent to various markets, and ship-building was carried on to a limited extent in the West Parish. At what is now Merrimacport brick-making was carried on at an early date by the Curriers and Presseys and Sawyers and Pattens and Sargents, and a trade with the West Indies of no inconsiderable extent was engaged in, this place being a distributing place for sugar and molasses among the adjoining and more distant towns. The manufacture of earthenware was begun at the Port as early as 1790, and at a later date James Chase took up the business, which his son Phineas has carried on since his day. Smith Sargent was also, about the year 1825, engaged in the business. The business of coopering was also carried on at the Port at one time with activity, and about the year 1827 a tannery and carrying establishment was built there by Jacob Gove, and carried on under the firm-name of Gove, Clough & Rowell. In 1866 the South Amesbury Wharf Company was formed, at what

is now Merrimacport, and the coal business started by S. S. Blodgett has become an extensive one.

The Bay State Felt Boot and Shoe Company, organized to manufacture felt boots and shoes by a patent process, was incorporated in 1883 and established in Merrimac, September 15, 1885, with a capital of twenty thousand dollars. The officers are Theophilus King, of Quincy, president; James D. Pike, treasurer; James Brandy, superintendent; and Theophilus King, Elbridge M. Morse, Moses G. Clement, Charles Bryant and James D. Pike, directors. The producing capacity of this company is twelve thousand cases per year, valued at one hundred and fifty thousand dollars. The goods find their markets principally in the Western States and in Maine, New Hampshire and Vermont. The demand for these boots and shoes increases yearly in the States where the winters are severe and there is much exposure to snow and cold.

The manufacture of carriages, upon which the prosperity of Merrimac chiefly depends, was begun early in the century by Michael Emery, of West Newbury, who learned his trade in Newburyport. At one time Newbury and West Newbury were considerably engaged in the business, but in some unaccountable way their industries gradually drifted across the river to Amesbury, and finally disappeared. Since the days of Michael Emery the business at Merrimac has been carried on by a large number of enterprising men. Among these may be mentioned the following, who have either died or retired: Joseph Sargent, Patten Sargent, Willis Patten, Joshua Sargent, Jr., John Sargent, Jr., Wm. Gunnison, Ephraim Goodwin, Moses Clement, Francis Smiley, Francis Pressey, Nicholas Sargent, S. S. Tuckwell, William P. Sargent, Edmund Whittier, Stephen R. Sargent, Stephen Bailey, Edmund Sargent, William Nichols, John Sargent, Jonathan B. Sargent, Frederick A. Sargent, Wm. H. Haskell, John Little, Joshua Colby, James Nichols, Wm. Johnson, Caleb Mitchell, Cyrus Sargent, Alfred E. Goodwin, Francis Sargent, O. H. Sargent, James H. Harlow, Stephen Patten, Eben S. Furlington, Joseph W. Sargent, John S. Poyen, Charles H. Palmer, Isaac Jones, Wm. Smiley, Thomas E. Poyen, George F. Clough, Isaac B. Little, George G. Larkin, Thomas B. Patten, Amos T. Small, A. M. Waterhouse and Thomas Nelson. The number of carriages, with their value, manufactured annually by those at present in the business, is as follows:

GEORGE ADAMS & SONS began business in 1857; number of carriages, 200; sleighs, 100; value, \$35,000; men employed, 18.

MOSES G. CLEMENT & SON began business in 1849; carriages, 200; sleighs, 60; value, \$45,000; men employed, 19.

C. E. GUNNISON & CO. began business in 1879; carriages, 250; men employed, 20; value, \$35,000.

H. M. HOWE (late HOWE & CLOUGH) began in 1879; carriages, 75; value, \$20,000; men employed, 15.



J. A. LANCASTER & Co. began in 1858; carriages, 438; sleighs, 112; value, \$70,000; men employed, 30.

LOUD BROTHERS began in 1866; carriages, 200; sleighs, 125; value, \$82,000; men employed, 32.

C. H. NOYES & SON began in 1815; carriages, 90; value, \$18,000; men employed, 10.

DANIEL M. MEANS began in 1881; carriages, 75; sleighs, 15; value, \$15,000; men employed, 12.

SAMUEL SCHOFIELD & SON began in 1879; carriages, 75; value, \$18,000; men employed, 11.

S. C. PEASE & SONS began in 1861; carriages, 300; value, \$100,000; men employed, 42.

PALMER & DOUGET began in 1873; carriages, 175; value, \$75,000; men employed, 50.

CLEMENT & YOUNG began in 1884; carriages, 75; value, \$18,000; men employed, 12.

WM. O. SMILEY began in 1882; carriages, 75; value, \$12,000; men employed, 8.

JOHN B. JUDKINS & SON began in 1857; carriages, 200; value, \$80,000; men employed, 50.

H. G. & H. W. STEVENS began in 1869; carriages, 415; carriages repaired, 600; value, \$185,000; men employed, 100.

#### IN MERRIMACPORT.

WM. CHASE & SONS began in 1838; carriages, 50; sleighs, 10; value, \$15,000; men employed, 11.

A. M. COLBY began in 1868; carriages, 150; sleighs, 40; value, \$30,000; men employed, 19.

GEORGE GUNNISON began in 1882; carriages, 50; value, \$9000; men employed, 7.

WILLIS P. SARGENT began in 1854; carriages, 40; value, \$6000; men employed, 3.

Merrimac may be said to be almost exclusively a carriage town, and as such has won an enviable reputation both for the style and quality of its work and for the enterprise and business integrity of its manufacturers. The styles of work done take a wide range, from the coach and landau and coupe to the less pretentious road-wagon and sleigh. Different manufacturers produce different classes of work, and almost every one has something in style or quality peculiarly his own. In the early history of the carriage business there were no shops in which a complete carriage was built. The business was carried on by an interchange of parts, one shop making bodies, another gears, another doing the iron-work, and another the trimming and painting. By this interchange of parts the carriages were constructed, and there are those still living who began the business in this way.

The manufacture of carriage-bodies and the wood-work of sleighs has always continued a business to be carried on to a considerable extent by itself, and now employs a large number of men. Among the first shops where this special business has been carried on were those of John Clement, Job Hoyt and Ebenezer Fullington, all of whom began about 1820. It is now carried on by Gilman S. Hoyt, Melvin Clement, Joseph W. Nichols, Edward B. Sargent

Charles E. Pierce, Arthur Nichols, Wm. H. Colby and N. J. Spofford, the last two of whom are established at Merrimacport.

The first application of machinery to the manufacture of carriage gears was made by John S. Foster, who was for several years connected with the West Amesbury Manufacturing Company, subsequently building a factory for the prosecution of that business, in connection with sawing and planing and general job work. In 1867 he formed a partnership with Henry M. Howe, for the manufacture of wheels. Their factory was burned February 15, 1870, and rebuilt and reoccupied in forty-nine days. In 1871 John Cleary became a member of the firm, and in 1879 George S. Prescott became connected with Mr. Foster, under the firm-name of Foster & Prescott. The product of their business was from four to five thousand sets of wheels annually, with other carriage parts. Their mill was burned February 17, 1882, and their business was not resumed.

In connection with the main business of carriage-building there are establishments engaged in the manufacture of special parts of carriages. The Merrimac Manufacturing Company, incorporated in 1848, has already been referred to, and is extensively employed in the manufacture of wheels and gears. There are other establishments engaged in the manufacture of different parts of carriages, among which are those of George B. Patten for carriage bows, and John H. Murphy and Alden B. Morse for silver-plating. The houses of J. S. Poyen & Co. and Little & Larkin are large importers and dealers in carriage materials. They have been established many years, and are doing an extensive business in addition to their home trade, selling largely to manufacturers in other places, their aggregate sales amounting to nearly a million of dollars.

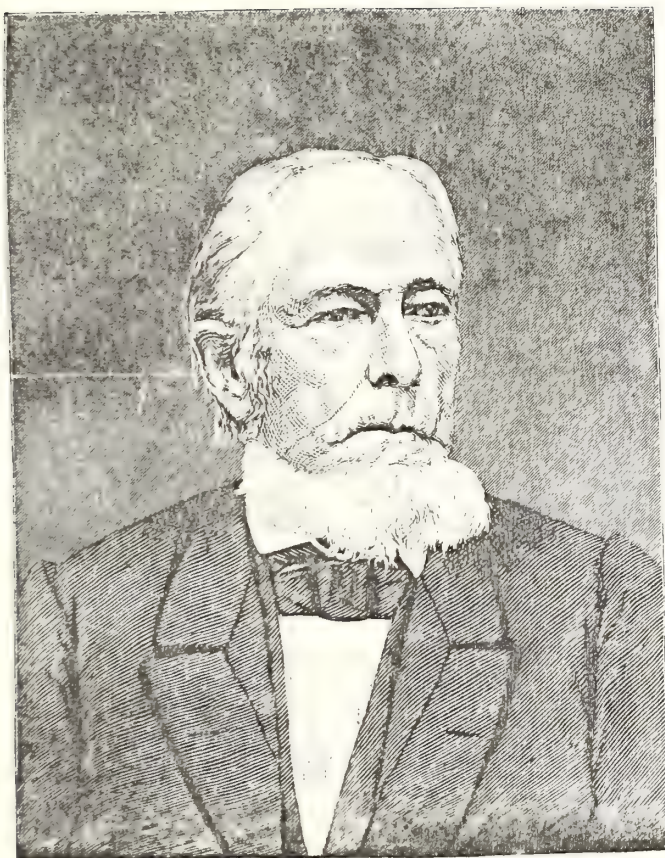
There are four halls in the town,—the Mechanics' Hall, fitted with a stage and appliances for dramatic performances; the Town Hall, called Sargent Hall; the Coliseum Hall, leased to the Army Post, and Citizens' Hall at Merrimacport.

In the autumn of 1882 George W. Carrier began the publication of a weekly newspaper called the *Merrimac Enterprise*, the issue of which was continued by him until February 1884, when he sold the establishment to D. J. Poore and James D. Pike. These gentlemen bought at the same time the material of the *Merrimac Reporter*, which, after a short career, had been discontinued. They continued the publication of the *Enterprise* until April, 1884, when they established the *Merrimac Budget*, and as editors and proprietors continued its publication until April, 1885, with an increasing subscription list and a good job printing business in connection with it. At the last date they sold the establishment to Charles A. King, formerly of the *Milford Gazette*, and the *Budget* is now conducted by him as its editor and publisher.

The manufacture of boots and shoes was at one time







*John S Minse*











